

My Vampire System (WN)

JKSManga

9kafe.com

Fantasy, Action, Sci-fi

The human Race is at war with the Vicious Dalki and when they needed help more than ever, THEY started to come forward.

Humans who had hidden in the shadows for hundreds of years, people with abilities.

Some chose to share their knowledge to the rest of the world in hopes of winning the war, while others kept their abilities to themselves.

Quinn had lost everything to the war, his home, his family and the only thing he had inherited was a crummy old book that he couldn't even open.

But when the book had finally opened, Quinn was granted a system and his whole life was turned around.

He completed quest after quest and became more powerful, until one day the system gave him a quest he wasn't sure he could complete.

"It is time to feed!"

"You must drink human blood within 24 hours"

"Your HP will continue to decrease until the task has been completed"

Table of Contents

- [Chapter 2101: What you need](#)
- [Chapter 2102: No where to hide](#)
- [Chapter 2103: The Talen family](#)
- [Chapter 2104: Planting a seed](#)
- [Chapter 2105: An Evolved Form](#)
- [Chapter 2106: Logan is different](#)
- [Chapter 2107: A small Itch](#)
- [Chapter 2108: Green House Visitors](#)
- [Chapter 2109.1: Simulation of the past \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2110.2: Simulation of the past \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2111.3: Simulation of the past \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2112: The Return of the Dalki](#)
- [Chapter 2113.1: The one known as H \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2114.2: The one known as H \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2115.1: Sil vs H \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2116.2: Sil vs H \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2117: A trapped Sil](#)
- [Chapter 2118: Strong Partners](#)
- [Chapter 2119: The Next Destination](#)
- [Chapter 2120: Angry](#)
- [Chapter 2121: A dangerous form](#)
- [Chapter 2122: A Universal Legend](#)
- [Chapter 2123: An Enemy or Ally](#)
- [Chapter 2124: A sea of blue](#)
- [Chapter 2125.1: Troublesome two \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2126.2: Troublesome two \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2127: A father and mother](#)
- [Chapter 2128: A missing piece](#)
- [Chapter 2129: Speed](#)
- [Chapter 2130: Russ's power](#)
- [Chapter 2131: Humiliated](#)
- [Chapter 2132: Better than a pro](#)
- [Chapter 2133: Speed to Hunt](#)
- [Chapter 2134: A Dark Deal](#)
- [Chapter 2135: The water messenger](#)
- [Chapter 2136: Yonbu and the Queen](#)
- [Chapter 2137: Defend the Talen Family](#)
- [Chapter 2138: Disappear in the white light](#)
- [Chapter 2139: Spying through Dark arts](#)
- [Chapter 2140.1: Use Anything \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2141.2: Use anything \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2142.1: The power of time \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2143.2: The Power of Time \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2144: Creation of the god slayer Item](#)

- [Chapter 2145: A stronger power than time?](#)
- [Chapter 2146: Who's the fastest](#)
- [Chapter 2147.2: Who's the fastest \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2148.3: Who's the fastest \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2149.4: Who's the fastest \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2150.5: Who's the fastest \(Part 5\)](#)
- [Chapter 2151.6: Who's the fastest \(Part 6\)](#)
- [Chapter 2152.1: Lets return \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2153.2: Lets return \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2154: A Changed group](#)
- [Chapter 2155.1: Time Freeze \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2156.2: Time Freeze \(part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2157.3: Time Freeze \(part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2158.4: Time Freeze \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2159.5: Time Freeze \(Part 5\)](#)
- [Chapter 2160: You want something, get it yourself](#)
- [Chapter 2161.1: God slayer 1 \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2162.2: God slayer 1 \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2163.3: God Slayer 1 \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2164.4: God Slayer 1 \(part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2165.5: God slayer 1 \(Part 5\)](#)
- [Chapter 2166.1: God Slayer 2 \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2167.2: God Slayer 2 \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2168.3: God slayer 2 \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2169.4: God Slayer 2 \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2170.5: God Slayer 2 \(Part 5\)](#)
- [Chapter 2171: A seed of Doubt](#)
- [Chapter 2172.1: God slayer 3 \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2173: Unlikely Allies](#)
- [Chapter 2174.2: God Slayer 3 \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2175.3: God Slayer 3 \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2176.4: God Slayer 3 \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2177.1: Blades Vs the God Slayer \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2178.2: Blades vs the God Slayer \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2179: Don't stand out](#)
- [Chapter 2180.1: God Slayer 4 \(part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2181.2: God Slayer 4 \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2182.3: God Slayer 4 \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2183.4: God Slayer 4 \(part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2184.5: God Slayer 4 \(Part 5\)](#)
- [Chapter 2185: The Demon Form](#)
- [Chapter 2186.2: The Demon Form \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2187: To the Tower](#)
- [Chapter 2188.1: God slayer 5 \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2189.2: God Slayer 5 \(part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2190.3: God Slayer 5 \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2191.4: God Slayer 5 \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2192.5: God Slayer 5 \(Part 5\)](#)

- [Chapter 2193.6: God Slayer 5 \(Part 6\)](#)
- [Chapter 2194.7: God Slayer 5 \(Part 7\)](#)
- [Chapter 2195.8: God Slayer 5 \(Part 8\)](#)
- [Chapter 2196: An Agent of the gods](#)
- [Chapter 2197: A Breakpoint](#)
- [Chapter 2198: One person left](#)
- [Chapter 2199.1: Preparation for battle \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2200.2: Preparation for battle \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2201: Your Choice](#)
- [Chapter 2202: A Brewing Storm](#)
- [Chapter 2203: The other side Trouble](#)
- [Chapter 2204: Intergalactic War](#)
- [Chapter 2205.2: Intergalactic war \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2206: Strength of three Races](#)
- [Chapter 2207: The Amra's power](#)
- [Chapter 2208: The next step](#)
- [Chapter 2209: Rescue Team move out](#)
- [Chapter 2210: It's Hammer time](#)
- [Chapter 2211: Shadow army](#)
- [Chapter 2212.1: Geo, the strong \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2213.2: Geo the strong \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2214: Amra Push Back](#)
- [Chapter 2215: Last few pieces](#)
- [Chapter 2216.1: Rescue Sil \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2217.2: Rescue Sil \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2218: Run, Run, Run](#)
- [Chapter 2219: Can't run forever](#)
- [Chapter 2220: Everything...gone](#)
- [Chapter 2221: A jump of power](#)
- [Chapter 2222: The reason for fighting](#)
- [Chapter 2223: Raining terror](#)
- [Chapter 2224.1: The Obsessed Vampire \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2225.2: The Obsessed Vampire \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2226: Fate of Worlds](#)
- [Chapter 2227: A clash of supreme powers](#)
- [Chapter 2228: A turn in the tide](#)
- [Chapter 2229: Some things can't change](#)
- [Chapter 2230: What's your job?](#)
- [Chapter 2231.1: The Green Legend \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2232.2: The Green Legend \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2233: A slowing heart](#)
- [Chapter 2234: Family stick together](#)
- [Chapter 2235: A planet to save](#)
- [Chapter 2236.1: 7 or 8 spike \(part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2237.2: 7 or 8 Spike \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2238.1: Deadly combination \(part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2239.2: Deadly combination \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2240: The Black Swordsman](#)

- [Chapter 2241: Controlling the Dalki](#)
- [Chapter 2242: Overstaying](#)
- [Chapter 2243.1: Sil Remember? \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2244.2: Sil Remember \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2245: The war over?](#)
- [Chapter 2246: Unexpected outcome](#)
- [Chapter 2247: The weapon master](#)
- [Chapter 2248: Peter's determination](#)
- [Chapter 2249: Abandoned](#)
- [Chapter 2250: The god of war](#)
- [Chapter 2251.2: The god of war \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2252: A cornered Army](#)
- [Chapter 2253: The man in red, arrives.](#)
- [Chapter 2254: Nothing but blood](#)
- [Chapter 2255: A calming anger](#)
- [Chapter 2256: The first Armor of its kind](#)
- [Chapter 2257.1: God Slayer Armor \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2258.2: God Slayer Armor \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2259: Blood shock](#)
- [Chapter 2260: Time moves...Goodbye](#)
- [Chapter 2261: Rush to the tower](#)
- [Chapter 2262: H kill them all](#)
- [Chapter 2263: No one Brave enough?](#)
- [Chapter 2264.1: The power of the ring \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2265.2: The power of the ring \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2266: A way to stop the war](#)
- [Chapter 2267: Strongest powers vs Strongest body](#)
- [Chapter 2268: A way to win](#)
- [Chapter 2269: Courage to stop](#)
- [Chapter 2270: Sil's staff](#)
- [Chapter 2271: You decide](#)
- [Chapter 2272: Every bone in my body](#)
- [Chapter 2273: Who is my enemy?](#)
- [Chapter 2274: Till the last drop](#)
- [Chapter 2275: Blood surge!](#)
- [Chapter 2276: God Slayer powers Combine](#)
- [Chapter 2277: A Different Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 2278: Unstoppable power](#)
- [Chapter 2279: The final ability](#)
- [Chapter 2280: The hero is tired](#)
- [Chapter 2281: A way to stop it all](#)
- [Chapter 2282: Unveiling Shadows: Paths Converge in the War](#)
- [Chapter 2283: Clash of Fates: The Phoenix and the Dragon](#)
- [Chapter 2284: The Fiery Showdown](#)
- [Chapter 2285: A building rage](#)
- [Chapter 2286: The Wondering Eyes](#)
- [Chapter 2287: The Unknown Hero](#)
- [Chapter 2288.2: The Unknown Hero \(Part 2\)](#)

- [Chapter 2289: First blood](#)
- [Chapter 2290.2: First Blood \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2291: The Dragon armor](#)
- [Chapter 2292: An awakened soul](#)
- [Chapter 2293: Getting rid of everything](#)
- [Chapter 2294: Fury of the punch](#)
- [Chapter 2295.1: Quest for Malik \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2296.2: Quest for Malik \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2297.1: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2298.2: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2299.3: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2300.4: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2301: Breaking the agreement?](#)
- [Chapter 2302: The god slayer vault](#)
- [Chapter 2303: Half the journey](#)
- [Chapter 2304: The fallen king](#)
- [Chapter 2305: Things can never return to normal](#)
- [Chapter 2306: The vault](#)
- [Chapter 2307: The last message](#)
- [Chapter 2308: A connection?](#)
- [Chapter 2309: They finally meet](#)
- [Chapter 2310: The most dangerous person, acts!](#)
- [Chapter 2311: Cat and Mouse](#)
- [Chapter 2312: Good luck or Bad luck](#)
- [Chapter 2313: A way to Mark](#)
- [Chapter 2314: Pick 1](#)
- [Chapter 2315: Failed, or succeeded?](#)
- [Chapter 2316: Not Worried](#)
- [Chapter 2317: Stop Immortui](#)
- [Chapter 2318: The Target?](#)
- [Chapter 2319: Mystery letter](#)
- [Chapter 2320: A new leader](#)
- [Chapter 2321: A new Earth](#)
- [Chapter 2322: The secret of a dhampir](#)
- [Chapter 2323: Getting closer](#)
- [Chapter 2324: The reliable Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 2325: The Final task](#)
- [Chapter 2326: A reliable man](#)
- [Chapter 2327: A strong three!](#)
- [Chapter 2328: The search is on](#)
- [Chapter 2329: Saving the target](#)
- [Chapter 2330.1: Calling in help \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2331.2: Calling in help \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2332: A predication](#)
- [Chapter 2333: A trap for the trapper](#)
- [Chapter 2334: Captured!](#)
- [Chapter 2335: A Troubled Magnus](#)
- [Chapter 2336: The colossal](#)

- [Chapter 2337: Not A Vampire](#)
- [Chapter 2338: Taken away](#)
- [Chapter 2339: The last worry](#)
- [Chapter 2340: A friend turning](#)
- [Chapter 2341: An old face](#)
- [Chapter 2342: No Talking!](#)
- [Chapter 2343: A lifeless world](#)
- [Chapter 2344: Joining The Future Battle](#)
- [Chapter 2345: The Strongest Contract](#)
- [Chapter 2346: The Ancient Power](#)
- [Chapter 2347: Magic Power](#)
- [Chapter 2348: Never Doubt Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 2349: Full on battle! The portal is open?](#)
- [Chapter 2350.1: Beings from another world \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2351.2: Beings from another world \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2352: Andy's resolve](#)
- [Chapter 2353: The originals collide](#)
- [Chapter 2354: A secret bidder!](#)
- [Chapter 2355: Blood Aura Evolve!](#)
- [Chapter 2356: 10 seconds is all I need](#)
- [Chapter 2357: Agent 4's betrays](#)
- [Chapter 2358: 1 day of pain](#)
- [Chapter 2359: The ultimate team](#)
- [Chapter 2360: An Extra power](#)
- [Chapter 2361: The power of the king](#)
- [Chapter 2362.1: Search for the ultimate team \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2363.2: Search for the ultimate team \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2364.3: Search for the Ultimate team \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2365.4: Search for the ultimate team \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2366: The return of the greatest](#)
- [Chapter 2367: Have you ever?](#)
- [Chapter 2368: Journey to another world](#)
- [Chapter 2369: Immortui's anger](#)
- [Chapter 2370: The hunting ground](#)
- [Chapter 2371.2: The hunting grounds \(part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2372: Kill immortui](#)
- [Chapter 2373: The demon king](#)
- [Chapter 2374: The champions](#)
- [Chapter 2375: The Demons in trouble](#)
- [Chapter 2376: The Yak Demon](#)
- [Chapter 2377: A tough battle](#)
- [Chapter 2378: The locked champion](#)
- [Chapter 2379: Untouchable \(Wedding day tomorrow 20th\)](#)
- [Chapter 2380: The Demon king arrives \(I'm back!\)](#)
- [Chapter 2381.1: Demon kings power \(part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2382: Dead energy](#)
- [Chapter 2383: This man is everywhere!](#)
- [Chapter 2384: Demon king's quest](#)

- [Chapter 2385: Demon king level](#)
- [Chapter 2386: The champions side](#)
- [Chapter 2387: Demon transformation](#)
- [Chapter 2388: Vampire demon form](#)
- [Chapter 2389: Demon Quinn attacks](#)
- [Chapter 2390: The Vampire demons power](#)
- [Chapter 2391: The out of control demon](#)
- [Chapter 2392: A costly mistake](#)
- [Chapter 2393: Death a favour](#)
- [Chapter 2394.1: Setting sun \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2395.2: Setting sun \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2396.3: Setting sun \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2397: An old ancient enemy](#)
- [Chapter 2398: The Broken history of vampires](#)
- [Chapter 2399: The Werewolves past](#)
- [Chapter 2400: The god's make a move](#)
- [Chapter 2401.1: The Werewolves pit \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2402.2: The werewolves pit \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2403.3: The Werewolves pit \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2404.1: The Champion's fate \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2405.2: The Champion's fate \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2406.1: The Werewolf king \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2407.2: The Werewolf king \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2408: Going all out](#)
- [Chapter 2409: The Werewolf Glutton](#)
- [Chapter 2410: A different type of Werewolf](#)
- [Chapter 2411: Blood explosion](#)
- [Chapter 2412: The potential of a Werewolf](#)
- [Chapter 2413: Can't get a break](#)
- [Chapter 2414: Making it fair](#)
- [Chapter 2415: Dark Memories](#)
- [Chapter 2416: An old unfinished job](#)
- [Chapter 2417.1: Peter's Madness \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2418.2: Peter's madness \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2419.1: Demon Quinn's rampage \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2420.2: Demon Quinn's rampage \(part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2421: The consequences of the demon form](#)
- [Chapter 2422: Kill the Demon!](#)
- [Chapter 2423.1: The Gods loyal dog \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2424.2: The Gods loyal dog \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2425.1: Strongest Trouble Maker \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2426.2: Strongest Trouble Maker \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2427.3: Strongest Trouble Maker \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2428.4: Strongest trouble maker \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2429.5: Strongest Trouble maker \(Part 5\)](#)
- [Chapter 2430.6: Strongest Trouble Maker \(Part 6\)](#)
- [Chapter 2431: The Ex Celestial's Son](#)
- [Chapter 2432.1: Immortui Arrives \(Part 1\)](#)

- [Chapter 2433.2: Immortui Arrives \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2434.1: Quinn vs Immortui \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2435.2: Quinn vs Immortui \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2436.3: Quinn vs Immortui \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2437.4: Quinn vs Immortui \(Part 4\)](#)
- [Chapter 2438.5: Quinn vs Immortui \(Part 5\)](#)
- [Chapter 2439.6: Quinn Vs Immortui \(Part 6\)](#)
- [Chapter 2440.7: Quinn Vs Immortui \(Part 7\)](#)
- [Chapter 2441.1: Quinn down \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2442.2: Quinn down \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2443: Who's a demon?](#)
- [Chapter 2444: Caught in the act](#)
- [Chapter 2445: Sending you back!](#)
- [Chapter 2446.1: Grand Meet up \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2447.2: Grand Meet Up \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2448.3: Grand Meet Up \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2449.1: Minny vs Galen \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2450.2: Minny vs Galen \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2451.1: The Ancient one's power \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2452.2: The Ancient one's power \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2453.1: Fight the Divine Brigade \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2454.2: Fight the Divine Brigade \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2455: Preparing for the worst](#)
- [Chapter 2456: Where is Quinn?](#)
- [Chapter 2457.1: Chris' power \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2458.2: Chris' power \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2459: Choosing death](#)
- [Chapter 2460.1: Sil's Loyalty \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2461.2: Sil's Loyalty \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2462.1: Problem with Quinn \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2463.2: Problem with Quinn \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2464.1: Preparing for the end \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2465.2: Preparing for the end \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2466: No Witnesses](#)
- [Chapter 2467: Convincing the last one](#)
- [Chapter 2468: Leaving all to die](#)
- [Chapter 2469: All three Champions](#)
- [Chapter 2470: First Target](#)
- [Chapter 2471: A meeting from the past, Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 2472.1: Connecting with the old Quinn \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2473.2: Connecting with the old Quinn \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2474: Immortui chases!](#)
- [Chapter 2475: The 1st Returns!](#)
- [Chapter 2476: We've got your back, Quinn](#)
- [Chapter 2477: The Yak King](#)
- [Chapter 2478: Bad luck after luck](#)
- [Chapter 2479: The Yak Demon Bisha](#)
- [Chapter 2480: The Light Demon Luce](#)

- [Chapter 2481: Saying Goodbye, for the last time.](#)
- [Chapter 2482: Keeping a Secret](#)
- [Chapter 2483: Immortui's power](#)
- [Chapter 2484: Immortui Vs Sil](#)
- [Chapter 2485: Preparing for the Finale](#)
- [Chapter 2486.1: Fight against the demon kings \(Part 1\)](#)
- [Chapter 2487.2: Fight against the demon kings \(Part 2\)](#)
- [Chapter 2488.3: Fight against the Demon kings \(Part 3\)](#)
- [Chapter 2489: Quinn Vs Sil?](#)
- [Chapter 2490: Never forget the task](#)
- [Chapter 2491: Deep memories](#)
- [Chapter 2492: A strong Sil](#)
- [Chapter 2493: A fight between heavens](#)
- [Chapter 2494: War Between Worlds](#)
- [Chapter 2495: Quinn Acts!](#)
- [Chapter 2496: All to the planet of the Giants!](#)
- [Chapter 2497: Sil in trouble?](#)
- [Chapter 2498: Sil's last stand](#)
- [Chapter 2499: Quinn's Duty](#)
- [Chapter 2500: Feeling blood](#)
- [Chapter 2501: Explosive power](#)
- [Chapter 2502: A New Chris](#)
- [Chapter 2503: Clash of the Wolves](#)
- [Chapter 2504: The second grand meet](#)
- [Chapter 2505: Luce vs Russ](#)
- [Chapter 2506: Russ vs Luce](#)
- [Chapter 2507: Black Swordsman vs Luce](#)
- [Chapter 2508: A special family](#)
- [Chapter 2509: Quinn vs Immortui the second round](#)
- [Chapter 2510: Battle of the Wolves](#)
- [Chapter 2511: Two demon's kings against Chris](#)
- [Chapter 2512: The Messenger Arrives](#)
- [Chapter 2513: The messenger steps in](#)
- [Chapter 2514: Mundus Confidence](#)
- [Chapter 2515: Quinn's eternal struggle](#)
- [Chapter 2516: The last hope gone](#)
- [Chapter 2517: Unzoku a true demon](#)
- [Chapter 2518: Eat Me!](#)
- [Chapter 2519: Stick to the Goal](#)
- [Chapter 2520: All The Demon King's Blood](#)
- [Chapter 2521: Red space to Golden Space](#)
- [Chapter 2522: An invasion of the past](#)
- [Chapter 2523: Wake them all up](#)
- [Chapter 2524: Final Chance](#)
- [Chapter 2525: A New Flame](#)
- [Chapter 2526: Demon Quest Complete](#)
- [Chapter 2527: Transform, it's time!](#)
- [Chapter 2528: Just an old book](#)

- [Chapter 2529: Grab The Blood Stone](#)
- [Chapter 2530: Sil's last gift](#)
- [Chapter 2531: Interrupting Fight](#)
- [Chapter 2532: Protect the settlement](#)
- [Chapter 2533: The Celestial attack](#)
- [Chapter 2534: The Return of a Legend](#)
- [Chapter 2535: The Final Form](#)
- [Chapter 2536: Immortui's Final Form](#)
- [Chapter 2537: Full Potential unlocked](#)
- [Chapter 2538: Quinn's Overloading power](#)
- [Chapter 2539: The Final Choice](#)
- [Chapter 2540: The Decision Is Made](#)
- [Chapter 2541: The Last Vampire](#)
- [Chapter 2542: 1 Year Later](#)
- [Chapter 2543: Everyone Changing](#)
- [Chapter 2544: The Pain Is Too Much](#)
- [Chapter 2545: The Last Goodbye, Goodbye Quinn Talen](#)

Chapter 2101: What you need

When the masks were pulled off, the faces that Quinn could see had hit him in his memory bank. They were faces that he felt like he would never forget, no matter how much time had passed.

Both of these people had been a big part of his life. Peter, the first person he had turned, one of his most loyal friends who was even by his side for a 1000 years while he was in Eternal slumber. Then there was Chris, one who taught him how to utilise Qi properly and in some ways saved his life. In the end, they had worked together to help him and his friends in their fight.

Even though Quinn had his neck held at this moment, quite firmly, that still didn't stop him from displaying his underlying anger. He gritted his teeth and his fangs were rubbing against the bottom of his gums causing small cuts in his mouth.

'Jim! Not only did you lie to everyone that I know, making everyone forget about me, claiming all of this for your own, but what you have done... No, what you are doing right now, you're using my friends. Those that are dear to me, and helped me in the past to accomplish your deeds!'

Jim was looking dead ahead at Quinn, there was an underlying smile on his face, his muscles were twitching, but it was as if he was holding back. He knew exactly what he was doing, by revealing these two in front of him.

Yet, he was unable to smile in the open, because right now he was playing a character, and in this story Quinn was the big villain that needed to be stopped.

"You demon!" Jim shouted out. "I thought this day would come. Richard Eno, had warned me about this."

Speaking loudly, Jim did so, so that the others could hear, including the other originals.

"The demon, who cursed us originals in the first place and turned us into what we are today. I guess you're afraid, afraid that we would surpass you in strength, so you have come to stop us."

There was a lot Quinn wanted to say, he wanted to desperately dispute this fact and argue back, but it was useless. Unlikely anyone would believe him, and even if they did, how would it turn the situation around.

On top of that, due to the way Ray was holding onto Quinn's throat, he could hardly say a word.

Jim started to walk forward, and as he did, Chris and Peter walked by his side as if they were his guards.

"Now, there are a lot of things that I will need to do with you, and that I need to say." Jim said.

Turning his head around suddenly, Ray looked back at them all.

"What are you doing?" Ray asked, his eyes staring directly at all three of them, and like a heatwave, energy had hit all three of them.

For a second, Jim was incredibly nervous as he gulped.

"What's wrong... Did I do something?" Jim asked.

"This person, is now my business." Ray said. "So you should stay out of it. If you want to do something with him then you need to do it after. I have some questions of my own for him."

Jim's head was now racing, questions, why did the being known as Ray suddenly have questions to ask Quinn? Was there a connection between the two? How? Did the two know each other, was Ray going to switch sides?

He needed to stop the two from talking, but that would mean going up against him.

At the same time Quinn found this as an opportunity, it was clear from the fight before that Ray no longer saw him as a friend, the questions were revealing something else, but there was a gap that would allow him to act.

The shadow from below rose and grabbed Ray by the legs, while at the same time, on the shadow on the ground looked like multiple lines, thousands of arms of shadow that were pulling at the arms of the shadow on the floor.

Although the shadow wasn't directly around Ray's arms, and he was only touching his shadow, he could feel it having an effect on him. It felt like some invisible force was moving his hands.

Slowly, the shadow started to pull each of the fingertips away, eventually pulling the entirety of Ray's hands to the side out of the way.

'This is my chance, I need to make a big hit.'

[Nitro accelerate skill has been activated]

[The skill is still in cool down]

[Blood will be used to supplement the armour's power]

Quinn's shadow could do a number of things, and he realised that his shadow powers could be used on other people's shadow, objects, buildings as well, in a way where it would affect the real object.

It was similar to when Quinn used his soul weapon. When attacking one's shadow, the wounds would appear on the user, but now Quinn could use his shadow to produce multiple arms on the ground that would pull away Ray's hand.

With the physical shadow laced in with Qi holding onto Ray's leg, he was now wide open for an attack.

With all the speed of Nitro accelerate Quinn didn't have time to pick up speed, and he threw out his fist while gathering as much of his blood aura as possible, he spun it like a drill and shoved his whole fist right in Ray's face.

It made contact, and several pulses of blood aura rippled out as it hit Ray's face. Blood was pouring out from his skin as the drill tore it to shreds. Skidding across the floor, Ray soon had stopped.

His face had been injured, bleeding slightly, but it was a light wound on his body.

"It looks like you have even more skills with the shadow than I thought, but that was perhaps your only, and last chance, to beat me." Ray stated.

The words rang true in Quinn's head as well. Because now his health was lowering by the second while using the Nitro accelerate. He had to end the skill at some point, and even with the blood bank restoring his health, then what?

Not only would he have to fight Ray, but Chris, and Peter as well. The two of them together wouldn't be easy for Quinn, not unless he was willing to do harm to them.

While looking at the situation, his eyes had matched Edvard's, and he could see he had regained consciousness, and was mouthing a few words.

'You have to run...' Edvard mouthed. 'I've given you... what you need. Go from there...'

Quinn had made out what he could, but it was difficult for him to understand. What they needed was to find out how they altered the others' memories, but if this information was with Edvard, how would he get it now?

Even with Nitro accelerate his chances of getting Edvard out of there were slim.

'Wait, he has given me what I need? So he says I already have it.'

At that moment, Ray was running towards Quinn, he had a large fist out, and it looked like wings were starting to spread out from his back. As they cut through the air, they gave him a little boost.

Perhaps, even with Nitro Accelerate the two would now be at similar speeds. Ray had yet to use the peak of his strength and although Quinn hadn't used his soul weapon, right now, it was a losing fight.

"Jim!" Quinn shouted. "You will regret everything you did... and I want you to remember everyday so you can't sleep, that I will be coming after you."

The shadow had completely consumed Quinn's body, and when it did, he disappeared and Quinn was no longer there. Ray had stopped in his tracks, sensing that the strong power was no more.

"He... ran away." Ray said.

Using the shadow link, Quinn had suddenly appeared by Minny's side, right in the centre of her classroom.

Chapter 2102: No where to hide

Jim Eno, along with Ray and the rest of the original leaders were just staring into the space where Quinn once was. As Jim stared longer at the area where the fight had taken place, the anger was building up more and more inside of him.

"Damn it, his energy just disappeared just like that!" Jim shouted. He knew, having some information on the punishers, the skill he had likely used, but this would mean that he had travelled to another with the shadow power.

Since the fight seemed to be somewhat over, and the energy was lessening in the area, the original leaders started to come out from behind the torn down buildings, towards Jim. While Grenlet, also couldn't help but look at the beaten Edvard.

'The plan failed, and not even Quinn was strong enough to go against that guard.' Grenlet thought. 'It seems like our instincts were right. Whoever, or whatever, that thing that was next to Jim is something that none of us should get involved with, but what will happen now, and do they know about me.'

"It seems like you want to say something to me?" Ray asked, walking over.

Jim wasn't in a rush to speak, because this person was the most difficult to deal with, especially with others all around the place.

"You agreed to help me, and I just thought that you might have changed your mind. If that's the case, then please inform me." Jim stated.

"I see now." Ray replied. "You think I let him go on purpose. I'll tell you now that's not the case. His power is related to my past, who is related to someone else that I would like to talk to, that's all. Either way since he is no longer here, and you have your other two friends by your side. I will go and take a rest."

Jumping from his position, Ray disappeared into the sky as he went off to do his own thing, but he wouldn't be leaving the planet. Now, Jim's attention was turned to the original leaders.

"Sir!" Magnus said, as he was heavy footed in his steps. "That damn Quinn, who was he? Is he really a demon from another world?"

When looking at the originals, Jim wasn't pleased at all. These were the best of the best, the strongest vampires, yet they were unable to hold Quinn back. At the same time, with the way they were now, they were almost a double edged sword.

One of them had already betrayed him. What were the chances that it would happen again in the future, or that there weren't already others that were in their support.

"I believe that's the case. I have been doing a lot of research into them. I'll be honest, it's part of the reason why we have been travelling out here as well." Jim answered.

Below him, on the ground, he could see that Edvard had regained consciousness and he needed to come up with a solution.

'I should have changed the original leaders' memories as well so they are more loyal to me... but changing their memories alone so its co-current with the rest of the vampires is difficult.

'On top of that... if I want to change memories again, it would mean paying a visit to Jack... maybe that's not such a bad thing. Perhaps there is a way we can have him deal with the problem instead?'

There was more than a single problem for Jim to figure out, and in his head there were multiple enemies around him that he needed to get rid off. When thinking about the situation, it suddenly clicked in his head, when he heard the other original leaders talking.

'Wait... Magnus knew his name. The fact that he was on this planet, he had to have joined as a soldier. If that's the case, has he been living at the settlement this whole time?'

"You guys, you knew his name. I'm guessing that means he was a member of the Settlement, and for the originals to know him, what's the reason?" Jim asked.

The others felt a bit silly now that they didn't look further into him, but Magnus answered in the end.

"The man, Quinn Balen, was a guard that worked for the ninth family. I can only assume that Edvard already knew his identity, because his strange actions from before are starting to make sense." Magnus answered.

"However, he didn't really stand out. The reason we all know him is because of a family member of his that stood out. She was an extremely talented vampire in the settlement."

Inwardly Jim was smiling, as there was a chance now.

"There is a good chance that the place he has returned to is the vampire settlement. Even if he hasn't, he will certainly be there eventually because that's where his family is.

"Inform everyone in the vampire settlement to apprehend anyone related to Quinn, as well as those that were close to him. I want the same for anyone who was on this planet that had contact with Quinn, bring them in for questioning."

With the orders made, the original leaders bowed down, and Jim was already walking back to the building he was in before.

'Now that I'm the one chasing after you Quinn, I want you to know that there is nowhere for you to hide, no where for you to go. The vampire settlement, the Graylash planets, even Earth, all of it and more is in my control.'

The order was sent out everywhere, including to those that were on the Namrik planet. The vampires were rounding up the groups sent from the ninth family but it didn't take them long to pinpoint which group he was in.

Ronkin, Jeouk, and all of the others that were on the same ship as Quinn were treated like criminals, as vampires surrounded them, and started to escort them to the capital city.

Looking down on the ground, even though stuck in this situation both Ronkin and Jeouk weren't thinking about their own safety or what would happen to them, but just what was happening to Quinn.

'Quinn... I know you better than anyone else. You're not a bad person...' Ronkin thought, as a memory stuck out in his head.

After a specialised ability user had been called to heal his son of his special ailment, Ronkin had tried multiple times to meet up with Edvard, attempting to thank him for what he had done, and one day they had met.

To his surprise Edvard stated that he wasn't the reason his son had been treated. Edvard couldn't take credit for something he hadn't done, and had slipped out a relatively large hint as to who it was.

'I believe you Quinn... I will always believe you.'

With the investigation ongoing and the order being sent out to the vampire settlement. There was still something else that Jim needed to do. When he reached the building, he soon connected to a special device that had been set up in the office.

It was a small square that once pressing a single button would become a large transmitter that could communicate with those through space.

"I didn't expect to get a call from you so soon." Jack stated. "I thought you said that you had everything handled there, is there some kind of help you need?"

The tone of voice, the arrogance, everything was annoying Jim. Having worked with this person for a long time, day by day, little things this person did infuriated Jim, yet what annoyed him even more was that he could do nothing to this person.

"Everything is fine regarding the Namriks, but I have a bit of information that I think you will be interested in." Jim replied. "One of the ones that ruined your life is at the vampire settlement. By my calculations you shouldn't be far from there, and you have my permission to get rid of him.

"I'm sure you're smart enough to figure out that I am talking about him, Quinn Talen."

Chapter 2103: The Talen family

"Is that an adult in our class." A small quiet voice said.

"Wait, where did he come from. Did he come from the ground?"

"Yeah, I think I saw him rise from the ground."

"Wait, that's not just any strange adult, that's Minny's dad."

It was safe to say that out of all the locations Minny could have been in at this point and time, that the school, in the middle of the classroom, was not the best one. However, Quinn was in a better situation than he thought.

The homeroom teacher Miss Bedford was focusing on something on the board, and only the kids had seen Quinn rise through Minny's shadow. Due to how young they were, they knew little to nothing about the Punishers and if anything, they were wondering why Quinn was here.

The memories of the vampire had stuck in their mind after they had seen what he had done to Tobi's mother. On top of that, it was hard to forget a face like Quinn's. Which was why when Miss Bedford did eventually turn around, her face blushed.

"Oh my! What... is there a problem, Mr. Balen?" Miss Bedford asked.

The thing was, Quinn wasn't in the best state, he was hurt from the fight, and although he didn't have many external wounds he could feel his insides were slightly damaged, and his blood bank for some reason wasn't healing the wounds.

Ray's powers were always a mystery and even now, Quinn still didn't quite grasp his enormous strength. Nevertheless, he looked at Minny, as he didn't have time to explain himself.

"I'm sorry, everyone for what you might be put through." Quinn said, as he grabbed Minny and placed her under his arm. "And I thank you all for looking after Minny."

After that, as quick as he came in, Quinn had already left with Minny. Rather than using his shadow powers, he had escaped out of the classroom door, then switched to his shadow powers when no one could see him.

He didn't want to cause a panic just yet, because he knew that was coming.

"Abby." Tobi called out. "Why do I get a bad feeling about the words Minny's father used? It almost sounded like... we're never going to see her again."

Abby didn't reply, because she had the same feeling as well. The lesson had continued on for a short while.

Although Miss Bedford was left confused and unsure about what had happened, she needed to wait till the class had ended, but in the end, there wasn't a need for that either, as a direct message had been sent to her head.

'Miss Bedford, please bring the student known as Minny Balen to the head office.'

Her heart started to thump louder after hearing this message, Minny was already gone, and what could they want her for? It was only moments later that several permanent guards had rushed into the room.

They had burst the door open causing the young children to scream as they were startled, and they could immediately see that one of the seats was empty.

"Where is the student!" The guard asked.

"The... father was here a few minutes ago and took her away." Miss Bedford answered. She could tell that the guards were not in the mood to chit chat, as they already had their blood aura active in case there was a need for it to be used.

"Lessons are cancelled for the day. All students are to stay in their classrooms, and everyone is to report if they either see Quinn Balen, or see the student named Minny! Keep your eyes peeled!" The guard ordered.

A couple stayed in the classroom, while others went off searching. Through the classroom windows they could see that there were vampires all over the school, and it was clear they were all looking for one person.

'What... what do they want Minny for!' Tobi clenched his fist.

It took a little longer for Quinn to get home as he was being careful not to be seen. He imagined at any moment that the situation would take a turn for the worst. Travelling through his shadow travel wasn't invisible, but in dark shadows it was harder to spot than normal.

Eventually when he got back, he could see Layla and Galen in their room.

"Layla!" Quinn said.

Layla jumped back a little out of shock, but seeing how Quinn was sweating slightly and the fact that he was here before the war was over, she was already assuming that it was for the worst.

"I... failed. We have to leave this place... Jim knows about us, any second now he could make it so the whole settlement goes after us." Quinn stated.

"They know about us." Her horns were turning red but only at the bottom, it was a sign of dread and worry. "What happened, if Jim knows about us, knowing you, you would have planned to take him out."

Layla was starting to gather items from the house, photos and more. Seeing this, Quinn quickly went around the place and was storing all their belongings in the shadow that were of importance.

"I don't have time to explain! We need a ship first, to get out of here, after that we can figure out what to do then."

Layla nodded in agreement, right now wasn't the time to be panicking, they needed to keep their family safe, it was the number one priority. With the pre-warning, all of them had escaped from the house. Quinn was still holding onto Minny, while Layla was holding onto Galen.

They hadn't moved far from the house just yet, as they heard the sound of several footsteps, and were currently in an alleyway. From there they saw it all.

As countless vampires had surrounded the house and the area they were in. They most likely had set up checkpoints as well.

"How are we going to get out of this situation?" Layla asked.

"Right now, we just have to get off the planet as quickly as possible. Even if we were caught, we could fight our way through, but then everyone would be after us. With the shadow travel we should be able to get there without much of a problem."

"Does... this mean I have to leave school?" Minny asked, there was a hint of sadness in her voice, it almost sounded as if she was holding back her tears.

"I'm sorry Minny." Quinn said. "I guess you were starting to enjoy school right. I will fix all of this. I always do, right? So for now, just listen to Daddy and Mommy okay?"

Minny nodded, she had always been good in tough situations and this certainly was a tough situation for them. Just in case they did get in a fight, Quinn wanted to put Galen in his shadow space.

Which was what he did, or at least what he attempted to do. While using his shadow powers on Galen, he had disappeared into the shadow space, but right where he had been put in, Galen would pop out again, standing.

"What are you doing? I can't fight as well if I'm looking after Galen." Layla whispered.

"It's not that." Quinn replied as he placed Galen in his shadow space again, yet he had popped out once more.

'How... How is he able to do that? Galen doesn't have the power of the shadow does he? Nor is he attacking the shadow space.'

When Quinn went to do the same again, as he brought his hands forward, Galen shook his head.

"You don't want to go in there?" Quinn asked.

"Minny doesn't want to either." She said. "I want to help. You always say we are a family, and you want to protect us, but we are strong too, dad. Me, Mum and even Galen."

His family was stubborn, the easiest thing to do was to put them all in his shadow space and he travelled to the spaceship docking. At the end of the day, arguing with them wasn't going to help and time was of the essence.

"Fine, but we are using my shadow travel to get out of here, and listen to what I say!" Quinn stated.

"We... are the Talen family." Minny said. "I hate the name Balen. From now on, I never want to use that fake name again."

Quinn nodded in agreement, as he and his Talen family, were on the move.

Chapter 2104: Planting a seed

The whole school had been searched top to bottom and there were still no traces of either Minny, or her father, and the search had even extended to other family members as well.

Jared, one of the top students before Minny came along, was paying attention to what the others were saying. While sitting in his class seat, he closed his eyes, focusing on his ears. Although a vampire's hearing was better than most, it was hard for them to separate the conversation and sounds around them.

The more they could hear, also meant that there were more distractions, but Jared had been training with one of the best in the settlement, the original known as Magnus.

'So they're looking for Minny and her family? What happened? Did they find out about Minny and her mother's strength? No, that makes no sense, especially for something this big.'

Looking at the palm of his hand, there was a small marking that started to light up, the image of an eye and two wings. Soon he had connected with a certain someone.

'Master, the settlement, it's in chaos searching for Minny and her family, do you know what's going on?' Jared asked.

The marking had been made shortly after Jared had become Magnus' student and he stated it was necessary for the two to have each other's trust.

'It's an order from Jim.' Magnus replied. 'There is something I want to warn you about. I'm not entirely sure things are making sense, and I'm worried about something. If I come back and I don't seem like myself, I want you to remember the task. The Talen family has to stay alive.'

The communication was broken off as the marking that lit up on his hand started to disappear. There was an uneasy look on Jared's face, because the way things were, how could someone like him interfere, and what would Magnus, an original, worry about?

Quinn and the entire family were using a mix of shadow travel and their speed to get around the settlement. They could move from alleyway to alleyway quickly, and the shadow was mostly unnoticeable in the darkest of areas, but they were all starting to worry about something. They noticed that Quinn was breathing relatively heavy.

He wasn't fighting and was only using his shadow, so it didn't make any sense for him to be out of breath. For a second, while they were standing in the alleyway,

Layla placed her hand on Quinn, and she used her Qi to try and sense the energy inside his body.

"Quinn...Your energy." Layla said, almost horrified.

"I know." Quinn replied. "We have to get off this planet first, and then I can start to worry about myself."

Layla agreed but she was worried at what she had seen. Inside Quinn's body there was a battle going on inside even now. It looked like a foreign energy was fighting his insides and it was aggressive as it was trying its best to take over the Qi, as well as the vampire aura, inside his body.

Even now while moving, Quinn was focusing, trying to fight against the energy. He could only guess that something had happened during his fight with Ray.

Not saying anything else about it, they continued further until they could see the large space docking station. It was a large oval shaped design that had an open top that allowed spaceships to fly in and out of.

"We have to get one of the ships on the top floor." Layla stated. "They might have even disabled access to all of the other floors."

Since there were guards all around the place, getting to the top without being seen was impossible. There was only one thing that could be done. Minny was placed on the floor, and Quinn had his eyes set on the 12 guards in one area in front of him.

[Nitro accelerate activated]

[Your skill is still on cooldown.]

[Your health will be used in place to activate the skill]

In a quick dash, Quinn had gotten over to the other side before the others could see him, and going from one vampire to the next, using the exact right amount of force, he was able to knock them all out.

The others quickly got in his shadow, as he scaled up the building and in the end, they had eventually reached the top floor.

There had to be hundreds of spaceships in the one area, and they had plenty to choose from, but there was a clear problem in front of them.

"I told you it was a good idea to wait up here!" A voice said. "When trying to catch the enemy, you need to think like the enemy."

"Yes, although it was my plan to come up to the top floor."

"Ah! You just got lucky." The male voice said back.

When Quinn and Layla looked at the people in front of them who were waiting for them, both of her hands were shaking, their lips quivered, and Minny knew why as well.

"That's Uncle Fex... and Uncle Xander, right... and also Auntie Muka. Why... why are they all trying to hurt us... how can they not remember us." Minny started to cry.

"Look what you did!" Fex shouted. "Xander, it was because of your face that you made the girl cry."

"Me." Xander pointed at himself. "But... Why did she call us uncle? I have never met her before, have you?"

The two looked at each other rightly confused.

"That doesn't matter, our leaders and Jim have given us an order, we are to stop this family from leaving this place." Muka said, as she held up her mace. The whole thing could be a trick."

Quinn walked forward in front of the others, and as he did, Muka charged forward and gathered all of her aura into the mace trying to slam it on top of Quinn's head, he lifted his hand and blocked the attack with ease.

Meanwhile, Fex attempted to use his string and wrapped it around Quinn's hand but when he pulled he didn't budge at all.

Xander attempted to move forward, but Layla, with her hand out, was stopping him from getting involved in the fight at all.

"I don't want to fight any of you... you are all my friends." Quinn said with a pained look. "I know you can't remember me, I know it's impossible for you to think that way, but Jim Eno has changed all of your memories."

Quinn thought about what to say to the others if he had ever come into this situation. He was unable to do so against Ray, but with these he could plant a seed of doubt.

"In your memories, everything you did, Jim Eno was by your side. If that is truly the case then ask him questions that only he should know.

"Ask him about the time me and you became sworn blood brothers. Ask him about when we first met in the military academy! " The anger was directed at Fex when it took place.

"Don't ask him about recent events, but events that were ingrained long ago. When the vampire settlement was in trouble, and I was framed for murder... who worked together!" Quinn looked at Muka.

Layla now could see what he was doing.

"And ask him about us Xander!" Layla shouted. "Search in your memories of when the humans invaded the Settlement. When we looked after your and Amy's kids together. Something has to not make sense."

All of them still didn't seem convinced, but Quinn was hoping while he was away, the seeds of doubt would start to spread.

Quinn let out his hand, as he could feel Layla had activated her soul weapon, she started to absorb his Qi that he was giving to her. With that, she made a big push of the third stage, as well as using her telekinesis ability, and a large wave of force was suddenly felt on all three as they were chucked in the air and falling down to the ground.

There was no time for sad thoughts, as the Talen family got on board one of the small ships, and started to fly away into space. As to where they were going or who they could go to they had no idea.

A few moments later when they were in the clear and aimlessly just flying about, Quinn placed his head down on the table.

"What... do I do?" Quinn said, and his family had decided to leave him alone, at least for now.

Changing his clothes, Quinn took off the heavy armour, and changed back to his guard uniform he was using before. It was what he used as a soldier in the fight as well. It was lighter than his armour and there was something else he was trying to figure out as well.

'I have given you what you need... that's what Edvard said...'

Thinking back to when Edvard went to attack him, Quinn noticed something weird, at the last moment, rather than a fist, it changed to hand, as he was reaching out, trying to give him something.

Checking over the guard uniform, Quinn had eventually found it, or more rightly so, it had found him as a small spider hopped off from his body and stood there right in front of him.

Looking at the spider, Quinn could only think of one person... Logan.

[Quest completed: survive]

Chapter 2105: An Evolved Form

Before looking at the little spider that seemed to be moving up and down like it was at some type of rave, Quinn decided to take a look at his system. Because for the first time in a long time, he had received a 'quest complete' message.

Since he had been living a peaceful life, and even before then, Quinn never saw messages from the system. On top of that, he could utilise nearly all of his skills without having to access the system like he used to do in the past.

Which was why he rarely went into his system. Even simple things like the inspect skill he would use without a second thought and it had pretty much become a part of his life to see information about certain items.

Although the information it would give him, from time to time, would be next to useless, still at times if the system didn't show him something that would also be valuable information.

'I struggled... I really did struggle when fighting against Ray. I thought I was at my peak in terms of strength. I have strong weapons, some of the best armour and more, yet Ray was still able to beat me with almost raw power.

'The system, it already maxed out my stats, and other than the energy I use, such as Blood Aura, Qi, and the Shadow, I haven't been able to improve in terms of any other aspects. If it's a reward at this stage... and for surviving, then it has to be something... something that can help me out so the same thing doesn't happen again.'

This was a rare feeling for Quinn. It had been a while since he felt like he was relying on the system for help, a way for him to grow in strength. Finding out how to use the shadow, improving his blood and fighting skills, it all felt like it was him before.

'Alright, let's see what the reward is.'

[Quest complete]

[The Transformation 'Bloodsucker' has evolved]

[Your blood aura has evolved, allowing for your Bloodsucker form to advance. The 'Bloodsucker' Transformation will no longer be referred to as 'Bloodsucker' and instead is now referred to as the 'Vampire Demon' form]

[You have unlocked the ability to transform into the Vampire Demon form.]

'A new form... this was not what I expected.' Quinn's eyes widened as he looked at the words from the system, and started to think back.

He remembered when he himself had unlocked the Bloodsucker form. Originally, it was a form that was banned from the vampire settlement. There were often two ways one would become a Bloodsucker.

Either from the starvation of blood the vampire would change only caring about one thing, or from consuming too much blood without weaning off of it. Eventually becoming addicted, it would make the vampire body feel like it was craving for blood the whole time.

Originally, it was banned due to the mindlessness it would cause in a vampire, but later it was proved that the form could be controlled. This was true of Quinn and others as well. Quinn himself would turn into the form by expending all of the other energies out from his body and allowing the vampire aura to only be left inside.

It was a form that doubled his stats, and made him twice as strong and fast, however there were multiple problems with the form.

One of the biggest was the health of a Bloodsucker was extremely low, and on top of that the use of blood skills was out of the question as well as using his ability. For some reason, he just was unable to control his body as well.

Because of all of these downsides, Quinn didn't use the Bloodsucker form much. His armour skills, his absolute blood control, and his shadow ability always just seemed like a better option in terms of fighting and versatility, but this new form, he was sure that there would be large differences.

'The fact that it's called a Vampire Demon form, doesn't sound too pleasing. Weren't those from the same place as Immortui also called Demons?'

As Quinn went to look into more information about the demon form, he suddenly saw something wizz past his face, and a few seconds later, Minny had landed in his lap.

"Galen... Mum said we were not allowed to go near dad!" Minny shouted.

Turning his head, Quinn could see that Galen was on the floor, standing and calm as he looked at the two of them.

'Were the two of them playing catch or something?' Quinn thought.

Judging from Minny's tone of voice, it didn't sound like she was taking it easy in trying to catch her brother either. Although she hadn't transformed into her celestial form, she was still fast for a vampire.

'Is Galen really that fast? I have started to notice some strange things about Galen, which I can't help but worry about.' Quinn thought.

Lifting up Minny, Quinn could see that the small robotic spider was still safe, and after what happened, he thought that it was best if he looked at what was on it before the kids destroyed it.

Placing Minny down, Layla soon came behind, and they were both ready.

"Is this what I think it is?" Layla asked.

"Yeah, Edvard... he snuck it onto my body. I can only guess that the two of them met somehow."

"Wait, if he gave this to you, and communicated through Edvard, then does that mean he remembered and that he's not really on Jim's side?" Layla said surprised.

"We can't get our hopes up. We saw the fact that everyone thinks of us as enemies, and something like that had even worked on Ray. So it's more likely than not that it worked on more people than it didn't."

It was true, but the fact that Edvard said this had the answers they would need, they were putting hope into whatever it was.

When Quinn went to touch the spider, it started to move about. It went over to the computer terminal and soon transformed into a nano stick. After that, the onboard screen started to appear, and just as they thought, the person that was on the screen was none other than Logan.

The area he was in was familiar to them as well. It looked like whatever message this was, it was recorded in Green Tower.

"The person who is currently speaking now is Logan Green, and the contents of this message are meant for a single person only, and that person is Quinn Talen. If you are not Quinn Talen, then you should stop this video now."

It was a strange way to start off a video message that was for sure, but at the end of the day Logan had always been a little strange. However, this did mean one thing, for some reason Logan was reaching out to them, and directly to them as well.

"Now that we have established that you are Quinn Talen, I shall proceed with my message. The first thing I would like to say is that I apologise. There are two things that I apologise for, the first is that I do not remember you.

"I'm sure that this will come as a shock to you, but my predictions are that you will have already figured this out as you talk to others, because I am not the only one that has forgotten you, but everyone has.

"Which brings me onto the second reason why I will apologise, and that is because I was unable to stop this from happening. From what I have learned, I would have done everything in my power to help you Quinn Talen.

"After much deliberation I had decided to make this video. In this video, I will explain everything I have found out. Why, even though I have forgotten about you, I still know about you and your deeds, as well as information on what you can do to reverse this whole thing. What I'm talking about, of course, is everyone's memories."

Clenching his fist, Quinn realised what Edvard meant now, this was it. Edvard had risked himself to get this information over to Quinn, and he had succeeded in finding out. It was the answer to turning everything back to the way it was.

Chapter 2106: Logan is different

Seeing Logan on the screen saying what he was saying, it felt calming. Although Quinn's name in the past was referred to as the Hero, the one who had resolved the issues with the vampires, celestials, and the Dalki, that effort wasn't something that was done on his own.

People often forgot about that, and it was one of the things that Quinn wanted to correct, was the credit. It wasn't just his effort, it was the effort of the whole of the Cursed faction. When everyone's memories had changed, it meant that whatever the problems were, this time he needed to try and resolve them himself.

However, it proved difficult and even now, Logan was helping him in some way.

"There is a lot for me to explain, so I need you to listen carefully." Logan said on the video, as he moved and went to a floating orb device. It was large in size, and had several visible currents running through it.

"This device here is the Green family's legacy. A device that was created so one could pass on visual memories to the next person. You can think of it as a diary, only far more accurate.

"My family, when they had perished, they had used this device to pass on their memories to me. Since then, I have also been updating the diary with my own memories to pass on my legacy. At the same time to keep a record of information I had, as well as that of Richard Eno. It goes without saying that device can only work with a member of the Green family, which means it can not be tampered with."

Quinn was figuring it out, figuring out why Logan had decided to send him this message.

"You see, for me there were no differences in my day to day life. I did as I usually would have done, and when I went to update the diary, that's when I figured out there was a problem. The visuals and the memories that were currently in the diary didn't match up with my own.

"What I could remember in my head, in my own brain, didn't match with what was recorded. In fact the machine also realised that, stating if I would like to override the current data with what was already in my head. Because of this, I went through and watched all of the visuals."

The Orb was starting to display holograms in the video, showing videos of what they had been through and showing a lot of Quinn in his memories.

"How was this possible, how could someone who was so involved in my life, be someone that I no longer had any recognition of anymore. In the end, I had to make a choice. Do I trust what I could remember now in my mind, or what is recorded?

"Going by my ethos, machines are far more trustable than humans, and that includes myself. Which is why I decided to help you Quinn.

"I have to admit it is strange, me putting in so much effort to help someone that I don't know, but as I watched the past videos over and over, I realised how much you must have meant to me for me to do all of that."

Seeing and hearing everything so far was bringing a tear to Layla's eye. Similar to Quinn, she too was feeling the strain of not having everyone. Yes, she had her family, but no one to talk to about the past as it was too risky to make friends and more.

"That Logan, he's one crazy guy." Layla said, wiping her face.

"You're right, only Logan would record past events and on top of that, only he would trust what was on a machine rather than what was in his head." Quinn stated.

"As I researched more into the mess, I found out that my own lab was used to create programs that would erase any data, articles or videos that mentioned you. I have managed to obtain all that data and store it in a database, but at the moment, there is no point in releasing it, and it would alert Jim to my own position in all of this.

"When looking at the data, it was quite obvious as to who was behind everything, but getting to the certain individual was troublesome even for me, so I needed some help. Searching through the memories I tried to find someone who might believe me if I told them the truth and I had finally found someone.

"Someone who has the same face as yourself and is kept by Jim's side, Vicnet Eno."

This was good news for Quinn, due to the past between the two, he was somewhat worried that Jim would kill Vincent the moment the two of them met.

"Not only did Vincent have a calm head on his shoulders and could understand the data, if he was ever to meet you it would be more than enough evidence.

Fortunately, the two of us met easier than expected as Jim had sent Vincent to me.

"He had asked the two of us to create a device that could stretch the effect of abilities outward. To research how certain conditions worked and more. During this time I spoke to Vincent a lot, and managed to convince him of the truth, at the same time we had finished completing the device, not fully knowing what it was being used for.

"Now for the important parts for yourself. Working with Vincent, we were able to uncover a lot. Jim asks Vincent to do a lot of tasks on his behalf, which has allowed him to find out a lot."

Quinn and Layla leaned forward making sure not to miss a word, as Logan went into detail about the next subject.

"There is a person, who used to work side by side with Jim, as well as Jack Truedream. During their travels it was because of this person they were able to get backhand deals across the universe to start the Marpo Cruise business.

"This person's name goes by Malik. An ability user who is able to change memories. The ability is a powerful one and there seems to be no limit to what he can change, adjust or replace completely from one's mind.

"When cross referencing it with other information, it is without a doubt an ability that would be considered god slayer level."

Quinn's heart thumped, there was such a dangerous person, this entire time that he had no clue about. If it truly was a god slayer level ability, then it would also explain how Ray had been influenced as well.

After all, even Russ, another one with a god slayer ability was able to copy the powers of the celestials and Quinn's shadow power. Although he was limited by the amount of MC cells he could use.

Without having one's ability themselves it was hard to know how the MC cells would be used. Was it the amount of memories that changed or depending on who it was used on. If it was the latter, after fighting Ray, Quinn still couldn't imagine the ability working on him.

"A strong ability like that needs a strong condition. Even Jack Truedream needed to touch his victims through their lips. As for Malik, the condition was a touch. Without touching another he was unable to change their memories."

Both Quinn and Layla raised an eyebrow at that point, because it didn't make any sense. According to Layla, everyone's memories had changed after they experienced a headache. It would be impossible to change people's memories one by one like this.

"By now, you are perhaps slightly confused." Logan stated. "Which makes sense, but if you listen back to what I said before, me and Vicnent had successfully created a device that would allow one to use their ability in a wide range. However, even if Malik was placed in this device it would have little effect.

"Although the amount of MC cells he has is large, it still wasn't enough to have a wide effect for his ability. I ran the calculations and it didn't make sense.

"That was until I realised that there was another person, who has been removed from our memories. If it was with him, then it would work."

"Another person?" Quinn thought.

Chapter 2107: A small Itch

When thinking about the question that had been asked, Quinn wondered, what benefit would Jim gain from removing all memories of a certain individual. He understood himself, and from Layla being the leader of the Red vampires, Quinn understood her as well.

At first, Quinn thought of Layla, but that couldn't have been the case, because she was right next to him and by his side, but then Quinn started to think further. Russ, was currently on Earth and he had been relying all the information he could find back to them.

Yet, he stated that there was one group who he was unable to get any information at all on. It was the Blade family. Their powers could also be taken advantage of, and if they managed to get to one person in particular, then things were somewhat starting to make sense.

"I think I gave you enough time for you to have figured out the answer yourself." Logan finally spoke, he had been quiet for a while, it almost looked like the video had stopped, but he had simply just predicted how long it would take for Quinn to come to an answer.

"The person that was removed from everyone's mind was the one known as Sil. The strange thing is, the Blade family themselves are still something that is in everyone's mind, yet Sil is not.

"From the information I have, my wife is related to Sil yet she has no memory of him whatsoever. However, from asking her a set of questions, I was beginning to learn the power of the Blade family.

"With that, I managed to put two and two together. What if Sil managed to touch Malik? What would occur, would Malik change his memories at that point, equally wouldn't that mean that Sil had obtained his power?

"You see the Blade's power is limited to those that are human and although Malik has a god slayer power, he is certainly human. With Sil's power, using Malik's power as well as all the strongest abilities he has gathered, if he were to use the device that we created, then a mass change of memories is certainly possible."

Quinn was just imagining the amount of MC cells Sil would have, but worse of all, was the fact that if Sil was behind this, it meant that his memoires had changed as well.

'Wasn't Sil meant to go out exploring again? How did they manage to come across him? On top of that, even if they did come across him, how were they able to get close enough to touch him.

"I started to do some research, along with Vincent, to find out what had occurred. Luckily, Jim and Jack seem to have too much faith in these memory changing abilities. The Blade ship was easy to find, and there was even footage that I was able to recover.

"If I simply told you what had occurred, it would be difficult to believe or comprehend. Which is why I have set up a simulation for you of the events that happened that day. Once the video ends, my little spider will plug into your ship's mainframe and give you coordinates to a certain location.

"It's to a beast planet, the coordinates will send you to a place where there is next to no life, but buried in the ground is a teleporter. Once you input these numbers, 5,6,2,4,7,7,9, the teleporter will activate. As for its location, it will be Earth.

"The teleporter will take you to one of the Green Family bases, in a canyon. No one knows about this other than I. There you will find out what happened to Sil, and from there you can communicate with me, and tell me your next move."

With that the video had ended and the spider was doing exactly as it said it would.

"Are we heading back to Earth then?" Layla asked.

"Of course we are." Quinn snapped back. "We need to find out what happened to Sil. If Logan thinks it's important for us to find out, then it has to be something big."

"But then, why didn't he tell us in the video? It's dangerous to go back to Earth with the way things are, even with Logan's set up."

"Then what do we do?" Quinn asked.

The room was filled with silence, as Layla didn't have an answer for that.

The spaceship was currently on autopilot, and rather than argue with Quinn, Layla had decided to look after the kids while trying to calm them down. She would try her best to explain what was happening and what they were going to do, even though she still wasn't too sure herself.

As for Quinn, he couldn't stop thinking about how they had managed to get Sil.

'If what Logan is saying is true, and Sil was the cause of the mass memory change, it would mean they would have had to have gotten close to him.'

'Did Sil lose a fight, but how, he is as strong as me and in some cases I would say stronger. There's Ray, if it was him then maybe he could have been the one to beat Sil. Or perhaps it was Sil that beat Ray, but no, then that still wouldn't make sense.'

No matter how Quinn went about it, the fact that both Sil and Ray had their memories changed meant one of them had to have lost a fight or have been tricked.

'I guess, we'll find out soon.'

Back in the vampire settlement, it had been a while since Quinn and the others had escaped. Since Muka, and those that were along with her had seen it first hand, they had reported this to the others.

The search had been called off, and they had failed at their task. Currently, all of them were at an Inn to gather around a table. All of those that had failed at stopping Quinn from escaping.

"We can't be down forever about it." Fex said, as he lifted up his glass. "And besides, they didn't seem that dangerous to me."

"And you would know what dangerous is?" Xander replied. "Didn't you hear the news that's coming from the Namrik planet? He attacked the original leaders!"

"Yes, but how did one manage to get from there to here so fast, that doesn't make any sense." Muka added.

"A lot of things haven't been making sense lately." Fex took a big chug of his drink. "You know, over the course of time, I would say that I have gotten quite good at reading others' facial expressions.

"When he said those words up there. When he called me blood brother, I could tell it was painful for him. If the reports are true about what he did on the Namrik planet, then at any time he could have killed us.

"It would have been the safer option to leave no witnesses, and yet he didn't."

Xander slammed the table with his hand at that point.

"Don't tell me you actually believe what he said. That's what he wanted to do, to put doubts in our heads and you are falling right for their trap."

"Well, there is one way to find out." Muka said. "We have all been through a lot with Jim, but lately he has been distant with us. If we were to ask to meet with him, and talk about a few things, wouldn't we be able to confirm if what this person said is true or not."

The other two didn't say anything, because it was a crazy suggestion in the first place, but they both did have a small itch nagging them to find out.

As the three were talking, running in from outside was one of the vampires, as they were shouting about a commotion outside. A loud sound could be heard of jets rumbling and the whole settlement was slightly shaking.

As the three went outside and looked toward the sky they could see one of the Marpo Cruise ship's had returned, but it wasn't one with Jim Eno on board, it was one with Jack Truedream instead.

Chapter 2108: Green House Visitors

The Talen family had decided to continue to follow the instructions that were set out by Logan Green. After analysing the situation, Layla actually believed it was the best thing to do, because after all, they still had no direction or place to go.

However, there was one thing that she had suggested to Quinn before heading to Earth. While they were still heading to the beast planet, she had brought it up.

"I think we should contact Russ and tell him to meet us there." Layla suggested.

"Russ... He has been gathering details about what has been going on Earth for a while right?" Quinn replied.

Russ, was a god slayer, who had a strong ability and one way or another was also able to escape the memory change. The reason was still unclear, which also meant, it was unclear if he could escape it if it was to happen again.

On top of that, unlike Fex and the others, Russ wasn't particularly an ally. He was someone that Quinn had been controlling with Qi control, and although the Qi control was still present, there were a number of thoughts going through his head.

What if he used a family member of his as a hostage to tell him to take the Qi control away. Perhaps he would need to update the Qi commands, to suggest to protect and not harm anyone from the Talen family.

"I know you don't trust Russ so much, but Quinn you have to think about it. We might find out how all of this mind mess has happened but what if we can't reverse it. Are you planning on going against Jim? Or Jack."

"Jack has a whole army of Dalki behind his back, and the support of the humans. They're not the same as they were before either. There are possibly multiple high spiked Dalki, and those that have abilities. While at the same time, you then have Jim, the vampires and fighting against all our friends."

"I know... you like to try to do things on your own, to try not involve others in all of this, but you already tried that and it didn't work out. So maybe, it's time we start looking for help, and I think Russ can be a big help to us."

Putting it in that perspective, Quinn felt like he had only touched the tip of the iceberg with everything that was going on. The thing was, he had failed at the first hurdle.

"Tell him to meet us at Logan's base, but he needs to make sure he is not followed. He is to meet us outside of the base, and not step a foot inside."

It didn't take long for them to reach the planet where Logan had left the teleporter and it was in the exact position he had described it would be. There were a couple

of beasts in the area, but they quickly went away when Quinn showed a little of his energy.

While on the planet, it did give Quinn an idea. Combining what Layla had said before. Either way, he needed to get something else out of the way first. After digging up the teleporter and typing in the code that Logan had given it was time for them to do the rest.

Each of them held on to each other as they went through the teleporter and moments later, they were no longer on the same planet. They had reached the other side. There were clear blue skies, the sun was shining bright, and the ground was hard and orange.

"Wait, Galen... are you okay!" Layla quickly turned around. The vampire settlement had the sun blocked out, and since they had been living there they also didn't bother getting a ring for little Galen.

Of course, there were those who would build up tolerance to the pain from the Sun, but Galen was just too young, and there was no set training for him to do so.

As Layla rushed towards him, they soon saw that he was just standing in the sun fine. There were no signs of discomfort on his face, nor was he itching his skin rapidly, like vampires would do.

"Are you okay?" Layla asked.

Since Galen was still unable to speak, he nodded his head.

"So, that's the new little family member. He certainly takes after all of you." A male voice said from behind.

When Quinn turned his head, he could see Russ was standing there. He had his long blonde hair, down by his side, and looked to be in white coloured clothing, making him almost dressed as a saint, even though he was nothing like one.

Immediately, Quinn moved to his side, and placed his head on his hand. Russ went to bat it away, but before he could Quinn gave a few words of warning.

"Let me do what I need to do, otherwise I'll squeeze your head so hard it will explode like a watermelon."

Russ stopped there and gulped as he could feel the Qi, flowing into his body and up toward his head. For some reason, Quinn was even more frustrated than he usually would have been and it was clear that he wasn't in the mood for jokes.

Lifting his hand from Russ's head, the new Qi commands were made clear to him.

"You are to protect the Talen family with your life, and in no way are you to harm any of them."

"I..." Russ looked behind Quinn and the other three. "I understand, but if you want me to help protect your family, can you stop making my job so difficult?"

The look from Quinn's face showed that he didn't quite understand what Russ meant by this.

"Your name." Russ explained. "I know you have been quite busy you see. I knew you wanted everyone to remember your name, but I didn't think you wanted them to know it in this way."

"What's happened?" Layla asked, stepping forward. "Is it... to do with Earth?"

Russ nodded.

"Everyone practically knows who Quinn Talen is now, as they keep broadcasting the news as to what he has done. They're selling the story as though he is some type of celestial Demon that managed to come through the cracks before they closed the portal.

"Your appearance has been shared with everyone. I don't think it's a good idea for you to stay on Earth. At least that is the suggestion I would make."

It was to be expected, and with a spin like that, it also explained Quinn's absurd strength. The only thing Jim couldn't explain was his shadow powers, however the humans would care little about that.

Behind Russ, a large mansion that was partly built into a cliff side could be seen. It was square shaped, and looked to be made of a strong metal that looked as if it could withstand quite a beating. Just looking at it, they all knew that they were at the right base.

"It's okay." Quinn said. "We don't plan to stay here for long."

Walking up to the front entrance it was hard to tell where it was, since all of the front was made out of the same material but as they approached it, a sound was heard, and the door was already starting to open up on its own.

They walked into a large open room, with high ceilings and the area was completely white. There was a sofa, a large TV and a kitchen area to the right of them that looked like it could entertain fifty or so guests.

As they took steps on the floor, the panels underneath them would light up and make a small chime. It certainly was filled with technology and a certain style.

"This is so cool!" Minny said. "Can't we just live here!"

"I'm sorry, but this place doesn't belong to us, so we can only stay here for a short while." Layla explained. After hearing what Russ said, she was too afraid that they would eventually find out about this place as well.

Following Quinn, as he went first in case there was anything, Quinn soon stopped.

"There's someone else here." Quinn stated.

The others could now hear it too, because the strange noise the panels would make as they stepped on them were continuing to be heard. Turning around the corner, the person could finally be seen and as soon as they met the others, the person bowed down in front of them.

"It is nice to meet you all." The person said.

"Daddy.... have I seen her before?" Minny asked, not too sure. It was the same for the others, but Quinn could remember her, and he never expected to see her in a place like this.

"Ceril.... Do you remember me?" Quinn asked.

Chapter 2109.1: Simulation of the past (Part 1)

The person standing in front of Russ and the Talen family, had fair skin that almost had a tint of blue in it. A slim figure and was wearing an overflowing dress, which revealed that on parts of her skin there were what looked like fish scales.

This was because the person known as Ceril wasn't human. She was from the Mermerial race. A race that humans had yet to come in contact with. However, Ceril wasn't a normal Mermerial, and one could see it in her eyes.

"Is she a vampire?" Russ asked, as he could see her red eyes, a trait of the vampires, yet the others knew due to their sense of smell, that Ceril didn't quite smell like a vampire.

"I apologise." Ceril stated as she knelt over. "I do not... remember you. However, Logan has explained to me about who you are. He has been looking after me, and sent me here a while ago. He said to wait for you and to help you with whatever is needed.

"I would like to add, although I do not remember you. I know you have done a lot for me. I remember what happened on my planet, and although Jim is the one filled in my memories, Logan had made it quite clear that he was not the one that helped me. In the first place, it seems like he doesn't even know I exist."

It made sense. Since Jim wasn't aware of what Quinn had done while away. He had no clue about the Memerials, nor did he know that he had created something completely unique, something wasn't a vampire, or human, or Mermerial.

"I'm sorry I haven't been able to help you much, after what I did." Quinn said.

The last he remembered of Ceril was that she had been training with Mitchell, to get a control of her powers. Other than that, he actually had no clue what she could do, but after taking her away from her home planet, and turning her into this, he felt responsible for her as well.

For now, he was just thankful that Logan had been looking after her. If Jim did find her, he could only imagine what he might attempt to do.

"It's okay, I know the situation is complicated. I'm just thankful that you have finally arrived. Please follow me." Ceril said, as she started to walk away going further into the large building.

"Is this a trap?" Russ asked.

"I don't think so, and I can't sense anyone else being here." Quinn replied, walking ahead.

Since Quinn was up in front, it did give Russ a bit of confidence as well. After his last scuffle by the side of Layla against the Dalki, he was a bit worried that he might come across some dangerous people, at least when travelling alongside these people.

Eventually Ceril had led them into another large open room, but this one was completely empty apart from a large electronic orb that was hanging from the ceiling.

Once everyone was inside, the door closed behind them, and Ceril turned around to face the others.

"What you are about to see is a simulation. Logan stated he was able to find the Blade ship. It was mostly destroyed but he was able to recover data from a number of different cameras that were placed around the ship.

"With all the information he gathered, he was able to make a simulation of the events that had occurred on that day. After that, there is a final video that Logan wishes me to play for you all."

Nothing else was said, and there was no time for the others to ask questions as the ball on the ceiling started to spin, and the room around them was starting to change. It felt like they were being transported, and in a way that was exactly what was happening, they were being transported to the Blade ship.

It felt like they were really there, as they could see the inside of the ship, the ground was made out of metal, and they weren't sure if they were imagining it or not, but it seemed like they could smell it as well, and that's when they could see... currently, they were inside some type of meeting room on the ship. There were several seats but there were only three individuals inside.

Shiro, Borden, and finally, there was Sil as well.

'Sil... was on the Blade ship all along, he never went back out?' Quinn thought, seeing this.

Sil was the one who had called both Shiro and Borden to come meet him, yet he hadn't said anything for a while, and the two weren't so sure of themselves.

"Sil, is everything alright?" Shiro asked. "You have been worried since you've been here. Every little report that the Blade's got, whether that be about the Chained we have found or something else, you have been involved in."

"Don't misunderstand brother." Borden said. "It's not like we don't like you being here with us. You are part of our family and you are always welcome here, it's just we are worried and you still won't speak to us."

Sil, finally let out a big sigh, as it had come to this, he felt like he had to tell them.

"You know, we were attacked recently by the being known as a celestial right? If I wasn't here, do you think you would have been able to take them on?"

The simulation paused for a second, as footage appeared in front of the others, of Sil taking care of the celestial. Quinn had known there were multiple attacks, but didn't know about what had happened to Sil.

Unfortunately the footage only showed what happened on the Blade ship, and not what had happened when Sil had left for an unknown reason.

"That was unusual, but we survived that, so why are you still acting the way you are acting now?" Shiro asked.

"A while ago, I looked into the future with my powers, and I saw that the Blade family was completely destroyed." Sil explained. "In the vision, I wasn't originally there. You see, because before that I saw another vision of celestials coming to destroy Earth. So I left to take of them."

"When the celestials had attacked the Blade ship, I thought I managed to fend them off. I was here this time, unlike in my vision, I was able to fend them off, but... I was curious. Curious to see what the future was like."

The other two could tell that it was hard for Sil to speak.

"I did what I shouldn't have done and looked into the future one more time. All I can say is, the Blade family, everyone, is still not safe. The problem is when I'm looking that far ahead, it's hard to get an accurate time, accurate set of events."

"It's hard to control the amount of MC cells to use, to see a certain period ahead. So I have no clue what caused it, or when it will happen, but I know it will happen. Which is why I'm staying here."

It was also why Sil didn't like to use his ability to look so far ahead, because now, what about the first vision he had seen? Would that come true now that he wasn't actively out there trying to stop them?

It was hard to say, and since Quinn was busy dealing with other problems, Sil didn't want him to get involved.

Quinn knew what he was watching, he was watching how Sil was involved in all of this. How it had come to this point, and it would give him a lot of answers that he was looking for.

The video soon had skipped over, a few hours, days there was no frame of reference for how long it had been, but soon the whole ship was sounding an alarm.

"There is a gigantic vessel heading our way, we have tried to open communications with it, but it's refusing to respond." One of the men in the command said.

Sil, Shiro, and Borden had rushed to the large command room where there was open glass that allowed them to see directly into space, and there they could see it. A gigantic ship heading towards them, and written on the side were the words Marpo Cruise.

"Sir, the ship has opened up communications with us!"

"Put them through." Shiro ordered.

"Oh, I bet you weren't expecting to hear this voice. Ah, but this is a nice feeling isn't it. I'm almost getting a sense of Deja vu, of travelling to a particular Island, unaware of what was to come of me. This time, things won't be the same."

The voice was without a doubt Jack Truedream.

Chapter 2110.2: Simulation of the past (Part 2)

The voice wasn't recognizable to Sil, so he tried to go through his memory bank, but it just wasn't ringing a bell, but for one of the ones by his side, Shiro's body was shaking with uncertainty.

"Shiro, who is it? Is it someone that we should be worried about?" Sil asked, seeing his reaction.

"I'm not Shiro..." he answered. "It's Vorden, and maybe you don't remember too much about what happened back then, but it's Jack Truedream, one of the big four. He had attacked Blade island back then, searching for Quinn's power, but Hilston and the rest on the island got rid of him. Of course, we knew he was alive..."

There wasn't much else for Vorden to say, as Sil could figure it out based on the words he had said before. Jack Truedream had a grudge against the Blade family, like many others did as well.

'That damn father of ours!' Sil clenched his fist. 'Even now, his past is coming back to haunt us. How long do we have to deal with his crap for! We hate him as much as our enemies do!'

It was painful in a way, the whole reason why the Blades currently existed was to try and make up for the misdeeds of their family. Most of those on the Blade ship were from generations that were abused by Hilston.

"It doesn't matter who it is, we have to treat every threat the same as we have done so far. Get everyone ready!" Sil shouted and ordered.

Usually it would be Shiro giving the orders, but ever since Sil had seen visions and stayed on the ship, when it was an attack like this, this was how he would get.

There weren't just those with the Blade ability on board the ship. There were also recruits, those that they had saved and wished to help them with their cause. It was also useful to have them on board so the Blades were able to copy their abilities and use them in combat like they needed to now.

The Blade ship had several round glass rooms that were attached to the outside of the ship. It was designed this way so they could do combat in space in their own unique way. The specially made, what looked like glass, was actually formed out of beast crystal energy.

It kept oxygen in so they could breathe well, while also allowing them to use their powers to fire off attacks one way. If an attack was to come in toward them, the crystal energy would instead be used as a shield.

A special invention that had been made for them, by none other than Logan Green.

The problem was, the Marpo Cruise was a behemoth compared to them, it was around a hundred times bigger than their ship, and they could see several of their weapons, cannons, and more pointed towards them.

Some lit up as they were using crystal energy, while others fired out what looked like missiles through space.

"Everyone, shields!" Shiro shouted.

Using their powers, large force fields were made, stopping the multiple energy blasts before it came toward them. From far away, it looked like a one sided battle as a heavy shower of lasers were being shot at a small object.

Once they had defended themselves from the attacks, the Blades started to use their own powers, and energy blasts from the ship to fire back. The cannons from the ship did next to nothing as it looked like the Marpo Cruise ship had a strong energy shield that could take on the incoming attacks.

However, some of the Blade's abilities allowed them to attack in different ways. With the ability of acceleration, and the ability to make a large weight lightless. They were using solid heavy beast balls, to hold onto and then shoot them through the space right at the ship,

The objects were so small, but powerful, that they broke through the energy shields destroying part of the Marpo Cruise ship. The only problem was, the damage was so small, that it wasn't even visible from the distance they were at.

Not only that, but the energy blasts weren't the only thing that they needed to worry about, as there looked to be hundreds of missiles in the space coming towards them. The Blades using their powers of heat, wind, and more tried to hit them, and once in a while an attack would hit and explode the missile in space, but there were just too many.

With their concentration on the missiles, an energy blast managed to get through, and had hit the side of the ship, causing the whole ship to veer slightly to the right as impact was made.

" A fire has started and is quickly spreading!" One reported.

"Then get the water ability users to get rid of it, and we will move from there."

Several alerts, beeps, and alarms were going off in the command centre, showing that the missiles were still coming their way. As one of the workers looked at the screen, he couldn't help but gulp.

"They're all going to hit us... we don't have enough power to stop them." He gulped.

The sound of footsteps could be heard, and Sil was seen walking past all of the workers that were sitting there on their computer terminals. Sil had stopped as he reached the edge of the large glass.

"I will get rid of these, so just focus on everything else for now." Sil lifted his hands, and as he did, the inside of the missiles started to crumble and exploded in space. Some set off a chain reaction blowing up those next to them.

With others, Sil moved one of the missiles into the others, blowing it up. In less than a second, all of the missiles that were in space, had exploded and nearly covered the view of everything they could see.

The other Blade members were left in awe, their mouths wide open. They had seen other Blades, there were those that could use the same ability, but they hadn't quite seen just what Sil was capable of doing. Some had heard the rumours, but it wasn't the same as seeing it in person.

'For someone to have so much strength, to destroy those missiles from so far away.'

The missiles seemed to have stopped after seeing what Sil could do, and they continued to stick to the energy blasts. The Blades were holding up, but it was making Shiro nervous.

"This is bad, we can't continue on like this. We are hardly putting a dent, and although we are blocking their attacks now, our people will just tire out and run out of MC cells." Shiro said, as he was looking for advice from his fellow leaders who were also in charge of running different departments of the Blades but they were all silent with no suggestions.

'We have to fight them head to head! That's the only way!' Raten stated, inside Shiro's head.

'Head to head?' Shiro replied.

'I don't usually agree with Raten, but he's right.' Vorden added. 'We can't win a battle in space. In a battle like this, it's either our MC cells run out first or they run out of beast crystals to use, and I doubt they came unprepared. We have to land the ship on a planet and take the battle to them.'

Shiro thought about it for a while, as he looked at Sil. Even Sil was unable to use his full cabilties.

"Alright... land the ship on the closest planet, we're taking the fight to the land!" Shiro ordered.

From the Marpo Cruise, Jack could see the ship was making a manoeuvre and he could guess what it was trying to do.

"Oh... bad move. You would have had a lot more chances with a battle in space... this will only make things end quicker." Jack said to himself.

Sil was still standing by the glass and he could see the ship was starting to move, but he still wanted to do something.

"Just because I'm in space, I'm not so weak." Sil exclaimed, as he held out his hand, and one of the large meteoroids that were in space, started to move. It was picking up speed, going faster and faster, heading right towards the Marpo Cruise.

Chapter 2111.3: Simulation of the past (Part 3)

In space there were a number of different things one could use. Meteorites for instance would orbit around certain planets, moving slightly. However, with a bit of help, these pieces of rock that were mostly harmless could become dangerous weapons, especially in the hands of someone powerful.

"Let's see how they deal with this." Sil said, as he chucked both of his hands down, using his powers. At the same time the meteorite in space was hurled right directly towards the Marpo Cruise ship.

The size of the two were still uncomparable, but this would certainly do a large amount of damage at the speed the meteorite was moving.

"Sil... I thought we had seen it all, but all this time away, you were still gaining strength and getting stronger." Shiro commented.

There were smiles on those in the command room. They were happy to know that they had someone like Sil on their side, and could only imagine the look on the face of the others.

However, of course Jack Truedream and those on the Marpo Cruise ship weren't just going to sit back and do nothing. From their angle, they were unsure what had happened, but a large blast of power went out right toward the meteorite.

It didn't look like it had come from any of the canons, or blasters that were on the ship, but had come directly from the front. As it hit the meteorite, it soon broke apart and scattered into small pieces.

'That's okay.' Sil thought. 'I thought you might have something that could get rid of that.'

Now that the meteorite had broken into small bits, they were all still flying towards the Marpo Cruise ship, and the blasters were being used to fire and disintegrate the small pieces of rock, but there were far too many, and scattered thousands of pieces hit the ship, creating small holes all over the place.

The Marpo Cruise ship was damaged and it was a lot more damage than the small marks from before.

"Damn it! Do they even know how long it will take to repair everything!" Jack shouted. "H, why didn't you stop that!"

"I made sure that none of the pieces hit anywhere important. Is it my job to look after the others as well?" H replied.

Jack almost looked nervous as he heard the answer.

"Well, you're not the one that did the damage in the first place. Just follow them, and get ready, and into the pods. We will stop any of them from flying away, while our ground force will take care of them."

The order was made, and those on the Marpo Cruise ship started to move.

The Blade ship was usually either in Earth's solar system or the Graylash planet solar system, and this time when the attack had appeared they were in the Graylash solar system, part of planets that used to belong to the vampires.

They had moved areas due to a mission that the Blade family had been requested to help with.

The problem was some of the planets were heavily populated, while others weren't so much.

"Head to the old vampire settlement. I think that area is safe enough." Shiro ordered.

It was the planet the vampires used to live on before it had been moved by Quinn, to the Daisy planet. The old settlement, which no longer had any of the castles as such, but due to where it used to be and what it used to represent, it hadn't been inhabited like the other planets.

It was further than the planet which was closest to them, but it was worth it, because they could imagine they had a pretty big fight on their hands.

'Still, I can't help but shake off this uneasy feeling.' Shiro thought. 'They aren't using the missiles like they were before, and are just firing at us with energy blasts. The numbers have lowered and there are plenty of their attacks that are missing as well.'

'Either they're running low on beast crystals and our ship being small is hard for them to hit, or it's almost as if they want us to fight on the ground.'

It was a big concern for Shiro but what choice did they have, and the Blades were the group with the strongest ability users. A fight, face to face, was the best option for them.

The ship had found the planet they were looking for, and it was moving in fast, but when they were close to the planet, having already breached its atmosphere a report had come in.

"Sir, it looks like the ship has stopped giving chase, and they are no longer firing at us!" A report came in.

Shiro, looked at the situation, and for now didn't quite land just yet. The ship was staying there, in place, not moving.

"What do you think they're trying to do?" Borden asked.

"I think they're trapping us and not letting us escape." Shiro replied. "If we try to break out, and escape, they will rain down everything they have on us. So right now we're stuck."

"Wait, so even if we land on the planet, what will we do? If we stay there, are they just going to stay there hovering in the air?" Borden asked.

"I don't think so. The Graylash family will find out, and we can easily send a report to the other groups to come to us. No matter how confident he is in his strength, I don't think that's a battle they want."

Shiro had to make a decision in the end, and since he hadn't quite landed yet, it looked like the Marpo Cruise ship was getting its lasers ready to try to shoot them out of the air regardless.

"Land, we have to land!"

The Blade ship had finally landed in a large black covered land. It was void of trees and the area was bumpy, with large craters similar to that of the moon surrounding Earth.

All of the Blades quickly evacuated from the ship, at any moment it could have blown up from attack and without them using their powers to protect it, it would be a problem.

In total, there were around 150 members that could use the Blade ability, and 200 staff with powers of their own. They were ready to move away from the ship, as they thought any second an attack from the Marpo Cruise ship would commence and the ship would be blown to pieces, however, they had already taken action and it wasn't the action they thought would be taken.

Flying through the sky, there were a number of black pods. They hailed down into the land crashing, breaking part of the hard ground and sticking up right. In the large wasteland of the area, they could just see countless numbers of these pods sticking up.

"They came from the ship right, what are they?" Borden asked.

The others were nervous, they readied their abilities, weapons and more, and stood next to each other for help.

Sil looked at all of their faces.

'I should have been able to stop this... it shouldn't have come to this.' Sil thought as he walked in front of them, in front of them all, standing there as if he was ready to protect them, but they wouldn't let him stand on his own.

Shiro and Borden quickly jumped over and were by his side.

"The Blade family, everyone here no matter what, I won't let them die."

It was then that Sil leaned into Shiro, and whispered something in his ear.

"Sil... you can't do that... you can't!" Shiro complained, but it looked like Sil had already made his decision.

Just then, a loud clank sound was heard, and not just one as multiple were going off one after the other. All the strange black pods were starting to open, and a hand was seen on the outside of the pod, pulling itself out. The whole body of the creature had appeared.

"I... was worried about this... how is this even possible." Shiro said. "How are the Dalki still alive, and what are they doing with Jack?"

Chapter 2112: The Return of the Dalki

There were multiple questions that were running through Shiro's head at the time. How were there still Dalki? Their life was meant to be short, around the fifty year mark. There were those that in the end had worked alongside the humans, but they had eventually perished and were unable to reproduce.

It was a large threat that everyone knew about, but only few had actually lived through. Yet somehow, they were now here again, and they were in front of them. On top of that, they were working side by side with a human.

A human that was thought dead, but even if he had managed to survive he shouldn't have been able to live for so long. It was all confusing, but they didn't have time to worry about that.

'We need to support the others, Shiro!' Vorden shouted in his head. 'They have no experience fighting the Dalki and they are tough to beat.'

The Dalki that were coming out were three spikes and four spikes, there wasn't a single one that was under the three spike mark. It would have been tough for any of them to face, even if they had experience.

Seeing them all land in one place, Sil was the first to act. Both his hands started to be covered in flames at that point, he was building up his power ready to attack them all, until thousands of energy blasts could be seen coming through the sky.

He quickly needed to change his plan, and changed his power, as he created a force field above them. It blocked the energy blasts, one after the other.

"This is crazy, do they not care if they hurt their own people?" Shiro shouted.

Although Sil was strong, he was going up against an opponent he had never faced before, one that was willing to do anything to win this fight. It was difficult when facing one who had no morals, compared to another that needed to protect those around him.

"Sil... don't worry about the Dalki, we will take care of them!" Borden shouted as he charged headfirst into the group of Dalki.

At the same time, Shiro stood in front of the other ability users, and using their long ranged attacks, they started to concentrate their power towards the Dalki. A large cut down from the shoulder was delivered to one, but like an unstoppable beast it continued to run forward...

Borden saw the injured one, and leapt from his position moving fast in the air, and before the Dalki could react, he grabbed onto its arms and kicked its body away, both of its arms detached from its body.

Not slowing down, Borden was moving again. Heading to the next one, he threw out a fist, aiming to hit the stomach. Borden was always a special Dalki, different from the others, and regardless of his spikes he seemed to have greater power than them.

Over the course of time, he had learned to utilise this great power, and there was no hesitation in him, when attacking those like him, because it was his family behind him. They were the ones he wanted to protect.

However something strange had occurred when Borden went to strike the one of the four spikes in the stomach, the regular hard black scales that were on the body seemed to have a silver shine in the area of the stomach.

Hitting the Dalki, it was lifted into the air, but not quite at the level Borden would have expected, and the Dalki could be seen smiling as it went to throw out its fist that was hardened as well.

Luckily, Borden was faster and dodged the hit, grabbing it by its head and pulling its face down right into his knee, crushing it on the spot.

'What was that... that can't be... the Dalki... do they have abilities?'

Borden wasn't the only one that was discovering it as the fight went on, but all of the four spiked Dalki seemed to have some type of ability and they were utilising it well.

One of the Dalki even had the power of invisibility and had entered the centre of the group. Members of the Blade family were being torn apart, ripped in half, and crushed with single punches, yet they had no clue where it was coming from.

Thinking fast, using a water ability, Shiro soon started to make it rain, as it did, they were able to see where the Dalki was at.

"Everyone, concentrate your attack, we can see him now!" Shiro stated.

A wave of attacks and abilities were used and it hurt the Dalki, and was wearing it down, eventually killing it off. Some of the Blade's could use three or so abilities, making them quite strong when combining the MC cells together.

Regardless, it became apparent that there was a problem, not only could the Dalki use abilities, but they were already plenty strong and as they got injured they were getting stronger.

Whereas for the Blade's the more they used their abilities, the weaker they were getting and it was only a matter of time until they lost the fight,

Realising this, Sil felt like he had to do something. Although his soul weapon allowed him to pick a number of different abilities, he could only use one at a time.

The energy blasts were still raining down, and out of frustration, he used his barrier ability and pushed it up even further. To the point where it was blocking the attacks close to where the clouds were on the planet.

Then letting up, Sil quickly used his cloning ability, limiting it just to one for now. This allowed his clone to continue to make the force field up above.

"That... really annoyed me, it's time to turn the tides." Sil said.

Using his soul weapon, the book was brought out, and Sil changed to abilities he thought were useful in dealing with these. After that, he started to clone himself again, duplicating his body, his abilities, and his power, making several of himself.

More and more pods were being shot out of the sky, but Sil would deal with them as much as he could, and eventually it looked like there were now a hundred more Sil's. However, Sil didn't stop there.

Opening up a portal, weapons were brought out, but rather being handed to the clones, like they usually would have done, they were handed to the other Blades. In their hands, they were holding demon tier weapons that had been gathered from all over the place.

Once Sil was done and felt like the others could protect themselves, it was time for him to spring into action. It was almost a one sided massacre, as each of the Sil's were stronger than the four spiked Dalki, even if they had abilities.

If they had the power of wind, the clone Sil could produce a stronger version of the same thing, and with the super speed and strength as well with all the power from the nest crystals Sil had obtained over time, he could take on the Dalki hand to hand.

One of the Sil's avoided a hit from the Dalki, while quickly getting directly behind its head, and with a single hand was able to melt the head on the spot.

Sil wasn't the only one doing well on the field, as Borden continued to take out and overpower all the Dalki he was facing, and from above, Jack could see everything that was happening.

"Aren't you worried that too many are dying?"

"Worried?" Jack replied. "If they were too weak, then they are simply failures, and besides I can always make more. This is not a problem, what is a problem is them two. It seems they are a lot stronger than I thought they would be."

"Do you think you can handle them, H?"

"If you didn't think I could, then we would have never attacked them in the first place." H replied.

"Very well, then I think it's time you joined the battle. Get rid of them... but don't kill Sil, I need him." Jack stated.

With that, H started to walk off, as he was ready to descend.

Chapter 2113.1: The one known as H (Part 1)

The simulation continued on, and all of them were able to continue to watch the fight. It was amazing as they were able to walk through the field as if they were really there, but it also made the sadness hit just that much more.

They could see everything in detail, the worried look on the people's faces, the frightened voices as they called for help and shouted out for the other's names. Seeing this, especially for Quinn, he inwardly struggled.

What was he doing while all of this was going on? Right now, he wanted to help, but he needed to remind himself that it was all a simulation, and he needed to see the end, to see what it was that Logan wanted to show him.

With the weapons in their hands, the other Blades were faring much better than they were before. They had never come across such powerful weapons and more, so more than one of them were able to use them.

At the same time, there was no longer oncoming pressure as both Borden and Sil were able to deal with most of the oncoming Dalki. Shiro had stayed behind to stay close to the other Blade members, he wasn't so sure if Borden and Sil were doing it instinctively but they were taking out all of the four spikes that had abilities, only allowing a few of the three spikes to come attack them.

"This... is going well, at this rate, with all of Sil's clones as well, we will be safe. The problem is, how do we take out the ship, and just how many are on board."

Shiro was right to worry, because there was more than just the Dalki onboard the ship. This was the Marpo Cruise which had been going through space for a while now, and along the way they had picked up a number of different mercenaries from different races.

Which was just one of the reasons, despite Jack seeing all of this, he wasn't panicked at all, but the main reason, he wasn't panicked, was because he had H on his side.

On the ground, the Daliki were being cleared up fairly quickly, their bodies torn and thrown about on the ground, pieces of them having been left as nothing but cinders.

It wasn't all good news for the Blades though as there were many on their side that had lost their lives also, but in this situation they needed to look at what they had. Thankfully, it looked like the whole thing would soon be over, as the pods were no longer coming down from above nor were the energy blasts, and Borden had finished off the last of the Dalki.

"ARGHHH!" Borden screamed, covered in green blood as he delivered a final punch right through one of the Dalki's chest, pulling it out, it had fallen to the floor.

Since all the Sil and his clones were done, they stood there above their beaten enemy, but Sil didn't make the clones go away, because he knew that it wasn't the end. The real Sil looked up at the ship.

"These Dalki had abilities somehow. Although most of them were weak... what if a high spiked Dalki were to appear, with a high level ability? I need to stop that ship and destroy everything inside. Who knows, it might already be the case." Sil thought.

Just as he was getting ready to change his abilities to fly up to the ship and face them alone, something was seen blasting through the sky. An incredibly large thick blue lightning bolt, shocked right from underneath the ship and it headed right for them.

It was powerful, and too fast for Sil to react to stop the attack, but instead he used his powers to create a shield so the others weren't hurt. When the lightning bolt crashed into the ground, a wave of rocks from the ground kicked up, at least five metres high.

It blasted it out, continuing on for at least a mile, but the rocks that had hit the shield created by Sil, were falling in place.

"Borden... was ahead of Sil... but he should be alright, right?" Shiro thought as he covered himself as some of the dirt was getting through parts of the shield. "What even was that? Was it an attack from the ship, but then why did it look like a lightning bolt?"

Eventually, the dust started to settle and as it did they could see a large figure, in their own self made crater. It wasn't an attack from the ship, but instead it was someone, or something landing in the middle of the battlefield.

"Is that a Dalki?" Shiro thought as he saw the outward appearance of it.

It was slightly larger than a regular Dalki, and its body shape was a bit different. Usually Dalki's were these masses of muscle, covered in dark scales from head to toe. This one, although larger, was slightly more shaped like a human.

Even though the face and body was covered in spikes from head to toe, its face also looked slightly like that of a human as well. It was the structure of it all.

'That face... why does it feel familiar?' Vorden said, as he looked at the scene in front of him through Shiro's eyes.

'I have the same feeling, is it someone we know?' Raten asked.

Although Shiro was interested in why the two thought this Dalki looked familiar, he was much more concerned about something else instead. On its back, if he wasn't miscounting, he could see 8 spikes leading down it.

This shook Shiro to his very core, he could feel his heart racing. The other Blades could see it too, but they weren't having the same reaction, because they weren't there back then, unlike him.

'An 8 spiked Dalki... but how... the only one that ever existed before was Graham, and Quinn defeated him. It nearly took him everything he had, all of his power, to defeat him back then.'

The sight of what Graham could do, the sheer power he held in his hands, and now all of this was in front of them. It was safe to say that if Sil was unable to defeat a Dalki on the level of Graham, then they would all be dead, because their small attacks and power wouldn't be able to help in the fight at all.

'Can Sil do this.... Can he do this without Quinn?' Shiro asked. It was quite clear why they were so confident now, why they were happy to battle out of space.

'Sil has had a 1000 years to grow since then.' Vorden almost shouted. 'Do you really think he wouldn't be able to handle an 8 spike, after all that time. If anything, the fact that it's been that long, and the highest spiked Dalki they have is an 8 spiked, shows that we don't have to worry."

Vorden was shouting because he didn't like the fact that Shiro was doubting Sil, not at a time like this.

'I think you're forgetting something.' Raten added, being the voice of reason for once. 'That is not just an 8 spiked Dalki. We saw how it came here, from the sky in a bolt of lighting, that was most likely an ability, and if you asked me it looked pretty strong.'

Vorden didn't say anything else, they knew that the lighting ability was one of the strongest, it was why the Blades used it most of the time including Sil, and for that ability to be on an 8 Spiked Dalki it was a scary thought.

Sil could now see the Dalki as well, and just like his brothers, when he saw the figure and looked at its face, deep into its eyes it was familiar for some reason.

"Why... do you seem so familiar?" Sil asked.

When he did, the Dalki looked directly into his eyes, and the scales started to peel away from its face.

Up above, in the Marpo Crusie watching this all. There was an unstoppable laughter coming from Jack.

"Hahaha, HAHA!"

Chapter 2114.2: The one known as H (Part 2)

The 8 spiked Dalki looked directly into Sil's eyes, and the scales looked to be reverting back into its body, revealing part of its face. There was light skin, and blue eyes could now be seen.

It was strange to say the least, because this isn't something that Dalki were capable of, the only one that could do something like this was Borden, and they never really had figured out the reason why he was different compared to the others.

Now that the full face could be seen, they understood why it was familiar, the face that was seen across many of their brothers, sisters, and fathers, it looked like them.

Just like Shiro before, now it was Sil whose body was completely shaken. His legs were vibrating, his hands couldn't keep still, and his lips were quivering.

'How can this be possible, no it can't be, it's impossible to be him. I killed him not just once, but killed him twice, even with the use of the second chance skill. I destroyed his head, there is no way he could have returned.' Sil thought.

"You seem to recognise me." The Dalki finally said, the one that was known as H. "I have a similar feeling when seeing you... but I'm not quite sure how to feel. Is it anger, happiness, pain? This feeling is annoying."

Whether this was Hilston or not, it didn't seem to quite be him, but Sil had to make sure, which was why he shouted out his name.

"Hilstion... are you still alive?" Sil asked, the rest of his clones were ready to move in at any second.

"My name is not Hilston, I am H." H, the Dalki, replied.

It was a confusing matter for Sil, and although he felt like he should attack, he was being cautious. His whole body was reacting to who this person could be, and there was a certain individual who was loving every second of this.

"Hahaha look at that, you were once so powerful, and now the Blade family can't even move. It truly is a shame that someone so great was able to be killed by someone like you!" Jack continued to laugh as he thought back about everything he went through, everything to create the being known as H.

After Jack had his whole faction practically wiped out by the Blade family, he was more than obsessed with revenge on them, but not just them, in particular on Hilston Blade himself, who had destroyed everything Jack had built up in an instant.

His whole life was destroyed and ruined because of these people, and it had become Jack's goal to get rid of them and Hilston. The thing was, due to certain

circumstances, he was trapped, and it was only later that he had learned that Hilston had already been killed, and it was by another Blade no less.

His frustration, his grand plan of getting rid of a particular person was ruined. Therefore, he had decided to pass on all his anger and frustration to the one that killed him. It was still a Blade in his mind, and still someone that deserves to be punished.

Of course, during his journey he had met Jim, and a few others as well. He had learned there were quite a few amazing things that he could do with his power. The group hadn't always stayed far from Earth.

In fact it was the opposite, they wanted to stay in the loop of what was happening and find out everything they could. While Jim was gathering data and heading to certain places that Richard Eno used to be.

There was information that Jim felt he could use, and he certainly had found some. What was most surprising was that there was DNA of a particular person in question, of Hilston Blade.

It was strange to wonder why there was a file of Hilston's Blade DNA in the information but that wasn't what was important. DNA of special subjects had been used in the past to create a type of Super Dalki.

In one case, there was Helen, in others, the werewolf DNA that had been mixed with Graham as well. Since they knew the strength of Hilston before, creating a Dalki with his DNA, they thought it would become something impressive.

However, when the Dalki first appeared, it seemed strange. Since it was only the DNA, there were no memories of the past. It was a fresh Dalki, but the blood mixing with the Dalki didn't seem to gel too well, and in the end, the Dalki that was made had died, quicker than they had expected.

The process started again, as both Jim and Jack were determined to create something special, yet similar occurrences happen. On top of that, there seemed to be no special trait. The whole point of mixing a Dalki with powerful DNA was so the Dalki that was created would have a special trait.

Something that would make it stronger just like the other Dalki. Who knew, maybe some of Hilston's abilities would even pass on, although this was unlikely.

During their travels as a group though, they did manage to run into a couple, a strong blonde haired man and woman. They looked quite old but they were sure of it, they were Blades as well.

It was later found that these two were the mother and father of the others, but technically they were really older brothers, since all of them stemmed from Hilston in the first place.

Keeping them alive, a mix of all three DNA was being used, combined with the Dalki that was being created, and it started to have a stronger form, but yet again the lifespan of the Dalki seemed to be less than two weeks.

Jim thought they were being far too simple in their approach, and in the end, the actual bodies of the mother and father were used, as well as a Dalki, to create a hybrid along with the Hilston DNA.

Finally, they had created the Dalki which they had always been meaning to create. It was a powerful, stronger body than the others and was already born with six spikes from the get go.

Hilston was originally a strong human being, who had a strong sense of Qi, and there was this strange madness to him that made him powerful.

On top of that, there was even more to H. The transferring of abilities. Jack had the Blade power with him and placed it inside the Dalki, and just like the Blade's, H could also copy powers.

Since the basis of the Dalki was originally from Hilston, they named it project H and stuck with the name. Even though there were more of the other Blade's inside the Dalki. However, Jack didn't stop there.

During his journey and search for the Blade's he had come across one more that was powerful and for some reason travelling on their own. A younger Blade named Pai. It was a good test for H to go up against, and there was a clear winner in the end.

Although Pai was not wasted, as Jack took his ability from him before his death as well. The thing was, when taking the ability, Jack noticed something, that the ability, although feeling similar in his stomach to the others, it was slightly different.

When going next to H, he could feel the energy that was inside him, almost calling out to that which was in H, as if the two wanted to join.

What Jack didn't know was that the ability of Pai was different, because in the history of the Blade family, when Pai and his sister Vicky joined hands they could use their ability together, allowing them to hold Six abilities.

Listening to the power inside him, Jack had given this power to H, and now just like the two. H was not only a powerful and strong Dalki that was different compared to the others, it was one that had the power of the Blade's and the ability to hold 6 abilities.

"This... is over." Jack said looking at the screen in front of him of the situation down below.

Chapter 2115.1: Sil vs H (Part 1)

Sil continued to look at the Dalki, he was unsure whether this was Hilston or not, whether he had somehow survived and had been turned by Jack, or some other force, but nonetheless it made him cautious.

Because an 8 Spiked Dalki, with a strong lighting ability was a completely different creature to begin with.

"I like your power, but I have a feeling that I am stronger." A large lightning bolt formed in H's hand. It condensed into a pure form rather quickly and was hurled towards one of the clones of Sil.

It was a powerful throw with a deadly ability. The clone of Sil tried to create a force field and so did the others that were around him but they were too slow to act. The shields had been brought up too late and the lightning had pierced right through one of the Sil's hearts.

After it made contact, the strike lit up and practically exploded, destroying the clone and hitting a few of the clones nearby. Although the clones were, in a way, just as powerful as Sil, they didn't seem to react as quickly as he did, nor could they take as much damage.

Either way, due to the powerful explosion, it had taken out a few of the other clones that were nearby. Sil turned his head as he thought this wasn't the end, and he was right, H had already moved from his position at a super speed and was in the centre of the clones.

The Dalki lifted both of its hands that were covered in lighting and slammed them on the floor. A lightning wave was sent out. Some of the Sil's leapt up into the air in time, including the real Sil, while the others were shocked and stunned into place.

"Do you think I would just let you do what you want!" Sil said, using the same lightning ability had created a type of whip, and as he threw it out, it wrapped around the arm of H. Using all of his power, he started to electrify H's body over and over, but it seemed to do nothing, as H started to spin around and his body was turning into a tornado of flames.

The fire was spreading out, taking out some of the clones nearby, but the ones further away switched to a water ability, and fired at the tornado of flames extinguishing it rather quickly. However, they could no longer see H in the tornado of flames, and another clone of Sil's felt the back of his head being crushed by the pure power of H.

'This is more difficult than I thought. He can use more than one ability, so no doubt this is the power of the Blades but an 8 Spiked Dalki already has speed to keep up

with the clones using the super speed, but with this Dalki using the powers, he is far faster than I thought.

'My powers are stronger, if we were to go head to head with just abilities, but not strong enough to finish him off... but I have to try.' Sil thought.

Landing on the ground, Sil made his intentions clear as he started to use the earth ability to summon a box, right around H. Soon all the other clones that were still there, were also using the earth ability to do the same thing. Earth was being condensed on top of earth, making it as hard as possible.

It was being condensed and they were attempting to crush H, as they pushed it further and further in. Sweat was running down the clones' faces as they could feel that H was trying to get out.

With each large punch, the whole planet felt like it was shaking, but they continued to push the walls. Trying to suffocate him, to get rid of him and condensing the Dalki down. The vibrations soon stopped though, and that meant that H was no longer trying to punch the wall.

However, a moment later a loud bang was heard and the cube of dirt, that had been heavily condensed, had cracked and eventually a large hole had broken through. The planet felt off balance, making everyone fall over.

From the giant earth cube, pieces could be seen falling as the Dalki figure had come out, with blood dripping over all different parts of its body. Based on the wounds, they looked to have been self inflicted.

"I don't think anyone has pushed me this far... although I still don't feel as if I'm in danger."

The wounds on his body were starting to heal, they were self-regenerating at a fast speed, and H looked to be just as strong as before.

Shiro, who was watching the fight from the side, was wondering what they could do.

'Is it possible to win this fight?' Shiro thought. 'The power of the Dalki, and I can sense it, although I'm not the best when it comes to Qi, there is a strong Qi that is powering through that Dalki's body.'

'He must have used his super speed to throw out a punch, switching to a super strength and along with injuring himself and the Qi, he was able to break out even with the multiple Sil's overpowering him with abilities. This is just a freak of nature, and one that is able to heal at that.'

Sil was down to around half his clones, there were still a lot of them, but the pressure was weighing on his mind. After all this time, the pressure of H possibly being Hilston was still there.

Seeing how it felt like nothing was working at the moment, even though Sil still had the advantage, it was making him lose hope, even though he still hadn't tried everything he had. There were multiple abilities, including his foresight ability, but maybe that was part of the problem.

'If I attack him with my demon tier weapons, he'll block them and attack, sacrificing his arm and hit me right in the stomach. If I use all the other Sil's to concentrate their abilities directly on him and he uses a Qi blast to create a small shield, then he will use the speed ability to get directly in my face causing another one to one battle.'

"There has to be a way!" Sil thought, as he opened up his book. He was changing abilities, while using his foresight ability. Going through all the motions of what he could do to win this battle. With each ability he was going over a different strategy and seeing what would work.

From what he had seen so far with the foresight ability, the problem was so far that Sil would lose the fight if he himself got close, in a physical battle.

'For now I'm going to have to buy time.'

Opening up a portal, Sil allowed for the remainder of his clones to now use the weapons the other Blades were using so far. Using the super speed ability and the demon tier weapon at the same time, they would try to buy time.

If they hurt H too much, then it would only make him stronger. A battle was occurring of explosions, and H going all over the place, using his raw power as he punched, kicked, and did all sorts, while the real Sil's eyes were slightly hollow, looking through his book of abilities.

'Not that one... that one won't work as well. There has to be a way to beat him.' Sil was focused, looking at the after images of what he could do, and in a way was ignoring what was happening in the real battle around him.

To the point where he didn't realise that H had decided to go for him rather than continue dealing with the clones. There were a few large wounds on his body, making him just move faster, and Sil was just standing there still trying to find a way, but there was one that stood in the way, as he came from the side and grabbed right onto H's arm, stopping him in his tracks.

"It took me a while to get used to your timing... but I managed to do it." Borden said with a smile, holding the arm, his whole body was shaking as he was using every muscle fibre he had.

"You... are like me, so why are you stopping me?" H asked.

"Are you an idiot... because that guy behind me is my brother... and when he's ready, he's going to kick your arse."

H for the first time since the fight started smiling, strength started to go out from the Dalki, and was now draining into his own body as they both touched. Borden didn't know why, but he was suddenly feeling weaker.

Borden went and used his other hand to try and separate the two of them, but he was stuck and getting weaker by the second. With the other hand, H now had it covered in intense flames.

"It's too bad that you won't be able to see your dear brother kick my arse." H said, as he placed the hand right on Borden's face, melting it in an instant and his arms losing power and falling by his side.

Chapter 2116.2: Sil vs H (Part 2)

The others watching the simulation were standing behind Quinn. They could see both of his hands shaking, and not a single one of them dared to say a word, nor did they approach him. While on Earth, and most of the time Quinn was with the others, he would be in a constant state.

He was always suppressing his energy so it was unable to leak out, so others not on the planet, those nearby, and of course the celestials as well wouldn't know about him and would not know where he was, but this time, with what he could see for a second he couldn't help it, and it broke through for a second.

'Borden... this is how you meet your end?' Quinn thought. It was disgraceful.

To die in battle, against an enemy that he perhaps knew nothing about. Jack Truedream was an enemy that was created due to him obtaining the shadow, due to his mess with Erin trying to hide her, and the Blade family.

Borden had been with the group a number of times, he had helped Quinn out on Blade island, perhaps even saved his life, and helped the others fight Erin when she had her own memories changed.

More than that, there were countless times where Borden would refer to Quinn as his brother, because after the small scuffle they had, he really felt like they were brothers. The connection they had and all the journeys they had been through together made it feel like so.

After waking up, Quinn had never gone to the Blade's ship. He had been far too busy, involved with other things, and he hadn't had the chance to meet Borden either, yet here he was now witnessing his end.

All of it was very painful for Quinn, too painful for him to bear, so he had paused the simulation and just like that everything had frozen.

After a few minutes, he was starting to regain his composure slightly and walked up to where Borden was, his face was already slightly melted, at least the top half anyway, but even then, in his last moments, there was a smile on his face.

'How... in a situation like this can you be so happy, how can you be so positive?' Quinn thought.

There was no need to play the simulation, Quinn knew there was no coming back from it, even for a Dalki, getting one's head melted like so, his arms limp, it was the end.

"As long as I am alive, I will continue to remember your face, and I promise that I will tell everyone what you have done."

When saying these words Quinn was reminded of the reporter AJ, who had asked to follow Quinn. He wanted to record the current moments, the past moments and more and place it all in a book. Once his story was done he was going to spread everything.

Quinn had put a mental note, to make sure to sit down with AJ, and if the book was ever to come out, that details of everything that Borden did was remembered.

After, Quinn said a few words almost like a prayer along with the rest of his family and the others he turned his head to look at H. He ingrained the details of the Dalki in his head. From the results how the world came to be like it was, and how it was going so far, Sil did not win this fight, and H was very much still alive.

So Quinn wanted to pay back the person that caused this all.

'Not just Jack, and Jim, but it looks like another one has been added to the hit list.'

The simulation restarted from that moment, after Quinn was ready to watch what happened again, and he could see it. Sil, so immersed in the task of defeating H, was unable to see what was really happening in front of him.

All of his simulations, or foresight was showing what was to happen if he was to attack a certain way, but the problem was, Sil wasn't attacking after finding out that it would fail, and he had failed to see the very outcome that had occurred.

The entirety of Borden's head was reduced to nothing, and his body felt the floor. A wave of different attacks had come out from the other clones, all aimed at H, but with his super speed along with his natural speed, he moved out of the way of the attacks, and went straight to the real Sil.

With the book in his hand though, Sil had selected the teleportation ability, and blinked away, in front of H eyes leaving him to hit nothing but the air, but the powerful attack still distorted the whole space.

It was a heavy punch, that distorted the clouds in the sky when the attack hit, easily destroying anything in its path. Watching this, it reminded Quinn a lot of Ray's punch as well.

Shiro and the other Blades watching near the Blade ship were all in pain as they saw Borden on the floor no longer moving. Some felt like it was a dream. Borden had been with the Blades for a long time, as one of the leaders.

He had helped on a number of occasions, and here they were, all standing around doing nothing.

'Sh*t why do we have to be stuck in here, unable to do nothing!' Raten screamed inside Shiro's head.

Vorden was silent, still taking it in, whereas although Shiro was affected, he was more worried about what the outcome of the rest of the fight would be.

'Sil... will lose this fight.' Shiro said to the other two.

'What do you mean?' Raten replied back angrily. 'Although Sil hasn't damaged the other one, I still think the fight is fairly even, they can't hurt each other... Sil will find a way.'

Raten and Vorden both had an idea of what Sil was doing with the book. Based on the enemy they could see in front of them, Sil was coming up with the best way to beat him. After all, there was a difference between H and Sil even if both of them could use the same amount of abilities.

Sil could change his abilities, and counter the ones H currently had. Just like then with the super speed, Sil could continuously teleport out of the way. Water beat fire, earth against lightning and so on. So why was Shiro saying Sil would lose?

'Do you not remember what Sil said to us... before this mess started. He whispered in our ear, that if he ever thought the situation was too tough... that he would make sure that we were all okay. I think you're right, if Sil was to fight with all his power and continue to fight there would be a way.'

'But from the beginning he has been protecting us from the blasts from the ship above, and has been fighting against the Dalki before. Even if he has a lot of MC cells, he doesn't have an unlimited amount.'

'Based on his words, what do you think he meant by that?' Shiro asked.

It suddenly clicked in the other's heads, there was a way to make it so the others would survive no matter what, and before they knew it, Sil had teleported right next to Shiro along with the others.

"I'm sorry, I wasn't strong enough to beat him... I'm sorry I wasn't strong enough to save Borden. All of you, you have to live, you have to continue the Blade family, right the wrong of our name, and... even though I failed. I know there is one person who won't. Stick to Quinn and find him!"

Sil didn't give a chance for the others to say anything, as he placed his hand on the ground, and before they knew it, a mass teleportation of the entire Blade family had occurred, all of them were gone. They were no longer on the planet and Sil was now there on his own.

Sil had used his powers to transport them far away, a place where maybe even he didn't know, a place where Jack was unable to attack them. If he was to teleport him and H, then it would mean the rest of the Dalki and Jack would still be able to fight them.

Teleporting H away, they still would need to deal with Jack as well, and it wasn't getting rid of the root of the problem. At the same time Sil felt like the reason they were here was because they were after him.

As long as Sil wasn't with the others then no one had to die, at least no one else had to die.

Which was why he had made the decision, but mass teleporting so many people, so far away had taken a large amount of his MC cells.

The fight that could have gone either way, by making sure the others were safe with 100 percent certainty, had now tipped in H's favour.

"The footage that can be obtained ends there." A familiar voice said, Logan. "Based on what you saw, you might be worried about what happened to Sil, but fear not, he is alive, and I know exactly where he is."

Chapter 2117: A trapped Sil

After watching the whole simulation, Quinn was going through a mixture of feelings. The ending hadn't been caught... the conclusion to the fight... the final fight between Sil and H. For whatever reason, perhaps their battle had destroyed the cameras on the ships, or their battle took place far away from where they were, with both of them using everything they had. Still, the outcome was clear, as Sil had made a choice.

'Sil... you have changed so much from when I first met you. You really decided to be selfless in the end.' Quinn thought.

It had become apparent through the simulation, from the very beginning when he whispered into Shiro's ears, that the Blades were the most important to him. No matter what, he wanted to make sure to protect them.

When seeing H though, there was a mixture of confused feelings, and for a short while, Sil felt it was his duty once again to stop this person... Until Borden had fallen. Because of that, it allowed him to snap back into his right mind.

Sil was never sure during the fight if he could beat H, the two of them were pretty even, but Sil still had yet to try everything. If he could, he could have just taken himself and H off the planet they were on, away from everyone else. However, the ship would then still be able to attack the other Blades, and more Dalki could be sent.

Borden was no longer there, a big help in clearing the Dalki, so it was safe to say they would have certainly struggled to survive. Another option was taking all of the Blades along with H and teleporting them onboard the ship.

Yet the ship was an unknown. The being known as H had come from it, and it was taking the Blades into the heart of the enemy's territory. If he couldn't beat H, then it would mean all of the Blades would have perished. So the only way to make sure that the Blades survived was to do what he had done, but it came with a sacrifice, the sacrifice of losing the battle.

'I think... in the same situation, I would have done the same thing.' Quinn thought to himself, as he went on to listen to what Logan had to say.

The simulation around them had faded, and they were again in the large white room. Now, they were all watching a video of Logan in his lab, just like he was in the original message.

'He said Sil was still alive... which means there is a way to still help him at least.' Quinn thought. But it did trouble him as to why they would keep such a big threat alive.

"The device that Vincent and I had made for Jim and Jack, it has caused more problems than we thought. The reason for keeping Sil alive is so that he can be used in that very same device. The Blade ability allows one to copy the powers of anyone that is a human.

"And it seems his power is not limited by god slayer abilities. After Sil had been defeated, he was placed in the device. A point that I didn't mention earlier, because it wasn't important at the time, needs to be said.

"That going in the device itself is draining to the user. All of the MC cells are taken out of the body to use the device in a certain way. I assume Sil was placed in this device immediately, not giving him a second chance to fight back. The one known as Malik, allowed Sil to copy his ability, and after that, along with the device, whenever they needed to mass change everyone's memories, they used Sil to do this.

"How they do this I'm not sure. I doubt they would have changed Sil's memories because they fear him. If he was ever to find out the truth, then he could simply revert everything back to the way it was himself.

"Which is why, it's better for them to keep him captive and locked in the device, constantly draining his MC cells away, only to be used when needed. How exactly they get him to use the ability as they command, I'm not sure."

An image of a tired Sil appeared in Quinn's head. It was making his blood boil. One that was only doing good for the human race, trying to protect them and help them. He hadn't lived a good life, and now he was being hurt every second and doing things against his will.

"However, I do know where he currently is. I have gathered this information, and what you are about to hear may surprise you. At the moment between Jack and Jim, they run ten Marpo Cruises.

"All of these are filled with their allies from other planets, as well as Dalki with abilities and vampires. There are two main Marpo Cruise lines that are exclusively used by Jim and Jack. From what I can gather, there seems to be a bit of tension between the two of them, so they no longer travel together.

"But they have set up a sort of system of sorts. When one has Sil, the other has Malik by their side. Whenever they wish to use the power in a wide range, the two must be brought together, for whatever reason.

"Right now, as of recording this video, Jack has Sil captured aboard his Marpo Cruise ship. I doubt that will change anytime soon as there is no reason for them to use the ability again, at least not any time soon."

Since Quinn didn't know what Malik looked like, he was unsure if he was by Jim's side or not. He knew that Ray was with him when they were on the Namrik planet, but there was a good chance he could have been on the cruise ship as well.

For now, it was best to assume that Malik was still with Jim, and Sil was with Jack, but how would he know where Jack was, and what cruise ship he was on? Would Quinn have to attempt to destroy every single one of them one by one.

"Sil is very important to them Quinn, so you don't have to worry about him, we have time with this." Logan continued to explain. "You see, although in the simulation we see H using the Blade ability, I suspect that just like Sil, the abilities that H can copy are limited to other Dalki."

"Which means, he can only use the abilities that have been stolen from Jack and put into other Dalki. Malik is his own person, and to convince someone to take their ability and put it in a Dalki is a hard thing to do. Otherwise they would just use H for all of this."

"The reason why I'm telling you this, is because based on the research I have of you, you are most likely to go ahead, and attempt to attack Jack to rescue Sil, but that is a bad idea."

"The cruise ships are extremely dangerous. They are filled with those from different races, somehow Jim and Jack have managed to make some sort of pact with them. They have more attacks planned throughout the universe and plan to take in more prisoners, slaves and so on. They seem to have gone mad with competition between each other."

"On top of that, each of the cruise ships are filled with Dalki. Dalki that have more spikes than the last war, and their numbers are almost tenfold of what they were. Let's not forget that they all have abilities as well. Think about it, there are a number of them that are on the same level of Slicer, but now with abilities."

"Even with all your power, it will be near an impossible task, unless you have an army."

It wasn't the first time Quinn had heard this.

"The weakness in Jim and Jack's strategy is that it relies on Sil. If you get Sil, then you can change everyone's memories back to where they were."

"That stops him from using hostages, and stops a whole load of people jumping on your back. Then you can focus on the two of them and the Dalki around them. Either way, how would you face the Dalki, without help as well?"

"In the video, we saw that the Blades were transported somewhere. No doubt each one of them holds a grudge and would do anything to help you. I suggest you go find them, the only problem is I have no clue where they are. With all of this, I

have helped you as much as I can, and all I can say is... good luck Quinn, and I hope the next time we meet, I remember everything about you... friend."

With the message over, Quinn was left a little lost about what he was to do. He looked at everyone for answers, and then turned towards Ceril in the room.

Chapter 2118: Strong Partners

"All of the messages that master Logan wished to give you have now been received." Ceril said with a polite bow. "Logan has also prepared a spaceship for your travels towards the back. It is fitted with an anti tracker which will allow you to leave the atmosphere without appearing on Earth's radar.

"It is stocked up with what you need for a long journey, and it's safe to say that Logan wishes you luck."

They were in a large facility that had food for vampires, humans and more, and they could certainly survive in the building for a while undetected, but if they did that, then what would that achieve?

Hiding, staying safe... it was something that Quinn had done with his family for the last year or so, and in the end they had been caught, and living a life like this. It was not one that he wanted to live.

"Everyone, let's rest up for the day. Eat your fill, let's get a good night's sleep, while I figure out what we can do." Quinn said.

Everyone had gone through a lot, and watching the simulation alone, being in the middle of the fight as if they were there was a lot for all of them to take in. On top of that, they had a kid that wasn't even 1 year old yet, so he needed to be careful that not everyone was worn out.

Eventually, leaving the simulation room, Layla was preparing some food for the kids. Although they could just live off juice boxes made with blood, at times it was also nice for them to eat meat that was cooked quite rare.

As usual, while Minny and Galen were waiting, they were playing their own set of games with each other, as they chased and hid from each other, and in the large house there was plenty of room for them to explore. As long as they didn't leave the building, Quinn was fine with them doing what they wanted.

That left, Russ, Ceril and Quinn sitting on the sofa. Each one of them were sitting on a separate part away from each other, on a sofa that would fit perhaps 7 or 8 people. It was a room full of people that knew each other, but didn't really know each other, so they felt uncomfortable being so close.

"The Dalki, they looked to be quite strong in that simulation." Russ finally said. "I thought that their strength was exaggerated but it appears that's not the case. I know Logan wants you to find the Blades and maybe they can help you wage a war against Jack and Jim, but do you think you're strong enough to beat H, based on what you saw?" Russ asked.

It was a question that Quinn wondered himself. In the past he had fought against Sil before, but he wasn't as strong or versatile as he was now, the Shadow had

improved as well, and had obtained the guns. On top of that, there was the latest reward he had obtained from the system, the new transformation he had yet to test out.

This though would be fighting against basically Sil, but in a Dalki's body.

"I don't think that's the main problem." Quinn stated. "In all my fights I have always found a way to beat my opponent, and due to my skills, if I can't beat them then, I have a good escape."

Quinn was thinking about the Shadow link at that moment.

"The problem is the rest of them. From Logan's words although there might not be those as strong as H, there are plenty that are nearly just as strong. H might have even gotten stronger compared to the simulation before."

"I thought about this a lot, but in the past when I fought against Graham, I won, but if I was to go up against him, along with Slicer, One Horn and the rest of the five spikes I believe I would have lost."

"I think I understand what you are saying." Russ replied. "Which is why we need to find the Blades, but you have strong people by your side. Your wife, your daughter, this fish woman and me are strong right. Although, at least I assume you are strong?"

Quinn actually wasn't sure if Ceril was strong or not. After turning her, he had never seen her new abilities or her strength, and it had been a while. Still thinking about it, Although Russ was strong, was it enough?

There was Jim himself, Jack, Peter, Chris, H and Ray to fight against. These at the moment were the biggest problems in his head that he could think of, without having to worry about the rest of the Dalki, or the vampire originals.

At the same time, although he had given Minny a god slayer item, he didn't want her to fight, but based on the situation for their survival, perhaps every single person that Quinn could get on his side was needed

"Sorry to interrupt your train of thought." Ceril quickly interrupted. "But I would say I am quite strong."

This caused both Russ and Quinn to lean from their seats. Although Russ said those words, he didn't really mean anything by it, he simply was just trying to cheer Quinn up in the current situation. Whether he liked it or not, at the moment Russ was on Quinn's side, and it looked and felt like it was the losing side, which he didn't like.

As for Quinn, honestly although he thought Ceril's sister was somewhat impressive with the trident, he felt like she was always lacking, so doubted that there was a big improvement just because she had now changed.

'Wait, but the system did state, she was somewhat like a whole new race together.'

"Ceril, in this facility is there somewhere that we could see your skills?" Quinn asked.

Ceril nodded.

"There is a training room, it is quite well built and secure as the Green family would often use it to test new weapons."

A smile appeared on his face.

"Alright, before dinner, let's head to the training room to see what you got." Quinn said.

Russ, also stood up, because he also wanted to see. At the moment, his life somewhat depended on the people around him, so it was best to see what they could do.

'I can maybe test out my new demon form as well. It would be best to know what it can do before using it in any type of fight.'

With a wave to Layla, informing them of what they were doing they promised that they would be done by the time she had finished making dinner. She was also cooking for Russ and herself something more human so there was a bit more prep.

"I hope they don't destroy the whole place." Layla thought, as she looked at both of her kids who were now exhausted after playing the whole day, lying on the floor breathing heavily.

A while back, when the Blade family had been transported, all of them found themselves suddenly on a hard desert like ground. They were twisting and turning their heads, as they were slightly confused.

One second they were there, and the next they were in a new place, away from, Sil, and away from the others.

"Damn it Sil!" Vorden shouted at the top of his lungs, having taken over Shiro's body. "How... how could he have done something like this."

After a while, everyone soon realised what Sil had done. How he had used his powers to transport the Blades that were still alive. They couldn't believe it, and promised that whatever it was, they would try and help Sil if he was still alive.

They soon realised that there was another problem on their hands though, it was the fact that they had no clue where they were. All of the communication devices that could transmit messages far away were on the Blade ship, and anything they did have with them didn't seem to be working the way they thought it would.

"Everyone, stay close to each other. There should be some type of life here since all of us are able to breathe, but there is a good chance that there could be beasts as well!" Shiro explained, taking back over the body and command over the Blade family.

In total, around fifty survivors that could use the Blade ability were present, and around twenty five that just had regular abilities. It was a large group to look after with no food and water and all of them were exhausted.

The Blades started to move and march until off in the distance, they could see something. It looked like someone was sitting by a large lake.

"There's water... we finally made it!" One of the Blades shouted as they ran forward, but Shiro put his hand out stopping him.

"Can't you see something strange about that person?" Shiro asked.

Looking closer, they realised that the person they were looking at from behind, had four arms.

Chapter 2119: The Next Destination

The three, Russ, Quinn and Ceril, were inside the large training room. There were scorch marks, and deep scratches in the place, showing clear signs that the room had been used quite a bit. As a test as well, Quinn made a fist and threw it out hitting the wall.

'It seems this place really is quite sturdy. The Green family really do make some of the most amazing things.' Quinn thought.

Of course, Quinn didn't use his full strength, he doubted there were many rooms that could keep him inside, apart from those that were specifically made for him, like the room that was designed to trap celestials. Although in the end, he had even managed to break out of that.

"Alright, I am waiting for the demonstration to take place." Russ said, tapping his finger on the side of his arm.

Ceril stood in the centre and then closed her eyes for a few seconds, after that, a liquid substance could be seen swirling around her arms. They looked like two snakes that started from the tip of her fingers and went all the way up to her shoulder.

The way it flowed, it looked like water, but the colour of it was red, and it felt like blood aura. Soon, she had grabbed the end of the red rushing water, and swung it around. It was like two whips were in her hand as she lashed them outwards, onto the ground.

When they hit the floor, an explosion of blood aura had been emitted. It was almost similar to Quinn's blood spray skill, where he would use his blood aura at the very end of his fist attack. However, the demonstration didn't stop there.

Even with the whips, there was still blood aura swirling around her body, and she looked to be in control, then swinging out the whips of blood-like water out forward, it had produced several little blood bullets that shot out of the end, all heading towards the wall and splattering out on them.

After the demonstration with the whips were over, Ceril didn't stop there, as she lifted her hands, and almost a wave of red water could be seen behind her, and in the wave were several tridents of blood.

"This... is beyond what I thought." Quinn was looking at her in awe. Although the strength of the blood aura wasn't on the same level of Quinn's, the versatility in her moves were almost the same.

The level of blood control she was showing with her skills was almost the same as if someone had absolute blood control. Something that not even the vampire leaders could do.

"I think that is enough." Ceril commented. "As I said, I think I'm quite strong."

"I have to admit that it was pretty impressive." Russ added.

"How are you able to use blood control so well? You didn't become a vampire... well I guess vampire is the wrong word, but you didn't change so long ago. Did you have a teacher?" Quinn asked.

"Blood control?" Ceril said as she lifted her hand, and water was swirling around it instead. "Mitchell did teach me a bit about blood control, but what he tried teaching me was quite difficult, at least for me." She started to explain.

"For us Mermerials, we are creatures of the sea, and we have an innate ability to control water. We can also pull the moisture from the air, and create water as I am doing now." Ceril explained. "However, when I became what I was, and tried to use the blood aura, the power I had was difficult and I found it difficult to control. So instead I decided to mix the blood aura with my water like powers.

"After all, the blood that runs through our body also has a high percentage of water correct? In the end, doing this allowed me to control my new powers in the same way as I would my water powers."

When looking at the Mermerials, Quinn had always found their ability to control water like an ability, but it really wasn't so it was no wonder that Ceril had turned out this way. It was just something that they were naturally able to do.

However, it did make him wonder, mixing things, was it possible? Before abilities couldn't really be mixed because there were those that only had one ability in the first place. That was until Jake Green from the Blade family had come in.

Yet, just like the Mermerials water control was not an ability, and there had been cases of one mixing the two together. For instance, there was the strong ability that could be coated in blood. Quinn had also mixed his Qi with other things but that seemed to be easier, but this gave him an idea.

'Is there a way to mix my blood abilities with the Shadow. How would I even do that, and what would the result of doing such a thing even be?' Quinn thought as he looked at his hand.

Right now, he wished he had his own celestial space where the time slowed down. If he had the time, he was sure he could figure something out.

'Ceril is strong, and maybe with a bit of training in areas, she could be strong enough to take out a leader, or at least fight one of them, but nowhere near strong

enough to take out Chris or Peter, not without items and even then I doubt she could do much... we will need more help than this.' Quinn thought as he walked over toward her.

Thinking about Ceril, thinking about items, he had been thinking about this for a while now, but it looked like he had made his decision.

"Ceril... I think the best choice for us, as a group, a place where we can go and feel safe is your home planet. I think we should head to the Mermerial planet."

Sil's power along with the ability, surely had to have a distance limitation. A range where the powers would work from, and he doubted it would work all the way there. The group weren't hostile towards them, and the Mermerials weren't weak either, if just comparing them to the regular vampires.

There was one problem though, if Yongbu, the celestial of the Mermerials, spotted him, and on top of that how to get there. They could head in a general direction, and see if Ceril recognised anything, but other than that it would be quite difficult.

"I like that idea, I would like to see my sister again." Ceril said.

"Wait, I knew this person was from another planet, but do you have any idea on how to get there?" Russ asked.

"I... have an idea." Ceril replied. "I haven't just been sitting in this base doing nothing. There is a lot of information that Logan stores here, and in my spare time I go through it from time to time. There is the flight path that the Marpo Cruise goes through.

"The path doesn't go past the Mermerial planet, but it goes to a section near it. That was how me and my sister had escaped in the first place. It will take me a moment, but if I analyse it for a bit longer. I think I can get us coordinates to that location and we can go from there.

"When I meet my sister, if she remembers you, it will confirm this whole thing for me as well." Ceirl stated.

It looked like it was their only option for now, while on a safe planet, they could try and research where the Blades were. After gathering them, they could decide the next step, Quinn thought.

Ceril had decided to leave the room, in order to do more research and Russ had to make a decision, stay with the pretty light blue skinned girl or stay with Quinn, and he decided to continue following her for now.

"It's okay, we will meet up for dinner, and I will tell my family the news when you have the information." Quinn said. "For now, there is one more thing I need to test, and I think it's better if you guys aren't in here anyway."

Chapter 2120: Angry

The Namrik's planet had successfully been conquered and it was mainly due to the actions of the vampires.

For a second, as the Namriks witnessed internal fighting, they thought they had a chance. All of them were glued to the vampire's efforts as he took down his own, one by one, and unleashed a power that could be felt throughout the planet.

Yet in the end it amounted to nothing. The Namriks were allowed to continue to operate as they had been but a new base had been placed on the planet where a token army would be.

Most of their technology as well as their minerals and beast crystals that were gathered by them would be handed over. For the Namriks themselves, they felt like slaves.

As for the main person who was mainly behind the attack, Jim Eno, he was no longer on the planet and instead was back on the Marpo Cruise inside a secure training room. There were a few masked by his side but not the same that were with him before and neither was Ray there.

Meanwhile an injured and bloody Edvard was seen on the floor. He was in a worse state than when on the Namrik's planet.

"You fool, how could you even have so much loyalty for someone you barely know!" Jim shouted. "It was impossible for the two of you to be alive at the same time. So why did you follow him? Tell me how he tricked or forced you."

Jim had been asking the same question repeatedly and Edvard had been doing the same thing as he smiled.

"Do you really think something like torture would work against an original. At any point and time I could take my own life. I have lived a long and fulfilling life. The only reason why I haven't is because it would be embarrassing to do so because of you."

Jim ran up toward the fallen Edvard and swung his leg back, as he threw it forward a large amount of blood aura was released throwing Edvard in the air spinning. Blood was splattered all over the room, and Edvard's bones were starting to heal.

After touching the floor, Edvard pushed himself up and smiled toward Jim.

"What are you so scared of? That everyone will find out you're a fake? The fact that the Dalki you created in the past were a failure? Why can't you stand the fact that there are great people in this world and you simply aren't one of them."

Edvard coughed letting out a little bit more blood while continuing to laugh.

In the room the two of them weren't alone because Malik who was on the cruise had also been brought along with him.

"Let's see your attitude change suddenly. Malik, change his memories, make him remember his dear friend Quinn as an enemy that wiped out his family, his loved ones in the past, and more." Jim stated.

Malik looked at Jim in a way as if to ask him if he was really sure about this.

"I'm only changing one memory, there is no need to talk to Jack about this nor the need to use the other's powers. I know you can do this much, now we have to do this much."

"We can't have any more distractions, we have to continue with what we are doing and move on. There has to be something that can stabilise me somewhere in this universe a bit more."

"Maybe even those celestials will have an answer. Remember... you promised me!"

No more was said as Malik moved forward doing as he had been doing for a long time now.

Layla had finally finished cooking up a few different meals that would fit everyone's taste. For example, meat had been ground up into a paste for Galen.

Although he did have two teeth that stuck out, which were his two fangs and they would elongate at times when he was a bit moody, Layla still felt more comfortable making food for him this way.

For Minny, a juice box of blood was splattered over her raw steak to give it a bit of flavour, while also cut up into strips for easier eating.

For herself and Russ a mainly meat dish had been made so the others didn't feel so left out or that they were eating something different, but they also had some roast potatoes and veg on the side as well, while she had a go at making some sauce.

"Alright, Minny go get your father and the others and tell them the food is ready." Layla ordered and she nodded already heading off.

Meanwhile, cutlery, glasses as well as other operations were handled by Galen. It was always impressive that he knew what she wanted and there was no need for the two of them to communicate.

After everything had been set up, Minny had turned a corner and she was walking back with Russ as well as Ceril.

"Where's your father?" Layla asked immediately.

"They said daddy was busy and doing something important so we should leave him alone." Minny replied.

Layla didn't say anything and just sat down at the table.

"What are you two doing, or are you two busy as well?" Layla asked.

Hearing this Ceril rushed to sit at her seat while Russ whispered to himself.

"Your wife is quite a scary person." Russ mumbled, but quickly sat down at the table as well.

There was silence as everyone dug into their food a bit at a time. In order to make the awkwardness die down, Russ started to rub his stomach.

"The food is so delicious, I haven't had anything like this in a while." Russ tried his hardest to put on a smile but it didn't come natural to him.

A second later and a knife was slammed loudly onto the table.

"I can't believe him, this could very well be the last time we can have a meal like this as a family together, and he can't spare five minutes?" Layla huffed.

The others wanted to say something, as it was a tough situation for them all but they did understand how Layla felt, on top of that they didn't want to get in her way.

Getting up from her seat, she started to walk off.

"Alright, let's go see what he's doing that so important that he has to do it right now." Layla mumbled.

"Do you think we should go with her, just in case anything happens?" Ceril asked.

"This is something that the two of them need to figure out. There is no need for either one of us to get involved." Russ took another bite. "But I wasn't lying this is really good. Besides do you think that we could stop anything that was to take place? Oh right, I forgot you don't know him so well, but even if Layla turned into a demon herself I doubt she could do anything to him."

Layla was storming to the room where Quinn was and she soon noticed something strange.

Emotions in a dark red fog could be seen covering the hallway. The emotions in this smog was something she had never experienced before. The power felt different, having a hint of what vampires had felt like, but also like something almost out of this world.

The anger that she had built up was starting to fade and she had eventually reached the room. Standing outside, there was a strange heat, and part of the door looked to be almost melted.

There was no way for Layla to open the door normally and the strange thick red substance that looked like lava where the door had melted, she was a little afraid to touch.

Using her telekinesis power, she pushed the broken door out of the way and stepped into the room.

All around there were similar scenes in the room as the door. Markings were covered on top of one another and the strange red slush was seen all over in places.

The room was unrecognisable to what it was before and her eyes soon spotted Quinn laying there on the floor.

"Quinn!" Layla shouted, rushing over to see if he was okay. His heart was beating but his eyes were still closed.

Not too far from behind a few footsteps could be heard.

"What... Did you do?" Russ asked.

"Did mommy kill daddy!" Minny started to cry.

Chapter 2121: A dangerous form

Slowly opening his eyes, a bright white light was beaming in his face. It was hard for Quinn to see anything, but he could hear the voices around him.

"It's dad, his eyes are opening, I think he's waking up."

The soft voice that was heard was clearly Minny's, yet it sounded slightly distant, as if she was wearing a mask of some sort. He attempted to move the rest of his body, but it was very sore.

Aches and pains were all over, in particular there was a large pain in his back. Since he was unable to move, he tried to see just what was wrong with his body.

'Is it my muscles, it looks like they have been torn apart. They're regenerating on their own thanks to my body but it's going really slow. It reminds me of the time when Qi entered my body for the first time.'

Because of this, Quinn went ahead to focus his Qi energy in helping speed up the cells in his body to repair himself, and while doing so he noticed something else as well, and that was his vampire aura. It had almost been completely depleted.

There was nearly none of it, if he was to try and use a blood slash now, he doubted he could perform one.

'Ever since I had the Ruler of Blood title, I haven't ran out of blood aura.'

Just like his body, it was regenerating, it was at a faster speed than his body, but it was still a shocking thing for him to see.

Finally, Quinn was able to move his head, and when he did, he could see a small squished up face right up against glass. Seconds later, and Minny was pulled away from the glass by her mother.

"Quinn." Layla said looking at him. "You idiot, just what were you trying to do that got you in this mess? Why do you always have to worry me, why can't you just be sensible for once."

Quinn didn't reply because he knew that this was her way of caring about him. Being more aware of the situation now. He realised that he was in some type of medical tube and the one that was doing the check up on him was Ceril.

"There is all sorts of different equipment in this room, and during my time here I fiddled with it and learned how to use them. Logan also prepared tutorials for their basic use, so don't worry, I know what I'm doing... mostly." Ceril said, as she continued to press a few buttons on the control console.

There were a few machines moving up and down scanning Quinn, and he could tell it was making his body feel better, so he would at least trust her for now.

"What happened? I'm not too sure myself." Quinn replied.

When he was finally able to move, and Ceril confirmed that was the case, he went to the training room, and the others weren't letting him out of their sight as they followed him.

Now inside, he could see the destruction all over the place, and even now, after an hour or so had passed in the medical room, there was the strange magma-like sludge that was seen all over the room.

'I did all of this?' Quinn thought to himself as he tried to remember, but that was the problem, he couldn't remember anything.

'The last thing I remember is going to my system screen, and selecting the new transformation... after that it's all gone, I can't remember anything.'

In a way, the system had treated this as an evolved form of the Bloodsucker. When Quinn had first turned into the bloodsucker, he wasn't in control of his body and ended up fighting with Sil.

Eventually, he had learned to control it, but there was a difference. When Quinn's Bloodsucker form ended, he did remember what had happened. He just was unable to act at the time, it felt like it was almost someone else, but here he had no clue whatsoever.

'This is very dangerous. If I don't know what I'm like in my demon form then I could end up hurting everybody. What would've happened if I had broken out of here? At the same time, if I can't think, then I won't be able to know the capabilities or train with this Demon form.'

Thinking about it more, there were even more side effects to the form, incredibly weak blood aura, and body soreness, or more so like his body was ripped apart.

If anything, it almost seemed like if the Demon form was unable to take out its opponent, then it would mean losing his life.

'Just from observing this room, it's hard to tell the capabilities or strength. There was no target, or anything to fight after all. I have no doubt if I was just to use my normal blood aura or guns I could break out of this room.'

'So I doubt the power of this Demon form has really been shown just in this room alone, but is there any way to observe it at all? To see what it could do. Using it in a fight is an incredibly big risk.'

Looking at the others, Quinn's eyes soon landed on Russ.

"Russ, you were able to summon that dragon, and transform your body similar to that of the celestial you were fighting. How does your power exactly work?"

Russ smiled when looking back at Quinn.

"Do you really think I would reveal something as important as that to you? You're better off just asking what you want from me, and I'll give you a yes or no answer."

"If you were to make a copy of me, would it be able to do the things that I could do. In fact, what if it was a power of mine, one that you've never seen before?" Quinn asked.

Based on what happened, and what state the room was in, now Russ was starting to understand a little of what Quinn wanted him to do.

"There are two things you need to know. 1st, it is easier for me to copy a power, than it is a form or summon something like that dragon. However, when it comes to powers, although I can copy them, as you can imagine I have no clue how to use them.

"So I have to have seen it being used before, to emulate the same thing. However, when it comes to summoning things, it's quite different. Its strength is dependent on you and that's all I want to say on the matter. Now in a case like this, maybe there's a chance deep in your mind that you do have the memories of what happened, and I could help... but I can't help."

Russ' words were strange because one moment they were giving him hope and the next they were being dashed. Quinn wanted Russ to summon his demon form.

If that was possible, he could see its powers, and its strength, on top of that he could face it himself in his current form as a good way of training. If things got too dangerous, Russ could always de-summon the Demon form as well.

"I hate to say this, and I hate that you are making me say this, but you are too strong." Russ explained. "For me to use your powers, to create something that is as strong as you, or even stronger, it would be impossible with my MC cells.

"Once I tried to summon you, when Layla was in trouble, but it was too much. Unlike when I faced you, I no longer have the support I did back then."

From what Russ was saying, Quinn had gathered it was due to a lack of MC cells. The more MC cells, then the stronger his powers and summons he could make. The thing was, Quinn did know of a way to increase Russ's MC cells, but the question was whether or not that was a good idea.

'Russ is helping us out for now, and increasing his power might not be such a bad thing, but he is not a good person, and the last thing I want to do is create another Jim or Jack that I would have to face!' With that thought, Quinn would put a pin in the idea.

For now, Quinn would have to put the transformation away, put it as something he was unable to use. At least until he figured out a way to use it, and would attempt to continue mixing his shadow and blood powers to create something else.

Around Ceril's wrist there was a watch that started to flash and make a small beeping noise, when she looked at it, a smile appeared.

"It looks like the coordinates have been downloaded. We can finally set off." Ceril said, and the group didn't waste any time leaving Earth.

Chapter 2122: A Universal Legend

Suddenly being transported onto a strange planet that clearly wasn't Earth, the Blades thought that they would at least be able to find a civilization somewhere. After that, they would fly to the Blade ship, or back to Earth to ask for help in taking down the attackers.

Perhaps even find Quinn as it was the last request from Sil before he had transported them all. Yet, it had become very clear, from the moment they saw the humanoid figure that they weren't on Earth.

The group were slowly moving forward toward the lake, but it wasn't the lake that they were scared of, instead it was a figure next to the lake. He was large in size, perhaps around 8 feet.

He was sitting on a rock as well, with a large, strangely made, thick fishing rod, which looked to be made out of a thick type of metal but the strangest thing was the person themselves.

Because of their outer skin, it looked to shine almost with a golden glow, but was hard and tough like a rock as well. Then there was the fact that it had four arms.

"Is it a humanoid beast, sir?" One of the Blades asked.

"I have never seen a Humanoid beast go fishing." Shiro replied. "Even if they are intelligent, they don't tend to do things like this, but there is only one way to find out."

There was a worrying thought in Shiro's mind that he didn't express with the others. Why wasn't their equipment working, and the one that teleported them all was Sil.

With his power, he was able to teleport them very very far away. What they were looking at could very well be contact with another intelligent Alien life. Due to the situation, one would believe they were the invaders and if that was to happen, they would have jumped from one bad situation to another.

'What are you being so scared for!' Raten shouted. 'We are Blades. Even if it is an alien, do you really think that we are weak compared to those in the universe? If they start attacking us, then we just have to fight back.'

At that moment, the fishing line was raised into the air, and a giant sea creature was pulled out. Its body was so large that it was covering the sun casting a shadow on them all.

The creature had what looked like three heads, with circles on the end of them, all with razor sharp teeth. Just from the look of it on its own, it looked to be a high level beast.

Possibly at the Demi-god tier. The four armed man stood up, and shoved his rod into the rock that he was sitting on effortlessly, to keep it in place. Then, the next moment it leapt in the air, and threw two punches.

Two large bangs went off like explosions and two large holes were ripped through the fish's head, nearly getting rid of the entire top half of its body. As it was falling, it caught the large fish with one of its lower arms, and was holding its entire body that weighed at least a few 1000 tons, with a single arm, and placed it on the floor.

"That was a great catch today!" The man laughed to himself. "Although, I might have been a little too rough with it. It looked tougher than it actually was. What a waste of food."

Shiro had taken a step forward ready to take action, but after seeing the powerful display, his legs were shaking a little and the other Blades didn't blame him too much.

If that really was a demi-god tier beast, and it had been taken out that easily, then it by no means would be an easy fight, and they hadn't even witnessed the full strength of this creature.

'Should we turn back, should we run, or hide!' Shiro thought. 'Raten! Why have you suddenly gone quiet? You always have a lot to say, so make a decision!'

While looking at his catch, the four armed person had managed to catch something in the corner of his eye and turned his head, he was now looking right at them.

The Blades all flinched again, and Shiro was getting his abilities ready.

'Don't worry too much, if you can't deal with it, then switch with me!' Vorden said. 'I will do my best to take care of the situation.'

"My word, I never thought I would be seeing something like this!" The four armed person said to himself as he walked over, and started to wave. "Welcome" he shouted!

'Welcome... he just said welcome, right?' Shiro looked at the others, and they all looked confused as well.

"You are humans, correct? It's nice to meet you." The person jumped from his position at least fifty metres away, and landed right in front of Shiro. Now that the two were right in front of each other, the body was more intimidating than he thought.

"It's been a while since we have had any humans visit this place, but I didn't see any ships?"

Judging by the way the person was acting, and how happy he seemed to be, it was hard for Shiro to think of him as an enemy. It could still be a trap of some sort, but it seemed unlikely, as the element of surprise was gone, which was a big factor in a fight.

"I'm sorry, but I don't know where we are." Shiro answered. "We suddenly are here, and we are stranded. I know it might be hard to believe."

"It's not hard to believe." The person replied straight away. "You are not the first person I have met in this area, who suddenly arrived here. He helped us before, so I shall help you."

"I am an Amra, and my name is Geo, it's nice to meet you all." Geo smiled.

Shiro and Geo were able to talk quite a bit, although it was mostly a one sided conversation with Geo taking the lead. He was going on and on about a great human who had helped them in the past.

Through their talking, Geo had stated that he would try his best to help them, but to do so they would have to go into the city. He could see that there were a few in the group that were tired, and needed rest, So Geo thought it would kill two birds with one stone.

Eventually, they had reached the city, and it was more simple than they had imagined. It certainly was an intelligent civilization, but the houses, the layout, all of it was more like that of the human race 1000's of years in the past.

"I can guess what you are thinking." Geo said. "But we are a simple race. We don't like gadgets and machinery taking over our lives. We prefer to do things with our own hands. We hunt, cook, everything, and life seems to just be more satisfying this way."

When they got closer to the city, Shiro was getting nervous once again. Although this Amra happened to treat them nicely, it didn't mean that the whole race would, when they saw them.

However, Shiro was completely wrong, they were allowed to walk through the gate, and the guards gave them a friendly wave and smile.

"It's nice to have you back, Geo! Are those humans with you!" One of the guards asked.

"Yes!" Geo replied, "they are guests".

This didn't just stop with the guards, as they were walking through the city, and more Amra were seeing them. They would all wave, and greet Geo. Some were even giving him gifts, and it was becoming clear...

"You talked a lot about that human, but you didn't say much about yourself, you're not an ordinary Amra are you?" Shiro asked.

"Haha, you're right, I am in charge of this city." Geo replied. "But don't get me wrong, all of it was because of the person I talked about before. I'm sure you will know him, he is such a great figure to us, he must be back on Earth as well."

Shiro chuckled at that comment.

Sure, there were travellers that went out, explorers that never returned, but what were the chances that Shiro would know them?

Geo soon stopped as he reached his home, but just outside of his home, there was a large object that cast a shadow over the Blades. From just its feet they could tell that it was a carved out statue.

"Why is there such a big statue here?" Shiro asked as he slowly looked at the details as he lifted his head.

"That... is because it's a statue of the human who helped us, and my dear friend."

Finally, Shiro's eyes laid upon the face, and his mouth was left wide open. He couldn't blink.

'Why... in the middle of nowhere, on a random planet, with a random alien race, is there a statue of Quinn?'

Chapter 2123: An Enemy or Ally

Ceril didn't have the direct coordinates to the Mermerial planet, but only the flight path of the Marpo Cruise ships. At first, there was a thought that this might be risky, as it was quite possible that they would run into one of the Marpo Cruise ships, and right now they were trying to stay undetected.

During her research though, she had stumbled across some more information that had been sent over. It was the fact that the Marpo Cruise ships weren't currently in operation.

The business seemed to be on pause. There were a couple of guesses as to why this might be, one of them being the fact that Jack and Jim had started a war with the Namriks, but Quinn only remembered seeing two of the cruise ships, so where were the others. Unfortunately, there was no information regarding that.

The flight as expected wasn't a short one by any means, but they had been provided with a number of high tier beast crystals to be used as fuel, so they felt like in this department there would be no problems, it was just a simple waiting game now.

"Ah, I think I recognise that moon over there. I should be able to get us to the general area." Ceril stated, as she took over the controls and started to do a scan with the ship.

It was only a matter of time now until she would be back on her home planet. There were a lot of memories in her head, and she was waiting to know which one of these were true or not.

'The Mermerial planet, we're nearly there.' Quinn thought, looking out into space. 'I still have to be a little careful here as well. The celestial that covers this planet is the one named Yongbu. Although he did help us get to Earth last time, I am no longer a celestial.'

'Whether the celestials know this or not is another thing, but if he sees me and reports this, then it may very well cause trouble.'

However, Quinn wasn't sure if the celestials already knew about this or not, because Quinn had met with the Namrik celestial and eliminated him. There wasn't a chance for the celestial to be sent back, but they had to be aware of what happened.

Quinn was right in his thoughts, because the celestials were very aware of the disappearance of the said celestial.

Mundus was in the celestial space, sitting in his made chair. He was in his physical form, one of the few that could enter the space in such a way. While sitting down, there were several floating orbs around him.

Flashing with images of parts of planets. They were different due to the orbs of energy that would be said planets, it was more a small taste. The universe was large, too large for Mundus to look over everything that was happening.

Celestials would disappear all the time, rejoining the reincarnation cycle, and god slayers would pop up all over the place. Unless it was considered a major problem, Mundus and the Ancient Ones would leave everything to be dealt with by the celestials in the area.

For the most part, this would work out, with only little intervention needed, but there was a troublesome area that was annoying Mundus somewhat.

'Why do those humans have to cause so much trouble!' Mundus sighed to himself. 'There has been a sharp rise of those with god slayer status. On top of that, it seems like they are spreading out from their area. They are like a virus...'

Due to a promise that had been made with a certain celestial, Mundus hadn't been keeping an eye on Earth and those around it too much, but still asked to get reports from the others.

It was common practice to get reports from Earth due to Immortui being from there. The Ancient Ones always feared that he would be plotting something.

Which was why he had decided to have a messenger gather information for him, one of the best celestials.

"Are you satisfied with the report sir?" Xox asked, the floating ball of energy.

"It will have to do." Mundus replied. "It is a shame that no one was looking over the Namrik planet, but we never expected the humans to expand so far."

Moving his hand, Mundus brought up an orb and could see the current situation on the planet.

"I can sense a few with god slayer powers in the area. I sent a celestial to deal with them before but it didn't turn out well. They must be relatively strong. Very well, Xox, keep an eye on the humans' movements. Get the help of another celestial to watch Earth as well, we can't drop the ball on this one."

Xox nodded, unsure whether the last line was meant to be a joke or not. He was thinking of laughing to please Mundus but played it safe, as he whisked away to do as he was asked.

'Why are there so many problems with those from earth?'

There was a hypothesis that was going through Mundus' head. It was most likely because Immortui was sealed away that these god slayers were able to rise. Normally they would be dealt with, and now the situation was getting out of hand.

'It seems like the Ancient Ones are storing up their power, just in case there is a big battle with Immortui in the future. So they don't want to directly get involved.'

'It's the same for myself though, I used up a lot of power in my last fight. I don't know why but I have a bad feeling about those from earth. If I was to fight them, I might need to be at my very best.'

Mundus had already sent out some of his fighting celestials the last time to deal with those from Earth and had failed. He feared that if he was to do the same again that it would be the same result.

The celestials had faith in him and the Ancient Ones, because so far most of them were able to live a satisfying life, satisfying their conditions, but sending them to their death would cause more problems for them, and the Universe was unpredictable.

If the balance was swayed in one direction, Mundus was trying to wonder what it would attempt to do, to correct it.

'A powerful being that will listen to what I say, and is up for the task.' Mundus was thinking hard, and a solution soon had arrived. Before doing this, he needed to check with a certain group of people, and soon his seat as well as his own body was disappearing from the space.

"We... approve of the plan, but if they end up causing trouble, then you will be the one responsible and will need to deal with it, do you understand." A deep voice that sounded neither high pitched or low pitched, it almost switched as it spoke.

"I understand." Mundus bowed down. He then swung his arm, and a line was visible in the air. Soon after he stepped through it, moving his body into another area again.

'Hopefully this will resolve everything. He has listened to us before, and as long as the deal is favourable to him he should accept.' Mundus thought. 'Quinn, you have proven yourself before, and I'm sure we can use you again. If you are successful, then the Ancient Ones have agreed that they will let you live free, as long as you are kept under watch.'

Mundus was confident in his plan, and all he needed to do now was to talk to the person in question. Soon he had entered a certain space, it was nothing but white inside.

As he stood there, he started to look left and right. He twisted and turned his head, but was unable to see anything.

"Quinn..." Mundus called out. "Quinn!" he shouted out a bit louder this time, trying to get a response, but there was nothing.

'That's impossible... did he escape?'

Chapter 2124: A sea of blue

After navigating through the space relatively aimlessly for a while, Ceril had informed the others that she had finally located the Mermerial planet. The planet itself wasn't in the ship's memory nor was it a recognised planet.

However, there were many times where Ceril had seen the outside of the planet, and without a doubt, from the shape of the land mass, the amount of water and so on, she knew it was her planet. Similar to how someone, if shown a picture of Earth, would be able to recognise it as theirs as well.

"Save the coordinates so we can come back to this place, and put it on a drive as well." Quinn ordered. "We might have to leave the planet, to search for the others, and as long as things go well, this will be our base from now on."

She did as asked and while the task was completing, she could see that someone from down below was attempting to make contact. Soon, flying out from the planet, there were several dark blue coloured ships that had sharp shark-like fins on either side of the wings of the small spaceships.

They were clearly spaceships that were designed for battle.

"Well, it looks like their military force was at least able to recover from the infighting from before." Quinn commented.

"Your ship is an unrecognised vessel in our planet's air space. Please state your reason for entering, and identify yourselves!" the message played.

Quinn knew nothing about their processes, and it had been a while since they had last been to the planet, so he was sure a lot had changed. Ceril, knowing this as well, had decided to open up the video feed and show herself.

"We mean no harm, we have come in peace." Ceril started. "We have come from far away, and wish to speak to your leader. As you can see." Ceril held up her arm, and scales started to appear all over, her skin was turning a slightly darker shade of blue as well. "I am a Mermerial myself. If you still do not trust us, please send this to your leader... Wince."

Ceril's voice croaked a bit when she said this. It was painful to speak her sister's name, and when she left the last time, she thought that they would never meet again.

The man on screen could be seen talking to another by his side, and in the end, they decided to send the video off, to allow their leader to make the right decision.

Moments later, the man had come back with an answer, and the look on his face had changed as well.

"Please, follow our ships, they will escort you to the landing bay, right behind the palace."

Everything seemed to be working out, which was nice for a change, and even Russ let out a sigh of relief.

"It's still quite hard to get used to." Russ commented. "Meeting these other races. I know we have the Dalki, and vampires, but they are more human. Well, at least the vampires."

"Are you saying I don't look human?" Ceril asked.

"You do... it's just strange to think that you are from so far away." Russ added.

"This is cool!" Minny shouted. "This is a planet that Daddy has been on before. I'm sure that all of them will be as nice as Aunty Ceril and just as beautiful."

Quinn was right, the Mermerial race had changed quite a bit since he last had been here. For one, there were more cities that were above water, than below it. On top of that, the giant land of ice that had been created by none other than Sil had become the main city centre.

Since the planet was originally one that was mostly water, most of the islands, or cities were man made as well. Created on a strange flotation system. It appeared to be made of a metal like material. One that would float and go along with the waves of the sea.

However, for some reason, near these pieces of land, the sea was unmoving and steady. It made Quinn wonder whether it was a special device, or even the ability of the Mermerials themselves since they had the power to control water.

As they were escorted, they reached a giant palace that was mostly white in decoration but was covered in pearls and pink and light blue clam shells and more. It was a civilisation just as advanced as Earth, just the fashion was very different.

Even across the city, there were several small paths of water. It looked like the Mermerials would jump into the water, transforming their body, and swim through the city to get to the location they wished faster.

"That's so cool!" Minny said. "Ceril, does this mean that you can transform as well?"

Ceril nodded.

"Our bodies can change when we are mostly submerged in water. Although the appearance of us is different from person to person."

The ship had landed inside the palace courtyard which looked more like an ice arena, but there was plenty of space for a ship, and waiting for them wasn't just anybody, but the current Queen of the Mermerials herself, Wince, and in her hands, she was holding onto a trident.

Getting off from the ship there was a warm welcome for them all, as food and such was brought to his group, and Quinn noticed the weapons.

'Wince had given the Trident to Sil in the end, so it's impossible to be the same one, but I can sense that it has great power. It's incredibly strong... is it at the level of a god slayer item?' Quinn guessed.

Immediately, there was a smile on her face, and soon the smile turned into tears, tears of joy, and they weren't just coming from her, but were coming from Ceril as well.

Immediately, Ceril ran forward and so did Wince, as the two of them gave each other a big hug.

"There was a part of me that thought I would never see you again!" Wince said.

"It was the same for me." Ceril gave another big hug before breaking it and looking at her sister in the face. Wiping her tears away, she realised that she needed to get to the point.

"Sister, I have an important question that I need to ask you." She then looked at Quinn. "Do you remember this man?"

It was the moment of truth, as Wince looked toward Quinn, and she gave her answer.

"You come see me after all this time, and you ask a question like that. Of course I remember Quinn, how could I forget him?" Wince answered.

It was as Quinn had expected, the memory changing ability was unable to reach a great distance, and now Ceril had also received her confirmation her memories were indeed changed, although she had good faith to begin with.

"You are also a face, I never thought I would see again." She added. "Although, I did try to make this planet more land friendly with you in mind."

This was because Quinn had a great fear of the deep sea, so he appreciated it.

"We have a lot to talk about."

Wince went on to escort the family to a more private room where they could talk. It was an unexpected visit, but all of Wince's appointments were cancelled to make way for it.

While walking around, Quinn was also trying to sense if Yongbu was around. It was a little more difficult now that he was no longer a celestial. He could somewhat sense a familiar energy but not having that energy, it was hard to find.

For now, he was unable to sense anything but he still needed to be cautious. They had finally arrived at a grand catering room that had snacks and desserts. It was all things that they wouldn't eat though, and Quinn got right down to business.

He talked to Wince, and explained everything that happened, how those from his home planet, and further, no longer remembered him including Ceril. The question now was starting to make sense.

He didn't want to hide anything from her, and the reason why they were here. If Jim ever found out where he was, he believed that Jim would target this planet as well, which is why he needed to make it clear.

"Don't be crazy." Wince replied. "You did more than enough for us. To allow your family to stay here, that is still too little. So don't worry and treat this place as your second home."

The Talen family smiled, while Russ's expression didn't change much. Running even when there was no one on your tail was pretty tiring.

"However, I do have one thing to tell you." Wince said. "There was someone who came by, someone who was looking for you, Quinn."

Chapter 2125.1: Troublesome two (Part 1)

Hearing that someone was looking for Quinn wasn't so strange. After all he was popular with everyone, friends, enemies, celestials and all sorts. However, with recent events there weren't many that would know his name.

On top of that, he was now on the Mermerial planet, a planet that he had only visited once. The only person that had been here before that he knew was Sil, and he was unsure if Sil was the one looking for him.

"Someone was looking for me?" Quinn asked confused. "Is it Yongbu?"

This was his first guess, but it still made no sense, how would the celestial know he would be here, unless they already knew about him.

"Yongbu, that is a name that I haven't heard in a while." Wince replied. "After he met with you, he only visited a couple of times, but even those that worship him have stated that they can't sense his presence these days, at least not close by, so there is a chance that he is busy with something else."

That was good news for Quinn, it was one less thing for him to worry about.

"Actually, I'm not sure who they were. I have never seen them before nor did they state a name. They were also here yesterday so it has caused quite a surprise." Wince explained. "We don't know how they got on the planet in the first place, but there is one thing that I am quite certain about, and that's the fact that they looked human."

"Humans all the way out here?" Layla repeated, just as stunned as everyone else.

What human would be on the Mermerial planet and looking for Quinn. There were some celestials that looked human, but if the celestials did find out about him escaping, he feared that most likely Mundus himself would come.

"Honestly, I can't say anything else on the matter, because as soon as they came, they left just as quickly. Saying that they would be back, when you arrived. The only thing was, I never expected you to arrive so soon after them."

For now, since there wasn't much else on the matter, Quinn would have to put a pin in it.

For now, Quinn was to be shown his new living area and shown what their life would be like on the Mermerial planet. They were assigned a couple of escorts, one a fish man and another a fish woman, called Skin and Tint.

This was to allow the two sisters to catch up with each other but Quinn did give a warning to Ceril, that she was to come back to him at least once a day, and if she felt anything strange or had any problems, to rush to his side.

This was because at the end of the day, Ceril was no longer like them, and it was because of Quinn in the first place. Although Wince did have celestial energy in her from Quinn, she did not have any traits of a vampire like her sister.

Doing all of this, was because Quinn was adamant on not creating the same problem on the Mermerial planet as what happened on Earth.

The escorts eventually took Quinn to a living area that was still within the palace grounds and they were treating him extremely nicely, and even while walking through the palace, there were many that would come over offering bracelets, gifts and more to him.

Some of them were quite the young females, and they would soon run off with red faces.

"I guess even other races still think he has a handsome face." Russ commented.

"Yes, and they need to remember that I am right here beside him." Layla gritted her teeth slightly and was squeezing onto Minny's hand a little tighter than usual.

The living area was located behind the main palace, where several councillors, politicians and heads of clans lived. The mermerial race was a strange mix of traditional values mixed with modern ideals, and what brought this all together was the Royal family.

The house they were staying in had a unique taste, looking like a giant clam on the outside but was decorated well with lots of space for them all to have a room each on the inside.

"We hope you enjoy your stay here, and if there is anything you need please ask us." Both the escorts said bowing their heads down. "Wince has asked that if you do leave the planet there is no need to get permission, but just to inform one of us beforehand."

After the two had left, the tension and awkwardness had disappeared.

"What did you do for them to treat you like this?" Russ asked. "Did you save the planet or something."

"Yeah, something like that." Quinn answered, while he sat down in a large blue chair that almost was like a throne so he could think about the next move.

Russ was left a bit speechless, because he had said it as a joke, but it seemed to actually be true. The life that Quinn lived compared to the rest of them was vastly different.

The question that was on Quinn's mind was where would he begin his search for the Blades. There was no clue where he should begin his search, but he wanted to move quickly.

Unlike last time, although he didn't mind his family living here enjoying a peaceful life, he needed to act and would go on a search.

'Maybe we can kill two birds with one stone.' Quinn thought, looking at Russ. 'We can search planets for information while also looking for nest crystals to increase Russ' strength.

'That would mean Russ coming with me. My family, they will be safe here, the Mermerials are strong, stronger than when there was infighting from before. It will take a long time if Jim ever did decide to come this far.'

'It seems he doesn't know much about what I have done, so I doubt he could guess to come find me in a place like this. I'm more likely to run into them, and if that happens, I'll just have to shadow link to come back to Minny.'

Although he had said to himself there was no time to spare, he didn't want to rush off just yet. There was a little nag in the back of his mind as to who were the people that wished to meet with him.

They said they would come, so maybe he should stay a couple of days, and see what they wanted.

"I'm going to go for a walk, I'll be back soon." Quinn said, as he left the house and went to explore aimlessly.

He didn't know where he was going, nor did he want to bother the two escorts. It was just when his mind was full, it was easier for him to walk. A lot of his recent thoughts had been back to the fight that Sil had.

'I still can't believe it, Borden you're really gone... and Nell as well.' Quinn thought. 'I didn't even get to say goodbye, or any final words. This has happened so many times already. It feels like everyone is leaving me, and one day everyone will leave me while I'm still alive, still fighting.'

Where was the end in sight for Quinn? This was playing heavily on his mind. He enjoyed living with his family, but as they grew older, would they eventually get involved in conflicts that he would have to deal with?

And what would happen, how would he feel if he lived to see one of them lose their life? The cycle of pain for Quinn was repeating and as time went on it was just getting bigger and bigger.

Eventually Quinn could see a beautiful sight in front of him. There was a watery lake inside the castle grounds. It was large, and gigantic. There was a pathway that was built out and a small little platform where one could sit out and enjoy the view of the lake.

Seeing this, Quinn started to walk out on the pathway and onto the platfrom. He looked out at the beautiful sight with the sun sparkling off the lake.

"After thinking about all that, I get to see something so beautiful that I never would have seen if I was gone." Quinn smiled to himself.

"Sorry to interrupt." A voice said from behind. "But we have been waiting for you."

Turning around, Quinn saw the two people, and he could recognise them both immediately, but it didn't put a smile on his face at all.

"Bliss... Sam, I'm guessing you two still remember me?"

Chapter 2126.2: Troublesome two (Part 2)

If Quinn was thinking properly, then he could have guessed that the two that wished to meet him would have been these two. The thing was, he had pushed the thought to the very back of his mind, because he didn't want it to become a reality.

For some reason, someone who was very loyal to Quinn was working alongside Bliss. A meddlesome celestial who believed she was doing things for the sake of the human race, but the way Quinn saw it, she was able to do so much, yet chose to do so little.

"I'm happy to see that you and your family are safe." Sam stated first, as he moved a bit closer, but stopped as he saw the look in Quinn's eyes.

"Why are you mentioning my family?" Quinn said.

At one point, he would have loved to have introduced his family to Sam. However, the fact that he was by her side was what made him untrusting to a certain degree.

"There is no need to be so hostile towards us." Bliss said, as she sat calmly on the outside seats of the platform, not taking Quinn's threat so seriously. "Have we ever harmed you before?"

Quinn laughed at the statement.

"You harmed my family, and don't think for a second if in those visions of yours if you ever saw that getting rid of my family would be more beneficial to you, that you wouldn't do it. The only reason why I haven't sent you back into the reincarnation cycle is because I only just arrived on this planet and don't want to cause any trouble."

"As for you Sam, I still consider you somewhat a friend."

A smile appeared on Sam's face as he heard that, all though it was slightly a nervous smile due to the choice of words.

"I will always consider you a friend Quinn, no matter what you think of me." Sam replied. "Whether you believe it or not, that is why we are here."

When Sam was speaking, Quinn seemed to calm down a little, so he decided that it was best to hear them out.

"Before you say anything, there is a lot I need to get off my chest." Quinn stated. "The fact that you are here must mean that you saw a vision that I would eventually arrive here. So then why, why didn't you get involved sooner, why didn't you tell me what was going to happen to Sil? Tell me what's going to happen so we can prevent these things!"

Bliss sighed at that moment.

"And why do you keep asking the same question every time we meet, and not expect the same answer, are you mad?"

Quinn didn't say anything and instantly moved from his position, his hand reached out and his fingers wrapped around Bliss's throat. She tried to lift her staff but the shadow from Quinn pushed the staff ripping it out from her hand and was holding it in place.

"Mad! Of course I'm mad, my friends died. They died right in front of my eyes, and you are alive!" Quinn shouted. "If you can't help them, then what's the point of you being alive."

"Quinn!" Sam called out and grabbed hold of his other arm. "You need her, believe it or not, it's because she has only dabbled here and there that things haven't turned out far worse. You are only thinking about the current life that we live in now, not the one that could have been."

"The celestials you knew nothing about but managed to gather all of their attention, and even the planet we are on now. Isn't the reason why you can bring your family to safety here, because of what Bliss did in sending you away. There are more paths than you can even imagine, and right now we are here to do the same thing again. I know you don't trust her but somewhere deep down you still trust me right?" Sam asked. "I'm your strategist, the strategist for the Cursed faction... always planning to do what's best for the faction and that includes you Quinn."

Sam's words... they always sounded so confident, and because they were coming from him, they were pulling at Quinn's heart strings a bit. He weakened his grip, and quickly moved away, while letting go of the staff.

'He... has grown incredibly strong. I doubt that there is a god slayer out there that is as strong as him.' Bliss thought, as she rubbed her neck a little.

"Now I can speak." She said as she held the staff closer toward her. "I'm sure you are aware already, but Jack and Jim have begun their conquest. They are taking over one planet at a time with their new army, and when it comes to power they are unmatched."

"The celestials will see this as a threat, but it will be too late, and in the end the Universe will act out, creating a great reset, do you know what this means?"

"A reset?" Quinn replied.

"It means the Universe will restart. It will decide to start again from scratch. Getting rid of everything that is in place at the moment to create a balance. There

will be no celestials, there will be no god slayers, there will be no humans. It will be as if none of us ever existed in the first place.

"You see, Jim and Jack's armies are both evolving in their own ways. As the Dalki obtain more spikes, more and more will reach god slayer status. The vampire's strength increases due to the green blood, so in turn the vampires also grow stronger.

"On top of that, I'm sure Jim has other methods and uses of getting himself and others stronger. The thing is, they don't even realise what future they are heading towards themselves, and even if we were to tell them, do you think they would believe us?

"The celestials will think it's a trick and the same with Jim and Jack, but then there is you Quinn... in the middle of it all."

Despite everything that Quinn had been through and everything he had seen, trying to imagine a reset. The Universe just restarting like that was hard to comprehend.

"There is a turning point." Bliss said. "During their conquest they will go from planet to planet, and they will eventually reach these planets. Not even the Mermerials are safe. In my vision, a great war takes place and you will lose the fight, nearly all will end up dead.

"You manage to escape, and move to the next planet, where the same happens again. You train, and try to get stronger which you do, but so does the enemy. Their numbers, their overwhelming force is just too much for you to handle.

"Each time you run away, the situation just gets worse. Which is why Quinn, you need to gather allies by your side once again. Gather and use anyone you can to stop them once and for all.

"Don't try and fight this fight alone, and don't be afraid of going against those that were once your ally."

This wasn't the first time Quinn had heard this, Logan had said the same thing. Thinking about his powers and what was currently in his shadow space, maybe there was a way for him to create an army.

"Quinn, there are planets out there, with races that have great strength. Strength that is far greater than humans, equal to the vampires and some of the Dalki, but they won't just take a stranger's word for it.

"You need to convince them, convince them that you need their help, convince them that with you, following your lead, that you will have the confidence to take out the threat that is heading towards destroying the universe." Sam placed both hands on his shoulder, and then pulled something out of his pocket, it was a small nano stick.

"If you trust us, head to these coordinates, and we will be doing our best to help you when the time comes."

Sam stood back, standing next to Bliss and her staff started to light up, it looked like they were leaving, but before they did Sam had one more thing to say.

"On that stick, there is a gift for you... It took a lot to get that, but I hope you can forgive your parents."

The two of them flashed away, while Quinn held out his hand.

"Wait what... my parents!"

Chapter 2127: A father and mother

It was a restless sleep for Quinn that night, that was for sure, but when he woke up, he still didn't let any of what had happened, deter him from his original plan. He had informed the group that he would be leaving to head off to another planet, in search of the Blades.

This time, Layla knew it was coming and so did the rest. What they didn't know was the fact that Quinn would ask Russ to come with them, and even he seemed surprised.

'I had planned to laze around and enjoy myself here. There are a few cuties among the Memerial race, but of course the vampire needs to ruin it all.' Russ thought.

There was one more surprise though, when informing the others, Ceril was with them as well, and she had claimed that she wished to join Quinn while he was on his journeys.

"Are you sure about this?" Quinn asked. "Don't you want to spend time on your home planet, and with your sister?"

Ceril shook her head.

"We have done a lot of catching up already. We spent many years together as well, but the longer I stay here, and learn of what everyone has done without me, the more I feel like this is no longer my home."

Quinn somewhat understood the feelings Ceril was going through, it was most likely she could feel that was different from the rest as well.

"It would be a pleasure to have you come with us, but I warn you that it might not be easy. Trouble does seem to follow me around at times." Quinn half joked.

This was better for him in all honesty, as he was a little worried about Ceril and what might happen to her while she was away. The best thing was to check up on her once in a while, so no accidents occurred.

As for what had happened, and the people he met, he chose not to inform Layla and his family of that matter. It wouldn't change nor help anything anyway.

"Minny, I'm leaving you in charge while I'm away." Quinn said. "If anything dangerous happens, remember to use what I gave you."

Minny nodded and pumped her fist, she still had yet to use the gift her father had given her because she hadn't been involved in any direct conflict that warranted her using it, but hearing her father give her such an important task she was ready.

The group were travelling through space, now it was just the three of them, and neither of them talked to each other much. They were a mismatched group. It was fine for Quinn because the quietness while travelling gave him time to think.

'We don't really have an idea of where to go...but I do have this.' Quinn thought as he looked at the nano stick in his hand. 'They said it has the location of where to go. Does that mean it will take me to the Blades?'

The problem was whether to take their help or not, and there was something else on the stick that Quinn was greatly interested in.

'He said that there was something about my parents here. I didn't miss hear him right?' Quinn thought to himself. 'But...what could it be? They can't still be alive, they died in the war. I was told they had died in the war, and even if they hadn't they wouldn't have been able to live for so long, not without some sort of influence.'

Letting out a big sigh, in the end Quinn decided to stick the stick into the main system of the ship.

'Sam, because you have done so much for me, I will choose to trust you this time again.'

The console lit up green for a second, before lighting up as usual. The ship took a drastic turn as it started to head in a completely different direction.

"Can you warn us next time?" Russ said, as his hand was on the side of the ship, having nearly fallen over.

Despite all of that, Quinn had decided to ignore them, because something had come up almost immediately. The hologram display was starting up and a video was starting to play. The screen was showing two people, a male and a female. The female was a beauty with long straight brown hair that went perfectly down her sides.

Even though she was doing nothing but staring at the camera, there was this air of peace around her. Just seeing her, was making Quinn calm. Then there was the man who had black curly hair. He looked to be a little rough around the edges.

He had stubble that was out of control, a bit patchy and a dark bags under his eyes as if he hadn't been to sleep in a while. The two of them were in a plain room, there was no furniture and only a small window in the back.

In some cases it looked like a prison cell, but judging by their actions and the smile the two of them had on their faces, it didn't look like a prison cell at all.

'Even after all this time...even though I was so young when they left me, I can still recognize them, I can still remember what they look like.' The video hadn't really

started but Quinn was already using his clothes to cover up his eyes, as he could see his mother and father.

After finding out that Quinn was no longer in the specially made locked space, Mundus had returned to the celestial space almost immediately. Nearly falling to the ground, his usual seat rose, catching him before he had done.

'I don't understand. I searched and searched but he was no longer in that space. How can that even be possible?' Mundus thought.

'There has never been a celestial that was able to escape from something like that. The special space was something that was created by one of the Elders. There were hardly any rules when creating the space so the seal should have been strong.'

Either way, it was clear that Quinn was no longer in the space, and he needed to do something. The one thing that he didn't want to do was report to the elders that an individual had slipped from his hands.

'He could be anywhere right now, and I need to find him as soon as possible, so I need some help.'

Mundus knew who to call for help, because during this tough period he had become his messenger of sorts. A few moments later, a floating ball of energy called Xox arrived.

"I have an important task for you." Mundus ordered. "However, you are not to let any of the others know. They are not to learn of this apart from those you decide you can trust in keeping this a secret."

Quinn was already a problem for the celestials and if they were to learn that they were looking for him again, it would cause a panic among them.

"I need you to find Quinn Talen, the Celestial that is also known as BB. As soon as you find him, report back to me immediately."

That dreaded name shook Xox. Ever since he had met with BB, his life had been harder than he felt like it should have been.

"Right away sir!" Xox answered and was off.

While running through the celestial space to complete the task quickly, he was starting to think who he could trust, and who might be able to help him best. In recent times, there was someone who he became close with, and was already doing a task for him.

Xox started to head to earth, and eventually ran into another Celestial.

"Yonbu!" Xox called out. "I have an important task, you can forget about Earth for now. I need your help, we need to find BB."

Just like Xox, You had a knee jerk reaction as he took a step back and shook his head.

"You don't understand. This is an order from Mundus, you have to help me, and no one can know about it. You met him before right, so maybe you would have an idea of where he would be?" Xox asked.

Yonbu didn't want to get involved, but if it was Mundus' order it was already too late.

"I don't really have a good idea, but...I guess we can start from my planet, there are those that know of him."

Chapter 2128: A missing piece

After the initial shock of seeing his parents on screen there were a few things that Quinn started to notice. For one, their age, the reason why he was so easily able to recognise them, was because they looked exactly like they did, before they had left.

As the years went past, the memories and their faces were disappearing from Quinn's mind, but the brain was a strange thing because as soon as he saw them, he knew they were his parents and the memories of them started to flood into his mind.

Yet, why would they look the same, unless they were vampires, but even then they would need to be original vampires to keep up their appearance, but then why wasn't Quinn born a vampire?

In the end, looking at their clothing gave the answer away. It was simple, this was a video from a long time ago. The two of them were wearing military uniforms which didn't have a hint of beast gear on it.

"Alright, the two of you are to state your names into the camera before recording your message, you have two minutes." A voice was heard coming from behind the camera.

"Two minutes." Quinn's mother said, the smile fading from her face, but she soon forced herself as she sat up right and smiled right at the camera again.

"My name is Isabella Talen."

"And my name is Finley Talen." Quinn's father stated. "There is a reason why we are recording this video... why everyone has been asked to make a video... and unfortunately if you are getting this message it means that the two of us are now dead."

It was then that Quinn realised how foolish he was being. The answer was obvious as to what this video was, yet he was holding out hope... Hope that they were still alive out there, that he could do something, but it did make him wonder.

How did Sam manage to get this video, and why only now was he seeing it.

"Quinn... our baby, both of us are very sorry." Isabella started to speak, her voice choking up. "We're sorry that we won't be able to see you grow up. We're sorry that we won't be there to see your first girlfriend, your children, and be there when you need us."

"I'm sorry as well." Finley added, clenching both of his fists on his knees. "But I'm sorry for fighting back. The situation is bad at the moment, and I want you to know that if our lives are taken, it's all because of you."

"I don't want you to think we abandoned you. We are fighting to protect you, and all the others like you. If we lose our life so you can all stay alive then I can say I am a proud father because of that.

"I won't be able to teach you morals, what's right or wrong as you grow up, but I know you are a Talen, and throughout our lives, the Talens have always done the right thing. I want you to live a normal happy family life, I want you to not be involved in conflict, but if you are anything like me, then I know you won't be able to stand back and do nothing. Because you are a Talen.

"You will be a great person, I know it and knowing that... me and your mother can fight in this war."

The video ended there, and there was nothing else. There was no extra message, nothing mentioned about the book that he had been given, that changed his life.

'This is their final words... why am I receiving all of this now?'

The others had heard the video from behind, hearing the words Talen and the context of the conversation they could guess what it was, so none of them said anything, and suddenly Quinn started to play the video again, as he watched it over, and over while they made their way to the unknown planet.

The other two were getting slightly worried, as they lost count how many times Quinn had played through that video.

'My word, it looks like someone has parental issues, and I thought I was the bad one.' Russ inwardly said.

"We are now approaching planet Paranium." The spaceship informed the rest. It snapped everyone out of the strange atmosphere that was in the room as they looked outside.

The planet looked to be fairly small when compared to Earth, but unlike Earth and the Mermerial planet, it was mostly land, with a few streams of water. It almost looked like there was no sea at all, just rivers that were constantly flowing that connected around the planet.

"Now that we are approaching the planet, what are we going to do if they attack us?" Ceril asked.

"For now, it is important that we don't make whoever these guys are a threat. Remember we are here to look for the Blades." Quinn wanted to say more, based on the strength of this alien race, maybe they could ask them for help in the fight, just like Bliss and Sam had suggested but he was still unsure if he wanted to do that.

"If they attack, I can protect us and the ship, we don't have to worry about that, but I don't think there will be a problem."

Quinn had better eyesight than the others, and he could see that there were multiple ships that were stopping and entering from a certain point, and based on the ship's autopilot, it was heading to the same point that the ships were coming in and out from.

Concentrating further and using Qi on his eyes, Quinn was able to see even further ahead, and he could see they had practically what looked like a ship airport and what he was seeing was interesting to say the least.

There was a system and multiple races of different aliens that were coming and going, as they left and joined the planet. A lot of what he was seeing reminded him of the Marpo Cruise where multiple races were seen.

It seemed like the planet had a lot of contact with other races.

'This is a good starting point, even if the Blades aren't on this planet, maybe we can ask other races if they have seen humans before.' Quinn thought. 'And, it also means that they won't be so hostile to visitors.'

Looking at the different aliens, there was one type that was more prominent compared to the others. They were human sized, but had thin pointed legs, heads and arms. It was clear that they weren't human, their purple skin alone said that, but had the same limbs and body structure of a human.

From just watching them, there was also another clear difference and that was their speed. They were rushing and running all over the place. At the space station they were workers that would zip from one side of the room to the next, and at times there would just be blurs.

If a regular human with no Qi training, or combat experience were to see this, they would be unable to follow any of their movements. Once again, the reality of how weak the human race was without their abilities was being shown.

Although they did have Qi, the strength was shown in only a few.

'The problem is what do we do?' Quinn thought. 'The planet, there seems to be no conflict. My name is not known here, we are just visitors, so who would I even talk to, where do I even go to ask about the Blades?'

'If I asked to speak to their leader, why would they even speak to me? Unless, I make a big scene, but that wouldn't be a good first impression either.'

Thinking about it more, there was one thing that the planet most likely had, that was beasts that had beast crystals, and where there were beasts there were nest

crystals. Coming to this planet wasn't going to be a waste, and Quinn was at least going to boost Russ' strength, to boost his own.

'Next time we fight Ray, it won't be as one sided as before.'

Chapter 2129: Speed

The whole process of landing on the planet was smooth. The ship landed on a platform and then moved to a certain bay, after that a machine approached them asking their reason for visiting and where they had come from.

Quinn answered Earth, even though it was unlikely they had ever had visitors from Earth before. After that, their faces and bodies were scanned. It was quite clear that all of it was a security measure.

"Please descend from your ship and follow the signs to the station. Upon returning, your scan will bring you back to your ship." A soft calming female voice said to them.

A lot of what was happening reminded them of Green city. After descending they did as asked and eventually arrived at the station. Ceril was fine, as she stood there waiting for Quinn to give the next order, but Russ couldn't help but stare and turn his head.

"Oh please." Russ said, seeing the strange look Ceril was giving him. "You have to understand that seeing all these different species and aliens is not normal for us. Even though humans have expanded, we have stayed quite within our own area."

This was true apart from the Marpo Cruise, but the main reason for that was due to how much infighting there was going on between the current planets they had discovered already. If the humans discovered another planet with a different race, then it would just be too much for them to handle.

As they were standing there, soon a purple alien ran over to where they were. One second they weren't there and the next moment they were right next to them with a flyer in their hand.

"Greetings visitors." The alien spoke nearly as fast as he ran over. "From the puzzled look on your faces, you don't seem to be from around here. If it's your first time visiting then I suggest you go to the Zap Zap Arcade. It's a great place to destress and get your legs working!"

Before any of them could say anything, the alien ran off, and was going to the next set of visitors.

"He... spoke as fast as he ran." Russ said.

Quinn looked at the flyer, and it was bright with all sorts of wacky strange colours on it, and it was hard to tell even what type of place it was.

"An arcade... we don't have time for games, we have to look for where the Blades are." Quinn mumbled.

"And how do you plan to do that, do you just want to walk around this entire planet, asking if they've seen someone like me?" Russ sarcastically commented, clearly knowing it was a bad idea.

"If you could get the help of the locals, I think that would be a big plus. Have you seen how fast they can move?" Ceril commented.

They were still fascinated by the race known as the Penswi. Their trait was speed. They talked fast, thought fast, and ran fast as well. The vampires were also fast but this speed was on a different level.

Without meeting a leader or a prominent figure of the Penswi, Quinn felt like it was unlikely they would just give a helping hand, but it did give him another idea, maybe there was a way he could get a helping hand from somewhere else.

With this in mind, Quinn decided to leave the station with the rest of the group and they soon had entered the city. Just as expected, everything was moving fast. They had strange pointy shaped vehicles on the road that looked to not slow down for a second as it took you from one place to the next.

They saw one of the vehicles suddenly stop, and in seconds four of the Penswi got on board, and it was already moving again.

"I'm not so sure you will even be able to catch one of these to ask them a few questions." Russ commented.

Quinn was beginning to think the same, so for now he decided to walk around, while he headed to the border of the city. Because what he was looking for was where the travelers of this planet, the hunters that fought against the beasts, would be.

Because there was one thing noticeable, and that was the fact that their machinery and power, just like on Earth ran off of beast crystals, so there needed to be a way for them to obtain them.

As they continued to walk around aimlessly, it was becoming apparent to all of them that they had no idea where they were going.

"Wait a second, isn't that the place on the flyer you were given?" Ceril asked.

It was a large venue that almost looked like an area with a lit up neon-like sign with the words Zap Zap Arcade.

"If there are people playing games in there, then it has to mean, there are those that are staying still, or are in one place, right?" Ceril suggested.

Judging by the size of it as well, Quinn guessed that maybe, they had other things inside. An arcade on another planet, wouldn't be the same as one on Earth after all.

When entering, they were bombarded with lights and a bunch of noise. They had expected it to be a little calmer, but they were completely wrong. There were countless numbers of the Penswi playing all sorts of different games, and all of them seemed to be focused around speed.

One was just running on what looked like a treadmill, and there was a large screen in front of them, showing contestants as they ran past them.

Another game required one to touch as many buttons as they could as soon as they lit up, and the hands of the player were moving all over the place.

"Hahah, you Amra people are the worst!"

A specific word had caught the attention of Quinn, when turning his head, he realised he really hadn't misheard the word that had been used. There was a large male Amra with four arms and he was playing one of the button games.

It was a flat surface with around a hundred different buttons that would light up, quickly and fade away. There were solo versions of the game, and there were also a VS mode, where one machine was blue and the other was red.

They would go off at the same time for one minute and after that minute the one with the highest score would win.

"We thought because you have more arms than us, you would have given us a challenge." The group of what Quinn could only guess were teenage boys, started to laugh.

"Yeah right, no race has ever been able to beat a Penswi at their own games, we are the fastest in the whole universe!"

They continued to laugh, and one of them, even went to touch the Amra poking its skin and quickly running back in its place. Because it knew that it was far too fast for the Amra to do anything.

"Ah!" The Amra man shouted. "If this was a fight instead I would certainly win!" The Amra tensed its body showing its muscular rock hard body. It was clear that his pride was being hurt, and it felt like he needed to do something.

Out of the group though, one who had a larger and pointy head then the other Penswi started to move forward. It wasn't the one that had just played the game, but seemed to be the leader of the group of teenegrs since the others moved to the side.

"Oh really?" The Penswi said. "You think just because we are fast, that we can't fight? That we aren't strong? Do we have to remind you that you are on our planet, and if you really wanted to put it to the test, then I would be happy to."

"Zallack, your father sai-"

"Shut up!" Zallack the Penswi turned around and said to his friend, and the others soon backed off.

"Hmph, I have nothing to prove to a bunch of kids." The Amra said, and turned around ready to walk off, to play some other games and cool his head.

"Don't call me a kid!" Zallack shouted and charged forward, thrusting his hand forward at such speed. He was moving so fast, everything was processing in his head that all around him it looked like slow motion.

His friends wanted to stop him, but Zallack was far faster than them and he had a head start, and as for the Amra, although they weren't slow by any means, in comparison he had yet to take a step.

'No one should underestimate me!' Zallack screamed in his head, but then could see something moving from the side. Something moving incredibly fast. It grabbed onto his hand and stopped it in place.

"That was dirty." Quinn said, looking at Zallack straight in the eye.

Chapter 2130: Russ's power

The Amra for the most part were one of the nicest races he had come across. They weren't hostile toward him from the get go. He was even able to play games with their young ones and felt welcomed.

It was only the celestial himself that was the problem, but in the end that all got resolved. Perhaps it was because of the good memories Quinn had in his head of the Amra that he had gotten involved.

Why had he decided to move forward? Maybe it was the dirty display of attacking someone while their back was turned. Eventually Quinn let go of Zallack who pulled back and was looking at his hand.

'Where did this person come from?' Zallack thought. 'I didn't see anyone that looks like him close by. Did he really get here so fast that I was unable to recognise them.'

Before saying anything, he as well as the rest of the Penswi looked at Quinn and the other two that were coming over. They were examining their bodies as they moved their heads up and down.

"I've never seen them, what are they?" One of the Penswi asked.

"They look really squishy, and that man's skin is so white and pale, is he going to faint?"

Of course, when looking at humans compared to other races, especially the Amra they were standing next to, humans certainly did look incredibly weak.

"Thank you warrior." The Amra man said, banging his chest with one of his hands. "But, although these guys are fast, their attacks would never be able to pierce my hard skin."

"There he goes again, underestimating us, that big rock!" One of the teenagers said.

Soon the rest of the Penswi were happy to back them up. Turning his head around, Russ was wondering why no one else was getting involved, or coming to stop what looked like an international alien fight about to break out.

However, he soon realised that the noise of the machines were drowning out their voices, and all that were in the arcade seemed to be having too much fun on their own to bother coming over.

"Hey." Russ said, coming into the middle of the group. "We are new to the planet as you can guess and we don't really know our way around here. We need some guides to explain to us what's going on, what this place is and more."

"Now we don't really have money, but you guys like playing games, right?"

All them nodded, for them this place was their regular hangout spot, they played non stop trying to get the best scores.

"Great! So let's make a deal. Let's play a game, and if we win, you become our guides for the day."

While the Penswi were thinking about this, it gave time for Quinn to calm the Amra down, and he seemed to be more reasonable than he was before, walking away. Quinn did, also ask for the two of them to perhaps meet up, as he would like to know what was going on the planet that he had left.

"What's taking you all so long to decide, didn't you say before that there is no race faster than you guys?" Russ taunted.

During the debate with each other, it was actually Zallack, the leader of the group, that was hesitant. He was cautious because of the man with the black curly hair, and the confidence they all had.

"Zallack, we nearly have all the high scores on all the machines on here. These guys look like they haven't even touched one of the games, why are you so nervous?" One of them asked.

In the end, Zallack walked forward.

"We're not afraid." Zallack said, looking at all of them. "But I think we should have this as a battle between the races. After all, every Penswi speed differs, so it will be us three, against you three, a best of three."

The three of them were a bit dumbfounded, because the truth was, they weren't the same race at all. Quinn was a vampire, Ceril a Mermerial Hybird, and Russ was the only real human among them.

At the same time Quinn was a little worried, originally he thought Russ's plan was a good one. Evaluating their speed, he had gathered that he was faster than the Penswi, whether he was faster than everyone on the planet or not was a different question but he was compared to those in front of him.

Winning the match, they could then ask the teenagers for advice, but now that it was a three on three, they would lose two of the matches out of three.

'There has to be some other way, or we can just try asking someone nice outside.' Quinn thought.

"It's a deal!" Russ said with his hand held out.

Zallack didn't know Russ was going for a handshake and slapped it instead.

"Deal!"

Before Quinn could even say anything, a deal had been made and he was just left shaking his head.

The Penswi group had selected their first contestant over at the blue side, it was one of the shortest from the group named Mikker. The others were cheering on his name, and it was gathering some attention from those who were nearby in the arcade.

There wasn't a large crowd, but they were interested in another race going up against theirs in a game.

Since Russ was seemingly taking charge of the whole thing, Quinn allowed him to just continue on, and the first from their team that was selected was Ceril. She approached the gaming machine and stood on the platform, and for a second she looked back at Quinn.

"I will do my best for you." Ceril stated.

It seemed like she was taking this whole thing seriously even though Quinn wasn't too bothered.

"You all know the rules, when the countdown begins you can only hit the buttons on your side of the machine and with your colour. The one who hits the most buttons in a minute will be declared the winner!" Zallack shouted.

A countdown started to begin, and the buzzer sounded, starting the match. Immediately, Mikker looked to his right, he wasn't in a rush to hit his buttons, because in his mind it was a sure win, but he would soon come to regret those actions.

Ceril was moving as fast as she could, tapping the buttons close, focused and was gaining points fast. In that brief moment of looking at his opponent she had already gained 12 points.

'What the...' Mikker panicked, and started to move around hitting all the points he could see as quickly as possible, he was no longer looking at his opponent and just focusing on him.

"Hey... that woman is pretty fast." One of the onlookers reported. "I think it's the first time I've seen another race that fast."

Quinn was also surprised by this as he completely forgot something about Ceril. He was thinking of her as a Mermerial, but she was no longer just a Mermerial, she was part vampire as well.

Her speed, senses, reflexes and reactions were all improved and that was why she was able to move fast as well. Maybe Russ had a plan after all.

"Faster!" Zallack shouted.

'Faster?' Mikker thought. 'Does that mean I'm losing!'

Mikker started to move his hands and his legs, and shifted his head back and forth. He was finding it hard to breathe, as he was moving at a speed he had never done before. He had never lost to another race and today wasn't going to be the first time.

*BEEP

The game had ended and Mikker fell onto his back exhausted. He was drenched in sweat from head to toe. Meanwhile Ceril had both hands on her knees gasping for air as much as possible.

Staring up at the scoreboard, Zallack had his mouth wide open. "It was so close."

446 points to red, and 448 points to Blue, the Penswi had won.

However, they weren't jumping for joy over their win, because it was the closest match they had in a long time.

"I'm sorry I lost." Ceril said as she came over.

"You don't have to worry too much. It's just a game." Quinn replied.

Now it was time for the second match, and Russ was going on the platform. Unlike Quinn and Ceril, Russ wasn't part vampire, and based on his strength he didn't have much Qi he could use to improve his body as well.

"I can tell that you're counting me out already." Russ smiled. "But I have a plan."

His opponent, a long limbed Penswi named Lall, came to the game. Not only were Penswi fast but with long limbs they would be able to hit the buttons further away without having to move their legs.

"Let me ask you a question." Russ asked. "Are you the fastest Penswi that you know, that is in your mind?"

Lall was confused by the question, but soon Russ' body started to change there and then, his skin turning purple, his legs thinning out, and his limbs getting slightly longer. Soon it was hard to distinguish the difference between the two of them.

From the outside it now looked like a Penswi was going up against another Penswi.

Chapter 2131: Humiliated

Although Russ had somewhat explained his abilities, Quinn still didn't completely understand how it worked, and everytime he saw it he was quite amazed. The people around had seen a human figure change into one of their own race.

Those that were just glancing as they moved around the arcade were now pointing and talking about what had just taken place.

When looking at Russ and his opponent, although they looked the same, their body shape was slightly different, at first Quinn wondered why, but he soon got the answers from listening in on those around him.

"Hey, doesn't that strange alien Penswi have the perfect body shape?"

"What, you mean the fake Penswi, well now that you say it, his body shape is almost exactly like Stark."

"Just because he has the body shape of the fastest Penswi on the planet, doesn't mean he is just as fast."

The easiest thing for Russ to do, was to use his power to imitate his opponent, but he had no experience with the Penswi body, and most likely if the two of them were to go face to face with the same type of body with the same level of ability, he would lose and at best draw.

Although Russ had suffered quite a few losses here and there recently, he hated to lose. So while searching in the young Penswi's mind, he came across the strongest image in his head, and that was who he was right now.

Seeing this, Quinn thought that his initial plan to help Russ, so he could grow stronger, was the right thing to do after all.

"What is this?" Zallack called out, walking to the middle of where the two platforms were and pointing at Russ's body.

"Are you trying to get away with cheating? This is nothing like what you looked like before, your whole body is completely different." Zallack complained.

"Cheating?" Russ said, as he looked back. Although his body was that of a Penswi, his face was still recognizable of his own. It looked like he was unable to completely change into another person, even if using their powers.

Otherwise that would be quite frightening, Quinn thought, and would be a stronger power.

"This is my power, this is simply something that I am able to do." Russ answered.
"Think about it. You Penswi use your natural ability, your natural powers of speed to win at these games, correct?"

"Then, I am just doing the same. I am using my natural powers to adjust myself in a more favourable position. You stated the rules clearly in the beginning and this wasn't in your rules."

Russ turned back around, as if he wasn't even going to listen to Zallack if he tried to refute it, and since it seemed like no one was backing up Zallack, he decided to step back. That was because most that were watching, were more interested in what this copycat type person could do.

"3...2...1...start!"

Unlike the last time, the Penswi was not going to get distracted by looking at his opponent, and decided to hit the buttons as fast as he could. With his long limbs, it allowed him to reach the buttons that appeared high up, as well as far to the right and left without having to move.

The Penswi weren't just fast in their legs, but their eyes, heads, arms... their whole bodies were able to move fast. Right now, if there was a Penswi that was watching him, he felt like he might get recruited for a national team he was doing so well.

The problem was, although he was impressive, no one was looking at him, because by his side, there was someone far more impressive.

Russ was off to a bit of a rough start, but due to seeing the match before him, he had paid close attention to how the Penswi worked, but imagining and doing were two different things. When the game started, he was around 20 or points behind his opponent, but eventually everyone could see that number drawing closer and closer, and it wasn't because Russ's opponent was slowing down, it was because he was speeding up.

"My word... it really is... it is like watching Stark." One of the onlookers commented.

Buttons were appearing and being tapped, one after the other, the speed of the arms moving were nearly twice as fast and the minute had eventually come to an end.

"554 points, that's a new record!" The young Penswi smiled.

When turning his head to look at the scoreboard, the smile quickly disappeared.

"823 points.... I lost by so much."

It was meant to be a proud moment for the Penswi, achieving a personal record, but in this situation where his friends were watching and losing by such a difference, he was unable to enjoy this moment as he went back.

"Are there any recruits watching, that guy could be on a professional team."

"Did you forget something? He is not a Penswi."

The transformation was ending, and Russ was reverting back to his normal self. It was the first time for a lot of them there, witnessing a Penswi losing to another race, but they didn't feel too annoyed. Because the opponent had done so after changing his body into something similar to theirs.

"Alrighty." Russ said, hitting Quinn on the shoulder. "If you win, then we have our guides, I have done everything I can."

It was a game that Quinn didn't really want to participate in anyway, but since it had come to this, and the only thing he needed to do was win, he thought he might as well give it a try.

Walking over, Quinn stood on the platform, and this time, the one that had been running his mouth, the leader of the group, Zallack, was his opponent, when he stood on the other platform he looked at Quinn for a few moments.

"Aren't you going to change, like the person before you did?" Zallack asked.

"That's not something I really do." Quinn replied, not wanting to explain himself, it would be a long and hard thing to try to do in the first place.

A lot of the onlookers were expecting another transformation but when they realised that it wasn't going to take place, quite a few of them started to walk off in disappointment.

"Zallack has this one in the bag, right!" One of his friends said.

"Of course he does, he's the best of all of us, and as long as that alien doesn't transform into one of us again, how can Zallack lose?"

Looking at the scoreboard, the new highscore was Russ's score with 823 points, but before that, Zallack held the record with around 700. He was skilled at not just this game but many, because he was a trainee for the one of the top professional teams of the Penswi.

'Why am I so nervous, even when I go up against professionals in the camp, I'm not this nervous. Is it just because he grabbed my hand from before? That was just a coincidence... I just didn't notice him, calm down.'

"3...2...1..Start!"

The game had begun and Quinn was relatively calm. He had played multiple different games that would be used for training, such as the Block Block game, and he always was quite good at them.

Judging by his speed as well, he felt he would be good at this one as well.

'Let's try match his speed for now.' Quinn thought.

The numbers were going up, and looking like they were going up neck and neck. There was one or two points difference between the two.

'I saw the look on the Penswi's face before, these guys are just kids, trying to have fun. There is no need to humiliate them.' Quinn thought.

Once in a while Quinn would glance up at the scoreboard, and this didn't go unnoticed by the other Penswi, as soon as he did, Quinn would move at a faster speed to match the points up again.

"What is that alien doing?" One of them asked.

"Is he... slowing down on purpose... why does he keep looking at the scoreboard."

As the time was reaching close to the end, there was still around 1 or two points between the two, but at the very last moment as Quinn looked at the scoreboard a second before it ended, he moved as fast as he could, hitting a few of the buttons.

Zallack looked up, 760 points, a new personal record for himself, but when he turned his head, Quinn's scoreboard said 761.

Chapter 2132: Better than a pro

Zallack couldn't help himself, as he continued to stare at the scoreboard. Like the others, he had improved his score. The fact that he was in competition and there was a lot riding on this, he had pushed himself more than he usually would have done and improved, getting the best score he had ever gotten.

Yet, despite all of that, he had still lost, and it was by a single point.

'How... could I lose by just one point?' Zallack thought, both of his hands covering his head. 'If I had just moved a bit faster, if I had changed the pattern of hitting the buttons a little, maybe I could have gotten three in that one area, instead of moving. If I didn't take a breath at that point.'

Zallack was now second guessing all of the moves that he had made previously throughout the game. If this was a real contest or the championship losing by one point, he would never be able to live it down.

'I have to get footage of the match and see where I went wrong. I need to analyse this game.'

While in the middle of his thoughts, a certain blonde haired man had approached him.

"Believe me when I say this, don't take it to heart too much. I don't think there is anyone that can beat him." Russ said, looking back at Quinn.

Zallack lifted his head, and pulled a frown, he was wondering what this person meant. For one, he himself had gotten a higher score, and there were plenty of professionals who wouldn't be able to get a higher score than that.

'He's just being big headed because they won the game.' Zallack thought.

"Don't worry, I will keep our end of the deal." Zallack replied. "We just need to inform some people about a few things. So if you wait here for an hour or so in front of the shop, we will return."

"How can we be so sure that you will return?" Russ asked.

"Then just get someone else to help you with whatever you need, but I will keep my promise. Some of my friends will stay here, so if you really want to find me then just look for them." With that Zallack returned to the others, and they soon started to walk off.

Although Zallack seemed to be quite aggressive in his approach, Russ kinda liked that. Due to how hardworking he was, he was sure it would also be the right person, to guide them as well.

There was one worry, a lot of the Penswi looked very alike with a few different details here and there, the main way they could tell the others were different were due to their voice.

"That's great!" Ceril said. "Let's play some more games, I don't want to lose again, if something so high stakes appears."

"No Ceril, seriously you don't have to take it to heart losing that game." Quinn said, and tried reaching out, but she had this strange fire in her eyes, showing her determination.

Zallack and the others were leaving the arcade, this was because Zallack had training sessions every day. He was a trainee for one of the top professional teams for the game known as Killer Instinct. The game they had just played.

Although professional teams also specialised in a handful of other games. Since all of them revolved around the same theme, speed, reflexes, and quick thinking. One who was best at one of these games was usually king at them all.

The group had finally left the shop, but not without the footage that Zallack was after. When he got somewhere he could watch the video, he needed to watch it immediately. Self analysis was best when done almost straight after as he could remember most of what he was thinking at the time.

"Hey Zallack, I wasn't sure whether to tell you this or not, but I noticed something strange during your match." Mikker, the Penswi that fought against Ceril stated.

Zallack looked at him for him to go on.

"Well, you see, the thing is, during the match it looked like your opponent was constantly looking at the scoreboard."

Zallack stopped in his tracks when he heard those words.

"Did you say constantly looking at the scoreboard? It wasn't a one off thing."

There was an intensity in Zallack's voice causing Mikker to gulp before answering.

"Yes, I'm sure of it, he did it more than once... and each time he did, his score would catch up with yours."

A strange tingling feeling was felt all over Zallack's body, and he remembered the words from the weird blonde human. Not saying another word, Zallack started to run faster ahead of the others, he needed to watch this footage as soon as possible.

Eventually, Zallack had parted ways with the rest in his group and he had arrived at a large building, where his professional team was placed. Heading inside, there were a number of Penswi that were the same age coming in and out.

The receptionist noticed Zallack and let him right through, as he headed up to the floor where his team would be. The floor was filled with noise similar to the arcade. There was button bashing, the sound of machinery as well as huffing and panting and talking amongst others.

There were multiple different rooms for different things and Zallack quickly headed to one of the empty strategy meeting rooms. There was a screen and throwing the small device in his hand, the video started to show on screen.

It was footage from the arcade, not even sitting down on the seat, he stared at every detail.

'He really did look at the screen each time, and when he realised he was behind, he suddenly sped up... but how is this possible? Was he not trying, no that's impossible, he can't be that fast?' Zallack thought. 'He must have a stamina issue of some sort, and while taking a break he took a look at the scoreboard.'

Zallack watched the video a few times over and over, trying to come up with different reasons as to why his opponent was looking at the scoreboard constantly.

"Crap I completely forgot, I need to tell the manager that I won't be able to make it to the training sessions today." Running out of the room, Zallack put the video on pause.

This was the reason why he had come back, he needed to inform his team if he wasn't going to be there for training sessions. As he said before, he kept his promise.

"Is there a problem at home, Zallack?" the manager asked.

"It's not that, sir there is just a bit of a situation, I promise that I will sort it out, and will be back to normal from tomorrow." Zallack answered.

With permission granted, he left the room and headed back to the strategy room to look at the video a few more times, but upon opening the door, he noticed that there were others inside, and it wasn't just anybody as well.

"Jun, what are you-" Zallack stopped there, as he could see not just Jun but a couple of others were present in the room as well, all of them wearing a thick red shirt. It was a weight for training. These were the professionals of the Dark Red's that he was a part of.

There were three of them and out of curiosity, they started to play the video of the match in the game.

"Hey, Zallack... who is this guy that you're going up against?" Jun asked.

"It's just someone I lost to, that I met at the arcade, as you can see, an alien." Zallack replied. "But I'll beat him next time. I only lost by one point."

It was shameful for a trainee of a professional team to lose, and it was to an alien, which is why Zallack said these words.

"Zallack, I don't think you would ever be able to beat him." Jun replied. "Can't you see, he didn't just beat you by one point. He chose to beat you by one point. This person... completely humiliated you."

"Who are they?"

Chapter 2133: Speed to Hunt

Some time had passed since Zallack had left the arcade, and all of the loud noises in one place was giving Quinn a bit of a headache. His sensitive hearing he could dull down and control it when he was in a fight, but in the arcade, the sounds were consistent and coming from all over the place.

So the group decided to wait outside and would catch Zallack on his way back. To their surprise they weren't waiting long as they could see two Penswi running their way. There were actually a lot of Penswi running on the streets as that was their preferred method of travel, but these two were quite a bit faster than the others.

"I'm here, just like I promised I would be." Zallack said, stopping right in front of the three, but he wasn't alone.

A figure the same height as Zallack stood by his side. It was a Penswi but this one was more muscular in the arms and legs. It was hard to tell if they were older or not just from looking as the Penswi didn't exactly have any wrinkles. Although one could say the same about vampires and those that knew Qi.

"It's nice to meet my fellow travellers." The man said with a little wave. "My name is Jun, and I am a senior of Zallack. He told me how you guys would like a guide, and since I wasn't doing anything today I decided to help you all out."

When looking at the three aliens, Jun was spending more time staring at Quinn. Not too long ago, he had seen a video of this same person in front of him, and now it was the whole reason why he was here in the first place.

'This person... let's see how far his ability can take him, and if I'm right, he could change the whole scope of the Penswi world!' Jun thought, as he let his imagination run wild a little.

"That's good to hear." Quinn replied. "This is Russ, and Ceril, and my name is Quinn. We are all from a planet called Earth, and as you might have guessed, we aren't from around here."

Quinn was wondering if saying the word Earth would get a reaction but he didn't notice anything strange. Meaning it was unlikely the Blades had arrived. He assumed it would either be a televised event, or perhaps something kept a secret by the higher ups.

"I don't think we have had any visitors from there before." Jun commented. "But what could I help you with? Would you like to see our grand events, our large attractions or perhaps have a go on one of our circuits?" Jun asked.

There were two goals for Quinn's team, one was meeting whoever the leader of the planet was, the one with the highest position but that would be a hard task, and the

other was hunting beast crystals in search of a nest crystal for Russ. There was also something else Quinn wanted to do.

There was always the chance that problems could occur, so it was best they got information first.

"Where do you guys... hunt for beasts?" Quinn asked.

It was an interesting question and one that Jun never thought would be brought up. Because when looking at their frail bodies, he never thought of them as fighters.

Following Zallack and Jun, they had eventually reached a wall and a large gate with a number written on the outside. There were several buildings and tables on the outside and those walking in and out of what looked like a type of energy field.

"This is one of the hunting grounds. They are designated areas for beasts to live in. You can find them all over parts of the planet." Jun explained.

When looking at those coming in and out, Quinn noticed something strange for one. They didn't seem to have a lot of beast gear on their bodies, and on top of that, those that did enter and exit, were wearing clothing similar to those next to them. It looked more like a set of different sport teams were coming and going.

"What's with the matching outfits?" Russ asked.

"It's a training ground." Zallack answered. "The professional Penswi teams as well as with their new recruits use the hunting grounds to train at times. The quickest way for a Penswi to improve their speed is when their life's on the line."

Quinn had heard something similar before, it was the Blades. They too did the same thing, to improve the natural sense of Qi in their body among other things, and it looked like the Penswi as a whole race was using it as a way to train for their professional sport games.

The group then went over to a desk, where all of them were registered and given strange passes that were to be worn around their neck.

"In order to lower the amount of fatalities, only certain people are allowed to go into the hunting area. A senior like me, who is on a professional team, they trust our judgement, so I got you all trainee passes." Jun explained.

"I heard from Zallack that you are all pretty fast. Speed in this instance is pretty important because if we come across a beast that is too fast, then at least we can run away, right?"

Exiting out of the gate, the group began to run through what looked like a combination of a forest along with a jungle. The trees were more spread out like a

forest with plenty of open areas, but the trees themselves were very green, windy, and bendy.

Jun was taking the lead running ahead, and the rest were following. He wasn't running too fast, because he had no idea what the capabilities of the others that were with him and he didn't want them to feel like they had been abandoned if he ran at top speed.

Eventually though, they had gone to an area void of others. The sun was shining from above allowing a lot of light in, and there were laid out beasts, covered in black fur. They almost looked like a black lion, only they were the same size as elephants and all of them were laying down apart from each other.

"Alright, since I'm the guest and you guys don't know what the beasts are like on this planet, I will show you all how it's done first." Jun commented.

He got closer and closer to the black lion, and eventually its eyes opened revealing a sharp yellow iris. At the same time it took a swipe at Jun, who had moved back out of the way.

"That was a really fast attack." Ceril commented.

"Yeah, perhaps the beasts on this planet have adapted to the Penswi living here. We should be careful with all of the beasts." Russ commented.

"Have you guys hunted beasts before?" Zallack asked.

Ceril had gone hunting many times on her planet with the royal family. Russ, when in charge of the Chained, constantly was hunting beasts to get better equipment, and as for Quinn, he lost track of how many beasts he had killed.

"We hunt for beast crystals just like you." Quinn commented.

Zallack believed that the group were just trying to show off, it wasn't that he didn't believe them, but compared to Jun, a professional, they were unlikely to be as seasoned as him.

Right now, Jun was avoiding all the sharp attacks from the beast, and using his hands he pointed them. The Penswi's hands, when used with their great speed, became one of the sharpest weapons and it was being proven now.

After avoiding the attack, Jun made several cuts on the back leg; he had attacked around three times before the beast swung its body and large paw.

"Our bodies aren't the strongest." Zallack said. "So it's important for Penswi to not get hit, while trying to hit the others as best as they can. It also helps us focus under pressure, it is the best training for a Penswi, but we don't usually start with something this fast."

A final sped up attack right on the head of the beast, managed to finish it off. When the beast was damaged to the point where it was no longer a threat June finally could do his finishing move.

"As long as you can hit without getting hit, you will be one of the best hunters there is. That is why us professionals are the best." Jun smiled with a crystal in his hand. "Do you want to give it a try?"

Quinn was the one who had decided to walk forward, rather than going through these demonstrations in order to get them to trust them to search for a nest crystal, Quinn needed to show his strength.

He walked closely to a beast, the same type and stopped as he kicked the ground. A piece of dirt came off and hit the black lion in the face, waking it up.

It opened its eyes and as an instinct attacked the air, but Quinn was too far away. The beast then looked eyes with him and immediately started to run forward, towards him. It was getting closer and closer.

'Isn't he going to move... he needs to move!' Jun thought.

The beast leapt at great speed opening its mouth wide. With a jump, Quinn raised his hand and slapped it at the top of the beast mouth. A loud snap was heard as the top of its jaw smashed against the bottom of its jaw.

Its chin then crashed into the floor, and Quinn stood there with his hand on top of the beast.

"There's no need to be so fast, if you're already strong." Quinn said.

Chapter 2134: A Dark Deal

It was a simple move, Quinn hadn't done anything too fancy, he hadn't used his Qi or blood aura nor any of his abilities. What he had simply displayed to the others was his natural vampire strength, which was enough to deal with this level of beast.

There was a fine line when showing one's powers. He needed to show he had great strength, but too strong and people around, even different races, would start to feel threatened and scared.

Turning his head, to look at the other two, Quinn was starting to have second thoughts.

'Did I show them too much?' Quinn thought.

Jun and Zallack stood there, with their mouths wide open. If they were left open any longer they would touch the floor. A beast being dealt with just pure power, it wasn't completely foreign to them.

There were strong alien races that could do the same, but Quinn had also done it in one movement, and against a fast beast at that. One didn't just need strength but the speed to match it as well, which was why the two were so shocked.

'I was right... this person.' Jun thought, he soon shook his head, as he noticed the beast was moving its back legs trying to get out of the situation.

"The beast is not dead, the crystal is located in its forehead." Jun answered, trying to give him a hand. After all, he wanted to be in his good books. When they got back, Jun would do a lot for Zallack for showing him this treasure.

The truth was, Quinn had held back a bit for another reason, he didn't want to kill the beast, he wanted to do something else.

'I guess, I don't have to worry if they see, I can use my powers here.'

Soon shadow started to emit from Quinn's hand, and it started to surround the beast completely.

"Don't be scared with what you are about to see, as I said before we have hunted beasts many times." Quinn stated.

The shadow soon started to disappear and now, the beast looked different from before. It was no longer fighting back, part of its fur was starting to fall off from its body, and they weren't so sure but small parts of it looked like it had a strange purple shadow substance lingering over it.

'The Shadow Infect was successful, I ran a few tests before, so maybe this will be a good way to find a nest crystal.'

With the beast having been shadow infected, Quinn ordered it to act, and it immediately went to the closest beast next to it. Now the two were in the middle of combat, fighting against each other.

"What's happened, has the beast gone mad... or are you controlling it?" Jun asked.

"The latter would be more accurate." Quinn answered. "Which is why I told you not to worry too much. Thank you for being our guide and helping us."

After finishing his sentence, the beast was done dealing with the other, and soon it looked the same as the attacker. This was one of the traits of the Shadow Infect skill, it not only made the beast stronger but it was able to infect other beasts as well.

He was slowly, on an unknown planet, building up his army bit by bit.

"Ceril, Russ, fight the beasts in this area, but make sure you don't kill them. Just injure them enough until I come along." Quinn ordered.

The next few minutes, both Jun and Zallack had their minds blown, as they witnessed the forest-like jungle being cleared of beasts, although cleared wasn't the right word. Because every time a beast would be taken over, it would follow along with them as they moved to the next spot.

If anyone saw this sight, all of the beasts walking together, they would be shaking in their boots, unsure if they would live to see another day.

"Who are these people from Earth, are they some type of warrior race?" Zallack asked. "How can an alien race be so strong? This would require a few professional teams to do this. Are you not worried Jun, what are these people doing on our planet? Why are such strong beings here!"

Honestly it would have been a lie if Jun said he wasn't worried, because as they continued to follow the three, the army of beasts were getting bigger and bigger. If they did plan to attack, then it was going to get harder to stop them.

"What... are you looking for?" Jun finally asked as he ran in front of Quinn.

"Do you know what a nest crystal is?" Quinn replied back. "It's how beasts are created, by controlling the beasts, I am getting more information, and the more beasts in the area the closer we are to the nest crystal. You will see what I mean soon."

And soon, they saw exactly what Quinn meant. The location had taken them to a cave in a large hill of sorts, there were beasts outside, but they weren't as many as

there usually would be in front of a nest crystal, or at least it didn't feel that way, because Quinn was controlling most of the beasts anyway.

On top of that, the few that were there, the shadow beasts he had created were dealing with them. All of them entered the cave, and they could see it, embedded almost as if it was on some type of stand was the Nest crystal.

'This has been quite the haul. I have managed to increase my forces, and at the same time, we can use the nest crystal on Russ to make him stronger.'

Quinn pulled it out from its place without much trouble and held it up. Even though they hadn't seen it before, just by its mystic look and energy radiating from it, they could tell it was something special.

"Wait!" Jun called out. "I can't let you just take that crystal."

"What are you saying?" Ceril said. "Just a moment ago, you knew nothing about this crystal, why can't we take it?"

There was a worried look on Jun's face. He knew these people's strength and what he was about to do was a big gamble.

"The crystals on this planet belong to the Penswi. Originally when I invited you guys to hunt, I thought you just wanted to practise or learn some skills. However, crystals obtained on the Penswi planet can't be taken by aliens.

"Although I can take the crystal and give it to you, there still needs to be a donation amount to the local government, and a crystal like this, that's so precious and hasn't been discovered before, I can imagine it could do great things for our planet. So I can't....

"I can't just let you have this crystal."

Zallack was looking at Jun in a different light. Although he was part of the same pro team, Jun wasn't the most popular of the Dark reds. He was known as a trickster, and would at times use underhanded ways to win against his opponents.

But, he never thought that he cared so much for the planet.

Quinn was in a bit of a pickle, he didn't want to cause confrontation on the planet. Neither did he want to harm Jun who was helping them, he was a good person. If they went back though, then he would no doubt tell the others.

'I guess I have no choice. I'm not sure how well the influence skill will work on them, but I'm going to have to try to use it to remove his memories. It will be for the best.' Quinn said as his eyes started to glow red.

Due to the dark cave they were in, it was easier for all of them to see, and it was the first time Quinn was using a bit of his vampire aura.

Jun was covered in a sweat, as he held up his hand.

"Wait there is one way... I am willing to keep this a secret, you can keep the crystal, but in return I have a favour. Join the Dark Red's and compete with us, on the planet tournament. With you, we can win." Jun smiled.

Chapter 2135: The water messenger

There was little context as to what exactly this planet tournament was, but judging from the information they had gathered from Zallack and Jun it seemed to be an important event for all of the Penswi.

The question playing in Quinn's mind was whether or not he really wanted to get wrapped up in all of this business. At the end of the day, he remembered that Bliss and Sam were the ones that sent him here, and there had to be a reason for them doing that.

"You want us to join your professional team?" Quinn asked. "But we aren't Penswi, we are not like you. Is that even something that is possible, and what reason do you have for asking us to join you?"

Zallack also looked shocked, the respect that he had for his teammate Jun had completely gone out of the window, as it looked like he was up to the same tricks as he was before.

"It's simple." Jun replied. "I have seen your speed and your strength, you are extremely talented and your friends here are the same. With you, I believe it will be the first time that the Dark Red's could win."

"As for you not being Penswi, there are no rules that state that Penswi are the only ones that can enter the competition." Jun declared. "It's part of the arrogance of us Penswi, since we know that we are the fastest even including the other planets in the Universe. Since we have never met our match, anyone can try to bring in outsiders."

"As for what reason I have for asking you, it's more simple than you think. Every time there is one team that wins the grand event, the Disruptors, and it's all because of one person, Stark."

Russ' ears perked up, he remembered overhearing some of the other kids in the arcade talk about this Stark, and on some of the games there were even digital holograms of him doing the activities as well.

"My wish is simple, I want you to beat Stark, and in doing so the Dark Red's will win."

"You want us to do something you can't do?" Russ asked. "Isn't that a bit unfulfilling? If you beat him through your own effort and hard work, it would be much more satisfying in the end."

Russ was speaking from experience, the reason he was working so hard was so he could beat the Blades with his own hands. There was a sour taste in his mouth

when he had learned what had happened to them, which was one of the reasons he also had no problem fighting against Jack and Jim.

"Every being is different." Jun replied. "Some may think this way, but for me it doesn't matter who is the one who has done it. Remember what I said before? Stark has never lost, no one knows the face that he will make when he experiences his first loss."

There was a sadistic look on Jun's face, but it was clear that he wasn't lying about anything he was saying. Now it was time for the group to make a decision. Plenty of planets had nest crystals and he could even ask for the help of the Mermerials.

On top of that, seeing the Amra in the arcade from earlier, Quinn also thought about paying them a visit to ask for their help as well. With the Mermerials, the Amra, the Shadow beasts, and if he eventually found the Blades, while also boosting Russ' strength along the way.

All of these forces, he hoped it would be a big enough army to take on Jim and Jack head on, but the question kept coming back into his head, what if it wasn't? There still had to be a reason he was asked to come to this planet, maybe he needed their help as well.

"This event... it's an event that is broadcasted all over the planet, correct? Does that mean your world leader, or leaders will be there?" Quinn asked.

"Of course, the King and Queen of the Penswi will be present." Jun stated. "In fact if you break many records of the Penswi, they will hold you in high regard, speed is everything to us."

With that, it looked like Quinn had made a decision. There was no need to win the tournament, but just get in front of the King and Queen without it being in a threatening manner, that way he could convince them about what was to come.

Quinn then threw over the nest crystal to Russ who managed to catch it in the air.

"Am I your bag now?" Russ complained.

"No, I am handing it over to you. Nest crystals are incredible things, and have multiple different uses that you might be aware of." Quinn explained. "One of them is increasing your MC cells. Right now, I don't have Chris, Peter or Sil by my side, I can't give you power like I have done others before either."

"So the next best thing is to increase your power. You have a god slayer power like me, and we should put it to use."

Never in his wildest dreams did he think Quinn would give him something as precious as this. Did Quinn no longer think of him as a threat just because of the Qi

command. Or was he in that desperate of a situation that he needed to trust someone that was once his enemy.

"I will agree to enter your event, is it soon?" Quinn asked.

"You won't have much time to practise, it's in a couple of days and we will need to register you." Jun explained.

"Fine, let's head there and get this over with."

Quinn would show Russ how to absorb the crystal during the night. Now they had a place to stay, and a goal in sight, but he needed to prepare himself, for convincing the Penswi, and that was a tough task in itself.

As the group exited from the cave, all of the beasts remained outside staring back at them, they were the infected beasts.

"What... should we do about these? If the other Penswi see this, they might be alarmed." Zallack commented.

"Don't worry about that." Quinn swiped his hand, and shadow portals appeared behind them all, soon the large bodies of the beasts had disappeared in front of their very eyes, all stored in the shadow space.

Meanwhile, Zallack and Jun were just looking at each other. The things that they were seeing, it was something that they could only imagine gods doing. Which made them a little scared to anger the people next to them.

Back on the Mermerial Planet, Layla was having a much easier time settling in than she had expected. There were practically two Mermerials assigned to them, to do whatever they wished or answer any question they had.

Layla felt strange using them at first, but many times they just stood outside the house doing nothing, and they seemed far happier when asked to help with certain tasks.

On top of that, when going out with Minny and Galen, the local people greeted them nicely with open arms. She would even hear whispers about them.

"That is Quinn's family, right?"

"Yes, I think they must have some business with the Queen."

Many of the Mermerials had learned of what Quinn had done the last time he had visited. Under the old rule, they lived a life in fear, but now were living happily under Wince's rule. Because of this they were thankful to the one known as Quinn.

Once in a while, Minny, Layla and Galen would even be showered with gifts.

'I guess this is what our family should be treated like after everything Quinn has done.' Layla thought, since it was such a large contrast from the vampire settlement where they were living in hiding. 'It's a shame that Quinn doesn't get to experience this much. I hope one day he can.'

In the Palace, Wince was heading to a meeting in the council room. It was an important event because they had to talk about the stake and future of the Mermerials, especially after what Quinn had mentioned.

The doors opened, and a room filled with around thirty people all stood up from their seats and bowed down.

"Wel-"

Just as Wince was about to begin her speech, the whole room felt like it was vibrating, then a shot of bright white light came flashing down to the centre of the room. Everyone moved out of the way as the light grew, and finally as the light started to subside they could see a legendary figure in place.

"Yongbu!" Wince frowned.

Chapter 2136: Yonbu and the Queen

Seeing Yonbu didn't bring a smile to Wince's face for a number of reasons. There had always been tales of a god that looked over the planet, and it was only because of the Royal family's treasure in the past that this god didn't get involved in so many affairs.

In the end, the person in front of her, decided to side with the Predators that had gone against her family, and in the process, a lot was lost. The reason Yonbu had supported the predators wasn't so clear, and in the end, she didn't care.

Because of Quinn, the god that looked over the planet hadn't appeared and didn't get involved in the Memerialsl affairs anymore, that was until now, at this point and time.

'Why is he here now of all times? I have to be careful, no matter what, he is a powerful god at the end of

the day.' Wince thought.

The weapon she had with her, a trident, was a replica of her fathers, made in the same shape as the one before, but it didn't contain the same power. It was made with a demon tier beast that wasn't of the same calibre, but it was one that Wince had hunted herself.

Improving her strength, she needed to step up, if such a thing was to happen again. She never counted on Quinn returning and in a situation like this, he wasn't able to help anyway.

Yonbu first looked around the room, and could see the councilmen and woman breaking out in a sweat.

"All of you can relax. I did not come here, to cause any harm." Yonbu stated.
"Believe me when I say this, returning to this place gives me a sick feeling in my stomach."

Yonbu's small tentacles that surrounded the bottom of his face started to curl up, and he almost shivered at the thought. The frightening image of the Mermerial god and his actions didn't quite add up.

"I have been given a task by those that are even higher than myself. I can't explain much, but I have said this so all of you know the gravity of the matter." Yonbu explained.

Many were confused, after seeing Quinn they knew that there was the existence of other gods, but had no clue about the hierarchy or the system they had. What they

did know, was it wasn't something they wanted to get involved in, not at a time like this.

"Yonbu, just state why you are here and be gone!" Wince shouted as she pulled out her trident and slammed it on the floor. She wasn't going to be intimidated. To her Yonbu was more of an outsider.

"None of you show any respect for me anymore." Yonbu complained. "I will be out of your hair and out of here as soon as I can, as long as you help me. I am looking for BB, or the one that is also known as Quinn Talen."

Almost immediately, as they heard this name, the people in the room started to look at each other, and Wince's heart started to beat slightly faster. As she thought, the fact that Quinn had come back and this figure in front of her couldn't have been a coincidence.

"Quinn Talen left this planet long ago, he is not from here!" Wince answered.

"Which is why I ask for your help." Yonbu replied. "He helped you out before, for some reason in the past. So I figured you might have a way to communicate with him."

"I do not!" Wince replied immediately.

The thing was, Yonbu wasn't so convinced, and judging by the reaction of the others in the room when he said that name, it felt like something was up.

"And what about my request, to help find him? Did you not hear what I said? This matter is more important than the Memorial race. If you do not help there will be big trouble." Finishing his sentence, water spread out from underneath his legs and went out in a wave, hitting the others sending them back and crashing into the wall.

For Wince, she spun her trident and managed to chuck the wave of water off to the side avoiding getting hit.

"Is this how you act? If we don't comply with your request, you then force us. You who have done nothing for us, why should we help you!" Wince argued.

"You are correct." Yonbu answered. "But the thing is, if you are not willing to help, then I need to start thinking of some other ways to find Quinn Talen, and perhaps hurting someone who he cares about will be a way to bring him here."

Wince was nervous. Yonbu was emitting a lot of power with his eyes alone, his wings had sprouted from his back, dripping water from them. Just looking at him it was hard to be in his presence.

"If you hurt me...then you will be going up against the whole Mermerial race!" Wince shouted.

She didn't want to give up Quinn. Whatever reason they were looking for him, it couldn't be a good one, and if Yonbu was willing to go to these lengths, then if they found out his family were here, they would attack them as well. She needed to protect his family, it was the least she could do.

"Quinn Talen was here, but he's not here anymore!" One of the councilmen shouted.

"Silence!" Wince shouted back at him.

"My Queen, we must be truthful, to protect the people. Quinn is no longer here, he left to go somewhere else." The man continued to explain.

"So you did lie to me," Yonbu said, and instead of going after Wince, he decided to go straight for the councilmen, and lifted him by his neck, holding him in the air. He knew the Queen wouldn't say anything, but it seemed like he found someone that would.

"If you care for your life, you will tell me everything you know about him." Yonbu ordered.

"Quinn Talen was here. He came here with his family and friends, and they left, we don't know where but he will return, that's all we know, I promise!" The councilman said.

Yonbu let go of the man's throat, letting him drop to the ground.

"His family is here, interesting."

"I will not let you go near his family!" Wince shouted, as she went to thrust her trident and water started to swirl around it.

Seeing this, Yonbu's eyes started to glow as he was summoning his celestial power. As he did this, he threw out his hand, and a vortex of water came out, matching the attack from the trident.

"Do you think of me as so easy to deal with, I am still a god!" Yonbu shouted.

There was a clear winner in the two powers, as Wince was being pushed back, instead of thrusting her trident forward she started to spin it. It was hard for her to still hold back the attack, until an energy was being summoned around her as well.

The scales on her face were showing more, the shape of her eyes were narrowing, and a large fin was appearing out from her back.

Swinging the trident, the attack was completely stopped and Wince could be seen standing there with a strange aura surrounding her.

"You...have celestial power as well, how is this possible?" Yonbu thought.

When Quinn was still a celestial, it was the power he had given Wince before he left. In case any situation was to occur and for taking the trident, he wanted to leave her with something, and that something was this.

Outside of the palace, Layla was out shopping with her family, she held Galen on her shoulders, while Minny was in her hand, but suddenly Minny came to a stop.

"What...is that..that power, it feels familiar?" Minny said, looking at the palace.

Layla couldn't quite feel what Minny was feeling, but the large flash of light didn't go unnoticed, and she had an uneasy feeling about it all.

'Should we check It out...or is it best to hide?' Layla thought.

At that moment, the weight on top of her shoulders disappeared, and she could see a little Galen, running towards the Royal palace.

"Galen!" Layla shouted.

Chapter 2137: Defend the Talen Family

On top of her normal duties, as well as running the planet, Wince trained everyday, and it wasn't your average amount of training either. For a Mermerial, she had the blood of the Royal family running through her veins.

Her father was one of the strongest Mermerials to exist, and naturally she had great strength since the day she was born, but being a royal, she was protected. She had trained lightly, but not with fear, and drive pushing her.

Now that she had a whole planet to run, a whole race that depended on her, she had the drive to get stronger. Which gave her the power to defeat a demon tier beast and make her own weapon.

"You are the one that's meant to be protecting us, but instead you are trying to attack one of our saviours!" Wince shouted, as she thrust the spear through the air several times.

Jets of water came shooting out all heading straight toward Yongbu. Seeing the multiple attacks, Yongbu used his large wings to cover his body and face, when the water splashed against them, it all fell to the floor.

It was an attack that would have damaged most beasts, but not Yongbu.

'Quinn... just how much stronger were you than this god, to make him cower in fear. Even using your power, he is too powerful!' Wince thought.

When his wings opened up, straight from his mouth was a large vortex of water, it was similar to the one that Yongbu had made with his hands before, but this one spun faster and was darker in colour than the attacks before.

Slamming her spear into the ground again, all of the water that was on the floor, as well as particles of water in the air, started to come around her, and made a bubble surrounding her whole body.

As the vortex of water hit the bubble, it lifted her and the bubble, pushing her like a giant snake, it pushed her right through the wall of the palace. Wince could see the outside sky.

The bubble was close to popping; it couldn't hold the attack anymore, and it eventually popped. Blocking most of the attack, she then used her fingers to spin the trident, but the vortex of water still hit her.

The vortex took her out of the air, and slammed her right into the hard icy ground. Her body was hurt, but she needed to get up and continue fighting. Lifting her hand and hitting the trident on the floor again, water surrounded the weapon and helped lift her own body off the ground.

"This is... the ice sculpture garden." Wince commented, as she looked at the area around her.

It was one of the displays at the Royal palace. A giant garden where the floor was completely covered in ice and there were sculptures of giant beasts, houses and more that were spread out all over the place.

At times it was a place open to the public, so they could walk around and enjoy the sights, but that wasn't the case right now and she was thankful for that. Because moments later, Yongbu landed, crashing down on one of the ice sculptures sending shards of ice in all different directions.

The landing was a heavy one.

"Even if you have celestial energy, that doesn't make you a god." Yongbu declared. "Do you know how many 1000's of years I have been watching over the Mermerial race? I am a being that you should respect, if I tell you to do something, then you should listen!"

Wince had only been hit once, and she could feel the pain throughout her body, if it wasn't for the energy that was running through her body, the energy that Quinn had given her, perhaps just that one attack would have finished her.

Opening up his mouth again, hundreds of the small tentacles around Yongbu could be seen moving about, and the dark blue water could be seen. Chucking his head forward, the vortex came straight out toward her.

"I will face this head on!" Wince shouted.

She started to run forward, on the ice, and when the vortex was ready to reach her, she thrust her trident forward, cutting the attack, pushing it back slightly for a second or so. She took a step forward while the water was pushing her back.

She continued to push, with her feet moving forward one step at a time.

'My strength... it's leaving me, I don't know how much further I can go... will I be able to reach him?'

She had pushed forward but there was still a good ten metres to go before she could reach him, and she was starting to feel her feet sliding her back, back to her original position where she started,

'I can't... I can't do it.'

All of the muscles in her body felt like they were breaking, and if she let up for a second, the vortex of water would eat her away. She was ready to close her eyes, until the vortex of water stopped.

A woman was standing in front of her, dressed in all black, with a black trench coat that was fluttering in the wind, while armour could be seen on several places on her body, but what stood out was the black sword in her hand.

"You stopped my attack?" Yongbu said. "But how? You have no celestial energy. That sword, what is it, is it a god slayer item?"

"Layla... why are you here." Wince said as she recognized the woman, and soon felt someone tugging on her sleeve. Wince had already collapsed to her knees as soon as the attack had stopped, any longer and she would have been done for.

When looking at who tugged at her sleeve, she could see it was a child that looked like it couldn't have been older than one year old, but when he suddenly placed his hands on her face, her whole body felt warm, and a familiar energy was felt.

"You should thank him, it was because of him that we got here in time, and could see the trouble you were in." Layla said. "Can you move?"

Although Wince would have answered no before, after meeting the small boy, she did have enough energy, enough energy to fight even.

"I can move." Wince answered.

"Good, then take Galen somewhere safe, and look after him... let us deal with this for you." Layla said.

Wince was annoyed, annoyed at the fact that after all her hard work, she was unable to fight. The people she was trying to protect were now protecting her, but the least she could do was not get in the way.

"Be careful, he's strong." Wince said.

She picked up Galen, and ran into one of the house-like ice sculptures up to the second platform and was watching from afar.

"Does she think I'm going to follow her?" Yongbu laughed. "I have already figured out who you are, and you interest me far more than them. You are not a Mermerial, anyone could see that clear as day, so my guess is your related to the person I'm looking for Quinn Talen, you're his family... correct."

Layla had no idea why this giant sea monster was looking for them, but now she knew it had something to do with Quinn. It didn't look like a creation of Jim's or Jack's, but now they knew it was somewhat their fault.

"Tell me, where is Quinn Talen!" Yonbu demanded.

From the corner of his eye he saw something flicker, when he turned his head, he could only just see it and bent back his head. A red claw was seen travelling through the air, slicing off a few of the small tentacles around Yongbu's mouth.

'Is this a celestial?' Yongbu thought, as he could feel the intense power coming off from it.

The small person soon landed on the ice skidding on the ground.

"Someone as ugly as you shouldn't say my dad's name!" Minny growled in her fully transformed celestial form.

Chapter 2138: Disappear in the white light

Yongbu could feel a slight tingle around his mouth, but soon the ends started to heal and they were no longer bleeding, what he was more concerned about was who had managed to attack him.

Celestials were special beings for a number of reasons, one of them being their celestial energy. This made it more difficult for just standard attacks to hurt them. The celestial energy was a type of energy that was able to suppress most attacks.

The celestial energy couldn't completely nullify an attack. It was more like one trying to get rid of a lake of water with a fire. With a big enough amount of fire, it could be possible.

Which was why attacks on a grand scale of power, or god slayer power, were able to hurt celestials but what was really effective was celestial energy itself.

Yongbu was already surprised when he saw Wince use her celestial energy which is why he had to take the fight far more seriously than he originally intended, but now there was another one to his side.

"Dad?" Yongbu repeated. "So you must be part of that annoying BB family as well. Did he really think you would be safe here, just because I complied without fighting back does he think I'm that scared of him? He should know that there are things far more dangerous and scary than him."

For a second, as Yongbu thought of those people, those dark lifeless eyes staring at him, his body shivered but he snapped back to reality. The small one with celestial energy was covered in a strange red hardened energy that almost looked like armour.

The way it was shaped with swirls and pointed ends around certain parts, it made her look like a little demon. Creatures Yongbu had seen from the other realm.

"Out of the two of you, it would be safer to get rid of you first!" Yongbu opened his mouth again, and rather than shooting out the vortex of water, he shot out small fist sized chunks of water.

Minny moved to the side, skidding out of the way. One of the water shots hit the ground and had cracked through the ice hitting the water underneath it. Water was chucked up in the air like a volcano going off, and sprinkles of water fell down on the ground.

The attacks didn't stop there, as Yongbu continued to fire out the balls of water, and Minny was zig zagging her way through the ice. She was fast, and using her sharp nails and feet, she would dig them into the ground to change the direction of where she was going.

Explosion after explosion went off in the water one after the other.

"This little brat is fast!" Yongbu complained, and realised that she wasn't the only one that he needed to worry about, because coming from his other side was none other than Layla, with the sword in her hand.

'You told me this person is a celestial... correct?' Layla said.

'Indeed I did, which is why it is better if you use my powers, rather than your own, but you still need to be skillful.' The sword replied.

Thinking that Layla wouldn't be much trouble at all, with his hand, a large amount of water started to spin, and Yongbu chucked it towards her direction. The vortex created from his hands wasn't as powerful as the ones from his mouth, but they were still strong enough to deal with most.

The problem was, Yongbu had no idea what the sword was capable of. Layla continued to run forward trusting in the ability of the sword, and when it touched the vortex, almost as if the sword was hydrophobic, the water split in two different directions.

'I didn't want to use Minny in this fight, she's still young and she is our daughter. If anything happened to her, then I wouldn't be able to forgive myself.' Layla thought. 'But I can't be so naive as to not think that it is better to fight with her by my side. She is just as strong as myself.'

'We will defeat this thing together without Quinn, and send it back to wherever it came from.'

Breaking through the water vortex, Layla was in the air with the sword raised above her head, and at the same time, Minny had broken through with her speed, coming in from below with her claw.

Yongbu gathered his celestial energy and used his wings to close himself in, as a type of shield. Even if the attack was strong, he thought he could recover and strike back, but the first to attack out of the two was Layla.

She swung her sword creating a huge swipe in the air, and cutting right through Yongbu's wing. It had cut through as if there was no resistance at all. A large part of the wing fell to the ground.

"Go Minny!" Layla shouted, as she stopped using the power of the sword for a moment, and gave Minny a big boost in power as she passed on some of her Qi energy with her telekinesis, and also gave her small boost with her ability as well.

Minny could feel the power as it surged through her and made a large fist throwing it with all her strength and slamming it right into the chest of Yongbu... her vampire aura was swirling at the one point of contact and blasted Yongbu away.

"ARGHHHH!" Yongbu screamed with pain as he was thrown back, his body crashing against the hard icy floor, and crashing into one of the large rabbit ice sculptures. The ice blocks fell right where Yongbu was on top of him as he didn't get up immediately.

Wince who was watching the whole thing was left stunned.

"I know Quinn is strong, and I know they are part of his family, but I never imagined for them to be this strong as well."

For a second, Wince lifted up the small Galen in front of her.

"Maybe, you one day will grow up to just be as strong as the rest of your family."

A part of Wince felt ashamed, she had tried so hard against Yongbu, but these two had done just fine. For her there was no excuse as to why she couldn't do the same.

Yongbu started to slowly emerge from the ice, as he pulled himself out and now stood on top of the fallen sculpture, he was holding on to his chest where there was a large red mark. The outside of his skin that was usually a murky grey colour looked red and raw.

His wings on his back were retreating back into his back, including the broken part of it.

"This is not what I signed up for. I didn't expect to take this much punishment." Yongbu said. "Are all those from the BB family mad? I didn't even want to fight, I just wanted to know where Quinn was."

Both Minny and Layla could hear what Yongbu was saying but it was simple. If they wanted to know something about Quinn and were willing to force them to get to him, then they couldn't be for good reasons.

"Screw this." Yongbu said and a white light started to gather all around his body. The next second he disappeared.

"Is... that it?" Minny asked, still transformed and not letting her guard down.

"I'm not too sure?" Layla replied also confused, she couldn't sense the other's presence anymore. He had just come and disappeared.

Wince thought the same, and after a few moments she descended from where she was with Galen, coming over to the others.

"Thank you... thank you so much for helping me. I tried to protect you, but it looks like in the end, you were the one that protected me." Wince replied bowing down.

"Please... you don't have to do that." Layla replied back. "You are the Queen of this planet, and you are looking after us, in the first place, they were after us not you."

All of them on the ice looked to where Yongbu was last seen, thinking that something would happen, yet there was nothing. They turned their heads, and Galen soon started to point behind them.

"What's Galen pointing at?" Minny asked.

They all turned their heads, it was the same location as before, but now Yongbu had returned, but he wasn't alone. He was still hurt, and next to him, there was another figure, a figure that looked far from human.

"I have been updated on all the details. So greetings Talen family." The figure said, calmly stepping off the broken ice sculpture and onto the ground. "I suppose I should be polite and introduce myself. My name is Mundus, the messenger."

Chapter 2139: Spying through Dark arts

On the planet where no light touched the surface, not far from the vampire settlement, one of the hunting groups was in the forest. They twisted and turned their heads as they were looking for the next set of beasts to hunt.

"Is it just me, or are we having to travel deeper and deeper into the forest these days to find any worthwhile beasts?" One of the vampires complained.

"Well, beasts in the past have always been afraid of getting close to the settlement, maybe because of the vampires' strength and the constant hunting they have decided to move more outward on the planet, it is a large planet after all." Another replied. "You have to remember, although not all beasts are smart, at times they have an instinct for this type of thing."

"But that wouldn't explain why basic tier beasts are easy to still find close to the settlement?"

"What did I say, not all beasts are intelligent, maybe you're the one with the brain of a beast." The other vampires started to laugh.

As they continued forward into the group, they soon noticed that out of the five of them, one of them wasn't by their side. Turning around they could see their team member staring into the sky.

"Ronkin!" The vampire shouted. "Come on, I know you're new to the hunting team, but we need to stay together."

Shaking his head, the vampire snapped out of it, and ran forward to join the rest. After returning from the Namrik planet, due to the events and achievements the vampires had accomplished, especially those that were part of Ronkin's group, he had received a promotion.

Finally, Ronkin was no longer a guard, and he was now on the hunting team. An assessment took place and he passed it with flying colours, achieving the dream he always wished to achieve.

So it made him wonder, why did he feel so down about everything? He couldn't stop thinking about Quinn, and not just Quinn but also Edvard the original leader as well.

An investigation took place into those that knew Quinn, and the strange thing was it was done by one of the other families, rather than the 9th leader himself. There were rumours that had spread, about how the 9th leader perhaps betrayed them and had sided with the Demon Quinn.

Yet, an official statement was released that this was false, but the rumours continued because Edvard wasn't seen around the settlement anymore.

As for Ronkin himself, he answered the question they gave him honestly, even under the influence of an Original, and since he knew nothing about who Quinn really was, they seemed to let him and his family go.

Yet somehow, he couldn't help but continue to think about the situation. In his head, Quinn was a good person. No matter what was spoken about him, or saying what he was or what he did.

The fact was, he cared for them, he remembered the look that Quinn had when he held Nell in his hands.

'If Nell... if Nell never passed away, would you have not acted like that? Would you have continued living your life peacefully in the settlement, with your family. We would still be friends right?'

Ronkin was kicking himself, because he remembered a few conversations he had with Quinn before leaving. He would always talk about proving himself, and thought that this war was the chance to do it.

Yet, Quinn had stated he hated war, that it did no good for anyone, as if he was speaking from experience, and now they had lost Nell. It was the whole reason why Ronkin wasn't going to sign up again.

"What's that sound? Can you hear it?" One of the vampires asked.

"It sounds like the sound of something flapping?"

One of the vampires quickly rushed and climbed on top of one of the trees, thinking that it was perhaps a winged beast, but when they looked in the sky they couldn't see much apart from some beasts that were too far out.

"That's strange." The vampire said dropping down. "I definitely heard something... we all did. A beast couldn't be that fast could it."

There was also something else the vampire noticed when he was up the tree looking out.

"You know what else is strange, I could still see the settlement." The vampire claimed.

"No that's impossible, we have been travelling at a fast pace for a while now. The settlement should be out of view."

"If you don't believe me, then why don't you just check for yourself!" the other vampire shouted back.

Upon checking it was just as stated, they had only travelled a few miles out from the settlement, and the other vampire noticed something else as well.

"Where not in the position I thought we would be in." The vampire said. "The only explanation for it... is we've gotten lost."

Ronkin, hearing all this, felt like he had experienced this before but he had no clue why. Either way, the vampires decided to keep on track and continue going through the forest, as they did they continued to chatter more and more.

"Hey Ronkin, you were in the last battle right, the fight with the Namrik's, will you be joining the next one?" a vampire asked.

"The next one... what do you mean, are the Namrik's fighting back?" Ronkin asked.

"Didn't you know, I thought since you took part in the last one you would be in the loop more so than the others." The vampire replied. "Tomorrow they're going to open up recruitment again. It seems like Jim is preparing to go to battle another planet. So there will be another battle where we can prove ourselves."

Grinding his teeth and tensing up his body, the image of Nell appeared in his mind again.

"But why... Why do we have to fight again?" Ronkin complained. "The Namriks, they kept some of the vampires hostage and were attacking the Cruise ships, so why are we going to fight again?"

"Have you really not been listening to anything going on?" One of the vampires asked, and they all shook their heads.

Ronkin had purposely stayed out of the loop, there was so much negative news about Quinn it was affecting his mind, but he needed to work to provide for his family so he tried to avoid as much information as he could.

"There are two reasons. It seems like these planets also contain celestials that are trying to open a portal to the other world. Jim and Jack want to put a stop to them, and on top of that, it's quite likely that the Demon Quinn is hiding amongst one of these planets.

"From the reports of the vampires that were on the planet, they could feel the Demon's strength, maybe they were worried that he would get stronger, or create an army of his own. The improvement in beast crystals and beast equipment had already taken effect since taking over the Namriks, so it will be beneficial to us."

If it was for the sake of survival for their race, then Ronkin couldn't really argue back, but it was the fact that they were using Quinn for it all again. Once more, Ronkin was being left behind as he was in the middle of his thoughts.

The problem was what could he, a simple vampire with no strength, do about it. When the others went off, Ronkin realised on his own this time, and started to run to catch up with them. From the corner of his eye he noticed something, two dark circles, they were giant and looked like eyes in the forest.

He quickly turned his head to have a second look but it disappeared.

"What was that... am I imagining things now... I really should get more sleep."

The thing was, Ronkin wasn't imagining things, because for a while now the whole vampire group was being followed by an Owl like demon tier beast, one that had been infected by the shadow.

The infected shadow beasts worked like a network, and it was all linked back to the original shadow owner. If Quinn wanted, he could also directly control one of those that had been infected by the shadow.

'The infected shadow beasts are doing a good job.' Quinn thought. 'They are infecting more and more on the vampire settlement planet, and I can continue to keep tabs and learn what they are doing. Jim is making a move... I wonder how much time I have until he reaches the Mermerial planet.'

'Ronkin... stay safe.'

Chapter 2140.1: Use Anything (Part 1)

After disconnecting with the infected demon tier beast in the vampire settlement, Quinn opened his eyes. Although he could give the infected tasks to follow, especially intelligent ones that had a mind of their own, information passed on from them was a little more difficult.

He could only see this information if he went and accessed an infected mind, but then how would he know what information an infected had without searching every single one. This power, the evolved shadow was strong, but it was almost as if it was made for a mind more capable of holding all this information than him.

Which was why, he more so had information passed on to the infected demon tiers. They were in some cases like his generals in an army, just accessing their minds, or taking over them he could gather an idea of what was going on.

"Did you manage to have a nice little nap then?" Russ asked.

"I wasn't napping, I was doing something important." Quinn answered. For a long time, against all the enemies he had, he felt like he was on the back foot a lot of time. This time, Quinn wanted to be prepared more than Jim or Jack could ever think of.

"Did you manage to do what I asked?" Quinn changed the subject.

"Yes." Russ replied back. "After you showed me what to do, through your weird touching I can feel the energy from the crystal a lot clearer. I'm trying to drain as much energy as I can from the crystal... it just hurts a bit."

Quinn did remember going through some level of pain when he had absorbed his first nest crystal but after that he was able to absorb others quickly and painlessly.

"Someone like you won't die, just absorb it as fast as you can. Otherwise, there is a chance that you might die to someone else."

Russ pulled out the crystal and was concentrating, but he couldn't help but not trust Quinn a little. He seemed to be a little restless as if he was in a rush, and how would Quinn even know that this wouldn't kill him, it wasn't like he had forced others to absorb a nest crystal before.

Either way getting stronger didn't sound like a bad thing, which was why Russ was sucking it up and absorbing the crystal anyway.

"Is there anything I can do?" Ceril asked while she was patiently sitting on her sofa seat.

Currently the group were inside the Dark Red's building. It was a whole floor that was dedicated to the professional team, coaches, players, and up and coming trainees were all located in one area.

While Jun was talking to his team, the group were told to wait inside one of the team strategy rooms which was what they were currently doing now.

"I want to help out as well. The Mermerial race might get involved in this whole mess anyway, and when the time comes I don't want to be useless. I know how strong the enemy is." Ceril explained.

Thinking about it, Quinn wondered what was best for her. She didn't have any MC cells so the nest crystals didn't have a direct use, but then again nest crystals seemed to be versatile. They had saved his own life, and they could also be used to indefinitely prolong a clone's life.

It would make sense if they could prolong human life as well, which was one of the guesses Quinn had to how Jack and Jim were still alive.

'Her blood control is great, just as good as the original leaders. I can't give her a boost in power with celestial energy like I could in the past. It seems like the best thing to do to increase her strength would be improving her blood aura, along with the blood control. The only way I know how to increase blood aura is through blood crystals and that's through a vampire's death, which I can't imagine coming anytime soon.'

In the middle of his thoughts Quinn hadn't quite come up with an answer, but he was interrupted anyway by the sliding door. Jun had returned and entered the room.

"Arghh... man speaking to that old man always gives me a headache, I knew this would be tough." Jun said, shaking his head. "Look, I'll be honest, the Penswi don't like the idea of bringing in outsiders, unless they can be sure by bringing you on that they can win. I did my best to convince them, but from here on out, you will have to do the rest."

Through that explanation it was how Quinn and the other two had ended up in one of the training rooms. The thing was, while walking through the halls they had gathered the attention of everyone on the floor.

The trainees like Zallack all started to talk about the aliens that were trying out for the team. Soon all of the kids, the coach, as well as the other professionals on the Penswi team had gathered.

The trainees, including Zallack, were standing around the edge, some of them were pretending they were training with the multiple different types of equipment, while others were just staring at what was going on.

As for the coach, it was perhaps the first time they saw an older Penswi, the skin was still vibrant and fresh, but the eyes were darker, and the back of the Penswi was a little bit hunched.

"If it wasn't for the fact that Jun begged me to do this, I would have never even considered this in the first place!" The coach sighed and shook his head.

While the other professional team members went to the coaches side to try and calm him down. Just like Jun, the other professional Penswi that were on the team had a slightly more muscular build compared to just the regular Penswi.

The coach eventually shook off all of those trying to help him, just like humans it seemed that the elderly didn't like admitting they needed help or to be looked after when they needed it.

"Look, before we even continue with any type of assessment for all of you, the fact is that only five are allowed on a team. So you will all need to take part in the assessment, and not only do you have to get a score a little bit better compared to the others on the team, it needs to be far higher."

With all of that explained to them, the assessment was to commence, there were multiple different types of games, as it was explained that the event would require different members to take part in different events.

The thing was, at each event, only one person was allowed to participate, but a person could participate multiple times. This was why a team needed to be more balanced as they had no idea what the games would be.

It was also the reason why Stark took part in nearly all of the events, beating everyone no matter what type of game he went up against.

For the little test though, they decided to go with the button game that they had played before, since they already knew the rules for this.

The first one up was Ceril, she had performed slightly better than she did in the arcade as she had a feeling for the buttons and had come up with a more efficient way to hit those close rather than just going for what she could see, was moving in a way that allowed her to score higher.

However, at the end, her score wasn't so impressive, it would allow her to be considered for a professional team but to replace her with one of the other regular Penswi, there was no chance with a score like that, and the coach was just shaking his head.

Next up though, was Russ and he was sure to impress.

"You seem to have a better image of this Stark person in your head. You've seen him perform in person right, well that should help me out."

Just like before, Russ had transformed into a Penswi using the image of the great person Stark that was placed inside the coach's mind. He performed far better as he moved faster compared to before and managed to get a score that was above a 1000 on the machine.

"This... is amazing, and he can change his body into the perfect Penswi... his points are still lacking against Stark but I can see a light!" the coach shouted for joy, but his smile soon went away. "If only... I had more time with him, then maybe we would have been able to train him to the point where he could compete with Stark."

The coach realised that Jun wasn't pulling his leg after all. Still, there was a smile on Jun's face.

"He wasn't the person I was talking about." Jun explained. "The person I want you to see and pay attention to, is that one."

Quinn walked up to the game, and was wondering just how he should do this, and before starting the game, he asked a question.

"Am I allowed to use anything to hit these buttons as fast as I can, items, or powers of some sort?" Quinn asked.

"That is not a problem, any power is fine, as for an item as long as it's something that doesn't interfere with the game directly or touches the game directly then it would be fine." The coach explained.

Hearing this Quinn had an idea.

For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

P.a.t.r.e.o.n jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back

Chapter 2141.2: Use anything (Part 2)

After playing the game once, Quinn had thought of the best way to possibly play the game again to achieve the best score he could. He had a feeling based on the conversations he had with Jun that they would allow him to use his powers.

Russ had made a fair argument and the Penswi wanted to overcome their own games with their main trait, their speed. It was almost a challenge to them, if someone could beat them in another way, then they would have to try and bring it on.

Standing in front of the game, Quinn waited for the countdown, and as it was counting down his eyes started to glow red, aura was coming out from his body. A large amount of energy could be felt from the professionals that were close to him, and the students watching at the back for a split second.

'I have to control my energy, it might have a bad effect on the young ones.' Quinn thought.

Soon the red aura was visible, and it was beginning to take shape, carefully crafting and moving it, Quinn had turned it into what looked like hands, each of them with an index finger pointed out, and not only that, but all of them covering a button.

'I wonder what the old kings would think... using absolute blood control in this way to win a game?' Quinn thought.

Instead of a 1000 blood swords, Quinn had created a 1000 blood hands. As soon as the game started, he was hitting the buttons with the blood hands as well as his own hands immediately. There was no need for him to move, because the hands would do the work for him.

The number of points were going up fast, and there were countless thoughts going through all of the Penswi that were watching.

'Isn't this cheating?'

'How can he just create hundreds of arms out of nothing, out of the thin air? Why did none of the other squishy aliens do that?'

As for the coach, his thinking went beyond the others because he could see that it wasn't as simple as the others thought.

'This alien, it most likely isn't something that just any of those from his race can do. So what if he has multiple hands to help him, he still needs to control all of those hands. He has to have the foresight, the vision and the quick thinking to make each one of those hands push the button when they appear.'

'Then there are his own hands, they're moving at an incredibly fast speed. This really is a golden opportunity.' The coach smiled, there was one thought though. This trick, or skill would only work with this type of game and not the others, but maybe the coach could work with it.

At the end of it all, the game had ended and the points came out totalling around 1400.

"Wow... I've never seen so many points before!" One of the students said, and they couldn't help but talk among themselves at what they had seen.

"So what do you think? Are they on the team?" Jun asked.

"What do I think?" The coach smiled. "I think with these two, we have a chance at winning this thing."

The coach came over to Quinn and looked him up and down, still with a bright smile on his face.

"I have something to ask you... was that everything you had, everything you can do?"

Quinn did go as fast as he could this time compared to the last when going against Zallack, but there was one more thing that he perhaps could have done to push his score a little further.

"Judging from the pause I know your answer, but this is good, because I warn you, Stark is a very impressive person. If you want to gauge just how impressive he is, even with the score you got up there, you would still lose."

Now, it was the others turn to be shocked, Ceril, Russ, and Quinn were at a loss for words. Quinn had just multiplied his hands to cover every single button. All of the Penswi were the same, they had two hands and two legs, they were no different compared to each other apart from body composition and speed.

This meant that Stark was so fast that he could achieve a score better than Quinn could, just how fast was this Stark person?

In the end, Quinn and Russ were allowed to join the team, but Ceril had been left out. She wasn't too upset about it, since the team was still treating her quite well. Since they were a part of the team, they were given an apartment in the same building that they were training in, and all of them were allowed to stay.

Things were moving fast though, as in just a couple of days time, it would be time for them to compete in the tournament. There was no training scheduled for them, but instead the coach asked them to try to get familiar with all the games that could come up in the event.

There were over fifty different types of games, and only five of them would come up in the tournament. After that, they also needed to learn the rules of all the games as well, it was a lot for them to take in.

During this time as well, Russ had finally managed to absorb the nest crystal and he could feel that his powers had grown quite a bit compared to before.

After all of that, the big day had finally arrived, Russ and Quinn had successfully been registered and they were to head to the opening ceremony of the event.

The Dark Red's had got in a large pod like machine where five, and their coach, were heading to the venue. The pod travelled at a lightning fast speed, getting them through the city quickly.

Ceril was unable to join the team, but heading with the trainees, Zallack was to guide her as he had a ticket for the event, and she would be able to watch it as it went on.

Quinn could see the scope of the Penswi, they had to have at least a few hundred thousand or so living on the planet. He remembered something that Bliss had told him once. The reason why many celestials looked at Earth originally was due to the large number of lives there.

The more lives there were on a planet, the easier for celestials to fill their condition, so he had to be cautious of planets with high numbers.

A large dome similar to grand events held on Earth could be seen, although there were a lot more blue and neon lights on the outside of the place compared to one of Earth's centres and this was a worldwide planet event, the dome was far bigger than any he had seen before.

"Hey, I hope you're okay with performing in front of a lot of people, that is something that is hard for us to practise." The coach stated.

"It's okay, I will do what I need to do, to get their attention." Quinn answered.

The main goal of all of this was to get in front of the planet leaders, the King and Queen of the Penswi.

Entering the dome, there was little preparation for the team, as there was a starting ceremony for them all. They were escorted into what would be their strategy meeting room. Here they would see what game they were to play.

Each team would send out one player for the game and depending on what position one got, it would earn a certain amount of points for the team. However, the tunnel from the prep room to the main hall was open as there was a starting ceremony.

Now that all of the guests were seated, it was time for all of the professional team to go out, and introduce themselves to the spectators.

Walking through the hallway, Quinn and Russ followed at the back of the rest of the team, and taking a step out, they were greeted with loud deafening cheers, from all of the Penswi, but that wasn't the only thing, because they were noticed by all.

"Hey... are they from another planet?"

"Aliens are really competing in this event, I haven't seen that for years, and the last time it was just a gimmick!"

"Maybe the Dark Reds are trying to do the same."

"But usually, they come third or second every year, so why would they risk that?"

On top of the people, the King and Queen who were seated up high in a special booth had also noticed the aliens as well.

"Oh, I saw them on the list, but they are not as frightening as I expected them to be." The King said.

"Looks can be deceiving. If the Dark Reds have asked them to join their team there must be a reason. This year's event might be far more interesting than we anticipated." The Queen replied.

Meanwhile Quinn wasn't bothered by the comments or anything else, because he had his own thoughts that he was thinking about in his head.

'After all of this, I'll be back to see my family again, and then I'll try and find the Blades. It hasn't been that long since I left, so they should be fine, but I can't help but worry... I wonder what they're doing right now.' Quinn thought.

Chapter 2142.1: The power of time (Part 1)

'Hey hey hey, this person is big trouble, whatever you do don't let go of me. You're going to have to fight using my powers and not your own.' The black sword said, sending a message directly into Layla's mind.

Wince, Minny, Layla and Galen were all on the ice close to each other. None of them had acted just yet, as they saw the figure walking toward them. They were unsure what it was, or why it was there, yet they all had this tingling sensation running through their body, and the sword's message just made Layla even more sure that they shouldn't act rashly.

Maybe it was the multiple dark eyes, or the way the strange ears on the figure looked like horns curling inwards, or just the whole aura surrounding the person, there was such confidence and not a hint of fear in them.

Even when fighting against Yongbu, with Layla's ability she could see the emotions that would pour out of him, fear, anger, worriness, pain, but with Mundus, there was nothing. There was no fog over his head.

Finally, Mundus stopped where he was, and Yongbu stood back, not getting close to the situation.

"I am staying at a distance as I do not wish to alarm you." Mundus was scanning the ground and somewhat shook his head. "I didn't realise that he had passed on his celestial energy to so many followers."

"Although what he does or has done is none of my business, right now all I want to know is where Quinn is, and how he managed to escape."

Layla still wasn't so sure why these people were after Quinn, and for now she would try her best to calm the situation down.

"Quinn isn't here!" Layla shouted. "We don't know where he went, he took a ship and left."

Mundus seemed to be taking in the information, thinking about what to do, or trying to figure out whether they were lying or not. Meanwhile Layla wanted some answers, because the sword she wielded seemed to know.

'Tell me, who is this person, why would they be after Quinn, and why should we be so worried?' Layla asked.

'You know I don't have the best memories ever since I was put in this thing!' The sword angrily replied. 'But... There are some memories that stick or come back as soon as a feeling comes back.'

'This person is one of the most powerful people I have ever met, and trust me when I say this I have met some powerful people... I think. His power... it's to do with time, just as long as you hold onto me, it won't affect you, and if you can, do whatever you can to not get in a fight with this person.'

The power of time, Layla didn't quite understand what that meant, and she would have loved to ask more questions, but it looked like she wasn't able to.

"Okay, I believe you." Mundus said. "The matter though is quite an urgent one regarding Quinn. Since you are his family I assume he will return, so while I continue my search I hope you don't mind if Yongbu stays here."

"When Quinn returns, Yongbu will report back to me and I will have my meeting with him then."

Layla wanted to disagree, argue back, because if it turned out like this she would be unable to warn Quinn as he arrived, and judging by how quick this Mundus person had turned up, they would eventually meet and clash.

However, taking the words of the sword, she thought it was the best they could get out of the current situation.

Mundus looked to the sky, and it seemed he was ready to take off, but he stopped for a second, and quickly turned his head looking at the group. Layla was focused on Mundus' eyes because he wasn't just staring at the group, but a certain individual in particular.

"I thought you all had the same celestial energy given to you by Quinn. There is an energy that feels familiar, but it's not quite the same... were you trying to hide from me?" Mundus asked and started to walk forward once again.

His eyes were still locked onto a single individual and all of the cells in Layla's body and all of her instincts were kicking in.

"Stay away from him!" Layla shouted at the top of her lungs. "Stay away from my child!"

Mundus' eyes were locked on to Galen, who was sitting on top of Wince's arm. Knowing what was about to happen, Wince turned around and started to run. Meanwhile, the rash young Minny had fully transformed.

"Dad told me that I have to protect the family. I will protect Galen!" Minny shouted, as she jumped from her spot and ran across the ice, jumping forward right at Mundus' face.

"Minny no!!!" Layla screamed, the scene in front of her, everything felt like it was in slow motion. She could see everything clearly, yet was unable to do anything about it.

It seemed at that point, that everything had stopped. Was it her mind playing tricks on her, was this what happened when one was over worried, when they wished to do everything they could to save their loved one.

No, that wasn't the case at all, because Mundus was still moving, he was the only thing moving while Minny was stuck mid air. He walked past her, and continued to walk forward.

"The... power of time." Layla mumbled.

"Oh?" Mundus replied. "You can still move, but how is that possible? I used my effect on everyone. Do you have an ability perhaps... no that's not it, I can feel where my powers are being affected. It's that sword in your hand."

"That sword is interesting, not that it matters much anyway. The child can not run away like this, and what about you, do you plan to stop me?" Mundus asked.

Layla's veins were already starting to bulge as a surge of energy was going through, it was building up from the sword, and going directly up to her eyes. Soon blood was starting to pour down from them, rolling from her cheeks.

'I can give you power, but I'm not sure I can give you enough power to defeat this person. Even if his ability doesn't work, he is still strong!' The sword warned.

The sword's power was similar to how it was before, but wasn't quite the same since Quinn had changed it. It didn't mess with Layla's mind nor gave her more negative emotions to deal with.

However, the power was still too strong for her body to hold, and she could feel that if she kept up this form for long it would tear her body apart, but as the sword said, it was the only way for her to fight without being affected by the ability.

Layla ran forward knowing the negative side effects, but would ignore them at all costs, she had shortened the distance at a fast rate, and swung the attack right through the air.

"Although you are not affected by time, everything else is, including myself." Mundus was suddenly behind her. She could barely see it, he was moving but it was a blur. A speed that was similar, or perhaps surpassed when Quinn used his nitro accelerate.

With a simple touch of a hand towards her back, Layla felt a strong force push her back. She tumbled across the ground multiple times, before stabbing her sword in the ground, in order to stop.

"He just touched me... how did he hit me so hard." Layla thought and blood started to spill from her mouth. She felt so powerful in this form, yet in front of this being, it meant almost nothing.

'Is there nothing I can do... is there really nothing I can do, to stop him from taking Galen away.'

Mundus continued to walk, as if the whole world, the whole universe revolved around him, and reached out his hand, straight toward little Galen.

Chapter 2143.2: The Power of Time (Part 2)

A dreaded feeling was coming over Layla, something she had experienced many times before, but at this stage at this point and time, she didn't quite think she would feel it again, helplessness. Flashing memories came into her mind, of times where she couldn't help her mother, times she was unable to help Erin, and Cia.

Right in front of her eyes, she was witnessing the worst, her child, her own flesh and blood that had been created between her and Quinn was going to be taken away. Whatever Mundus planned to do with the child, she didn't want to know.

Watching this whole scene, she felt something as she reached out.

'Sword! I don't care what happens to me, you can take over my body, take whatever you want, my soul, my entire life, but do whatever you can to stop that person!' Layla screamed.

The sword could feel Layla's strong will and in turn it responded to it.

'Very well.' The sword responded. 'Whatever you do, don't let go.'

Blood filled the entirety of Layla's eyes, the white and not even the pupil could be seen. It started to come out from every hole that was possible, her nose, and ears, and dripped out from her mouth.

Everything in her body was telling her that she needed to drop and let go of the sword. If she did, then the excruciating pain that she was feeling right now would completely disappear, but she had to fight all of that in her body.

The sword told her not to let go, and she wasn't going to let go. Her mind had gone blank, she was unable to see, nor think. In this state there was no chance for her to fight.

The sword feared that this could happen, but was counting on something else. As Layla held onto the sword, it allowed it to use its powers outside of itself and through Layla. A large wave pulsed out from her body.

It was invisible to the naked eye, but it had real effects. As the pulse moved through the air, everything started to move once again. It was sent out in all directions first hitting Minny.

She immediately fell down to the ground, confused by everything that was happening.

'Where did that man go, did he run?' Minny thought, her eyes soon caught on to something else, it was her mother.

"MUMMM!" Minny screamed.

She witnessed her mother holding the sword with both her hands, her entire body shaking while standing in a pool of blood that was growing by the second.

The pulse went out, hitting Yongbu as well. He could move again, the powers of Mundus affected even celestials. He had an idea of what was happening but was unsure about what to do, or the reason for the time power breaking like so.

Then finally, the pulse had hit both Galen and Wince who were able to move again. Wince was confused, as the whole scene in front of her had changed. It wasn't as if it had happened quickly, it had just changed, she hadn't even blinked.

Layla was on the other side standing in her blood. Mundus was only a few metres away. Rather than trying to figure out the situation, she acted instead as she pulled out her trident and thrust it forward, shooting out a vortex of water.

With a wave of his hand, the vortex of water had stopped mid air, but as quickly as it stopped it started to move again. Seeing this, instead Mundus' arm started to glow white, he thrust it into the vortex of water, breaking it into small droplets that fell to the ground.

"What are you even trying to do?" Mundus asked, while turning his head to look at Layla, he knew that his powers were having trouble from working due to her.

"You, who has the most chance of beating me in a fight, can't even move because you are drawing out so much power from that sword.

"If you continue to hold that sword like so, you will die. You have stopped my powers for now, but for how long? How much longer can you last? A minute, then after that minute I will just get what I want anyway."

"All of this is pointless."

Mundus was trying to get through to Layla with words, but he soon realised that she perhaps wasn't able to comprehend what he was saying anyway. With a sigh, he moved over to where she was, past Minny and now was by Layla's side.

'As expected, even though I'm this close to her, she can't swing the sword.'

"You dying will cause me quite a problem." Mundus said. "I need to ask him a favour and I don't think he will be so complying if you are dead."

Grabbing hold of the sword with one hand Mundus lightly pushed her with the other. No longer holding onto the sword, Layla immediately fell into her own pool of blood on the ice.

At the same time, Mundus dropped the sword, as it was no longer pulsing, no longer having the same effect.

'Even though she is no longer using it, if I hold onto the sword, then I can't use my own powers. That is certainly an annoying weapon.' Mundus thought. He activated his powers again and everything came to a standstill.

Yongbu had a stunned expression, as he looked at the scene. Wince had tried to hurl the trident at him and it had stopped mid air, she was still holding onto Galen tightly.

On the ice though, there was something that Mundus was able to see that was moving.

"I seem to be getting quite a few surprises today." Mundus said. "The sword's ability is no longer in effect, so why can you move?"

In between Wince and Mundus there was another person that had moved, and that was Minny, but she didn't look the same as she did moments ago. Rather than in her red covered celestial self, her entire body was covered by the shadow.

It was flickering, moving about, and Minny's heartbeat and breath could be heard moving as well.

'Is it that the god slayer-like power that Quinn possessed? It seems like this little girl can do it as well, but how is it blocking out my power?' Mundus thought.

Focusing a bit more, Mundus somewhat could tell, because he could sense his own powers.

"Now I see, it's not that my powers aren't working, but due to your ability they are taking longer to take effect." Mundus said. "Eventually, time will stand still for you as well."

The reason he was saying this out loud was because he wanted to dissuade her from fighting of course. It was the easiest way to get the job done.

As for Minny, she had no idea if covering herself in a shadow-like body like Quinn did from time to time would work. The shadow ability also had an effect of time.

Objects that touched it, powers and more, would be slowed down and it was the same for Mundus' ability. His ability was everywhere in the air, but as it touched Minny's shadow it was being slowed down, and the usual effect was slowly building up.

With time, she too would eventually come to a standstill.

"Dad told me... that it was my job to protect everyone!" Minny shouted. "And, while he is away, I will protect everyone!"

"My powers will eventually get to you, there is no point in fighting." Mundus said.

"I... don't need long." Minny held out her hand, and out from her shadow, an item had appeared.

Minny remembered, she remembered very well that Quinn, her father, had given her a gift. He stated that she was only to use it if she felt like she was in dire need, if she really needed to.

It was safe to say that she believed this was the right time to use it, to use the god slayer item that had been given to her.

Chapter 2144: Creation of the god slayer Item

When making the god slayer tier weapon, Quinn had gone through more troubles than he had let on. There was a lot going through his mind, because after all, it was the first god slayer tier weapon that was to be created.

For one, what he had was a god slayer upgrade crystal, which meant he would have to select a demon tier item that he wished to upgrade to the next stage. Out of the demon tier items he already had, he felt like none of them really suited Minny.

There was the armour, but that was already a celestial item and had kept its status. It was hard to say if using the upgrade crystal on it would make it better, or just change it slightly. If it was the case, it would feel like a waste of using such a powerful item.

Which was why he had decided to use the upgrade crystal on a demon tier item first. On top of that, the greatest forger that Quinn knew was now stuck in his weapon, so the two of them had to get to work together.

'The demon tier weapon or item will be used as a base, but we honestly don't know how much the upgrade crystal will affect the item.' Alex explained. 'In some cases, it can completely change the item, the skills, everything from what I have used before from upgrade crystals.'

'But in most cases, it improves on the base skills. Still, I have a feeling that whatever base active skills the weapons have, it will be quite a significant jump.'

At the moment, the demon tier crystal was in front of him, they were in the forging room and Alex was explaining a few details before the work was to be done.

'Significant jump, what do you mean?' Quinn asked.

'Well think about it, god slayers are significant beings compared to demon tier beasts. If you were to ask me. Any god slayer would be able to beat a demon tier beast at any level including a humanoid one.'

'I know you told me that a celestial's strength varies but if we take you as an example when you evolved into a celestial vampire I would say the same, your power jumped significantly. Which is why we can assume the same will happen again.'

Although this was good information to know, it wasn't as if Quinn would come across something like this everyday, nor did he wish to become a forger.

'So what are you trying to tell me?' He asked.

'That perhaps the base skill of the weapon created we don't have to worry about too much.' Alex explained. 'As you may know, certain crystals have a tendency to lean

into being crafted into certain things. Whether that be a sword, a shield, or an earring of some sort.

'However a skilled forger like myself can form the weapon into a shape or form as he wishes, but it might not bring out the full potential that was originally intended for the crystal. In this case, since the item will be upgraded to a god slayer item in the first place, I don't think we have to worry too much about this part, so I'm asking you, what do you think will suit Minny?'

It was a long way of saying things, but Quinn knew Alex only did this when he was excited, and besides there was no one else for him to talk to apart from him. Being trapped in the weapon must be a horror for him.

Originally they thought they could just locate Sil, and get him into a body of his own, but things turned out to be a lot more difficult than originally planned.

'A weapon for Minny is quite hard to think about.' Quinn pondered. 'Most of the time when she is fighting, she does so in her celestial form now. If she was to come across a strong enemy, then no doubt she would use that form.'

'In that form, she uses her hands and feet, mostly relying on her speed. Her hands are encased in a hardened form of blood aura mixed with celestial energy that make them twice the size. Honestly when I think about it, I can't think of any weapon that would really suit her.'

'Even if we did make a weapon like a sword or something, she would have to learn how to use the weapon. I'm not exactly the best when it comes to weapons either but Leo would teach me if it was something I struggled with. For Minny in this situation, she has no one to teach her.'

It was hard to think of, and because of this Quinn was going toward some type of armour, but remembered the problems he had. Celestial energy seemed to have problems when touching beast armour as well.

That might have been an effect only Quinn's celestial energy had, since he was unable to use it properly at the time, but that was a big risk factor. There was no point weakening Minny for her to use something else. Of course, there was a chance that a god slayer item wasn't affected by this.

"If you were naturally going to use the demon tier crystal to create something, what would it end up being?" Quinn asked.

"A ring... it would be an item type." Alex answers. "Don't be disappointed when you hear this. Although it's true that item type equipment tend to have a lower appeal compared to weapons due to their strength, a lot of that changes at the demon tier level."

"Think about the amulet that you had before. No one would say that was less of a demon tier item compared to the swords that others had wielded." Alex explained.

"And for a god slayer item, I would say even more so. In my mind, for an item to be considered at a god slayer level yet not be a weapon, would mean it would have to have a pretty strong active skill."

Hearing all of this, Quinn liked the sound of it. The two of them worked endlessly for days as they went ahead to create the perfect god slayer item. It was a first for Alex and he wasn't in his own body while making it, but it wasn't as if Quinn's body was in no shape to do such things.

Using the crystal was new for both of them as well, but Quinn had sharp senses, and could influence the flow of energy while doing the heavy work. Although Alex didn't want to say anything, to put it simply Quinn was a natural at this.

If he was taught how to become a forger, perhaps the two would be rivals in the whole thing.

"So this is it in the end." Quinn looked deeply at the ring, it was a relatively thick band that was a light green with a glitter like shine, then at the top there was a gem, one that looked quite similar to a nest crystal.

Staring into the gem it was almost as if one was staring into space.

As usual after Quinn created an item, he would use his inspect skill, to see what it could do and what the active skills would be. That way he could also tell Minny how to use it as well. Since there wouldn't be many instances where she could practise using it, at least not in the vampire settlement.

"What is this... I've never seen an item able to do such a thing. Is this even possible?" Quinn said.

"I told you my instincts were right!" Alex bragged. "Once again, I have created another masterpiece to add to my collection."

The effect of the ring was so great for a second Quinn even thought about keeping it, as it would do him well in battles, but he knew that it would be good in Minny's hands. He needed a sure fire way to keep her safe and with this, he believed she would be safe, no matter who she was up against.

Chapter 2145: A stronger power than time?

Minny didn't quite know what was going on, but she could feel it in her shadow. A power that was creeping in and slowly affecting her, how much time she had left, it was hard to say, but either way she needed to do everything she could.

Summoning the box her father gave her, it appeared in her hand from the shadows. They continually surrounded the whole area just in case there was a way for Mundus to get involved.

Gripping her hand tightly, the box broke and immediately the green ring with the special gem was placed right on her finger. It could only be seen for a moment before it disappeared as the shadow covered it completely.

'I can't remember everything that father told me about how to use it, but I have to do the best I can to protect my family!' Minny shouted in her head as she pushed out her hand.

All of a sudden, the distance between Mundus and Minny was getting further apart. There was no force felt on Mundus' body so he was confused why, by the second, the distance was getting larger between the two.

'What is she doing, what is that item that she is using?' Mundus thought.

Although he could feel no force, something was clearly happening, so he attempted to use his own powers on whatever it was in front of him but there was no effect at all.

'I have to break out of whatever this is!' Mundus took a step to the right quickly, and moved. Once again, it was sudden but his position and the distance between the two were back to normal.

Minny moved her hand attempting to aim it at Mundus again, but since he was unsure with what was happening, he was moving at a fast speed. His speed was incredibly fast, and like a flash he was right by Minny, now standing right behind her.

Her power seemed to be limited by her hand, where the ring was placed, so as long as he was behind her it would be fine. A large amount of celestial energy had built up in the palm of his hand turning it completely white.

'To condense and build up this much celestial energy would take an enormous amount of time, but with my ability I can speed up the process. I can gather my celestial energy faster than anyone and I can recover my celestial energy faster than anyone as long as I can still use my power.'

'My powers are what makes me so different compared to the others, and you will understand that!'

Throwing his hand out, he just needed to destroy her outer shadow for his powers to work and then he could get on with his business. Swinging his hand out he had hit nothing but the air.

The celestial energy was super condensed in his hand into one place, so it made no impact on the ice or the air around it, it was meant to just strike its target and nothing else, but where was his target?

Looking around, he saw that Minny was behind him, a metre or so in the air.

'My power is still having an effect, so how was she able to move that fast? No, it's impossible for her to have moved that fast. Is it teleportation, it has to be, but how does she have a power like that?' Mundus was deeply confused and the confusion was only going to grow.

A black circle could be seen on the palm of her hand, it was almost like a small ball. At first Mundus thought it was her shadow powers, but the colour of the ball was much darker, and soon he was lifted up off form his feet and his whole body was moving towards the black ball.

'This force, no matter what I do, no matter how hard I try to fight back I can't contain it!'

When Mundus was within range, Minny pulled back her fist, red aura was growing out of it and mixing with the purple shadows creating a strange purple and red effect around her hand.

Throwing it out, it landed right in Mundus' stomach, the whole space and area seemed to distort before he was sent flying onto the ground, he crashed and cracked through the ice, into the deep water and continued to move through it.

However, the sight was a strange one because with his own powers he made sure that the water didn't move, so it almost looked like there was just a large hole in the sea.

'That's the first time I have been hit in a while. I never thought such a person would give me trouble.' Mundus thought.

Swirling both of his hands, the white celestial energy seemed to linger in the air, creating a large circle then pushing his hands forward a large beam of energy came out, right toward Minny who was still somehow floating in the air.

Once again, the attack was too fast for someone to move out of the way, especially one that was in the air. At the same time, her shadow wasn't strong like her father's

taking the hit, so she would lose all of her MC cell's, thus allowing Mundus power to work on her.

Still holding out her hand again, she closed it, and in doing so the attack had completely disappeared. It didn't look like it had been blocked, or a force had gotten rid of it; it was just gone.

Now there was a clear line of sight between Minny and Mundus, she started to swing her hands and multiple attacks of strong red aura came out. Minny could feel it though, she was moving slower than she usually would have done, and in turn the attacks were moving slower, but that didn't matter, because the red aura attacks had completely stopped and were still in the air.

Mundus quickly came out from the water and emerged from the ice.

"My power doesn't just work on beings and objects, it works on powers as well, which is why I'm confused... why it's not working on—"

One moment the red aura attacks were in the air, and the next, they had hit him right on his body. They had hit him at the same time, but were unable to make a cut on his body but they still caused a bit of pain on his end.

When the attacks stopped, Mundus started to move, running around Minny in circles.

"Now I understand what your power is, creating a large distance between us, moving to the point where it looks like teleportation, sucking in my body, and getting rid of my attack, as well as my powers. That item, it's given you the powers of space!"

Space and Time, two powers that were closely related and in this case, it seemed the power of space was far more powerful than what Mundus could do. He was amazed that such an item could allow a person to do such a thing, and in today's fights he had found two that were beyond incredible and could trump his own powers, but he still wasn't afraid, because he could tell, time was nearly up.

Seeing Mundus just run around, Minny created the black ball in her hand again. It started to move Mundus off his feet one more time toward her. Midway, while he was in the air, he fell back down onto the ice.

"You... for a little one are a strong fighter... it's too bad time wasn't on your side." Mundus said.

The shadow was fading from Minny's body, it wasn't the ring's power that had ended, it was her own MC cells, her shadow power that had come to an end. Eventually Mundus's powers would have reached her anyway, but her own power wasn't strong enough.

Now without the shadow body to protect her, Minny's whole body was completely frozen in time, and she was unable to use her ring to summon her powers.

Mundus had won the battle, but it was a lot harder than he originally thought it was going to be.

"Now to get back to what I was looking at." Mundus said, turning to Galen.

Chapter 2146: Who's the fastest

The grand event of the Penswi was about to begin and Quinn along with Russ were getting ready in their rooms. They had to wear the clothing of the Dark Red's which was a red and black which was fine for Quinn as he thought it made him look quite stylish and they suited the colours that he would have picked.

After everyone was changed, the first event would be announced and then each team would have fifteen minutes to decide who from their team would be best to send out for that event. The interesting thing was that the same person could compete more than once.

However, the problem was, at least what Russ and Quinn found, that even though a lot of games were to do with speed, they sucked at most of them. There was a lot of strategy involved in these games as well as just being fast so they would have to wait for something that suited them.

'I saw the King and Queen, up there on the stage, honestly I could just go over there in my shadow and pop out, but they might think I was threatening them, when I'm trying to get them on my side.' Quinn thought.

There was another reason why he was somewhat interested in this event though, and that was to see how strong the Penswi were and how useful they would be in a fight against Jim and Jack.

The Amra on average were incredibly strong, close to that of the Dalki, and there were even those that were stronger than the Dalki. The Mermerials were around the same strength of most of the vampires, as long as they had water near them, but what could the Penswi do? How could they be of help in the battle? Why did Bliss and Sam send him here?

The first event was selected and it was essentially what humans knew as a beep test. All participants would have to run from one side, to another side before the second beep was heard.

The interval between each beep would speed up, as time went on and if one couldn't get to the other side before the beep they would be eliminated. This test was not just about speed but also about stamina and pacing oneself.

Because it was relatively a long game, neither Russ nor Quinn would be taking part. Russ was unsure how long he could keep his transformation up, and to win the game he would have to appear as Stark.

They didn't want to stir up the crowd just yet. In the end, the group sent out someone who went by the name Tither.

"Finally, at least we'll get to see just how great this Stark person is, right?" Russ said.

It was true, and Quinn was looking forward to it. The event had started and they were able to watch it all on the screen in their rooms. These were the best of the best Penswi and the game unsurprisingly started at a fast pace.

With those getting eliminated due to underestimating how fast between the first beep and second beep.

'I doubt most vampires would be able to keep up with Penswi like this. I'll be able to use these Elite Penswi to confuse the enemy. On top of that, they would make great thieves. If they were to steal the flasks with the Green Blood it would greatly weaken the other team.' Quinn thought.

While watching the screen at one moment it went into the crowd and showed Ceril sitting beside the Amra that they had met in the arcade. Who knew why the two of them were sitting next to each other, but it did remind Quinn that he wanted to speak to the Amra before leaving the planet.

Continuing to watch the screen though, the first event looked like it was coming to an end, and to no one's surprise, not even Quinn's, it was down to Stark and another Penswi. When looking at Stark he looked familiar.

This was because the person that Russ had changed into on multiple occasions was Stark himself. The muscular body, the longer limbs were all the same. Yet, the face was completely different.

Quinn always thought that if he was to see an alien he would have no clue whether or not he would consider it handsome, but seeing Stark it was quite obvious he was. His face was just so perfect compared to all the other Penswi.

'I guess it's the same here, all the good genes really do go to one person.'

A few seconds later, and the final beep went off, declaring Stark as the winner of the event. The crowd cheered so loud they could feel the vibrations from the room they were in.

'Stark was certainly fast, but it didn't look like he reached his top speed in that match. It makes me wonder, just how fast is he? Can I actually beat him?' Quinn wondered.

The second event had started and another person was sent from the Dark Reds, and it was the same result as before with Stark winning again. The Dark Reds were doing well coming in the top 5 of the last two events though, and there were two more to go.

"We need to win the next event if we have any chance of winning this whole thing. It doesn't matter if these guys just win their two matches, it still won't be enough points!" The coach shouted.

"Don't worry." Jun said standing up. "The next one, the obstacle course, let me go out there."

Jun went out to the arena and this one was on a muddy track, along with several rings, climbing frames and more. Three complete laps of the obstacle course needed to be completed before anyone else, and the Penswi were allowed to get a little rough with each other on this one.

But if one was fast enough, they would run ahead of all the other contestants while the others fought. This is what had happened in the past, which would allow Stark to win by a wide margin.

"Hey, Stark!" Jun called out. "You saw our teammates, right? There's a reason why our team decided to add them, they're not just for decoration."

Stark glanced over at Jun while continuing to do a few stretches.

"Hey, I'm serious. I've seen these two, and both of them would definitely be able to beat you, but you see, if I lose in this contest, don't you think it would be boring?" Jun claimed. "Even if you lose to those two aliens, in the end your team will still win. There won't be that excitement."

"So let me propose something, why don't you lose this game, and have a more interesting time against the other two. Think about it, maybe you will have that thrill in you again, thinking that the whole event is on the line in the last couple of games."

Stark didn't reply, which made Jun slightly unsure whether or not Stark would fall for the bait, but all he could do now was wait for the game to start and see what happened.

*BANG

A loud noise went off, and everyone could suddenly see the backside of Stark, who had run right past them once again, with them all trying to catch up. For Jun, he didn't focus on pulling the others down or fighting, but just ran ahead as well.

He continued through the obstacle course going ahead, and Jun was doing quite well. He was in second place for the event, but the problem was he could no longer see Stark.

'Has he already completed three laps, no that can't be the case otherwise an announcement would have been made?' Jun thought.

As he came to the finish line, Jun knew why no announcement had been made, because he could see Stark standing there waiting, yet to cross the finish line.

"Okay, I'll take a bite. Let's see what these aliens have, and see if they can really beat me." Stark said with a smile, as he looked at Jun crossing the finish line.

Chapter 2147.2: Who's the fastest (Part 2)

There was a first time for everything, and it was the first time the Penswi had seen Stark lose an event. The thing was, there wasn't an unsatisfied look on his face, instead there was a smile. It wasn't the look that Jun was hoping to see.

It was the same for the audience that were watching everything. The audience were able to hear the conversations that went on between Jun and Spark at the beginning. At times trash talk between contestants would allow them to make things more interesting.

So they had heard the taunts that Jun gave, on top of that, it was clear that Stark had won the event regardless, because he had reached the finish line before the others, yet had refused to go over it.

To all of them it didn't feel like a big loss, and instead the crowd were waiting for something interesting to happen. Even though Stark was a star, a hero to the Penswi, they too had grown bored and tired of the events always ending the same way, they had become predictable.

When returning back to the Dark Reds' room, Jun was greeted with cheers and multiple quick high fives from his teammates that made it sound like clapping.

"Jun... I hate to say it, but you're a genius!" The coach exclaimed, as he ran over and lifted Jun into the air.

"Hey, hey my work has only just begun and besides, we don't even know if it's really going to work." Jun said, as he was being placed back on the ground. "The last two events, they need to be something that the two of you are good at. Since I won the last game and we have done fairly well, for the Dark Reds to win you need to come second and first in an event each."

It was good news that they didn't need to beat Stark twice, but it still meant that they would have to perform extremely well over the other contestants in a game they weren't particularly good at.

All they could do was wait, and eventually they got their answer as to what the next event was.

"Is that the button game!" Russ exclaimed, as he stood up.

It was the first game that they had played in the arcade and the one both Quinn and Russ were familiar with, but now there was another question that they needed to answer, who would take part.

"Quinn... I told you before, but the score you got last time, are you confident that you can beat that score, that you can beat him in this event?" The Coach asked.

"I am... but what I'm concerned about is what the next event is going to be." Quinn replied. "Russ is good at this event as well. Even if I did beat him, then what about the one after that."

This was true, and so the question fell on Russ, whether he was confident or not.

"Why are you all looking at me like that?" Russ asked as he stood up. "I will go out for this event, and I know what you are all thinking, you are counting on me to get second place, but I'm telling you all now, I'll be getting first."

With such confident words no one questioned him, and just encouraged him as he went through the hallway out to the arena. Quinn had learned that Russ wasn't a man of empty words, which meant he had to have had some sort of plan.

When heading outside into the arena, it had been set up for the game. There were around fifty different button stations set up, all out for the different teams. In the centre, where most of the cameras seemed to be positioned, was where Stark was set up, and there was a space for the Dark Reds team just by his side.

"Haha." Russ started to chuckle as he approached his station. "It seems like the event people know what's going to be interesting, so why don't I show them something interesting."

Russ first looked to see where the camera was and he made eye contact staring down the middle, before looking at Stark. Oddly, it seemed that even the other contestants were more interested in what would happen between this alien and Stark than concentrating on doing the best themselves.

"When you are directly in front of me, with your own mind, it is a lot easier to get a more accurate representation of you." Russ said.

Stark was obviously left confused by the comment, but who knew how other aliens acted.

"Everyone I have met so far, the strongest person they could think of was you, but I could tell that they have been underestimating you, so let's see how you think of yourself."

At that moment, before the event had even started Russ' body started to change. It was similar to the time he had changed before, but now all of the Penswi were witnessing this, in the arena, in their homes, and the King and Queen.

On top of that, there were subtle changes, Russ' body was forming more accurately, the muscle sizes were identical to what was in front of him and it almost looked like a Penswi twin of Stark was standing side by side, if it wasn't for the fact the face was a bit different.

"The Penswi people, did you see that! Our alien contestant just transformed his whole body into a Penswi!" The announcer stated. "Of course, the only way an alien could ever hope to beat us Penswi when it came to speed was to transform into one of us! No wonder they were confident, but just because they look like us, does that mean they can perform as well as us?"

It was the question on a lot of people's minds, including Stark who turned to focus on his board of buttons, before saying a few words.

"Don't disappoint me." Stark smiled.

The event was ready to start, and usually the screens in the arena that would be focused on multiple contestants, just had Stark and Russ in them.

*BEEP

The event went off, and both Stark as well as Russ were going at it. Their forms were fast and Russ was better at optimising and using his speed, knowing what to go for. He was hitting well and the two of them looked to be neck and neck.

Their points were already relatively past all the others, so they had no fear when it came to Russ at least coming second, but something was becoming quite obvious, it was the fact that Stark was still faster.

"He turned his head." Quinn commented, while watching the match. The others hadn't really seen it. Because it looked like Stark had just turned his head to hit a button but he had done so to see the scoreboard and in that moment, the point difference started to increase.

Just like Quinn back then, Stark was so confident in himself that he was able to look at his opponent and pick up speed.

"Stark! Stark! Stark!" The crowd started to cheer.

It was the closest match they had seen, but they were happier that Stark was proving himself as one of the greatest against an alien. That's when there was only 20 seconds on the timer.

'Now.' Russ thought.

Using his powers, by his side, the ground started to light up, and a figure had popped out from it. Everyone could see, it was purple skinned and looked like another Penswi, but it wasn't just any other Penswi, this one looked like Jun, one of the Dark Reds.

'Quinn didn't know it, but Bliss had been teaching me to absorb nest crystals for a while. She told me about the fight against the celestials and wanted me to increase my power.

'While they were living in the settlement, I didn't just do nothing on Earth. I have more MC cells than you can imagine, and with you giving me the other nest crystals you can find... it won't be long till I am as strong as I was before, but first it's time to win this!'

The Jun that had been summoned started to hit the buttons away and now there were two fast Penswi against one.

Chapter 2148.3: Who's the fastest (Part 3)

Russ' ability was incredibly strong, but from the beginning since he had it, there was always something he struggled with, and that was estimating how many MC cells would be required to use his ability.

When using his powers, it often depended on the other person's mind, how strong the image was of their skills or their powers. The stronger the image of power they had, the stronger Russ was and the more MC cells it would use.

There were times when they thought of themselves as weaker than they actually were, which would put Russ in a difficult position, those that had an accurate representation of themselves and those that overvalued themselves as well.

Because of all these reasons, even if Russ had seen the power in question and the level of strength they had, it was still hard for him to guess just how many MC cells would be used, especially if they were hiding a big part of their strength.

At the moment, not only was Russ completely transformed as Stark, he was now summoning another person from his mind, Jun. When going against Quinn it was possible for him to do things like this such as summoning the large dragon, but back then he had external help which he no longer had, which was why he needed to be careful.

It was also the reason why he had pulled out this second trump card, only during the last 20 seconds.

"Is this cheating... did the Dark Red's just teleport Jun to help him out."

"Yeah, that would be considered cheating right? Even if he has the power to teleport people, if they are using another person on that team that would be cheating!"

The people who were watching were starting to complain, but soon on the screen an image appeared and there was subtitle underneath.

[This is the live feed of the Dark Reds team]

It showed that the Dark Reds were all still there, intently watching the screen and were just as shocked about what was happening as them. Now, they really didn't understand what exactly was Russ' power.

'If I take part in things, I don't take part in them with the intention of losing!' Russ thought, as he concentrated on pressing all the buttons on one side. At the same time, his helper, Jun, was touching buttons on the other side.

The points were catching up, and eventually they had surpassed the score of Stark.

Watching it, the Dark Reds team were cheering Russ on.

"That alien, he never did this during the training!" The coach shouted. "He's as sly as Jun with his tricks."

"I knew there was a reason why I liked him." Jun stated, rubbing his nose, proud that his plan was working and bringing these two onto the team.

While watching the screen, the timer went down to the last 10 seconds, and that's when Quinn noticed it again.

'Russ you did well... but I don't think you're going to win this one.' Quinn thought. While they were hitting the buttons Quinn noticed that Stark looked at the scoreboard once again, and it almost boosted him into another gear.

He was moving faster and faster. There was always something in the back of Quinn's mind. If with the help of all his blood hands he was unable to beat Stark then that meant, the speed that he could move at, would have to be immeasurable and that was exactly what was happening now.

*BEEP

"THE GAME IS OVER!" The announcer shouted.

Immediately Russ stopped, his body turning back to what it was, and the Jun that he created was starting to disappear. The camera made sure to catch this and the Dark Reds' room, so there would be no complaint from the others.

Still, they felt like they would have to explain themselves at some point, and Russ would no doubt have to show his power again. When Russ had finished going back to his normal self, he looked at the scoreboard with a smile that quickly dropped.

"How... What is this? How did I lose?" Russ shouted with anger, fully expecting to win.

The crowd seeing the scores on the big screen erupted with huge cheers. Stark hadn't just beaten Russ, he had done so with a clear victory of a 100 points, and breaking a new record

The King and Queen of the Penswi watching this had a great smile on their face as they clapped.

"This is truly entertaining, just how much can Stark improve!" The King exclaimed.

"He is certainly the hero of our people. Even now, when he is going up against his toughest challenge, he has risen to the occasion. I must remember to thank and

meet these aliens who have been able to improve Stark and show us just what we are capable of." The Queen stated.

It was extremely frustrating for Russ, after expecting a sweeping victory seeing the smiling faces of all the people, and turning his head he could see quite the cocky smile on Stark as well.

Now he was understanding how Jun felt, Russ wanted Stark to have this feeling right now, and he wanted to witness the face he pulled. In the end, there was nothing else he could do, but head back to his team.

"Hey, don't look so angry, alien! You were amazing!"

"Yeah, where are you from, are all aliens like you, can they turn into us?"

The crowd were encouraging Russ, because they truly cared about those that were fast, even if it wasn't someone of the same race, and it was safe to say that Russ had made quite a few fans.

Either way, Russ wasn't quite in the mood.

"Stupid aliens, just gawking at me like that. At least they know when to appreciate a strong person." Russ mumbled and continued walking forward.

When he arrived back with the rest of the team, the group wanted to say something to him, but Russ just sat down, almost sulking with his arms crossed.

"Its okay." Jun stated. "In the first place, for the Dark Reds to win, we needed to come in second and first place, then our group will have enough points with my first position as well."

What this meant of course was it all rode on Quinn.

"My fellow friend." The coach said with big sparkling eyes. "There is a lot of pressure on you, for someone who is not even from our planet, can you do it?"

Quinn pulled an awkward face. This pressure, this was no pressure at all compared to the number of things he had gone through, and if he lost it wasn't a big deal. He was sure that Russ had done enough to get the attention of the King and Queen.

If they asked for a meeting it was more than likely that they would get it.

"I will try my best, that's all I can do." Quinn answered which didn't exactly give confidence in the others, but he was always like this.

"Hey!" Russ shouted out. "You better win this one. I want to see the face of that guy when he loses, and if you lose, I'll beat your arse!"

It was the first time Quinn had heard Russ speak in such a way, because he was usually quite the calm person.

"Hahah, sure sure. I mean you are always free to try and fight me if you want." Quinn replied. "That would be quite a spectacle for the Penswi to watch as well, don't you think."

"Anyway, just like you, I have no intention of losing." Quinn answered.

While waiting the last event was announced and it was called the king of tag. A game that Quinn didn't really practise but it was because the rules were simple.

Contestants would start at the edge of the ring and from the centre a sticky device would come up. The contestant was to stick that device on a visible part of their body.

There was a 5 minute time limit, and when the game ended, the last one with the device would be declared the winner.

It was time for Stark to face off against Quinn.

Chapter 2149.4: Who's the fastest (Part 4)

The final and last event was to begin, and for the Dark Reds there was a lot on the line. Surprisingly, when Quinn came out, there were quite a lot of cheers for him.

After seeing what the last alien had done, they were anticipating seeing a good display for the final event. Although they all thought that it was clear who the winner would be, and unfortunately back in the Dark Reds' room they also felt like they already knew who the winner was.

"I just hope he tries his best." The coach commented.

"Hey!" Russ said, finally standing up and watching the screen. Are you counting Quinn out, if you are then I would say you are quite the fool."

The coach was taken back by the words, but with what he had seen Quinn do, he couldn't imagine him winning. He had seen Quinn's speed and he doubted that it was faster than Stark's.

Even in this event, if they were allowed to strike their enemy, how would he strike something that he was unable to hit. On top of that, due to how the event worked and unlike the other events, only one team was able to get points, the winner.

"I'm telling you now, if Quinn is willing to do anything to win this, then it's impossible for him to lose." Russ stated.

Once again, those running the event had decided to put the alien, Quinn, alongside their star, Stark, as they expected some interesting side by side work for the event.

There were a lot of different strategies for this game, saving one's energy until the last moment. Then while the leader of the game got tired, they could use all their strength and speed to snatch the item.

Another tactic was not touching the item but protecting it, then there were those that perhaps would decide to work in groups to start with.

However, playing against Stark changed all of that, because once he got the item and stuck it to his body, no one would be able to touch him to get it off.

'The arena is quite large so there is a lot of space to move, but with fifty other people all going for one person, it could cause a few accidents.' Quinn thought as he was thinking to himself.

"It's nice to meet you." Stark said, as he continued to do his stretches and look Quinn up and down. "The last one, your friend, he did really well. It caught me by surprise and excited me quite a bit."

"Friend?" Quinn replied, but thought it was best if he didn't say anything more on that matter. "Ah yes, he did better than I thought he would do as well."

"I hope you don't disappoint me." Stark continued, but I just want to give you a warning. If you do the same as the last person it won't really help you in this event. Having more people on your side is not going to work.

"You see, there are already people forming groups to work against me, but it's all the same. They won't win this event, unless they are able to touch me or are faster than me."

Quinn mostly ignored Stark, as he looked at the timer, there was preparation time for the event. It looked like it was done on purpose so the other groups could talk and team up with each other. For him, he was thinking of the best way to do this.

"Aren't you going to transform into a Penswi, like your friend did? There isn't much time left." Stark asked.

"Ah... I can't do that, that is something that's just special to him." Quinn answered.
"I will just do as you said, win this event with speed."

There was nothing else Stark could say, as the event was about to start, but he believed that talk was cheap, and he would show just what he could do in this event.

'I am a bit disappointed, I was hoping to have someone else push me... so I could reach the next level of speed.' Stark thought.

*BEEP

The sound went off, and nearly everyone went running straight toward the centre, it was a small bright green object that was around the same size as a ball.

Of course, the one who was ahead of everyone and had reached the target first was Stark. He lifted it off the ground and had already stuck it on the centre of his chest.

As soon as this had occurred, the other contestants stopped for a second as they started to think about what was the best thing to do.

"Maybe we should wait."

"But if we all wait it will be useless, Stark is just standing there in the centre right now. So he will have plenty of energy. If no one tires him out, then what's the point?" Another contestant complained.

The problem was, no one wanted to volunteer for attempting to catch Stark to try and tire him out, otherwise it would mean they were giving up their chance at winning this event.

While all the others were bickering with each other, one person walked forward toward Stark but soon stopped.

"I thought you said you were going to win this with speed, but it looked like you didn't even try running to get this back there." Stark said.

"I was a little bit worried." Quinn answered. "You see, I'm trying to figure out how to win this game without hurting anyone, but I think I have my answer."

Quinn moved his hands in a circle, nothing visible had come out of them, there was no vampire aura, there was no shadow either, but almost at the exact time of moving his hands, the other contestants collapsed onto the floor.

Some fell instantly, while others were on their feet for a few seconds, but eventually all of them were on the floor on the outside of the ring.

The King and Queen immediately stood up from their seats as they saw this, as there was great concern as to what was going on.

"They have only passed out!" Quinn shouted, so everyone could hear loud and clear. "They are not harmed, I would never do such a thing on your planet, but I wish to face Stark on my own!"

There were no rules against fighting against an opponent, but there were rules about killing. There seemed to be a device set up on each of the contestants so once it was confirmed they were still alive the King and Queen were a little more settled.

"What did you do?" Stark asked surprised, as he looked left and right, even behind him, everyone had collapsed, but then why hadn't he? If he had collapsed as well, his opponent could have taken the tag and won the game.

"It's one of my powers, it was a guess that you guys don't react too well to Qi." Quinn explained.

He had used the third stage of Qi, but not in a deadly way. The Qi was to go through the body and overload the brain to cause it to pass out like so. Of course, if the other person was adept in Qi this wouldn't work, and in the first place, to do it on a large scale like this, to so many people, one would need a lot of Qi which Quinn had.

In the Dark Red room, the others were a little bit confused as well.

"Why... why did his power not work on Stark, did he avoid it somehow?" Jun asked.

Unlike the others Jun wasn't so surprised to see what Quinn could do, because he had seen the person do even crazier things.

"Because he's a fool." Russ said. "He missed Stark on purpose."

Inside the arena Quinn was ready to give his answer.

"I will win this match with my speed, I want to see how fast you can go. So let's get our legs moving shall we?" Quinn smiled.

Chapter 2150.5: Who's the fastest (Part 5)

There weren't a lot of times where Quinn could just have fun like this. He was already sure that he would get to meet the King and Queen after the event and there he would make his plea.

Win or lose it didn't matter, but there were two things he wanted to see. Just how fast could Stark go, how useful could he be, and of course his younger self side of him.

He wanted to win, and win using just his speed, rather than his powers.

'Let's just try this first.' Quinn thought to himself, as he took a running stance.

Stark was still relaxed but he liked the look on his opponent's face, so he was ready. At that moment, Quinn ran forward, and he didn't hold back, he moved his legs as fast as he could.

All of his stat points and his advanced body zoomed him straight ahead, he reached out as he could see the tag in front of him, but Stark had moved to the side.

'He's fast, really fast, and he hasn't transformed his body into a Penswi like the other one did... how can this be?' Stark was thinking.

He didn't have time to rest either, as Quinn quickly went from his position, and reached out trying to grab the tag. Stark was moving his legs while also leaning his body from side to side.

The crowd was watching as Quinn was running back and forth, left, right, and using his hands in an attempt to grab the tag. On the big screen, once in a while it would show in slow motion Quinn's fingers almost getting the tag but missing.

'I'm not so good at this dodging stuff, and I might be going crazy but I think he's getting closer and closer to grabbing it.'

Stark was confused, because he didn't feel like Quinn was getting faster, yet somehow he was getting closer and closer to getting the tag. What was coming through at the moment was Quinn's fighting experience.

His ability to adapt to the situation and guess what direction the opponent would move in, he was making smaller and smaller movements.

'Alright time for a change of plan!' Stark thought.

Rather than dodging, he was now running around further, and in circles around the arena, but Quinn didn't give up as he gave chase and was a bit behind him.

'When we run like this, it becomes clear as day that he's a lot faster than me.' Quinn thought, as the distance between the two was growing. 'I have a lot of stamina but it looks like Stark does as well. At least that's good to learn, but I guess I have no choice, I can't just do this with my natural speed.'

Stark could easily keep this up for the remainder of the event, and he just had to be careful that he didn't get too far ahead, otherwise Quinn could just turn the other way, which was why once in a while he would turn back to look behind him. While doing so, Quinn was doing something as well.

Before he was just using the natural power of his body nothing else, but there was a way he could move a little faster, and that was with the first stage of Qi. Qi was now being used to enhance his body.

During fights this was something Quinn did naturally all the time. With his body as advanced as it was, a lot of Qi could be used without harming the body. Now it was being focused on just his legs.

He started moving faster, and he was closing the distance between the two of them.

'He got faster... he's not tiring out... was he not going his full speed before?' Stark thought back to when he was just using his body and avoiding getting grabbed. 'No, I could see the look on his face, he was definitely moving as fast as possible, but this doesn't make any sense, unless... did he just have a breakthrough in the middle of our match!'

The crowd that was cheering for Stark, were left speechless and many of them were standing on the edge of their seats, as they could see bit by bit Quinn getting closer, and if Quinn was getting closer to Stark, it meant he was moving faster than him as well.

'How long has it been?' Stark thought. 'I've always been comfortable, so comfortable in these events and for the first time... today, I was a little worried, and now I've experienced the same thing a second time!'

There was a strange glow in Stark's eyes, and just as Quinn was about to grab the back of his shoulder, he had grabbed nothing but the air. Instead of just running in a circle around the arena, Stark was now running in zig zag's from side to side all over the place.

He wasn't going a clear way and was showing his agility and dexterity. He was certainly agile.

'You think I can't keep up!' Quinn inwardly said.

Following him Quin was doing the same thing, once again from the fights he also was very agile. The problem was, not only was Stark now moving in an agile way, he was moving faster.

The two of them were moving at a faster speed, but since Quinn was the chaser, the distance between the two of them wouldn't shorten, this continued and it looked like there was now going to be a clear winner for the event.

"Damn it!" the coach shouted. "We were so close, if he was up against any other Penswi then Quinn wouldn't lose!"

"I think, if he was up against the old Stark, he would have won today as well. I think in this event, he must have had a breakthrough, his speed, the score he achieved before, he's never moved this fast." Jun commented.

It was only natural when in competition with one another that the other person would have to push themselves, and they had never seen Stark do this before.

"Is there any way he can win?" One of the other members asked.

"There is." Russ commented. "But I wonder if Quinn will consider it cheating?"

Looking at the timer, the one minute mark had finally hit, as in there was only one minute left and the event would be over. Seeing this Quinn stopped in his tracks, and seeing that he was no longer chasing him Stark stopped as well.

"Are you giving up already!" Stark shouted out. "It was a good try, you did far better than I thought, and allowed me to improve more so than I ever imagined. So don't be down, no one has ever been able to beat me."

"Can you run faster than this?" Quinn asked.

Stark found it a strange question, why was there the need to ask this.

"I'm doing the best I believe I can do now, but who knows, I guess we will never know how fast I can run without there being someone faster than you."

Looking down at the ground Quinn smiled. If he was just using his Qi and his own body he had lost this speed event. Now that he had accepted that, he wanted to see something else.

Unlike the face of loss the others wanted to witness, Quinn wanted to witness just how far Stark could go.

"I can go faster." Quinn answered. "A lot faster."

Soon Quinn's body started to cover itself in shadows. It looked similar to the shadow body that he would have at times when fighting, although this wasn't the shadow body.

The shadow was a display of his body, but it was there to hide something else. Russ sitting in the game room had figured it out.

"I didn't quite expect this." Russ smiled.

[Nitro Accelerate activated]

From his position, in a flash, Quinn had reached Stark, and grabbed the tag right off his chest. Stark hadn't moved... It was so sudden.

"Now, it's your turn to catch me." Quinn said, with only 20 seconds left on the clock.

Chapter 2151.6: Who's the fastest (Part 6)

Although using one's powers wasn't against the rules, Quinn wasn't so sure about using his armour. At that point, when he had admitted he had already lost, he just wanted to witness how far Stark could go.

So he wouldn't get in trouble with the event, he decided to use his shadow to hide the armour change underneath. It was impossible for one to notice, and it worked like a treat.

With nitro accelerate active for the remainder of the match, Quinn would be going at his top speed. Placing the tag on his chest, it stuck quite easily, and Quinn also used his shadow to hold it in place so Stark could easily see it, but straight after he was already running and it was a blur.

'This speed, there is someone who can really move this fast... in the universe there are those that are faster than the Penswi, no... faster than me!'

"Stark... is he going to lose?"

"He can't, the Penswi are incredibly fast, for 1000's of years aliens have come to visit us, and none have ever been faster than most of our Penswi, let alone Stark."

"I guess, we might not be that great after all."

For the Penswi, those who only cared about speed, this was quite a devastating thing for a lot of them, for a lot of those that considered themselves fans.

"I... I... I can't just give up, I have to catch him!" Stark moved his legs using all his strength, running straight forward, he reached out and grabbed nothing but the air.

This wasn't like Quinn when he had nearly grabbed the tag by his fingertips, Stark couldn't see a figure at all. He turned his head, and quickly continued to move after Quinn.

Regardless, he was unable to catch up, as Quinn moved from one place to another. The second Stark would take a step to go toward him, then he would take a step to try his best to move out of the way.

"Faster... faster... I have to move faster!" Stark shouted, as he bore through the pain he could feel in his legs. It was the first time for him, feeling such pain, but he ignored it as he continued to chase after Quinn.

'As I thought.' Quinn said, as he continued to move out of the way. 'This guy, he really can move faster... even now he's picking up speed as this match goes on. It makes me wonder, if Stark had this armour, if he learned to use beast armour and had something like this, just how fast could he go?

'Would anyone be able to catch up to him? Would anyone even be able to touch him.'

Unfortunately for Stark, even though he was getting faster and faster, there was no longer any time left.

*Beep

"The game has ended..."

The announcer stopped at just those words, because he didn't know what to say, it was the same in the entire arena, all of the Penswi were silent, apart from a few.

In the Dark Reds' team room, the coach's fists were shaking.

"We did it! He did it, everyone did it, we won!" The coach shouted for joy as he jumped.

All of those from the Dark Reds came over and lifted him up in the air as they were cheering, apart from Jun and Russ, because they were more focused on the screen, looking at how everyone else would react to this.

"The winner... the winner... is the alien from the Dark Reds, Quinn Talen!"

Ceril hearing this started to clap and cheer, and so did the Amra bashing his four hands together making thunderous claps. Because of these two, it seemed to knock the Penswi out of their daze.

It wasn't the right time to be upset, they should be happy that they were able to witness such a great event, and not take joy away from the winner. Soon they all started to clap for the winner, Quinn Talen.

As the winner was declared it was time, the camera was deeply focused on Stark, who had his head held down, he had both of his fists clenched.

'I was getting faster and faster. My leg's... they won't stop screaming in pain, but I know if I just had longer, than maybe... maybe I would have caught up to him. Is this how the others felt?'

Inside the Dark Reds' room, both Jun and Russ were pleased with the look on his face, they were smiling like little children and jumping for joy at this, but the face of Stark started to change as he lifted his head.

It soon turned into a smile as he looked at Quinn.

'This means... that there isn't a limit to speed. There is someone faster out there, so it means I have a way to improve myself as well. Legs... it looks like we got a lot more work to do.'

Not many words were exchanged between Stark and Quinn, as they headed back to their rooms with their teams. Quinn was greeted with joy of course but now they had to get ready for something else, which was the closing ceremony of the event.

All of the teams were invited back out, and waved to the crowd outside. Then for the first time ever, they had heard it, a change in the team that had won the championship, it was the Dark Reds.

There were three trophies in total, a Purple colour, which was similar to Earth's gold, a Green, and an orange. Which represented something similar to silver and bronze.

From each team, only one person was able to go up on stage and collect the trophy and of course they selected Quinn to do so. Going on stage wasn't too hard for him, but he had to do so next to Stark.

Finally, the King and Queen of the Penswi had come out, and they were the ones that needed to award the Winners their rewards. Each time they handed an award over, the name was broadcasted and the Penswi people cheered.

Finally, it was time for the purple trophy, the Queen went and handed it directly over to the King.

"It is an honour to have an alien as fast as you, to bless our planet with your speed." The King said, handing over the trophy. Quinn accepted and bowed down.

"If there is anything that you need from us, then please don't hesitate to ask." The King stated.

Quinn took this opportunity without hesitation.

"Then if possible, could I ask for a meeting with you... it is an urgent matter, regarding your people." Quinn asked politely.

Usually, the King and Queen would reject such a thing. Unless that alien himself was an important figure from another planet, why would they care what he had to say, but they saw him in a different light after seeing this event, and they decided to accept his request.

"I would like Stark to be in the meeting as well if possible."

The King had agreed and since they were all currently present, the meeting was to be done in the venue itself there and then. There were still ending shows for the closing ceremony so the Penswi remained in the arena.

Meanwhile, the Dark Reds, Jun, the coach, everyone on the team including Russ, Quinn, and Stark were in the private viewing booth.

It was a large glass room that allowed one to see the whole arena and down at the event. Inside, there were also multiple guards which did have some type of armour on.

It was clear that they were a bit different, even compared to the pro team.

"Why... have we been called here?" The Coach whispered confused.

"It was a request of Quinn, apparently he has something to say to all of us." Jun replied back.

The King and Queen sat in their seats, two large oval-like red chairs that spun around. They now weren't facing the arena, and instead were facing the guests that were inside.

"You said that there is an important matter that the Penswi must be aware of, well, please speak." The King asked.

Quinn took a step forward ahead of the others but stopped there before he spoke.

"I am someone from a planet called Earth." Quinn claimed. "Currently, the ones that are in charge of Earth are going through the Universe destroying planet after planet. Capturing races, and forcing them to do their bidding."

"Soon, they will be here as well, and will do the same to the people of the Penswi. I have come here not just to warn you, but because... I wish to fight with you against them to help your planet."

The sudden words from Quinn had put great shock in the King and Queen, and it was incredibly hard to digest so suddenly but he needed to get to the point, wasting time wasn't an option.

"Are you saying, the people who come from the same planet as yourself are trying to attack us? But why would they do such a thing?"

"I... don't know, but I promise you they will come, and not just here but to multiple planets with different races. I want to stop them, but I'm not strong enough on my own, which is why I need your help." Quinn claimed.

"That's absurd." The Queen complained. "Of course you can't stop them by yourself, you are just one person. Since you are here, I guess you ran away, but

what were you expecting, are you planning to try to use our army, our people as your own, to fight in your own fight."

"I agree with my wife." The King said. "The Penswi are strong, even if there was someone who would come to attack us, we can defend ourselves. I can't believe you would suggest such an absurd thing."

There was silence in the room, and Russ was wondering what Quinn would do now. It was always going to be a hard ask, so was he just going to give up?

"You are strong enough to defend yourselves. That's where you're wrong." Quinn moved his hands and as he did, he had done the same thing as before, the twelve or so guards that were in the room fainted on the spot, falling to the ground.

Not only that, Quinn no longer suppressed his energy as he unleashed his power, the red aura surrounding him. The King and Queen were unable to move from their seats, and the others had fallen to the ground, just able to move their heads as they looked up.

"This... what is this power!" Stark said.

Continuing to walk, Quinn was suppressing his power a bit more as he approached the King and Queen who were covered in sweat. They didn't dare move in front of this figure. It was then, Quinn spun both of their chairs around so they could see outside.

Out of the window, there were thousands of blood swords in the air, pointing toward all of those in the arena, ready to descend on them at any point and time.

"This is only a part of my power." Quinn stated. "If you are unable to beat me, then you have no chance of beating them."

Chapter 2152.1: Lets return (Part 1)

Inside the arena, the Penswi people were in a panic. They had no clue what was going on in the viewing room, or what was taking place. All they could see was that in one moment there were these swords made out of a strange power that started to form, and then the next second they started to drop down.

It almost looked as if they were raining down, but they soon stopped right in front of them, just an inch away from their faces. As one person attempted to move, the sword followed them, and moved slightly closer, when they stayed still for a while, the sword eventually moved back.

It was clearly telling them not to move from their position, so all of the Penswi remained still, as they talked to those by their side.

"What is this, are we under attack!"

"Don't move, maybe it's not best to speak, it's as if these swords are following us!"

"But, if they wanted to kill us, whatever this is, wouldn't the sword have attacked us by now."

"Then the answer is obvious, whoever is behind this attack, they don't want us to move, and they aren't trying to kill us, which means, we're being used as hostages right now."

The Penswi had come to this conclusion, and in order not to panic those that weren't in the arena, the broadcast had quickly been cut off, but there was still this uneasy feeling, because just moments ago, moments before the swords were in the air, all of them felt this great energy that shook their bodies.

Inside the viewing room, it had become quite clear to the King and Queen as well, at any moment this person could kill all of those in the arena. The two of them gulped and were too afraid to even speak.

"Quinn!" Jun shouted. "What are you doing, how could you do this, after we respected you. We never did anything to harm you so why are you doing this!"

While everyone else was frightened, Jun was the one that was strong enough to speak. Although he was a trickster and knew to some extent the strength of Quinn, in all the time he spent with him, he never felt like he was a bad person. So why was he doing this, seeing this sight, his own race being hurt, it made him feel betrayed.

"That's just how desperate the situation is!" Quinn shouted. "Do you think anything I said before, do you think I want any of that to be true? I have a family as well that I want to protect, and this is the best option for us all.

"I know it's hard to convince you, which is why I needed to show you all. Actions speak a lot louder than words especially in this situation. Right now, what I have shown you is a part of my power. With my strength I could quite confidently say I could kill every single being on this planet. Despite the power I have, I would still lose against the enemy."

His words were sincere, a lot of those in the room could tell by the tone of his voice, and at that moment, as quick as the blood swords appeared, he made them disappear. It was never his intention to use the others as hostages.

"What he says is true." Russ added, thinking it was the right time to speak. "The reason is complicated as to why we have decided to go against your own, but the facts are the facts. They will come, and all of you will die."

After being threatened with such power, the words of death were fresh in their mind and extremely powerful.

"My King, My Queen." An unexpected voice had joined in the conversation, and the one that walked forward was none other than the Penswi hero Stark. "These beings, they didn't attack us from the beginning. Even though they have this power, not once did they use it.

"We just saw what he could do, and if he was to use that power in the event, he could have easily won the whole thing. The fact was he didn't. Quinn had competed in the events in our way using speed. I believe he had done so as a sign of respect. For him to do this much to go this far... I say I believe him, and we should listen to what he has to say."

The Queen and King both looked at each other still with concerned looks on their faces, but as the leaders of an entire race, they had to say and do something in this situation and not just be frightened by everything that was happening and that they were hearing.

"Stark is able to see clearer than we were." The King replied. "The best thing to do is believe you, it would be the best option for us regardless, but I still have an issue. You say, these attackers are even stronger than you, if that's the case, what can we even do to help you, what use are we?"

"The enemy, they have an army of strong forces. They are large in number and great in strength but you won't be fighting on your own. As I said before, they are not only coming for your race, and your planet, but others as well.

"Across planets, I plan to form an alliance of races that are to go against them. You won't be fighting on your own. On top of that, the enemy has holes and targets that we can strike..."

Quinn stopped there because he didn't want to say anything anymore. To be honest, in his head he had formed a plan of sorts, the best thing to do. To gather an alliance that would fight against the invasions from Jim and Jack.

While that was taking place, he would do his best to free Sil. This was the hole he was talking about, but when put like this, the other races that would be risking their lives, they were simply a distraction.

Usually Quinn would never do something like this, but it was the best way. If they didn't stop Jim and Jack, then all of the races would be annihilated.

"Stark, I asked you to come here, because I think you would be a great help as well. I want you to travel with me and be our point of contact with the Penswi. I know Stark is greatly respected, so I believe he can help convince your people."

In a lot of ways, Stark had more influence than the King and Queen. If they brought up such things, the matter would feel more politically motivated.

"Of course, I won't force you to come, but if you did, then I would help you grow. In particular, your speed is impressive and if you came with me, I could make you even faster... the fastest being that can't be touched." Quinn said.

Stark blinked a few times...

"Is what you're saying true?"

Chapter 2153.2: Lets return (Part 2)

There was no need for Quinn to go on and explain to Stark what he meant by making him faster; he was already intrigued. He remembered the last event and thought something was strange, to get a sudden boost like that.

Whatever the reason was, Stark knew that if he wished to improve, then this was the person that he needed to follow, and the look on his face already told Quinn he was convinced.

After a while, the King and Queen talked it out between each other, and they seemed to agree. They would only send in their very best to the war, and not force the public into a draft, but they were clear that they were taking the threat seriously.

While Quinn was away, these people would be trained and told what they were to face. In the meantime, Stark would get ready to leave the planet, so he was to head back and inform whoever he needed to inform. Then a communication device would be given to him so that the Penswi could communicate with Stark and Quinn.

Because there was still something Quinn didn't know and that was where the battle would take place. So far, the Mermerials and Penswi were the two planets that had agreed to join the war, but where would Jim or Jack strike first, once they knew this, then word needed to be sent out to the other planets.

The group agreed they would meet Stark in front of the Dark Reds' building in the evening, this was fine with Quinn because in the meantime there was somewhere else he wanted to go.

'Ceril is in the audience and was with that Amra, I hope the two of them are still together. If they are, it would be great to ask the Amra about how they are doing, or even get coordinates to the planet.

'The Amra were strong and it would be great to convince them to join the fight as well.' Quinn thought.

Outside of the viewing deck used by the Royal family, it was time for the Dark Reds, Quinn, and Russ to say her goodbye to each other.

"You know, when I first saw you Quinn, I really thought, this person is going to be someone that shocks the Penswi race and changes us." Jun said. "The thing was I didn't realise how right I really was, and you shocked us more than once."

Quinn smiled awkwardly as he knew what he meant by this.

"It was a pleasure being with you, thank you for helping us Penswi, thank you for helping me with my wish. We will see each other again, when you need us."

All the others in the Dark Reds said words of encouragement to Quinn as well, but not just him but to Russ, inviting him to come back any time and play a few games.

Then finally, the coach, the older Penswi, walked up to Quinn and looked him in the eye, before saying a few words.

"Usually it would be my duty to get rid of someone like you." The Coach suddenly said. "It seems that you are no longer what you once were. Although, I doubt I could ever beat you in a fight.

"I don't know why you have chosen to save these people, to save my people, but because you have, I will always see you in a good light, and will keep you a secret BB."

The coach left with these words, and turned around, while the Dark Red team members thought the old man was going a bit crazy, but Quinn knew now what the old man was talking about with those final words.

'There is only one group of people that know me by that name. I guess they're not all bad.' Quinn thought.

Leaving the arena, it wasn't hard to find Ceril as she was waiting for them where they had split up. A lot of the Penswi had also gone home as there was an announcement made by the King.

A lot of them were frightened after what happened, and they needed to come up with a good excuse as to not scare them. What surprised Quinn was that Ceril was standing with the Amra.

The two of them seemed to have a bright smile on their faces as they engaged in conversation.

As soon as he saw Quinn and Russ, the Amra ran over immediately.

"Great warrior Quinn!" The Amra said, as he bowed down a few times. "I have just been listening to your friend here, and I didn't realise it before, it is a great pleasure to meet you all the way out here."

"Oh great, another fan!" Russ commented. "Just what has this guy done to get all of this? Did he save another planet or something?"

After a few back and forth introductions went on, Quinn eventually went on to ask about the Amra planet itself. Unfortunately, the Amra hadn't been back in a while. When he last left it was still going well and being led by Geo.

Since that was the case, and with no next destination Quinn thought it was best that he head to the Amra planet. The coordinates and information was given and now the group would have no problem getting there at all.

'I wonder how much has changed on the planet, but I also need to see if they know anything about the Blades as well. Since Logan told me to find the Blades, and Bliss sent me here I thought there was a good chance that they would be on this planet, but that doesn't seem to be the case. The only thing I can do is try and continue to get whatever leads I can.'

It was late evening and the group had headed back to the Dark Reds' building, Stark was ready with an extremely small bag. It seemed like the Penswi liked to travel light. Other than clothes, they didn't really have any more belongings.

"Quinn... Thank you again for asking me to travel with you. I look forward to learning from you." Stark said.

"I do as well, and I have one piece of advice for you, if it ever looks like we are in trouble, just run and get out of there." Quinn said, as they headed back to their ship.

Stark was asking the others a few questions as he wished to know the deeper reason as to why the others were going against their own planet. Russ and Wince tried their best to explain.

While Quinn was setting up the coordinates on the ship, he noticed something... to get to the Amra planet, they would have to go back past the Mermerial planet anyway.

"Before we head to the next place, let's make a quick stop. I miss my family." Quinn said with the sweetest smile the others had seen him pull...

Chapter 2154: A Changed group

The Blades had been on the Amra planet for a while now. They had practically made it their second home and needed to learn a lot of things to make their life more comfortable there.

The first thing that they all had learned that had come as quite a shock to them all, was the fact that they knew the person named Quinn Talen. All of the Blades, due to how far away they were, weren't affected by the memory change.

So they all remembered everything he had done, and his face well. It was obvious upon seeing the giant statue that the Quinn Talen that the Amra knew and the Quinn Talen that they knew, was the same person.

The only thing was, they were struggling to know how that came to be. Luckily they had plenty of time to find out, and Geo was happy to tell them. They learned that Geo wasn't the only leader of the place.

There was a figure called Nock and Dober. These three were the three Amra who had helped Quinn defeat their old god. Although life wasn't bad for the Amra in the past, they did feel like it was an improvement, and the tale of what Quinn had done had been passed on.

Quite easily the race had accepted Quinn as their new god. It was crazy to hear the tale from all of them, until they realised who exactly it was that was behind the whole thing. This was a person that continued to do amazing things throughout.

Because of Quinn though, the Blades being humans were treated very nicely during their time there. They saw these beings as those that had the same figure as god and felt like they had to be special.

Even though Geo knew more of the truth, since Quinn had explained it to them, the faith was strong so the image of what the Amra believed in before was also kept up.

"You all really seem to be doing a good job now, and none of you look to be in pain." Geo said with a smile, as he looked at all of the Blades.

They were living in a separate area, quite close to where Geo and the other council people worked. As Geo wanted to keep an eye on them, and help them out as easily as possible.

Of course, the Amra with their strength and friendliness were happy to help them build their homes and had done so quickly, but there was a reason for Geo's comment.

"It took us a while but, we've managed to get used to the planet's gravity." Shiro claimed, as he looked back and could see some of the Blades were even training with weapons.

During their time here, Geo had also asked Dober along with the forgers to create the group some armour and weapons. They were extremely skilled and were able to create unique designs of armour and weapons that humans had not made before.

When testing them, Shiro was surprised, as the quality was beyond what they could create, the only problem was it was also slightly heavier, which was why the Blades were training and wearing them every day.

Shiro was clenching his fist as he thought of this, and he could feel the power of Qi, moving through his body and into his fist. When they first arrived the gravity change was tough on them.

They would tire out using their muscles for around an hour, but naturally finding a way to move easier made them use their Qi. Those that weren't good at using Qi, their bodies forced themselves to and they all grew in strength.

Now wearing the heavy beast armour, it was the same, they were growing the natural power of their body, all the Qi inside them to use it all to their full potential.

'All of this... it might be a blessing in disguise for us.' Shiro thought. 'We weren't strong enough to help Sil, and we aren't strong enough to try and help him now. If we went there, we would just get beat again... but maybe Sil sent us here for a reason.'

'Maybe he didn't send us to a random planet.'

Shiro believed this more because in the tale that Geo had told them, there was also the mention of another human that was by Quinn's side that had helped him. Based on the description, Shiro could only assume it was Sil, and Vorden and Raten were adamant that it was him.

It made sense, if Sil wanted to send them somewhere safe, then he would have had to have sent them to a planet that he had been on before.

"How is the situation looking, that I asked you about before?" Shiro asked.

"Dober is looking into it, the Universe is grand, and I really don't have a clue how far we are away from your home. At the same time, we have to be cautious, not everyone is friendly the first time they see a race that they have never met before." Geo joked. "Still, we will try our best to continue looking."

"As I suggested you should stay here for the time being, until we find out where Earth exactly is. We can protect you from whatever will come your way."

Shiro smiled and nodded, he didn't want to say anything. During their time here they had seen the Amra's strength, they certainly were naturally on the same level as the Dalki, but Dalki with abilities would be tough for most of them to deal with.

On top of that, it didn't feel right to drag others into business of their own, so for now they would deal with this themselves, and Shiro knew a way to get even stronger.

Geo turned around as he looked like he was ready to head off, he did this by bending his knees getting ready to jump. It was a strange sight to see at first but when the Amra wanted to travel great distances in a short time, they tended to just jump there.

"About the tower... I have heard a lot of things about it, can we enter the tower?" Shiro asked.

Geo was quite surprised by the question, because he hadn't told the others anything about the tower. Originally, the tower that was left on the current planet was left still standing, even after the defeat of Athos.

However, with the Amra and the rest of the others' help they had relocated the tower to a different place. The tower was ingrained in a lot of the Amra's minds, but it had changed significantly.

Just like before, it was a way for one proving their strength, attempting to reach the higher floors, one would grow in terms of an Amra themselves, gaining a stronger layer of their body and reaching new heights, but there would be no difference in privileges gained just because one was stronger.

However, if they did join a fighting force as such it was noted what floor they had managed to achieve. Still, the Tower now had just become a way of people testing themselves rather than a place to move onto from the planet they were on.

"What is your reason for wanting to enter the tower?" Geo asked.

"All of us, we have to get stronger." Shiro answered. "I heard, after a certain amount of floors, the Amra come back completely different, I've seen them walking around and even you yourself, are completely different compared to the others."

"I know, just entering the tower might not make a huge difference to us because we are humans, but we have all already started to experience changes just being on this planet. If we enter the tower, I believe all of us can continue to evolve."

Geo liked their spirit, and he knew they had a clear goal, and reason for it. The only thing that was holding him back, was if something happened to these people, because he felt like if he ever did meet with Quinn and they were hurt, he would be partly to blame.

"I guess I can't stop you, everyone is able to enter the tower as they wish, but I can help you. I can't wait to see how much you will have improved and how far you can go." Geo smiled. "I hope Quinn does see you someday, and when he does, that you will be unrecognisable to him."

Chapter 2155.1: Time Freeze (Part 1)

"I think I somewhat understand now." Stark said, as he had been listening intently to Russ explaining the situation so far. "Still, it is all certainly strange, for you to have so many different races sharing one planet. I wonder how that came to be."

Russ only knew what he knew and not the entirety of it. Although there was a lot of information in the Quinn museum and such, there wasn't a direct log of the Dalki creation and so on.

On top of that, just why was there bad blood between Quinn, Jim and Jack. This was a mystery even to Russ.

"There's a lot that I don't know, but you just have to know the situation is quite complicated. I was told bits and pieces from Quinn's wife here and there, but I wasn't too interested in following the story too much."

Ceril was also listening in to the troubles the planet had faced. She could replace the memories of Jim in her head with Quinn, so understood what he had done back then, and understood the matter with the celestials at the time, but nothing to do with these two individuals.

It made her wonder, just how much had Quinn been through. The person didn't seem to catch a break even now, and understood why he and his family had gone into hiding for a while.

"And I'm sorry to hear how your planet is treating you after everything he has done for them. You talked about Quinn's wife and family, are they just as fast as him?" Stark asked, as he now knew that Russ, as well as Ceril were both different races from Quinn.

"They are vampires. Well, a type of vampire." Quinn answered. "Vampires naturally have greater speed than humans. They are faster than the norm but when compared to me, you have to realise that I am an exception."

While they were talking, Quinn decided to do something else, something that he had been meaning to tell Stark for a while. Since they were in space and already heading back to the Mermerial planet, he thought there was no chance for him to now reject the idea of wanting to return to his home planet, because Quinn was going to reveal the secret of just how he was able to win the match.

The shadow surrounded his body, and soon he had changed into one of his most treasured armours, one that would always get him out of a pinch.

"This is how I was able to beat you in the last event." Quinn explained. "What I am wearing is beast armour, but not just any beast armour this is a special set that is able to increase the user's speed for a limited amount of time."

Quinn paused there as he was waiting for a response from Stark. He was wondering if the fact that he cheated would make his opinion of Quinn change a bit.

"There are things that can do that, items that can increase your speed, by so much!" Stark excitedly said with almost stars in his eyes. "The Penswi people, if they had something like this, just think how much faster we could get our work done!"

Thinking about it, Quinn didn't see any of the Penswi apart from those protecting the Royal family in any type of armour. Maybe there was a problem with forging it or what not. It would be handy if at some point Quinn could gather all of the allies to share their information.

It would not only benefit the group, but the lives of each race as well.

"I'm happy to hear that your not so against the idea of using armour." Quinn said. "As we said before, this fight, this battle is going to be with our lives on the line. If that's the case, then the best thing to do would be to make sure you are able to use your strength to the best of your ability and in your case, it's speed."

"I plan to try and get an armour similar to mine for you as soon as possible if that fails..."

Quinn stopped there. In his head, he had debated about giving the fang set to Penswi himself, with its active skill he could only imagine how fast he could go. The only thing was, he wouldn't be able to use the celestial benefits of the armour, and since the armour was quite a personal item, he was second guessing himself.

'I guess, it can always be an item that is lent out, if it's more important, but the armour is still very useful for myself. Unless I can find something more suitable for me, it's best to just find something that Stark can use.'

There was a time when Quinn believed that the Fang set was possibly the best armour out there for him, and one of the best sets in the universe, but the image of Ray's armour kept appearing in his head.

It gave the user incredible strength capabilities, and Quinn had a feeling that he hadn't seen everything it could do. One other way of improving himself, was possible getting an armour set that could match up against Ray's, but he doubted that he could or would have the time for that.

"I understand, as I said, I am happy for you to teach me your ways, as long as thier is a way to improve my speed, I will do as you ask." Stark answered.

While everyone was still talking to each other, Quinn wanted to make a request as he turned his head to look at Russ.

"You absorbed that nest crystal and at the event you managed to summon a copy of Jun as well, it means you must have a lot of MC cells now right?" Quinn asked. He was suggesting that Russ had more MC cells than he first thought.

"Yeah... what is it?" Russ replied, a little bit worried just what type of ulterior motive Quinn had, as to why he was getting him stronger.

"I want you to see if you can summon something, or perhaps change into something." Quinn asked. "I don't want you to actually summon it, but just look in my mind and see if you're able to find it."

Quinn didn't know if this would work, because he had no memories of when he transformed, but when turning into the bloodsucker for the first time he wasn't conscious of it either. Although he did remember the memories later.

He felt like it was impossible to completely forget about what had occurred, it had to be in his head somewhere, and maybe Russ could find it. If so, it would be good for him to train against his own demon form.

"Alright come here, if you let me put my hand on your head, I might be able to more directly look for what you're asking for. I'll just search for whatever the strongest image is in your head, but I don't want you to get your hopes up.

"Even if I find it, then I have to see if I can change into it, even if I can do that, then depending how strong this form of yours is, there is a high chance that I could only keep it up for so long."

With all that said, it was time to get a better idea as to what this demon form could do.

Chapter 2156.2: Time Freeze (part 2)

Russ wasn't lying when he stated physical touch allowed him to look through one's mind easier, another thing he could do was close his own eyes which allowed him to focus and get a better picture.

These weren't requirements of his ability like that of the Blade ability, but did give him a better image, especially when it was something that Russ had not directly seen himself before.

Because right now he had no idea what he was looking for.

'Just searching through Quinn's mind of those that he thinks of as strong is tiring. How many strong individuals does this person even know?' Russ thought.
Eventually the connection was broken off, and Russ was covered in sweat.

"I'm sorry, It's not that I can't summon what you are looking for, but it's incredibly hard for me to find what it is that you want me to find." Russ started to explain.
"The fact that you don't remember what your demon form is like, is making it a little difficult for me to even pinpoint a memory."

"But I will tell you one thing, if it is as strong as some of the others that are in your memory, I still don't have the power yet."

Quinn had set up a deal with the Penswi to hand over the nest crystals that they would find for this exact reason. At the moment the Penswi themselves had no use for the nest crystals and the main concern was going up against the strong ones in the battle.

It wasn't the sheer large numbers, but those like Chris who could practically take out a whole army on their own. He needed Russ to be able to take on someone at that level. If Russ was able to at least summon someone like Chris from his mind for a certain amount of time, then Quinn could be more confident.

"Based on what you're saying, if you were to see the form yourself, then maybe you would be able to search for that image in my mind, and figure out what it could do." Quinn asked.

"It would be much easier." Russ replied. "If I also saw your attacks and so on, I would also be able to emulate them to some degree so it would be much better..." Russ trailed off towards the end of the sentence.

He started to remember what state the practice room was in, and lining up everything Quinn was saying, what he would ask him to do, could very well be very, very dangerous.

"Don't worry, I need you alive." Quinn said. He had a plan, and that involved using Layla and her sword if everything went wrong.

It was the end of discussion for the group and they continued to do their thing with Ceril flying the ship, or at least in charge of the autopilot and looking over it in the meantime, and eventually they could see the Mermerial planet once again.

"Something's strange." Ceril stated.

"What do you mean, the planet looks just as blue as the last time we saw it." Russ replied.

"This is my first time off the Penswi planet, you certainly do have a lot of water." Stark commented.

"I tried to send a message to Wince and the others, about us arriving but there has been no response at all." Ceril explained.

"From the whole planet?" Quinn replied.

"No, there has been response from other cities and places." Wince explained. "You remember last time, an attack force came out to stop us. I wanted to get permission from the Royal place to land in the city centre, but apparently they're not replying."

"Some went to check out the situation to see what is going on, but those that went, they are no longer responding either. It seems that the others don't want to send in more people until they are aware of the situation."

For a second, Quinn's heart thumped louder as he was worried, because his family was in the main city. The good news was that the whole planet didn't seem to be under attack, so at least it didn't seem like Jim or Jack were currently present.

"Just head straight to the city, we will deal with whatever is there." Quinn ordered.

The spaceship was able to enter the atmosphere of the planet with no problem, and now they were cruising along until they reached the city. They had informed the other cities to not send any more people into the city, until they arrived, then finally the city could be seen in sight.

"There's something strange!" Stark said as he rushed to the glass display. "Look at the sea, near that ice city thing. It's not moving."

The others noticed it as well, it wasn't just the sea, but even the clouds that were above the city didn't look to be moving. Then, when the ship had entered the space, it had completely stopped, mid air.

"What's going on!" Quinn asked, but there was no response, it was dead silent on the spaceship.

Not only had the spaceship just frozen mid air, but everyone inside it had frozen as well. Stark was pointing out to the sea, Ceril had a concerned look with her eyebrow both pointed in with her forehead wrinkles, and Russ had an expression that made it seem like he couldn't care less.

'Why... is everyone frozen, and why am I the only one that can move?' Quinn thought. He went toward them, and he could touch each one of them, but even though he could touch them, they still weren't responding.

Suddenly, in his mind, Quinn had thought of a similar situation that had occurred before. Something that had happened in the past.

'This is that celestial power, the one that calls himself the messenger, Mundus!' Quinn realised.

'He must have found out that I escaped from the celestial prison thing... is he here because he was looking for me?' Quinn thought.

It was the only explanation. Quinn didn't know how the celestial's powers worked, but the fact was that he was still able to move. There had to be some type of rule that had been set up that allowed Quinn to move.

'Although this power is not affecting me now, it doesn't mean that it can't affect me at all. If there is a confrontation, then there will be problems.'

Thinking about this, Quinn could only come up with one solution, he didn't know if it would work or not, but he used his shadow that blocked out attacks and other abilities, at least for a while, to cover his whole body.

He also coated himself in the second stage of Qi, just in case that would help at all. At times Qi had an effect of piercing through abilities.

'My family... they have to be safe! They have to be safe!' Quinn thought to himself, still trying to suppress his energy. The second he unleashed it, then Mundus would know that he was here, that was if he didn't know it already.

Quinn tried to use the shadow link skill, he was concerned for his family the most, but his shadow link skill wasn't working, and he was unable to connect to Minny.

'That bastard, what did he do to THEM!' Quinn clenched his fist hard, but took deep breaths to try and calm himself down. 'It might be just because of the ability, that might be the reason why I can't link to them.'

'I have to keep a cool head.'

Thinking this, Quinn got out from the ship standing on top of it, and leapt up far toward the city. He then used his shadow wings to glide himself until he reached the icy flooring.

[Nitro accelerate activated]

Running through the city, Quinn couldn't hold back, the guns were held in his hands, and he quickly went through the city, until he had finally found his family, and the person he was looking for.

"Oh... that didn't take as long as I thought it would... it's a pleasure to meet you again." Mundus smiled.

Chapter 2157.3: Time Freeze (part 3)

Quinn had always thought about the possibility of the celestials finding out that he had escaped. It was the main reason why he didn't go around displaying his power everywhere, because he wanted to keep it hidden as long as possible.

When last seeing Mundus, he seemed so confident in the prison, the place that was meant to keep celestials in. Because of that confidence, as long as it wasn't leaked that Quinn was out there, he thought it would be a while until the others found out, yet it had happened a lot sooner than he thought.

Arriving at the situation, Quinn found himself in an ice sculpture garden. Just like everywhere else, everything seemed to be frozen in time. There was no movement, yet there were people everywhere.

'Why... Why and how did they find out so soon? Was it when I fought on the Namrik planet, or was it Bliss maybe, or something else altogether?' Quinn thought.

At first, the attention of Mundus had caught his eye, because he was in the centre of everything and just like Quinn he could move, but his tunnel vision was starting to widen as he took in the scenery that was all around him.

Yongbu, in the distance bowing down, was still, Wince seemed to be turning away as if she was trying to escape, and then there was his family.

Minny was still in a crouched stance ready to fight, but the look on her face made it seem like she was tired, then there was Layla, who was passed out on the floor, the sword by her side and blood next to her.

In that instant, the energy was released from Quinn just like it was on the Namrik planet. Blood aura was swirling all over the place and his eyes glowing red. Because there was one more concern for him, where was Galen? In the field of ice he was nowhere to be seen, and he doubted that Layla would have strayed far from him.

"IF YOU WERE AFTER ME, THEN WHY DID YOU HURT THEM!!" Quinn screamed at the top of his lungs.

The blood aura swirled out of his body, making waves of energy but they soon stopped a metre away from him.

"Calm down, before you hurt your own family!" Mundus shouted back. "Do you really think your wife is dead just from that little bit of blood?"

When one's blood was boiling, and based on the situation, it always seemed like one would just say what they wished to get out of the situation. Which was why

Quinn wasn't going to be so quick to believe his words, especially based on the way she was on the floor like so.

Lifting his hand, Quinn was ready to fire a bullet.

'He can stop time, so I'm not sure this is going to work, but a shadow bullet or the Godslayer bullet should do some damage.'

When Quinn was aiming carefully, a shadow portal had appeared, but it wasn't one using his own powers, and Galen had popped out of it appearing in the middle of the two, and just like Quinn he was also covered in shadows.

"Oh, so that's where the little one went, that is certainly interesting." Mundus said to himself.

Seeing Galen, Quinn started to calm down, and rushed over to him before anything else could happen, grabbing him and holding him close to his chest with one arm. That's when he realised the shadow that was covering his body, the shadow portal that had been opened, it really wasn't his shadow.

'How can this be... how does Galen know how to use the Shadow ability. I didn't teach him. Was it Minny, in secret, or did Galen just learn by himself from watching?' Quinn thought.

Now, things were starting to make sense, how Galen was able to escape from the shadow space when Quinn put him in, it was because he already had the ability of the shadow.

'The kid can't even talk, but he knows how to use the shadow powers and to this extent as well.' Quinn couldn't help but chuckle.

Seeing Galen in front of him had calmed down his rage, and he felt like he had to otherwise it would harm his son, but that's when he realised something else as well. The blood aura that came out from his body that had been stopped before, it had done so before it reached Minny and Layla.

'Wait... what Mundus said before, did he stop the blood aura, so they wouldn't get hurt by it... but why would he do that?' Quinn thought.

"It seems you are coming to your senses." Mundus smiled. "Your whole family seems to take after you, they were a tad rash in their actions. I was never planning to harm them, but just keep a close eye on them until you returned."

"Since they wouldn't listen, I had to resort to this, freezing them in place here, and this has been a very tiring experience for me."

There were two reasons for the original hostility though, one of them being the fact that Yongbu had threatened them with violence, so when another being like him had appeared it was only right for them to believe that they would do the same.

Then, there was the fact that Mundus had taken a large interest in Galen. Heading toward her son and a mother's instinct had kicked for Layla.

Since Mundus wanted to make things more comfortable for himself, he swiped his foot on the ground and seemingly out of thin air, a seat that looked like a throne apparead from beneath him.

It was large, around three times the height of Mundus himself and made out of a strange black dark substance. It was similar to Quinn's shadows, only it was black instead of the purple hue.

"At first I thought that this would be a simple talk between the two of us, but it seems there is a lot that we need to go through together. I was wondering how you managed to escape from that space.

"I thought I had gone mad, but now I can tell because there isn't a hint of celestial energy that is coming off from your body. Now, it's not like us celestials can just suddenly stop being a celestial, we were chosen for this role after all, and judging by your strength I can assume only one thing.

"You are now a god slayer."

Judging by the fact that celestials and god slayers were natural enemies, this had kicked in Quinn to be more on the defensive once again.

"Don't be so defensive, as I said I'm just here to talk." Mundus' eyes started to wander away from Quinn's and slightly downward to what he was carrying. "What came as the biggest surprise to me though, is your son. Do you even know what he is?"

Chapter 2158.4: Time Freeze (Part 4)

Before Quinn had arrived, and just after his short battle with Minny, Mundus had a great interest in a particular person on the field. Out of all of those there, his interest was in small Galen.

At times, during the fight, Mundus could feel a familiar energy. At first he thought that energy was coming from Wince. She was a dedicated follower and had similar celestial energy to Quinn due to where she had received her celestial energy from in the first place.

Soon though, he noticed that the energy was somewhat different, it was stronger than that of a dedicated follower, it felt more pure, like one's own, but at the same time it didn't seem like it was one from a celestial either.

Which was why Mundus wanted to investigate a little further, to see whether or not his predictions were true. To do this, he needed Galen to act out just a little more, so he decided to allow him to move in the Time Freeze.

Mundus was about a metre away from the little vampire and as soon as the Time Freeze had stopped, he was ready to perform a fake attack to see how the child would defend himself or how much celestial energy he could take.

However, there was no need, almost immediately Mundus could feel it and his suspicions were confirmed, what he didn't expect though was for little Galen to act straight away. A shadow portal had appeared, and the child had disappeared.

'Was I just tricked, by a child?' Mundus thought.

In the end, he decided to wait, he was going to wait for Quinn to come back either way, but he also believed that the child couldn't have just travelled away. It was unlikely to be the case. In the end, a child was a child and they didn't wish to be so far away from their family.

That was when Quinn had finally arrived a few hours later, and Galen had reappeared and the situation back to what it was.

"Do you even know what he is?" Mundus asked.

Quinn raised an eyebrow at the question. Was Mundus just trying to confuse him? His son was his son, he was a vampire born from him and Layla. Of course he knew what he was. His progression at various things seemed a little fast at times, but he was a vampire, they were meant to learn faster than humans.

The problem was Quinn didn't actually have anything to base his fast growth on, other than Minny, but she was far older than Galen.

"Why are you interested in my son?" Quinn asked. "I thought it was me you wanted?"

Mundus shook his head.

"I guess you being a parent has blinded your senses a little. What you are holding in your hands is no ordinary boy. He is one of us. Or I should correct myself, he is like me."

The sentence gave Quinn the realisation that he needed. If Mundus was saying that his son was like him, it was clear that he wasn't some ugly looking demon, it meant that he too was a celestial.

'Can that be?' Quinn thought. 'When... When Layla was pregnant, I was a celestial at the time. Is that the reason why? When celestials have kids do they become celestials as well. Is that how it works? I don't even know how it works.'

Since Mundus seemed to be giving Quinn quite a bit of information, he thought it was best for him to clarify. If it turned out to be true, he could deal with it.

"Are you saying he is a celestial?" Quinn asked.

"Ah, you do have a couple of cells in your head." Mundus joked. "But, that is actually not accurate to say. Your son is something more than just a celestial. He is what is known as an Incomplete Celestial, something that is quite rare."

Incomplete sounded like a negative word, and he even lifted up Galen taking a look at his cute face with his full head of black curly hair.

'You don't look incomplete to me?' Quinn thought. 'But then again, I failed to even notice your celestial energy. This kid, he has been hiding quite a lot of things from me. He might prove to be a real troublemaker growing up.'

"Let me start by saying it is not a bad thing, despite the naming sense." Mundus went on to explain. "You, being a celestial, should already know quite a bit about us. Us celestials all have a condition that we must complete, and in a way those conditions are our role in the Universe.

"These conditions can practically be anything, and it is pointless for us to try to figure out why certain celestials have certain conditions. Anyway, as you might already know, there are certain ways celestials can be born into this world.

"One of them is through growing and becoming a celestial, this again can be for a number of reasons, great power, having lives that worship you, or even taking out another celestial and taking their place.

"At times there are those that seemingly are just born into existence and have their condition to start with. Maybe the Universe felt like they were needed, or perhaps a

group of lifeforms started to worship something that wasn't there, thus believing them into existence

"And then Quinn, there is what is in your hands. Not every single child that is born from a celestial becomes a celestial. As stated before it's very rare, and when a celestial is born from a celestial we call it an Incomplete Celestial." Mundus explained.

Quinn started to hold Galen closer to his chest, there was nothing bad said about Incomplete Celestials yet, but based on his experience with vampire subclasses, at times, if those that weren't exactly a vampire, it meant bad news and they would try to eliminate them.

"And... What's so bad about an Incomplete Celestial?" Quinn asked.

There was another reason Mundus was sitting in his throne-like chair, and it was to relax Quinn a bit, but he could see he was a bit tense.

"Please be aware that I just want to inform you of what you have, and that I do not wish to take part in anything of what I am about to say." Mundus explained. "The reason for giving the name Incomplete Celestial is because unlike other Celestials, Incomplete Celestials seem to have no purpose.

"They have no condition. They have celestial power, grow quickly in strength and such, but there is no condition they need to feed on, and in a way they can enjoy life just like a normal being."

Mundus trailed off a little, and it was because the last words he spoke weren't exactly true.

"Because of this fact, that they are a celestial with no condition, it means that a celestial can pass its condition onto an Incomplete Celestial, and if that was to happen it means that a celestial is no longer a celestial, they no longer have to complete their job essentially, as it has been passed onto someone else."

Quinn wasn't liking the sound of this, because he remembered at times there were instances where he wished he was never a celestial.

"You got lucky." Mundus continued. "You are one of the very few that were able to break out of being a celestial but for many out there, it is impossible unless they come across an Incomplete Celestial.

"As I said, I enjoy my role in this world, but there will always be those that do not. Those that wish to end the reincarnation cycle. Now, I don't know who or what celestials would wish to do this, I am not a mind reader.

"But it is safe to say that your son's identity is best kept a secret, and he should do his best to hide his celestial energy so others never find out. Otherwise, you could really have your hands full."

Quinn didn't like what he had heard at all, the fact that there would be gods after his child. Didn't he already have enough problems to deal with, but in the end, most of the gods weren't that strong, at least compared to him.

"Now god slayer." Mundus interrupted Quinn's thoughts. "Why don't we talk about what to do with you?"

Chapter 2159.5: Time Freeze (Part 5)

The good news was it seemed like celestials were unable to tell what Galen was without being so close to him, otherwise he would have already had quite a few of them on his back already, but then it begged the question...

Why was Mundus here? He had stated that it was clear, he was here waiting for him, which had led him to his family, and right now, in a way Mundus was kind of being nice. He had given Quinn information that there was no need for him to have.

If he was really here to punish him for breaking out of that prison, then there was no need for him to do any of this.

"There are a few things that I didn't expect before this meeting, and one of them is the fact that you are now a god slayer." Mundus placed his hand on his head as if it was troublesome and his strange ears that would curl and move were curling more towards his forehead.

"Either way, it wasn't as if we counted on you to do celestial things anyway, heck we even locked you away." Mundus mumbled to himself as he cleared his thoughts. "I'm sorry to disturb you and your family, taking you away from your travels, but your hometown earth has been causing quite a few problems."

"You see, the last time you helped us out, we had made a deal, and that was that we wouldn't get involved with Earth. However, there seems to be a slight problem. You see, since we have left things on their own, there has been a sharp increase of God slayers that has continued to increase. This isn't so much of a problem on its own, but it seems these god slayers and earthlings have been expanding through the Universe and now this has become a problem."

It didn't take a scientist to figure out what Mundus was talking about, it had to be Jack and Jim. The fact that they had caught the attention of the celestials. Quinn was inwardly smiling as he imagined Jim and Jack were making enemies without realising it.

"You see, we celestials, although recently have gotten involved quite a bit, don't usually like to get involved a lot. Because we believe that the Universe will have its own way of solving things, but we have meddled, since a long time ago when we decided to seal away Immortui."

"I do believe if Immortui was still around that this matter would have never gotten to be as big of a problem as it is now. Which is a good example of our involvement."

The way the conversation was stirring, Quinn was no longer inwardly happy anymore. It sounded like the celestials didn't want to do anything at all, and if his guess was right...

"This is why, we would like to ask you for another favour, and wish for you to put a stop to the god slayers that are coming from your planet. Stop them from expanding out and destroying other races." Mundus requested.

In some ways Quinn couldn't believe it. One moment they trap him for all eternity asking him to have no involvement, and now they were asking for his help?

"I can guess what you are thinking and trust me, it's quite embarrassing for the celestial community as a whole. It is times like this where I am happy that I am but a simple messenger." Mundus continued.

"As you know, we did strike a deal last time, and I wish to be fair to you and strike a deal with you again. If you complete this task, we will forget the fact that you are a god slayer. We will see you more as an agent that has done good work for the celestials.

"After all, you have seen our half, so it's not as if you are a direct enemy. This means of course, you can go ahead and enjoy the happy life, that you wish to have, as long as you complete this task. You were one of the strongest celestials and I have no doubt that you are strong as a god slayer as well. There would be few that could do a task like this. Which is why we are prepared to give you such a high reward.

"But I can't lie. The position as an agent of the celestials will mean that maybe in the future we will ask you to do tasks such as this one, but I promise we will only ask you of such tasks if we believe you are one of the few that can complete it, we won't just call you to do things here and there."

Mundus stated that it was a request but really what choice did he have? If he was to say no, then what? Would Mundus proceed to fight him and his whole family, would Quinn have to take on the ancient ones?

'If I think about it, it's not too bad of a deal. I wanted to deal with the problems anyway, and the celestials are saying that I get something out of this for completing it. Being an agent of theirs, I no longer have to go in hiding, or hide my powers when I am on other planets now as well.' Quinn thought.

"I agree." Quinn said. "But I want a bit more out of this deal. Since the last time I accepted something like this it didn't turn out so well for me. I want my son to be protected at all costs. For his secret to be kept secret, and if it does come out, that you will do everything in your power to protect him."

Mundus looked at Galen for a few moments, even while they were talking now, he had the shadow flickering around him. They had been talking for a while, so it seemed he could use the shadow a bit better than his older sister.

"Agreed, but I can only try my best." Mundus answered. "The best thing will be for you to stay by his side, or to increase his own strength so he can defend himself."

"I have another request." Quinn asked. "If the celestials are asking me to do such a big thing, then it's only right that they help me out in this fight. You want to guarantee that I accomplish this mission, then help me."

"I already said, the celestials don't wish to get involved. We are worried about what it might do." Mundus explained. "Celestials, when moving from their original condition, seem to cause the most problems and unless we send in the stronger celestials they really won't be much help to you. The fact that your a god slayer now makes things quite a bit easier."

Quinn was going to ask for help, having Mundus by his side. The two of them working together would surely be a combo that no one could deal with, but if he couldn't get that, then he did have another request.

"Your role in the celestial space is the messenger, and I'm sure that means you're pretty high up and have lived for a really long time. So you must have seen quite a lot of things and know quite a lot.

"So, if you can't help me in this fight, then you should at least support me. Give me some armour, the best armour you know, the best armour you have which will help me deal with the problem." Quinn asked.

The chair started to sink down into the ice, and Mundus stood up from his position. He then clicked his fingers, and everything around started to move again. The air, the clouds above, Wince, and Minny.

They all looked in front of them, and suddenly they could see Quinn standing there. They were greatly confused because they hadn't seen him rise from a shadow or anything like that.

"That is something I can do for you, but we don't have much time, so let's get moving."

Chapter 2160: You want something, get it yourself

The request that Quinn had been made was granted. He was somewhat expecting him to say no, but Mundus had agreed. An armour that had been made by the celestial, just how powerful would it be? Would it allow him to match up to Ray?

At the same time, since he was unable to use two armours at once, he could then let Stark borrow his armour as well. Although with the Shadow ability he also could quickly switch armours in battle as well.

The point was, there were a number of different possibilities and Quinn was excited.

"Daddy!" Minny shouted, as she jumped up into his other arm, one was already holding Galen so he had to be quick to bring her in. When she was safely held, he could see that Minny was crying.

"Daddy, I couldn't protect the family like you asked me to!" Minny said with a face full of tears. "Even though... even though... Da-da-daddy gave Minny such a good present, I couldn't beat him."

The present that Minny was talking about was of course the god slayer item. Although Quinn did technically say that with the ring he felt she could beat anyone, Mundus was an exception to that rule. He never thought that she would have to face someone like him.

Still, he would have loved to have witnessed the battle between the two, to see just how effective it was.

"Mommy, is she... is she okay?" Minny asked.

Rushing over to Layla's side, Quinn could see that Wince was there as well. With her powers a bed of water had been made which looked like a large liquid-like bubble. Some of it was surrounding Layla and seemed to have a soothing effect judging by Layla's face.

"Mum is alive, you don't have to worry about that." Quinn said. "I asked you to protect the family and that's what you did, look they're all alive."

It took a few moments, but Layla did eventually open her eyes, just in case Mundus had any bright ideas, Quinn did get her sword and placed it next to her, not quite giving it to her, in case it stopped the effect of Wince's water bed.

"Quinn... you came?" Layla said. "You always seem to turn up at the right moments."

He didn't respond to the words, because that wasn't true this time. To Layla and the rest, it felt like Quinn had just turned up, when in reality it had already been a good few hours in between their battles.

"So, did you teach that person a... a..." Layla stuttered for a second, she was looking around, expecting Mundus to be beaten or full of holes, but instead she could see Mundus just fine, standing there, and when the two made eye contact, he even waved toward her.

Layla felt a headache coming on as she touched her face.

"You never gave me a chance to explain myself, but it was interesting seeing the strength of your family." Mundus stated. "I hope that you will all do well to support him in his mission. So have you caught up with them enough?"

Quinn turned his head, no longer holding Galen and Minny as they both wanted to stay by their mother's side.

"What do you mean?" Quinn asked.

"I told you before, we don't have a lot of time, you want a strong armour right, then I will transport you. Don't worry when we are done, I will bring you back." Mundus explained. "So I'm asking... are you done with saying your short goodbyes?"

"You're leaving!" Layla said shocked, but still in pain so she went back a bit. "With him?"

"It's a long story, but this really shouldn't take long, I don't think. I will explain everything when I get back." Quinn stood up and was already walking over to where Mundus was.

"Oh, and, in a few moments Ceril will be back and there's a new person with her. I'm sure they will explain everything so treat them well!" Quinn shouted.

When he finally was close to Mundus, the celestial didn't waste any time, as both of them were covered in a white light, and the two of them disappeared just like that.

"As quick as he comes, as quick as he goes." Layla commented.

There was one more that was out on the ice field that was a bit confused, and that was Yongbu.

"Mundus left... right after finding Quinn. He didn't wish to kill him either?"
Yongbu pulled on some of his tentacles that were near his mouth. "What am I meant to do? Can I get out of here as well?"

Just as Quinn had said, a ship could be seen flying around the Royal palace. Ceril knew the area well and was the first to spot her sister, as well as a bunch of others, but there was no sign of Quinn.

Regardless, they decided that it was best to land first, as it was clear there had been some signs of fighting below. The ramp descended, hitting the hard ice floor, and immediately the three on board got off.

"What happened here?" Russ looked at the scene.

Ceril ran over to her sister, and could see Layla resting on the floor.

"Is everything okay, what happened?" Ceril asked.

"It's quite a story." Wince replied. "I think it would be best if we moved Layla into the Royal castle for treatment, and the two of you can rest. We can talk to each other about what happened then."

"There's a purple man!" Minny pointed.

The two women turned their heads and could see Minny was pointing at Stark.

"Purple man, this is Quinn's family." Russ explained.

"Oh!" Stark's eyes lit up. "Little girl, if you are related to Quinn, then does that mean you're fast? How about a race!"

"I'm definitely faster than you... but I don't feel like racing now, where is dad!" Minny moaned.

"Where is Quinn we thought he would be here?" Russ asked.

"We... have no idea." Wince replied. "He was here a moment ago, and now he's gone, but he said he would be back soon, at least he thinks he will."

When Quinn went off with Mundus, he was expecting to enter the celestial space and would get the armour and come back, but he soon realised if that was the case, then there was no need to bring Quinn with him.

On top of that, now that he was a god slayer, could he even enter the celestial space, that was unlikely as well. When the white light faded, a giant bolt of lightning struck right from the sky hitting the ground in front of him, cracking the ground.

After the initial shock was over, he was able to see the scene around him, dark clouds in the sky constantly striking the ground with lighting. Tornadoes off in the distance, and around him, rubble.

Broken down torn buildings of what looked like a civilization.

"Is this where the armour is kept?" Quinn asked.

"Kept?" Mundus replied standing next to him. "We don't have such armour. You said to give you the best armour, well then we will create the best armour. To do that, then we would need to use the strongest crystals which are of course, God Slayer Crystals.

"Boots, legs, chest piece, shoulders and a helmet. That is five pieces in total. So I will take you to five different planets that contain five of the strongest god slayers out there. Defeat them and take their crystal and then we shall make the strongest armour in existence.

"However, the armour will only be lent to you for this task. If we were to give a God Slayer so much power, it would be troublesome."

Quinn didn't expect he would be fighting other god slayers like this, but at least with Mundus he could get to where he needed almost instantly.

"Wait, why don't you just deal with the God Slayers because you are already here, then just give me the crystals to make the armour, or you go make the armour?" Quinn asked.

"I already explained to you, we can't get too involved, so go ahead and do your job, it looks like your opponent is here."

Chapter 2161.1: God slayer 1 (Part 1)

If Quinn concentrated, through the loud sound of thunder, through the rain off in the distance, he could hear people talking and whispering. They were in parts of the rubble and the destroyed buildings, all taking a peak at the two invaders that had appeared.

'I wonder what went on here, why are the people in hiding, and why is everything destroyed?'

It almost looked like Quinn was on some type of street, as he was standing in a large open area, because in front of him there was nothing but dirt, and in front of him there was nothing but dirt.

However, to his left and right, and far off into the distance there were destroyed buildings.

'I don't have time to worry about that, I don't have time to worry about who, or the race on this planet. One thing is clear is that they aren't human or vampires, and if I want this armour, then it's my job to take these god slayers out.'

After Quinn had reassured himself of the task at hand, he heard a small ding, coming from his system.

[A quest has been received from the Celestial 'Mundus']

[Mundus wishes for you to become an agent of the Celestials, a great being that is capable of completing tasks of great importance requiring great strength, but this task isn't just something that anyone can do!]

[You have asked for a great armour, in order to create a great armour the strong crystals are needed. Impress Mundus, and defeat the five greatest god slayers.]

It was very rare that Quinn saw the quest screen pop up, still this did seem like something worthy of giving him a quest for, but he wasn't so sure about the added flavour this quest had provided him.

'The Strongest God Slayers? I knew that we were gathering god slayer crystals and high level ones, but what does this actually mean? Will I have to fight someone like Sil, or maybe even fight Sil?'

Quinn was confident in his strength, or perhaps it was more correct to say, he was confident until he had pretty much lost a match against Ray. Now he wasn't so sure what was out there. As Mundus kept telling him, the universe was vast.

Looking at the surroundings, Quinn was trying to guess what type of opponent it would be, by the landscape and the lifeforms, but the lifeforms were hiding their

body shapes well. He didn't have to wait long though, as he could see a human figure around the same height walking toward him.

They were walking at a steady pace step by step, as they made their way forward.

'I don't really want to attack someone I don't really know, but this at this point, is for the sake of not just human, and vampire lives, but of all those on the other planets as well.'

Raising his hand, Quinn covered his whole body in the shadow and his hands which quickly faded away. He was in his Red Fang set armour, but there was a slight problem. Quinn had already activated the active skill when meeting Mundus, just in case he needed it.

If he wanted to use it again, it would come at the cost of lowering his health. Either way, Quinn decided to act with the two weapons in his hands, the blood guns which could shoot out real bullets just as fast.

[Qi bullet]

[Blood bullet]

Two different bullets came out at the same time towards his opponent. Two different types of bullets were used to see which one would react better. Fighting against different races it was important to try different things.

The second the two bullets left the gun and a loud bang went off, his opponent the god slayer, leapt up in the air doing a somersault. It was a backflip and the two bullets completely missed.

When landing on its two feet, the god slayer continued to walk forward.

'With a bit of luck, I was hoping that with just those bullets I would be able to kill the god slayer, but I guess it's not my day.' Quinn thought.

"These aren't just regular god slayers." Mundus said, still standing by his side.
"Think about it. You are a being that can kill multiple celestials without much work at all, and it would be true to say you could do the same to most god slayers."

"Yet, despite all of that, you asked me for help, you asked me to give you armour that would help you in battle. Do you know what that tells me? It means that for some reason, you believe that you might not be up for the task, that just maybe you will fail."

"So, we can't just use any crystals and have you go against any opponent."

Putting the quest information and what Mundus said, Quinn was starting to understand a bit more. This wasn't just a way for him to get strong armour, but was also somewhat of a test.

"Fine!" Quinn said, as he got himself ready and into a fighting stance. "Then I will prove to you just how strong I am."

"Great, but you should also know a bit about your opponent because he is no weakling." Mundus explained. "In fact, in some ways the two of you share similar traits. This is a god slayer that knows about the existence of us celestials."

"Which is not something that everyone knows about. In essence, this person could also be called a true god slayer, because they have made it their life purpose to get rid of all the celestials and all of the gods."

"Why does he hate you guys so much? I mean, I can understand why I hate you so much, but what about him?" Quinn asked.

"That is complicated. Originally his great power was used to help and aid us, but then he felt betrayed by us, so he set it out as his goal to destroy us all." Mundus stated.

Turning his head, Quinn looked at Mundus dead in the eye, because it was sounding a lot like him and he was starting to sympathise.

"Fear not, there is a big difference between the two of you, because in the end, he lost his way." Mundus explained. "He was once loved by the people he fought for, the people he tried to protect. If he continued on that path, then like you he might have become a celestial but he didn't."

"He let his obsession of fighting against the celestials get the better of him. The state of this planet, and not just this planet, but others as well is all because of him, because of his obsession with trying to get rid of the gods."

There was something strange that Quinn noticed as soon as the god slayer appeared. The heartbeat of the people watching, the worried whispers of someone to come and save them. What happened to this being in the end, did he lose his whole family, all of his friends, and have no one else around him.

Now, they only live for one purpose and one purpose only, forgetting that other people have their own lives.

'If I didn't have Layla, or my family, or Peter at that time, I could have very well ended up just like him.' Quinn thought.

He took a good look at his opponent up and down. He suddenly stopped around twenty metres away from Quinn and pulled something from his back. It looked like

a large staff, but it wasn't one made of wood, instead it was white in colour, almost like a type of stone.

On his chest, there was bright golden chain mail, and he had boots that when touching the ground made no noise at all. Finally, Quinn could see two distinctive features, the first his curly tail that hovered, and his hair that was covering his hands and face.

This was Quinn's first opponent, one of the strongest in the universe to ever exist.

Chapter 2162.2: God slayer 1 (Part 2)

When Quinn heard Mundus say he was going to give him some information on his opponent, he was expecting to get a few tips. Maybe something about what his opponent could do, his strengths, anything to help him with a fight.

Not to hear his back story and cause him to feel empathy for this person. Now he needed to shake his head and convince himself that he was fighting against someone who he wanted to beat. Thankfully the reaction of the lives on the planet made it easier to do that.

'It's safe to say if I'm in trouble that Mundus won't help me out, so let's do this!' Quinn thought.

Using the blood guns, Quinn started to fire more bullets once again, and was switching up with every type of bullet he had, blood bullet, god slayer, shadow bullet and so on. With his quick reflexes and great eyesight, he would be able to see what bullet was most effective.

'If he tries somersaulting out of the way of them, he'll eventually get hit!' Quinn was also on the move, as he moved from side to side and started to fire bullets from different angles as well.

"You... are one of them." The god slayer stated. The energy that he could feel, it wasn't celestial energy that was coming from Quinn, but he was confusing it with the celestial energy that was coming from Mundus instead.

The white stone staff was taken from his back, and swung forward in his hand. It was a fast swift movement and this action alone had created a large and heavy gale of wind. As the bullets came towards him, he started to swing the staff, hitting them dead on.

The second the staff touched the bullets, they would disappear on impact and a small sounding bang was heard. The god slayer swung the staff at such a speed that he was able to keep up with all of the bullets that Quinn had fired, hitting each one of them.

It didn't matter what type of bullet it was, including the shadow bullet, the second it made contact with the staff, it would just disappear. At the same time, each swing of the staff was creating huge gusts of winds that would go off in the distance and hit the already destroyed buildings pushing them further back.

'That weapon is creating that much wind force. It's not just the speed he is moving the weapon at, to do something like that, it means the weapon has to weigh a significant amount as well. How can something that small weigh that much?' Quinn thought. 'Not just that, but the Blood and Qi I'm using is a condensed form in these

bullets. It's stronger than when I just use my blood aura to attack like with the swords, and it still can't break that weapon. What is it made out of?"

The best thing for him to do for now, was to keep the fight at a distance, because it looked like his opponent was mostly skilled in hand to hand combat or at least close quarter combat.

Although that was somewhat Quinn's specialty as well, it was best for him to try to injure his opponent as much as possible before it came to that. Instead of firing at the god slayer, he fired blood forest bullets towards the ground right where his feet were.

The blood rose up fast creating small sharp blood trees.

'Quinn you are getting good at using these guns, you can aim better now!' Alex complimented him because the enemy had been surrounded and all of the blood was heading right toward him.

The god slayer started to spin the staff, and rose it up above his head, before slamming it into the ground, a golden wave of power, expanded from the bottom of the staff and when hitting the blood forest it dissapeared completly.

'At this rate, it looks like he's going to force me into a close combat battle.' Quinn thought.

"You!" The monkey man said. "Must dissapear!"

The staff was thrust forward, and Quinn was waiting for some type of energy blast to come out of the end of it, just like when it was slammed onto the ground, but instead, the staff started to expand.

It was stretching out and growing in size heading straight at him. Not only was it growing in terms of length but it was growing in width as well, it was now as thick as a house coming at him.

"I am not so weak!" Quinn said back. Lifting both his hands up, blood aura covered both of his gauntlets, a strong powerful red mist could be seen above creating the image of almost two giant tigers.

Quinn then shaped his hands like that of a claw, he powered his body with Qi, and mixed it with his blood aura.

When the staff was upon him, which now looked more like a giant pillar, he let both of his hands go at the same time, firing them off like shotguns and crashed them right into the pillar.

On the other end, holding the staff, for a second his hand had jolted back, but it didn't matter. The god slayer wasn't using his strength, but the strength of the weapon.

When punching the staff, Quinn was expecting it to shatter into a thousands of pieces but it had done no such thing, and instead he was the one that was still being pushed back. His feet that were firmly planted on the ground were ploughing through it.

'Is this the god slayers strength? Is it stronger than mine, no that's not right, it's not the god slayer's strength, the weapon, it's still expanding and pushing me back at all costs!'

Using one hand to slow down the staff somewhat, Quinn summoned the gun in the other and fired out a shadow portal above, then fired a shadow portal behind him. The giant staff had pushed him into his own shadow and dropped him out from above, allowing him to land on top.

Immediately, Quinn started to run forward, heading toward his opponent.

'I have five of these guys to beat, so I wanted to conserve my strength a bit, but will that even be possible at this rate, either way I have to try!' Quinn thought.

Raising his hands again, thousands of blood swords started to appear behind him, then when reaching the end of the staff, Quinn leapt up in the air, a mist of blood aura could still be seen lingering on his gauntlets.

Swinging both his hands down he was ready to crush his opponent. In a blink the giant staff that Quinn was on had shrunk down to normal size and was now in his opponent's hand. He raised it up just above his head, to block.

The gauntlets slammed down, sending waves of blood aura in all directions even cutting part of the god slayer's cheek, but the attack had been successfully stopped.

"I thought, you might be able to do this, if you can extend and make it larger, then you should be able to make it smaller as well, right!" Quinn shouted.

As the swords that were behind him were slightly delayed ahead of his own attack. All the blood swords were heading straight for him. With Quinn holding onto the spear, even if this didn't kill the monkey god slayer, it would at least hurt him.

Before the swords hit, a puff of smoke appeared, blocking his view, but with so many swords, what would it matter. When the puff of smoke disappeared though, Quinn could see that there were now not just one monkey man, but five of them.

They each looked exactly the same, with the same weapon in their hand, but the blood swords had managed to hit their bodies, having pierced their legs and stomachs. Soon, all of them exploded into nothing but a puff of smoke as well.

'What is going on? What tricks does this monkey have!'

Quinn could see a monkey man jumping towards him, swinging the staff, he blocked it with one hand whacking the staff away, and with his other he punched it right in the stomach.

Not holding back, a large amount of blood aura was used, going through the body, but this monkey had puffed into smoke as well. In the middle of hitting, what Quinn could only assume was a fake, another staff was swung towards his centre.

'I'll take this hit, and pay him back tenfold!' Quinn thought, until the staff had hit him in the stomach.

[-15HP]

The blow was extremely heavy and powerful. He could feel the sheer force trying to lift him off his feet, and with blood dripping from his mouth, Quinn grabbed onto the staff, with the shadow surrounding his hand and now holding onto the staff as well.

"That hurt." Quinn said, his fangs baring.

Chapter 2163.3: God Slayer 1 (Part 3)

Holding onto the staff, Quinn thought the best thing to do was to take it out of the Monkey god slayer's hand. If he was to treat it like a weapon, it had an incredibly dangerous active ability, being able to change its size like so, yet also being able to keep the same amount of force.

In Quinn's mind, it made it quite clear that although the shape of the weapon would change, the weight of the weapon always stayed the same. It also explained the Monkey man's great strength as well. Because he was able to swing it around so effortlessly.

At first, grabbing onto the staff, Quinn was using his extreme strength with the 1st stage of Qi to power himself and pull the weapon out of his opponent's hand, but it didn't seem to be enough, as the other held onto it tight.

Knowing his strength wasn't enough, there was a way to increase his strength slightly, something he had learned as his shadow powers and skills had evolved. Blood aura could be used in a number of ways, hardening to create a defensive barrier, or sharpening into deadly claws that would cause a large amount of damage.

At the end of the day, the blood aura was mainly an enhancer. When Quinn delivered a punch releasing his blood aura and Qi, it allowed him to give out a devastating blow. Although it increased his damage it didn't necessarily increase his strength, the strength of the punch was still the same, just the damage was worse.

However, with the shadow he could use it in a different way, coating it around his gauntlet, and adding the second stage of Qi gave it a solid form, and now with a strong pull, it would now be using the enhanced shadow strength as well as his own.

"Let go of this staff!" Quinn shouted, as he yanked it as hard as he could. It jolted forward for a second, but the monkey man dug his foot into the ground and tried to pull it back, creating an equal force.

'This time... it looks like they sent quite a strong god to try and deal with me!' The monkey man thought. 'Can he really take the weight of this weapon so easily?'

There was a misunderstanding on Quinn's end, because the staff the monkey man used was indeed special. It had a large weight behind it, but in the monkey man's hands it felt like nothing. It was as light as a feather.

Still this didn't mean the monkey man wasn't strong, he was indeed strong, but he was using his great strength to pull a feather, while his opponent was using a great strength to pull a gigantic weight and yet they were both equal.

'Are there really others out there that are this strong?' Quinn started to think as he continued to pull. 'I wonder what this person went through to get this strong, the weight that they are carrying on their shoulders.

'And Mundus, is somewhere out there just watching this whole thing, while the two of us fight it out. Maybe if I wasn't in so much of a desperate situation, I would try to talk to you... find out what made you like this.'

In the middle of the fight Quinn could hear it, the people in the crumbled buildings that were watching everything... They were praying. They were praying for him, a stranger to them, to defeat the monkey man.

A deal with the celestials, would Quinn at some point be in the same situation as the one he was fighting now? He couldn't trust anyone but his family, and right now in the situation he was in. To keep them safe, it was the only thing.

"You might be someone who has lost everything... which is why you are like this, but the difference between me and you is that I still have things to lose, and that's why I fight!" Quinn shouted.

For a second he let go of the staff with one hand, and the gun appeared. From this close range Quinn started to fire the blood bullets continuously right towards the monkey's man chest.

The bullets hit him deep, and felt like he was getting a large blow each time the bullets hit him.

'My armour is suppressing most of the effects and powers of the bullets, but they still hurt this much! I have to do something!'

With each bullet Quinn could tell that his grip was weakening, and continued like so until a cloud of smoke puffed out from the monkey man, and two clones appeared at the side ready to swing their staffs right at him.

As they got close though, from Quinn's back the shadow expanded out and turned into two giant hands, grabbing them and holding them up in the air, at the same time, above their heads, there were two large blood swords that had been created, and the blood swords dropped down piercing through their heads and killing them in one go.

An opening was seen, and the monkey took this chance to deliver a powerful kick right into Quinn's stomach. His boot lit up gold and a large amount of golden aura filled up half of the sky.

[-33 HP]

'That kick went through my shadow body... it looks like he has more tricks up his sleeve!' Quinn thought.

Coming straight at him, the monkey was ready to swing his pole toward Quinn's head. Seeing this, Quinn started to form a small blood tornado in his hand, and threw it out as a vortex of blood hit the monkey, it turned into a cloud of smoke.

'That wasn't the real one!'

A strong kick from below threw Quinn right up into the air.

[-8 Hp]

Soon after, the staff was stuck into the ground, and immediately started to expand and grow in width and length. It hit Quinn in the back, and another clone of the monkey was made.

The boots the monkey was wearing lit up again, and he kicked the side of the air repeatedly, which allowed him to somewhat fly in the air. When above Quinn, the god slayer extended his staff again, growing it in size.

Now there was one from below, and one from above, and both of them hit him at the same time attempting to squash him, attempting to crush his body into nothing.

[-35 HP]

[Blood bank is being used to restore HP.]

'I have to get out of here... if I'm going to go through all these fights today, the blood bank needs to be kept safe, unless Mundus has some blood he can give me... either way my bones are going to be crushed!' Quinn thought, as he activated the shadow space, completely disappearing from the monkey man.

The two staffs hit each other, with one being stronger than the other and crushing it. The clone disappeared and now there was only the real Monkey man left.

'Is he dead?' The god slayer thought looking around. 'No, he can't have been defeated that easily. Not with that level of strength, it feels like he still has a lot more to go.'

Appearing out of his shadow space, Quinn fell to the ground returning to the battlefield.

"There you are!" the monkey lifted up his staff, and it grew incredibly large and wide. Without hesitation he swung it down on top to hit Quinn.

The giant staff hit the planet, crushing the ground, and the whole planet had somewhat moved in space due to the sheer amount of power, weight, and force that was used.

"Now, he should be dead." The monkey man said, as he landed on top of his own weapon, but could see someone else on the other end of it.

"Don't count me out yet, you're not the only one that can make clones." Quinn said, as part of the shadow was seen creeping out from the bottom of the giant staff and was coming towards him.

He had made a shadow clone of himself to take the hit, while he moved to safety.

"I didn't get to use this on Ray back then, but I guess I can try this on you."

[Soul weapon has been activated]

Chapter 2164.4: God Slayer 1 (part 4)

The soul weapon was an interesting thing that had been discovered a while ago, and in Quinn's case it was even more different compared to others. For one, a person usually only had one soul weapon, an enhancement type or an item type, that would be related to their ability.

Yet for some reason Quinn had both. He still wasn't sure about the explanation for this. Was it because he was a human that changed into a vampire around the time that a soul weapon would manifest?

At first, it was thought that vampires could not manifest soul weapons, but thanks to Fex they had found out it wasn't true. But then why don't vampires have two soul weapons if they had abilities as well?

Thinking about it more, Quinn thought maybe it was to do with his ability itself. His ability, after all, was a god slayer ability and in a sense they could break rules that normal abilities were unable to.

Either way, Quinn had two types of soul weapons that helped him out in the past in countless ways. Ever since receiving the blood guns he didn't resort to such attacks, but he did before when he was a celestial.

What he had found was that his item type soul weapon had changed with his celestial form. Since the weapon was linked to his blood and his blood was no longer normal, it was filled with celestial energy.

This special trait allowed him to form the weapons into anything he wished, and it had great celestial power with it. The thing was, Quinn was no longer a celestial. During his peaceful times, he did try to use his soul weapon.

He never knew when he might need to use it or improve it, and as he feared, he was no longer able to do what he could before. The Twin Tail Chains would still work, but that was all and they were unable to take other shapes.

However, it wasn't all bad news, he was now a god slayer after all, and this was due to his shadow ability in the first place and was what his enhancement type soul weapon was based on. In the past, it allowed him to create a shadow body, control the shadow from a limited range without having to be connected with his own shadow and unlimited MC cells for a period of time.

The thing was, when he had accepted to become a god slayer, his shadow had evolved. What was once his soul weapon, he was able to do with the shadow naturally and he had obtained a few new skills all linked to shadow infect.

Which led to the question, just like when he had become a celestial and his other soul weapon had evolved, did it mean that his shadow soul weapon had evolved?

He was already able to completely dull out an opponent's senses with his shadow bullets, but in this case, the shadow wasn't sticking onto his opponent.

[Soul weapon activated]

The second Quinn had activated his soul weapon, the shadow on his body started to flicker violently like a fire, and just like a flame, what looked like smoke was lingering off from his body and being spread out.

The shadow flames on Quinn's body were starting to have a small glow around him, as his soul weapon went into the final phase.

[Soul weapon, Shadow Mist is now being used]

The shadow pulsed out from his body like a wave, going in all directions like a sphere. As it went out wider and wider, the sphere of shadow was leaving a mist of shadow in the air, the colour of everything around them in the fighting area, all of it was turning a slight purple.

'The soul weapon is always used as a last resort, it's a double edged sword. If I can't beat him during the use of my soul weapon, then when it runs out I'll be exhausted. Even my regular hits and punches will be weaker than usual.'

The monkey god slayer, was wondering what all this lingering mist around him was, he started to waft his hand and even attempted to kick the air, but it did nothing. Then, shrinking his weapon and placing it back in his hand, he swung the staff through the mist. It created a large force of wind, but didn't move the mist away.

It only broke through it for a few seconds but the mist still lingered and stayed in the area. Finally, the monkey man slammed his staff on the ground, shooting out the golden aura he used, but just like when swinging the staff, although it was able to push the mist away temporarily, it returned just as quickly as soon as the energy disappeared.

'This mist, it doesn't make me feel any different.' The monkey man thought. 'But it has to do something, but there is no point in worrying about it now, I have to focus on the fight.'

The monkey man was ready to run forward but as soon as he took a step, red blood bullets came towards him, firing out from both guns as Quinn stayed in his position.

Using the staff, he was able to hit most of the bullets away, while avoiding a few of them as well.

'This is useless, it didn't work before, so why is he trying to do the same thing again?'

The blood bullets weren't the only thing the god slayer had to worry about, as Quinn had summoned a number of blood swords as well. Yet for some reason they had stayed in the air, rather than attacking.

The monkey man was getting annoyed, although he could block the bullets and avoid them easily, it was hard for him to progress forward. He could extend his staff again, but was wondering if that really was the best thing for him to do.

Instead, he created more clones of himself to help with the bullets, but the second he did, the blood swords started to move, and with how many they were, they had pierced the clones, finishing them off.

'Now I see, that's what the blood swords were for.' The monkey man thought.

While thinking this, when he moved to avoid another bullet, it had shaved his skin causing a tiny cut on it. For now he ignored this as a tiny slip up. Yet, as time went on by just a second, he was getting skinned by the bullets more and more.

'Am I moving slower... not just that, I feel weaker, but I'm not tired?' the god slayer thought.

Quinn's soul weapon was starting to take effect, with the shadow in a mist form, it meant in some way it was always touching his opponent and slowly all of the effects of the shadow would work on his opponent.

Their senses would begin to dull, their sight would blur, their hearing disappearing, and their sense of touch fading. While at the same time, their movements and abilities would work slower than before.

It wasn't as strong as if the shadow was directly touching its opponent, but the mist was a sure way for one to get affected by the shadow. There was no way to escape it, other than running away from the fight.

Mundus, who had been watching the fight go on, realised the effects of the shadow mist.

'In some ways, this ability is quite similar to mine, slowing down the opponent, although mine is more powerful.' Mundus thought,. Yet he was annoyed for another reason. 'This shadow mist, if it's in the air, would it also be able to block out my ability from working properly? That along with the shadow body would make Quinn a difficult opponent to face.'

Eventually, as the monkey man started to slow down, the bullets were hitting him more and more, and a clean shot had hit him right in the chest causing him to grind his teeth.

"That's it, Extend!" The monkey man shouted out, thrusting his weapon forward, planning to hit Quinn like he had before, but seconds before that Quinn had moved

his hand, as he did, it moved the shadow of the monkey man, and in turn moved the real monkey man's hand.

The extended staff had gone in a completely different direction, crashing through the broken buildings that were at the side.

Sprinting forward, blood aura started to surround both of Quinn's hands. It swirled around and started to spin, looking like drills, more and more blood gathered as the drills grew in size.

'The shadow mist does a few more things. The shadow in its mist form being in the air means that it's impossible for you to not breathe it in. The shadow particles are growing in your body, and in turn that allows me to control your own shadow somewhat.'

'The more particles, the easier it is to control your shadow and control you.'

The monkey man had no clue what was going on, but retracted his staff to go back into his hand in a small form, and swung it down toward Quinn's head. Yet in that moment once again, using the shadow particles in the monkey's body, he was able to move the strike to go to the side and completely miss him, leaving him wide open.

"I'm sorry!" Quinn shouted, as he thrust the two large blood aura drills right into the monkey man's body. The blood aura started to spin at an intense speed and the lingering parts of the blood aura was cutting up the skin on his face and body.

Lifting his arms up, Quinn had lifted the monkey man in the air with both of the drills, blood was pouring from his mouth down onto the ground. As the drills' attack was coming to an end, Quinn had quickly switched to the guns and fired away.

It hit the weak and slow monkey on the chest repeatedly, keeping him up in the air, as powerful condensed blood bullet after bullet had hit him. Shooting a shadow bullet below, and one above Quinn sunk into the ground, and when he appeared out of the shadow above, he had his gauntlets on his hand.

His hand was in a claw-like shape and his trailing blood aura had the appearance of a tiger. From above, his fist slammed into the monkey man's back and his nails pierced through the armour.

Pushing him with the power, his claw ripped through his body as the two of them slammed back onto the ground.

[1/5 God Slayers have been defeated]

For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

P.a.t.r.e.o.n jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2165.5: God slayer 1 (Part 5)

Lifting his head up, Quinn looked at the body on the floor. The monkey man was certainly a tough opponent, and it still felt like if Quinn hadn't been quick to act in the fight, using his soul weapon, it was quite possible that he would have had a really difficult fight on his hands.

'I feel like he could get up at any moment.' Quinn was thinking back to the fight, he had used his red tiger claw pulse attack. A strong blow that combined all of his powers while making his blood aura concentrate on nothing but damaging the opponent.

It was an attack he had created when in his celestial form, but it was still deadly strong and had hit his opponent cleanly. Yet after the attack, in the monkey man's final moments, he had turned around, and reached out still trying to fight back.

Even now, there was a look on his face of pure anger, he had died clearly with a large regret on his face, but not because of the actions he had done, but because of what he was unable to complete.

'The look on his face makes it look like he's going to get up at any second. If it wasn't for the system confirming that he was out, I would try to hit him a few more times just to make sure.'

Looking at the system screen again, and since it had been a few seconds without the monkey man moving, Quinn could breathe a sigh of relief. He started to look at the area around him and it was worse than it was before.

During the fight, the large staff had been extended and expanded numerous times. A full forceful hit had been used without a second thought or hesitation, destroying more of the buildings around them.

They were already destroyed in the first place, but the rubble was ground up into dust that was just now blowing in the wind.

"I know I'm no saint either, because I took part in the fight." Quinn said. "But to attack like that, at his own people without a second thought, was he really that far gone?"

"These aren't his own people." Mundus said, practically appearing out of nowhere. "The planet we are on is not the original planet where the monkey man came from, he has been travelling to different planets for a while now."

"You remember what I told you before? He was obsessed with taking out the gods, so he needed to get our attention. This god slayer was one that knew of our existence and he knew about our conditions."

"So in order to make it harder for us to fulfil our conditions, he decided to take the lives that we needed, and in turn it would get the gods attention."

Mundus walked over to the monkey man's body which was starting to fade, it was turning into particles to become part of the world, and in turn there would be a crystal left behind.

While looking at this scene, Mundus was remembering the god slayer.

"Maybe, if we had allowed the real one to roam, it wouldn't have come to this."

Quinn had heard what Mundus said, but had no context of what he was talking about.

A long time ago, just like Quinn now, the monkey man was working as an agent for the gods. His great power was useful to them because he had even greater power than most of the gods themselves.

When on a mission, fighting against a powerful god slayer, one of the tasks had ended in a strange way. A clone of the monkey man was created, not like the clones the monkey could normally create, it was a real clone in every sense.

So much so, that it was impossible to tell the difference between the two. Even the friends and allies of the monkey man were unable to tell which was the real one. The problem was, the god slayer who had created the clone stated that he could create something that was the manifestation of evil itself.

In order to stop a future problem, they needed to find out which was the real one. To resolve the problem, both of them were taken to one of the Ancient Ones who were able to distinguish the difference between the real and fake, and the fake one in the end was taken away.

'Now that I think about it, was that really the case? At that time, was the fake one taken away or was it the real one?' Mundus thought. 'The actions of this monkey man, a person who was so righteous, turned out to be like this, I don't quite believe it. At the same time, the actions of the Ancient Ones have always been strange whenever there is a power that grows incredibly fast. If I'm right, that day, the real one was sealed away.'

In the monkey's place, a crystal was there on the ground, but there was also something else that had been left behind and it was the staff. Picking it up off the ground, Quinn thought that it would be a good weapon to have, since it was durable and the active skills it contained.

The second he did though, the muscles in his hand were already straining just holding onto the thing, and he decided to drop it on the floor. When it hit the floor

the whole ground around them shook from the sheer weight of the weapon that had been dropped.

"That is a weapon that chooses its owner, it is pointless in your hands." Mundus explained. "You would be unable to use it to its full potential. It wouldn't expand or change size in your hands so it's practically useless, other than being used as a good weight. Just in case, I will take the weapon away."

Mundus placed his hand on the weapon and it lit up, soon disappearing seemingly from this world.

"You succeeded in taking out the first, and now it's time to take you to the next one since there are four more to go."

"WAIT!" Quinn called out with his hand stretched. "Can't you let me rest just for a little bit. That was a hard fight, and I can't imagine what the next one will be like. Just give me some time."

Mundus looked at Quinn who didn't seem to be too badly hurt in all of this, he had taken a few large hits but his body had already healed from that, but since Mundus wanted him to do well he had no choice.

"Stay where you are, we will rest for one hour, but I will use my powers to make it feel like you have rested for an entire week. That will be enough time for you to rest, correct?"

Quinn nodded, the truth was, using his soul weapon, there was a drawback that would occur after, but he wasn't going to tell Mundus that. So he wanted just enough time to pass so he could use everything in his arsenal again, and it would be handy to have the active skill of his Fang armour set as well.

The people, although they had seen the evil monkey man having been defeated, were still frightened to come out from their hiding spots. After all, they were unsure whether or not the one who had defeated him was a good person or not.

They were scared from the experience they had so far. Quinn didn't mind, he didn't need praise for what he had done, because he hadn't intended to save these people or their planet, it was a by-product of his goal.

"I have to ask, if we are going up against god slayers, does that mean you will take me to my enemies or those on Earth?" Quinn asked.

"Now that would be a foolish thing to do, don't you think?" Mundus explained. "Besides, there are many god slayers that are strong just because of their abilities. Powers that can do crazy things but would be useless in a battle."

"The ones I have selected are the strongest based on a certain criteria, and are the ones that I know the most information about. It is possible that if someone else

were to make a list it would be different from mine, and it is possible that there are those that are strong out there that I do not know about."

The rest of the time was pretty much sat in silence and amazingly Quinn really did feel like he had rested for a week, even the cool down on his armour had reset as well.

'If Mundus was fighting by my side... the task would be a lot easier.' Quinn thought.

"Okay, time to head to your next opponent." Mundus stated.

Chapter 2166.1: God Slayer 2 (Part 1)

There was a strong sense of curiosity for Quinn at the moment, as he started to think about who or what his next opponent could be. In a lot of ways, he had felt like he had reached the pinnacle of what he could do.

After all, Mundus himself had stated several times that Quinn was strong, it was why they were even considering making him an agent to do their bidding in the first place. Yet with his first opponent what it had reminded him was the fact that the universe was almost infinite.

It was so large and there were those that were going through their own troubles and journeys and in doing so had grown incredibly strong.

'That monkey man was tougher than I expected, and it's quite possible that I'll have to face four more like him. Still, if I've done it once, then I can do it again, and this time I'm refreshed. The cool down on the Fang set has gone off as well, so I can fight at full strength.'

A large flash of white light appeared on the surface of an orange coloured planet. When the white light disappeared, there was only Mundus and Quinn present, and immediately Quinn had noticed something drastic.

"It's... so hot!" Quinn stated as he wiped sweat from his forehead. As a vampire, and a god slayer himself it was extremely difficult to make him sweat, even in extreme heat, but this heat was beyond extreme.

The ground was incredibly dry, orange coloured, with large cracks going through it, and when trying to look at the air in front of them, it was distorted with heat waves. Even when looking at the sky it was strange, rather than fluffy clouds, there were balls of flames that were flying through it like comets.

"Why are we on this planet, can anything even live here?" Quinn asked. Since the basis of life, whether it be beast or human, was water and in this heat he couldn't imagine there being any water anywhere.

"This is where your next opponent will be, and you hit the nail on the head with your question there." Mundus said, who seemed to be dealing with the heat a bit better than Quinn, but there were still small signs of discomfort.

"This planet was not like this before. It was filled with plant life, large lakes and beasts that would roam around the entire land, a drastic change compared to what it is now." Mundus explained.

"The change is all the result of the god slayer that is currently on this planet, a beast that is so powerful that it is at the god slayer level, a beast that is born to be great, today you will be fighting a Phoenix."

Quinn looked around, struggling and wondering if he could see this Phoenix but there was nothing. At least not where they were. Thinking about the description that Mundus gave, while Quinn had fought many beasts that were like Phoenix's before, were they not real ones.

"I know what you are thinking but trust me, what you might have fought against are just mere imitations of the real thing." Mundus continued. "Think about it, the beast is so powerful that whatever planet it resides on, it terraforms it to fit with its own nature.

"When the Phoenix decides to settle, then eventually, no matter what without fail, all life on the planet, including the other beasts, will perish."

Hearing Mundus' explanation, it really did sound powerful. It was hard to imagine that such power could change a planet to be like this.

"There is a reason why I said all of those that you fought before, that have Phoenix like forms are just imitations, and that is because we know quite a few facts about this god slayer and it is because it is a god slayer that has existed for a very long time." Mundus explained.

Quinn was liking the sound of this less and less, if the god slayer had lived for a long time, it most likely meant it was that powerful.

"In the entire Universe, there can only be one Phoenix that exists at a time. There has never been two of the same type of beast. Which is why those other beasts are simply a fake, this is the real thing.

"However, the beast has been defeated before, it is possible to kill it, yet everytime the beast is killed, it seems like another Phoenix is born elsewhere. This is why we know only one can exist at one time.

"Yet, it's strange right? Based on what is said it is assumed that the beast is in a reincarnation cycle, somewhat similar to the celestials, but when it perishes it leaves behind a god slayer crystal. Because of all of this, we tend to leave this god slayer alone once it finds a planet to terraform.

"However, every hundred years or so, it likes to move to another planet, and at that moment we try to deal with it, if it is moving to a planet that either can't handle the god slayer or one with a lot of lives.

"Although we are short by another 10 years or so, I think it is fine to have an early start."

Knowing all this information again, it made Quinn feel a little less bad and it did make him wonder. Was Mundus selecting god slayers that were bad on purpose, so he could fight without worrying about it.

'It can't be, what would Mundus even go out of his way to do that. He is just following orders from those Ancient ones.' Quinn thought. 'There's no need for him to tell me this information though, so he could just be making it up.'

Quinn gave Mundus a look as he was trying to read the messenger.

"You don't have to feel bad about this one." Mundus said. "Think of it as a free crystal that we would have had anyway."

Forgetting about Mundus, Quinn needed to focus on the task at hand, and he started to try to find the god slayer. According to the Messenger, the hotter it got, it meant they were moving in the right direction.

"Is it really going to get much hotter than this? I really don't deal with heat well." Quinn asked. This was off putting because Quinn really, really didn't want for it to get any hotter. As they continued to walk through the dry land.

"Okay, I will take note, the next time I will try and transport you to a cold land." Mundus replied. "I'm stuck between deciding your next opponents so that helps me out greatly."

Eventually, off in the distance there was what looked like a mountain, but not quite.

It was almost like a mountain that had the top of it sliced off and it was the same colour as the rest of the planet, the strange dry orange. On top of the flat surface, they could see it.

Hundreds of small solar flares were circling around a large bird-like creature, it was curled up, into a type of ball, and it was breathing deeply in and out. The strangest thing was it didn't look to have a real physical body form.

Even when sleeping, the beast looked to be made of nothing but flames. Its feathers were just small flames that were constantly moving.

'If it doesn't have a body, how am I going to deal with this one? Will I have to use the shadow to try and take it out, or do I attempt my strongest attack and get this over with.'

Since the beast was asleep, Quinn was inching forward closer and closer and even now the heat was getting more intense. There had to be a point where the beast would react and the plan was at that moment, he would use Nitro Accelerate to get there and attack.

When Quinn took one more step forward, the beast's eyes had opened.

Quinn was ready to use the skill, that was until the system message popped up.

A message he hadn't seen for a long time, one that he thought he would never have to ever deal with again, had turned up, and it would only turn up with the type of opponent he was facing.

'Did Mundus know about this... or is it just a coincidence?'

[You are being affected by Sunlight]

[- 30 percent to all stats.]

Chapter 2167.2: God Slayer 2 (Part 2)

The system message that Quinn could see now was one that he hadn't seen for a long time, and there were good reasons for this. The sun had always had an effect on vampires. It caused great pain if they were to stay in it and they were severely weakened by it as well.

To combat this weakness, the vampires created special rings that allowed them to stay in the sun for a certain amount of time, depending on the ring. They were made from a mixture of specific beast crystals while also using some knowledge of vampire magic.

A special circle would be created and would form the ring in a certain way for it to have such an effect. Since beast crystals over time were easier to collect, the higher tier rings that would be given to vampires had improved, and nearly all vampires were able to stay on a planet at least until it would be dark out without any effect.

Quinn though, didn't have any rings on his hands because he had given them away. This was because he had found that the sun no longer affected him. He could feel it when he had evolved to the vampire lord level.

Staying in the sun for a certain amount of time, he could somewhat build a resistance to it, to the point where it had no effect at all. It wasn't an easy task as there was a great amount of pain associated with doing this.

It was something that he would never put his children through which is why they had the best rings that they could get to protect them. However, once again when Quinn had evolved beyond that of a vampire lord, the sun had no effect at all.

Perhaps this was because he had transcended what a vampire exactly was. Either way, it was something that he didn't have to worry about, and to be honest most vampires no longer did.

Quinn had found that in the 1000 years before he had woken up that since vampires lived among humans, the rings they made were better quality and they were plentiful. Still, when Quinn lost his celestial form, it seemed his body was still in an evolved state, something that still was above a vampire lord in terms of an evolution.

His body wasn't affected by the sun at all.

With all of this, Quinn did always have a thought. Why did the sun affect a vampire's strength? It wasn't direct light, as other light sources didn't seem to have any effect at all. It wasn't the heat, otherwise fire would also be extremely effective against a vampire.

Although they did seem to have a more difficult time against heat, it didn't make them weaker.

The only thing that was certain was it was directly related to the sun. Maybe some type of energy that radiated off of it that affected vampires and right now Quinn was being affected once more.

'This phoenix's power, it has the power to completely terraform a planet, to the point where nothing can live on it anymore. That's some crazy strong power, does that mean that this beast has an energy that is similar to the sun?

'Is it affecting me, because of how close I am?'

It was the only thing Quinn could really think of. He didn't completely lose this weakness of his, it was just that the sun was incredibly far away. Whatever affected him no longer did at the distance it was, but he was quite literally now staring at a source of power similar to it.

The phoenix, after opening its eyes, was releasing waves of heat out from its body that were going through the air, and were hitting Quinn. The temperature felt like it almost doubled. Looking to his right, he wanted to see how well Mundus was dealing with the heat, but he was nowhere to be seen.

'That guy, well I know he will be out there somewhere waiting for me to take care of this thing... first... I should take a few steps back.'

Quinn moved back quickly, jumping from his position around fifty or so metres. The phoenix was now standing on its two fiery legs with its wings spread out wide. From this distance it looked large, it was quite clearly a gigantic creature, far bigger than any animal on earth, and roughly the same size as the dragon that had been used to create the Dalki.

[Your stats have returned to normal]

'I see, so from a certain distance whatever is emitting from the Ohoenix doesn't affect me, and from the looks of things, the phoenix isn't moving from its spot, but standing up on its legs it looks like it's ready to attack at any moment.'

Quinn smiled as he saw this, even under the extreme pressure of fighting such a strong beast.

'I should see this as a good thing. The armour that will be created out of a beast like this. What effect will it have, will it allow me to create this level of heat for all those around me, or will it give the same effect to the other vampires as well.'

Either way, he needed to see himself just what the phoenix could do, and at a distance the best thing to use to hit the beast so far, with the blood guns. Pulling them out, he aimed carefully and started to fire away.

As usual Quinn would switch up the bullets that were used to see which one was most effective. The best thing about the guns were how versatile all the different bullets were and the fact that more types of bullets could be created.

When the blood bullets, Qi bullets, as well as others hit the phoenix though, it ruffled the flames slightly, but almost looked as if it went right through the phoenix's body. Similar to a real bullet just passing through flames.

The only bullet that was able to stick onto the flames was the shadow bullet which made a small mark and lingered for a few seconds before disappearing completely.

'These guns are starting to suck more and more.' Quinn said to himself.

'Hey don't blame the tools, but the idiot who is using them!' Alex complained back.
'Those guns are my best creation. It's not my fault that you're going up against a giant bird made of fire. Maybe I should have just made you a water pistol instead.'

Since the guns weren't working well, and he knew Mundus' skill allowed him to recover, he thought the best thing was to use his soul weapon, the Shadow mist. The only thing was, this distance was too great, so he needed to run in to use it.

Running ahead, Quinn could see the system message appearing once again.

[All stats have been lowered by 30 percent.]

There was a significant drop in his speed, but Quinn thought he had a counter as well.

[Shadow body has been activated]

[An energy is still affecting your body]

[All stats have been lowered by 10 percent]

'10 percent is a lot less than 30 percent, so I'll take it.'

Forming in Quinn's hands were two large blood spears. It was his mid-range attack that had power, because he feared something else, and he didn't want to find out in the middle of battle.

The problem was, the phoenix wasn't just going to stand there doing nothing. Moving its wing, a line of flames was seen going across the ground and it wasn't

slow either. Immediately Quinn had to stop gathering his blood aura, and used his shadow to block the attack.

The flames had hit the shadow he had summoned but they continued to burn and weren't going away. It felt like if Quinn was to lower the shadow then the flames would continue.

So he decided to move to the side and continue running forward before letting the shadow drop and he was right. The line of flames continued reaching far across the land.

[All stats have been lowered by 20 percent]

'I was right, the closer I get to this bird, the worse I am affected by it and I'm still not close enough to use shadow mist.'

As expected, Mundus was watching the fight from the side, and had pulled up his normal throne to take a seat. While watching Quinn's strange actions and drop in speed, it didn't go unnoticed.

'What is happening to him, why is he getting weaker all of a sudden... is it the heat? I honestly thought that this would have been one of the easiest opponents for him out of the ones I prepared.'

'Could it be, have I managed to discover a weakness?' Mundus thought.

Chapter 2168.3: God slayer 2 (Part 3)

In the middle of the fight, for the first time in a while there was a large amount of hesitation going through his mind. Because there were a number of things he could do, but didn't know what was the best option.

'Do I go back and try to head out of the affected area. I'll be at full strength and it will give me time to think. Or do I use Nitro Accelerate and try to reach the Phoenix as fast as I can, but I still don't know an effective way to hurt it yet.'

In the middle of his thoughts, the Phoenix was ready to swing its wing. Quinn needed to react faster than the last time, and noticed the slight movement in its muscles. Already he was starting to cast the shadow.

Thankfully, although his stats were affected by the Phoenix's power, his shadow speed wasn't. However, to use his shadow slightly faster Quinn would at times swing his hands as he covered them with shadow, it would allow it to move slightly faster.

The attack from the beast was fast, which is why he needed to focus and be ahead of the game. As he got closer, the line of fire that originated from the Phoenix's wing would reach him quicker.

This time, Quinn lifted his hand, and threw up a shadow wall, but rather than using both hands, he only used one. The fire hit the shadow wall and it was stopped with the flames still burning like they did before.

When Quinn's foot hit the ground, he jumped to the side, away from the shadow, and he had a large blood spear ready in his hand.

'With one hand I'll block, and with the other, I'll attack!' Quinn gathered it with as much of the second stage of Qi as he hurled it through the air. The spear started spinning as Quinn used his blood control to give it a boost of power and to rip through any possible flames that would come toward it.

'Let's see how it will react, will it attack the spear, block... or what?'

In the end, the Phoenix did neither, its wings were still spread open and the spear was going right toward its chest, and when it touched, just like with the bullets it went right through the flames, and continued onward until it hit the ground, far off in the distance.

'Does this thing have a physical body?' Quinn thought. 'If it doesn't, how am I meant to even defeat this thing? Wait... the only thing that has been able to stop the flames, and physically touch them, is the shadow. Can I do something with that?'

Quinn would have to try and see if his idea would work, but there was a worry, the Phoenix didn't seem to like the spear being thrown at it, even if it didn't hurt,

because for the first time it had opened its mouth and a large amount of flares from the sky, and all around were gathering around its mouth, it looked like a big attack was taking place.

'Quinn use the guns! Even if you have slowed down, the bullet's speed is unaffected and there is a way to quickly move yourself out of the way!' Alex suggested.

Thinking of these words, he listened to the advice and brought out the guns again. The fire left from the phoenix's mouth and it spread out wide. It didn't come out in a direct line, it was going all across the floor, in the air everywhere.

'Even if I blocked this with the shadow, the fire would get to me from the sides, everywhere. I could defend myself for a while, but then it would be a match of which one lasts longer, its fire or my shadow, and I don't want to risk that.'

Using the gun, Quinn fired a shadow bullet that managed to cut through the fire, but he didn't aim it at the phoenix but purposely missed it, then with the other gun he fired again, and his whole body sank down.

The next moment, Quinn appeared out of the other shadow portal that had been created, which was directly behind the phoenix.

'This is what Alex meant, with the two shadow guns I can use them similar to portals, entering from one and exiting from another, and I can keep firing out the bullets. The only problem is, now I'm right next to the phoenix.'

The heat this close to the phoenix was unimaginable, it felt heavy on his skin, suffocating and was hard for him to even breathe. When he did, his whole throat and body felt like it was burning up.

If it wasn't for the fact that he had strong levels of Qi supporting his body inside, he imagined a vampire, or others if they got this close, would simply burn.

[All stats have been lowered by fifty percent]

'This is what I was worried about, but now that I'm this close, I have to do whatever I can!'

[Soul weapon has been activated]

[Shadow mist has been used]

Out from Quinn's body the whole area was covered in particles, and it seemed to help with the heat somewhat. His stats were still incredibly affected but he did have somewhat a counter for that as well.

[Nitro Accelerate has been activated]

'Now the only thing I know that affects you is the shadow, so let's get a good hit in!'

The shadow mixed in with the Qi was covering Quinn's gauntlets and soon they had grown making his entire arms four times as big. They looked like the hands of giants. From above the top of its head, he swung both of his fists down, and they smashed on the phoenix's head.

The hit had landed perfectly, and the phoenix for the first time looked as if it had a physical form as it stumbled, but it caught itself shifting its legs, and turned its head to look at Quinn.

Out from its body, small fire balls came shooting toward Quinn. Since he knew he wouldn't be fast enough to block them, he switched to the guns again and started to fire at each of the balls.

Every time the bullet hit the balls of fire, shadow would cover them completely stopping them in their tracks mid-air. After blocking most of the fireballs, Quinn fired two shadow bullet portals moving himself to a different position and now was by the beast's side.

Immediately he started to fire the shadow bullets towards its head, hitting it on the side. It stayed on for a few moments and as the bullets built up, the shadow seemed to linger on the face of the phoenix a bit more.

'This is a problem, the shadow has never really been an offensive power. It's always been something that supports my other powers. Even with the Qi, really it's only giving the shadow a physical form and my Qi is doing all of the work.'

'Even as a bullet, it's doing next to no damage to the thing, but my shadow is the only thing that's working on it. How do I damage this phoenix enough to get rid of it!'

Still watching from the sides, Mundus thought things were getting interesting as it looked like there was now a battle of god slayer powers, to see which one was stronger.

Meanwhile, back on the Mermerial planet, things were going well. Stark had managed to set up a virtual meeting between the two leaders, and they both had agreed to support each other to fight against the enemy.

The meeting had come to an end, and Layla along with the others were inside the room as well. She rushed over to Ceril as she had a question to ask.

"What are you going to do now?" Layla asked. "Quinn has been gone longer than we originally expected and Jack and Jim could be getting closer."

"What do you want to do?" Ceril asked, knowing that Layla had come to her for a reason.

"Quinn was originally going to go to the Amra planet, correct? To ask them for their help. I can't just do nothing. Let's go there and ask for their help, and let Quinn focus on whatever it is he needs to do." Layla suggested.

Chapter 2169.4: God Slayer 2 (Part 4)

Physical attacks, Blood Aura, and Qi, all of these powers that Quinn had focused on training the most were useless against the phoenix, and to top it off, he was suffering from a side effect from the phoenix's power lowering his strength in general.

Not only that, but being so close to the phoenix in this type of heat seemed to somewhat affect him as well. He was feeling tired far quicker than usual, and he hadn't even moved that much.

'The only thing that works so far is the shadow so I'm just going to have to use that!' Quinn used the shadow portals to hop by the side of the phoenix's face, while still encasing both of his gauntlets in the shadow.

His fists were around ten times bigger than they usually would have been, and with the Nitro Accelerate active most of his speed had recovered. With this, he swung his hands twice, hitting the phoenix on one side of its face.

Its head swung but was met with another large shadow fist, before Quinn lifted both of his hands and slammed it on top of the phoenix's head.

It looked to be having some sort of effect as the phoenix shrieked but as it did, flames rose from its body upward. Quickly once again, Quinn had to do his best to get out there as he used the portals to send himself back down on the ground.

'The effect of the phoenix, I'm pretty sure with how I'm feeling it's also affecting my endurance. If it manages to get me with a clean hit with that power of its, then I will become nothing but ashes.' Quinn thought.

The problem was there was a slight delay when he would switch between using the shadow to attack and using the guns to create shadow portals. Quinn could create shadow portals without the guns, but due to the debuff it was much slower than using the guns that were unaffected.

The other problem with the guns was there was no trigger, it was almost linked to his body as the trigger part was pretty much infused with his body.

'Hit without getting hit, I can do this!' Quinn ran over on the ground, and pillars of fire started to burst out from the floor.

Using all his senses, he was guessing where the pillars of fire would appear. Slight cracks on the ground, thinking what the phoenix would do, and moving in unpredictable patterns. So far it was working.

Sprinting up ahead, Quinn had condensed the shadow and his Qi even more in his hand making it slightly larger again. Reaching the foot and underneath the phoenix,

he stomped on the ground, and swung his fist with all his body weight slamming it right into the leg.

The whole giant phoenix was lifted on its side, and now it looked like its body was about to come crashing down on him.

'Running won't be fast enough, and I can't switch to my gun in time. I hope this works.'

Gathering his blood aura that he hadn't been using in the fight, his entire body was covered in head to toe, but he started to shape it, making a point, making his whole body look like that of an arrow.

The second it looked like the body of the phoenix was about to hit him, Quinn pushed off and spun his body. The red aura hit the phoenix and as predicted, it passed right through its body.

All of the attacks went through the body like they were just flames, so why would it be any different this time. Quinn was just inside the large arrow of red aura.

Now on the other side, Quinn could see the phoenix had collapsed, still with the red aura surrounding his body, he dived back down spinning it, while gathering the shadow around his two hands.

Lifting them both in the air, he swung them down with great force as much as he could and hit the phoenix clean on its body. It screamed in pain once again, and the phoenix was getting ready to burst out a wave of heat but Quinn was ready for this as he was able to retreat in time with the guns this time.

'Quinn is extremely skilled, and even though most would have thought to stop using the red aura as it is useless, he has somehow still managed to utilise his powers to help him in his fight.' Mundus observed. 'With this alone, it won't be enough though, can you resolve the problem?'

The fight between Quinn and the phoenix continued in a similar fashion, with Quinn doing a lot of the attacking. He hadn't been hit directly by the flames, and utilised all his skills to hurt the god slayer again and again.

These blows were enough to damage many god slayers and yet, the phoenix looked fine. There were no signs of slowed movements, damage to its body, blood or any of the sort. It was almost impossible for Quinn to tell what was happening. Was he winning the fight or not?

Everything about the fight, being careful not to get hit, the damage and the effect on his stats was mentally draining him which was allowing him to get tired quicker, and then there was another problem.

[Nitro Accelerate has ended]

'Crap, I didn't rely on it so much in the fight but it let me pull off quicker attacks and dodge a few hits here and there when I needed it. I guess I just need to use it sparingly, I can still use the Nitro Accelerate, it will just take my HP doing so.' Quinn thought.

The fight continued with Quinn doing just that, and his pattern continued the same as it did, he tried to block out the thoughts in his head. Trying to concentrate on doing just as much damage as he could.

If he let the distractions get to him, it would just tire him out even more, and once in a while he was forced to use the Nitro Accelerate skill. After three hours of continuous fighting against the phoenix, Quinn was starting to feel extremely spent.

His MC cells were unlimited allowing him to use the shadow as much as he wished, but his stamina was already being affected, and his Qi was as well. It took a while for both of these to recover.

If he ran out of Qi, then the shadow would no longer have as much of a solid form as it had done so far during the fight, which meant there would be no way for him to defeat his opponent.

'I have to think, I don't have much time left with this. How did the god slayers manage to defeat the phoenix before? Did they just over power it with Mundus? No, even with his time stop ability that wouldn't help in this situation either.'

'Is it celestial energy? Even if that was the case I don't have that anymore, but I would think that the god slayer bullet would have the same effect but it's unable to do anything.'

The situation wasn't getting any better either, in order to avoid a stomp from the phoenix's foot in time Quinn had to use the Nitro accelerate once again, which he had been doing throughout the fight.

[20/100 HP]

'I only have 20 HP left... without the Nitro accelerate... everything... everything is working against me!' Quinn thought. 'I already used the blood up from my blood banks. If this is how it's going to end, then do I have no choice but to use that?'

'I have to, I'm not sure it will do anything, but I can't die here, to some giant fire bird!' Quinn thought.

For the first time during the fight in a while Quinn had used his guns to move a bit further out of range, and off the mountaintop, seeing the bird from a distance.

'I didn't want to use this while Mundus was watching but I have no choice.'

Chapter 2170.5: God Slayer 2 (Part 5)

What Quinn was thinking of doing was summoning his demon from, but there were a few reasons why he was against doing this. For one, Mundus was watching, if the form was powerful as he thought it was, he feared that the celestial might go back on his deal and consider him too much of a threat.

In a way, it was true as well considering Quinn wasn't in control when using this power. The only reason why he was fine with using it now, was because none of his family, friends, or even other life forms were around apart from the phoenix.

The second reason was because it was a wild card. It wasn't a guaranteed win and could possibly do nothing against the phoenix.

'Do I really want my final moments to be this... a memory that I can't even remember?' Quinn thought as he hesitated. 'But I shouldn't be thinking like that, I should be thinking with the mindset that I'll win, that I will return to my family!'

About to act, Quinn noticed something around the phoenix, now that he had taken a step back he could see something he wasn't able to see before.

That very family that Quinn was thinking about, that he was fighting for, and doing everything in his power to protect, had decided to leave the Mermerial planet. Ceril, Russ, Stark, Layla, Minny and Galen were now all aboard a ship.

They were in the middle of heading to the Amra planet to discuss political matters and ask for help. Layla wanted to take one less thing off his mind. If this was what he was going to do anyway, then there was no point wasting time waiting for Quinn to come back.

Ceril had also received permission to act on behalf of the Mermerial race to book an appointment, and it was the same for Stark as well, who had just managed to contact the Penswi before leaving the planet.

Apparently they had quite a surprise for a certain someone, and Russ was currently enjoying the nice surprise.

Lying out on a table was a case, and inside the case, there were three crystals carefully placed inside. They weren't just any crystals though, all three of them were nest crystals.

"How did you manage to get so many so fast?" Layla asked, completely stunned.

"Our people are hard and fast workers. Everything we do, we put our full speed into it, so of course we will gather crystals faster than any other planet. I take pride in that!" Stark said, as he hit his chest around 10 times in less than a second.

At one point and time the nest crystals were so hard to come by, they had done so much for them. Saved Quinn's life, elongated Logan's and had created a permanent clone of Vincent.

'With these three crystals, how much stronger will I be? If I was to meet the Blades again, could I take them out. Or perhaps that Dalki Blade, Quinn called him, in that vision.' Russ smiled to himself.

When going forward to reach out one of the crystals, a small boy had hopped onto the table and grabbed the crystal before Russ could take it.

"That's mine!" Russ shouted. "Give that back before I turn you into mush!"

The one holding onto the crystal was none other than little Galen who shook his head.

"Did you just threaten my son, right in front of me?" Layla asked, as she levitated a cup in the air, and went to throw it at Russ's head, but with a quick zip, Stark had caught the glass.

"Come on everyone, let's calm down here, we are all friends right, people say things in anger, everything is okay." Stark smiled.

Russ still wasn't pleased that his nest crystal had been taken from him, but he had no choice but to play nice, since he had the Qi command skill still active in his head.

"Little Quinn." Russ called out.

"Galen, his name is Galen!" Minny corrected him.

"Okay, little Galen, do you mind giving me my crystal back?" Russ asked with a fake smile that could be seen from a mile away.

Galen once again shook his head, and the next second shadows covered the crystal before it disappeared.

"What the!" Russ stared at Galen and then back at Layla, who just shrugged her shoulders. Due to the comment he had made before, she wasn't going to help him with something like this.

'This damned whole Talen family!' Russ screamed in his head. 'If there is some way to get rid of this Qi command... then that kid better watch out! Thinking of it, I wonder what would happen, if Quinn were to die, would the Qi command disappear then? I wonder if he's having a hard time right now.'

Observing from a little further away, Quinn could see something happening. The passing flaming clouds, the heat from the planet, the flare shots that would whirl around, they were going toward the phoenix.

When it reached its body, there was almost a slight glow, and at the same time, a slight rise in the temperature as well.

'While fighting against it... I thought I was having an effect because when I would deliver a big blow the temperature would drop slightly... but then it would increase again. Wait, why does the phoenix terraform every planet that it's on.'

'I thought it was just a natural effect of the beast, but what if it's something more. The flames, the entire planet is similar to how blood is to me.'

'Blood allows myself to heal, and the flames are allowing the phoenix to heal as well, but the whole planet is close to being a big ball of fire... so what do I need to do? Do I move it to another planet?'

'It hasn't moved from that mountain spot though, and there probably is some reason for that as well. It might be the point where it can heal easiest or something. With the god slayer's powers they can transport beings.'

'So if they just transported the phoenix to another planet and fought it then, that's probably how they managed to win.'

Thinking of this, it gave Quinn a plan, there was one thing he could do, and there was a high chance that it wouldn't work but either way he had to be quick. Placing both hands in front he was ready.

[Skill activated: Shadow lock]

A large portal of shadow appeared behind the phoenix from head to toe and its whole body vanished. Mundus stood up, surprised by what was happening but he could no longer see Quinn either.

This was because the two of them were now in the shadow space together.

'Due to its high level of power, it could break out of the shadow space without a problem, and with its flaming body it would just lessen the amount of MC cells I could use while it was in here... but now the big bird can't heal.'

Quinn used nitro accelerate once more and leapt up, punching the large bird right across its face. Immediately the temperature lowered and sparks of flames went off from the phoenix disappearing.

The phoenix had slightly gotten smaller, but it still looked like there was quite a bit or work to do in here.

"It's a good thing that I'm not the only one in here, and not the only one that can use the shadow... let's finish this thing."

Mundus travelled down to where Quinn was fighting, he was searching where the two could be, and eventually had come to a conclusion that it was one of the many powers of the shadow that he had used.

'It looks like he finally managed to figure it out. I wonder if he had done so in time.'

Mundus thought.

A few moments later he had received his answer, as Quinn had come out from his shadow space. He was covered in sweat and his skin looked a bit red for the first time, but he had a crystal in his hand.

"Alright... that's two down."

[2/5 God slayers eliminated]

Chapter 2171: A seed of Doubt

The god slayer crystal that Quinn was holding in his hand was relatively large and it looked like it was constantly burning. It was slightly hot to the touch which was a first for a god slayer crystal.

There were a few things that Quinn noted with these crystals, unlike the other beast crystals including the nest crystal, they were all different. Almost like the trait of the power that they had been placed in the crystal.

The one he had received from the monkey man was oddly filled with clouds, while this one with strong flames. It was good to note in case he came across more god slayer crystals in the future.

Then there was the planet itself, now with the phoenix gone the planet was starting to cool down slightly. It was still hot, but there was a significant difference.

'Still, I would find it hard for life to reappear on this planet. I wonder what happened, did everything die because of the phoenix, did they put up a big fight? Either way, now that the phoenix has been defeated Mundus said that there would be another one, out there somewhere.'

"I thought we might have lost you." Mundus said as he walked over with a smile on his face that made Quinn want to whack him right there and then, he was exhausted. Tireder than he had been for a while.

'I have to smile and be nice to this guy, he is the one after all that will be helping me recover.' Quinn thought.

Mundus was doing just that as he held out his hand, and just like before all of the aches and pains, even his mind, was feeling well rested.

"Is there a side effect to what you are doing?" Quinn asked.

As Quinn travelled through the universe and met celestials as other beings, he learned something that everything was quite balanced. A strong power would tend to have a side effect or drawback and it had to be the same for Mundus as well.

"Of course!" Mundus replied. "I am speeding up the time in your body, moving it forward as if you have rested for two weeks. Which also means that you have aged by those two weeks, but the real time still exists."

"For a human this could matter a great deal, but for you, I'm pretty sure you and your body are already immortal. Although you are no longer a celestial, your body was permanently changed back then."

"You won't die unless someone kills you."

Quinn didn't know whether this was a good or bad thing to hear. Layla had already lived for a long time, she was using her powers of Qi to slow down the ageing of her body, which already granted her a long life.

However, if Quinn could live forever, unlike the others, would that mean he would grow so old to witness their death, to die after his own children. Well, who knew what would happen to Galen since he was an incomplete celestial.

"Thank you for this." Quinn said. "But there is something else I need as well, do you have any blood?"

Resting his body wasn't going to bring back the health he had lost nor restore his blood bank, and with no other life on the planet there was nothing Quinn could take from. He was slightly hesitant about telling Mundus, but was sure that he had to have already known about vampires, or would eventually know about them anyway.

"I'm sorry, I don't just carry blood around with me, other than my own blood." Mundus replied. "There is a place where we can get some though. We don't have to teleport straight to the god slayer."

"We will get the blood you need and go from there."

The vampire settlement had been more unsettled than it usually would have been. There had been battle after battle, and each time fewer would return. At first there was high morale for what they were doing, and among a lot of the vampires, they still felt this way.

It was in their nature and they were putting a mark on the Universe, stating that they were the superior race. However not all vampires felt this way.

Some were starting to ask questions, why were they sacrificing their lives, for what? Some just wanted to stay home and be with their families.

Some thought they were fighting to protect their families but there was doubt in that as well.

This was something that was unforeseen by Jim, this feeling. Throughout vampire history, there always had been two groups of vampires. Those that loved to battle, felt as if they should rule.

While others believe that they should only use their powers to protect. They had been under the same banner, for a short time, but somewhat felt like they were going back to the same roots, especially with the last order they had received.

Sitting down in his own home in the kitchen Ronkin had both hands above his head.

"What are you going to do?" His dear wife asked.

"What do you mean? It's an order from the family leaders, from Jim Eno. I have no choice, I have to join the war." Ronkin said.

After what had happened to Nell, Ronkin had been avoiding the war, working as a hunter on the vampire planet. He realised there were things more important to him than honour and war badges.

Still, he would do anything to support the other vampires who were fighting, which is why he did best to gather the crystals they needed in their fights. It was just something he was unable to do anymore, fight in the war especially when he didn't believe in it.

That was until the order was made that every vampire was to take part in the next upcoming battles. There was an exception, if a vampire had a young child, then one adult could be nominated to look after the child.

If you had no children you were forced to take part, and it didn't matter how many children you had. Only one adult was allowed to look after them.

"I already spoke to Jone...please look after him." Ronkin said.

"No, why are you speaking like that!" his wife cried and screamed. "Why are you speaking like you're already dead?"

In the middle of her sobs, a loud alarm was heard which was the que for all of them to gather. Before, only those that wished to take part took part in the war, but there was a drastic change.

As the vampires were more successful taking over planets, more vampires needed to be left behind on those taken over planets as a base. Simply put their forces were lowering due to their universal expansion, so they needed more.

'Where is this even all going to end.' Ronkin thought, as he went to line up with the others. That's when he could see the look on many vampire's faces, they were just like him, they didn't want to do this.

Yet, they couldn't go against Jim's word, no one here was brave enough to, or strong enough to speak up about not wanting to fight.

'Actually there was one.' Ronkin thought back. 'He was pretty badass when he did it as well.'

The vampires had gathered in the square where the fourth original leader Hikel was standing at the front, ready to give them the order.

"I can see the worried look on all of your faces, but I promise you that we wish for every single one of you to come back home to your families." Hikel stated. "I know that I as well as the other originals will do our best to take the brunt of the battles.

"As you know, we have done well to track down the planets that contain celestials in hiding. The people from the other world that Quinn is trying to summon. On the next planet, we have discovered some signs of success of nearly opening a portal.

"To protect our planet, our race, and Earth we must stop them."

How many times had it been now, how many planets had they gone to, due to the same or similar reason. Not once did Ronkin see proof of these portals and nor did the other vampires.

"In order for you to do your best, we have gathered some information about our next target."

A 3D projected image displayed in front of them all.

"As you can see, the alien is muscular in size, and two times bigger than the average human. On top of that, they have a hard exterior rock-like skin. We have also managed to identify that the males have four arms in total."

Chapter 2172.1: God slayer 3 (Part 1)

Quinn had made a full recovery after fighting the phoenix thanks to Mundus and his powers. However, there was still one thing that he needed and that was blood. Using his blood aura and skills no longer used up his HP.

Still, blood was necessary for Quinn to heal, and could also be used for emergency healing after he filled up his blood bank skills. Without it, his next fight would be incredibly difficult and increase his chances for death.

"Before we head to the next set of god slayers I have an important message for you." Mundus said with a serious tone. "If, so far, you have displayed everything you have, then these god slayers will be too strong for you.

"Remember a lot of these god slayers that I am taking you to have been left alone for one reason or another. At least until this point and time. So I just want to warn you that you need a sure way of beating them."

"Is this your way of telling me, no matter how much trouble I'm in, that you won't help me no matter what. Regardless of how useful I am to you?" Quinn replied.
"You don't have to worry about me, I never expected help anyway. Take me to the next place."

Honestly, the whole thing Quinn didn't find it too bad for himself. He needed to push himself, face off against hard opponents, so he could go against the rest, go against Ray and H when he needed to.

The fighting helped with his skills, thinking outside the box, and problem solving skills. It was fine training by yourself but real situations where one's life was on the line was where a person would improve the most.

With that, Mundus surrounded the two of them in a bright light, and soon their bodies vanished. When Quinn opened his eyes again, he was wondering what he would see, what type of planet it would be.

When he could see the sight in front of him, it was very earth-like. There was a clear blue sky with white clouds, the temperature was warm, if anything it felt cold after the planet they had been on.

There were large grass fields, and the two of them were on a hill, looking at what looked like a fairly large village that was busy with people that looked human.

"Humans, are we on Earth?" Quinn asked.

"Does Earth really look like this?" Mundus asked.

Taking a closer look, it more so looked like an Earth of the past. Based on the style of clothing, and the housing structures, it was an era even before the Victorian era that the vampires liked to decorate their houses and clothes after.

It was almost as if they had gone back into the past of Earth, but there was also something different about it as well.

"This is not Earth." Mundus answered. "In the entire universe did you really think that you would be the only ones that were like yourselves, or at least look like yourselves? However, saying that you do share a lot of similarities.

"One of the bigger ones is the fact that the population seems to grow at a rapid pace, which means there are a lot of lives on this planet, which has made it the target of many celestials in the past.

"Remember my warning from before? This is one of those places. Despite the large population of lives, any celestial that has attempted to take control of the planet, in a bid to force them to complete their condition has perished.

"I have even sent a celestial fighter here before but they too had failed. The only upside is that the god slayer here is living on this planet without much trouble or wishing to travel further. Which is why for this god slayer, I have no information to give you other than what I already have, because I have no idea how powerful it is."

They did have some idea though, the fact that the local celestials and the fighter celestial Mundus had sent were defeated meant they had to be of a certain calibre.

The two started to walk from the hill and began to move down towards the large village, city, or whatever it was it was quite unclear. Quinn didn't run nor did he do anything that would make him seem different to the others around him.

"Hey, are you sure that you won't cause a panic when walking into a place like that, what if these guys have never seen an alien before, or they start calling you a demon or something?" Quinn asked.

"Really, I was considered the most handsome of my race?" Mundus replied, but he could tell that Quinn perhaps had a point and with a snap of his fingers he was covered in a white light and then his appearance had changed.

Mundus had taken the appearance of a tall slender man who wore dark clothing and a large trench coat that touched the floor. He had a powerful sharp look to his face that went with his jet black hair that was parted in the middle and swept a bit to the sides close to his ears.

With this, when the two entered the village, they were getting stares from all over the place. From the children, the merchants, the woman, everyone, they stuck out like a sore thumb.

"Are those two nobles, look at their clear skin and how tall they are... they're practically glowing." A female said.

"Couldn't you have turned into something uglier?" Quinn asked.

"I did not chose this form." Mundus replied. "It is simply based on the good looks I already had when I turned myself into a human version of myself, and besides, even if I was uglier, you would still stand out. Anyway, hurry up and just take one of these people's blood and be done with it."

"In broad daylight?" Quinn replied. "Are you mad?"

"No, I'm quite calm actually and wish to not waste anymore time." Mundus stated.

"VIRGIN BLOOD!" A market man yelled out. "Get your fresh virgin blood here!"

The answer seemed to fall right in front of their lap, but there was still a problem: they didn't have any money.

'I guess I could use my influence skill, it should still work on them because they are human right? It's not the right thing to do, but it's better than hurting anyone, and what type of planet is this anyway that sells virgin blood? That man can't be a good person.' Quinn convinced himself.

"Why are you just standing there?" Mundus sighed. "Ah, I see, very well, I shall help you out just this once."

Suddenly the whole area around them had frozen, no one was moving, there was no sound, this was Mundus's power. In the end, this might have been the best thing to do, so Quinn walked over and grabbed the vile of blood that was in a large flask that was sealed with a cork.

His inspect skill said it was okay, so he drank away, until his health was fully healed and both of his blood banks were refilled, now Quinn was ready to face his opponent.

"Can... you hear that?" Quinn suddenly asked.

"Hear something? That's impossible. I have stopped time in this entire area." Mundus claimed.

But Quinn was certain he could hear the sound of footsteps, when he turned his head, Mundus followed and both of them could see a hooded man, covered in a

raggedy robe. It was hard to see what his face looked like, but it was as clear as day as he was walking amongst all of the frozen people.

"Are you the people that have caused this?" the robed man asked in a husky deep voice, it sounded a bit scratchy.

"He can still move through my power, how is he stopping it?" Mundus thought confused.

"Ah, I see now, so it's you. I guess I should stop the more troublesome one first." The robed man threw out his hand, and in an instant a purple large orb ball surrounded Mundus and lifted him up in the air, about a foot off the ground.

In the ball, Mundus touched the edges but they didn't hurt nor do any harm.

"I'm guessing this is the god slayer?" Quinn asked. "Get out of the ball, and transport us to somewhere else, where there are no people."

A fight with so many people around them, there certainly would be a large number of deaths.

"I never thought I would say this, but I can't." Mundus answered. "I'm stuck in here, and my celestial powers aren't working."

Chapter 2173: Unlikely Allies

The Amra planets were many, but there was a difference from one compared to the other. The one where the strongest Amra warriors and leaders resided was now the only place that still had the tower.

A large structure that had been moved from its original place, rather than in the centre, it was now toward the back of the city, but it was still just as grand as it was before, allowing it to be seen from any angle and from anywhere within the city.

At the base of the tower, there had been a few changes compared to before, as businesses had moved close to the ground floor to maximise their profits. Forgers, weapon sellers, map sellers, and food stalls were all placed on the ground floor just outside of the tower.

There were still plenty of Amra who challenged the tower frequently and often those from the other planets would visit just to challenge the tower and see how far they could get. It was why business had flourished around the place like this.

A strange power still filled the tower and it worked the same way as before. There were ways a participant could leave the floor of the tower they were on by heading to a door. As long as the person had been to that floor before, they could teleport back to that floor.

Appearing at the bottom of the tower and exiting out of the door was none other than the leader Geo, but he wasn't alone as he had a group of humans following closely behind him. Some of them looked to be hurt and others were getting healed.

"Don't worry about the cost, all of you should eat what you want and rest up. Remember while you are here, everything is on me." Geo claimed.

Shiro turned around to look at the rest of the Blades, and he had his fist tensed up.

"We need to try again." Shiro said.

"Not until you are fully rested and have a plan." Geo stated. "I am in there with you to protect you, and I won't allow you to do foolish things, remember rest is important as well."

Shiro looked at Geo and his innocent smile was a disguise to hide his extreme strength. While climbing the tower floors there were many times, from beasts or from other Amra, where their group had faced a close call and Geo had saved them.

He was happy that when they initially met that they decided not to fight. It wasn't just Geo though, climbing the tower it made them see that there were plenty of Amra that were plenty strong.

"You managed to reach the fiftieth floor, that is no small achievement, not many could reach that far in the short amount of time that you have. I'll be honest, I didn't think you would get that far." Geo said, as he went to sit at an outside restaurant and order quite a bit of food for everyone.

The Blades were quite hungry and appreciated it.

The reason why Shiro was so annoyed was because it was now their third attempt at the fiftieth floor. They had hit a wall in their progress, but it felt like if they could get past the fiftieth floor, if they could break through this wall, then they too would all have a breakthrough in their power and skills.

All of the Blades, especially Shiro, had improved so much thanks to the tower. For the most part, they were all getting used to the gravity on the planet. It forced them to use the natural Qi in their bodies more to help them live every day life.

In the tower it was even more apparent because the higher floors also had higher levels of gravity that they needed to deal with. On top of that, Shiro had learned how to better use the others that were in the same body as him.

Vorden was the most skilled at Qi. He was a natural and it allowed him to combine Qi with certain abilities making him quite skilled. As usual, Raten was the best at hand to hand combat, and was the best at short range abilities that allowed this talent to shine.

Then there was Shiro, who was kind of a jack of all trades. At first, Shiro was quite a bit disheartened that he wasn't good at one thing in particular, but while going up the floors, he found that there were things that he could do that neither Vorden or Raten could. Which was why the three of them together were the perfect team.

Maybe not as much as when they were with Sil, but Sil was his own monster in that department.

Just as they were beginning to finish their meal. Another Amra had come rushing over to where Geo was. It was hard for the humans to tell each one of them apart, but this one looked more like Geo compared to the others, the rock skin was a different shade and more refined.

It was also clear that this person was in quite a high position, since when coming through all the stalls, all the guards bowed down and the people around.

"What is it, Dober?" Geo asked.

"Our space team has come into contact with an unknown spacecraft." Dober explained. "Due to what they said, we have allowed them to land, and currently they are currently staying at the manor."

"The manor?" Geo repeated. "Who would be in an unknown spacecraft, that you would allow them to stay in the manor?"

"Sir... it's because they were humans." Dober answered. "At least some of them."

Those that were still eating had stopped, some had dropped their eating tools, and Shiro slammed his hand on the table as Raten had taken control for a second he was so excited.

"Wait there are humans, they could be here to get us, but how did they find out where we are... maybe they are here to get rid of us?" Shiro thought, as he was going through a mix of emotions.

"If they are here to attack you, then we will protect you." Geo said. "Still, I think it would be best for us all to go see these humans together, and maybe you can ask them a few questions, it's very rare that we get visitors. Besides, they are with Nock which worries me a little bit."

In a large library, Layla and her group were patiently waiting. They had arrived with no trouble at all which was expected. They had heard from Quinn that this race also had a connection with him, and just like the Mermerials so far their trip had been pleasant.

That was until they had been placed in a room, with one of the Amra who had all of his arms folded and would constantly glare at them.

"Is there something wrong?" Ceril asked. "Why are you looking at us like that?"

"One human helped us out in the past." Nock answered. "But there are many of you. Just because one person is good, doesn't mean they are all good, so I can't trust you."

Layla thought that the Amra's words actually made sense, but she soon saw Russ step forward.

"You're right, we aren't all good, take me for example, I am a very bad person, and don't like it when people stare at me like you do." Russ stated.

He was in a strange mood, since he had absorbed two of the nest crystals on the way here, he wanted to try out his current strength, and these giant four armed aliens seemed like the perfect subject.

"Russ..." Layla said.

"I would also like to add that I am not human." Stark waved. "And I think that I am quite a good person."

"Purple man is good." Minny nooded.

The door behind bursted open, causing a distraction for the current scene, and they could see another four armed Amra take the lead.

"Alright let's see if these humans know each other." Geo said.

Shiro walked ahead with the rest behind him and stopped in his tracks, as he and Russ stared at each other.

"Russ... I thought you were-"

"Dead?" Russ smiled. "No, I am very much alive, and what a surprise to see the Blades all the way out here."

Chapter 2174.2: God Slayer 3 (Part 2)

Looking to his left, Quinn had to blink a few times to make sure what he was seeing was right. The Messenger of the Celestials, the gods that practically were in charge and controlling what happened in the entire universe, had been trapped.

He was floating inside a strange ball of purple energy, and it was something Quinn had never seen before.

'What is that ball made out of, is it an ability of some sort, or his god slayer power. I have no idea, it feels like nothing I have ever felt before.' Quinn thought, he didn't want to quite touch whatever it was.

At the same time, the god slayer in question stood back, away from them. It was clear he could use his powers from far away, and in Quinn's head he was taking note.

'He's most likely a ranged power user, which is why he's staying back there... but I need to make sure and see what he can do.'

At first, Quinn actually thought that Mundus might be joking, but there was something that he could hear that was different about Mundus that he had never heard before. His voice, it had changed slightly in pitch, and his heart was beating just a fraction faster.

It wasn't a state of panic, but these two things often meant that he was worried about something.

"Don't you think you should be trying to break me out of this thing?" Mundus asked.

"Your strong right, do you really need my help to break you out of that?" Quinn replied, trying to make sure he really wasn't joking. "And besides, didn't you already make it clear that no matter how much trouble I was in, that you wouldn't help me?

"And now look at this, you're asking for my help." Quinn taunted.

Truth was, he didn't want to get trapped in whatever it was that Mundus was trapped in, so instead he wanted to talk it out with the god slayer, who had chosen to not trap Quinn.

'Maybe it's a power he can only use on one of us at a time.' Quinn thought. 'He figured out that the time stop was due to him, so he might think that I'm weak and I can take advantage of that.'

"Why... are you doing this to us?" Quinn asked.

The man lifted his head, and under his dark hood a smile could be seen.

"Why? Why are you people who are not from around here on this planet? Not only that, but you decided to come here and use your powers to freeze the time around here, that would suggest that you are up to something."

There was something about this person that was truly terrifying and it was the fact that somehow, he was still able to move through the powers of Mundus. Even now in the ball, his powers were working as time was stopped, but if Mundus had decided to use his powers on Quinn, then even for him without his shadow it would take effect.

"We came to this planet by accident." Quinn answered. "We needed something, and because we didn't want to alarm anyone we decided to make sure no one would see us."

Quinn was pretty impressed with himself, in the past he had been quite the bad liar, but with all the situations he had been in and put through, he felt like he was getting a little better at it.

"Hahah, you are an incredibly bad liar." The man said. "It seems you have no clue what I have been through. Do you know how many people have tried to kill me, Raze the Dark Supreme Magus?"

"I have come across one like your friend before, and it was more than once. The last time I had managed to injure him quite badly. However, he had managed to escape using a strange power that I hadn't come across before."

"I don't have many rules I live by, but one of them is to take the life of those that try to kill me, and that person had made it so one of my few rules was broken. In turn I decided to study the particles of energy that was left behind and created a magic that would stop that from happening again."

Now Quinn at least had an idea of what type of power he was up against, Magic. The problem was it didn't help him much because he didn't really know what magic was. There weren't many people on Earth, if any at all, that used the power of Magic.

According to Ray it was a lost art among humans over the years. The only time Quinn had experienced magic was through Bliss, and the amount of things it could do were very hard to comprehend, and this individual called Raze seemed a lot stronger than Bliss.

The information of him beating other celestials seemed to ring true from what Mundus said as well, just he never expected this to work so against them like this.

'If he's a magic user, then it makes sense why he is keeping his distance, but if I heard him right, then that orb that is surrounding Mundus is only blocking the celestial energy, and not his ability.'

'It must be why Mundus' ability is still working but why he can't just teleport to the celestial space, or out of the strange orb. So that means it shouldn't have an effect on me.'

Quinn was shifting his feet slightly, he was ready to use the Nitro Accelerate ability to run over and give the Magus a single blow to finish him off. The element of surprise was still on his side, just as he was about to move though, Raze spoke again.

"Aren't you wondering why I haven't attacked you?" Raze asked. "Let me ask you a question, based on what I have seen, the relationship between the two of you, it doesn't seem to be too friendly."

For a second, Quinn looked at Mundus, because he had been by his side, in some ways he had slightly forgotten. In a lot of ways this situation was being forced on him.

"Well, I wouldn't say the two of us are exactly friends." Quinn replied.

"I thought as much." Raze replied. "I am a reasonable person, you see . I can tell that the energy that is coming off from you, is vastly different from the energy that is coming off from him.

"If my guess is correct, these beings have put a type of bounty on my head, but since they have failed a few times, they have asked for outside help and you are that outside help. Then you should think with your head a bit more.

"You are being forced to do this, why? Is it because this being is all powerful, because they can harm your friends and family? Well if that is the case, then doesn't this mean this is the perfect opportunity.

"This is your chance to kill that being and be free, it's your choice."

Chapter 2175.3: God Slayer 3 (Part 3)

An offer had been made, and one Quinn never thought would happen during this little task to defeat god slayers. The words by Raze had certainly made him think for a second. Out of all the celestials he had met, it was quite clear that Mundus was the most troublesome.

He was the one that had trapped him in the celestial space away from his family, he was the one that had fought against his family and stopped time. Although he had heard of these Ancient Ones, maybe they were only a position.

What if Mundus was the strongest celestial, wouldn't getting rid of him make a lot of his problems go away?

"That look on your face, I don't like it." Mundus said from the ball. "Don't tell me you are actually listening to this person. You know how vast the celestial space is. Doing what this person says would only make you a fool."

"Ah yes!" Raze said. "Threatening the only person that has a chance of helping you, that is an extremely smart thing to do. I can see why he is considering an offer like this."

Maybe at some point Quinn wouldn't have hesitated, but the words of what Mundus had said before had stuck in his head. The fact that if Quinn was in this situation, would Mundus help him? He said he wouldn't, and now the tables had turned where Mundus' life was in his hands.

"I'll give you time to think." Raze stated. "But please keep in mind that I have the ability to kill you both. So this is a very very generous offer."

It was true that fighting against Raze wasn't a sure win for Quinn, but he didn't doubt himself, that wasn't what was worrying him regardless of how confident the Magus was. It was the fact of whether or not he would ever have an opportunity like this fall into his hands again.

"Look, forget what I said before." Mundus said in a more panicked voice, since Quinn was taking a long time to answer, it was worrying him. Because the ball wasn't just blocking out his celestial powers it was stopping them completely.

"If you free me, then we can take this person down together. There is no chance that the two of us will lose, especially with my power."

For the first time Mundus was happy to help Quinn against the god slayer, but was this out of desperation or the fact that Mundus wasn't so cold hearted?

'Originally, teaming up with Mundus meant that the celestials would be off my back. He's right, in the celestial space there were thousands, no maybe hundreds of thousands of gods out there and those were the only ones that I had seen.

'Mundus holds a high position in the celestials and taking him down would mean they would be after him, and there was the unknown power of the Ancient Ones. Maybe he would be safe, but what about his family?

'If Mundus wanted to, he had the chance to take them all out there and then, but he decided not to. Then, there's the armour as well, if I take out Mundus, then we can't go to the other god slayers and create the armour needed to fight against Ray and the others.

'Am I strong enough, do I have all the help I need to defeat Jack and Jim without the armour? It isn't like Raze will help me in my battle just because I killed someone who was already trying to kill him. He has no debt to me, he could just kill Mundus himself.'

In Quinn's head, he was constantly flipping back and forth between the two options of which was better and which was worse.

'The armour though, Mundus said that I would have to give it back. Going through all of this to create a powerful armour, only to be in the hands of the celestials will give them a powerful weapon, and if eventually the celestials try to get rid of me, just like they have with all these other god slayers, then it would only give them more strength to do that.'

A sinister smirk appeared on Quinn's face as he thought of this dilemma, didn't it mean he could now take advantage of the situation as well.

"Mundus, you said to me that celestials stick true to their word correct?" Quinn asked.

"If you're talking about me helping you and not trying to kill you because you thought about killing me, then yes I won't try to kill you after this and help you." Mundus replied.

"That wasn't what I was talking about." Quinn said. "The armour that we are trying to create, you said that it would be lent out to me on a loan-like basis, but if I decide to help you, and fight against the god slayer, then I want to keep the armour."

There was silence for a moment from Mundus, he also never imagined he would be in this situation in the first place.

'I... can make that promise, but whether the Ancient Ones will be happy about it or not will be another thing altogether. However, they are unaware of what is happening right now.'

'Quinn is a family man... he isn't someone who would try to stir up trouble unless trouble comes to him... so this should be okay.'

"Fine, you have a deal, now get me out of here, and let's take him out!" Mundus said. He hadn't fought in a while and normally didn't get angry at things that happened, at the god slayers, or troubles that would head his way.

In a lot of ways he saw himself as a pacifist, but with his life put in danger, for the first time in more years than he could count, he was ready.

Instead of touching the orb directly, Quinn had summoned his shadow from the back, and created a large arm, he was controlling it, moving it over to where the orb was. He would try this first before trying anything else just in case it affected him.

It started to surround the floating orb, and the second it did, Quinn heard something.

'Wait!' A voice resounded in his head. It almost echoed but was heard loud and clear. The shadow stopped for a second, as he wondered where the voice was coming from.

'I've experienced something like this before... is this telepathy... is it coming from him?' Quinn thought.

'It is, and sorry for intruding but during that whole time, I was also listening in on your thoughts.' Raze said. 'I know everything you were thinking, this is not our battle to fight... and I believe I can help you.'

With the shadow frozen around the orb, Mundus was wondering just what was going through Quinn's mind right now.

Chapter 2176.4: God Slayer 3 (Part 4)

Telepathy was something that was an ability on Earth. It was a power that belonged to one of the vampire families and here it was being used by Raze. It was clear that he was extremely powerful but Quinn did wonder, what did he want to say to him, that he didn't wish for Mundus to hear?

'I know you are a good person.' Raze started the conversation still talking in Quinn's mind. 'You care about the people here, even though you have no relation to them whatsoever. Before the fight was about to start, you asked the being next to you to transport us to a place where a battle wouldn't harm others.'

'I have to admit to you, I am by no means a good person, and I am one that believes that one must be evil to vanquish evil. I even thought you might be like me, but I was wrong after reading your thoughts.'

'You seem like a strong person who has been through a lot, and I don't think it's best that the two of us fight each other.'

What was Raze trying to say, Quinn didn't quite understand. Because surely from reading his thoughts, he would have known they didn't have a choice, and didn't he wish not to let Mundus go?

'I won't harm the person who is next to you. I can tell that getting rid of him is most likely to cause serious problems for you. So in return I ask you to just leave this place.'

'This place, as much as I hate it, I do not wish for it to be destroyed and if the two of us were to fight I think that might be the outcome of this planet. This is where I belong and you have a place where you belong, you should go back to it.'

Hearing these words all of a sudden had made Quinn lose the will to fight against him. He and Mundus would be able to leave, and in doing so they would do no harm to the people on the planet.

The only downside was that they would lose a crystal, but Mundus knew plenty of places with other god slayers, so that wouldn't be too hard, how could he not accept this offer.

'I... accept... and I'm sorry for coming to your planet. It was never my intention to destroy another planet, just to save my own.' Quinn said.

Quinn did truly mean that. There were times when he fought against others because it was the best option, and he thought it was the same now, with him fighting against the god slayers, but he could always convince himself there was a reason for fighting, that the outcome would be better this way.

If there was a better option that would present itself, then he would take it, even if it would make his own life a little harder, that was just who Quinn was.

'It's a shame.' Raze said. 'Someone who is as strong as you, is obeying these beings that wish to meddle in our lives. I could never do something like that. Our destiny is not set, this is our destiny. Let me tell you, nothing is set in stone, every person has the power to make change.'

It was strange words of advice, but one that he would take with him. He never believed in things like destiny, it was why he chose to fight so hard in the first place.

"Oh, before I go." Raze said. "I will disappear from this place and release your friend. I want the two of you to be gone, to not interfere with a single person here. These are my people to mess around with."

"I don't care if you are gods, demons, or devils. If you don't listen to what I say, I will hunt every single person who is related to you down and kill them right in front of your eyes."

Looking deep into Raze's eyes, and sensing that there was no quiver in his voice, Quinn knew he meant those words.

Raze started to put his hands together, and yellow energy sparked between them. An item could then be seen in his hands, it was a crystal and inside the crystal there was sparking energy as if a lightning bolt had been captured in it.

"I have no use for this." Raze said as he threw it up in the air and Quinn managed to catch it.

When holding onto the item, Quinn knew exactly what it was, it was a god slayer crystal.

"It will have a better use for you, than it will for me. I have a few of those, they are like trophies to me, so don't feel like you are indebted to me and remember what I said." Raze started to disappear.

His body moved like mist and completely vanished. There was no trace of his power, just like he was never there, and Mundus fell to the ground as the orb disappeared as well.

"Did that man just give you a god slayer crystal?" Mundus asked.

"Yeah, it's definitely a god slayer crystal." Quinn answered.

The system had updated even though Quinn hadn't defeated the god slayer, which was why he was sure of it.

[3/5 God Slayers have been defeated]

'I don't really know what happened there, but there are only two more to go. I need to focus on the task.' Quinn thought.

"Alright, let's get out of here, and why don't we talk about why it took you so long to make a decision." Mundus said, as the two of them were covered in a white light and disappeared from the planet.

Raze Cromwell is a Dark Magus from another book I have planned, which will start when one of my current books end.

Raze Cromwell was one who had suffered his entire life. A cruel upbringing that had forced his nature to turn sour. In order to survive, he did everything and anything he could, eventually giving him the name Dark Magus. A title that was only given to the very best of mages.

"Everything in this world was taken from me, So I shall take everything from the world."

The five Supreme Magus had gathered to eliminate the great Raze, on his last legs, the Dark Magus had one more trick up his sleeve. Activating a forbidden spell, he finds himself living in another world, a world full of martial artists. A world where one could destroy mountain tops with their fist, but Magic still exists in the new world, and he's the only one that knows about it.

The book will not be part of the System/Talen Series. My Dragon System, My Werewolf System, My Vampire System. (There are two more books planned for this series but much shorter, more like Movie books)

Chapter 2177.1: Blades Vs the God Slayer (Part 1)

The battle with the Chained was originally when Quinn and Peter's return had been broadcasted. At the time no one was quite aware that it was them that had appeared and they just assumed that it was a new group. They had assumed it perhaps was a guardian that worked for the Red Vampire's Laxmus.

Originally, the battle had ended and it had done so with the presumed death of Russ. There were many that thought he might have just gone missing, but according to Quinn himself, he stated that Russ was indeed dead.

However, it was only later that Quinn himself would find out that Russ was alive, which was why seeing Russ now in front of them, had come to a complete surprise to Shiro.

Geo could feel the tension between the two in the room, they were trying to kill each other with their stares, which is why he decided to step in the middle of the two.

"I assume you two aren't good friends then, are these humans enemies of yours?" Geo asked.

It was at that point that Layla had remembered as well, the fact that Russ had a deep hatred for the Blades, and it was the same the other way round. When the Chained were a large group, there were members of the Blades that had lost their lives due to the countless struggles.

'What... are the Blades doing here, in the first place, how are they so far out on this planet?' Layla thought, and then it hit her. She remembered in the simulation they had watched, the one that Logan had shown them.

Sil had transported the Blades far away, to a distant planet where Jack and the Dalki wouldn't be able to do them harm. It was the only explanation to why the Blades were currently here.

"Shiro!" Layla called out.

Hearing his name, he turned his head and looked at the others, seeing Layla had allowed him to snap out of his rage-filled anger.

"Layla, you're here as well, why are you with Russ, and where is Quinn?" Shiro asked.

"These people know Quinn?" Geo raised an eyebrow trying to follow the conversation. "If they are companions of Quinn, then they can't be bad people."

"The big stone man knows dad... Why does dad know so many aliens?" Minny asked.

"That's Quinn's daughter!" Geo scratched his head. Never did he dream he would meet the god-like being's family.

Shiro started to walk towards Layla, planning to hear what had happened so far, ignoring his anger for a moment. Midway there, a person moved in his way though.

"Do you think, now that you are in front of me, I would just let you go?" Russ said with a smile. His legs had transformed into the two thin limbs and they were purple in colour. These were the legs of the Penswi.

Dashing the short distance, Russ had moved too fast for Shiro to act and a fist was thrown out landing cleanly on Shiro's cheek. He had no time to use his powers to block the attack, but his body did instinctively act with Qi to protect him.

Still, Shiro was lifted off the ground, into the air and Nock had caught him.

"You b*stard!" One of the Blades shouted, as they fired out a lighting strike, and all the other Blades and ability users started to use their powers as well to fire straight at Russ.

"I have to thank you Stark for those nest crystals, now I can use powers a bit more freely." Russ said, as he lifted his hands that were covered in the shadow power, and raised them from the floor, they were stopping the attacks.

Seeing this, some of the Blades started to charge forward, and Shiro had readied himself a bit.

"Do you want help, taking this one on?" Nock asked.

"No, this one is mine!" Shiro shouted, as he ran forward but in his mind he soon had changed to Vorden.

"What is happening, aren't these humans, aren't they your friends?" Stark asked, a little panicked.

"Those two have a complicated history." Layla replied. "We need to stop them!"

The problem was she was wondering what the best way was to stop them. She knew that Russ was unable to harm the Talen family. He needed to do everything to protect them, but it didn't state he couldn't attack the Blades which was how Russ was able to act right now.

At the front of the group. Vorden used the water ability and covered it in the second stage of Qi. Knowing Qi the best, he could sense that unlike the shadow Quinn used, this shadow had no properties of Qi.

Meaning, that if a Qi ability as such was used on it, it allowed his attack to go through, and that's exactly what he had done. The water had split open the shadow that was blocking the attacks in half like a wave.

"You have no idea, what I am capable of, right now." Russ smiled, as behind the shadow, of all things Russ had summoned a Dalki, a four spiked Dalki. There were plenty of those in the room that had seen a Dalki before so he could extract it from their mind and summon it.

While at the same time, he had to pick the right level of spikes so it would allow him to summon an ally while also allowing him to still use powers and transform from his own body.

Immediately the Dalki went to swing its arm, throwing a punch at Vorden, and he ducked down, avoiding it as it hit nothing but air.

'Raten it's your turn!' Vorden said as a switch was done, and a facial expression had completely changed.

Soon, flames could be seen on Raten's hands, as he delivered his own punch right into the Dalki's stomach. It was a heavy blow since it was infused with Qi as well, causing the Dalki to hunch over a little bit.

'They... have gotten stronger, to do that against a four spike Dalki, and not switch abilities?' Layla thought.

However, it wasn't as if Russ was just going to stand there and do nothing, he also practically could attack all of the other Blades and use them as a type of hostage.

"RUSS Stop, SHIRO STOP attacking!" Layla shouted.

The two don't seem to listen as Russ was getting ready to summon something even more powerful, while keeping the shadow power to protect himself, and the Penswift legs for fast movement in and out of the way.

Layla thought about jumping in, but she was hesitant, but if it was Quinn, he would have easily been able to stop the fight.

"Hey, didn't you hear the lady!" Geo was glowing with power, and was right by Russ's side, and his arm was already swinging toward Russ's body. "She told you to Stop!"

Russ tried to use his legs to run away, while using his shadow power to block the attack, but this wasn't an ordinary slap, it was a slap with celestial energy that hit the

shadow, and the power went through it, throwing his body right through the wall of the library and into the hallway of the manor.

"You didn't listen either!" Nock shouted, as he did the same with a glowing hand and hit Shiro's body, sending him through the wall again.

All of the Blades at that moment, stopped using their ability, and were no longer in a fighting stance.

"Alright, if you two haven't cleared your heads, there are a lot more slaps from where those came from." Geo said.

Russ was the first one to get up off the ground.

"These damn aliens are taking me for a fool... I see I shouldn't worry so much about hurting those around me, and just thought of getting rid of you all!"

"Stop Russ." Layla said. "This will do nothing, what is the point of getting your revenge here of all places. What does it even achieve at this point, when there are those out there that are running the lives of others.

"If you continue to insist on fighting Shiro, then I will get involved."

Minny was also standing by her side ready to use her powers and her ring, and it looked like Ceril and Stark would join in as well. With all of them and that strange sword, along with the two strong giant rock aliens, Russ wasn't so sure he could win this battle, and there was no point wasting his energy.

"Fine, I give up." Russ said. "But I don't give up on just taking out the Blades, I'm just putting it on pause."

When Shiro finally got up, he thanked Layla by moving his lips.

"That wasn't the reunion I was hoping for, so tell me, why are you here?"

Chapter 2178.2: Blades vs the God Slayer (Part 2)

Most of the Blades were told to rest in the entertainment room or the dining room for the time being, while the rest of them gathered in one of the many large reception rooms that the manor had.

This was to stop the tensions and disputes from happening between Russ and the rest of the Blades. Shiro would simply relay the information to all of them afterwards. The ones that had gathered in the reception room sat on the hard surfaces that had been made.

The couches they were sitting on weren't soft and cushioned, instead they were sharp edged and had hard flat surfaces made of a type of shiny rock. A lot of the building was like this, made of sharp points, squares and rectangles, as it suited the Amra, especially since they had hard skin in the first place, but everyone else did find it a little uncomfortable. Regardless, now in the room together, the first thing Geo had done was apologise for hitting Russ.

The main issue he had was the fact that they were fighting in his library. It was one of the additions he had made since becoming leader, wishing to broaden his knowledge about various subjects.

Before, the Amra only had one goal: climbing the tower and growing stronger, but Geo wanted his people and himself to find interests and goals in other things. Which was why he was expanding his reading.

In his haste, he had panicked when the two were fighting, and decided to intervene and in turn Nock followed. In the end, the two of them had done more damage to the books than anyone else, when knocking them through the walls.

"So... right now I feel like we are all quite confused." Shiro started the conversation. "We know why we are here, but why are you guys here, did you know we were here?"

It was the expected question and Layla out of everyone decided to do the explaining and when she did, she started right from the beginning... the day when Quinn was meant to get an award, the day he went missing.

Layla, explained a little bit about the celestials and how they were keeping Quinn locked away and then explained her own journey as well. Shiro had figured out that this must have happened while they were fighting with Jack.

Because they were unaware of the event, and at the time they were the only ones that didn't turn up for the award ceremony, but soon Shiro was in for more shocks.

The fact that everyone had forgotten about them, the fact that everyone had forgotten about Quinn and Layla, that there was a power out there that allowed them to do that. She explained why Russ was with them as well.

That's when they needed to explain how they met up with Ceril, and what they had seen, and what Logan had shown them. After all of it, running away and travelling through the universe, they had picked up a few allies and continued to travel eventually ending up on the Amra planet.

A planet that Quinn had claimed to help out in the past, and was looking to ask for their help now.

"That's a lot to take in." Shiro replied. "I can't believe it, I can't believe all of that happened while we were away, while we were stuck here on this planet, and Sil." Shiro's fist was clenched and was bright red. He was squeezing it so hard.

"They're using him, using his power like he's some type of human battery! How could they do that!"

After calming down a bit, Shiro also had some more questions, and these were related to Quinn as to where he was now. They briefly explained the truth as they had no clue where he was, but were sure that he would return to the Mermerial planet safely and as quickly as he could.

"That's why we decided to get a head start. You said your name is Geo correct, and Shiro this goes to you as well." Layla said. "The enemies that Quinn has been facing, Jack and Jim, are going through the Universe, capturing planets and destroying race after race, enslaving them."

"They will soon be in this area as well, it's only a matter of time. Which is why, Quinn, as well as the other races, are asking that we work together this time, and fight against them. So I ask, do you wish to work with us?"

Geo and Shiro looked at each other at the same time, the answer was obvious and they had already decided a while ago.

"Of course we will help." They both said.

"The Amra will have to fight the enemy attackers and working together is better than working apart, it will be a pleasure to fight by the side of the Mermerials and the Penswi." Geo looked at both of them.

"And, no matter what, we need to get Sil back, and solve all of this... we should come up with a strategy. They could come at any moment, and we need a plan to deal with them."

Layla agreed so the group decided to share their strengths there and then. After that, they also shared everything they knew about the enemy, and using all of the information they were forming the best plan they could think of at the time.

Shiro had his finger on his chin, and his head was quite exhausted after learning everything.

"The enemy is quite versatile. They have the vampires, and the originals on their side, which have strong abilities and they have the Dalki blood powering them. They are stronger than they were before.

"Then, there are the Dalki, their numbers seem to be quite large, and there is a mixture of those working by Jim's side as well as Jack's side, but according to the information we have, the ones that we should worry about are on Jack's side.

"Because with his power, he has managed to give the Dalki abilities. You have the humans and their abilities as well. The only good thing is that the Graylash family have decided to stay out of this, but Logan will be sending forces pretending to be on his side, maybe we can use this at some point.

"Still, there are the big threats that aren't on our side to deal with. The person called Ray, who had the power to match up against Quinn. Then there is H, the Dalki who defeated Sil.

"Chris is extremely powerful, and Peter is by his side as well. Currently, we don't know the strength of Jack and Jim, but they have to have something to stay in power. Otherwise everything would have fallen apart by now. The originals and the leaders have had their memories changed, like Muka as well. Honestly this is all a bit much, but that isn't even the biggest threat."

They all knew what Shiro meant when he said this, because there was something that could turn the tides.

"It's Sil." Russ said. "As long as they have that brat, then they can turn our allies against us."

"Although you are right, I don't think it will be that easy." Layla replied. "For one there are some of us that are unaffected by the memory change. There seems to be one mass factor when using the mass memory change as well."

"They can only change the memory of the person out with another. Because they are doing a mass change, they can't make it complicated as every person's memory is individualised. Think about it as well."

"Jim and Jack, don't know that Quinn has saved the Mermerials, or are working with the Penswi and the Amra, and they don't need to know. They will come here, attacking thinking they are taking over just any other planet."

"During the fight, we just have to do our best to help out. During the fight as well, that is when their guard will be down the most. There will be fewer to protect Sil. We can send a small quick team that can get in there and break Sil out. Once Sil is free, he can use his powers to turn everything against Jack and Jim. Saving Sil is the key to winning this battle."

The plan was being ironed out a bit more, and more allies were joining them. Meanwhile Quinn had two more god slayers he needed to beat to get what he believed he needed to win this war.

Chapter 2179: Don't stand out

At first, travelling using the celestial energy felt strange for Quinn. It wasn't like using the teleporters, it was almost as if his whole body was being dragged against his will.

He remembered his time during a celestial, depending on his level, that he too would have been able to do something like this, but alas, although he did reach the higher levels, since he was trapped he never got to experience the full capabilities of what it was like to be a celestial.

'It does make me wonder though, is there a way to counter this ability? There has to be, the last god slayer had come up with a way to counter the Celestial energy completely so there has to be a way.'

'Otherwise, if I ever did get on the celestial's bad side, couldn't they just teleport me some place far away? Just like Bliss did. Then I would just be transported again and again, and away from the people I want to protect.'

There was one thought that maybe his Shadow ability could do something about it. After all, when being transported he didn't usually use any of his powers in case it did interfere.

With the white light fading, the image of the planet they were on was starting to become clearer.

He wondered what planet, what opponent he would go up against next, and whether or not he would have to use the tricks, he still had up his sleeve, even if he didn't, it was still something that he wanted to try out as there wouldn't be more or better opportunities than this.

'The land, it's hard and dry.' Quinn kicked the floor a few times. 'It's hot as well, but at least it's not as hot as the Phoenix planet we were on.'

When looking around more at the area around them, Quinn was starting to notice that it looked very similar to the phoenix planet that they were on.

"Feels familiar? That's because we are on the Phoenix planet." Mundus stated as he could see the other person was confused. "I thought I should take us to a planet where there are no others, no lives, no gods watching us, so we could have a nice little chat."

In his thoughts, Quinn had almost forgotten that he had angered Mundus somewhat. To be honest, he did have the right to be annoyed but Quinn still stood by what he had done, because he too had a right to be annoyed based on what had happened in the past.

"Do you want to fight me...try to kill me?" Quinn asked, summoning his shadow body, so Mundus was unable to use his powers.

"Calm down." Mundus said. "I have no wish to fight. If I wanted to do anything I would have left you on that last planet and just left myself."

"We need to talk about the deal we made due to the sticky situation I was in."

Quinn thought the deal was quite simple, so why would there be any need to talk about it, but he let Mundus go on, since he was happy that the two of them didn't have to fight.

Quinn was still unsure about the Celestials strength even if he did have a counter.

"I am happy to comply with the deal. I am a celestial of my word, and I have always stated that a Celestial's word is important." Mundus said.

"We have to keep our promises, so that way the Celestials have order amongst themselves. Otherwise no one can trust anything."

"However, that means I do have to make one thing clear, and that is the fact that the deal me and you made is between me and you."

"I will allow you to keep the armour, but I have to warn you, that if the Ancient ones found out about this, they would never accept such a thing. So when you have this armour of yours, it is best that you do everything in your power to hide it from other Celestials."

"The Ancient ones are aware that I wish to make you an agent, but they are unaware of what we are doing now, and we need to keep it that way."

"If somehow they do find out, then I will claim no part in this at all."

The more Quinn hung out with Mundus so to speak, the more rational he found him. The celestial weren't always on his side but he was one that did his duty, and seemed to be the most fair.

Still, there had to be a reason Mundus was scared of the Ancient ones finding out. They had to have a power that was beyond even his, and apparently Immortui also had power that made the Ancient ones scared.

"I understand, this works well for both me and you, so then I have a request to make." Quinn wanted to take advantage of the tense situation a little bit more.

"You have to have your reasons for worrying about the ancient ones, and you seem confident that if they did find out about the armour, that they wouldn't trace it back to you."

"So I ask you for a favour, in these two upcoming battles, whatever power I show, you keep to yourself as well.

"I know you are the messenger and have to report to them everything, but there is something I noticed with the God Slayers that we fought against, especially the first one.

"The reason why he was on a hit list, it wasn't because he was evil and taking lives. I doubt that when it comes to the wider majority, but it's because the Ancient ones were worried.

"If they find out about the armour, if they find out about my other powers, then it is very likely they will ask for the hit to be taken on me.

"If that does happen in the future, I will not blame you, I just wish that you aren't the one that is the cause of it. After all, I saved your life back there."

Mundus wanted to stomp his feet on the ground, but he thought that it would be quite childish of himself to do so, so he restrained himself.

Every time he thought back to what had just happened he wanted to punish himself for getting caught.

Never had he been in such a vulnerable position before, it was an embarrassment and in some ways, he just wanted Quinn to never mention what happened again.

"Fine, I agree, and it seems you have caught on quickly. As I said before I am one that always keeps my promises, but as for the Ancient ones, they never make any promises so if I have one word of advice. Don't get their attention."

Mundus said these words knowing full well Quinn had already somewhat got their attention. There were hundreds of thousands of celestials and god slayers yet Quinn had stood out among them.

"Alright, I'll take you to the real place now." Mundus said. "This one, is one that you will really need."

-For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

P.a.t.r.e.o.n jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2180.1: God Slayer 4 (part 1)

While being transported Quinn of course wondered what Mundus meant by really need? He could only guess he was talking about the armour. There were a few times where Mundus had stated that these God Slayers he had selected were due to him believing that they were the best choice.

However, if Quinn was unable to get the god slayer crystal, almost like they had done on the last planet, he believed Mundus could always just take them to another God Slayer. Did this mean it wasn't an option, that he needed to defeat this opponent no matter what?

'Well, at least we aren't on the Phoenix planet anymore that's for sure.' Quinn thought. He was only confused last time due to the drastic temperature change without the Phoenix, it was dropping in heat fast after the it had died.

In front of him, there was a dark atmosphere, most of his fights had been during the day, but this planet was covered in darkness. It was hard to tell if it was due to it just being night time, or because the clouds above were so thick, it almost looked like it let no light in. Apart from the lighting that would come out from the clouds from time to time lighting up the area here and there.

Looking at his feet, Quinn noticed that he was standing on what could only be described as a large pillar. They were high up in the air, and could see far and wide across the land. From what he could see there looked to be large lakes of water, but they were filled with a dark sludge of sorts. The strangest thing were the random large pillars made from the ground.

It was hard to tell if they were intentionally made and put there, as they weren't perfect in shape, meanwhile they were spread across the entire area. Standing tall like skyscrapers. §

"This doesn't look like a nice place." Quinn commented.

"Look at the beasts that are here, can you tell that they are different?" Mundus asked.

Looking around, although there seemed to be no signs of intelligent life of the sort. At least not a civilization like the last planet, unlike the Phoenix planet there were plenty of beasts. They were giant in size, far bigger than the usual beasts Quinn would come across who were already large.

What he was looking at, nearly all of them were no smaller than the Dragon the Dalki had been made from, and nearly all of them looked to be just ferocious.

'Take a look at them, there must be something I'm missing?'

It was a habit now, it had become second nature for Quinn to just use the inspect skill on everything he could see to gather as much information as possible. There was no need to even select the skill from the system anymore he just thought about the skill and information would pop up there and then.

"It can't be, this is crazy!" Quinn thought as he looked at them all. "Every single one of those beasts are really at the Demon tier?"

He had been on planets before where there were a high amount of Demon tier beasts, but this was nothing compared to those. Every beast that was roaming around was at the Demon tier. If there were those that knew about this planet, he was sure that multiple races would be fighting over calming it, but with so many dangerous monsters, could they even take it?

"I guess that means, this time I will be going up against a god slayer beast rather than a human type?" Quinn asked, even though the answer was obvious.

"With every opponent you have faced I have given you an amount of information that will assist you, but not help sway the fight in any way, and I shall do the same now." Mundus explained.

"Yes, the one you will be fighting is a beast that has thrived on this planet. A planet where there are strong enemies left and right, but even here, in a place like this, there is one that has managed to reside above all."

"I want you to imagine for a second what that would take, what type of beast would be able to do such a thing, and your answer is right here on this planet. We have given it the nickname king of beasts."

Hearing this, Quinn thought that maybe Ray, who claimed to be king of the dragons which was a type of beast, would have to disagree with that. Although, whether or not Dragons were beasts was another thing to think about all together.

From what he had heard, they seemed to be more so a separate existence. Not quite fitting in any category, at least that was true for Ray.

"Due to this, the official God Slayer has been called King Behemoth." Mundus continued. "The beast is so large that when it moves, the whole planet shakes due to its weight and force. It towers over these pillars as if they were nothing."

Quinn didn't know if Mundus was exaggerating or not, was it even possible for a beast to be so heavy, or so dense in nature it would shake the planet. Wouldn't that mean it would have its own gravitational force as well.

Now he wished he had paid a bit more attention in his classes at school, but it didn't change any of the facts of what he would have to face.

"The Behemoth is a creature who seems to withstand anything. All of our attempted attacks had ended in failure, but not because they had perished, it was because they simply couldn't do any real harm to the beast.

"It was a matter that was put up on the ladder of importance, and either Myself or maybe even an Ancient one would have to deal with this, but in the end they classified this god slayer as unimportant.

"For one, the god Slayer is unable to leave the planet. It has no skills to do so, and there is no life on the planet that can help it do so. So we simply decided that the best thing to do would be to wait it out. Wait until the beast dies of natural causes, but strong beasts can live up to 1000 and 1000 of years, with some getting even stronger.

"There are yet to be any signs of this beast slowing down. If i'm honest, I really see it hard for you to beat this one, even with all of your strength. You might need to even pass and give up, but I believe that if you do manage to kill it, and obtain its God Slayer crystal, it will be the strongest component to your armour set."

There were a lot of words, one that made the God Slayer seem just as powerful as those before it, but where was the god slayer? With that question in mind, Quinn could feel the whole ground beneath him move.

-For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

P.a.t.r.e.o.n jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2181.2: God Slayer 4 (Part 2)

The shaking was violent and felt unnatural. Usually even if there was an earthquake of some kind on a planet, Quinn would be able to keep his footing still. Yet for some reason, the shaking of this not only shook the ground but was shaking his whole body as well.

It was as if the air around him was violently shaking about, causing him to move.

'Is this the Behemoth moving?' Quinn thought. 'I'm not even fighting it, I can't even see it and it's shaking the entire place this much. How would I get a clean hit on the thing if I can't even stop myself from moving.'

Due to the way the shaking was working, even if he was to fly or jump, his whole body would still vibrate, and he wasn't the only one being affected, those below were as well.

Eventually though, the shaking had come to a stop, it had only lasted a few seconds. The pillars that they were standing on were still intact, and both of them were fine.

"What happened?" Quinn asked.

"The Behemoth must be sleeping, I imagined it just moved a bit to change its position, that's why the shaking has stopped. We have come at a good time." Mundus claimed.

'That was just from it moving, I wonder how big this beast really is?' Quinn thought.

Taking a minute, Quinn looked down below, he was reluctant to just drop down. He could head straight for the beast but instead he was thinking about something else, about the words that Mundus had mentioned.

There was a chance that he would fail to defeat this god slayer, but it wasn't a problem if he did. However, that didn't mean he couldn't take advantage of the situation they were in now.

Looking carefully, Quinn saw a large winged creature that looked somewhat like a giant moth, only it had long legs with multiple joints out of its side like a spider and had two fangs at the front like one as well.

It wasn't too far away. At that moment, he started to gather his blood aura, swirling it around in both arms. He was condensing the power, while on the pillar he had the time to gather and condense the energy, finally Quinn had made two pure red blood spears in his hand.

Before Mundus could ask what he was planning to do, he had already leapt off the pillar a great distance, just far enough to jump over some of the demon tier beasts below, and reached his target, the strange moth-like beast.

While on his way down, he threw the blood spears as hard as he could, the tip of both of the spears started to spin. The blood spears had pierced right through the demon tier beast, going through the bottom of its body and the middle segment, leaving the head and wings untouched.

Screaming in pain, the beast tried to lift itself, attempting to fly away, but when it reached the end of the spear it had hit the bottom part which was larger than the middle section of the spear, it was like a square block.

When creating the spears, Quinn had done this on purpose; the blood spears were never meant to kill the beast, but to stop it from flying away. As Quinn continued to fall, he gathered blood around his gauntlets, opened his hand like tiger claws, and the aura flowed around his fists creating an image of a tiger.

Quinn landed right on top of the beast's body, slamming both of his claws right into the centre of the beast. Waves of red energy went flying and swirling about in the air.

Quickly, Quinn then jumped off. The beast looked incredibly weakened. Quinn had come a fair way from what he was before, he never imagined that he would be able to kill a demon beast of all things, with just three blows, but his aim was never to kill it in the first place.

Now in front of the beast, Quinn had pulled out his dual blood guns and started to fire away, firing at its wings, firing at its legs, and other parts of its body but he made sure not to hit any of its vital spots.

Finally, when the beast looked weak enough, that was when Quinn decided to use his shadow and when it went out, it covered the beast for a couple of seconds and when the shadow disappeared, the beast looked different compared to before.

The spears that were in its body had disappeared, and its eyes were darker with a faint shadow like mist coming off its body.

[You have successfully infected a beast!]

'I won't waste a trip to a planet like this. Right now, what's in front of me is a gold mine that I can use to help in the war. I already have a number of beasts, and three demon tiers, including the ones at the settlement, but if I can capture even more demon tiers to help... then they can go up against the five spiked Dalki and above!'

Some beasts that were the same type could live next to each other, but demon tier beasts were unique and it was the same here. Nearly every demon tier beast looked

different. If the beasts were to get within each other's territory, then it would most likely start a fight immediately.

Which was why, the demon tiers were spread quite a bit apart from each other. This was perfect for Quinn as it wouldn't draw the agro of the other demon tiers while he was fighting, so all he had to do was continue weakening them one by one.

Mundus had eventually appeared by Quinn's side to have a look at what he was doing, and looked at the beast for a few moments and noticed it was no longer attacking, and the energy that was surrounding it.

"I'm guessing this is your doing? What are you doing, shouldn't you be conserving your energy for fighting against the Behemoth, and not wasting your time fighting the rest of these?" Mundus asked.

"This is part of my plan to take the Behemoth down." Quinn replied. "Besides, I'm the one that's in a rush. So don't worry, I will be doing this as quick as I can."

Quinn then used his shadow and soon another beast was summoned. It was the two headed antler beast he had fought with at the settlement, and this beast had a special power, a power that could not only be used on itself but on others as well.

The beast was ordered to go next to the large moth-like creature, and when they stood side by side, its whole body started to light up blue, the light started to transfer over to the moth-like creature, and the wounds that were on its body were starting to heal.

Eventually, the moth demon tier beast was back in action and was able to fight as good as it did before if not better.

"Alright, with these two, let's go onto the next one!" Quinn smiled, as they searched for the closest demon tier beast.

Mundus couldn't quite believe what he was seeing, and it was part of the reason why he was keeping quiet. Quinn was taking control of the demon tier beasts, he was creating an army right in front of his eyes.

With each demon tier beast he took control of, the next one became easier, and eventually three demon tier beasts could take out one on its own while Quinn took out another, and as this number multiplied, it would just start to spread and spread.

'Part of the reason why Immortui was feared was due to his power to create demons from his blood. He could create beings that were on the god slayer level, and the power was able to spread to others. An example of that are the vampires themselves. That was what got the Ancient Ones so worried, that he could create his own army.

'Right now, I am witnessing something on the same level with Quinn's shadow power. Is this the secret he wished for me to keep? Did he know, this is the type of thing that the Ancient Ones fear?'

Chapter 2182.3: God Slayer 4 (Part 3)

Mundus continued to watch Quinn carefully with the thoughts in his head, and what he feared seemed to come true. Quinn continued to defeat the demon tier beasts, he was so much stronger than them that he was able to injure them just enough so they wouldn't die and then use the shadow infect skill.

If someone was to tell others what was happening right now, they wouldn't believe it. There were those that had trouble enough just defeating a demon tier beast, but to weaken it to the point where you just kept it alive, could only be possible if there was a large difference between the two.

'I guess something like this has to be a capability of the one that I am watching.' Mundus thought. 'He has to at least be able to do this much, if he wishes to be a strong agent.'

The fear was still in the back of his mind though because Quinn had now successfully captured ten demon tier beasts. Infecting them all, ones with all sorts of different abilities. Some of the demon tier beasts were in more difficult terrains to reach or had some powers that he needed to be cautious of which slowed him down a bit but still gave him next to no trouble.

'That's ten demon tier beasts, but I still have no idea how many five spiked plus Dalki they have on their side. Someone like One Horn would be able to defeat a demon tier beast and they might have hundreds or thousands of one horns.' Quinn thought.

'Such a shame.' Alex added. 'With this many demon tier beasts, you could maybe kill a few and upgrade the bullets of your guns. It would always be handy to maybe keep some of their powers for yourself. Remember unique bullets that do different things can be kept in the guns as well.'

'I know creating an army is more helpful in the current situation you are in, but you also have to think about improving yourself.'

Taking somewhat of a break while ordering the other beasts to go ahead and continue the spread of his shadow infect, Quinn was thinking about what Alex had said. The guns were good for long range and some of the bullets were useful. They also condensed his aura down so it was better to use a blood bullet then it was for him to use a blood swipe.

However, with the level of opponents he was facing, the once great god slayer weapons had little effect. Quinn needed to combine all of his powers of Qi, blood aura, blood control and his physical strength and speed to stand a chance of injuring them.

The guns were just a good distraction with the way they were. Ultimately, one of his strongest attacks, the tiger pulse, needed to be delivered hand to hand.

'The gauntlets I have are at the demon tier level, well, one of them is at least...' Quinn thought.

A lot of his better gauntlets had ended up being destroyed or absorbed, leaving him with the drainmo demon tier gauntlet. It was hard for him to get a grip on the opponents he was fighting for more than a few seconds, so draining their Qi energy was hardly something he could do.

Before, he had used his celestial blood to create a pair of gauntlets over his body. It was stronger than any equipment he had and even if he used equipment it would just end up disappearing anyway.

'Maybe, among all of these demon tier beasts, I can find some beasts that would suit turning into a pair of new gauntlets for me to use as well. No doubt, I will have to face Ray in a close quarter battle as well.' Quinn thought.

'Truthfully, the best result would be to get a pair of god slayer gauntlets. That would give me the most amount of power to go with the amour, but I don't think I could get Mundus to agree on that, to send me to two more god slayers.'

'He seemed reluctant with the armour and I have already asked him for so much already, and I don't even know if I would have the time to fight against two more god slayers, and that's even if I can beat them. I've been away from the others longer than I would have liked.' Quinn thought.

'Maybe you don't have to get any more crystals.' Alex suggested. 'Hear me out, the god slayer crystals are slightly different to anything I have worked on before, and I honestly think five crystals is already a bit overkill to create an entire set.'

'I doubt that Mundus expected you to be able to get all five. I believe he might have thought about saving you all along if you were ever to get in a lot of trouble, he just needs to appear tough on the surface.'

Quinn wasn't so sure about that, but he didn't doubt Alex's words when it came to creating equipment, maybe Alex was right and five god slayer crystals were too much.

'I can't guarantee it right now, but I can try and attempt to do one of two things, using the armour to create a complete set, from head to toe. Based on these crystals I reckon that each piece will have its own active skill, and then it will also have a set active skill just like the range set.'

'Only this time, I want to create a weapon to be part of the set as well. If there isn't enough energy then, I think we can also repurpose the guns to create a stronger weapon by mixing it into the set, creating the gauntlets that you need.'

It sounded all good, but Quinn wasn't really following as Alex was the actual forger, and there was one major thing that was bothering him.

'What you are suggesting right now, repurposing the weapon, what will that mean for you? What will happen to you?' Quinn asked.

'Quinn, do you think I understand what has happened to me right now? Because I really don't, so to be honest I have no clue. Maybe I will be lost forever, maybe I will become a part of the whole set, or I will just be in the weapon like I am now, who knows.'

'But right now, you need to take risks, you have multiple planets to save, and I have lived an exciting life, more exciting than ever. If I was to disappear knowing I made the strongest creation, to make you the most bad arse person in the universe, then I will be happy with that thought.'

Based on the emotional feelings Quinn was feeling having this conversation he wanted to put it on hold for now, because he needed to focus on the task at hand.

Quinn continued with the shadow infect and in total he now had infected twenty five demon tier beasts, he would have continued if it wasn't for the fact that the shaking had started again and it lasted more than a few seconds this time.

"It looks like you have run out of time, you must fight now." Mundus said. "Good luck."

Chapter 2183.4: God Slayer 4 (part 4)

The vibrations from the ground had started again and now that they were on the ground, rather than on one of the large pillars, Quinn could feel its effect a lot more. It was a strange feeling, just like the last time, it was hard for him to keep his footing stable. Not only was the ground moving but it felt like the air was as well.

'There is one thing I can try, even though I don't think it's an ability, but it should still be able to block out what is happening around me.' Quinn thought. The shadow body was used, and from head to toe, Quinn was covered in the shadow. As he had assumed, he could no longer feel the vibrations and it was much easier to move.

'To think that I would have to use my powers just because a beast is moving. Just how strong is this god slayer that you have me going up against this time, Mundus?' Quinn raised his hand toward one of the pillars and opened up a shadow portal. In doing so, he stepped through another shadow portal in front of him reaching the top of the pillar giving him a clearer view of what was happening.

"The shaking hasn't stopped this time, so I can assume the beast really is moving this time." Quinn said. Looking down, he could also see the demon beasts running away. They no longer seemed to care about each other's territory as they just ran away side by side. It was crazy to think that these were demon tier beasts that were acting like this, and it gave Quinn another clue as well.

Beasts, just like animals, were more sensitive, just like as a vampire Quinn's senses were also more sharp, but due to the vibrations everywhere and in the air, he was having a hard time locating just where the Behemoth would be coming from. Turning around, that's when he could see it in plain sight, and there was no need to search for it.

"I guess there is no need for me to tell you, but that is the opponent you will be facing." Mundus said. "As I said before, I wish you good luck." Mundus had disappeared from Quinn's side, observing the situation and the match from somewhere close by, no doubt.

Meanwhile, Quinn had to take in just what he was seeing. From top to bottom it was a sight that he couldn't even imagine seeing in his dreams. The beast had two large horns like that of a ram. They were black in colour and incredibly thick in size.

The thing was, the beast was so large that the horns of the Behemoth were passing through the clouds. As it moved slowly, its horns seemed to split the clouds apart, and the lightning from the dark clouds was hitting the horns and having no effect. The lightning seemed to be attracted to the horns, as it never struck anywhere else while the Behemoth moved. The Behemoth had a regular face of a beast, something that looked quite similar to a bull, however it had two large overhanging tusks on its face that pointed downward towards its neck and curled slightly.

The entire body looked somewhat like a human, as it stood on its hind legs, walking slowly one step at a time. The beast was black skinned, but throughout its body there were swirling markings, it looked almost like veins on a human but were illuminated in a golden glow. The illuminating power could be seen flickering on the skin all over.

'This is the first time when looking at something, I can understand why they call it a god slayer.' Quinn thought.

If there was one thing Quinn thought he had against this opponent, it looked like it was time. The movements of the beast were incredibly slow, as for where it was trying to move to, who knew. Maybe Quinn had attracted its attention when he was hunting demon tier beasts. There was also the worry like with the phoenix, when he got within a certain range, maybe then it would try to attack.

'Should I try hitting it from far away with the bullets and see how it reacts like I usually would?' Quinn thought. 'No, a better option, while it's moving towards me, is to try and condense my power into the strongest attack I can, and try to kill it in one hit.'

'Let's aim for the head.'

He already knew both of his soul weapons would have no effect on a beast like this. The beast was already slow, so slowing it down would do nothing. Even with shadow inside the beast, Quinn doubted he could force it to move to his will. The twin tail chain, although it is strong, wouldn't be able to do much other than scratch its body a few times, so there was no point of tiring himself out with attacks like that.

Quinn raised both of his hands in the air, and a large orb of red aura started to gather. It was condensing while growing in size. The ball of aura was getting larger and larger until it was around the same size as a house.

'Alright, I've condensed as much blood aura as I can into one space, now to add my Qi in and make sure this ball doesn't explode.'

Just like when he combined the two powers in his body, Quinn needed to create a good balance. When creating an attack outside of his body, he needed to make sure the Qi got to mixing with the blood at the right places.

'If I've timed this right, by the time it reaches me, I'll be close enough to hurl this thing, I'll push it forward with my blood control, and the third stage of Qi, right into its head.'

It was safe to say that what Quinn held in his hands was a pure ball of power. It had all of his strength. In a normal fight, he would never have the time to condense so much blood and so much Qi into one attack, but here he was able to.

'Now!' Quinn leapt up into the air, nice and high. He used his strong legs to push him up so he could reach the clouds. Looking in front of him he could see the beast around fifty metres away. If the beast swung its arm, it was likely that it would still be able to reach him. Yet for some reason, there was no reaction from the Behemoth at all, as if it didn't notice Quinn, which, in a way, annoyed him a little.

He hurled the ball and pushed it forward, it moved fast through the air. It was not as fast as the blood bullets but too fast for the Behemoth to react as the large ball covered its entire face and hit it dead on.

The attack exploded on impact with red aura going off in all directions, the black clouds had turned red, and waves of blood aura were seen pulsing out in the sky, and back past Quinn, moving his hair.

'I have to be ready as that might not have been enough to kill it, but it should have done some major damage. If I give it a tiger pulse blow, or something similar I can maybe finish it off.'

As the red aura started to settle, Quinn could see the Behemoth taking a step, and its large face continuing to move closer. When it did, it looked like there wasn't a scratch on the Behemoth. There was no blood, no sign of damage, and the beast continued to walk forward as if it was programmed to do that and nothing else.

'Not even a scratch... No, that has to be impossible. Is it a shield, some strange energy? No, if it was, I would have sensed something. It is just its skin, is that how tough this thing is... how am I going to kill this thing?' Quinn thought as he started to worry.

Chapter 2184.5: God Slayer 4 (Part 5)

Shaking his head, Quinn couldn't let this setback shock him. There were plenty of times when fighting his enemy that his attacks didn't go through. If there was one thing Quinn was, it was the fact that he was versatile with his attacks. If one thing didn't work, then it just meant he would have to try something else.

'Let's keep trying ranged attacks first to see what the Behemoth reacts to, I still can't believe that he didn't react to the last attack at all. 'But now I see, if something like that doesn't hurt it, then why does it need to worry about something like an ant... like me.' It was hard to believe that Quinn was calling himself an ant, but here he was. Running on what width of the platform that the pillar had, he then jumped, aiming to land on another pillar off in the distance.

While doing this, Quinn switched to the blood guns, and once again started to fire away every type of blood bullet he had. They hit the beast, but as somewhat expected, just like the last attack when it touched the skin it did nothing apart from the blood forest bullet.

[Blood from the Behemoth has been absorbed]

[The blood is poisonous to the user]

[The blood has not been absorbed]

The blood forest bullet had a special effect where it could pierce through the skin and absorb the blood. This was how Quinn was able to upgrade his own blood powers when fighting against the demons, it also allowed him to heal in fights and if he was fighting against the Dalki it would give him a boost in power. Since this was a god slayer, Quinn thought maybe it would have a special effect but it didn't. Just like beast blood, the blood of this Behemoth was poisonous to him.

'Still, it means one thing, this Behemoth can get hurt. Maybe it just can't react or it's taking away a little health. Just like an ant, maybe over time, it could whittle away a human, a bite at a time?' Quinn continued to fire the bullets as he finally landed on the other pillar away from the Behemoth, while having the image of an ant attacking a human, and he thought he was mad. 'What am I thinking, a human would just heal before a single ant could kill him. The human would die from old age before getting killed by an ant...'

Now having landed on the pillar, Quinn continued his large-scale attacks, first the thousand blood swords that he raised in the sky. He aimed them all towards different parts of the Behemoth. He doubted it would be able to pierce the skin, but perhaps a weak spot could be found. When the swords hit though, no weak spot was found. Two large blood spears were then thrown out, spinning as fast as possible like a drill. The hope was it would break through the skin, but just like everything else so far, it was a failure as well.

Soon after that, Quinn condensed the blood into whips, now the Behemoth was close again, he leapt up with the condensed blood whips powered with his Qi, and swung them down, dragging it across the beast's body until he had reached the ground, but there was still nothing.

Looking up, the beast's foot was about to land on him. Quinn quickly moved out of the way, letting it hit the ground. 'If long range attacks won't work, then I'll just have to try close range attacks instead.'

Running toward the leg before it lifted, Quinn had made the blood drill in both hands, he threw them with his great physical strength hitting the side of the leg. The larger the beast was the harder they would fall, the only thing was, this beast didn't fall as it was unaffected. He continued to try a number of attacks, the tiger blood pulse attack, just Qi on its own, he even used his shadow and condensed it into a large arm to try and grab the ankle of the beast, but as if there was no resistance at all, the Behemoth continued to lift its leg and continued to walk forward completely ignoring Quinn.

'I've tried to find a weak spot, but I can't find anywhere where the beast will get hurt. It doesn't seem to have a shield nor is it getting its power from somewhere. Is this why they decided that the best thing to do was leave this god slayer be, to just leave it until it died of old age?' Quinn thought.

Not wanting to give up, he had activated his current armour skill.

[NITro accelerate activated]

'With more speed I can generate more power, and I have the time to power up my attack.' Quinn stood his ground as he gathered blood around his finger tips, they were starting to glow bright red. The Behemoth had continued to walk and had gotten a little away from him, but it wasn't far enough. Running at a speed, red pulses of energy were breaking off from Quinn almost every second like a heartbeat.

He continued to run forward and swung his fist to hit the leg. This time, instead of an image of a tiger that would be created from his blood pulse, there was a large floating dragon coming out from his fist made from the blood aura. He punched with all his might the side of the Behemoth, and his nails for the first time had managed to pierce through the skin... the Behemoth could bleed.

However, it lifted its leg up just fine, Quinn's fingertips came out the Behemoth and it continued to move. 'That had everything, my armour, my condensed powers combined into one along with my martial arts... but it still can't defeat it.'

Mundus was watching everything, and he had seen the same sight before, the same despair that Quinn was going through right now. It was the same with the other celestials that had attempted to take the Behemoth down, it was why they had

decided to do what they did. 'I wonder how long it will take before he decides to give up? It doesn't look like he will be able to make any progress.'

The look in Quinn's eyes still showed he had hope, because he still had things he wanted to try. 'If large attacks don't work, then maybe large amounts of attacks could work, 1000's of ants could probably take out a human!' Quinn thought, going a bit mad.

Using the shadow, the demon tier beasts were summoned along with a number of other beasts. As long as they were careful about not being trampled on, the Behemoth would ignore them.

"Alright, mass attack time, now!" Quinn ordered.

All of the beasts with their powers and such started to attack the beast. Quinn went back to pummeling the beast with his fists and blood aura, while controlling the swords behind him to strike and do the same. He threw out blood tornados, he threw out blood spears, punches, kicks, everything he could think of while the beasts continued to attack.

This went on for around an hour, with absolutely no sign of progress, and it was then that he had decided to put the beasts back away in his shadow space.

The Behemoth was still unscathed after an hour of non stop attacks.

'Have you given up?' Alex asked. 'No... I just need to rest a little while I decide what to do.' Quinn responded. Alex could guess what Quinn was contemplating, and he decided it was best to give him the little push he needed. 'Usually I stay out of these things and let you think about these things on your own. But I have to say something. Quinn, don't hold back, no matter what, I think we need to get this crystal.'

'Think about it, with how hard it has been to even injure this thing, just think what type of crystal, no... what type of armour, could be made from this. This is something we need.'

This comment made Quinn smile, and just like Alex guessed it had made Quinn make his decision. He leapt up from the ground onto a pillar once more, and looked at the Behemoth. "Since you aren't attacking me no matter what, I guess it won't matter too much, if I will have to use one of the tricks I have up my sleeve."

"Let's see how strong you are."

[Demon form has been selected]

[Your body is transforming]

Chapter 2185: The Demon Form

The Demon form was something Quinn was unable to use against the previous god slayers because in all honesty, he had no idea what the power was or what it did.

It was possible it would be a bad match up against his opponent or like the previous Blood Sucker form that the Demon from had taken over, it could have down sides.

The Blood sucker form doubled all of Quinn's stats but he was unable to use his powers and his HP was at great risk.

Due to the many powers he had gained including that of Qi, his current form mixed with the powers were stronger then his Blood Sucker form, which was why he had stopped using it.

However this was different.

'I need to fight it, I need to stay conscious!' Quinn thought. 'Even though there is low risk due to the opponent, there is still a risk and I need to know what this form does.'

'I was able to find a way to keep my mind with the Blood Sucker form, so I should be able to do the same here!'

Staying in his own mind, Quinn could feel changes to his body and they weren't only internal changes they were physical.

One of the large changes to his body was something he had experienced before, as it felt like something wanted to rip out from his back and they did. Two large wings sprouted out ripping through his skin, they looked like pieces of flesh at first, as they were covered in blood and had a light pink colour to them. As they grew out and fanned out more, the sheer size of them looked far too big for the body of Quinn, almost like a butterfly, but were still sharp and jagged more like a bats.

It wasn't the end of pain for Quinn, as he could still feel great pain from his back, and right underneath his shoulder blades where the wings had sprouted from, something else could be felt ripping right through his skin.

To his shock, it was another pair of wings, these ones quite a bit smaller compared to the large ones, reaching the same length as his arms could.

After the wings, the extra growing parts didn't stop there, Quinn could feel his whole body stretching out, getting larger but not in a muscular way like it did when he transformed into a Blood sucker.

HIs natural body was growing in size all over, while he was still conscious he made the quick decision to put the armour in the shadow space. He was still able to use his powers but the transformation wasn't over yet.

From the top of his backside, a long black tail sprouted out, it had a thick base that would gradually get smaller, but towards the end there was a special point that was glowing red.

The tail wasn't the last part that spouted out from his body, that came from the top of his head, just like the tail two black Horns had come out. They were quite thick at the base, and narrowed out to a sharp point and just like the tail, the tips of the horns were glowing red.

'This demon form, is such a diffrence compared to the Blood Sucker form.. they're not the same at all...and why is my mind being filed with...' It was confusing for Quinn, he couldn't even think what it was being filled with.

Emotions were coming over him, and he could only think about trying to suppress these thoughts so he didn't lose his mind, so he didn't lose consciousness, he was hanging on by a thread.

Finally the last changes were occurring to Quinn's body. When looking at his hands, he thought his skin was going paler, but that wasn't the case at all. It changed completely, it felt rough to the touch, his skin felt incredibly thick, and it was turning completely white like snow.

The white skin, was covering his entire body, most of his clothes had already ripped off due to the size change he had, leaving only little around his private area.

The white skin had spread over everything including his wings. There were only a few parts that didn't turn white. Around his arms, similar to how Quinn's gauntlets would look, it was black skinned from the elbow to his finger tips.

It was clear that it was part of his skin, and the black part of his body almost looked as if it was a different material. The same pattern of black skin occured on his feet as well, covering it up till his knee, fading into his white skin.

Then there was his glowing eyes, glowing completely red to the point where nothing else could be seen. The transformation looked like it was complete and Quinn couldn't take it anymore.

Placing both hands on top of his head, he held onto the horns. Pulling on them, it almost looked like he was going to rip them off.

"I am in charge of this body!!!" Quinn screamed, "I am in control."

Was he fighting against inner demons, did this bring on another personality, or was he borrowing a power from someone? It was none of these thoughts.

This was all Quinn, this was his own power, his vampire power in its purest form and it was doing its best to try and get Quinn to follow its will.

Mundus was watching everything from the side, wondering what this was. It was clear to him now, that the secret that Quinn wanted him to keep was this. This was what he wanted to hide from the ancient ones and he knew why.

'The power I am feeling from him, it's similar to Immortui. It almost feels like there is a second one in front of me, but rather than a celestial we have a god slayer on our hands, this could even be more dangerous than Immortui.'

Mundus had done a bit of research into the vampires after learning of Quinn and the humans. In the first place, the vampires were a creation from Immortui's power and Immortui's condition was simple.

The more lives lost due to him, then he would be fulfilling his condition. He was a god of death. Which was why, it was only natural for the vampires to feel the urge to kill, the urge to fight.

Right now, Quinn didn't even seem like a vampire and was closer to Immortui himself, which was why his mind urged him to kill. Whether Quinn was wasting his time or not, trying to fight off this urge it was hard to say, but looking at him now it looked like he had lost.

Quinn lowered his hands away from his horns slowly, he stood up straight and tall, as all four of his wings stretched out.

"ARGHHHH!!!" Quinn screamed at the top of his lungs, his voice was being projected so loud that no matter where one was on the planet they would have been able to hear the noise.

At the same time, waves of red energy were flowing out from all parts of Quinn's body, the ground beneath him, the area around him all of it was being destroyed, disintegrating by the second.

His body was sinking into the ground as he stood there as the floor was withering away by the second.

'With this power he might actually be able to do it, he could truly be the first to beat the Behemoth!' Mundus was shaking with excitement while lifting his own hands. He was trying to block the waves from hurting him but it was impossible and in the end he had to use his power.

'Even though I have stopped time in front of me, it still feels like I can feel this power through the time stop. Is it still active, what tarnation is going on.'

Looking at Quinn closer, it wasn't just vampire aura coming out from his entire body, mixed in with he red waves where those of black and white, they were sparking off in all directions, like thousands of volts of lighting emitting from his body.

It was then that the Behemoth for the first time had stopped walking, and turned around to look at Quinn.

Chapter 2186.2: The Demon Form (Part 2)

The sense of time had always been strange for Quinn. He had lived most of his young life as a human, but after that he had experienced many things that changed everything. Perhaps it first started when he lived through Vincent's life.

During that time, he wasn't just shown memories of his ancestor Vincent, but went through it as if he was actually there himself. Still, since he wasn't in control of what was happening, it never felt like he was the one making decisions.

After that, Quinn needed to grow up quickly, as he was put through test after test, war after war, and enemy after enemy, all for it to fall on him as he went into a deep slumber, one that managed to last a 1000 years.

Even after waking up, Quinn had gone into the celestial space, a space where time moved far slower, to the point where it was almost non-existent on earth for a while, and also had created his own space where time slowed down so he could train on his multiple powers.

Usually for humans, time was in perspective. A five year old felt like a month of his life was a long time, and this was because that human had only lived for five years, so a one month chunk was a large portion of the five years he had lived.

Whereas, for a vampire who would live close to a 1000 years, a month wasn't a long time at all.

Right now Quinn himself was going through a strange situation, his mind felt as if it was conscious and he could speak, but he had no clue how much time was passing. It wasn't making any sense in his head, his thoughts were unclear, until he finally was able to see a light up ahead.

Slowly, Quinn was being put back into the normal world, where time felt like it was moving again, and slowly he was starting to open his eyes.

'What was that, it felt like I was trapped in some kind of spell?' Quinn thought, blinking a few times. 'Wait, what was I doing before, what happened to me, why am I looking at space.'

Right in front of him, he could see black, the stars flowing around, and a moon off in the distance looking partially destroyed with rocks floating next to it.

Now it was becoming clear, once again Quinn was lying down on his back. He was on a hard surface but he was unable to move his body, he attempted to move his fingers, to even tilt his head to the side, but the only thing that was responding were his eyelids and even they felt quite heavy.

"Don't bother trying to move." A voice said to his left, since Quinn was unable to tilt his head, he couldn't see who it was but he recognized the voice as Mundus'.

"I have been healing your body for a while now, sorry, I should say I have been speeding up the natural healing process of your body." Mundus corrected himself. "And so far we are at three months worth of time and the only thing you can do is open your eyelids."

Three months hadn't actually passed, Mundus had just sped up Quinn's body to be where it would be three months in the future. It was what he did just before, following every fight, but before he would only speed it up by a week so Quinn was refreshed.

'Is that why I was having those strange thoughts, because of Mundus' power?' He thought. 'Is this the side effect of the demon form? But why? The last time I used it, I wasn't affected this badly. I don't even feel any pain around my body, but then again, I'm not sure I can feel my body at all at the moment.'

Finally, after some time had passed, Quinn could feel his body again, he could use it like normal and was starting to move. There was a point where his recovery went from close to 0 to hundred percent fairly quickly.

Getting up off the ground, Quinn could finally see the scene around him and it was nothing like he had expected. Large craters were all over the planet, on one part of it a large foot, of what could have only been part of the Behemoth, could be seen.

Searching for the Behemoth, it seemed that parts of its body were spread about all over the place. The strangest thing was that not only was it the Behemoth's body, but there were also other dead demon tier beasts everywhere.

Half of their bodies were missing, their heads crushed and more. Then one of the most shocking things was the planet itself, a large chunk of it, perhaps one tenth of the planet that was far bigger than Earth, had been destroyed. Small rocks were floating around the planet, orbiting it like a moon now.

"All of this.... was it me, was I the one that did all of this?" Quinn said to himself in disbelief. It didn't feel real because there was no recollection in his mind at all of what had happened.

[4/5 God Slayers have been defeated]

'The quest has been completed, that means that the Behemoth was definitely defeated, it had to be the demon form, it couldn't have been anything else, but wait if the beast was defeated where's its crystal?'

"Are you looking for this?" Mundus said, as he held the crystal in his hand. It looked slightly different to the ones before it. This was a solid colour, there was

nothing inside the crystal itself and it was around two times bigger than the others as well.

No doubt it was a god slayer crystal though. Mundus threw it over for Quinn to catch who quickly put it away in his shadow space. For a while he was unable to use his body, he couldn't use his blood powers, nor his shadow powers either, but now, just like with his body, everything was working fine which was a big relief.

"What happened here, how did it get like this?" Quinn asked.

That question had confirmed for Mundus that Quinn had no control over what happened, but based on what he had seen, he already knew that himself.

"Don't you have an idea, it's simple, with that form, you went on a rampage. I took the crystal because you would have destroyed that as well, so really you should be thanking me." Mundus explained.

There was no reason for Mundus to lie, he could have kept the crystal but still gave it to Quinn, but now there were a lot of questions he wanted to ask, what was his power, what was he able to do, just how strong was his form to be able to beat a beast that he was unable to harm.

"I can tell what your thinking, it seems this was some sort of trump card you had." Mundus stated. "Either way, I think it's best if you don't use this power, at least not without me around. It took six months worth of healing to get your body back to the way it is."

"If there was another beast left on this planet, and I wasn't here, then you would have been killed unless you had someone that could protect you for 6 months."

In Quinn's head he was thinking 6 months was better than a 1000 years when he went into slumber last time, but Mundus was right, it did mean it needed to be something he could only use as a last resort... as a true last resort.

'The reason for my recovery time has to be due to how long I was in the demon form for. The reason why I recovered quicker last time was due to it just being a little burst. The problem is, if I'm not conscious of my actions, it's not something I can turn on or off either way. How will I even learn to control this.'

"This power, if you are planning to use it, to save your friends and family, it's best you don't. From what I saw, you should never use that from around anyone, unless you're sure you want to kill everyone on that planet." Mundus said.

As he got ready to decide where to go for the final god slayer.

Chapter 2187: To the Tower

The plan for the universal alliance among different races had been set out. With communication set up through Stark and Ceril, they had informed the other planets to be ready for whatever it was that would come their way.

Fleets were ready to move out, and in the meantime, each planet was scouting areas out of their usual fly zone in space. An attack would come at some point, but it was impossible to utilise all three armies that lived apart from each other fairly quickly.

At least not unless they had teleporters, which none of the current planets had, and out of all of them there, none of them had the knowledge to build one either. So for now they had to rely on scout ships and then attempt to move as quickly as possible.

The group had decided to stay on the Amra planet for now. They had no news from Wince that Quinn had returned. On top of that, the Amra planet had the strongest level of gravity.

For all of them, including Stark, they thought it was best if they stayed on the planet, as a type of natural training. If they had to fight on the Amra planet it would give them an advantage and Stark felt like he would be able to run even faster than before.

Walking around the place with Minny and Galen, Layla had come across the Blades training. Geo had placed all of the humans in the same area, and had somewhat made a little village for the Blades.

They had been living here for a while, so it made sense, and surprisingly Layla could see that they weren't struggling with the gravity at all. In fact, they were doing some early morning training, and it was more physical than anything.

There were these strange large rocks that looked like giant footballs, and they were throwing them from one another, catching them, and sweating.

"It looks a bit caveman-esque." Russ stated as he appeared by their side.

"How, with your upbringing, did you grow up to be such a snob? Have you ever done any type of physical work in your life?" Layla asked, looking him up and down.

Although Russ had a relatively small frame and just relied on his powers most of the time when fighting, what did surprise her was the fact that he was dealing with the higher gravity better than most.

Galen and Minny who were both watching thought it was quite fun, and they soon ran out ahead picking up one of the heavy rocks. They chucked it to each other as each one of them caught it, and threw it back with relative ease.

The Blades that were sweating and tired couldn't believe their eyes as they watched two kids, doing the task so easily.

"Remember they are not like us." Shiro shouted. "It would be best that you don't compare yourselves to them. I bet they would even give most vampires a run for their money."

Approaching Shiro as he was taking a break, Layla wanted to ask him a few questions, as she had noticed a few things while they were training.

"All of you have gotten physically much stronger, and the Qi in your body, I can feel it, there is a larger amount of it compared to before, how did you improve it so fast?" Layla asked.

Layla herself had a large amount of Qi, there was her own powers and that she had absorbed from her mother, one of the high rankers and founders of Pure. She couldn't be compared to the likes of Chris, Zero, or Quinn but was quite high up there when it came to using her Qi.

After all, thanks to her soul weapon she could even absorb or give Qi to others, as long as her or the other person's body was able to handle it, and it was why she was so sensitive to the power and could see the large improvement.

"This, right now, is just a warm up for us, before we enter the Tower." Shiro replied.

"The tower?"

"It's what made us grow in strength so fast. Every day we try to reach the next floor. Climb higher than we did before and experience a bigger breakthrough. Some of the floors gravity is even stronger than what is here." Shiro explained.

The tower certainly had piqued Layla's interest. She was once the leader of the Red vampires and the power of the sword did her well. Yet, still there would be those that could harm her children even with her being there.

She knew there was more power to the sword, it was her body that was unable to take the full power of the weapon. That's why she had been so hurt last time, but if she could improve her body, to allow her to take more of the sword's power for a longer amount of time, then maybe she could be more useful in the upcoming fights.

" Let's see this tower, maybe I can come along."

After a nice rest everyone started to head to the tower, Stark, Ceril and Russ had heard quite a few people talking about it, and had done their own research. In turn they all had their own reasons for wanting to climb it.

Some wishing to improve themselves, to be more useful, and some wishing to obtain what was on the top floor.

"It looks like there's more of you." Geo said, standing at the front with a big smile. "I will try my best to protect you in the tower, but please be careful, the more there are of you, the harder it will be."

In particular Geo was looking at the two children, but Layla didn't want them to be away from her, and knew that they were both strong.

"Very well." Geo said as they all went to enter the tower, wishing to come out as new people.

A few hours after the others had entered a tower, one of the Amra scout ships had caught the attention of a ship attempting to land.

"Please state who you are and the reason for you coming here." The Amra asked.

"We are humans, and we are here on behalf of Logan Green."

There was silence for a moment as the Amra were deciding what to do. They didn't know of this Logan Green, and the only humans they could contact to see if they knew these two were in the tower.

In the end, Dober had to make a decision, and asked them a few questions before determining that they were here for valid reasons. Eventually, Dober along with the two humans that arrived were taken to the tower.

"Those that you wish to deliver your message to are in the tower. It is a dangerous place though, and who knows what floor they are on. It would be best if you just waited out here for them." Dober explained.

"I think it's okay, I think we can head inside. You don't have to worry about us, we're strong." The young man said as he walked in, with the female by his side. "We should be able to catch up with them fairly quickly."

Chapter 2188.1: God slayer 5 (Part 1)

As usual Quinn was being transported using Mundus' powers via the strange white light of energy and he had no idea what to expect. The only thing he did know was that it would be his last and final opponent.

After this, he would finally have the crystals that were needed so he could create the armour that would hopefully put him at a level where if he went up against anyone he would have no problem at all, and that included Ray, as well as future opponents as well.

'After each enemy I've faced it seems like the next one has been harder.' Quinn thought. 'No, that's not quite right, they have all had their fair share of difficulties to deal with.'

'The Monkey man was tricky, and held a powerful weapon. In the end, I was only able to beat him perhaps because I had more tricks up my own sleeve than he did and that he didn't know about. My versatility won out in the end on that one, having to use my soul weapon.'

'With the Phoenix, for the first time, my body reacted to my natural weakness, being that of a vampire. If I didn't figure out how it was healing itself, then that would have been a close call as well.'

'Then there was that, what did he call himself, the Dark Magus. Looking back, I'm happy that the situation ended up ending the way it did. Things could have taken a turn for the worse, and even though I didn't fight him, based on what he was able to do Mundus, it might have been a fight I completely lost.'

'Lastly, there was the Behemoth. A beast so large and grand in power that none of my attacks did anything, and in the end I had to use the Demon form, which I'm still none the wiser in terms of how it works.'

Based on all of his past opponents, the god slayers had been a mix of races, and beasts. Which one was easier or harder it was hard to tell, but when fighting a beast he had less of a conscience due to not being able to speak to them.

The teleportation was over, and usually based on the planet they were on, Quinn would have an idea of what opponent they would go against, and see what he had to work with when fighting.

Whether he had to be careful or not of hurting others, like he did when going against the Monkey man. Yet here, had to be the strangest place he had been brought to by far.

"Are you sure we are in the right place?" Quinn asked.

"Do you really think I would make a mistake?" Mundus replied.

Right now, Quinn didn't even feel like he was in the universe or in somewhere that was space, because the place looked entirely different. The area around them wasn't black but instead was a mystic mix of colours.

The only time he had seen a place somewhat like this was when he had gone to the Familiar world, but based on the energy he could tell it wasn't the Familiar world, and there were quite a few other giveaways that he noticed that told him that as well.

Currently both him and Mundus were on what looked like a large piece of land. It wasn't circular like a planet, but was just slowly floating in the colourful air. It had pieces of grass growing on it, but there was nothing else.

When looking around in the new space around him, there were several pieces of floating bits of land in the air. All of them with different things. Some had some water on them, others had trees growing, and there was even the odd one with a few bugs on it here and there.

Yet, from what he could see while looking around, there were no planets next to them. No large circular lands off in the distance, nor was there a sun or heat source, yet it wasn't cold.

Instead there were just multiple large pieces of land floating, with different things on each one of them.

"Through the opponents you have faced, you have learned a bit of history about the celestials. About what had happened to us before our time." Mundus explained. "Of course, there is always a reason why we leave god slayers alone, so there is always a history behind the god slayers."

"With this one, it is the same, but is perhaps the most complicated out of all of them so far. Because, there was once a time where the celestials were heavily involved in the lives that he looked over."

"We didn't always attempt to do things behind the scenes and take a back seat, but it is perhaps because of this incident that we now do things the way we do them."

"Once, there was a race known as the Asuras. There were deviations of the race, but to make it more simple I will explain that they were one race. Beings that had such great power, that were so strong, one could almost call them a race of god slayers, because nearly every one of them had the power to match up to us."

"However, their great strength as well as strong personalities is what caused a divide between them in the end. Among the Asuras there were those that thought they needed to do everything they could to serve the celestials that helped them."

"While others felt like they were prisoners, and wished to break free. In the end, this started a war among the celestials and the Asuras, with some of the Asuras joining our side."

Listening to the story, Quinn was reminded a bit of the vampires, because it was the same with them as well. At the same time, it reminded him of the current situation. With the Dalki returning, and a large amount of time passing, there were those that would get more spikes as time went on.

Maybe, Mundus was asking Quinn to deal with the situation not just because there were many god slayers, but because they had already seen what had happened before, and didn't wish for another repeat of it to happen.

"This area that you are in now, this part of the Universe that you can see. It used to be filled with planets, just like your planet. It looked normal, however this is all that is left now. This is the result of the great war that had happened back then.

"Several planets destroyed, space itself broken down and in a healing stage. The god slayer is a survivor of the war. He is an Asura, one who felt like they were prisoners, but when they realised that due to their actions they had lost everything, they had decided to stay here.

"To stay in the middle of the destruction that they had caused. For us, the celestials there were no more lives for us to look after anymore, and since the Asura has stayed here. This being, in a true sense of the word, is where the word god slayer was created.

"In the battle, he had eliminated many god slayers, and in his strength he had destroyed many of the planets here. Although before there were many, now there is only one, which is why we gave him the name, Asura, the first god slayer."

A being that had been here from the beginning, one that had a past that sounded similar to Quinn's. In fact, many of the god slayers seemed to have a tale similar to Quinn's, but through the story no matter what, it seemed like the celestials always won.

In the end, this god slayer's power, everything he had done was in vain, and they had ended up like this.

As the floating pieces of land moved, off in the distance Quinn could see a human shape sitting down. He was red skinned, sitting crossed legged, with two arms and looked to be in a meditating position.

'This... is my last opponent.'

Chapter 2189.2: God Slayer 5 (part 2)

Quinn continued to look at his final opponent, they weren't on the same piece of land mass. It was only because one piece of landmass had moved away that Quinn was able to even spot him in the first place.

The two of them were quite a distance away, but with his eyesight he could see him quite clearly, just sitting there not moving an inch.

'Is he meditating or something?' Quinn thought. 'It seems a bit wrong, to just go out there, and try to fight against him. Mundus told me a little about Asura's past, but didn't talk about this individual.'

'Why was he the only one that had survived, was it due to his strength, his beliefs or something else, and what could he be thinking right now.'

Based on what he had learned, Quinn jumped through the strange space and off one piece of land, landing on another which was a little closer, but still quite far away. If things went well, then maybe there could be another situation like Raze, where he had received a god crystal without having to fight.

"Why are you here." The god slayer's voice spoke, it was a low deep voice that vibrated through the air. It allowed for it to travel with ease and although the god slayer, or Asura as Mundus had called him, wasn't shouting, Quinn could hear everything clearly as if he was next to him.

"After all this time, no one has come out to attempt to meet me. So I will ask again why are you here?" Asura asked.

'Not going straight into fighting worked out last time, so maybe it will work this time as well.' Quinn thought, but how would he approach it?

The only reason why talking had worked the last time was because the Magus had an unexpected god slayer crystal already with him. It was unlikely it would be the case this time, but maybe, based on the story, Quinn could convince the Asura to do something else, and felt it was best to state the truth.

"My people, my friends and family are in danger, and I fear that I am the only one that is able to do something about it." Quinn stated. "However, in order for me to face my enemy, I need to gather certain crystals. It is unfortunate but there is a crystal inside your body that I need."

There was silence for a moment or so, and the Asura finally stood up from his meditation. He was around the same size of Quinn but was particularly muscular as he had a wide back. What he also noticed was what was covering both of his hands, two large golden gauntlets that almost doubled the size of his arms. If Quinn was to

guess, this person used their fists to fight, and just like Quinn, their main weapon of choice was gauntlets.

"HAHAHA!" Asura laughed. "I feel like I had once had the same thoughts, yet look at what has happened. Everything is gone, there is not even a building left standing showing what was here before, not even a single memory that is proof that we exist, that my family existed apart from what is stored in my head."

"I tried... I really did try, to meditate to calm myself, to forget everything that happened. After all, there is no longer a reason for me to fight, and when I chose to fight things just ended up getting worse."

Quinn did feel bad for the god slayer, but the conversation was being stirred into a direction he wanted.

"You have been through this before, so you must understand what I am going through now as well. Although you failed before, you have the chance to allow me to succeed, for not the same thing to happen again!" Quinn said.

Asura started to laugh deeply again.

"Your intention is a bit too obvious, you seem a bit young." Asura said. "So you wish me to take my own life, or to allow you to take mine so you can use part of my power, and who is the one that told you even with my power that you would succeed?"

"Is it the gods? The others had believed in the god's words, and look at where that got them. We didn't believe in the god's words and look at where that got us." Asura said.

"Then what do you plan on doing?" Quinn asked. "To stay here for another 1000 years, moping around, and not acting on anything at all. Just because everything has been lost for you, doesn't mean it has been for everyone else. Time continues to pass even now."

For the first time since their conversation started, Asura turned around, and Quinn was able to see the person's face for the first time.

The face was scrunched up, filled with anger, even now just standing their full set of teeth were on display baring towards Quinn like a vicious dog. On Asura's face itself, under his eyes, it looked like blood had dripped down running down his cheek to his chin, but it was permanent.

The blood looked to have been ingrained with his skin. His eyes were glowing white, nothing else could be seen but the glow. Yet one could still sense an extreme amount of anger coming out from them.

Finally to match the glowing eyes, the man's hair was completely white with a faint white glow on the outside, standing up and flowing with power.

'From one look anyone could tell that this person is filled with anger, yet they were somehow able to talk to me just fine.' Quinn thought.

"The reason I stayed in the same spot this whole time was because I was attempting to quell my anger. I have felt nothing but this one emotion for the longest of times, that I can't even remember the past.

"I can't remember a time of happiness when I had with my family, with my friends. All I feel is anger. I sat and waited for it to go away but it has never gone away, and as you just said, what do I do, do I continue to wait.

"No, with you coming here, that means that I can't even wait, then it means I can do only one thing. I have to accept this anger as part of me, and give into my bodily desires, give in to what it wants to do."

The pieces of land mass that were next to asura started to move. It didn't look like energy was emitting from his body, and yet somehow the large pieces of land that could be compared to islands had moved out of the way.

"What have you decided?" Quinn asked getting ready for battle but he was sure he already knew the answer.

"I have decided that if I have to feel this way, if the Universe has done these things in order to make me feel this way, then I will make everyone feel this way."

Chapter 2190.3: God Slayer 5 (Part 3)

The Anger on Asura's face was genuine as he stood there. At that moment in time, he felt like he had made a mistake, no not just him but he and Mundus. If the two of them had never arrived here if they had never tried to obtain this crystal, then this monster of anger perhaps would have stayed here until the end of time, and now they had created an enemy of the Universe.

Just by Quinn turning up, the one who had been given the title of the First God Slayer had been given a goal, and the only person that was standing in his way right now was Quinn.

"ARGHHHH!!" Asura shouted into the great space, both hands by his waist. An overflowing energy surrounded his whole body, and the two large gauntlets lit up. Many of the floating pieces of land that were above him had moved, being chucked away from the simple sound of his voice.

The pieces of land crashed into others and formed smaller pieces as they were pushed away.

"You will be the first on the receiving end to feel my anger!" Asura jumped from his position, and his body was covered in flames while he went through the space. It looked like a meteorite was approaching Quinn to finish him off.

The distance between the two of them was miles apart, and he was covering it in seconds.

'My Shadow won't be quick enough. I need to strike back!' Quinn stomped both of his feet on the ground with a wide stance.

As he did this, the Qi rose from his body, and the blood formed around his arms. They started to spiral, creating the blood drills.

[Blood Hammer Drill]

Quinn threw them forward, and at the same time, Asura's fists clashed with his. Quinn was wearing his gauntlets.

The knuckles of Asura could be seen pushing forward, and when it hit the blood drill, it was pushed back, broken down and destroyed into nothing but red particles.

'His power....what is it...it completely destroyed my evolved blood!'

It didn't stop there, the knuckles had slammed right into Quinn's, and he could feel the wave of energy enter his body immediately. The sheer power that was going through him was burning his insides.

It felt similar to Qi, yet different at the same time, a power he had never felt like this before. The closest person's power he could imagine to this was Ray's.

Both of Quinn's gauntlets had started to shatter. They broke into a thousand pieces falling to the floor as Quinn and his whole body was chucked back, hitting a large mound of the island they were on.

The force of the hit caused the large island of landmass to start to tilt to the point where it was vertical, but the space they were in was strange, giving each piece of landmass a certain type of gravity that allowed them to stick their feet down on the ground still.

Asura looked at the ground and could see the pieces of the broken gauntlet.

"Your equipment is rubbish," Asura stated.

Quinn broke out of the rubble, flinging rocks out of the air, and was back on the ground. The burning sensation that he could feel had left his body, and it was only something he could feel when the two of them were making contact with each other.

'This person is strong and powerful. Is it someone I can beat without using the Demon form?' Quinn thought.

There were a lot of problems, if Quinn was to fight against his opponent, he needed him to stay in one place if he wanted to use the effect of his soul weapon, the Shadow mist, but with an area like this and with the distance his opponent had just covered it would be hard to do.

'Quinn, you have to F*ck this guy up. Did you hear what he said about the gauntlets I made you? He said they were rubbish. Tell him it was the best I could do with the crystal you gave me. I bet I could make something better if I had some strange alien material as well!' Alex was clearly annoyed.

The gauntlets, the Drainmo demon tier gauntlet he had was destroyed, and anything else he used would be of a lower tier and would break again anyway. Thankfully, they weren't part of the Fang set.

'Let's see something first.' Quinn said as he summoned the 1000-blood swords above his head and swung them all toward the God Slayer.

For Asura, dealing with this was simple. He swung out his fist in the air, and a wave of energy went out, destroying all the blood swords just like that.

'I thought this was the case...the blood aura, I can only use it to enhance my physical attacks. When using it on its own, this person is too powerful. His Raw energy, whatever it is, is strong against my Blood aura, even when covered in Qi.'

'It's simple this person has more powerful energy than me, and if that's the case, then this fight will have to turn into a physical one.'

From Quinn's observation, Asura didn't seem to have any special powers. He was a brawler. A fighter like the Dalki.

The shadow started to cover both of Quinn's hands where the gauntlets once were. The shadow was focused at one point and condensed to the point where they were on both of Quinn's hands.

They were glowing slightly purple when they were like this. In the past, Quinn only had enough shadow to condense it into one hand, but now he could do both.

'With this, I don't have to worry about the Shadow's speed because it's on my hands. I can block all of his attacks as long as I can move fast enough...and I'll be able to move a lot faster than him.'

[Nitro Accelerate activated]

Running from his position now, the one that was charging forward was Quinn. He darted right up to Asura, but before he reached him, he stopped for a split second.

[Shadow mist activated]

Out from Quinn's body, the shadow mist poured in all directions, and quickly moving again, he moved in a Zigzag-like pattern from the side. Quinn hit Asura right on the ribs with all his strength and Qi.

It was a solid, strong hit, the impact could be heard as two bangs went off, but Asura hadn't moved.

"ARGHHH!" Asura screamed, swinging his arm, trying to throw a hook and knock Quinn's head right off.

Lifting one of his arms, the fist hit Quinn's shadow arm, stopping it.

'My shadow, it works...there is a reason why it's a God Slayer ability. It can match up to what these guys can do as well.' Quinn.

With his other hand threw three punches straight to Asura's head, one after the other, flinging It back slightly. Asura went to punch Quinn back with both arms, but Quinn was able to block and hit them away and punched Asura in the stomach five times before Asura was able to deliver back punches of his own, but they were thwarted once again.

"You are pissing me off!" Asura shouted as he charged up both of his hands, and they moved slightly faster than before. Now Quinn was finding fewer opportunities to throw in punches of his own.

Instead, he was constantly blocking with his own shadow hands, moving them into place.

'Am I imagining things...or is he getting faster.' Quinn thought.

Trying to change tactics to still damage his opponent, Quinn grabbed both of Asura's large gauntlets. He extended the shadow from his hands a little bit to create larger hands for himself and stopped it in its tracks.

'All of his power, everything so far, has been in his fists. If I stop them, then maybe I can do a bit more damage with my blood aura!' Quinn thought as he started to gather the blood aura in his mouth.

It was a move he didn't use often, but his hands were busy holding onto Asura's. The blood-breath, a move from Laxmus's book, was ready to fire into Asura's head until a fist from below hit Quinn right on the chin, lifting him in the air.

Then another fist hit Quinn once again, sending him flying. This time when he hit a dirt mound, his body had broken right through it and slammed onto another floating piece of land.

[Blood bank has been used]

'Sh*t sh*t, I need to recover. What happened? How did he hit me? I didn't let go of his hand?' Quinn thought. When he stood up and looked at Asura, he could see now Asura had six arms, all of them covered in the same gauntlet-like material.

'All of his power, that energy was in his two hands...and now he has six of them...I can't hold back...but I can't just use or rely on the Demon form. If this were a fight against Ray, in the middle of the war, using the Demon form would kill them all.' Quinn thought.

'I have to try. There is one more trick that I haven't tried...I have to try it!'

Chapter 2191.4: God Slayer 5 (Part 4)

Dealing with two arms from Asura was hard enough but now he had six of them all connected to his body. Rather than his energy and strength being split between these arms, instead Quinn could feel that all of these arms had the same amount of energy.

It felt like his opponent had just gotten three times stronger. The shadow mist was still around where Asura was, but it would need some time for the Shadow particles to be inhaled by Asura to take effect and before he knew it, Asura had leapt from his position, flying through the air right at Quinn again.

'I thought with the Nitro Accelerate, I would at least be able to keep him in the mist for a while to slow him down. This was what I was afraid of, now the Shadow mist is practically useless.' Quinn thought, but there were still other things he could do.

Moments before Asura landed with his fists, Quinn ran to the side. Asura had crashed into the ground and rocks were sent flying everywhere making it hard for both of them to see. In the middle of the debris falling, Asura felt something wrap around both of his arms.

They grinded against his skin and went past his gauntlets, digging in his biceps. Looking at them, they looked like sharp razor chains, and on the other end he could see Quinn.

"I am not weak!" Quinn shouted, pulling with all his might, and Asura was lifted in the air and slammed into the ground from the use of the Twin tail chains, the other soul weapon in Quinn's arsenal.

At the same time, Quinn had prepared something else, because right above where Asura had landed was a giant blood sword. It fell down aiming to split the god slayer in half.

In order to distract him, Quinn started to swing his chain blades at Asura, aiming for his body and his legs. They were making small scratches on his skin, but with his other arms Asura was able to block most of the attacks.

Then with his two main arms, he lifted them, grabbing onto the large blood sword. His knees bent as the sheer force of the large blood sword was more than he expected.

Gritting his teeth, Asura let out a loud yell as he pushed with all his might and with both arms chucking the blood sword back up. The sheer strength of Asura was more powerful than Quinn's blood control.

While it was hovering in the air, Asura started to punch the air with both of his arms. The energy blasts that would come off from them, just like before, hit the

sword and each time it did, it broke and diminished the blood aura. The large blood sword was being destroyed until it was eventually nothing.

Now Asura had his full focus on Quinn, and before Quinn was able to go back or try something else, he had grabbed onto the chains with four of his arms, then yanked Quinn forward.

Now he was the one in the air, the twin tail chains were attached inside of Quinn's body so there was no way he could act quickly. At the last moment, Asura let go of the Twin tail, and spun his whole body swinging out all of his arms.

The first three arms hit Quinn's body and then the next three did, hitting Quinn off into the distance again. While in the air, regaining his position, Quinn made sure to land on his feet, or at least he tried to, as he skidded across the floor on one knee.

His face was bruised and blood was spilling from his mouth.

'Is he going to die here?' Mundus thought, watching things from really far off this time. In fact, he was actually in the celestial space watching this match, rather than on the ground like during the fights before. He didn't want to be caught in the middle of this fight.

'After what I said, he's being stubborn about using the form he had against the Behemoth. I understand why, but it might cost you your life.'

Nitro accelerate was still active, and Quinn didn't want to waste the time he had, otherwise it would start to eat into his health. He dashed forward and started to swing his arms, aiming for all the right places.

Not only was Quinn punching, but he would also kick as well as he used all the training and skills he had over the years. Red aura was leaving his legs and fists as he threw out each blow.

However, with his six hands, equally Asura was matching them head on, as he threw his fists out as well. Knuckle was hitting knuckle. With each hit it sounded as if explosions were going off.

Not a single one of them were taking a breather, as they continued to throw out hit after hit, and the land they were on was being affected, it was almost disappearing, in that moment, Quinn saw an opening, he bent down with his knees and sprung up like a spring, lifting his knee it exploded right into Asura's chin.

His head tilted back for a second, before he used all the muscles in his neck to push down against Quinn's knee. Instead of Quinn hitting Asura up in the air, using his powerful chin, he pushed Quinn's knee and leg back into the ground and threw out a fist hitting Quinn right in the face sending him skidding backwards.

Asura wasn't letting up as he chased after Quinn. Seeing this, Quinn had to do something and started to form a mass amount of blood aura in his hand, condensing

it down he had made a smaller version of the blood sword it was still large in size almost like a greatsword.

Swinging it down, Quinn tried to slice Asura in half one more time.

'Focus, concentrate the Qi in my body to give me strength, I'm using the second stage of Qi to make the sword even sharper and all my blood energy to break through!'

With all six hands, Asura caught the blood blade, he was holding on tight trying to push the sword back, but was unable to, the Blood aura continued and Quinn was powering it with his strong Qi.

The only thing Asura could do was push the sword to the side so it wouldn't hit him, and when the blood sword hit the ground, a large wall rose up. On the other side of the wall, the landmass had split off breaking and floating off in the distance.

Not tiring for a second, Asura came right toward Quinn once more.

[Nitro Accelerate has ended]

"I need more time, I'll be back!" Quinn said, as he disappeared into a shadow portal and Asura's fist hit nothing but the air.

"Where did he go!!! Did he run away!" Asura shouted and banged the floor with all of his arms in anger.

Quinn had escaped to his shadow space, and was breathing relatively heavily. He had used a lot of all of his powers, it felt the same as when he was fighting against the phoenix the only difference was he had used so much energy in a short time compared to when fighting against the phoenix.

'I've tried to hurt him as much as I could, and I'm not sure, I was even able to put a large dent in him... I got a few big hits in, but other than my physical punches none of my blood attacks got through.' Quinn thought.

During the fight though, he did notice that with the large blood sword, both of the Blood attacks Asura had stopped them rather than take them head on. Which meant Quinn was able to hurt him if he could get a hit on him.

"Alright, while I'm in here let's do this properly." Quinn said to himself as he sat down and meditated.

Back on the ground, Asura was still looking everywhere for Quinn, he continued to shout and scream, letting out heaps of energy. It was as if it was endless for him, but finally he heard footsteps on the ground and turned his head.

"There you are!" Asura shouted, but noticed that there was something different.

Shadow had covered Quinn's hands in a condensed form just like before, but it wasn't just on his hands, as it trailed behind his body like a flame. Then there was the colour of the shadow itself which was completely different.

Rather than the normal purple colour the shadow would take on, it looked to be like a dark red, and all of the shadow that was glowing off Quinn's body was glowing red.

"Rather than protect, it's time for this shadow to attack."

Chapter 2192.5: God Slayer 5 (Part 5)

The shadow power had always been a great defensive measure, and while Quinn continued to grow so did his shadow powers. They only got better in terms of defence and the things it could do.

There was the shadow infect skill but that still wasn't really an offensive skill either. In order to try to make the shadow more versatile in battle, Quinn had attempted to fuse it with his Qi. This had worked, giving it a solid form.

The only thing was, this only allowed it to still be used in a defensive way, and to grab onto or hold things better. It could be used to attack in this form but it was weak, and it was better for Quinn to use his Qi in a physical way or with his vampire aura if that was the case.

So, what about his blood aura, mixing it with the shadow. For the longest time, Quinn thought that this might be impossible because of the trait of the shadow itself. It was meant to block everything out and slow things down from the original way they worked.

However, Quinn believed that it was possible, it had to be if he mixed them in from the root of his body, and inside, rather than trying to mix the two powers while they were already out of his body.

It took a lot of attempts, but with extreme concentration he could do it. Heading inside his own shadow space wasn't only to get away from Asura, it was also to allow him to mix his two powers and he was successful in creating the Blood Shadow.

The only problem was, the effects of the new found power, was not what he had expected at all. For a while he thought it was ineffective and useless. Up till now in all of his fights, it was something that wouldn't have helped him much, until now.

'Asura is physically stronger than me, he is naturally faster than me if I wasn't using the Nitro Accelerate and he has more energy than me. In a way, he is almost exactly like Ray, but I will still win this match, because I have so many people counting on me.'

[Nitro Accelerate activated]

[Blood supply will be used]

Quinn dashed forward with the glowing red shadow covering his hands. As he ran, a trail of the red shadow could be seen coming off from his back as well. At the same time, the red glow around both of his hands were getting brighter and brighter in colour as more blood aura was being put into the attack.

'I trained in that celestial space for years, honing my fighting style, I continued to grow stronger no matter who was in front of me and it will be the same here!' Quinn's hand turned into a claw shape.

He ran with both of his arms by his side, and an image of a black dragon was formed out of the lingering shadow behind him.

Asura, braced himself as he screamed into the air and his whole body was covered in energy, he stomped both of his feet into the ground, and threw all six of his fists forward, all of them aiming for both of Quinn's hands.

The blood dragon had hit Asura right on his large gauntlets, and a pulse of energy was emitting from the two clashes of energy hitting each other. Quinn was gritting his teeth pushing forward.

"HAHA, I thought you had something special when you came with that attack but now I see it's nothing to worry about!" Asura boasted.

With the power of the attack fading away, Asura was able to leave just two arms to hold onto Quinn's fists, and with his other four arms pulled them back, charging them up. He threw them forward right towards Quinn's head ready to finish him off.

"Now!" Quinn said.

As soon as Quinn said those words, a force of power had hit back all six of Asura's fists. The four that were mid air, were swung back slightly, and the two holding onto Quinn's hands had been pushed back as well.

It was clear by Asura's face he didn't understand what was happening, Quinn hadn't moved, he couldn't move because he was holding onto him, and it felt like almost an invisible force had hit him. He didn't have time to worry about why though, because his body and face was now wide open.

Quickly, using all the speed and strength Quinn had, he punched the body of Asura multiple times, the blood shadow still covering all of his hands. With the Nitro accelerate Quinn was good enough to get a few hits in, and he didn't just go for the body he went for the arms as well.

While Asura got use in his hands again, Quinn jumped back, just enough so he was out of range from Asura.

"You little brat, what are you doing!" Asura shouted.

Once again, just as Asura was about to attack again, he could feel pain all over his stomach. It was hurting all over as if he was getting punched just like before, but

Quinn was away, and it looked like he was charging up for another Blood Dragon attack.

When the pain stopped in Asura's stomach, suddenly he felt the pain in his arms and a force pushed them away and open again. He was defenceless and Quinn hopped in at that moment jumpin in the air, just above where his head was.

[Dragon Blood palm]

Quinn thrust both of his fists right in Asura's face, his legs were lifted from the ground and then his whole body slammed right into the ground. Quinn jumped away before Asura could retaliate, but just as he was about to get up, a large force just as strong as the palm strike hit him in the head again, pushing him further and deeper into the ground.

'Its working... the power of the Blood Shadow is working.'

Quinn was ecstatic, against someone like Asura this was the perfect person to use the skill against.

The blood shadow didn't increase Quinn's strength in any way, but it did allow for his blood aura, his Qi and natural physical capabilities to completely pass through the attack. The shadow wasn't getting in the way allowing him to fight like normal.

However, when testing the attack there was something strange about it. If Quinn was to punch a wall, then naturally a large crater would appear in it. If he was to do this with the blood shadow, the same size crater would be created, but a moment later, and the same attack would hit the wall again, at the exact same spot, and with the same amount of power.

Quinn didn't quite understand the phenomena behind it. At a guess he thought it had to have something to do with the shadow properties. It was designed to slow things down. When Quinn blocked with the shadow he wasn't blocking but slowing things down.

If he was to stay in the same place with the shadow long enough the attack would eventually come through, and in this case, this is what he thought was happening now. Due to the mix, his attack wasn't being stopped and was going through, but maybe the shadow was also storing the attack, slowing it down, and later pushing through the attack on the target again.

Either way, the hardest part of using the power was getting the timing down to be used in a fight. It took a lot of skill to work the timing where it could be useful. Which was why Quinn was a bit nervous since it would be the first time he would be using it in a real fight.

Yet it was working perfectly, now Quinn could block with the shadow blood and he could deal twice the amount of attacks and also disrupted his opponent's rhythm.

'With this power, I will win, without having to use the Demon form!' Quinn exclaimed, as he could feel a rumbling right beneath his feet.

Chapter 2193.6: God Slayer 5 (Part 6)

The delayed effect of the blood dragon palm strike had caused Asura to be hit deeper into the ground. It was one of Quinn's strongest attacks, the perfect use of Qi, blood control and his physical abilities.

The only problem was it would take him a moment or two to store the energy that was needed to produce the attack. With his normal attacks creating an opening he was able to do this, and now with Asura suspected to be hurt rather badly, Quinn was able to also prepare for another strong attack.

Using his blood aura once more, he had created the giant greatsword out of blood. One of the moves the previous king had perfected. When gaining the absolute blood control from the book, he had learned all of the previous kings' uses of the power as well.

Although this didn't matter as Quinn was good at imitating anyway which was why he was also able to create the blood whips and the 1000 blood sword attack and the blood drill. Regardless, in terms of sheer blood power this was one of the strongest attacks, and it was aimed to slice its enemy in half.

Swinging his arms down, Quinn was attempting to finish this fight off, and like a guillotine it moved swiftly down toward Asura. Before it reached him, Asura was seen jumping out from the hole he was in.

"If the gods themselves were unable to bring me down, do you think hits like that would work against me!" Asura screamed.

The point was ready to touch him, but in turn Asura threw out all of his fists as fast as he could. It hit the tip of the giant blood blade and stopped it in its place. The fists didn't stop hitting the blood sword and it was beginning to crack until it eventually broke and fell into multiple small particles.

'This is the only problem with the blood shadow. The effect only works for physical attacks, otherwise it doesn't have the delayed second attack, but Asura is strong and getting close to him could be the end of me.'

Quinn was keeping an eye on his health, he was still using the Nitro Accelerate, but he also had another blood bank left to heal him.

Mundus continued to watch the fight, as it looked like whoever was up in the fight was switching from one side to the other.

'This fight... is quite similar to the first. One is fighting for revenge while the other is fighting to protect. Quinn, you have always stated your feeling for protecting is strong... so you will have to prove it in this fight.' Mundus thought.

Quinn was ready to charge in again, but before he could, Asura punched the air and in doing so several energy blasts came right towards Quinn. The energy blasts were nothing to laugh at, as he needed to block them with his hands moving them in place.

The energy blasts didn't stop as Asura was able to move his fists in fast succession while also running forward. It was as if bullets of energy were coming towards Quinn. Usually Quinn could use his power to match up to this, but Asura's energy was stronger than his and the only thing that could block the attack was his shadow.

'The shadow is condensed on my hands at the moment. It's the only thing fast enough to move and stop the attacks.' Quinn thought, but out of desperation he had raised a shadow wall in front of him, trying to block the shots.

Before he knew it though, Asura was already behind him.

"Got you!" Asura said as he punched Quinn right in the back toward the air with three of his arms.

Right after, he followed Quinn, jumping up himself, his powerful legs allowed him to move faster, and now he was right above him with all six of his hands raised.

'This is going to hurt, I won't be able to use the Shadow space quick enough!' Quinn thought, as he braced himself, getting his hands in an X position and trying to move his shadow to cushion the attack beneath him.

[Blood bank used]

[Health restoring]

All six of the hands went crashing down onto Quinn's body. He was flying right into the ground just like Asura was, but this strike was far more powerful than that of the Blood dragon palm strike.

Quinn continued to be pushed through the land, until he had broken out of the other side of it, a large crack could be seen from above him and the island was splitting apart. Quinn's body continued to be hurled downward, and he felt his back slam into another piece of land, breaking it on impact.

He was a meteorite, crashing into pieces of land, breaking them into little pieces, until eventually he had hit the fourth piece of land, now laying on the surface.

As soon as Quinn took a breath, blood spilled from his mouth and he had to move his head to stop himself from choking.

'I managed to get my normal shadow, in front of the armour in time... but his power was enough to break through it.' Quinn was thankful. 'The fang set didn't take

damage because of it, but I was still hurt by the sheer force of the attack, as it sent me crashing into these pieces of land.'

[24/100 HP]

Quinn was seriously hurt, down to less than a quarter of his life. Using the Nitro accelerate at this point would be incredibly dangerous, but then how would he keep up with Asura's speed? It wasn't just his fists that were fast, it was everything about him.

'Can I do this... can I really do this... I shouldn't be risking my life right now. It's more important that I win this fight.' Quinn thought.

The images of his family were starting to appear in his head, images of the new allies he had made, and the scene of the beasts along with the Behemoth. Suddenly, the images of the dead beast had turned into his family members, and his allies he had made along the way.

'No... I can't use the Demon form... I have to figure out a way to win this. Even if I get the armour, who knows if that will be enough to defeat Ray. He even has his own armour he uses as well. There has to be a way, a way I can use the blood shadow, better to help win this!!!'

Quinn reassured himself as he stood up, and when he did, he could see Asura pushed off from another piece of land, his legs were so powerful that the piece of land was sent flying back through space, and he was heading right toward Quinn.

'Can't you give me a break, and let me have some time to think!' Quinn thought.

But there was a place where he could be and give himself time to think. Opening up the shadow, Quinn's body disappeared once more, and Asura crashed onto the piece of land, with his opponent gone once again.

"ARGHHHH!" Asura shouted, as he banged on his chest with all six of his fists.

Chapter 2194.7: God Slayer 5 (Part 7)

Thanks to Asura's grand attack, the distance between Quinn and him had increased. This meant that during his next attack, Quinn had enough time to enter his shadow space away from the fight, and that was where he was currently sitting down as he racked his head on what to do next.

The one thing the shadow space did give him was time, he had time to think of a solution, or perhaps try a few things, however, his shadow space also affected him as well. Even if he spent a long time in here, the energy he had lost during the fight wouldn't recover.

Meaning his Qi, his stamina or anything else, wouldn't recover, nor would his health, that was unless he had a couple of humans in the shadow space. He would always be able to feast on them to gain health back, but that wasn't something Quinn was willing to do.

Keeping someone in his space just for the sake of food, and how long would they even have to be in here.

It was always a problem for him, since items were unable to be stored in the shadow space, such as weapons, flasks and so on. It was the reason why those that were in the shadow space didn't just randomly stumble upon the items left in there.

At the same time, in his inventory, where his weapons and items were stored, living things were unable to be put in there and that included blood.

Either way, him being in the shadow space just meant he was delaying the inevitable because as soon as he left the area, he would be in the same state as he entered. The other thing was, he would return to the same spot as well.

Of course, he could use the shadow link to head back to MInny, but that would defeat the purpose of him coming here in the first place.

'I have to think of a way to beat him with everything I have right now. Is there something with the blood shadow I could use? I also have to think about the way Asura fights as well. He has six arms, where all of his energy stems from including the energy blasts, so how do I counter this?'

With all of this in mind, Quinn had to think about his health as well. As low as it was, he would still have to use the Nitro Accelerate, making sure he could win this fight without getting hit one more time, otherwise this whole fight would be over.

His mind was flip flopping still because of this and whether or not to just use the Demon form, because it was too big of a risk. That was until he had come up with a solution, playing with the blood shadow he had an idea, one that he was sure would work.

Standing up, Quinn started to use his powers, to summon them in a way he needed them, and when he was ready, it was time for him to return.

Asura was searching the piece of land he was on frantically, believing that Quinn might have hidden himself. He didn't move to other pieces of land because he had a feeling that he would be here, and he was right as the shadow portal appeared, where he had last seen him, and once again, he had slightly changed his appearance compared to before.

Actually that was incorrect, Quinn's appearance was the same, but now around him there was something different.

Around Quinn's body, there were shadow circles that were floating. In total there were six of them behind his back lining up in the shape of a circle. They had the same colour as the shadow blood that encased his hands, being dark red in colour with a red glow.

"So you have six circles now, is that meant to be a big deal!" Asura shouted as he moved his hands forward, and when he reached Quinn he went to hit him once more with a flurry of punches.

[NItro Accelerate activated]

Quinn used some of his hands to block the attack, but he knew with two limbs against six he would eventually lose out. When Asura could see an opening he went to punch Quinn right on his rib, that was until his fist was stopped.

Where Quinn's side was open, there was now one of the floating red circles that completely stopped his attacks.

Asura tried his best to ignore this and continued to punch in other areas, but more of the circles started to move, as they blocked each and every one of his strikes, while doing so the circles were moving in place just as fast as Asura was as well.

"There weren't just six circles for no reason." Quinn said, as he used his two hands to strike Asura hard in the stomach, he moved back a bit, but planted his foot firmly as he moved forward, continuing to punch.

The circles still moved in the way, doing whatever it could to protect Quinn, and the second hit, had hit Asura again, causing him to flinch for a second and allowing another opening for Quinn, as he slammed a fist this time on top of his head.

'This fight... it's over.' Quinn thought.

The idea he had come up with was possible by pushing his powers to its limit. Condensing his shadow and mixing it with blood, Quinn had used most of what

was available of his shadow. Although he had unlimited MC cells, he still had a limit on his output and most of it was being used.

However, Quinn did keep some of the shadow so he could block other attacks and use his other skills such as the shadow clone skill if he needed it, but none of these things would help him in the fight.

That's when he created something that could help him, the blood circles. These circles were condensed shadow and blood just like what was covering his hands, and they could block hits just as well.

There was another problem with the shadow, and that was the speed to use it, that's why Quinn covered his hands with the shadow in the first place, but there was a big difference compared to the shadow powers and the Blood Shadow, it was the fact that it had blood in it.

Because of this, it meant that Quinn was also able to influence it with his absolute blood control. In doing so, he could move it fast like a blood bullet, and fast enough to block Asura's hits.

The shadow circles continued to block Asura's punches, but with just that alone, it wouldn't be enough for him to win the fight, and time was against him with his Nitro accelerate running out, but Quinn wasn't worried, because there was one more thing.

Using both of his hands, Quinn had pulled one of the arms to the side with all his strength, then lifted his other hand in the air. While in the air, the shape of the condense blood shadow around his hand started to change, into that of a sharp blade.

Swinging it down, Quinn had hit right into the shoulder joint of Asura, the strike was large as blood aura flowed down and into the wound. Quinn was moving the attack back and forth like chainsaw ready to cut the arm off but it was stubborn.

His attack had only gotten through half of Asura's arm as he screamed into the air. That was until the effect of the blood shadow took place, and the second attack force went through, allowing for the blade to completely cut off Asura's arm.

It fell to the floor, and now what was once six... was five. Never before had Asura had his precious arms torn off from his body, it was a first for him and he realised something. Asura didn't want to admit it, but he too could tell that it was the end.

Chapter 2195.8: God Slayer 5 (Part 8)

The turning point in the battle had come with Quinn's use of the blood shadow, creating minuscule shields that could be moved at a great speed. It was enough for him to turn the tide.

Mundus knew it was the end, Asura knew it was the end, and so did Quinn. Yet even then, Asura didn't stop trying. He continued to throw out his fists, each one of them deadly, with the way Quinn's health was now, a single hit meant it was the end of the fight.

Maybe Asura was unaware of this, if he had known, perhaps it would have made a difference, but either way Quinn wasn't letting up. He continued to block all of Asura's hits, now having more of the floating circles, and his own two arms compared to Asura and had done the same again.

Holding out Asura's arm, Quinn then slashed it down transforming one of his fists into a blade. At the same time, Quinn also used the spare blood circle as a form of attack as well. Spinning it on its side, it was like a saw, and going in from below it was cutting another one Asura's arms as well.

An attack from below and from above, the second arm of Asura's had fallen a lot easier compared to the first. For Quinn now, it was a rinse and repeat act. He was doing the same motions again and again cutting off one arm at a time, until eventually there were only two left.

"This is how your going to beat me!" Asura shouted. "By tearing me limb from limb! I would have given you a far better death!"

Quinn felt that maybe Asura was taunting him in a way, and although he wouldn't allow that to happen, he did feel quite bad. The way Quinn was winning, it felt a little cheap to him.

At the end of the day, Quinn just needed to win no matter what happened. Who cared about honour or doing the right thing when they were dead? Would those things bring back one's family and friends, no.

But winning, and not losing them in the first place, would stop them from dying. Despite knowing all of this, Quinn did feel like it was only right for him to give him a farewell.

Jumping back, Quinn gathered all of the floating blood shadow disks. They continued to stop and block Asura. Some were stopping his punches while others, were attempting to attack him.

The blood shadow disks were unable to do serious damage but that didn't matter, all Quinn wanted to do was keep him in one place.

At that moment, Quinn was gathering his red aura, the dark red shadow was starting to glow brighter. Around Quinn's arms, the red glow, the lingering aura was swirling and moving up his arm.

"I'll give you what you want!" Quinn ran forward, and his Nitro Accelerate was still active. As he ran the after image left by his shadow and blood aura looked like a Blood Dragon pulse.

The move was similar to the tiger pulse, only it used far more energy to build up, which was why he had to get Asura to stay absolutely still.

However, as Quinn got closer the blood aura started to spin and the after image of the dragons started to swirl around as well. Throwing both of his fists forward, right toward Asura's chest at the last moment, Quinn twisted both of his hands giving it a little bit of extra power.

[Spiralling Blood Dragon Pulse attack]

After the connection was made, a large pulse of red aura went out, moving all of the ground around them. It looked like a ring of power and when it hit the nearby islands and rocks, it pushed them away, even damaging some of them.

The attack had gone right through Asura, as the two dragons made of blood aura could be seen for a few seconds before disappearing completely.

Asura had stopped moving, blood was dripping from his mouth. He tilted his head down to look at Quinn and there was an unexpected expression on his face.

"Thank you." Asura smiled. "Now... I no longer have to live with this anger... whatever you do, don't trust the gods."

A large wave of energy returned as the effect of the blood shadow took place, a large hit right in the centre of Asura and just like the last time it had happened again, and this time he fell to his feet, his whole body disappearing on the spot, leaving behind nothing but a crystal.

The crystal was filled with red energy inside it. It didn't look like flames, nor did it flow like vampire aura that glowed and was wind-like. Instead, the energy inside the crystal was a much darker red that was unable to stop shaking. It looked almost as if the crystal itself was shaking because of it.

'Has your anger even transferred to the crystal?' Quinn couldn't help but smile.

Even though the two hadn't spoken, they had only said a few words while fighting. Quinn didn't know why, but he felt through that fight he knew him quite well, knew his emotions and especially with those last words.

Asura was a being that just wanted his anger to go away. He had stayed in the same spot waiting for it to disappear, but it never did. In the end the answer he had come up with, was to release his anger on the whole universe, destroying everything.

Would that have worked? Would he still have been just as angry as he was, after accomplishing what he wanted. Regardless there was one fact, and that was that his anger was now gone, which Asura realised himself in his final moments. Quinn was happy he could at least give him that.

Picking up the crystal off the ground Quinn looked at it in his hand.

"It looked like you wanted to say more at the end." Quinn spoke. He thought that maybe if he hadn't used the blood shadow at the end, he could have heard what he had to say. What he wanted to fully tell Quinn in his last moments.

Asura was already on his last breath, but the second attack of the Blood Shadow had taken him out. Still, Quinn felt like he knew what Asura wanted to say, based on the story he had heard from Mundus.

In fact, it wasn't just Asura, all of the Humanoid God Slayers that Quinn had managed to meet, all of them wanted to tell him the same thing.

"Don't worry, I got your message loud and clear." Quinn said to himself as he wrapped the crystal in shadow. "I never trusted the gods to begin with."

[5/5 God Slayers have been defeated]

[You have successfully completed the quest awarded to you by 'Mundus the Messenger']

[Please meet Mundus to claim your reward.]

Chapter 2196: An Agent of the gods

The fight had come to an end with Asura, and yet, even with him gone, the area they were in, this part of the universe, was still the same. Quinn could imagine that this place used to be filled with planets, different moons, and perhaps looked similar to the solar system around earth.

Now though, it was nothing, he could see no sun, the dark space had turned into a mystic shapeshifting rainbow-like colour that produced just enough heat for one to live and there were the countless number of large pieces of land that were just floating about in the space.

It was just left here, now with no one here, to stay the same way as it was. In a way it was sad to see that when someone left the world and left the universe, it still carried on the same. Maybe one being's journey had ended but it hadn't reset everything back to the way it should be.

Seeing all of this just gave Quinn even more determination to carry on forward, to stop what Jim and Jack were doing before this result would occur.

Looking around, Quinn was searching for Mundus. He needed him to take him away from here, wherever here was.

"Mundus!" Quinn shouted, not worried if anyone else heard him. "I have completed the task you gave me, where are you."

For a quick second Quinn looked at his health.

[8/100 HP]

'A lot of these fights I had were extremely dangerous and close to the wire. If Mundus decides to betray me, I won't have much fight left in me... but there is one thing I can still do.' Quinn thought.

The crystals were in his possession so he could shadow travel to where Minny was, but he didn't want to do that without talking to Mundus first, because things needed to be made clear.

"I can hear a sense of fear in your voice." Mundus said, appearing from behind. "For someone who had just defeated 5 of the greatest beings in the Universe I wouldn't expect it to come from you. Ah, sorry, it was 4 beings. How could I forget about him?"

Quinn was quite obviously keeping the distance between the two of them, and the regular shadow powers were lingering over his back. The words that were said by Asura in his last moments had stuck in his head more so than he thought.

"What do we do now, I with the Crystals?" Quinn asked. "And is the deal the same as before, including the fact that I get to keep the armour?"

"Ah, now I see why you are worried." Mundus said. "But believe me, if I wanted to kill you I would have had plenty of chances. At any point and time I could have swooped in at the end, and finished your life."

"I even allowed you to keep hold of the crystals, so there is no need for you to worry about that. A promise is a promise. Due to you achieving the mission that was set out to you, you will now become an Agent of the Celestials.

"We will not get involved with business to do with those from Earth and from time to time you will need to complete tasks for us. That is of course, providing you complete the first task that you will be given which is to stop the humans from spreading outside their current reach. Whether that's by eliminating them all, or having them work tightly under your thumb, either is fine, just stop them."

Mundus gestured for Quinn to come over, they needed to be relatively close for the transport to work, and Quinn did take a few steps until he stopped.

"Mundus, even though I trust you, you even said it yourself, a promise with you is not a promise with all the gods." Quinn said. "So what will happen if they choose to break this deal and go after me. I already have enough on my plate to deal with. What will you do?"

For Mundus, he could understand why Quinn was acting this way. The god slayers that he had made Quinn go up against, with the exception of Raze Cromwell, he knew about them all because he was somewhat involved with them all.

"The gods are not one to say they have never made a mistake. When you live as long as us we are bound to make mistakes as well. There are, at times, where we think we have seen it all, and yet, new things surprise us all the time.

"It's what makes living in this world still interesting in a way, but fear not. We have learned from our mistakes, what happened to the Asuras we wish for something like that to never happen again. That is the best thing I can say to try and reassure you."

At this point, Quinn only had Mundus' trust, the trust he had given him so far. Not harming his family, not taking the crystals, and actually trying to explain his reasoning, but there was also the fact that Mundus had trapped him.

Walking forward, Quinn accepted what would happen and stood next to Mundus.

"How do we create the armour?" Quinn asked.

"We will need a forgery and massive amounts of power and physical strength. To top it off, not just any metal can be used to be mixed with the god slayer crystals, at

least if we want to create something that is the very best. I have a place in mind, a place you have been to before.

"The place of the Amra."

Quinn was quite surprised to hear something he knew about. They certainly did have rocks that seemed indestructible and great strength as well. With Alex along with him, he was sure that they could create armour that was unmatched, or at least on the same level as what Ray was wearing.

He wished to meet the Amra anyway, to ask for their help in the fight, so it was the perfect place for him to go to, and then he could head back to the Mermerial planet.

"Before that, there is something I must do." Mundus placed his finger on Quinn's head. A faint glowing circle appeared on Quinn's forehead and quickly disappeared.

[You are now an Agent of the Celestials]

[The Celestials are able to locate where you are through this marking.]

[They are also able to communicate with you]

[The marking may be forcefully removed but the Celestials will be aware]

'A tracker, I guess they trust me as much as I trust them. At least it can be removed, but that would be telling them that I was planning something.'

"The journey for me and you ends here, Quinn Talen." Mundus said. "I will transport you to where you need to be. If you don't hear from me, then it means you have done a good job and can continue to live your life."

"I sincerely hope we never have to meet again."

A bright white light surrounded Quinn, and a few seconds later he was transported with everything he needed to end this.

Chapter 2197: A Breakpoint

Inside the grand tower on one of the Amra planets, for a long time the Blades had struggled to get past the 50th floor. It was a central point in the tower and many struggled to do so as well.

This was because the floor was more of a testing floor, one would have to beat a special evolved type of Amra to pass. They didn't need to kill them, but just be strong enough to allow them to reach the next stage.

This stage could also be done with as many people as one wished. They had to go against five Amra at the same time. Due to the nature of the test as well, only one group, however small or large, could take the 50th floor at the same time.

The 49th floor had a large living area that would allow one to rest and buy supplies and more before they went to the 50th floor. On top of that, whatever floor one went up to, they could use the teleporters located at each floor to quickly transport between them.

So for the Blades they would teleport to the 49th floor, and then attempt the 50th floor whenever they could.

While doing this, Layla and her family were taking the test on their own, going up from floor 1. At the same time, Ceril and Stark were taking the test as well, then finally, there was Russ, who had also decided to climb the tower, but on his own.

Geo stuck with the Blades, giving them help and support when it was needed, while Nock, another one of the leaders of the Amra, stayed with the Talen family. There was also a high ranking Amra put with Russ, just to help if need be, and to keep an eye on him.

While Nock and Geo were in the tower, the final leader of the Amra, Dober, who worked more on the technological side of things, was taking the reins on the outside.

"We failed again!" Shiro walked through the village on the 49th floor while his broken arm was being healed by another Blade. Behind him, were all of the other members of the Blade group, around fifty in total, all of them looking defeated and tired.

"You are rushing more than you usually would, which causes you to make more mistakes compared to before." Geo said. "Take my word for it, you have gotten stronger, but you shouldn't try and force yourself to beat your opponent. Take your time, and think it through."

"We are rushing, but it's because he is now climbing the tower as well." An image appeared in not just Shiro's head but the rest of the Blades of Russ. The last thing

that they all wanted was to be overtaken by him. In a way, it would be like admitting that he was stronger than them.

Were the Blades nothing without Sil? No, they had still proven themselves to be some of the strongest out there, without him. They were able to go against the Chained without Sil, and they were going to do the same here.

After a few hours, the group had recovered, and they were ready to go again. They started to go through the village, getting a few snacks, and touching up on refreshments before having another go.

The village had a nice row of market stalls side to side leading up to the large door that would take one to the 50th floor. While looking at these rows of shops, Shiro noticed a few people, and his eyes had widened.

"How did they manage to get up here, so fast... " Shiro said.

"Oh, the look on your face." Russ said. "I have to admit, a lot of the tests in the tower would be incredibly difficult for some, but for me, one that can adapt to any situation, it was fairly easy."

Russ has made it to the 49th tower far quicker than he had ever imagined, but he wasn't the only one here. Layla, Minny and Galen were together, and they could even see the two new aliens they had recently met, Ceril and Stark.

The Talen family were able to get through the floors due to their brute strength and overwhelming power. There was no struggle on the way up and they were actually the first ones to arrive, but after reaching the 49th floor they decided to take a rest in the village.

Not too far behind them was Russ who had used his partner that travelled with him to unlock ways to go past the floors, then there was Ceril and Stark. The two of them were quite lucky that the tests required certain things from them.

At first they struggled with the gravity but with their unique powers were able to pass through the floors relatively easily, but the 50th floor was always where it got really challenging for the group.

"Everyone!" Shiro said, gritting his teeth. "Let's go to the next floor."

Shiro was already moving ahead, and the rest of them followed. Since it was the first time the others were on the 50th floor, they were unaware of the one group rule, and this was why Shiro was getting a head start, because he and the Blades would go past the 50th floor before the others.

Talking to the Amra at the large giant door, Shiro and his team were teleported away, as they went to the 50th floor.

"It looks like we will all need to wait a while until we can take the next test." Nock stated. "Only one group at a time can take the test."

Russ didn't seem to be annoyed at this as he started to stretch a little, as he did though, there was another voice from behind.

"Ah, we have been looking for you guys, this place was a bit more dangerous than we thought." A young voice said, that sounded human. The Amra spoke deeper and rougher when they spoke.

Turning around it didn't take long for Russ to recognise the two of them, and for them to recognize him as well.

On the 50th floor, a fire had been lit under the Blade family. They were working well together, pushing themselves as they fought against the stronger gravity, summoning more Qi in their bodies.

They timed their attacks perfectly and more importantly, something they had never worked on before, they were working better as a unit. Usually, the Blades were strong individuals that could just use their abilities as they wished.

Here though, it wasn't enough, and they were learning how to support each other more and more. In the end, the five Amra had been defeated, unable to get up.

"It looks like you guys finally passed." Geo said. "You are amazing warriors who would be welcomed into any army."

Finally passing the 50th floor they could go to the 51st. However, what was a common thing to do, was to head back to the 49th floor to rest before trying to climb back up the tower.

Shiro and the group decided to do this, and at the same time, they wanted to see how the others would fare, taking on the 50th floor. Surley, they wouldn't pass it the first time, or at least be impressed that the Blades were able to pass it a first time.

Heading back to the 49th floor, Shiro had only walked a short distance with the others until they all stopped. They could see Russ, Layla, and the others talking to two people.

"Vicky... Jake!" Shiro said as he ran over. "Both of you, what are you doing here?"

It was none other than Jake Green and Vicky Blade. Shiro would know both of them as they were a part of the Blade family yet at the same time not, but judging by how the two were looking at Shiro, they couldn't remember him at all.

"I guess... our memories of you have been removed as well." Vicky said. "Fear not, Logan has updated us on the situation, so we are not so surprised, and Layla has updated us on everything else that has happened so far.

"As for us, we are here because we have a message to deliver. Jack and Jim are on the move... and they are coming here."

Chapter 2198: One person left

The Blades had come out of the 50th floor with a high. They were feeling great after finally passing the 50th floor. As they fought side by side, they could tell that they had improved by leaps and bounds.

Something that would have taken them years to complete, had been done in a matter of days. They were progressing fast and a lot of them were already wondering how much better they would be if they continued to climb the tower.

Surely, there would be a type of rebirth among those who would have managed to complete the tower, but all of these thoughts had come crashing down as they met with Jake and Vicky, who were the bearer of bad news. The fact that Jack and Jim were on their way, meant that there was no more time, no more time for them to continue to improve.

They were to face the enemy now, and to go against them at the strength they were at.

"If the news you say is true, then we will need to talk about it together, in a more serious manner. I think it's best if we leave the tower." Geo claimed.

Doing as Geo said, all of them left the tower, and with quick decision making, Geo determined that no more Amra were allowed to enter the tower. Those that were in the tower were also to leave as soon as they could.

It was a first for the Amra since Geo had taken control. Since those in higher positions had been made aware of what was possibly coming, the whole city, the whole planet, was feeling a little tense.

They had decided to enter the large reception room that had hard rock like furniture in Geo's manor from before. Here, Ceril and Stark had decided to contact their respective leaders, the King and Queen of the Penswi and Wince, and they were being projected into the room as well.

This was so they could all talk about their next step, and get the information that Jake and Vicky had come to deliver.

"The first question I would like to ask is how did Logan manage to find us?" Layla asked. "Does that mean that Jim and the others already know where we are as well."

This was an important question since the current plan they had, and one of the big advantages they had, was that the attacker didn't know where or who they were teaming up with.

"We actually didn't know." Jake replied, as he placed a device on the centre table for all of them to see. "Logan wished to send data to the next planet that was under

attack. Jack and Jim have already been doing research on you Amra, in order to face you.

"So far every planet that they have taken over, they have fought against the alien race with no trouble at all."

The device in the middle started to show scenes of the battle. The vampires, the humans with abilities, androids that had been created by Logan, and the Dalki that now had abilities, each one of them defeating all of their opponents with ease.

"A lot of these planets, they didn't know they were going to be attacked. Usually it is easier to defend than to be the attacker in a war, but all this time they have overwhelmed their opponents and in most cases can conquer an entire race in a couple of days."

The leaders of the other races were shocked to hear this, most wars would take months if not years. For something to be done in days, really showed the level of power they were going up against.

"We were sent here to inform the next race on their list in hopes to give them more of a fighting chance. When we arrived though, we noticed that there were human traces and the Amra recognized us as humans all the way out here."

"Logan had frequently sent us to other planets to search for the Blades." Vicky explained. "We weren't so closely watched so it was easy for us, but we never found a trace of the Blades that my husband asked us to find. So when we heard there were humans here, we thought it was best to meet them first and it was a good thing we did, we never expected to also meet the Talen family, another group that Logan asked us to look for."

"Yes." Layla said. "It's quite lucky, maybe for once things are going in our favour instead of against us."

Both Vicky and Jake looked around the room, as if they were trying to look for someone.

"Where is the person named Quinn though, Logan said, he was the most important person we should look for." Jake stated.

There was an awkward silence in the room for a few moments before Layla spoke up.

"Quinn is off doing something that will help in the war. He should be returning to the Mermerial planet, the planet where Ceril and Wince are from and will be here as soon as possible."

"I hope so." Vicky answered. "Because, at the moment you have 2 days before they arrive."

"Which means we have to prepare for the worst and make a plan as if he wasn't here." Russ added. "We were already preparing for that anyway."

The conversation went on, as the three races discussed the plan with how to deal with the upcoming attack and a few things had been decided. The Penswi and Mermerials were already sending their forces to the Amra planet as they spoke.

According to the direction of where Jim and Jack were coming from, they would reach three Amra planets before reaching the one they were currently on where the capital was located.

It was decided that those planets would be cleared of locals, all positions taken back to the main planet, and they would take the fight to them on these three planets. Still, it might not be enough to protect everyone and Jack and Vicky made that clear.

They said that in each fight, when there are multiple planets, one group is the main attacker. They would take it in turns as to which group this would be. In this case it was Jim.

They would try to go to the location of where the leaders were to end the war as quickly as possible. Meanwhile the second group would deal with the other areas.

"Jack is most likely the one to have Sil, our plan still remains the same that we need to save Sil to give us the best chance of ending this war." Layla stated, and she looked towards Geo as she was a bit concerned.

"Do not worry about us." Geo said. "This is our planet to protect, you are already doing enough to help us. We are not weak, and will do our best, you do not need to stay by our side."

Although Geo was strong and he said that no one needed to stay and help, leaving the Amra to deal with Jim meant dealing with the vampire leaders, the Originals, Jim, Chris, Peter, and Ray. With them trying to all save Sil, would they be able to survive before they managed to return, and that was only if they were successful saving Sil from Jack, H, and the Dalki.

"We will be there to help as well." Jake stated. "Logan will be coming on this attack, and so will the two of us. If your aim is to save Sil, then we will keep the element of surprise until the last moment. We will be able to give you a clear passage to save Sil."

"Great!" Stark said. "I see a lot of worried looks on the faces around us, but to me this is not a losing battle. We have three races that have come together, we have people on the inside of the enemy, and we have a plan."

"This is for the sake of saving all our races, including those on Earth."

"Don't forget!" Minny interrupted. "We have daddy as well, and he always saves us."

They all smiled at Minny, although that was the case, they didn't have Quinn right now, but no one wanted to say anything to her.

"Don't worry, dad will come, I know he will." Minny said.

When she finished her sentence, a large flash of white light could be seen right outside the window. It appeared as if it was coming from the sky. It looked like Minny's prediction was true.

Chapter 2199.1: Preparation for battle (Part 1)

The bright flash of white light could be seen from all over the city, and a few of them had seen this before. They remembered the last time they had seen such a thing, and in the back of their mind for a second they wondered, was it him?

Yes, how could it be, Quinn didn't know they were here, and he hadn't gone back to the Mermerial planet yet, besides, wouldn't he have arrived in a spaceship or something. In the end, Quinn didn't tell the others much of the details of what he was doing.

Who Mundus was, what he had asked, and what he was capable of? As soon as he appeared in the city, he looked around and could see the Amra everywhere. There were a few that were quite startled but they started to make faces as they were beginning to recognise him.

"Is that... Why do I recognise that human's face? And how did he come from the sky?" One of them asked.

Running through the city, Quinn was heading to the most likely location where Geo would be. Since he was no longer a celestial he was unable to clearly sense the energy inside him. Only when he was using it would he be able to somewhat pinpoint it.

'Let's not waste time, I need to try to find Geo as quickly as possible, he's their leader now, so he should be in the biggest or most central building, or he might be in the tower at the very back as well.'

Scanning, Quinn moved his head from side to side, and that's when he suddenly stopped for a few seconds as he looked at what was in front of him. Placing his hand on his forehead he started to shake.

'Why.... why everywhere I go, do they seem to like to build statues of me?' Quinn said. 'At first, I have to admit I found it a bit flattering, but seeing it here, even among aliens it's a bit embarrassing... and why does it feel like it's honouring someone that is already dead... I'm very much alive!'

Trying to ignore the statue, at least Quinn knew he was in the right place, and was on the right planet. Going around quickly he could eventually see the large manor, and thought that it was the best destination. Using his strong legs, Quinn leapt up, and jumped toward one of the windows.

Seconds before he was about to crash into the window, his body turned into shadow and using the shadow travel he went right through the wall and landed in the centre of the room. When he stood up from his bent position from landing he could see multiple eyes on him.

"That was quite the unexpected entrance." Russ said with his arms folded, looking unimpressed while the others found it hard to keep their mouths closed.

Quinn was like the boogeyman, one would say his name and then he suddenly appeared right in front of them.

"Daddy!" Minny called out as she ran forward and surprisingly, Galen had jumped out of Layla's hands as well, rushing toward his father. The two of them jumped up and Quinn caught them as they rubbed their cheeks against his chest.

"We missed you so much... where did you suddenly go, why do you keep leaving us." Minny asked through sobbed tears, as usual.

Quinn wanted to answer but honestly he was left more confused as to what situation he had just ran into. He was turning his head looking at everyone in the room. For one, he was only expecting to see Geo, but everyone was here.

"What! Shiro as well, you were on the Amra planet, now my head is really starting to hurt. Why is everyone on the Amra planet, what happened... did the Mermerials get attacked?" Quinn asked.

It looked like now was the time for the others to explain to him what had happened. They went through the details of the choices they had decided to make in order to help Quinn, and how it was a coincidence that the Blades were here.

He let them do the talking as to what happened since the Blades were here. Now it was all starting to make a bit more sense, but there was still one more piece of the puzzle that Quinn was confused about, and that was Jake and Vicky.

From the way they looked at him, it seemed as if their memories had been wiped as well, and there had to be a reason for that, which they explained, making Quinn's heart beat slightly faster.

"I see... so its finally happening. It looks like they're coming and we don't have a lot of time. Thank you for coming all of this way. I'm sure you two have to head back as soon as possible in order to not cause any suspicion. The last thing I want to do is upset you guys and Logan after everything you have already done for me." Quinn stated.

It was true, and looking at each other they decided to set off, reminding them that they would help with the Sil situation.

"I'm sorry everyone for going away again, but I promise that this time it was for a good reason." Quinn stated.

"I think the plan you have made will mostly work, the problem is the ones fighting against Jim... I want to be by your side, I want to help you when you rescue Sil,

but I can't just leave the Amra and I think there is a bigger threat that I'll need to hold back.

"I will have to put my trust in you guys, in order to free Sil. While here, on this planet, I will try to cause a big distraction for them. So when the time is right, who knows, maybe Jack and the others will send all of their forces to me."

"But what if they change our memories and make you seem like you are one of our enemies." Geo asked.

"I think it's best if I don't come in at the start of the war anyway. Most likely Jim won't use a strong force, or his trump card unless he's in trouble. In this war, I will make it appear as if I'm appearing as an outsider to help you out.

"Even if they do change your memories, I will be fighting against the enemy so I doubt it will change much, and besides... I think there could be another problem."

Quinn didn't say it out loud, but 2 days it wasn't enough time. At first he was happy that he had arrived just before the war had started, but Alex had given him a reminder.

'The armour Quinn... even if we can gather all the materials on this planet, and can use their forgery here... we are dealing with five god slayer crystals. We will be lucky if the armour is done by the end of the war.' Alex stated.

Chapter 2200.2: Preparation for battle (Part 2)

There was a large issue at hand, but Quinn didn't want to share his worries with everyone, at least not yet until he knew there was absolutely nothing he could do about it. They already had a lot to worry about.

The problem at hand was how long it would take to create the armour, the celestial weapons that Alex had created, the blood guns, had taken a long time and even trapped his soul into the weapon.

After that, Quinn had also created the God-Slayer tier ring for his daughter, and he was in the forgery for around 2 weeks back then. This was completely different, they weren't creating a small accessory but were creating a whole armour set and possibly gauntlets as well.

With five crystals, Quinn felt like maybe it would take a whole month.

'If only Mundus had come with me... he could have sped up the process, but he might think he has gotten involved enough already and after letting me keep the armour behind the Ancient Ones back. I doubt he would want to be involved in the creating process as well.'

"Everyone prepare as you have been doing, and make sure you all get plenty of rest." Quinn said. "I know a lot of you are restless and maybe want to train more, last second before the enemy arrives, but we have the element of surprise in this battle, we know they are coming, so we can be well rested."

"I need to speak to Geo for a bit about something... I will have him call for you all when you are needed."

It was the first time, the first time they had seen Quinn talk formally to all of them. He wasn't speaking as a friend or as an ally but it was clear he was giving orders. The look in his eyes as well, they were more fierce and aged compared to before.

It made the others wonder, just what had he been through, what was he doing during this time. Still, he was the person they could trust most and they would continue to do so.

After everyone had left, Quinn cut straight to the chase, asking Geo about helping him with his requirements.

"Both of those things I can supply to you. One of the best forgeries there is and the strongest material that we can get our hands on. Even if you were to not use any crystals at all I guarantee the quality would be better than a lot of beast gear out there." Geo said, as he paused for a second, making Quinn think there was a 'but' in there somewhere.

"Whats the problem?" Quinn asked.

"It's not so much of a problem... maybe more of a concern. I can tell why you were a bit worried back there, if you wish to create an armour. You said that you would be overseeing this project yourself, yes?"

It was the only option they had, Quinn was the only one that could use the blood guns since they were attached to him, it wasn't like other weapons and that meant Alex was attached to him as well.

So the two of them would have to be the one to make the weapons.

"Yes... which means, I might be away at the start of this war... but this armour, I'll be honest, I believe that without it, we might not have a chance to win this battle." These words were not ones he wanted to say in front of many, and that included Geo, but he thought it was only fair for him, since he was risking his life.

"I understand, Dober who you met the last time you came here, he is one of our best forgers and has a great mind. He and his team can help you with everything you need. They will be able to speed up the process for you, at least on the materials side.

"If this armour is as important as you say it is, then it's better that they are helping you, rather than being out on the battlefield but there is one issue. The best forgery and the materials needed are in the tower."

This didn't come as a huge shock based on what Quinn had seen before, but he wondered why did Geo think it was so much of an issue.

"The tower, the way it works each floor is more like a portal to another planet, another world. You should know that from the last time. You will have to stay in the tower while making the armour, but if the tower is destroyed then it won't be easy to come back."

Now Quinn could see the issue, he had his shadow link so he could always come back to Minny or Galen, but they were meant to go with Layla to help free Sil. Layla would never agree to split them apart, or be without them, but if they were all to stay here, then it might not be enough to break out Sil.

"We... will just have to deal with the situation. They won't know the importance of the tower, and I'm sure you will protect it well. If worse comes to worse, I will travel as quickly as I can."

A plan had been set and before he was to inform everyone, he went ahead with Dober to look at the forgery and equipment in the tower. The Amra were already at work transferring the large rocks that were sparkling with green colour.

They were bringing them down from a floor, to where the forgery was based on around floor 30.

"So what do you think?" Dober asked.

'This is excellent Quinn!' Alex said with excitement. 'They have equipment that works much faster than that at the vampire settlement, and plus these guys, it was as if this alien race were made to be forgers with their four hands. Maybe we can make it a lot quicker than I originally thought.'

'Will it be quick enough to be made before they arrive.'

Alex's silence was a clear no, but being made quicker was certainly better.

"This is great, thank you for staying by my side and working so hard." Quinn said.

The others had been called to the front of the tower, as he needed to speak to them all.

"I don't like keeping you in the dark, which is why I have called you all to tell you something important." Quinn said. "Most likely, when the war starts, I won't be there to help you.

"I have to enter the tower, to create something that will give us a big advantage in this war. I will be as quick as I can be. I know the enemy is strong, but all of you are strong as well, and I believe in you.

"Stark, please step forward."

Stark did as was told and moved forward. Quinn then waved his hand, and a shadow appeared on the ground with it, the Celestial Fang set appeared on the ground. Everyone who had known Quinn for the longest time, knew what the armour was and how precious and powerful it was.

"You are the fastest being I know, and with this armour there will not be a single person that will be able to match up to your speed. Use this to save my friend Sil. This is a loan, for me to help you, and I expect the armour back in one piece."

Stark didn't know what to do, he had heard Quinn talk about this armour a few times, it was what allowed him to beat him in the grand event. Never did he think he could get such a thing. So he just went on his knees and started to thank Quinn dearly.

"I know you have a lot you must want to say to me, especially you, Layla and my family, but I think it's best we leave it here, because I want to make it clear. This is not good bye. I give every single one of you an order that you can not fail no matter what.

"Do not die." Quinn said, turning around and heading into the tower.

For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

P.a.t.r.e.o.n jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2201: Your Choice

Quinn had entered the tower, and when he did so, he didn't look back at those that he had left behind. In his own words, this wasn't a good bye, he was going to see them all again when he got out of the tower, this was his strong belief, his resolve that he needed if he was to go in the tower and get what was needed to be done.

Arriving at the floor where the large forgery would be at, Quinn quickly ran through the fields. On this floor, the world they were on was a land like that of Earth but almost set in a distant past, but it had the best forgery that they needed to create what they wanted.

The large black rock building was built around a special area on the land, one where there were five inactive volcanoes. Apparently from the centre, they were able to draw natural heat from the land that could be used in the weapon making process.

At the same time, there was a special quality to the natural heat that would rise up from the ground when making their weapons, that would allow them to be that much stronger.

'Remember Quinn, when we start this process, we can't stop no matter what.' Alex explained in his head. 'If we want to get done here as soon as possible and help out everyone then we need to focus on the task.'

There was more to it than just this, when making weapons, the timing of everything was very important, and at times there weren't things like machinery that could tell one when the best time was to do the next part.

Often it was intuition, through making so many weapons, Alex could eyeball the next step.

They entered the forgery again, and ten large strong Amra were at Quinn's disposal, as well as Dober. The equipment was all set up, and the special green rock type material was placed in the corner of the room.

'Me and you, we've both worked together making a weapon before.' Alex said. 'So this time, we will be better than before, we can work faster. You have a special body Quinn, a body I always wished I could have.'

'And, you have me, the best forger, and as well as the best workers here, we are going to create equipment this world has never seen.'

Although Alex kept talking, he was worried, because his partner in all of this was silent, he hadn't responded to anything he said, and there was this uneasy feeling around him.

"Just tell me what to do." Quinn eventually said. "And I will follow it."

Hearing Quinn speak, Alex realised that he was just incredibly focused at the moment. In his mind, the war might as well have started already. The first order from Alex was to see what material they were dealing with.

Quinn walked up to the strange rock, it was mostly grey in colour with sparkles of green crystal running through it.

"This is known as a Sedron Stone." Dober explained. "We brought over all of the material that we have in the tower. With this much Sedron Stone, you would be able to create three lots of armour. The best thing about Sedron is that no other material needs to be mixed in with it other than the Beast Crystals. It's perfect in every way, as if it was a material that was meant to be made into beast weapons."

"However, since it's your first time working with the material we expect mistakes and this will allow room for error. As I said though, this is the only Sedron we have. I don't want to put pressure on you but..."

"It's okay." Quinn said.

Had there ever been a time when Alex had made a mistake, perhaps not, and it would be the worst case for him when the tension was this high. In order to do all of this as quickly as possible, no mistakes were needed.

Grabbing the special rock with his bare hand, Quinn tried to clench his fingers as hard as could, at first he used his natural strength, and there was nothing, then after that he used his Qi as well to increase the strength of his grip even more, but a piece of the rock wouldn't break off.

"The material itself is so strong that it can't be cut. The Amra have to dig out around it and pull it out. The only way is to place it in the furnace, and only this furnace, in order to melt it down to usable material."

The Amra had more experience dealing with the Sedron stone, so he would leave it to them. They would focus on this process while Quinn would need to focus on something else.

'We need to give Dober the designs that we want, he can then start to make the mouldings for the weapons, but before that, we also need to decide something else as well. Just what crystal are we going to use for what part of the armour.'

Quinn brought each of the god slayer crystals that he had earned and laid them on the table. The battles that he went through to obtain them flashed in his head for a second.

'Quinn, you were the one that fought them all head to head, you know what powers each of them possess, so I want you to pick, as I am going to trust your instincts on this one.' Alex explained.

Usually, a crystal had to be inspected to decide what the crystal was best suited for, but there had to be a reason why Alex was doing things this way.

"The Cloudy Crystal." Quinn picked up. "It belonged to the monkey man. He was agile, light on his feet. Even when he was walking it was hard to hear what direction he came from, and he was quite the master of trickery, I think it would be best to create a pair of boots out of these."

'I think that's a good choice, the crystal has plenty of energy, more so than regular crystals. I think boots which also have greaves going up to your knee will be good.'

Looking at what else needed to be made, Quinn had picked up two crystals this time, one being the Phoenix crystal and the other the Behemoth.

"I'm struggling with this, Ray has great strength, so for the chest plate, the strongest beast I thought against, the Behemoth, would be the perfect choice. Yet surely, the phoenix that had a wide range effect and could withstand large amounts of heat would also do well."

'Again, I think both of them are good choices.' Alex stated. 'Perhaps I can create a chest piece that works with both of the crystals and stretches out so it covers your shoulders. It will be two pieces of equipment, both of them having the same properties as each other.'

Quinn then surprisingly picked up Asura's crystal.

"I think this choice has to be the obvious one. My opponent uses gauntlets where all his strength came from his hands. If it's powerful enough, then there is no need for you to attempt what you said you would do before."

Alex didn't comment on this, because he didn't want to tell Quinn but he still wished to re-modify the Blood guns to become part of the gauntlets even if there was another God Slayer crystal.

Guns never did suit Quinn's fighting style, but it was the power that they brought that had helped him, if that power can be transformed into something more hands on, in order for Quinn to do what he needed to do, then he would do it in a heartbeat.

"Then that would leave the last crystal to be used as a helmet." Quinn said. Picking up what was given by the great mage, a mystery crystal.

'Quinn, just because it goes on your face doesn't mean it has to be a helmet, a helmet has never suited you.' Alex laughed in his head. 'I think... a mask has always suited you best.'

The creation was underway, and so was everything else.

Chapter 2202: A Brewing Storm

It was quite clear that the Penswi and Mermerials were taking this matter quite seriously, as they had sent a little over fifty percent of their forces to aid the Amra race. This was most likely the effect of the video that had been shown by Jake and Vicky.

Each race had their own research teams, and they could cross reference that it was true, the fact that a race from Earth was going from planet to planet, taking over civilisations and other races.

Of course, they were unable to send their whole armies as they still needed some for self protection but it was also clear that they were riding on this Alliance. If the three races didn't succeed in stopping Earth's forces, then there wasn't much hope for them stopping it on their own.

The evacuation of civilians and their treasured belongings was complete, as they moved from their planets to the one where Geo and the Tower resided. Their belongings could all be put on one of the floors making it safe.

If the main city was to suffer from the battle, then at least they wouldn't have to worry about their belongings. The plan was for Geo to also let those that didn't wish to fight, to reside in the tower.

After all, if it was destroyed they wouldn't die but instead would be someplace safe. However, none of the proud Amra wished to not take part in the war, so only the children were placed inside.

Because of this, the planned number of forces had changed slightly. The three planets surrounding the central planet had a slight curve. These planets would have a mixture of forces, Amra, Mermerial and Penswi.

No doubt they would be surprised to see three races rather than one alien race, and it was most likely that these planets would be attacked first. Because there were a larger number of Amra participating in the war, only they would protect their main city.

However, it would have their strongest protecting the place. They would have to rely on their allies to do the job of stopping the majority of the forces of the first wave.

Currently, Layla and the rescue force were on the centre planet of the three planets. This would allow them to travel to the other two quicker if there was a need to, but that wasn't their goal.

Layla, Minny, Galen, Shiro, Ceril, Russ, Stark and Shiro, were part of the operation to rescue Sil. They were all walking through the city, as they watched everyone prepare.

Large interracial groups were discussing formations and volunteering on what to do. Entering one of the buildings, led by Wince, they were to discuss their own plans as well.

It was quite a surprise for them to see Wince, she was the leader of the Mermerials, but she felt like she needed to be here. All of her people were fighting for them, and she needed to be there to make sure as many of them came back alive as possible.

"How many people will there be fighting?" Shiro asked.

"The Penswi have sent over 30,000 allies, the Amra are around 50,000 strong and then we Mermerials are the larger force with 60,000. Do remember that all of those forces will be split between four different planets so it might not seem like as many." Wince answered.

One of the unique factors of earth was just how many people there were. With all the planets they lived on, the number reached billions. With the humans, Dalki, and vampires taking part in battle, the enemy forces' number would be large.

The giant cruise ships could fit around 100,000 people on it, so it was possible with two large cruise ships that they would be going against 200,000.

"I have prepared something for you all." Wince said, and soon several Mermerials came over, with their dark blue armour, all different shapes and sizes.

"We have mentioned that one of the most important parts of this war is that the enemy doesn't know your true goal, or that you are here, so you are to disguise yourself as Mermerials the best you can."

There wasn't any armour for Stark, as he was a Penswi in the first place and he also would be wearing the fang set as well. The armour was for everyone else.

Wince had done well, and it was a perfect fit for all, with specially designed helmets that would cover the face, it was hard to tell who was behind the armour, but their powers would reveal all.

Russ was able to imitate powers so he wouldn't have so much of a problem. It was the same for Shiro, he could just use a water ability and he would fit right in with the Mermerials. This was the same for the rest of the Blade family, they would only use the full scope of their powers, when they were told they could.

For the others, they would have to rely on their physical strength until later on.

All of them looked at each other, in their armour. They were disguised well and Minny couldn't help but try to punch her little brother while he was in the armour. It wasn't a big hit, and the small boy took it well, remaining standing.

Lifting his fist up, it looked like Galen was about to do the same, until his mother picked him up off the floor.

"You two, this isn't the time for messing around." Layla said. "You know, I think you are both too young to get involved in all of this, but because of us being unable to stop this before it got this way, you are already involved, and I would rather have you by my side than not."

"Minny, Galen, if things get dangerous I want both of you to hide in your shadow space, just stay there for a few days."

The others looked at the children, they truly did feel bad that they had to be dragged into it, but they weren't ordinary children, both of them were Talens.

"Dober from the Amra have provided us with a ship made from Sedron rock. It is underneath the building we are in now, covered. You have to destroy the floor to access it. Most likely Sil will be on the giant Cruise ship that will stay out of battle, so you will have to go to them."

"You guys know when to initiate this, and you know your own plan better than I do. I wish you all luck."

Time went on with everyone making the small adjustments that they needed. Positioning themselves, planning routes where they could carry the injured and where they could launch attacks and more.

Now, all they needed to do was wait, and they didn't need to wait long. On a day where there were almost no clouds in sight, one could see the dark space clearly. With it, they could see the two giant Cruise ships that looked planet sized drifting through space heading towards them.

Layla looked up, tensing her fist.

"The war... has started."

Chapter 2203: The other side Trouble

Setting off from the vampire settlement and Earth, the two large Marpo Cruise ships made their way to the next destination. The teams had been briefed on who they were going against and what the current plan was.

In the Marpo Cruise office, Jim was staring at a large tank of water. He had it built with all types of aquatic life inside, and it went from the floor, all the way to the tall ceiling of his room.

"Everything has been prepared just like you asked." Vincent said, who was also standing inside the room. "Logan will also be travelling with Jack and has supplied him with countless androids, but I assure you that he is in full support of you, and will update us on any suspicious movements that Jack makes."

Carefully following with his eyes Jim looked at the water-like beast in the tank, he then pressed his hand against it and a small scratch was made, from the crystal that was embedded into his hand.

"Vicnet, you have always been honest with me. Even from before..." Jim stopped as he started to think back to old memories, memories of before he had been banished from the vampire settlement and essentially made an outcast.

"I want you to tell me the truth. At the moment, who do you think has more power out of the two of us." Jim asked.

Vincent, placed his hand on his chin as he thought about the answer, but as always did indeed tell the truth.

"Before, the answer would have been quite clear, I would have said Jack. However, you have gained a lot of strength. You have woken up past leaders, as well as the original vampires.

"Jack has the support of the people on his side, the humans, because they can relate to him a lot more. Even if you are the Hero, it is hard for those to get behind ones that are different compared to them.

"Yet the human strength has seemed to weaken greatly, and you have of course Chris on your side, one of the strongest humans there is out there."

Jim finally turned around and went over to his seat as he placed both feet up on his desk.

"I feel like there is a but coming?" Jim raised his eyebrow.

"You have made the vampires the strongest they have ever been, and although I have no doubt about your strength against the humans, he has the Dalki on his side. Yes, we have come up with a solution to increase the vampires' strength. The Dalki

blood, even creating the X tier solution for yourself, even with all of this progress, improving the vampires to the point they have never been before, the Dalki are something that even I can't predict.

"From what we have seen, the Dalki are able to evolve at an incredibly fast rate, and it's almost as if they are even competing against each other in terms of evolution. Before, no one thought there could be anything beyond a fifth spike. When a fifth spike is spotted more and more four spikes are seen.

"This pattern seems to continue, now that we have higher spikes, the rest of the Dalki are evolving with those at the top, at a pace that out matches what we vampires can achieve."

From the look on Jim's face, it was clear he wasn't happy with the answer Vincent gave him, but taking a deep breath he smiled.

"I would expect no less from the creation that I created!" Jim started to laugh. "Which is why the current situation annoys me so much. Nearly all of Jack's current strength comes from the Dalki, something that I made, and are only alive and present because of me. So why do they follow him!"

Thinking that this was a legitimate question Vincent went on to answer.

"The Dalki have always favoured strength, they follow those who are strong but just like nearly all races, that only counts for those that are within their own race. There are two by Jack's side that hold the most loyalty over the Dalki.

"There is H and Pine. Since these two are loyal to Jack, most of them are loyal to him."

It was a tricky situation, it wasn't as if no Dalki followed Jim though. He also had a relatively small army that followed him as well. Those that were more thoughtful, and thanked him for prolonging their original life span.

The problem was, they weren't full blooded warriors, it was almost because they could think more rationally with their thought, and be thankful to a person, rather than blindly following the one that was strong, they were slightly weaker.

"And that is something I still don't understand." Jim mumbled. "Why in the heavens would those two choose to follow him? Anyone can tell that the two of them are beyond anything that Jack has, or Jack himself. Which means, there has to be something, somehow he has a hold over the two of them.

"I don't buy the fact that just because he was the one that gave them powers, they will stand by his side. That doesn't make any sense."

Vicnent actually agreed with this matter, he didn't say it out loud though. This was one of the tasks that had been given to him by Jim, but there had been no progress in the matter.

"I understand what you are trying to say, at the moment the two of us are relatively even, but eventually the Dalki will grow too strong for us, giving Jack the edge. That is fine, time is on my side with that one as well, as if we leave things too long, they will perish.

"Jack is too scared to attack in the first place, because I still have him by my side. As long as Ray is with me, then I believe he can still beat them all. The only problem is he is a bit of a loose cannon. I also have to make sure Malik is near him in case anything happens.

"Either way, there is not a single person that can beat him."

While Jim was smirking to himself, Vincent decided to ask a question that had been on his mind.

"Jim... what are you looking for? It seems your search through the universe you are looking for something?" Vincent asked.

He was worried that maybe this question was too personal and would perhaps blow his cover, but Jim was so confident in Malki's abilities he answered quite easily.

"I wish to change the past." Jim answered. "I want my body back, my powers back, everything that happened to me to be returned, and for me to bring everyone down there. There is a large amount of power in this Universe I know it... and it has to be out there."

The sound went off in the room, meaning it was time for everyone to get to their battle stations, the attack was to begin.

Chapter 2204: Intergalactic War

On the three Amra planets, all of them could witness the two large Marpo Cruise ships. They could be seen drifting towards them, and they soon stopped, floating in place. Everyone knew, everyone was aware that the enemy was here.

However, they all needed to play an act, hands were pointed at the sky, with worried faces as they looked at each other, waiting for what was to happen next.

Layla, tightly placed her hand on the sheath of her sword, while also looking at Galen and Minny.

"Bring it!" Layla strongly said under her teeth.

Moments later, and out from one of the large Marpo Cruise ships, black pods were seen shooting out, and falling through space. They were going at a fast speed and aiming straight towards the three planets.

"You Earthlings are quite confident in yourselves." Wince nervously said, holding onto her trident. "I thought they might give us a little test run, attacking one of the planets first, but it looks like they are going after all three at the same time."

There was one thing that was apparent though, and it was the fact that all the black pods were coming just from one of the ships. The last time when Quinn was still in the vampire settlement, they were the first to attack.

However, if the information given by Vicky and Jake were true, this attack would be led by Jack which meant they knew what was in those pods.

The black pods crashed into the cities, tearing through the buildings with no trouble at all. There were hundreds of them for each city, all of them stuck up right, creating a small crater where they had landed.

The door of the black pods opened, and immediately a large black hand could be seen climbing out of the pod. Its scale-like face, and the spikes on its back. This was the starting attack from the Dalki.

As soon as it stood up right on its feet, the Dalki was ready to attack, seeing what enemy it was up against. That's when it witnessed large arms swinging down right on top of its head, they bashed down, causing the Dalki to fall to the ground.

"Who gave you permission to land on our planet!" The Amra shouted.

The Amra, went to pick up the Dalki, but as he was about to the Dalki whacked the large hands away. The strength was real, when the Dalki went to throw out its fist, before it hit the Amra, a whirlpool of water appeared in front of the hit, pushing the arm away.

At the same time, suddenly from the right side, a small purple like creature had jumped through the air, and swung its arm hitting it in the side of the head and breaking through its scales. The attack wasn't deep and the Penswi had to quickly move out of the way, as it got out of striking distance.

"What are these things, these little bugs!" the Dalki yelled, before another large fist from another Amra hit him right on the head, sending him to the ground. Quickly the two Amra swung their arms down wildly, eight heavy arms hit the Dalki again and again until it was no longer moving.

It took a few of them to work together and finish it off, but rather than the attackers having the element of surprise, this time it was the aliens that were ready for a battle.

On the roof of houses, many of the Mermerials had blasters that could condense their water power into small sharp shots, and as soon as the Dalki stepped out of their pods they were met with pain.

On the ground, the Penswi were moving fast, and were also using some inventions that had been given to them by the Amra. They were able to run in, and throw a grenade made of beast energy that would stick onto the Dalki's body.

They would then run out and the explosion would go off startling the enemy. The ones that had the hardest job though were the Amra that had to go toe to toe with them and not all of them were successful In overpowering the Dalki.

One of the Dalki's bodies had hardened into a metal-like material making it so the water powers had no effect on them and it was the same with the bombs. One unfortunate Penswi had been caught and grabbed by the head by a Dalki.

The higher spikes were faster than they could imagine, and they had strength to back it up. With a clench of the fist, the Penswi's head exploded and it was no more. An Amra came charging towards the Dalki, who knocked two of the hands away while grabbing onto the other two.

As it held on, it kicked the Amra's body away and ripped the arms completely off. This situation was repeating itself. The higher spikes had abilities like fire, earth, super speed, regeneration taking more people to take them out.

One of the Dalki, who had the power of regeneration and was a four spike, had already killed a lot of the race, and caused destruction all over. He stood there smuggly, until a trident came out, spiralling with water all around it.

On the end of the trident, was a female who pushed with all her strength stabbing them right through the heart. The Dalki attempted to respond by swinging their arm, but the Mermerial gathered water and swung it out hitting the arm away, but

then the trident had been pulled out and swung, cutting the throat and chopping off the head of the Dalki.

Wince stood there taking in a deep breath.

"I want to help everyone, but it will be more beneficial for me to take out the ones that are causing the most trouble... but... it makes me worry about how the other planets are doing."

Wince had, of course, made the comment, because all the power houses were on the centre planet. They would love to go support the others, but that wasn't their main goal, still while they were here, waiting for the right moment, they would help out as best as they could.

The Dalki from before that was able to harden its body was proving to be a real problem for the others, and seeing this, a figure stood in Mermerial armour, with a black sword in her hand stood in front of him.

"We should have made sure that we got rid of every single one of you!" Layla rushed forward. Running far faster than the Dalki had expected, but it was confident in its body and knew that the attacks from those wearing this armour could do nothing, the water strikes didn't hurt him.

Lifting the sword up, she swung it with great strength diagonally across the Dalki's body, and it went through the hardening as if it wasn't even there. This was all because of the effect of the sword, of course.

The Dalki had been split in half and had fallen to the floor, seeing this, it was giving the others confidence. In multiple places, there were those that were helping out, Shiro, Russ, Ceril and Stark getting rid of the more troublesome Dalki.

In the ship, they were observing the situation.

"Sir, the Dalki are struggling a lot more than we originally thought." One of the men said.

Jack was standing in the command centre and could see the videos.

"Yes... it seems for some reason there are more than just our four armed friends? Their allies have completely different powers and seem to be drastically different to the rock people."

"Is it an alliance? We guessed that this would eventually happen as we continued to go through the universe, but not so soon. I didn't realise that there would be three different groups of aliens on friendly terms."

"What would you like us to do?" One of the men asked.

"We can't lose so many Dalki in the first wave, since they have unexpected help, we will just have to move in quicker. Send the supporting Earth team. The Dalki and humans will have to work together."

Chapter 2205.2: Intergalactic war (Part 2)

This wasn't just a battle but a large-scale war that was going on. The other members that didn't have Wince and the others to help out were struggling a bit. The hardest thing they had to get used to, was the fact that the Dalki would get stronger the more injured they were.

However, they were already aware of this information, and they were fighting with their heads as best as they could. One of the Dalki was chasing after a Penswi, its green blood was covering from its head to its body, making it incredibly powerful and fast.

The Penswi turned down an alleyway street, and right after, the Dalki jumped with its powerful legs reaching out. A few beeps were heard, and several explosions went off one after the other.

After that, out from the crushed buildings on one side were a few Amra, and the others there were from the Mermerial race with water blades in their hands. They all attacked aggressively, aiming to finish off the Dalki, and that's what they did.

If there was one thing that was helping them immensely it was the fact that they had prepared on their side. Still, the Dalki were strong and there were those with unexpected abilities. Powers that they never had experienced battling against before, that they had to deal with on the go.

Which meant there were many casualties on their side, and it was hard for Wince to stomach.

"Don't be afraid to fall back, rest if you need it, and regroup with those around you!" Wince shouted, lifting up her trident and shooting out a large hydro pump of water out.

She had yet to rest herself, but they needed to use the advantage of numbers on their side.

'I thought I would never see something like this again, at least not so soon.' Wince thought. 'Our people already dealt with infighting before, we were just starting to recover from the war.'

'But I can't blame Quinn. It's clear that we would have never been able to deal with this on our own, and that this isn't the extent of the enemy's powers.' Wince was looking up at the two ships, waiting for them to make their next move.

The thing was, Wince didn't know how soon the Marpo Cruise would make its next move. Coming out from the large cruise ship, once again several black pods came out. This time, there looked to be around three times the amount that there was before.

Those that weren't fighting and were recovering from their injuries, were looking up, and just the sight of the black pods heading their way was frightening to them.

"There are more black pods... and three times the amount. Are all of them filled with these dragon-like monsters!" One of the Mermerials said.

They crash landed onto the ground, disrupting some of the fights. A lot of those fighting had to move back. They were keeping the fighting to a certain area. It was part of Wince's plan, that way they could use the second half of the city to move around easier and get help to those that needed it.

Yet with this sheer number, they were wondering what they would do next. The Dalki that were fighting went next to the black pods, almost protecting them. Steam came out from the front and out of the pods, instead of a black scaled hand, there was soft flesh that was covered in beast armour.

Layla, who was in another area seeing this, gritted her teeth.

'They sent out humans!'

The humans were larger in number and there were three per pod that was sent out. Immediately they went into battle supporting the Dalki, supporting what was once their enemy, and they were now standing side by side.

With their Qi, mixed abilities and beast weapons, they were far more versatile than the Dalki, and worse was the fact that they were playing a more supportive role. Stopping the Amra from getting close and physical with them, attacking those that were ranged from far away.

One of the humans came and jumped up in the air, wielding a giant beast axe. He had the ability of great strength. Layla was ready to chop him down, until a smaller person leapt up, and punched the man in the side of the face, sending him flying across the room and crashing into another building.

"What are we meant to do, against the humans?" Minny asked, landing on her two feet.

It wasn't as if they didn't know this was going to happen, they were going up against those from Earth, and they believed they were fighting for a good cause, so of course they would have to fight humans, and vampires as well.

"Injure them to the point until they can no longer take part in the fight." Layla answered. "But I don't want you to do it at the risk of hurting yourself, and don't get in the way of what the others have to do."

They could never ask the aliens to not harm humans, that would be a ridiculous ask, not when they were dying right here in front of them. Neither side was at fault for this war, apart from the two that were behind it all.

Minny did as she was told, and ran through the field, she would used this to avoid the strikes, and use her physical capabilities to knock out the humans in one strike. At times more was needed and she had to break a few bones which she had become accustomed to.

Rather than focus on the Dalki, this was something she was more suited to, and helped out the others greatly.

'It's safer for Minny to go up against the humans for now. Especially at the moment, when she can't use her powers. At the moment, Galen is being sensible and listening to me as well, staying in Minny's shadow.'

'I know there's something special about him, but he can't get injured in this fight.'

Layla then looked up at the Marpo Cruises, both of them were still next to each other in the sky.

'The other one, it hasn't moved yet. Is it because they are struggling more than they thought? This isn't good, we need the two cruise ships to split up. Then, we can infiltrate the other and save Sil.'

'We need to wait until Geo and the others are engaged in combat with Jim, and that's when we can act.'

"What's happening!" Jack shouted. "Why haven't the androids been sent yet? Out of all the battles that have gone on so far, this one is progressing the worst!"

"I'm sorry, but a large error has occurred with the androids' mainframe. They aren't listening or communicating together. I am trying to fix this as soon as possible." Logan answered.

With nothing else Jack could do, he shut down the communication with Logan.

"We need an update on the situation on all planets on the ground, to find out which one is struggling the most. There's a good chance that there is a leader of some sort. We need to find them."

Logan had ended the call on his end, and of course there was nothing wrong with the androids at all. They needed to have another use at the right time.

'This is the best I can do for you guys at this moment and time. I hope everything goes well. Because right now, I don't know when, or who is going to make the first major move.'

Chapter 2206: Strength of three Races

When the first wave of Dalki came crashing down on the planets, the battle was intense. The Dalki were confident in their fighting power, and having survived a number of battles, they showed next to no fear going into this one.

After all, the Dalki's were resilient, they were hard to kill, and only got stronger the more injured they were. It was almost like a drug to them, the power they would feel when they got injured and after every battle, they felt as if their own bodies were evolving, as if their spikes on their back was growing.

This did seem to be the case, but the Dalki were unaware of just how hard this battle would be, against a group of organised aliens all with their own unique powers. With the humans' support, the battle continued to be intense, but eventually after a few hours of fighting things started to cool off.

The humans and the Dalki, grouped up together rather than fighting separately, in doing so they were occupying certain areas and districts of different areas. They had healers in their group that would heal the injured and they would only go out to try and attack on the order of a commander.

The fighting had settled into only certain areas, with territories on both sides.

"The Dalki and humans have managed to cover around a 5 km radius of the centre of the city. They have humans with sensor abilities making it hard for us to approach without alerting them." One of the Mermerials reported to Wince.

"Get the Penswi to surround them in all directions but not get too close to alarm them. We will let them be the ones to make the move, they are the ones that are attacking and we should keep it that way. With their speed they should be able to alert us soon as possible and not get hurt." Wince ordered.

The current situation, waiting and being patient, only attacking certain areas and the stray Dalki and humans was more ideal for their group who had the larger force, at least still had the larger force, for now.

'They're being more patient than they were in their last attacks, maybe that just goes to show how much of a tough situation we have managed to put them in.' Wince thought. 'For now this works out for us. The longer this war drags on, the more chance we have of Quinn coming out of that tower and sorting out everything.'

Stark for now was helping out the Penswi, while they were all waiting for something, each of the main rescue group of Sil were doing their own thing to help their people. Since the Penswi were ordered to try and find the range of the group, Stark was the one that volunteered.

He had a device in his hand, a radar that showed where he was on the Amra planet.

'I'm the fastest, so I won't get hurt.' Stark thought. 'If I can find out just where their powers work and don't work then the Penswi can safely monitor the group.'

He walked forward bit by bit, going through the alleyways and destroyed buildings, stopping a few times waiting. Walking a bit more, he stayed still again.

He was in a mostly broken building and was standing behind a wall trying to creep by the side.

"I can sense him!" One of the humans said. "2 o'clock, hiding behind that wall."

As soon as Stark heard footsteps, there was a Dalki fist breaking right through the wall. The Dalki smashed it and looked around, expecting to see a dead alien on the ground but instead there was nothing.

"I'm over here, your slow fists will never be able to hit me." Stark taunted and winked at the Dalki. Out of extreme anger the Dalki lept from its position to where Stark was, and he was immediately running.

As he ran, they were chasing him down, it wasn't just a Dalki, but it looked like there was a human with super speed that was on his tail as well.

'This armour is amazing, I'm not even using the special power that Quinn said it had, yet I feel faster, and stronger by just wearing it. If I was to run now, these guys would never be able to catch up with me... this makes me excited to use the skill in the armour but I have to savour it.'

Stark took a turn down an alleyway, there were two buildings that were still standing and the area was dark. In front of him there was another Dalki blocking his way.

"Brother, stop him!" the Dalki shouted.

Stark continued to run and as he did, he slid across the ground, and stood right behind the Dalki, with a smile on his face. The human and Dalki, were a bit confused why the other Dalki didn't do anything.

They continued to run forward, and as they got closer they realised something, but it was too late. The Dalki that was in the alleyway reached out and grabbed the Dalki right by its head.

"I am not one of your brothers!"

The Dalki that was in the alleyway had a strange human-like face. Something they had seen before but there was something off about this one. That was because the Dalki in question was Russ.

Making a fist, Russ punched it in its stomach holding onto its head and made a hole right through its chest. The human was stunned ready to move, but before it could get away, Russ threw the Dalki's body right at the human hitting it in the back.

Russ quickly ran to where the human was and kicked the heavy Dalki body off it, then soon after lifted his foot stomping the human right on the head.

"I thought you might have had a bit of hesitancy when it came to killing your own kind, but now I see I had nothing to worry about." Stark said.

"These people would try to kill me even if I was human anyway, and it's not my first time." Russ answered as his body was reverting back to normal. "People seem to forget since I'm hanging out with that goodie goodie Quinn, but I am not a good person."

Stark could certainly see that Russ's words were true by being around him. Regardless, he thought the two of them made quite the good team.

"Jack do you think you have everything under control?" Jim asked through the intercom. "Or do you think you need a bit of support? As you know, it's most likely that their capital will be even harder to take, so we can do this one together."

When Jim was asking this question, the tone of his voice, one could tell he wasn't sincere. It was almost as if Jim was happy that Jack was struggling with all of this.

"Please, it has only been a few hours since this whole operation has started." Jack answered. "Why would I send a whole army to crush a single ant. You just go do what you need to do, and then we will come and clean up what you can't clean up."

Jim didn't need to be asked twice, as the second large Marpo Crusie started to move away, and was heading for the Amra capital, the planet where Quinn and the tower resided.

Up in the air, everyone could see it, they could see that the large Marpo Cruise was moving away.

'Not yet.' Layla thought in her head. 'We need to wait until they have engaged with Geo and the others. Once we get the word, then it's time for us to move onto the second part of our plan.'

With the current stalemate continuing between the two, around three hours later, they had finally gotten the word. That the other Marpo Cruise was now attacking.

After that, Layla quickly arrived at one of the camps that had been made by the Dalki and humans, she stood on top of one of the buildings, and lifting her hand, rubble from all over the ground was lifted in the air.

"Everyone, you have permission to use your powers, and it's time to clear all of the Dalki off this planet!" Layla ordered, and the message was heard loud and clear by the others.

Chapter 2207: The Amra's power

The Amra didn't seem to have a wide use of technology like that of Earth, or even the other alien races, but that wasn't because they never had the technology in the first place. This was mainly due to the set up that the previous leader, the celestial had done.

The celestial had made sure to stop advancements, to slow down the enjoyment that technological devices could bring and the ease of life it would bring to the Amra. At least, slowing it down to the point where these things wouldn't be available outside of the tower.

This way, the Amra would only have few dreams, and the main dream of accomplishing what they wanted was by entering the tower. It was all to help with the condition of Athos, the celestial.

Now that he was no longer, the spread of technology had been reaching the people, thanks to Dober mainly. Small long range communication devices could be fitted on the Amra. There wasn't time for them to create many of these devices but there wasn't a need to, so they were handed over to the important figures and Quinn's allies.

Just now, Geo had gotten news that the Marpo Cruise was heading his way. The strongest Amra were left in the capital. The bulk of the forces were standing on the house rooftops, while a dedicated team including Nock was standing by the tower as well.

They didn't want to draw too much attention to the tower in case the enemy would attempt to eliminate it.

"The enemy is coming, and we will show them how to fight our way, the way an Amra fights!" Geo screamed at the top of his lungs.

The large ship was approaching and it could be seen through the sky. Seeing how it was only one planet that they needed to deal with, the ship was able to come a lot closer. Moments later, thousands of black pods started to shoot out from the ship heading straight for the city.

"Let's do the usual and send in the canon fodder." Jim said. "And test the waters to see how strong these four armed men are."

By canon fodder, they were sending out the weakest of the vampires, but they had been given tier 5 Dalki blood to give them all a boost, hopefully making them somewhat powerful, but the Amra were more than ready.

"Fire!" Geo shouted as he threw four rocks from his hands. They were dense, hard and black in colour and with his mighty strength the rocks thrown from his hand moved faster than any others.

The rocks had perfectly hit one of the Black pods, crushing the outside, exploding it and killing the vampire or vampires that were inside. Three of Geo's rocks had hit perfectly. Geo was using the celestial power that had been given to him by Quinn, he was ready to make an impact to tell these attackers that they had made the wrong choice attacking the Amra.

All four of his hands seemed to be covered in a golden light, and as soon as he finished throwing the four rocks, he had picked more up, aiming for the pods coming out of the sky. He wasn't the only one though.

On the roof tops, all of the Amra had these large special rocks by their side. They were piled up high. They were readier than Jim could ever imagine.

Not all the rocks could destroy the well made pods though, they were designed to survive energy blasts. Some would take a few hits from the rocks before exploding. Others would be hit but not hard enough to destroy the outer shell.

It was only Geo's throws that were strong enough to always destroy the pods if they landed perfectly. Through the barrage of rocks, they had managed to destroy a good fifteen percent of those before they landed.

However, now that some of the pods had landed, and the vampires started to break out of the pods, they could no longer focus on throwing the rocks and needed to focus on those below.

Geo leapt down from the building he was on, and landed in the middle of the street, in front of him were five pods, and coming out of them all, were vampires, in their beast armour, holding weapons and already drinking these strange flasks that were in their hands.

"These guys are big and slow, we can get them with our speed!" One of the vampires shouted, holding a dagger in his hand. He quickly ran to the side, and then charged in to attack Geo from the side.

With his golden hand, he swung it, hitting the vampire clean in the body and sending him flying into the building, breaking through more than just a couple of walls. It would be a surprise if the vampire was still breathing after a hit like that.

"If your strategy was to beat us with speed, then you are very, very wrong." Geo said.

He, and the others had been made aware that they were going up against vampires, and the one that they all called a hero was a vampire as well, one that was far stronger than any of these.

Inside the Marpo Cruise, similar to how Jack was stressing out just moments ago, it was now Jim's turn to feel annoyed at the situation. So much so that there was a large vein sticking out the side of his head.

"These damn barbarians!" Jim Shouted. "They are literally throwing rocks at us. As a way to attack us!"

"Well, it seemed to work better than the energy blasters, and I'm guessing if you threw a rock like that, it wouldn't be so effective, would it?" Ray said, as he was lying down, snacking on some food and watching a programme of sorts, in Jim's office of all things.

"Those useless vampires are struggling. If we lose a high number of them, then their families in the settlement won't be happy. They won't be able to continue to fight, and if that happens you won't get what you want either. So are you going to get off your backside and join this fight?" Jim asked.

Ray continued to not react as he continued to shove food into his mouth.

"Please, those weak people are involved? I highly doubt that. When there is someone strong enough that arrives and I'm needed, then I will help. I would rather not waste my energy." Ray replied. "In the meantime, if you are really struggling, send in your vampire leaders.

"Or you can send in your two other guards, the Wolf Boy and zombie."

Jim took a deep breath, it was true. Just because this wasn't going like the past battles, he was a little startled. It was the first problem they had since the Namrik's, but there were a number of ways he could deal with the problem even without the help.

*Bang

For a second, the ship shook, as it was hit by something from the outside. Immediately a report came in and a screen came up.

"What happened?" Jim asked.

"Sir....one of the aliens, they threw a rock at us."

"A rock, and it hit us all the way out here!"

On the screen, they had zoomed in on the attacker, and could see Geo with his glowing arms.

"You better hurry in sending that help." Ray smiled. "He looks like a strong one."

Chapter 2208: The next step

Layla had sent out a message to all of those in the Sil rescue team, as well as Wince who wasn't part of the rescue team but part of the operations because what was going to happen next, she had a big part to play in it as well.

They were now able to freely use their powers. She herself had entered one of the camps that had been set up by the humans and Dalki. There were six Dalki, nearly all of them three spikes, while being surrounded by 20 humans with abilities for support.

A lot of the rubble in the area was lifted into the air, and before the others could react, it was all sent flying right towards the group. The Dalki were able to punch the rocks away, meanwhile the humans were using their powers but some were hit in the chest or knocked in the head pretty badly.

"Who has such power to lift so many things? Do the aliens have powers as well!"

"This is the ability of someone who's at least level 8!"

Another shouted, as he threw an object of his own at the rock that sped towards him and destroyed it into tiny small pieces.

Over the years, Layla hadn't just been developing her powers of unity with the Black Sword, or controlling her Hannya forms. She had also been developing two other things. The power of her Qi and her telekinesis power.

When she was human her telekinesis power was limited to that of a Level 2, but turning into a vampire, that had all changed and she was able to improve her powers greatly. The only thing was, lately there were far more situations where she had to use the power of the Black Sword. Which in turn meant she was unable to use her own power.

Only a few of the human attackers had been taken out by the flying rubble, and practically none of the Dalki, but that was never Layla's intention in the first place. Coming from the right side of one of the humans he saw a glimpse of something moving.

It was an arrow, and it pierced right through the beast armour on his leg, striking him right in the thigh and causing him to fall on the floor. At the same time, others had been hit as well and taken out of the battle.

The Dalki, seeing its humans allies screaming in pain, was looking for the target, and could see Layla standing on a rooftop with a bow and arrow.

"She's over there!" The three Dalki started to run over at a fast speed.

Calmly, with no change in her expression, she placed an arrow in her bow, firing it out, it hit the Dalki in the forearm which was covering its head. Another arrow was fired out, again and again, hitting it in different parts of its body, but the Dalki didn't slow down, instead it sped up.

'Even a three spike Dalki, is this resilient!' Layla seemed annoyed and instead of placing an arrow in her bow. Instead she started to manipulate the red vampire aura in her body. Her horns started to glow bright red, and a condensate blood aura arrow had been made.

Not only that, but powering it with her Qi, she was now taking a trick out of Quinn's book. Letting go, the arrow was let off and started to spin. The Dalki lifted its forearms as it did before.

The arrow flew forward and ripped through the skin, it broke through it with no trouble and caused a big explosion as it went right through the Dalki. There was no head, there were no forearms and the Dalki was dead, falling to the floor.

So much concentration had been put on one of the Dalki, that the other two had now reached her, both of them throwing out their fists. Putting her bow away, she switched to the black sword.

A fast step running forward, she lifted the black sword, slicing diagonally from the bottom. The Dalki's body was split in half, with both halves falling on the rooftop. The other Dalki never expected the sword to strike his ally in one hit, leading his fist to hit nothing but the air.

Immediately though, the last Dalki reacted, as it spun around aiming to throw its fist and kill the female in one hit. A loud bang was heard as the punch connected, but he was unable to move his hand further.

"Did you expect me to go flying?" Layla said, as she held the hand in place with an open palm of her own. "A three spike like you is not strong enough to overpower me!"

Opening her mouth, Layla let out flames right in front of the Dalki's eyes. It was startled for a second, and Layla was already above the Dalki. In her hand she had condensed another arrow of blood aura and Qi, and threw it down right on top of its head. The attack went right through, hitting the ground and destroying the floor beneath them.

Layla levitated herself so only the dead Dalki body fell while placing herself safely on the side of the rooftop.

'I need to stop relying on the sword's power, so I can improve as well. No, just like Quinn, I can make use of the sword's power when needed, and become more versatile in my attacks. That way, all around I improve.'

All over the city, camps that had been set up by the Dalki and humans were being wiped out. Russ had infiltrated one disguising himself as a Dalki working with Stark. Ceril was able to use her great blood control and water powers to slice up the Dalki and overpower the humans.

Minny had transformed into her celestial form, ripping through the Dalki's bodies with her sharp claws and speed, and making sure the humans were no longer able to fight.

The ones that were most surprising though, were the group of Blades. They were using all of the powers they had, and going up against humans, they could even take useful ones to use for themselves.

With their improved teamwork, speed and Qi, they were having no trouble getting rid of any opponents that got in their way,. The Alliance was doing better than they thought, and the Dalki were doing worse than they predicted.

Which was why Wince was a little worried. Looking up at the sky, she could see it, the Marpo Cruise ship, was making its move.

Shooting out from the ship, there were six pods. They looked different to the ones before, they were slightly larger and shot out at a faster speed. They swirled around each other, and crystals seemed to be used to create a barrier around them.

Wince could only guess the reason for the enemy to do this was because no matter what, they wanted these pods to land. They had crashed into the ground standing tall, just like the others, and it had landed in the area the Dalki had taken control of.

Coming out of the pods, strong and tall were Dalki, but they were different compared to the others, five of them that had come out, they had five spikes on their backs. So far in the fight it was the highest number of spikes that they had gone against.

However the worst of it, was the last pod that opened. This person had a single 1 spike sticking out from the top of its head, and then seven spikes running down its back. This one was called Pine.

The first Dalki, that Jack had given powers to.

"Everyone." Wince started to speak through the communicator, she was unable to see Pine and the other Dalki yet, only the pods before they had crashed. "I think, its time, its time for you all to go and save Sil."

This was the plan, after forcing the two Marpo Cruise ships to split, they would show great strength and back Jack into a corner. Eventually sending some of his strongest down to the war below.

In turn, they would then head to break out Sil, with now less powerful forces on board.

"Everyone you heard what Wince said... we need to be fast." Layla ordered.

It was true, because if the new forces sent were truly strong, then this wouldn't be something that Wince could handle.

Chapter 2209: Rescue Team move out

The rescue team looked up into the sky, and they had all seen the different pods crash onto the planet. Based on the information they could gather, the special pods had only been sent to one of the planets and not the other two.

This gave them a good idea that their plan was working and they were focusing on eliminating those from the centre planet first. Since it was the planet that Jack was having most difficulty with, he thought it was quite obvious that the leaders were present on this planet and it would be in his best interest to get rid of them first.

Still, the order had been made, and the rescue team members were each heading to the building that Wince had prepared for them all. The building where the special ship had been made. Layla was one of the first to arrive, and not too far behind her was Minny.

"Wince said that the ship was hidden, underneath all this rubble." Layla said, looking at the state of the building. The side of the walls had been destroyed by a few stray attacks, and some rocks were on the floor.

Using her powers, she lifted them and chucked them off to the side, clearing the floor. After that, Minny was ready for her work. She transformed her hand into the red claw and ran around in a large circle across the floor of the room.

Eventually the line on the ground she had made connected, and it started to fall, but not before Layla caught it with her powers and started to lift the ground away. That's when they could see it, the ship that they needed.

"That thing is a bit bigger than I thought, are we really going to be able to sneak on board with such a thing?" Russ said.

Turning to their right, they had seen that Russ had arrived.

"Wasn't Stark with you?" Layla asked.

"He was, but he was called away to do some type of scouting job. I'm sure he got your message, and remember he's a fast one so he will be here soon." Russ replied.

They still needed to wait for the others, but it wasn't long until Shiro and Ceril had arrived. They had met up on the way and decided to come together.

"Sorry, there was something we had to deal with on the way here." Shiro said, as he looked at the ship and had the same concerns as Russ.

"That thing, it's as big as a house, it's big enough to fit us all in, but it will be hard to go under their radar, won't it?" Shiro asked... but soon after he had thought of an idea that could work.

"Give me a moment, I'll be back soon, but I promise that it will help us all." Shiro explained.

Heading off, the group was left awkwardly waiting, but Layla couldn't help but look at Ceril. She could see a smog over her head, the smog of worry.

"Are you worried that we won't be able to save Sil? If you think this mission won't succeed, and are already thinking that way, then it will affect your ability."

"It's not that." Ceril replied. "I know we are strong, I think our mission will be successful, it's the Mermerials and my sister that I'm worried about."

Finally Stark had arrived at the location and immediately started to apologise.

"I'm sorry I am late, I wanted to give the others the best information they could get about the enemy that had just landed. I did my best to see the numbers and their powers."

"What are they up against!" Ceril immediately asked.

She had seen the footage along with the others, the footage of H, and how strong he was. Even if all three races were to go up against someone like him, they would end up failing. It was hard for her to leave her sister knowing that, but even if she stayed, she felt like just her on her own wouldn't be much help either.

"Are you sure you wish to know?" Stark asked, knowing what effect it might have.

"Yes, the Mermerial race is also my responsibility." Ceil answered.

"There were six special pods in total, out of those, the enemy known as the Dalki appeared. As Layla informed us, their strength is dictated by the number of spikes on their back. Five of the Dalki had five spikes, and one of the Dalki had seven spikes. The Dalki that you described before, the one that you called H, I did not spot anyone that matched his description."

There was silence on Layla's end as she heard the facts. In their heads, the main figure they had to worry about was H, however, it looked like the enemy's strength was more than they imagined.

In the past, the five spiked Dalki were what caused great fear when fighting against them. Although all of them had special traits that made them unique, perhaps these Dalki didn't have the special traits the ones before had, but they more than likely had abilities, making them possibly just as dangerous.

Then, there was also the mention of the 7 spike Dalki. Graham was at this level before, but he was even more special and spectacular due to the unique trait he had. It was what looked like a werewolf.

Because of this, it was hard to say how much of his strength came from this form, compared to that of just a seven spike Dalki, but it is safe to say that it wouldn't be easy.

"We need to save Sil." Shiro said, returning back from wherever he had come from. "If H wasn't seen then that means he's on that ship, but either way, if we get back Sil, H, seven spike, 10 spike, who cares how many spikes, Sil will be able to deal with them all, and no matter what, and we won't get in the way so he doesn't have to hold back."

With those words said, everyone got on board the ship, and it set off quickly, breaking through the roof of the building and shooting through the air. Some of the humans tried to attack it with their abilities, but as it hit the hard exterior it did next to nothing and the ship continued to go forward into space.

"At least we know it's sturdy." Ceril said.

"Yeah, let's hope it can survive a few energy blasts as well." Russ stated.

Flying through the air, as they got closer to the Marpo Cruise, what Russ feared was starting to come true, there were multiple exterior weapons on the outside of the ship that used beast energy to blast anything that got close, and they were all being directed at the small ship.

"Where do you want me to go!" Ceril shouted, as she was the one flying the ship.

"Maybe we should have discussed this before leaving!" Russ shouted back.

The ship managed to avoid most of the lasers but was getting hit a couple of times, shaking the whole thing. It was holding out, but who knew for how long it would be able to.

"How are we going to get onto the ship?" Stark asked. "I thought this was meant to be a sneak mission with a full out attack if we got caught."

"You stupid alien, don't you think we have already been caught!" Russ shouted back.

The ship was hit a few more times, and it was hitting it away from the large ship.

"Ceril, let me take over!" Shiro stated as he pushed her to the side. "I thought this might happen, I have a plan."

Shiro took over and started to head right for the ship. He was heading for the bottom side of the ship. The lasers were missing them all by a small margin, and he kept pushing forward until the others started to worry.

"Hey hey, we're going to crash!" Minny screamed. "Stop the crazy uncle!"

The others realised this was Shiro's great plan, and at that moment he let go of the steering controls, and stood up.

"Everyone grab onto me, and hold onto each other!" Shiro ordered.

They didn't have time to think and did as they were told. The ship crashed right into the side , breaking the side of the ship and exploding into pieces.

The Marpo Cruise was in a panic as they quickly went to repair the damage, and seal off the area affected. Meanwhile there was no sight of the others as they were assumed dead with the ship.

Inside the Marpo Cruise somewhere, among a load of metal contraptions, everyone was checking if their heart was still beating.

"There you go, two birds with one stone. Now they think we're dead and we are on the ship." Shiro said with a smile, happy that he had managed to get the teleportation ability. "Now, let's get Sil."

Chapter 2210: It's Hammer time

Inside the tower, the entire team that was working on Quinn's armour had yet to rest. Not even for a breath of fresh air. They had no idea what was going on outside, in the tower they were unable to hear the cries of battle, or whether it had even started yet.

Regardless, in their minds, they imagined that it had already started. They imagined how many more lives would be saved if they just finished the armour a fraction of a second earlier then there was the possibility that they could save more lives.

"Hurrahh!" One of the Amra shouted in the air, and soon even more had shouted after.

Quinn quickly went over to what the Amra were cheering about, for him he had been busy setting up the crystals, getting ready to melt them down. According to Alex it would be best to use the special furnace that the Amra were using, but at the moment it was being used to melt down the special rock.

"Sir, we have done it, we have melted down all the material we need. Now it's up to you!" One of the Amra said.

"I have also completed the moulds as well." Dober explained, as he appeared by Quinn's side.

'Quinn this is amazing, the Amra are certainly talented forgers, they have already stored the liquid in a special large container so it will keep its viscosity. They're saving us several steps. This is the fastest I have ever seen work being done before.' Alex complimented.

Now Quinn knew that it was up to the two of them. The problem was that although it was fast, not one item of armour had been made yet, and each piece would need to be done, one at a time.

"I'm ready." Quinn said, as he grabbed the cloud filled crystal, and jumped down to the specially heated furnace area. It was hot on Quinn's feet. Using the shadow he was able to stop it from reaching him while he stayed here.

For the Amra forgers, their feet had already changed due to working here so much, and some of them looked as if they were scorched black, which they weren't before. It most likely would be a permanent scar left from the work they had been doing, that was how hard they had worked.

"I won't stop!" Quinn declared. "I won't stop hammering or rest until all of this is made!" Quinn said, as he placed the crystal into the special furnace and the process began on the first item.

Outside, the war had been taking place for a while now, and the sun looked as if it was starting to set. The Marpo Cruise had only attacked the planet Geo was on, after several hours of battle on the other planets.

Geo was tied up by four vampire string ability users, they tried to pull at the same time stopping him from using his arms, but instead Geo went and clapped his hands together, pulling all of the vampires forward and causing them to fall to the ground.

Right above them were other Amra that slammed down their fists on their bodies.

"Don't tire out, pace yourself and don't go after them!" Geo shouted to the Amra.

Just like with the other planets, the Amra needed to focus on just defending for now. Staying in position, in hidden areas and closer to the tower part of the city. If they were being pushed back, then they were to fall back.

This was to conserve their energy, because even though the night sky would come, due to them being vampires, they would not tire out, and might even get better as the night sky came.

Jumping out from the side was a large black-scaled creature, which had its claws out aiming right for Geo's head. Before it could reach though, another Amra dressed in blue armour came jumping up and continuously threw punches, hitting the Dalki.

The two crashed into the ground and the Amra continued to beat the Dalki until it was no longer moving.

"Nock... that was a nice one." Geo said.

"I can't let you do everything." Nock stated. "Me and you are rivals after all."

"It looks like they have finally sent out some of the Dalki, to try and bring us down, but this one is only a two spike." Geo claimed. "The enemy will have a lot more tricks up its sleeve, we have to be careful."

The two powerful Amra leaders were holding out against the attackers successfully. The vampires were confident in their speed and their strength, but compared to the Amra they weren't as strong and their speed matched up with the vampires.

A while ago, Bliss had sent out Quinn to this planet, to show him the strength of other races out there, how in comparison to humans and vampires, there were those that were much stronger, and the Amra were proving it right now.

Eventually, just like on the other planets, the fighting had died down, being limited to certain areas, and the night sky had finally come out. It was nearly the end of the first day.

Geo looked back at the tower, which was still standing strong.

"We have bought you one day so far, but I don't know how many days we can keep this up."

Geo looked at the injured around him. They hadn't suffered as great of a loss as they originally thought they would have, but the enemy hadn't attacked them as hard either.

"The night sky is out... and the enemy has relaxed since the fighting has calmed down, so I would say this is the perfect opportunity to strike." Jim smiled. "Send in the second wave of vampires, and with them send in the leaders as well, and tell them they need to make sure they do a good job, otherwise I will be coming down myself."

Rumbling shook the entire city as numerous black pods landed. Unlike the first time, the Amra weren't there to throw rocks, they were out of position and still fighting against the first wave on the ground.

Just like the last time, the number of pods sent to the planet were in the thousands, and unknown to them there were much more skilled vampires in this group. Then there was the fact that it was night time as well. A time of fighting that the vampires specialised in.

From the looks of things, it was almost as if the vampires were trying to finish this war in one night.

Crashing and coming out of the pods, the new vampires were preparing themselves as they gathered in their group's powers, and looked for their captains, and searched for the leaders of their family. Then it was time for them to push.

However, there were two vampires that had crashed this time that were not interested in the war.

"Hey... I can't see anyone in these pods?" A vampire asked as he looked around.

"I wouldn't worry about them, we need to worry about each other. These four armed aliens are no joke!" One of the vampires said as they rushed off.

As soon as they crashed, two vampires, who didn't wish to take part in the war, had run off and gone into hiding in a particular building.

"I guess all is going well so far." Ronkin said, as they climbed up the large staircase which looked like it was built for a giant and headed inside one of the Amra's rooms.

"Yes, it's a good thing I learned that trick from last time, how to open the pods a bit quicker. Otherwise it would have been a lot harder." Jeouk stated.

Jeouk was the old captain of Quinn and Ronkin when they went up against the Namriks. Both Ronkin and himself no longer believed in the reason for the war, but they were forced to take part regardless.

However, the reason for them breaking off was different. When entering the room, Ronkin was looking around and it looked like a child's room based on the colours and the way it was presented.

"These aliens, they have lives just like ours." Ronkin said, as he went up to the shelf, and saw something. There was a small statue, small by Amra standards as it was as big as a human head, but when looking at it, it was clear as day, because it was a statue of Quinn.

"Look at this." Ronkin called over Jeouk as soon as possible. "They have a statue of Quinn. Everything he told us, no, everything those beasts told us in the forest, they were right."

Chapter 2211: Shadow army

Back in the vampire settlement, before the group had been called off to head into war, Ronkin was lining up with all the others. Apparently there were still a few last minute preparations for everyone as they needed to sort out grouping and more.

Because of all of that, the vampires were given a few more minutes with their families. For Ronkin, he didn't want to head back to his family, he had already said his goodbyes, and he didn't want those painful feelings to resurface, instead he thought that heading into the forest to do some hunting would be better for him to calm down.

There usually would be guards on the outside, but this time, even they had been called into battle. So it allowed Ronkin to head straight into the forest on his own.

While walking through the forest, he saw no beasts, but it did give him some time to be alone with his thoughts.

'Could I just run away from the battle right now?' Ronkin thought. 'Would they even know that I never went off with them? After all, I'm not an important figure, but then what would happen to my family if they found out.'

'Maybe, I could run off with them? And live where, you idiot? Without a ship, I would just be stuck living among the beasts.'

Ronkin was too afraid to live out of the vampire settlement, too weak to try and break through and steal a ship in order to escape. In the end, he had no choice but to go through with the war.

After walking for a while, Ronkin had come across a river going through the forest. The area was pebbled and he could see a large rock on the side. Sitting on it, he placed both hands on the side of his face.

"I don't want to join this stupid war... Quinn, maybe you were the one that did the right thing after all, getting away from all of this." Ronkin mumbled out loud.

At that moment, a gust of wind could be felt from behind that hit some of the pebbles into the water. Ronkin covered his face with the side of his arm to stop the dust from getting into his eyes.

The sound of something somewhat heavy was heard, and when he finally could take a look, he was staring at a large owl, with a long neck, and dark black eyes. It was a beast and not just any beast, it was one that would bring even vampires nightmares.

'This beast... isn't it the same one that was described before! The one that caused so much trouble, but I thought it was dead!' Ronkin thought, wondering if he should run or hide.

Ronkin's memory had been wiped so he had no recollection of meeting the beast in the past.

As Ronkin stood his ground, for some reason, the beast wasn't hurting him, and just stood there.

"Is it true?" The owl finally spoke. "Is it true that you don't wish to take part in this war... What is your reason for this?"

Of all things, a beast was asking him this question. At first Ronkin didn't want to answer, but there was a lot of pent up frustration to do with the war that was weighing on his mind. Since the beast didn't seem to be working with the vampires, Ronkin decided to answer.

"I don't believe the reason." Ronkin answered. "They keep pinning the blame on Quinn. Calling him some demon from another world."

"Yet, is he really a demon? He lived with us, he lived with his family quietly, not wanting to hurt anyone, and it was only when one of his friends was hurt because of this stupid war, that he decided to act out."

"He just did what anyone with his power and his position would have done, and now, we have to go planet to planet eliminating others, to try and find him and other demons. My son... he was sick, incredibly sick, I thought it was thanks to Edvard that my son managed to get treatment to get better."

"But, Edvard never paid attention to me before, so why would he so suddenly care now, and from the looks of things, Edvard was somewhat involved with Quinn. It makes me think that the one behind the treatment... was Quinn after all. Tell me, is that really the act of a demon? Because if you ask me, the things that we are doing are a lot more demon like."

Ronkin thought he had somewhat gone mad, talking to an Owl-like beast, maybe the beast and the voice he heard was just his own subconscious speaking. The thing was, he hadn't gone mad at all.

The beast in question was currently being controlled from one of the skills Quinn had, the shadow infect. From time to time, he would use it to be updated on the situation back in the settlement. To just use the shadow infect skill he would simply have to close his eyes.

So there were plenty of times for him to use it, when he was resting, healing, and all sorts. On top of that, there was one thing Quinn didn't want to do, and that was lose this fight no matter what.

Quinn would get his friends back, and change things back to the way they were no matter what, so he was going to use everything he could at his disposal.

"If you had the chance to help out Quinn, and stop this war, would you take that chance?" The Owl asked.

Clenching his fist and standing up straight, Ronkin gave his answer.

"Quinn reacted that way when Nell was hurt, if only we had listened to him about not joining the war the first time. If I was given a second chance to help him, and listen to him again, then of course I would take it!"

The owl smiled revealing razor sharp teeth that startled Ronkin for a second, as he thought he was going to be eaten, but instead out from the forest, vines started to move, and more beasts started to come out. Those that had been infected with the shadow.

It was almost as if the whole forest had been infected by the shadow, and standing with them was Jeouk.

"You gave a good answer. I think if the two of us work together, we can really help Quinn. It seems like there is a lot going on." Jeouk said.

Back on the Amra planet the two of them were recalling the meeting they had that day, everything they talked about with the shadow beasts.

"We will be going up against the vampire leaders." Ronkin said, holding the statue of Quinn.

"Yes, but they won't know it's us, we will just be helping the Amra... from the shadows." Jeouk stated.

Chapter 2212.1: Geo, the strong (Part 1)

In the current battle against the Amra, the vampires had realised something. As long as they didn't push forward and stayed out of sight, the enemy wouldn't attempt to attack them.

They were content on only defending and holding their position. It became apparent to the first wave of vampires, that they were weaker than the Amra. It was hard for them, since they had their pride, but for many of them they cared more about their life.

So, they thought the best thing to do would be to wait for back up to arrive. They knew that the stronger of the vampires, the skilled vampires, the nobles and those that had access to higher tier green blood would eventually arrive if they were having a difficult time, and yet the vampires orders from above were clear they were to keep attacking.

The entrance from the north side of the Amra city had been cleared and vampires were holding up there, waiting for supplies of blood, but when they were told to keep attacking, they were quite shocked.

'Even if we are vampires, even we tire out... and they must be able to see what's happening from above, why are they telling us to keep on attacking?'

There was a lot of concern, and then the captains sent out a message to them all.

"Backup will not arrive until we are all dead, unless we attack."

This was passed on to the others, and they didn't quite understand the order. Did their family leaders not care about them? Was this a push to make vampires grow stronger?

The order didn't come from the leaders though and had come from Jim for a number of reasons. The 1st, was for the sake of winning the war, the Amra couldn't rest. They needed to attack them relentlessly to wear them down and weaken them, making the battle have a higher chance of success.

Then out of those vampires left, they would be the ones that grew stronger. In Jim's mind it was survival of the fittest. Those that had stronger aura, those that were slightly faster, and had better genetics, then those would be the ones that win.

In turn, this over the years, would make vampires evolve as a race. The comment from Vincent had made Jim take more drastic measures as he wished to evolve the vampires as well.

Still due to the situation, the support was eventually sent out. As the night sky stayed out, and crashing down along with the elite vampires, were the original vampire leaders, and the leaders of the past.

"I will start the push, and the rest are to follow. I don't want more of us to die." Hikel, the fourth original leader stated.

Rushing from their spots, the leaders spread out in pairs of two heading out in different directions, and slowly with the elite vampires they would continue to take over the city, gaining territory bit by bit.

With Hikel was the fifth leader Bianca. Around her neck was a large black snake, that was as thick as a python but she acted as if there was nothing on her at all. This was all because of the special ability of being able to talk and communicate with beasts and animals.

Although this was not like the skill of the Bree Family which was a taming skill.

The two had arrived at the edge of where their team was, and they could see the vampires desperately fighting, as they ran and threw out blood slashes, trying to hit the Arma. When they did hit their bodies, their hard skin was hardly damaged at all because of it.

"Everyone clear the area and head back!" Hikel shouted.

The vampires heard the message loud and clear and heard the voice. For a while Hikel had also been leading the group in Jim's absence. Immediately, they listened, coming out from their hiding spots, from inside the houses and other areas.

Some of the vampires were carrying injured allies. After the entire area was cleared, four of the Amra had gathered together.

"Two vampires, these must be their leaders if they were quick to listen to them." One of the Amra siad.

"Don't worry, we are strong! Their attacks are weak and can't hurt us!" The Amra shouted.

Hikel then made a cut across his hand with his elongated nail, and threw it out as droplets of blood hit the area in front of him and all the buildings in the area. The blood started to glow, and large explosions went off one after the other.

The explosion reached a great height, and those fighting in other areas were able to see it. This included Geo and Nock who both were close by the tower, trying to get a hand on the situation.

"Sir, it seems like the vampires are pushing us back from all sides!" The Amra reported.

"After sending out a second wave of troops, it looks like they're trying to finish us off. Tell the Arma, to just delay them if the opponent is too strong. Don't risk their lives and wait for us to come!" Geo ordered.

Geo, Nock, and Dober were the only three Amra that had been blessed with Quinn's celestial energy. Yes, there were high ranking Amra that were incredibly strong, but to deal with the leaders, really there were only three of them, and one of them was in the tower helping Quinn.

The problem was, there were too many strong enemies for them to deal with on their own at the moment, and all they could do was pick a place, to try and help them and then move on from there.

After the explosive blood had settled down from where Hikel was. All of the buildings had crumbled in the area. All of the hiding spots and more, and there was now a clear area.

Large fists punched the rubble, and out of the ground, the Amra could be seen coming out. There were more of them and it looked like there were at least twelve of them in the area.

"These monsters, they're destroying our home without a second thought!" One of the Amra shouted as he lifted up one of the large black rocks that was used to damage the pods as they fell, and threw it straight at the female vampire that was standing there.

Lifting her hand, Bianca had stopped the rock, with her feet sliding around an inch.

"That throw was stronger than I expected, no wonder the regular vampires were struggling to deal with them."

Punching the rock, several red lines could be seen in it, and the rock broke into pieces. Soon after, Bianca was seen bursting through, heading straight for the Amra.

One of them threw two of their hands right towards her, and with her skill she swiped underneath the Amra, and spun towards its back. Placing her palm on the back of the Amra, a large pulse of red aura almost fired out from her hand, and caused the Amra to go flying, crashing into one of the others.

Another Amra that was close, saw the snake around her neck open its mouth, and shoot out a green liquid. As soon as it hit the Amra in the head, its tough outer skin was useless as it started to melt.

Quickly moving, Bianca continued to display a high level of fighting skill, as she palm struck the joints of the Amra, and broke their arms before proceeding to finish them off.

Bianca, the fifth leader, was possibly the most skilled when it came to hand to hand combat as a vampire. Due to her ability being weaker than the others, it was something she practised on. Most of the vampire aura was similar to the other originals, so she had no edge and had created her own.

With the two powerful original leaders, they were confident that they could continue to push forward. Having already eliminated around 12 of the Amra, coming to the scene Hikel was ready to get rid of the others, as he threw out his blood out toward the remainder of the Amra.

"I won't let you harm them!" An Amra with golden arms came forward, and hit all of the blood right to the floor. A large explosion went off underground, shaking the place and causing large cracks in the floor, but the Amra and his hands were completely fine.

"This alien is different." Hikel noticed, and looked to see what happened to Bianca, to notice that she had been pushed back, after getting hit by a large rock.

"F*ck that hurt!" She shouted, not being able to stop the rock, she could only move out of the way while drawing its energy.

"I think someone like me is more suited as an opponent for you." Geo smiled.

For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

P.a.t.r.e.o.n jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2213.2: Geo the strong (Part 2)

Due to the explosion, more Amra were starting to gather, and started to stand behind Geo. Some of them were of the Sedi rank, far bigger than the normal Amra, around twice the height. It was what the challengers would need to face to pass the 50th level of the tower.

At the same time, the elite force of vampires were starting to gather behind Hikel and Bianca. They had been busy getting the injured vampires out of the area and moving them out of the way. In this group, there were quite a few that were also noble vampires.

It appeared as if a large-scale battle was going to occur, one that would wipe out either side.

"Everyone... get away from this area." Geo stated. "Support the other groups and make sure that they don't progress further."

Hikel had heard the orders of the other man, and had decided to do the same.

"Everyone, spread out, clear the area. I don't want anyone to be caught up in this mess."

The vampires listened and quickly disappeared, trusting in their fellow leaders.

'These two vampires are confident, but I have to be confident in taking them out as well. Nock is probably locked in combat as well, but there aren't enough of us, so I have to finish this fast.' Geo thought.

Geo's four arms started to glow golden once again as the celestial power was running through his body. Moving from his position, the rubble kicked up behind him and he appeared right next to Hikel.

Swinging his four arms, Geo wanted the first hit to cause a large amount of damage, but Hikel had jumped back using his fast speed. Geo was ready to give chase, as he wasn't going to let him get out of his sight, until a red glow appeared underneath his feet.

'When did he...'

Both of Hikel's hands had been cut, and while standing there his blood was dripping onto the floor, he had predicted what Geo would do, allowing him to trap him. A large explosion went off underneath Geo's foot. The whole ground shook and dust clouds from the debris of the buildings that had fallen had been made.

Coming straight out of it though, was Geo, who was unharmed.

'That was a direct hit with my ability and his body is still not harmed. Both I and Bianca have already taken the green blood. The opponent is a lot stronger than we thought.'

Creating a red blood claw, blood aura started to harden around the entire of Hikel's arm, at the same time, his real blood was being pushed through, and coated the outside of his hardened blood aura finger tips.

Throwing his hand out, Hikel had hit Geo's fist with his finger tips, and used his blood explosion power. The blood had touched Geo's physical body and when it exploded it had pushed Geo back.

However, Geo had more than one arm, and Hikel was only able to hit one of the arms, getting clipped by another one that hit Hikel in the stomach and sending him flying off.

Blood poured out of his mouth, as Hikel managed to catch himself in the air, and stopped skidding across the ground.

'That attack managed to have some effect, and with my blood aura hardening, I can protect my own arm from my own ability, but there is a limit, and my own power will eventually affect me using it like that.'

'But that's not even the biggest worry, a single hit from that alien, and I feel like my whole insides have been ruptured.'

Hikel's body was repairing itself as the originals had great healing capabilities, but there was something about the energy in the attack that was causing Hikel to heal slower than compared to other attacks.

'This energy... it's hard to even extract it from my body.'

"Bianca, don't get hit by him!" Hikel shouted, trying to focus on removing the energy.

"I never intended to!" Bianca shouted back as the snake around her neck fired out the acid toward Geo. Lifting up two of his arms he blocked the acid, and nothing had happened.

'This is acid from a demon tier beast, and it went through the other alien's skin just fine. Why is this one so different?'

Regardless, Bianca continued forward and when two of Geo's arms went towards her, she hit them from underneath with her blood palm strike, causing both of Geo's arms to be lifted. After that with both of her arms she thrust them right toward the centre of Geo hitting him cleanly in the stomach, but his position didn't move.

Stomping his foot on the ground, a wave of energy released and could be seen as cracks through the floor. The area where Bianca was standing lit up completely. Rising from the ground, the entire area was covered with energy that had come from Geo.

Bianca was seen having escaped the attack as she had jumped to the side, but she had been hit on her foot. Just like Hikel stated, her leg wasn't healing like it normally would. She knew this would slow her down and it was possible that Geo would finish her off.

The snake that was around her neck, was flung out, and its size started to grow. It soon turned into a giant python that was the size of five houses stacked on top of each other. Opening up its mouth, it went to bite down on Geo.

"I have dealt with plenty of beasts of this size!" Geo said, as he grabbed the top and lower jaw of the giant python, and lifted it in the air, slamming it onto the ground behind him. Its whole body bounced off the ground. It had been hit so hard but the Python was strong.

On the floor, it swirled its tail like a whip, aiming to hit Geo, but lifting his leg up he had kicked it back. The tail swung back outward and had hit Bianca away who was struggling to move.

"I'll kill that rock bastard!" Bianca screamed, as she got up, her leg only getting a little better.

Now from three different points there was Hikel, Bianca and the giant Python.

'Even us two original vampires are unable to take on this one alien, how many are there that are like him on this planet.' Hikel thought.

Unaware that there was only one, even though two more had received celestial energy from Quinn. Geo had already evolved as an Amra before that, when witnessing the battle of Quinn and Sil against Athos.

"It seems you guys might need a little more help." A voice said, as a man dressed in green clothing had appeared.

"Usually I would scorn when I see your face, but it is a bit of a delight today, Magnus." Hikel stated.

Magnus Muscat had arrived, the 6th family leader, and one of the previous Kings. On top of that, his partner, Wallace Dawn, the 7th leader, had also arrived.

"Based on what we have seen, you are the leader of these aliens." Magnus stated.
"So if we get rid of you, I wonder what the morale of your people will be like."

Although Geo was quite comfortably winning the fight against two of the Original leaders, he knew their strength, and fighting four of them at the same time would be quite the tall task.

"I guess the good thing is, if you guys are here, then it means that you aren't out there hurting my people." Geo smiled.

Out of all of them, the first one to move was the giant Python. While Geo had to attack it, they would all go in with their strongest attacks to do the most damage they possibly could.

Geo knew this, and he wondered if he should charge forward to attack, that was until a figure had swooped down from above, and with its large talons it had stabbed the centre of the giant snake in its body. The snake was swirling around, and then with its large head it opened its razor sharp mouth and started to bite down on the snake.

The sudden appearance of another enemy had caused the others to stop, and the next second it had lifted the snake up and threw it off far in the distance towards where the other vampires were. It was done with the beast, and soon landed right by Geo's side.

"Is that an Owl? A large beast, but why is it helping them!" Bianca thought.

Looking at the beast there was something strange about it, Hikel could see there were strange lingering shadows coming off from the beast.

Chapter 2214: Amra Push Back

Hikel continued to look at the strange beast and he couldn't help but wonder what the small shadows coming off from the beast were. Was it a type of power that the beast had, but it was something he had never seen before, and why did the power feel so familiar.

At the same time, he had never heard of a beast having a power like so, a power like the shadow that was so similar to that of Arthur.

'I can't think too deeply into it. We are on an alien planet. This planet has nothing to do with the Shadow Convent and in the first place, Arthur never had a skill like this that would allow him to control and use beasts.' Hikel thought.

Even with the help of the beast there were still four originals, but Bianca was still hesitant to go in after she had seen what had happened to her snake.

'That beast... it defeated the demon tier beast like it was nothing. Which means it also has to be on the Demon tier level, but must be of a higher status.' Bianca thought.

At that moment, she thought it might be best if she could communicate with the beast. Opening her mouth she started to speak, and in doing so, the others were unable to hear. It was a form of silent communication using a language that beasts could understand but couldn't be heard by anyone else around them.

"Why powerful beast, are you helping out the aliens on this planet. We do not wish to do you any harm, and will leave you be!" Bianca asked.

However, there was no such answer, and it was almost as if the beast didn't even hear her. This was something that almost had never happened to her before.

'The eyes of the beast... it's almost as if it's being controlled, but then who is the one controlling it?' She thought.

"What are you idiots standing around for!" Magnus shouted, as he threw out a sharp ring of blood aura out of his hands, one was aimed at Geo, while the other was aimed at the Owl-like beast.

Moving out of the way, Geo noticed that the ring was following him, but there wasn't much that he needed to do, the Owl got in the way of the attack, and opened its mouth, a large shockwave went through the air hitting the blood aura and breaking it on the spot.

As for the ring that was after itself, covering its body with its wings, it was able to break it with ease.

Magnus seeing this was frustrated and went to move in, when he felt a large vine wrap around his leg.

"Look out!" Hikel shouted, throwing out a small part of his blood. It hit the vine and exploded, breaking part of it off.

Soon though, all of the leaders could see vines all around them coming from different areas.

"I can sense it, there is another demon tier beast in this area." Bianca exclaimed.

Using their sharp claws and blood powers, they started to rip through the vines that were attacking them from all areas, and Geo saw this as an opportunity, as he jumped toward Hikel again.

Since he was damaged before, and with the help of the beasts, now he thought he could do it again, and at least finish off the vampire.

'This is getting dangerous!' Hikel worried, and used his claws to cut along both of his forearms drawing more blood from his body, and with his blood control threw it out, exploding a wall of blood right in front of Geo.

"Everyone fall back and retreat we need to figure out just what is going on here!" Hikel ordered.

The others were inclined to agree. A single leader could take out a demon beast most of the time, depending what level it was at, but they were unaware that the infected demon tier beast were stronger than a typical one due to the Shadow infect.

Geo and his celestial powers as well, was proving tricky for them, as if they were injured by it it made it more difficult to heal and Hikel and Bianca were already injured.

When Geo broke out of the smoke, he could no longer see any of the vampires present. They had all run away.

"Although I didn't finish any of them off, I guess I should take this as a victory, that they backed away." Geo thought, and turned to the two beasts. Soon the other beasts, a green humanoid dragon-like figure made up of strange green vines, had come out.

Like the owl, its body was also covered in strange purple markings and had lingering shadows over it.

"I don't know why you beasts helped me, but thank you." Geo was looking at the shadows, and they made him think of Quinn.

"It was us." A voice shouted out.

Turning his head, surprisingly coming from a distance away, there were two vampires.

"We are on your side... the beasts, we were the ones that summoned them, we are here to help you and Quinn." Ronkin said.

The two had explained to Geo why they were there, and it didn't take much convincing. He could see that the beasts responded to their orders, and at the same time they had already used them to help him.

Geo trusted them, with their help, they were quickly moving to the other areas with the two beasts and Geo. The Original leaders were no longer pushing forward, and with that the second wave of vampires were finding it hard to break through the Amra army and were unable to gain more territory.

On the Marpo Cruise, it didn't take long for Jim to get the information from the originals.

"Demon tier beasts are now involved in all of this?!" Jim shouted. "The Original vampires, the first vampires with a boost of the Dalki blood can't even deal with beasts and a rock man!"

"I told you that rock man was strong." Ray commented, continuing to watch whatever it was he was watching.

"I assume he is still not strong enough for you to get involved?" Jim asked.

The question had received no answer, so in Jim's head he had made a decision. He felt like the Originals could learn from this. Along with the vampires they would try their best to break through and gain more territory.

If they were unable to do anything after a certain amount of time had passed, then Jim would go down, with Peter and Chris, to deal with the most troublesome person in all of this, the Rock man.

On the planet itself, the vampires had let off a bit. This was mainly due to the help of one of the demon tier beasts who was able to summon vines all over and control them. They were able to intertwine it in the buildings in areas and use it to attack vampires in the midst of battle, and for the first time, Geo and the other Amra were able to get some rest.

"I can't thank you both enough." Geo said to the two vampires. They had regrouped in front of the tower, where their main base of operations was held.

"Honestly, you shouldn't thank us. A lot of this was planned by Quinn himself, it was a back up plan." Ronkin said. "There is actually more we can do to help... but we need Quinn himself, where is he?"

Geo looked at the tower, the sun was rising and could be seen peeking over the tower. They had managed to survive the whole night. With that, Geo was thinking about how much time Quinn had spent in the tower.

He was inside for two days, before the attack had started and now two days had passed making a total of four days. How close he was to completing the weapon he was making was hard to say.

"He's in the tower, but I'm not sure how long he will be in there for. I also wonder how the others are doing. Since you still have no memory of the past Quinn, it means they have yet to rescue Sil."

Chapter 2215: Last few pieces

Inside the tower, Quinn had continued to forge without taking any type of rest. At times he would be able to power his body with Qi when needed and then take it away. Then at those times, he would allow his Qi to recover while he let his physical body continue to do the work on the weapons.

The thing was, in order to create a well crafted weapon, Qi needed to be infused in the hammer. It was a trait that he had learned a long time ago about special forgers. Those that were the best were the ones that used Qi without them knowing about it.

Because of this, there wasn't much time to rest.

"Don't you want to take a little break?" Dober asked. "I sent one of the men outside, and they returned with good news. The Amra are holding up."

"Although the Amra are holding up, that still means that lives are being lost, and not just on one side, but on both sides!" Quinn replied as he continued to smash the hammer in the moulding.

"I need to finish the equipment, in order to save the lives of the Amra, humans, vampires, Mermerials and the Penswi, that is why I can't rest."

Dober didn't want to talk to Quinn for long for fear he was distracting him. Quinn had already managed to complete a couple of items that were needed, and he was watching him carefully.

This way, when he created the next item Dober could be a good assistant, helping him with what he needed as quickly as possible, while also making the next steps easier.

"Even then, if you don't rest, it could even affect the quality of the item if you make a mistake, due to your tiredness." Dober replied.

Quinn appreciated that Dober was worried for him, but he had more stamina than most, and had gained extreme concentration when he fought against the Phoenix for a considerable amount of time as well.

On top of that, he had the best forger keeping an eye on him. If he faltered or there were any mistakes at all, then Alex would speak up, which he hadn't done so far.

"Thank you for your concern, but I will not falter." Quinn replied.

The boots had already been made, and so had the mask. Currently Quinn was working on the chest piece, which also included the shoulder guards. It was the largest piece, and was to be made up of more than one god slayer crystal.

Because of that, it was taking quite a bit of time, but after they were done, there was only one item left that he needed to make.

'Quinn, I need to speak to you.' Alex said. 'Since you have great concentration and focus of the hammering under way, I will just speak and you don't need to respond, but I need you to listen.'

'I will instruct you on what to do when you create the gauntlets. I have decided that I wish to go through with what we talked about before. I wish for you to melt down the Celestial blood guns and use them as part of the God Slayer Gauntlets.'

'In case, I am no longer with you, you need to remember the instructions I'm about to give, and I want you to not hesitate. For one, we don't even know if it will be the end of my life, but even then, you are sacrificing one to save many, and of all things, if my life is used to make the strongest weapons that will be wielded by the strongest person in the Universe, then I will be happy.'

Quinn continued to hammer away, and didn't respond like Alex had asked him, but he had to bite his lip, because he really wanted to speak, and he was tired of losing his friends.

Layla and her team had successfully entered the Marpo Cruise, and at the moment none of them had any clue where they were. Thanks to Shiro he had teleported them to a level above where they had crashed.

They were standing on a metal platform and were among pipes and more that were all over the area.

"We have no clue where Sil is?" Russ said. "Why didn't you guys ask for a map or something from Logan, or why didn't his kid and wife give us a map."

"We can only deal with the current situation that we have right now." Layla replied. "Logan has already helped us out tremendously and his family is still willing to help us."

"There are two things that we need to figure out. One where Sil is, and the other maybe where Vicky and Jake are. They stated that they would help us out when we got here. If we find them they will also tell us where Sil is."

They all nodded their heads, the other important point that they all needed to remember, was to not get caught. If someone did spot them, then they would need to kill them in order to silence them, as knocking them out wouldn't be enough.

The group ran through and surprisingly many of them were able to run around the place without making much of a sound. Layla could levitate herself so her feet didn't touch the floor.

Minny was able to use the shadow to suppress her footsteps as well as Russ who could copy the shadow power, but the rest would struggle as they went all over the place. Getting out of the large pipe like area, they soon realised what a mammoth of a task this would be.

As they had entered what looked like a water park, but the entire area was void of people.

"This ship is as big as a planet." Ceril complained.

"I agree, there has to be an easier way to get around this place." Layla said. "And we haven't seen a single person. The ship must be split into other areas, those for combat purposes. If we found a person, a human, then we might be able to ask them... or force them to answer."

"You won't have to do that." A voice said, as a young man had suddenly appeared in front of them.

"I have been looking for you guys forever. You know, when the ship crashed I knew that you were already on board. If you just stayed in place it would have been quicker. Did you really have to go running around the whole place?" Jake Green asked.

The help from the inside had arrived, and Jake quickly explained to all of them the plan that had been set out by Logan.

"It's going to be a hard one." Jake said. "But it's the only thing we can do, and there is another thing Logan told me to warn you about. H... is still on the ship."

Chapter 2216.1: Rescue Sil (Part 1)

After meeting up with the Green family, they had a plan in place. They were a lot more confident moving around the ship, as well as heading to the right location, because the mastermind that was behind it all, was none other than Logan.

With him on their side, he could change cameras, turn off sensors, and work his magic behind the scenes. On top of all that, they were now with Jake as well. He had specially prepared a special power that could be used to cloak the others, and that's what they had done.

Their footsteps would still make sound, and if they crashed into someone their bodies would still touch, but at a glance, most would be unable to see them. Although there were other ways to be found out.

Because of all of this, the group couldn't always run to the location they needed to. Although at times, they did use Shiro's teleportation powers to move between floors when they checked the area was clear.

"It's a good thing we have you guys, this place is huge and like a maze, have we been moving around for hours?" Russ stated.

"Just a reminder, that my power only keeps you invisible, it doesn't block the noise coming out of your mouth." Jake stated, shaking his head.

"Still, he has a point, how are they even able to move people through the place with this many people." Stark asked.

"It's because the ship used to be a Cruise Ship for all races. It has everything in here." Ceril answered, remembering the time her and her sister were on one of these. "But I agree, I have no idea how they can get an army through this thing."

"Only one part of the ship is used." Vicky answered. "You have to remember that they know when a battle is going to take place beforehand, so it's easy to organise everything."

After a few hours of going around the place, the situation had changed as they were starting to see many Dalki inside. The group had to stay silent.

The Dalki were with the humans running to different places, monitoring equipment and a number of things, but what they also noticed was the fact that there were a lot of high Spiked Dalki that were still on the ship.

It worried them about what was to come, but in the end, as long as their plan worked, then it meant that the humans that were on board would be on their side.

Eventually, they continued to travel and next to no one questioned Vicky or Jake. They were well known by the Dalki and the humans as well.

Heading down to the lower floors of the ship, they were now coming across a mostly empty area. There was next to no one in the area. Now there was one long hallway and a large thick door straight up ahead.

Standing by the door, there were two Dalki, and both of them were with five spikes.

As the group got closer and closer, they were trying to control their heart beat, trying to stay as silent as possible.

Dalki didn't have advanced senses like that of the vampires, but who knew if their senses improved with spikes or not.

"Halt!" One of the Dalki shouted, while the group were still ten metres away. "Only those that travel with Jack are allowed down here."

"Ah yes... I am Jake." Jake answered.

"You stupid fool, I said Jack, not Jake...are you Jack?" The Dalki asked.

"I am Jake." Jake answered.

The two Dalki turned to look at each other, and at that moment Vicky shouted.

"Now!"

The cloak had come off, and everyone rushed forward. Beforehand, they had decided to use everything they had, to take out the Dalki as quickly as possible. Jake, combined his powers having a glowing like lava hand.

Minny had transformed into her celestial form, Russ had used his powers to turn into a Dalki five spike just like them. Everyone else went to use the strongest move in their arsenal, all of them were strong, and all of them aimed right for the head.

The Dalki were too slow to act, and the power, all of the attack force in one area was immense, so immense that the two of them died on the spot. When the bodies fell over, with not much of a head to look at, nearly all of them were breathing heavily.

Not because they were tired, but it was out of nerves.

"With all of us, we managed to kill the two five Spike Dalki, so easily." Layla siad.

Remembering just how much of a force they were to be reckoned with in the past, but they had all improved greatly in strength, and there were allies here that they didn't have last time.

On top of that, there was also the fact that the Dalki was unable to use its trait of getting stronger the more it was injured, due to the amount of power in their attacks.

"Alright, the good news is, this place is so far down, that even though we made that much noise they shouldn't have heard anything, now it's time to get onto the next part." Jake said.

Lifting up his arm, there was a spider, hopping around, it jumped up and down, and it knew what it needed to do. The sound of the large door unlocking was heard. Several large mechanisms were heard, and finally the door started to split apart opening slowly.

A few seconds felt like hours to them, as they waited for the door to open and to see what was on the other side. Then when it finally opened, everyone took a step inside, looking up at what they could see.

They were in a large oval room. One that was large enough to perhaps fit a 1000 people inside, yet it was completely empty, apart from one person that was in the centre.

There was a pillar-like mechanism, a machine that went up, and then a ball-like shape with an outer glass. Inside, they could see Sil, he was stretched out, wires digging into his back, and cuffed up by the ankle and the wrists.

At the same time, he was currently asleep, he wasn't conscious and there were no signs of him waking up.

"That's the person we've been looking for right, that's the one we came here for?" Stark asked.

"Yes." Shiro said as he reached out, feeling guilty, guilty that he wasn't strong enough to stop this from happening. Sil didn't look the same as he remembered last time. His body frame was smaller.

It was almost as if they were draining him of everything and only giving him enough for him to survive.

"Why... does he look so... is he okay?" Ceril asked.

"Its a solution." Jake explained. "Jack, gives him a solution that keeps him asleep. It's being fed into him right at this moment. When they want to use him, then the solution stops, and the one known as Malik is usually here as well."

"There is a good chance that his memory has also been Altered. So there are two things that we have to worry about. The first, is when he wakes up, we have to be ready for anything.

"And the second, is if you want him to change the memories back, if you want him to use his powers, we need to keep him in the machine. Without it, he will only have the power to remove one person's memory at at time."

The others nodded as they heard this, they knew it was risky, but Shiro believed that Sil was strong, strong enough that he wouldn't be affected by a memory change, or at least have a contingency for it not to affect him.

Jake looked at the small spider once again.

"Logan, remove the solution, and we'll just have to wait for Sil to wake up." Jake stated.

One of the tubes that were going into Sil, the liquid that could be seen started to stop, and a few seconds later, a loud alarm was heard all over.

The little spider started to project an image and Logan was there.

"Everyone, the alarm has been triggered. Jack must have set up some safety measures if anything happened to Sil. I disabled all the systems that I could find, but he must have the server remote from the ship. This is my fault, but there is nothing we can do now.

"They know you are here!"

Chapter 2217.2: Rescue Sil (Part 2)

The group, including Logan himself, were all quite confident that things would go smoothly with him on their side. He had looked carefully for safety measures, the layout of the systems and more, but of course there was only so much he could do.

In the first place, Logan spent most of his time in Green City, he actually hadn't been on board the Marpo Cruise for long. So there was only a limited amount of time he had to try and find everything he could.

'I'm sorry, this is my mistake, and it's not often that I make mistakes, but you all have to get through this, and decide what the best thing to do is.' Logan thought.
'From my search so far, I have found that they are still unaware of me being the one that disconnected the liquid. Jack had only set up a trigger to alert if anything was tampered with Sil, so if we get through this, then I can still help.'

In the large oval room, the group were in panic mode, the alarm was still going off, but no one had arrived just yet. It was a long way down where they were so it would take a while. They looked at Sil, he was still unconscious and fast asleep, but the question was for how long.

"There's going to be every Dalki on this ship here in a second, we need to do something?" Layla shouted.

"What do you want to do?" Shiro replied. "If we try to break him out now, before he wakes up, then he won't be able to use his power. He won't be able to change everyone's memory back in one go."

It was one of the major issues at hand, but so far Layla had been the decision maker, the one leading the group, so she had to make a choice.

"Are you all stupid?" Russ asked. "If we leave him here, they can still use him. At least if we take him, we have someone on our side, and he won't be stuck here. He can still use his powers. We can still win this war."

"You're right, but doing it that way, the war continues." Ceril added. "More people that don't have to die, from all races including my own, will die."

In Russ's head that wasn't a "his problem" and more of a "them problem". As long as he survived, what did it matter? They were the ones that were risking their lives to save everyone, so if they wanted to be a little selfish for the safer option then they would have to take it.

"We will wait and see if Sil wakes up." Layla finally said. "If he doesn't wake up in half an hour, then we'll get out of here."

The decision had been made, even if the group was split. They had already been standing there for around five minutes or so, and there wasn't a single person who

had arrived. Layla could only guess that Logan was still helping them somehow, and she was right.

Access to doors in the ship were 'Malfunctioning' leaving them no choice but to destroy part of the ship, and since the cameras were down, with the highest suspects being the intruders they were unable to see just what was going on.

Finally, Logan had also managed to access the alarm system and had shut it off. Not too long after, Logan was receiving a call, from none other than Jack.

"An alarm has been triggered in the holding room." Jack stated. "Why has the alarm suddenly been turned off?" Jack asked.

"I'm not so sure, at the moment the systems aren't working the way they are supposed to. I can only imagine that this is the work of someone with similar powers to mine." Logan answered.

"Similar and stronger powers than Logan Green?" Jack asked quite clear that he didn't like his answer. "Don't worry, we will find out soon enough."

The call ended there, as Jack stood up from his seat.

"I will see what he's up to and get the truth out of him." Jack stated.

Meanwhile, down below where Sil was being held in the hallway, Dalki and humans had arrived at the scene. Even though the alarm had stopped, they had to investigate due to orders. With the two Dalki guards dead it was obvious there were real intruders so they had no choice but to come up with a plan.

"Over there!" One of the humans shouted. "It looks like the enemy is engaged with Jake and Vicky."

Putting on a show, both Jake and Vicky were using their powers in an explosive way. They were using the flashiest of the powers they had, causing a mess. It looked effective from the outside, but did next to nothing against the intruders.

It was a good way for both of them to clear their name, and explain why they were in the area as well.

"Give Jake and Vicky as much support as you can!" One of the humans shouted.

Due to the way the fight was taking place, it was hard for them to attack. At times their attacks and abilities would be used but would hit Jake or Vicky's attack instead. Of course, they were unaware that this was on purpose.

However, they couldn't stop everyone, as the Dalki charged forward, and Layla, and Russ were the ones that were really engaged in combat against them. While

nearly all of them were fighting, Shiro was standing underneath where Sil was being held, he looked up and couldn't stop looking at Sil.

'Please Sil, fight this drowsiness, or whatever it is and wake up!' Shiro thought.
'Everyone is waiting for you, you are the key, you are the one that can change this whole war around with a click of your hand.'

It was frustrating, frustrating for Shiro, after all this training, after everything he did to help Sil, it was all still in his hands and there was nothing he could do.

The fighting had continued and 15 minutes had passed, with this Layla needed to make a choice, because she knew, the longer they stayed, the more dangerous it was for them.

"We can't wait any longer, we have to break Sil out!" Layla shouted.

Shiro had heard loud and clear, he tensed his fist, and there was no choice. Jumping up, he made a lightning like fist, and threw it forward shattering all of the glass. Quickly he moved on to getting all the cuffs and wires off from his body.

That was until, the whole air down below had changed, Shiro turned his head because he could feel it straight away. Down the hallway, walking past and through the Dalki, and humans there was one that was slightly larger than the others.

"H...."Layla said.

Chapter 2218: Run, Run, Run

In a way, nearly everything was going wrong, and this was because they had to think on their feet. Decisions had to be made that affected the lives of thousands, and when put in a tense situation with a lot on one's mind, it made them make mistakes.

'We should have just broken Sil out, we should have just taken him with us as soon as we found him.' Layla thought, her hand shaking and already reaching out for the sword by her side.

Memories of what had happened in the simulation had appeared. The being in front of her was someone that was a match for Sil and Quinn, she was not on their level.

"I've broken him out!" Shiro shouted, as he placed Sil on his back and jumped down. He went to join the others that had huddled together and were staring at the enemy in front of them.

Vicky and Jake, were no longer pretending to fight, and all of the other Dalki and humans had stepped to the side as soon as they saw H. It was quite clear that they had seen him in action before, and had seen what he could do with his powers.

"I can use the shadow powers, and take us all down below, or maybe the Blades can do that as well." Russ stated. "We can fight as well, but in a ship like this, our fight would probably destroy the whole thing."

Although Russ didn't sound scared, as there was always this act that he put on when speaking among the others. Due to Layla's unique power of sensing emotions in the smog above their heads that only she could see, she could tell that Russ, and not just him, all of them were worried.

'What is this energy that's flowing through the air, is it Qi that's coming off from the Dalki's body. Is that what we are all feeling and that's making it hard for us?'

"You are all making a mistake taking that man." H said as he continued to take one step at a time. When he spoke, it was almost as if a wave of Qi and power had hit them. Making it harder for them to just stand.

"No matter what, I will get him back. After all... he is part of the deal." H stated.

The group had no idea what H was talking about, but one thing was clear, that he wanted Sil, and he looked very annoyed at the fact that they were attempting to break him out.

'If it was just protecting Sil, then Russ's suggestion would work. We could even just use Minny to put Sil in her shadow for the time being, but that makes her a target,

and all of us a target. Is there not a way for us to get out of here without having to fight.'

Pulling out the black blade, Layla then pointed it towards Sil's neck, and at that very moment, H had stopped advancing forward.

"You said you want him right? And I can guess that you want him alive, so if you come any closer, then this sword will go through his throat!" Layla said.

The others wondered why Layla was acting this way, they wanted to know what her plan was, but said nothing to not cause confusion to the current situation.

"You have managed to go through all this effort to save him, so then why would you kill him now?" H stated.

"Because I know you have the power to kill us all." Layla answered. "The only reason why you probably haven't blasted us, is because you are a bit worried you might damage the ship, and then we all go down."

"But you seem to misunderstand, I have a family, and although I do wish to save this man, my friend. My family is the most important thing to me. So if it comes between his life, our own, then that isn't a hard decision to make."

H was silent for a moment, until he had come up with an answer of his own.

"Give me the man and I will allow all of you to live." H stated.

Hearing this statement, it made one thing clear, that for H, the most important thing wasn't getting rid of them. It was keeping Sil alive and getting him back. If they handed Sil over, she knew they would have to fight anyway, she just wanted to confirm this fact.

"Stark...." Layla called out. "I'm sorry but it's come to this... it's your time to shine."

Nodding Stark knew what he needed to do. He quickly ran and grabbed Sil's body, placing it on his back. Soon after, he ran right towards H, who threw out a fist at the purple alien.

Stark was paying close attention, and moved his head narrowly avoiding the fist, and continuing to run right past him.

'Quinn brought me along for a reason, he trusted my speed, and now it's time to put it to good use.' Stark thought.

Immediately, H turned around, and he moved fast himself. It seemed like one of the abilities he held was superspeed, and was quickly running after Stark. The two of them were off, and H soon followed.

"Alright, it's time for us to get off this ship." Layla siad. "We have to trust that Stark will do a good job... we might only have around 3 minutes."

Stark continued to run through the ship not really knowing where he was going, and hot on his tail was H, who used his large body to crash through doors, hitting humans and Dalki without a second thought as he did everything he could to catch up to Stark.

His hands started to light up with lightning, and he threw out his arm, throwing out a lightning bolt toward Stark. It looked like it was ready to hit him, until he went up another gear.

'Activate the armour power, Nitro accelerate]

The fastest man in the universe had just got faster.

Chapter 2219: Can't run forever

(If you feel like you missed a chapter, then go back and read, Run run run, if it's still the wrong chapter delete cache and go on the episode. Sorry for the chapter mistake today.)

The effect of the armour was beyond what Stark could ever imagine. Everything around him was moving as if time had stopped, and he was leaving H far in the dust, just as he intended.

The Nitro accelerate skill and the armour wasn't something that could just be used by anyone. Due to the sheer speed, it also meant that one's brain had to keep up and be able to process the fast information that it was receiving.

Otherwise, everything would be a blur, they would crash constantly and wouldn't be able to use the full capabilities of the armour. With Stark though, that was never a worry for Quinn.

He had the greatest processing speed because he was fast, and Stark was constantly trying to reach new heights with his speed. It was almost as if his brain was actually too fast to keep up with his body.

This armour was perfect for him, and he just wished that he could keep such a thing.

'I have to stick to the mission, I have to stick to the original goal.' Stark thought.

He continued to run, and although time felt like it stopped. In reality he only had three minutes. In this time, he had to find out where the ships currently were on the giant vessel, and then fly off before anyone could stop him.

'This is an important job, and it's one that only I can do.' Stark thought.

He went through multiple areas that had next to no people, but somewhat remembered the path of where they had gone with Jake and Vicky, and soon he could see people. If he could see people, then it meant it was a good sign, because that's where the army currently was, and where the ships and pods would be.

'I hope that H is still following me, and even if he isn't, that I was able to give the others enough time to get away.'

Stark was able to get the gist of what needed to be done, and what Layla was planning. Knowing that Sil was the most important person to H, H would go wherever Sil was. Since Stark was fast, he could grab Sil and avoid H's attacks.

Even if H could teleport to him, Stark could still quickly move out of the way and avoid him, but he wanted him to stay close, to get H as far away as possible from the others.

Then, when there was enough distance, he would use Nitro Accelerate to get out of here. The only problem was, H's lightning strike was a little faster than he thought. Maybe he could have avoided it, but he panicked and activated the armour's skill.

With no way to see H, he was unsure if he was still following him.

It didn't take long for Stark to find where all the ships were, and strangely most of them were unused. As if they seemed to prefer the pods. Quickly moving still at a speed others were unable to see him at.

Stark managed to take out the men around one of the ships, and headed to the door where the hatch would open to the outside. He then opened up the ship's glass pod, got Sil in and closed the top of the hatch. Although he was fast, the ship itself wasn't, so he had to take out some of the humans nearby.

In real time, for those that were around the ships, everything was just so confusing. They had no clue what was going on, what was happening, and could just see a ship lifting up, and breaking straight out.

The men were still trying to figure out why the door to space was opening, and why people were falling, allowing for the ship to successfully escape.

Now riding peacefully in space, Stark looked back at Sil in the seat behind him, still fast asleep.

'That was a bit more intense than I thought it would be, and a bit easier than I imagined as well.' Stark thought. 'But, they all risked their lives for you. You must be a pretty big deal, so I hope you wake up soon, because we can't run forever... at some point, we're going to have to fight that monster.'

Inside the Marpo Cruise, after Stark and H had left, Shiro was quick to work, teleporting them all down to the floor below, and had taken Jake and Vicky with him.

"Dad, dad answer!" Jake shouted at the spider on his arm.

"We managed to somehow get away from H... what do we do, what's the plan from here?"

Logan didn't speak for a while, it was clear that this wasn't part of the plan, so he had to think of something.

"Right now, everyone on the ship will be looking for you. It will be hard to move, quickly or silently." Logan explained. "It will slow you down, and eventually H

will catch up to you. So there is only one thing I can do. I will cause a large distraction and, I think it's time that all three of us left..."

Those words to Layla, had brought her great joy, because she knew what he meant by them. It was the fact that Logan would be coming back with them.

"With Sil no longer in thier hands, it means they can't change our memroies anymore. I see no way out other than to reveal myself... Let's move quickly."

They followed Logan's orders as he updated his son on the location they needed to get to, but they did wonder just what type of distraction would Logan cause? One that would be big enough for them all to escape.

In one of the preparation rooms, where several pods were in place and would be launched from, there was a room filled with Androids, all powered by beast crystal, and all of them made by Logan Green.

It was his way of assisting in the war, but they had yet to be used, because of an apparent malfunction.

"Hey!" One of the men shouted. "The Android, it's online, it's on-"

Before the man could finish his sentence, he was shot in the stomach with a blaster that had sent him flying across the room.

Soon after, all of the androids in the room, 1000 of them were online and all of them were attacking the Dalki and the humans.

It was complete chaos in the Marpo Cruise. At first they were to search for some intruders and now all of this was happening. Jack had quickly gotten the reports, as he was making his way to Logan.

'I knew it... I knew he would betray us.' Jack said.

He opened the door, to the lab that he had provided Logan, expecting to see him there, but instead, in his place, there was a hologram.

"You should start thinking a few moves ahead." The hologram of Logan said with a smile.

Several beeps went off in the room, and explosion after explosion went off one after another. Everything was being destroyed in the lab, and Jack had no choice but to dive out of the way back out of the lab.

The sleeves of his shirt were burnt as he laid there on the floor.

"DAMNNN IT!!!!" Jack shouted.

Through all the distractions, the group had eventually met up at one of the quieter locations, and with Logan's soul weapon he could create a makeshift ship for them relatively quickly that they could use to get out of the place, which was exactly what they did.

While travelling through space, Jack stood up, and recomposed himself, he allowed for the anger to settle down a little bit.

"So you have managed to escape, you told me that I am the one that needs to think one step ahead. Well you have no idea what you are heading to... because... there's nothing left." Jack smiled.

Having set off before the others, Stark had landed on the planet they had originally left from. He had done so in the city, but it wasn't the same as he remembered, because everything had been destroyed, and the whole city was filled with the dead.

Chapter 2220: Everything...gone

Stark and Sil were inside the ship flying through space. He was originally a little worried about being blasted or shot at while trying to escape. The black pods were used as they had more success landing on the planets than the ships.

However, for some reason they were safe as they went toward the planet. This was all because Logan was causing chaos inside with the androids. They didn't even have time to focus on the ship and had no idea who was on board.

If they did, if Jack knew, then certainly they would have put all of their fire power towards destroying the ship.

Heading back, they were heading to one of the three frontal planets that had been attacked, and the planet of choice was where Wince currently was at. This is what they had agreed.

They needed help, and with the power of Sil they would be able to defeat whatever enemies came their way, hopefully with the humans on their side. Yet, it didn't work out like that.

As he came closer to the planet, Stark noticed something extremely strange.

'The city, it's not the same as it was before... Why does it look like no fighting is going on?' Stark thought.

Explosions, abilities, powers, and buildings being destroyed. This was what he was expecting to see but instead, most of the buildings had already crumbled and there were no visible signs of movement.

'I can't see other Penswi, I can't see the Mermerials or the Amra, at the same time I can't see the enemy either.'

As the ship got closer, he decided to approach the edge of the city rather than the centre. Just in case anything had gone wrong. The ship started to lower and was placed in an open street surrounded by destroyed buildings.

Placing Sil on his back, he descended down the ramp, and quickly went to run between two broken buildings that still had some semblance of a wall left. Looking at the ground he could see clearly now.

It wasn't that there weren't anyone, it was the fact that they were all dead. The Penswi's bodies had been crushed, Mermerial's body parts had been ripped apart, and some looked to have had abilities used on them.

There wasn't just a small number of bodies either, the whole place was littered with them. There were Dalki here and there, as well as humans but there weren't many.

"What is this?" Stark said as he continued to move through the city, still cautious in case there was anyone. "Everything is gone, everything is destroyed. Did they lose the battle, did the alliance already lose the war?"

Using his communication device, he tried to get in contact with the others, how they were doing on the other planets but there was no answer, which was making him feel even more anxious.

"No... all the Penswi can't be dead. The enemy was strong but not that strong... and we managed to get Sil. We managed to get the person who will win this war for us." Stark said to himself.

Eventually, he saw a fellow Penswi friend on the ground, he recognised him, he was from one of the other teams that he would constantly go against in the yearly tournament. He lifted his head, his whole body lifeless.

"If I didn't leave, if we were still here, would you have survived?" Stark asked, but the person was unable to answer.

There was a large sense of guilt within Stark right now. He had survived, he had left them to do something else while all of them fought for their lives and in this situation, he felt completely hopeless.

Everywhere he went, even when going closer to the centre of the city he didn't see anyone alive, and it looked like whoever had caused it all had left as well.

'I guess all I can do now is wait for the others somewhere. I bet they will be quite shocked at what happened as well.'

Looking around, Stark had eventually found a building that only had one part of the walls damaged. It was about three floors high and the third floor was mostly intact. When he entered the building he was ready to find a bed of some sort to put Sil down, until he could hear the sound of groaning.

His head turned fast, and he zapped to the person who was on the floor. A large slab of the building had landed on him and his upper chest and head could be seen. Stark quickly put Sil down, and with the armour helping him he was able to push the large slab off his body with relative ease.

The man's legs looked to be crushed. Based on his condition and the strength of his heart beat, it felt like he only had a few moments more to live. Placing Sil on the floor, he lifted the man's head, it was a Mermerial fighter.

"What happened here... how come... everyone is dead?" Stark asked.

"The Dalki." The man replied. "They were too strong. The seven spike and the five spikes, they were the ones that did this all. Everything."

Stark was hoping for a different answer but it seemed that his fears were true.

"Wait, what about the Blades or Wince, the Mermerial Queen. What happened to them?"

Stark started to shake the man, as his breath was coming to an end, and he was no longer able to answer.

"The Blades and Wince were strong, but they both weren't able to take out the Dalki, I thought H was the only one we had to worry about."

Climbing the building, Stark went up to the third floor where there was a rock hard bed. He thought Sil had no choice and was unable to complain so placed him on it anyway. In the meantime, he would go searching the dead bodies.

Seeing if he could see any of the Blades or Wince, and maybe someone else that was alive that could answer his questions. Since there was no enemy on the planet anyway he thought it would be safe.

Searching outside, running to the bodies and having a look, he was unable to find any of the Blades or Wince, which was a good sign in a way, but was also unable to find any survivors.

However, he soon did see a weird ship in the sky, when they got closer Stark noticed that it was the others, and a person he didn't quite reagonise to well. Before they landed he started to run, and they knew it was the signal for them to follow him.

In doing so he led them to the place where Sil was. The others all landed, quickly coming off from the ship.

"Where's Sil?" Was the first question Shiro asked.

"He's inside, still asleep."

Shiro went inside, and so did the others, but not before looking around at the same scene that Stark had seen not too long ago. Shaking their heads, first they wanted to see if Sil was okay.

All of them crammed into the room, into the tight space and there was a relief when they saw Sil, it meant that all of their efforts weren't in vain, but now there was another question on their mind.

"What happened here, was it like this when you got here?" Layla asked.

Stark nodded.

"I managed to find one person who was alive. He was able to tell me that the Dalki were the ones who did everything. They said they were just too strong, but I was unable to find any traces of the Blades or Wince."

Both Shiro and Ceril seemed to be concerned about this.

"The one that did all of this is Pine." Logan answered. "He is the one the Dalki follow the most, and is perhaps just a little under H in terms of strength. Although that's only at an estimate as I have not seen either of them fight to their fullest."

Typing away at his robotic arm, Logan was bringing up some information.

"I'm not sure where your friends and allies are, but as for Pine, it looks like he was sent to the next planet over. If that's the case, it won't take him long to create a similar situation as he has done here, over there."

Chapter 2221: A jump of power

When the others had gone to rescue Sil, it left Wince alone in charge of the alliance of races. She was in charge of the army and what would go on between all three planets. Because of this, she took more of a back role as she coordinated things between others.

She had to give orders of attack and retreat while also reassuring them all that their plan was working and it would be okay. However, there was a major problem. The whole reason why the other group were now able to go and attempt to rescue Sil, was because now there was a strong force on the planet.

Stark had given one last report before leaving, stating that he had seen a group of six Dalki that had more spikes than any others. Five of them with five spikes, and the one in the centre with 7 Spikes. According to some of the information they had, this Dalki was named Pike and was one of the major threats that Jack had by his side.

Knowing this, the group had left to rescue Sil, but it also meant that Wince had to create a plan and act somehow.

"Has anyone approached the Dalki yet, or have they made a move?" Wince asked, still towards the centre of the city where their base was.

"The Dalki and humans are yet to move forward ma'am, we have called all of the groups to advise them to wait before they engage... what would you like us to do?" The man asked back.

It was a tough decision to make, should they try and attempt to jump the gun and attempt to attack the newcomers. While they weren't prepared, it would give them an advantage. At the same time, buying time was what they needed to do as well.

"Stick to what we have been doing so far. The Penswi will continue to scout the situation. If they try break through then the Amra will engage while receiving back up from the Mermerials." Wince ordered.

She had seen first hand how dangerous the Dalki were, and the difference between a three Spike and Four Spike, but what she was unaware of were two things, the jump from a fourth Spike and a fifth Spike and the continued jump in strength from there.

"I can see why you are having trouble." Pike said as he looked at the injured around them. One group was trying to push forward and chase after the Penswi, but when they went to get close, the Mermerials would attack with their water powers and move. If they moved even further, then the strong Amra that had strength and speed and that equal to most of the Dalki would attack, causing them to essentially lose the battle.

"The purple men are too fast for most of us to catch. Even if we have equal speed they can use the alleyways and buildings to get away. We are fighting on their planet and they have a good set up." Pike mentioned.

"Get everyone to retreat and stay in one area behind me."

The order was given, and many of them thought it was a strange order. The Penswi could see that the attackers were moving back, and they were giving up the territory they had worked so hard to gain.

In some ways, some of them thought it was a sign of victory that they had done well enough to push the Dalki back. However, Wince wasn't so sure.

'Why would they send reinforcements and then make a decision like this?' There was a big worry in her mind, but the Penswi were fast so they were unlikely to get hurt.

Finally, all the attacking Dalki, and humans had gathered, numbering a force of a few thousand, but they were all standing in one area, as Pike walked out in front.

"These buildings are what are giving us trouble, so let's get rid of them." Pike got into almost a squatting position as he had his hands held down by his side.

The humans that were there, I knew what they needed to do, and they started to use their abilities and and their powers and fired them towards Pike, or more accurately, all of the attacks were directed to his hands.

The abilities and power were swirling towards them and were almost disappearing. Of course, powers couldn't just disappear and this was because the power of the attacks were being absorbed right into Pike's body. There was almost a rainbow-like glow that was covering both of his hands.

He placed both of them on the floor, and the energy shot out into the ground like a pulse. A wave of dust, followed by the rainbow-like power went through the entire city. As it hit the buildings, they were being destroyed, crumbling and falling to the ground.

Unlike the buildings of earth, the Amra buildings were made with strong materials, ones that were heavy and withstood the gravity of the Amra, yet they were all crumbling like nothing.

There were Mermerials and Amra that were on the roofs of the buildings or that were inside, and they had to rush to get out before they were crushed by the building rocks.

"Now that should make it much easier, everyone attack!" Pike ordered.

Hearing this, the others rushed out from their positions in all directions. The buildings and wave of attack were still going through the city, and now they needed to deal with the Dalki and humans as well.

Pike started to move forward, as the fighting around him started and in doing so the five spike's had followed him. When he entered the fighting that was going on in the city, a stray water attack from the Mermerial was aimed towards him, lifting his hand up, the attack seemed to be absorbed into his hand once again.

Throwing his hand out, the attack came out as a burst of rainbow-like energy and it was several times more powerful. The water attack hit the Mermerial, making its entire body disappear.

Next, an Amra had come running towards Pike with its four large fists, and in a blur Pike had lifted his large foot and kicked it in the stomach making it completely disappear out of his sight. No one even knew what happened to the Amra because he wasn't there anymore.

The five spike Dalki behind him were similarly dealing with anything that came their way almost just as easily. At times there would be a stronger Amra that would take a few hits but not too much more.

Back at the base of the alliance, Wince was getting up off the floor, their whole set up and the building they were using had been destroyed. When she finally was coming to with the others, the Penswi had come back with a report.

"You're telling me that what just happened, all of it was caused just by one Dalki?" Wince repeated, after hearing the information. She thought about what would happen if she was to go up against a person like that, how long would she be able to last, perhaps a few seconds.

The rest of her army, how long would they last, a minute at most. At that point and time Wince felt hopeless.

"I suggest, you and the Blades leave this planet!" One of the older Mermerials stated. "I know you do not wish to abandon the people here, but we can not escape with you. You, as well as the Blades, are the hope for this army at the moment.

"If you live, you will still give hope to the other planets, but if you die then the morale of the entire force will go down. Morale is a strong thing. Although these enemies are strong, there are only a few. The rest of the army will need you in order to defeat the others."

Wince was biting hard on her back teeth, she almost didn't want to hear the old man's words, but knew he was right, because she had the same thoughts as well.

"Please leave, for the sake of the entire alliance army."

Pike was still heading forward towards the alliance base taking out whatever came toward him, and that's when he could see a ship leaving the planet.

"Running away... you will only be escaping the inevitable. No matter where you go, at some point you will have to face me."

"Let's speed this up, and get rid of the rest of these!" Pike ordered.

Chapter 2222: The reason for fighting

Listening to Logan and listening to Stark, they had gathered what was going on right now. After the Dalki were done with everyone on this planet, they were now moving on to the next, and most likely, they wouldn't be going to just any of the two planets, but going to the one where Wince and the Blades had gone to.

Immediately, Ceril started to walk out the door with a determined look on her face.

"What are you doing?" Russ asked, standing in her way.

"What do you think?" Ceril replied. "I have to go save my sister. If we waste any more time here, she could be killed at any second."

"Wait, wait." Jake also decided to join in the conversation. "Are you saying you want to try and follow the enemy after we just did everything to get away from them? Remember, the number one goal in all of this was getting Sil."

"We have him. Right now, he won't wake up, but he eventually will. You have to think of this carefully; we're on a planet where the attackers have already left. It's actually the ideal place to leave Sil right now."

"If we leave with him, we'll just be taking him to them."

Although they understood Ceril's complaint, they actually agreed with Jake. "He's right. Even us just appearing on the battlefield right now, it's possible it will also bring H to the battlefield."

"If that happens, the Alliance won't just have to deal with the Dalki, Pine, and the rest, but probably H as well. Just making things worse."

There was always the chance to hide Sil in Minny's shadow, but the real question was more about them joining this war.

"I have a suggestion," Stark said. "I've already used the power of the armor, and if I use it again, it would affect me seriously. Unlike the rest of you, I'm not so strong. My speed, the power of my attacks wouldn't be much help against these guys."

"There are two ships; I can stay with Sil until he wakes up, and as soon as he does, come to where you guys are. He can no longer use the machine, and this way, they will be confused as to where Sil is."

It was a good suggestion that almost satisfied everything, but it still didn't solve one problem.

"Are we strong enough?" Vicky asked. It was almost as if she was reading the minds of everyone in the room.

"Well, I don't know about you weaklings, but I can certainly hold my own," Russ commented. "I'm not planning to die in some crappy war."

It was the truth; if there was no need for Russ to take part, then he wouldn't go and would just stay here with Stark, but if Layla and Minny went, it would mean that Russ would have to go as well.

Ceril knew that the strongest forces in their group at the moment were Layla and Russ, and perhaps Jake if he agreed to fight as well.

"Layla, are you really going to abandon everyone just like that?" Ceril asked. "I understand you say that family is important to you. I really do understand, after all, we are talking about my sister right now."

"But it's not just my sister; it's the Penswi, the Mermerials, and the Amra, the rest of them that are all fighting for their families and for the sake of you being safe. With everyone here, we have a chance of saving them all, but without us... my sister and the rest aren't strong enough to stop them."

Ceril fell to her knees in front of Layla, pleading, "Which is why, I'm begging you, please. Let's join this fight and take them down."

As they looked around, everyone seemed to understand that the decision was ultimately up to Layla.

"I... I..."

On the very planet in question, their worst fears had come true. The Blades, as well as Wince, had safely landed on the planet. It was in a worse state than theirs had been before Pine and the others attacked.

The territory of the city where the battle was taking place was currently controlled equally by each group, half and half. This was not good for the alliance, which had more people and was only defending.

Upon landing, Wince made a quick decision, "We have to fight. We have to help them lower the numbers as quickly as possible before they arrive!" Wince ordered.

Rather than holding back, she and the rest of the Blades joined the fight. With her trident and her skills, she thrust her weapon forward, hitting a large whirlpool of power right in the Dalki's stomach.

Quickly jumping up in the air, she landed in front of a group of humans and slammed the trident on the ground, creating a large wave of water that swirled and severed the limbs of several humans.

"Are you sure this is the right thing to do?" one of the Blades named Hide asked. He was mainly taking charge of the group while Shiro was away. "I mean, if we

fight all out like this, sure it's helping our allies, but we will tire out, and then when they come..."

"This is exactly why we need to fight now, before they come!" Wince shouted back, as she started to spin her trident in a circle. As she did, water followed her trident and floated in the air, the amount of water growing as she continued.

"If they are here, continuing the war would be useless. We have to take out as many as we can and just focus on them. That way, even if we lose the fight, we at least took out as many of these guys as possible before we die."

Hide was surprised, but he could tell from her words and resolve that she had made a decision. She was okay with dying; in fact, she believed there was a high chance she would die today, so she would do so with a bang.

Thrusting her trident forward, the water she had been twirling around in the air went out, and like a laser, the water hit multiple targets in the area, injuring humans, Dalki, and more.

The fighting continued, and Wince didn't realise it, but they had more time than they thought. This was because, although Pine was able to deal with the other planet rather quickly, a ship needed to be sent out from the Marpo Cruise, and in doing so, it would then have to take them to one of the two planets.

At the same time, they had no idea what was going on in the Marpo Cruise. The chaos and the more pressing matters took precedence over sending a ship out, but a ship was eventually sent.

After Wince and the Blades' push, they managed to take out a quarter of the remaining force and pushed back, gaining more territory. But they were getting tired, and backup seemed to have arrived.

Jumping out of a medium-sized ship, Wince could see them. Pine and the rest of the Dalki landed on the battlefield. They were at the central square, the main marketplace the Amra used in the city.

"Everyone, stop!" Wince shouted. "Fall back."

She knew the rest of them were no match for what was to come. She wanted to tell them all to run, but to where? There was no way for them to escape on the planet, so instead, she decided to take a step forward.

When she did, Hide followed, as did the rest of the fifty or so Blades. All of them, bearing injuries, began to move, forming two rows behind Wince, who stood there with the trident held in her hand.

"A smart choice," Pine said. "You knew you had nowhere to run, so you decided to fight. You are brave, and honestly, as a Dalki, I like that."

"If we are unable to beat you, then it means those behind me will no longer be able to see their families. That's why I will win this fight!" Wince declared as a blue aura started to cover her entire body, mixed in with a bright white energy--the energy of a Celestial.

She still had the power that Quinn had given her, and she hoped it would be of use to her in this fight. A fight for her and everyone else's life.

Chapter 2223: Raining terror

Inside the Marpo Cruise, a flurry of hasty orders were being issued, most of them seemingly out of frustration. Jack was still furious about the explosion and the fact that he had actually been injured.

His sleeve was burnt, as was the skin beneath it. Sitting back in his office, Jack's damaged skin slowly began to heal, much like a vampire's, though he was not one.

After calming down, H visited Jack in his office to explain exactly what had happened and how Sil had managed to escape.

'This damn giant idiot!' Jack thought, as he listened to the story. 'I give him all this power, and still he is unable to catch up. Did I underestimate his power, or was it something else?'

Jack had no idea just how fast Stark was. It was hard to imagine the speed of someone who was already fast with the Nitro Accelerate Skill. He had seen how fast H was, which was why he almost thought it was a lie.

'He did want Sil's body for himself after all, so it would make sense if he was behind this as well.' Jack rubbed his forehead, fingers spread, as the stressful situation began to overwhelm him.

'No, that can't be the case. He knows that if he tried anything, I could take his powers away whenever I wished...I need to get more information from him about these people, I just need to use my soul weapon.'

"Alright, explain to me in detail, what did these people look like, and what did they say?" Chris asked.

H wasn't one for details, but he did his best to explain what he had seen. It didn't help that he hadn't seen any of them for long and wasn't interested in those who seemed weak.

After giving his explanation, H suggested a few possible identities.

"The descriptions aren't good enough to give me an idea," Jack said. "We need to keep this from Jim. He doesn't need to know about Logan or Sil for now. Otherwise, he'll just rub it in my face, stating that he was able to complete his task while I failed."

"But who would try and attempt to break out Sil? It's obvious that they got the information from Logan, who was recommended to come on this trip by Jim...has he decided to make his move? All of this is getting quite confusing."

"So, what do you want me to do?" H asked.

"For now, let's wait until we get a full report of who these people are. Then, I'll decide our next move, but either way, the priority is to get Sil back, and it would be best if we did so before Jim finds out."

In Jack's mind, he imagined that Jim was perhaps having an easy time taking over the capital. He could only guess that the forces there would be a bit stronger than those they were facing.

Little did he know that Jim was also having his own struggles in this war. Yet, both of them were reluctant to share their struggles with each other, as they were each trying to outdo the other.

Almost three days had passed since the war had first begun. "What is going on? Why are we having so much difficulty!" Jim shouted. "Never before have we been pushed this much, especially after sending the vampire leaders. Why is it so difficult?"

Jim had grown used to taking over planets with relative ease, and the whole situation had him irritated from the beginning.

"What are those useless leaders doing!" Jim continued to shout.

According to the information so far, the vampire leaders had attempted to push forward. Instead of going out on their own, they headed out in groups. However, thanks to one of the demon tier beast's special skills, with the vines fitted throughout the city, they knew the enemy's every move.

Geo used this information to focus his forces in the places where they wished to attack. Knowing the enemy's every move was a huge advantage as they could send large forces to one area and the areas close to it.

At the same time, Geo had strong legs that allowed him to use his power and jump practically anywhere he wanted in the city, enabling him to fight multiple times.

Once again, the night sky had come out as the day went on, and a meeting had been called between the vampire leaders. The meeting had been called by Hikel, but he hadn't invited all of the leaders.

Currently present were Grenlet, the third original, Edvard, the ninth original, Bianca, the fifth original, and of course, Hikel himself.

The meeting was taking place in one of the Amra buildings, which looked like a food hall of sorts, but it was in their territory they had gained, and no one else seemed to be around.

"Do you mind explaining why you have called us here, of all places, and at this time, and why haven't you called the others?" Bianca asked.

Hikel looked around. "Can't you tell what everyone who is currently present has in common?"

Grenlet felt like he had figured it out but didn't want to say anything because Edvard was there. The last time there was a mention of such a thing, a big problem had been caused, and he was fearful the same thing would happen again.

"We have run into the beasts a few times, but haven't any of you noticed there is something different about the beasts?" Hikel asked, referring to the power that surrounded their body.

"You aren't seriously suggesting this, are you?" Bianca asked.

"That power is something familiar, and it doesn't seem like these aliens have the power to control beasts. I have a feeling it is linked to the shadow ability somehow. Linked to the Punishers," Hikel suggested.

"You are a madman," Bianca shook her head. "After all this time, now and here of all places, with these aliens. They just have a power that is similar; there are plenty of creatures out there that have similar powers as each other or what we and others can do. Don't look too much into it. Isn't that right, you two?"

Bianca was looking for support from Edvard and Grenlet; however, Edvard seemed out of it, a bit lost. He had been ever since that incident.

"Useless fools," she commented.

In the middle of their conversation, they all felt the ground vibrate. It wasn't just once but consistent vibrations as if something was landing one after the other. All of them quickly headed outside and looked up at the sky, at the sight in front of them.

"What... is he doing?" Grenlet asked.

From the Marpo Cruise, it was raining black pods. Thousands of them, even larger than before, were all coming down. Every single person that could fight and didn't need to control the ship was coming down, and with this, Hikel had a pretty good guess.

"He's coming down himself; we took too long," Hikel said.

Chapter 2224.1: The Obsessed Vampire (Part 1)

The pods continued to rain from the Marpo Cruise one after another, and as they all hit the city floor, it almost felt like an earthquake was taking place. The Amra on the planet looked at this.

Their heavy, steady legs hardly moved due to the shaking; they had good balance and strength. Instead of looking at what was coming to them in fear, they were building up their determination to fight again.

They were injured, they were hurt, and fewer in number, but the Amra were strong, and to them, this felt similar to the trials in the tower.

"We will pass this!" Geo shouted to them all. "We will protect our home and get through this, and when we do, we will come out of it stronger than ever. A new world, a new life that we can't even imagine will be at the end of this fight!"

Hearing Geo's words, the rest of the Amra cheered throughout the city from their location. It started off like a wave, starting from the center and spreading through all areas.

"Please tell me... what is it that we need to worry about?" Geo asked, with Ronkin and Jeouk by his side.

They had been a big help with the demon-tier shadow beasts, and Geo had recognized them as part of their elite forces. Nock was also included in this. With those four, they needed to maneuver around the battlefield to give them a chance.

"This level of attack hasn't happened before," Jeouk stated. "From the look of the pods, every Vampire and Dalki under Jim's proposal has joined the battle now. This is the final wave; there will be no more after this."

These words, in a way, gave Geo hope. If it was just one more battle they had to push themselves through, then he believed they could do it.

"The one Quinn is worried about, the one he is building his armor for, does that mean he will be among these as well?" Geo asked.

"I'm not too sure," Jeouk replied. "I have taken part in the battles that were on the other planets, but other than the planet where the Namricks were, I have never seen this person. I only know of his existence through rumors."

At the time, when Ray and Quinn fought, the broadcast of the battle had come to an end. So they didn't know the strength of Ray.

"If he hasn't come before, then it might be a reason why he won't come, so he might not be among the others," Ronkin added, trying to keep morale high, but could see from the look on Jeouk's face that something was bothering him.

"There are two, though, that will be here... two that we need to worry about." ----

A reinforcement of around 6,000 more black pods had hit the city, adding to their already high number of forces. This time, there were more Dalki, Dalki that listened to Jim more so than Jack.

In the middle of all the pods landing, a sharp pointed base ship focused on speed was in between them as well. Rather than crashing into the land, it elegantly landed on the outside. The ramp descended onto the floor, and three in total emerged.

"It seems like the sayings that have stood the test of times are true," Jim claimed as he held his hands by the side and grabbed the air. "If you want something done, then you are going to have to do it yourself."

By Jim's side were his two guards, two people that were absolutely loyal to him, due to everything they had been through together. After walking a short while, the nine Original leaders each came one after the other.

They looked like files as they quickly formed a line and bowed down in front of Jim, though it was only a small bow. After all, the original leaders were the vampires who had started the settlement in the first place. Jim, on the other hand, was simply a hero among the vampires, having gotten rid of many troubles during their slumber.

'It looks like Ray is not by his side,' Hikel noticed.

"The war will end tonight, before the sun rises again!" Jim shouted. "After this battle, the performance of each of you will be evaluated, and we might need some serious reeducation."

Looking at the ground, Magnus scorned at Jim but didn't show it. He didn't like being treated this way, especially by someone who seemed to never do things himself, apart from sneaky attacks from time to time.

"What was that look you just gave me, Magnus?" Jim said.

Without realizing it, when Magnus lifted his head, his disdain was still showing.
"Do you have a problem?"

Magnus had already been caught by what had happened, so he felt like he might as well say what was on his mind. "Why do you stay here and act like yourself when most of the time, you're hiding behind those friends of yours? You talk about the

advancement of the vampire race, and yet, you're always hiding behind those who aren't even vampires--a subclass and a hybrid werewolf."

Jim smirked and moved away from his two guards, gesturing for them to stay in place. He was wearing light armor over his body, mostly for ease of use, but it was specially made from beasts. What tier it was or what power it held, they weren't quite sure. Usually, he would have a dark overcoat covering the light armor on his body. Taking off this overcoat, he allowed it to fall to the floor.

Surprisingly, he had armor that looked almost like a bulletproof vest underneath, revealing his arms to everyone at that moment.

The original leaders looked on in confusion at what they could see on display.

'What is that in his arms? Are they body enhancements?' Hikel thought.

In both of Jim's arms, from the palm all the way up to the shoulder, there were small, rock-sized crystals. Part of the outer shell of them could be seen sticking out through his skin. It was hard to guess their number, but possibly from just looking, there had to be at least fifteen of them in each arm, and who knew what was under the rest of his body.

"What are you? Are you even a vampire?" Magnus asked.

"I am a vampire," Jim answered with his eyes glowing red. "A true vampire above all else cares about one thing, and that is power, correct? As long as one has power, they have the right to dictate what others do. This has always been the case, not just for vampires but humans too. The strong decide what is right and wrong. The strong influence the way people think and act!"

The crystals on Jim's body started to glow, and Jim vanished in front of all the other leaders. Suddenly, Magnus could feel someone grab the back of his neck and pull him down to the ground.

Jim's foot quickly landed on top of Magnus's chest and stayed there. Magnus tried to push it off, but the foot wouldn't budge. There was a huge difference in power between them.

'It's taken me a while to figure out how these Nest Crystals work, but day by day, I'm able to draw out more of their power,' Jim thought, looking at the scene in front of him. 'I haven't even used the tier ten Dalki blood, and I'm strong enough to overpower an Original now.'

"So let me ask you a question, do you think I'm strong?" Jim asked with a smile.

The others standing by were barely able to keep up with Jim's speed, and they could feel a power emanating from him. It didn't feel like that of a vampire; it was an unusual power that seemed to be coming from the crystals on his body.

The crystals were something that the originals hadn't seen before, at least not during their time.

'Just what are those crystals?' Hikel wondered.

Chapter 2225.2: The Obsessed Vampire (Part 2)

Hikel was correct in his assumption that the power Jim harnessed came from the crystals.

What Jim was attempting was a feat that perhaps only the greatest of minds, such as Richard, Vincent, and Logan, could achieve. However, none of them possessed the same level of madness or obsession that drove Jim relentlessly towards his goals.

With Jim's original body dead, his current body was nothing more than a clone. As a result, his original power and abilities had been lost. In order to maintain his body's functionality, he required nest crystals.

These enigmatic crystals had little to no research conducted on them. Intrigued by their mystery, Jim was able to obtain a number of them, thanks in large part to the Marpo Cruise.

The cruise ship was renowned throughout the universe, frequented by those who possessed vast amounts of crystals and wealth. It served as a sanctuary for individuals seeking to hide from enemies, escape their home planets, or simply embark on a journey across the cosmos.

Initially, the cruise ship was a creation born from the collaboration between Jim and Jack. Its primary purpose was to help them survive and establish their own lives. The success of the cruise ships was merely a byproduct of their endeavors, but there was an underlying problem that demanded a solution.

His partners - Pine, the Dalki; his fellow clone who aided him in his prison escape; Malik, who possessed unique abilities; and, of course, Jack - all had limited lifespans. If the nest crystals could help him, then perhaps they could also be used to extend the lives of his fellow partners.

After all, nest crystals held the power to create life. They gave birth to formidable beasts that could evolve into demon-tier creatures, living for tens of thousands of years. Additionally, they played a crucial role in producing the human blood that vampires had feasted on for centuries.

So why couldn't they be used to extend the lives of his partners? In the past, Jim had harnessed the power of the nest crystals in conjunction with his equivalent exchange ability. This enabled him to accomplish extraordinary feats that would typically necessitate an immense exchange by merely utilizing the energy stored within the crystal.

Although the crystal did not provide an endless single-use output, it appeared to hold a boundless energy supply, continuously replenishing the energy from an unknown source.

Deprived of his unique ability, Jim was compelled to delve deeper into the potential uses and power of the crystals. His research proved fruitful, and he made significant progress, unfettered by the constraints of vampire society and the fear of retribution for his radical methods.

The Dalki became the first of many subjects for Jim's experiments. Following the end of the war with Graham, a small group of Dalki had surrendered during the hostilities. They coexisted with humans and vampires until their deaths.

However, the story did not end there, as research into the Dalki and nest crystals persisted. After considerable effort, Jim achieved success. Theoretically, the dragon responsible for creating the Dalki must have originated from a beast crystal.

Humans were also capable of being cloned, so why couldn't Jim continue to create the Dalki, substituting the dragon's energy with that of nest crystals? Although the process was time-consuming, Jim ultimately succeeded.

Nevertheless, the Dalki remained flawed; they possessed a brief lifespan and were incapable of reproducing. Despite these setbacks, Jim managed to amass an army for himself. After employing the crystals to extend the lives of his teammates and the newly created Dalki, they established the Marpo cruise business.

His obsession with nest crystals never ended there, though. The major problem had always been acquiring a large number of them. Once again, the byproduct of the Marpo Cruise was the fact that he could obtain a significant quantity.

With so many races traveling through the Marpo Cruise, there would also be others in the universe who possessed nest crystals, studying their properties or finding other uses for them.

Jim would take these nest crystals by force or use the massive wealth he had gained to acquire them. At times, if there were rumors about nest crystals on planets, they would send out teams of powerful Dalki, who were almost unmatched, to obtain them. This was how Jim was able to amass a large supply and take his research a step further.

Embedding the crystals into his body as before, Jim was learning how to harness their energy for himself. It was a different type of research he wasn't used to, because he had to experiment with his own body rather than machinery. However, in a sense, he could now find a way to use the crystals to empower his body to do things it could never do before.

He wasn't particularly skilled at it, his techniques in drawing out energy were horrendous, and he wasn't a natural. Yet, what did it matter? Even if he could only draw out a small amount of energy from the nest crystal to make his body stronger, he would simply use more crystals to achieve the desired effect, and that was precisely what he had done.

Jim lifted his foot off Magnus, who still had a sour expression on his face as if he had tasted something awful. But Jim didn't care; he knew now that this leader would fall in line.

Returning to his previous spot, he picked up his coat from the floor and draped it back over himself. The smile on his face showed that he was now in a somewhat better mood.

"I assume there are no longer any problems. If so, why is everyone standing around? Move out!" Jim shouted, prompting the others to spring into action.

Magnus, while traveling through the city, couldn't stop thinking about what had happened. The humiliation he had revived reminded him of a past. A past that he wasn't proud of and where he had failed. Failed at controlling the vampires.

What was worse was the fact that Jim had used his words against him. He was there during the war Magnus had created, and he had the same thing to those that were against him.

'I wanted to kill him right there and then. I would have, so why did you stop me?'

'Because we need him to cause more death in this world,' the voice responded.
'Through his goals, he will be trying to rise and face them. Remember, in the first place, it is because of us that he is even aware of the Celestials existing.'

'As long as he believes they can give him what he wants, then he will continue to push. He will meet his end, whether it's by our hand or not. We must focus on our own task.'

Magnus gritted his teeth as he decided it was the right thing to do. 'As you wish, Immortui.'

Chapter 2226: Fate of Worlds

The newly landed vampires, accompanied by their leaders, had fanned out across the city, advancing like a relentless wave. Unbeknownst to them, this strategy proved to be unexpectedly effective. In his haste, Jim had inadvertently created a challenging situation for all involved.

The sheer number of vampire leaders attacking different locations simultaneously meant that Geo, Nock, and the two demon-tier beasts couldn't be everywhere at once.

Stretched thin, they did their best to support their allies while also contending with the vampires who had been on the planet for a few days and were now acclimating to the gravity.

Initially, the green blood's extra strength had mitigated the effects of gravity on the vampires, but their bodies were now naturally adapting, further enhancing their performance.

Nothing seemed to be going in Amra's favor, and their situation was about to worsen.

"Is that giant tower their castle?" Jim inquired, pointing at the looming structure. No one had an answer. The current force saw it as no threat since no one was emerging from it, nor were there any attacks originating from it.

"It truly is an eyesore, and I can only assume it houses their most important figures," Jim deduced. "We should get rid of it."

In every battle, Jim's strategy had been to minimize casualties by targeting the enemy's main base in the final moments. He would send in the weaker vampires first to create a survival-of-the-fittest scenario, breeding stronger vampires ready for war. Then, the second wave would be dispatched to deal with any remaining issues. As they advanced, he would personally go after the leaders. The only problem was that, this time, the second part of his plan hadn't unfolded as expected.

"Chris, destroy that tower," Jim commanded.

Obediently, Chris leaped into the air. As he did so, his body began to transform—gray fur sprouted from his arms, and his fingernails turned into lethal claws.

Similar to Jim's transformation, Chris wore flexible armor that could stretch to accommodate his size, though it was sleeveless to allow for the growth of his fur-covered arms. As his sideburns extended, he swung his arms, sending two massive claw marks slicing through the air toward the tower. However, the tower's incredible thickness meant that more than just two claw marks would be needed to bring it down.

Before the claw marks could hit the tower, a small figure with four golden arms leapt up. Swinging them out, the figure released a burst of white energy that collided with the claw marks.

For a moment, the two sets of energy pushed against one another before dissipating into energy particles in the air, unleashing a wave of explosive power. Fortunately, the power wave wasn't at ground level; otherwise, some vampires and Amra nearby would have been affected by the attack's force.

While still airborne and before falling, Geo used one arm to latch onto the tower's side. Halfway up the structure, he dangled, ready for his next move.

The tower's self-defense mechanism utilized the energy of the crystal, but the recent attack had been incredibly potent. Geo wasn't sure if the tower could withstand a few more of those assaults without collapsing.

"Just when things were getting bad enough, now they have to attack the tower as well," Geo thought, growing increasingly concerned.

"Throw one up!" Geo shouted.

From the base below, near the tower, the Amra launched two large black rocks—the same kind they had previously hurled at the ships. Catching them, Geo glanced down to locate the origin of the attack and spotted his adversaries below.

His hands still glowing with power, he hurled the two rocks directly at them. Jim, noticing the flaming rocks hurtling toward him, didn't move. He knew he didn't need to, as Chris and Peter both leapt up and punched the rocks, shattering them into pieces that continued to rain down on the ground below.

The debris crashed into surrounding buildings and the street, but none struck Jim.

"So that's the one who threw the rock at the ship before and has been causing so much trouble. Both of you, take him out!" Jim commanded.

The two complied, albeit hesitantly, and set off toward the Amra. Conflicting thoughts swirled in their minds, as memories of Jim troubled them.

"Do you remember Jim always being like this?" Chris asked. "I know he's doing this for our sake—by stopping these aliens from summoning demons into our world—but he seems to order us around a lot. I feel like in the past, he would fight side by side with us or take matters into his own hands."

Peter remained silent as they continued forward until they suddenly stopped, confronted by the golden Amra standing alone in the middle of the street.

"I will always protect Jim with my life, no matter what," Peter replied. "My life has long belonged to him, so whatever he asks, I will complete!"

Peter charged forward, his body transforming into its celestial form mid-rush. A tail-like appendage emerged from his head, while his body became covered in a strange red substance, save for his black hands.

He threw his fists with raw power, and Geo mirrored the action, thrusting out his transformed celestial arm. As they clashed, the energy sent out caused the nearest buildings, already close to collapsing, to crumble.

Fortunately, anticipating a fierce battle, Geo had instructed the others to evacuate the area.

The power behind the hit took both fighters by surprise, their eyes widening in shock at each other's strength and the familiar sensation of their energies.

Ignoring this, Peter continued his assault, swinging his other arm. Geo responded in kind, their punches meeting again. With no other option, Peter used the swift tail on his head, but Geo deflected the attack with another golden arm.

The sharp tail, which had effortlessly pierced regular Amra, couldn't penetrate Geo's limbs.

"I have more limbs to attack with!" Geo declared, using a free hand to deliver an uppercut that struck Peter squarely in the stomach. The blow lifted him off his feet, and a shockwave of power erupted behind him as the attack passed through his body.

"That looked like it hurt," Chris commented, contemplating whether he should intervene in the fight. Observing Geo, he couldn't fathom that he alone was the reason the vampire leaders had been unable to progress, so he remained on standby, expecting something else to occur.

Peter smiled as his feet landed back on the ground. "If you want to kill me, then you should have aimed for the head!" he taunted, planting his foot firmly and gathering his energy in one fist. Naturally, Peter was also accumulating Qi in addition to the celestial energy.

Simultaneously, he coiled his long head tail around his arm several times until it formed a sharp point at the end, and hurled it out.

Geo sensed the danger of this attack, and with all four arms, he created a cross-shaped block. This time, when struck, it was Geo's turn to be lifted off the ground, flung much farther than Peter had been. His body crashed into a building and continued to fly backward until he felt someone catch him from behind. The two skidded, lifting the ground beneath them but eventually stopping.

"Why do you do these things on your own?" Nock asked with a smile.

Looking through the broken building, Chris grinned. "I thought there would be more than just him, and Peter, did you really think it was smart revealing your weakness like that?" he questioned. "Now we just need to decide who goes after who."

The two Amra, blessed with Quinn's power and the strongest of their race, stood side by side. If they couldn't stop these two, then no one else could.

"They're strong; you should be careful," Geo warned, accepting Nock's help and examining his arms. The glow around them had faded, but it was slowly returning.

"That's why I didn't come on my own," Nock replied.

The figures of two beasts appeared behind them, prepared to push back with everything they had as well. The stage was set for an intense battle, as both sides readied themselves for a fierce showdown that would determine the fate of their worlds.

Chapter 2227: A clash of supreme powers

The presence of the demon tier beasts suggested that the two vampires who commanded them would also be nearby. For some reason, the shadow beasts obeyed them. Although Geo was grateful for the help, having all their strength concentrated in one place worried him. All the powerhouses in the Amra army that had been stopping the vampires from advancing were now gathered together.

This just meant that what they now needed to do, was just that more important, they needed to move on from where they were.

'We have to deal with these two quickly and finish them off.'

Geo prepared to fight again. He had witnessed the strength of one opponent but had no idea how strong the other was. Knowing the power of one of the attackers on the tower, he guessed that it had to be the other man standing next to him.

Wasting no time, he charged forward, with the Owl beast flying by his side, Geo had more of a burst of power, making him go slightly ahead.

"You, take care of the newcomer that arrived," Chris instructed, rushing forward without giving Peter a chance to reply. "This one looks more interesting to me."

As Chris began to transform his body, he knew he couldn't take any chances with his opponent. With his clawed hand, he aimed a powerful swipe at Geo, who had leaped forward with the help of his strong legs. One arm clashed with the claw, and Geo nearly collapsed from the force, feeling his body give way as he was pushed to the floor. Using the strength of his legs once more, he sprang up and used his other arm to counter and push up.

'I thought the last one was strong, but this one... I might be going crazy, but I feel like his strength is even stronger.'

It wasn't just the physical strength but another power that Geo was unused to.

Unable to match Chris's power, Geo swung his arms away, evading the attack. Chris's strike continued forward, breaking the ground and leaving a large claw mark underneath. While pulling away, Geo twisted his body, launching a double hook at Chris's side. Chris deflected the attack with his other hand, using his powerful claws and incredible arm strength.

'I'm using the momentum of my attacks. I jumped into the first one, used the power of my legs, and the rotation of my body to give everything I have in these hits, but with a flick of his hand, he can match my power.'

Chris unleashed a cross-shaped energy claw attack. Geo had seen this before and placed both of his hands across his chest, only then realising something - the golden glow on his hands, the celestial energy given to him by Quinn, had faded.

'Was that from the block he did with his claw?' Geo wondered.

The same thing had happened when he blocked the claw strike from the tower and it was happening again now.

This time, when the claw marks struck his tough skin, they managed to pierce through it, drawing blood. Chris was about to follow up, lunging toward his opponent, but the Owl beast intervened, attacking him from the side with its sharp teeth.

It had crashed into Chris before he could do anything, and had seemingly come out of nowhere for him.

Chris realised that the beast could extend its neck and launch it like a bullet, making it difficult to anticipate. The beast's neck was now almost three times the length it was originally and it already had a pretty long neck, to begin with. He used his superior strength to widen the beast's jaw and slammed it into the ground.

'It almost felt like the punch didn't go all the way through, like I was hitting an invisible barrier,' Chris thought, noticing the lingering shadow on the beast's body. 'Was it because of this shadow? Did it take the brunt of my attack?'

Chris prepared to kill the interfering beast, but Geo intervened, crashing down on him from above with all four arms. Chris blocked the hit, but the force and weight of the attack created a crater beneath him as if a meteorite had crashed into the ground.

'If my current attacks aren't working, then I need to build more momentum!' Geo screamed, pushing harder into the ground.

After recovering from the attack from Chris, Geo jumped up into the air as high as he could, then falling down, he used the power of the gravity and his weight to swing them down into Chris.

"ARGH!" Chris started to scream as he was pushing back against the attack, his thighs were bulging with more strength, the large amount of Qi in his body was growing, and his chest was increasing in size as he went to transform his body even more than before.

With his arms he opened them, breaking open all Geo's arms and kicked him right in the stomach to send him flying back, another attack came from the beast, but this time Chris had slammed the top of its jaw shut and lifted the whole beast into the air slamming it into the ground.

Huffing and panting after using that much energy, he needed to recover a bit. The strange energy produced by the beast, and the strange energy of the golden arms, it was taking a lot of power for Chris to get through, but he had yet to be seriously injured in the fight.

The bite marks he had received on his hand had already healed, one of the traits of his werewolf body.

Turning his head, he glanced to see how Peter was doing. There were vine-like structures going everywhere trying to get him. His head tail was slashing through and breaking a lot of the vines, but eventually he would be tied up by the leg or the arm, and the vines continued, almost holding Peter in place.

Just like with Chris, although Peter's head tail could cut through the vines coming at him, his attacks felt weaker, almost pushed back against at the last moment. Now it almost looked like Peter was unable to move, and Nock took this opportunity as he pushed off the ground, jumping forward and swinging out his arms.

"If you thought something like this could hold me back, then you're wrong!" Peter shouted as he forced himself forward, moving his legs to rip the vines apart and throwing out a punch.

With his head tail, he had knocked away Nock's fist and then delivered a punch clean on his head. Before Nock's body flew away, Peter grabbed one of his arms, pulling him forward and hitting him on the head again, lifting his back feet off the floor and causing the Arma's whole body to fall to the ground.

The head tail wrapped around his fist once more. The vines still tried to grab and restrict him, but Peter didn't care; he knew they weren't enough to stop his strength.

'Damn it... I knew I wasn't strong compared to Geo, but now there are these aliens out here as well with this much strength... if I die, can we really win?' Nock thought.

He had been badly hurt, blood dripping from his mouth, but more than anything, he was disappointed he was unable to get one hit on Peter.

Lifting his fist up, Peter went to finish his opponent, until he felt a sharp energy from the front.

"What the..."

A spear slammed right into Peter's stomach, ripping a hole right through it, and it continued to spin while stuck in his body. Using his hands, Peter held onto the spear that was now in his stomach, and managed to stop it, but not before it ripped part of the flesh from his skin.

"This weapon... is it a demon-tier weapon?" Peter guessed from the strength.

Looking at the direction of where the spear had come from, a single man was walking casually as if there wasn't a care in the world.

"It looks like I've been dragged into this as well," the man said. "But that is no surprise because where there is a war, I am always there... most of the time. But you see, my power comes from war, and when there is war going on, I'm at my strongest."

Geo and Nock looked at this man, but they didn't recognize him at all. Why would a stranger to them all help them in the middle of all this, and who was he?

Chapter 2228: A turn in the tide

An all-out battle was about to erupt on one of the Amra planets. Wince stood in the centre of a square, her trident at the ready and the Blades poised to act on Hide's command. Behind them stood Pine and the five spiked Dalki. Wince's body glowed as she channelled celestial energy, causing the scales on her face to stand out.

Fins on her arms grew larger and harder, transforming her appearance from that of a mermaid to that of a predator - specifically, the Mermerial race they had previously fought to regain their land.

Without warning, Wince thrust her trident, gathering water at its three points and creating three separate streams that shot towards Pine and two of the Dalki. Pine spread his hands, attempting to absorb the water jets, but the energy mixed in caused a slight pain in his hands.

Pine had never encountered this power before. He had always been able to absorb any ability and even Qi. The energy that he struggled to absorb was the celestial energy that surrounded Wince's attack. Pine used the water he had absorbed to fire back, but the pure energy that Pine had absorbed pushed against the water stream.

"We will support you!" Hide shouted, gathering lightning in his hands and unleashing it at the water streams. The water and lightning combined to create a stronger attack, pushing back the energy.

The other Blades attacked the remaining water stream, hitting one of the Dalki from behind and stopping him in his tracks. The lightning power left him almost paralyzed in place.

"Everyone, fight!" Hide screamed at the top of his lungs.

Without hesitation, the Blades used the newly discovered Qi within their bodies, moving from their positions and surrounding the Dalki in formation. Those with ranged abilities burst them out, while others with more physical capabilities went in for close combat.

Pine shook his head, muttering, "Idiots."

With the two attacks combined, Pine absorbed the lightning and thrust his hands forward, shooting large energy blasts towards Wince and one of the Dalki.

Wince knew it was too strong for her to handle. Immediately, she created a pool of water at her feet, riding it like a wave and quickly moving away. Hide jumped and spun his body, transforming into a lightning bolt, and when he landed, he saw a surprising scene in front of him.

'I thought we had worked hard enough, I thought we had prepared enough for this fight!' Hide was finding it hard to hold back his tears, he needed to focus but in this

moment, he was wishing Shiro, or Sil was here. If they were here, maybe they could stop the massacre.

The Blades had done a lot of training, finally passing the fiftieth floor, learning to work together. In doing so, they had learnt to combine their powers well, rather than just using their individual powers.

They could set up traps, make their weapons stronger, and try to trick the enemy, but the Dalki were hardly hurt from the attack. One of the Blades rushed in from the side, expecting an attack from the right side to distract it, but the Dalki completely ignored it, allowing it to hit the side of its head, breaking a few scales off its face and causing it to bleed.

In the meantime, it had hit the Blade right on top of the head, forcing him to crash into the ground. Before he could even get up the Dalki stomped its foot going right through the body of the Blade and killing it one go.

The same scene was happening everywhere, the Dalki were getting hurt slightly, improving their strength and in turn, they were able to overcome the attacks and were taking out the Blades one by one.

One of the Dalki, licked its long tongue out from its mouth as it looked at one of the Blades, which was using a wind ability. It went to swipe its hand but before the hand could hit, an Amra jumped down in front, and used its fist to punch the arms away.

Somewhere else, a Dalki had leapt on top of a fallen Blade, but before they landed, a purple figure zipped by and picked up the Blade before they were killed.

Soon, entering the marketplace, the Penswi, Mermerials, and the Amra that were told to clear the area and stay behind had come out.

They couldn't just stand by while they knew what was happening, they all needed to help and do what they could no matter how little it was.

Surrounding Pine were ten Mermerial warriors, with swords and spears in their hands.

"Protect the queen!" they shouted as they all thrust their weapons forward, all of them combining their weapons with their water powers. As they thrust it forward it hit Pine cleanly.

However, it was unable to pierce the Dalki's skin, not a drop of blood appeared on his body. Lifting his hand up, he slapped the Mermerials in one swoop, and a trail of blood followed his fingertips.

The top half of the ten Memerials bodies had disappeared, only leaving their legs, Pine had managed to kill them all, with just a single slap.

"NOOOO!" Wince screamed at the top of her lungs in pain.

There was a reason why she didn't want them to get involved, and that was simply because there would just be more bloodshed.

"You have a strange power, but it won't do much. You seem to forget that the Dalki now have many different ways to fight ourselves!" Moving from his position, he was immediately in front of Wince.

Throwing out his fist, it crashed right through Wince's body, and droplets of water splashed everywhere. The figure started to liquify, showing that it was only water.

'It wasn't the real body.'

From behind Wince had thrown the trident, covering it in celestial energy and was aiming straight for Pine's head. Turning around he grabbed the trident and threw it right back at Wince.

It had stabbed her in the stomach, and red blood could be seen. This time it wasn't a clone. Controlling the trident she was able to take it out of her body, as she landed on the floor. She was still bleeding and had no time to worry about the pain.

Two of Pine's large hands were above her, swinging them down, he went to bash it on top of her head, and now there was only one thing she could do. Slamming her trident on the ground, she and the trident itself was surrounded in a glowing blue bubble.

She held the trident hard as she put all her energy into the bubble. When Pine's hands hit the bubble the two were in, the shockwave sent out had pushed some of the others over, even stumbling some of the Dalki.

"This ball is quite strong, it even managed to stop one of my attacks, but that was all, it was a single punch, so let's see how many times you can do that."

Lifting his hand up again, he bashed the bubble from the top and it broke in an instant. Blood spewed out of Wince's mouth as well. She was truly putting all of her energy into that ball.

Now having fallen on the ground, she felt like she no longer had any energy left. She was still holding onto the trident, trying to lift it and point it at Pine's head.

"The strong make the rules, and the rules are, you need to disappear from this place." Pine lifted his foot and swung it down.

In her last moments, Wince closed her eyes... at least she thought she had done, because all she could see was black, but she could still hear the fighting going on.

"Man oh man." A voice said. "You guys just really think highly of Quinn's shadow power don't you. Well, it's a good thing anyway, because of him and his damned family, I'm now out here fighting."

Chapter 2229: Some things can't change

The Queen of the Mermerial race was bewildered by the turn of events. She had fought with all her might, but just like before, she had failed. She was ready for death, but what saddened her the most in her final moments was the fact that the Mermerial race would continue to fight even after she was gone.

She wouldn't see the outcome, nor could she change it. All she could do was hope that the others would succeed, but as she was about to give up, a strange dark shadow loomed above her, followed by a confident voice.

It had stopped the Dalki's hit.

"You can't give up!" Another voice shouted, different from the first one she had heard, and this voice she would never forget.

"As long as you're breathing, you need to keep fighting!" The voice screamed once more.

From underneath Wince, she felt a wave of red water bubbling around her, moving her away from the shadow and quickly gliding across the ground. 'This... is water, but why is it so red?' Wince thought. It felt like water, but the consistency wasn't like that of the vampire aura. She stopped sliding along the floor as she was brought directly to the person who was using their powers.

"Sister... we will fight together," Ceril said, having arrived along with the others.

The group easily figured out where the fighting was taking place. They could feel it, hear it, and hear the cries of others. Some were running toward the direction of the fight, wishing to help, and that's when they had all arrived, each of them rushing off to help those in need.

Immediately, there were those who rushed to help with the five Spiked Dalki. Crashing down between one of the Blades that was about to be hit by a large arm was a leg of flames. Landing on the ground, the flames spread out, lifting right in the Dalki's face. It didn't do much damage, but it managed to push them back. Immediately standing up, he took a stance, ready.

"I'm sorry because we weren't quick enough... it looks like some of our brothers and sisters lost their lives."

The other Blades couldn't believe it as they saw the person in front of them. Of all those they were waiting for, they were happy to see him.

"Shiro!" Hide shouted. "Shiro, you're back!"

He was back, but it seemed like around fifteen members of the Blades had already died, and some were seriously injured, leaving only around thirty or so capable of

fighting. It was clear even with the help of the aliens around them, that it would be too much.

"Our task is to take out one of these five Spikes!" Shiro ordered. "Leave the rest to the others."

The five Spiked Dalki were strong, and it would take all the Blades to kill one of them, just like it did for them to pass the fifty-floor mark. However, the Blades were spread thin because there were five of them. If they were all concentrating on one, who would be fighting the rest?

When the Blades looked around, concerned for how the other Dalki would react, they realized they had nothing to worry about because there was more help than they realized.

One of the five Spike Dalki dashed forward, throwing out a fist at the human who got in his way. But with a stomp of his foot, the earth rose and hardened, creating a unique type of metal that absorbed the hit and soon started to wrap around the Dalki's arm.

There was only one person in the whole world who was capable of doing this, combining two powers into one.

"I've heard many stories about the Dalki's strength in the past. I was even able to see it firsthand, but it's safe to say that I think I'm strong enough to take you on," Jake smiled.

On the enemy side, the humans and Dalki had refrained from entering the square. They knew the strength of the others and feared being caught up in the fighting. They wouldn't be much help and would likely get killed in the process. But seeing who was helping out the aliens confused them. Jake was a well-known figure among the humans, so why was he fighting against the Dalki? Why was he going against Earth's forces?

It started to raise questions in their heads. Were they betrayed? Did they find out something they didn't know? Because it wasn't just Jake fighting on the other side.

Two other influential figures for the human race stood against a five-spiked Dalki. Logan Green, along with his wife Vicky Blade Green.

"It's been a while since I've fought on the front lines like this," Logan commented. "I'm sorry if I get in your way or slow you down."

"Don't be like that," Vicky replied. "I was the one who trained you long ago, remember? With the two of us together, we won't lose this fight."

Seeing Logan was perhaps the biggest shock to the humans in the Dalki army. This was because Logan was essentially the leader of Earth. Although a lot of memories

had been changed, putting a lot of achievements on Jack and Jim, Logan's influence was too high to just replace.

He continued to be the leader of Green City, the capital of Earth, and was well-liked by the people. The people's favour of him only grew now that there was no longer an influence from the group Pure.

Seeing this, it was hard for them to imagine that Logan Green would just switch sides for no reason.

"What is going on? Why is Logan fighting for them?"

"Well, don't you think it's weird that there were other humans fighting with the aliens in the first place?"

"That's because they must be working with them to open the portals to the demon's territory!" Another claimed.

"That can't be it. Logan would never do that, and it's not just him, but his whole family is involved."

"I did manage to get a report from the cruise ship. It seems like the androids that had been brought on board were going haywire and attacking everyone. That's why we haven't managed to get more support from them as well."

"So it's true... they really are attacking us."

"That's the thing. I'll be honest, I'm not too sure. I've been getting reports from those on the inside. The androids were just attacking the black pods and ships. They would harm some of the Dalki, as well as other things in the base, but none of the humans had been killed. They had only been injured."

"Based on that, I can't believe that Logan would betray us. Something is up. We need to ask Jack what's going on. Get in touch with him and report this. We need answers."

Even without Sil changing everyone's memories, there was a tide in the war that was slowly changing.

Chapter 2230: What's your job?

There were many strong helpers that had come to the market square on the planet, and because of this, the Amra, Mermerials, and Penswi that were watching the fight from the sidelines were starting to back off a little.

Although they could see that the new allies that had come to help them were strong, there was still a bit of worry about the others that were facing the five spike Dalki. For one, Wince and Ceril, the two sisters, knew they were no match for Pine.

However, they still were some of the strongest that were currently on the planet, and perhaps with both of their strength, they could take on one of the five spike's that they were going up against.

"The water power and the power Quinn gives me, I will do my best to heal myself," Wince said, as she stomped her trident into the ground. A blue energy started to surround her, and slowly she was feeling herself being rejuvenated.

"I'm sorry, sister, but the last fight I had took a lot out of me, so you will have to do the best to hold it off for now."

Ceril walked in front of her sister, and the water started to flow into her hands. Soon, the water hardened, turning into an ice-like structure. Now in her hands there were two red swords, and at the same time, a wave of red liquid was behind her.

"A lot has changed for me compared to the past," Ceril replied. "You don't have to worry about me too much anymore."

The five spikes came rushing towards her, and with it, Ceril thrust her two blood swords. At the same time, waves of what looked like red water spun around her weapon, hitting the Dalki. It crashed into it, blocking its view, and on the surface of the water, small sharp spikes started to appear, piercing the skin of the Dalki. Jumping up in the air, Ceril started to spin down as she swung her sword on top of the Dalki's head. Waves of water were following her and crashed onto the Dalki. It was a powerful hit that sunk the Dalki's foot into the ground.

However, it still wasn't enough to kill a Dalki. This was a five spike, after all, one of the most feared out there and although it didn't have any special traits like the leaders of the old, it did have something else.

Pushing through the wave of water, the Dalki was bleeding all over with its green blood, but still had plenty of vitality left in it. Opening its mouth, a green liquid started to bubble inside.

Throwing its head back and then forward, a large green substance came out. A shield of blood water was created to stop the attack, but the green liquid went right through it and made a hissing sound as if it was burning.

Quickly moving out of the way, with her newfound vampire speed, Ceril dodged the green liquid that hit the floor. The hissing sound continued, and the ground looked to be sinking in the area it had hit.

'An acid... and not just any acid, it looks like a strong one as well.'

While looking at the acid, Ceril was distracted as the Dalki was already right next to her with a fist right by her head.

'It moved this fast... but it wasn't this fast before?'

The injuries to the Dalki had only made it stronger. With the blood water she raised around her face, she tried to gather all her energy there. The Dalki's fist swung out at her head, hitting the water that was covering her face, and causing it to splatter in all directions.

She could feel blood fill her mouth as her cheek had been pushed up against her teeth. Her head was rattling and the shock of the blow was making it hard for her to stand.

'It hurts... It really hurts. Even with me blocking most of the attack with my powers. Just how strong are these creatures?'

Concerned for Ceril, the Mermerials that were watching started to use their blasters. The sharp jets of water hit the Dalki but it was nothing more than a mosquito bite, as it went forward again, now with both arms ready to crush Ceril.

An object went flying past Ceril and straight into the stomach of the Dalki. It stayed in place for a second, allowing her to see what it was: a trident.

It pushed back the Dalki before the trident moved back and went safely back to its owner's hands.

"We will fight this one together. We can do it," Wince stated.

For those who were watching due to the importance of the people behind fighting, there was great concern, but there was also great worry about another one that was going up against the last five spike Dalki.

That was because the image they were seeing just didn't make sense to them. In front of one of the five spike Dalki was a little girl who looked around the age of 8 or so.

"I can't believe it!" Minny said, as she looked at the Dalki. "Mum finally trusts me to take on an opponent on my own. I have to do a good job so I don't distract her."

The Dalki that was facing her was slightly confused as well, but in the end, it didn't care for who its opponent was, even if it was just a little girl. It charged forward, and with a swing towards the floor, it hit nothing but the air.

"Minny is going to do a good job!" she said, in her transformed celestial state, right behind the Dalki.

Just as the others trusted each other to be strong enough to take out the Dalki, Pine also trusted his fellow members to have no trouble taking out those around them. He had no idea of their opponent's strength, but they had no trouble in the past, so why would they have trouble now?

The real troublesome one was the person who was in front of him. "You show no fear," Pine said.

Russ shrugged his shoulders, hearing these words. "I have seen a lot of scary things in my life, and I seem to lately be fighting all the time with my life on the line, so there is no difference now."

Although Russ' power was strong, without an unlimited amount of MC cells, he had to be careful about using his power. What would be the best way to take out his opponent? Summoning things from people's minds, using powers that the others had, or using their own power against them?

If he had an unlimited amount of MC cells, then he would simply try all of the above, but he was unable to. His MC amount had increased greatly due to the nest crystals, and now he could perhaps even transform himself into a seven spike like Pine, but for how long? And if he didn't defeat him, then he would be stuck.

"Let's see how you handle this!" Pine lifted both of his hands in the air, and doing so, it was a signal.

The Dalki and the humans started to use their powers, firing it all toward him and aiming it toward his hands. As it did, the power would swirl and seemingly disappear.

"Is it an absorption power... or the power to block attacks?" Russ thought.

He needed to learn about Pine's power before he could use it for himself.

"Goodbye," Pine said.

He moved both hands, and all the energy he had absorbed fired out of them as a pure energy blast, heading straight towards Russ. It was an immense amount of power that burnt the ground to cinders and looked as if it was doing the same to the air.

"I need to move!" Russ thought, but then he saw someone step in front of him, and he no longer needed to move.

A female with a black sword stood there still. She drew her weapon and started to spin it. The energy blast crashed into the sword and turned into nothing. The blast continued until it completely disappeared, and Layla was standing there strong with the blade by her side.

"Your job is to protect me, right?" Layla said. "Then it only makes sense that the best way for us to fight is if we take on the same opponent together."

Chapter 2231.1: The Green Legend (Part 1)

Fights were going off in all sections of the square, and it was a good thing that most of the materials and buildings on the Amra planet were several times sturdier than what would be used on Earth.

Because the shockwaves alone would have been enough to blow away nearly a whole city on Earth, but these were still standing, although hardly, as several pieces would crumble now and then from the shockwaves.

If a stray hit from nearly any of the Dalki would land, then it would easily destroy a few buildings nearby or off into the distance; that was how much power was in each of those hits. It was just when watching, it was hard to remember that.

A strange occurrence had occurred because of the fights though, and that was that the fights had practically stopped in the city. The Alliance of Alien's forces had been pushed back to the point where they had next to no territory.

After getting past the market square, there was really only the base of operations for the alliance. They had been pushed that far back, and if the others hadn't arrived, then the battle would have been lost already.

Now, though, all of the remaining members of the alliance were watching on the edge of the market square, and it was the same for the attackers. The strength on display of what they were seeing made it clear.

This fight was going to determine who would win the battle, at least the one on this planet.

The attention of the attackers, the humans, and the Dalki was focused on one of the fights in particular, as they were fighting within, only differing as to who to root for.

One of the 5 Spikes had leapt up in the air with both hands held above its head. On the ground below, Logan had transformed one of his arms into a blaster. At this point, having been able to live for so long, he was more machine parts than he was human.

The blaster fired large beams of energy, all of them hitting the Dalki in the head. Six good hits landed and showed scorch marks on the skin of the enemy, but it did nothing to deter his opponent.

"I'm sure that can't be good for the brain. Even if you have a skull that is five times thicker than humans, the attacks will still rattle the inside of your small brain!" Logan commented.

The arms swung, and appearing by his side quickly in a blink was Vicky. She held Logan, and then both of them disappeared as the Dalki's fist smashed into the floor. When they reappeared, they were right behind the Dalki.

With his Dalki-made hand, Logan swung it, hitting the Five Spike on the side of his head, while Vicky went for a flaming kick. Both of them crashed at the same time, surely causing a large amount of damage.

Lifting its hands, the Dalki had grabbed onto Logan's Dalki hand, and the flame licked off Vicky, almost as if it did nothing to it.

Quickly, Vicky reached out with her hand, touching Logan, and the two of them disappeared again, moving away a bit further from the Dalki this time.

"A Five Spike Dalki is really this tough. After all this time, I thought I would have gained the strength to kill one of these on our own. I mean, my own son seems to have passed me in that department," Vicky glanced to the side and could see Jake was doing very well on his own.

"It took all of us, including Hilston himself and Sil, to take on a Five Spike last time. Yet we have all grown in strength, but we have to remember how dangerous these opponents are," Logan explained. "Besides, have you noticed something?"

The Dalki was looking around trying to find where Vicky and Logan were because every time the Dalki saw them, Vicky would use one of her powers, the power of teleportation, to move them around.

"The attacks we originally hit on the Dalki, there are now no marks, no signs of bleeding. At the same time, the Dalki's strength has remained the same, stagnant rather than growing like usual," Logan explained.

"So what do you think it is?" Vicky asked.

"I believe he has a healing ability. A strong one, but one without a switch. The Dalki is unable to turn it on and off, meaning whatever damage we do, it will just heal. This could be good news or bad news either way you look at it."

In a way, it meant the Dalki they were dealing with right now wouldn't get any more difficult to deal with. This was the extent of its strength. However, for the two of them that didn't have a large single output of power and wore their enemies down, it meant this would be a long and tedious fight, perhaps an endless one on their end.

"What abilities do you currently have?" Logan asked.

"Teleportation, fire, and healing," Vicky answered.

She was able to hold three abilities at once, but when combined with her twin Pai, they could hold a total of six abilities, even more than Sil. It was what made her and her brother unique. The problem was she had no idea where her brother was, and it wasn't as if he was going to appear out of nowhere and help out with this battle.

'Healing, I guess she can never hide that soft spot of hers,' Logan thought. 'Other than providing more MC cells, it won't do much in terms of attack, but she's worried about if we get hurt in this fight.'

"Do your best for a little bit... and don't get hurt," Logan said as he broke away from Vicky. She didn't ask what he was planning to do and just trusted him because since the two of them had been together, it always seemed to work that way.

Vicky teleported right next to the Dalki with a flaming kick and threw it out. It hit the head of the Dalki but just like the time before, did little damage.

'While teleporting, it's difficult to build up momentum in my attacks, but it's the safer thing to do, to make sure I can get away and not be hit,' Vicky thought. 'But if we don't come up with a bigger and stronger attack, what are we meant to do?'

Teleporting around the Dalki, Vicky was able to move faster than the Dalki, hitting its legs and other body parts. Without it getting hurt, it also meant that it would never be able to catch up with her speed due to it not moving faster.

Teleporting upwards into the air, Vicky spun her body in flames, then she started to fall down. From the sky, it looked like a flaming bird, and it soon crashed right into the top of the Dalki's head with her heel hitting the head. Using her teleportation ability, she got out of there quickly and was huffing and panting.

'I hope that finished it off.'

Chapter 2232.2: The Green Legend (Part 2)

'I've used up a lot of MC cells, the constant teleportation is taking a lot out of me. I think... I might be able to avoid around three more hits, and that's it. Please let this attack have done something.'

When the Dalki turned around, its body still somewhat covered in flames, part of its face could be seen slightly melted, and in front of her eyes, it was going back together, turning back to what it was in one piece.

"You have done a good job," Logan said, as he held his hand out. But it didn't look the same as it did before. Instead of a blaster at the end of it, it had transformed into a large long thick barrel, with a blaster at the end.

It was at least five metres long. Then there were several other things around him as well. They were androids. Each of them was touching each other and placing their hand on Logan. There looked to be around fifty of them.

During the fight, Logan was still in control of the androids that had been going rampant on the ship. Ever since he got on the planet, they had been trying to make an escape and make their way here. Crashing in the black pods like originally intended, now they were here to support him.

With his soul weapon, he could change the structure of the original androids, using all their bodies, and his own body to create a powerful weapon. Then with all the high-tier crystals in their body, including the high-tier crystals Logan had on himself, he would draw out all the energy inside them to give out one powerful blast.

'The android will be useless after this, and using this many androids at once along with my soul weapon will use up a lot of my MC cells, but I need to at least do my part.'

The energy was all transferred through each android and into Logan, and blasted out the end of the long barrel. The energy blast hit the entire body of the Dalki, and was pushing him.

It was burning off the front of his skin, and at the same time, its ability could be seen activating, trying to heal him. While his skin was in the middle of being healed, it was also breaking down again, and the green blood was dripping.

The green blood from the Dalki was dripping down his feet and creating a pool of blood. Seeing this, Vicky was starting to get extremely worried.

"Oh no!" Vicky said as she got up off the ground.

Throughout the whole fight so far, the Dalki was unable to use its natural trait: the more hurt it was, the stronger it got. It was all because of the healing. Now, the

healing ability was kicking in, but it was slower than the damage it was receiving at the moment.

Yet, the attack wasn't strong enough to take out the Dalki in one go, and it appeared as if it was getting stronger by the second.

The Dalki started to fight back, pushing against the energy blast and taking one step forward. Its body was still hurt, but it moved forward, going closer to Logan.

"Damn it," Logan said, gritting his teeth as blood poured out of his mouth slightly. For him, this was also painful. He didn't have a special body other than the parts he had changed and his somewhat Dalki self running through him.

This much energy still passing through his human parts was affecting him; it was hurting him. The energy from the androids didn't pass through Logan's body for long, since it would then come out of the blaster, but it was constantly passing through him at the moment.

His insides felt like they were going to burst, and with another cough, more blood came out of his mouth.

"Logan!" Vicky shouted out and teleported right to his side. She then started to use what she could of her healing ability on him. Her hand started to glow as she touched his body.

"That feels a lot better," Logan smiled.

"Shut up, don't talk!" Vicky said back. "I don't understand you. How can you do so much, how can you trust the memories of the machine so much, that you are willing to put yourself through this?"

"We did a lot for them already, we don't have to fight this hard. For someone we can't even remember if he was our friend or not."

Logan understood what Vicky was saying. Even if he watched a video, a simulation of everything that happened, of the truth that happened, to a human that's all it would be. The memories and experiences in their heads were certainly different, that was the bigger reality.

Yet, Logan ignored the reality in his head and was putting trust in something else, and now was trusting that so much, to put his life on the line.

"It's a feeling," Logan said. "Do you know, I went through the memory chamber I left behind. It's an advanced piece of equipment my family left."

Logan was finding it hard to talk, and Vicky was in pain just looking at him, as the Dalki continued to push forward step by step.

"I used that device a lot, uploading my own experiences onto it and I have to say. Because of him, because of Quinn my life was extremely interesting... he was there with me all the way Vicky.

"I tried to run simulations, based on what I knew, of what would have happened if I never met him. Apparently, without him, I would have been dead by now. I would have never run into you either, it was because of him the two of us first met.

"I know I'm not good at expressing how I feel, I know it's hard for me to show emotions on my face, but I could tell by watching my memories, when I was with him, I never felt happier."

A last final push at that moment was displayed. The androids from behind started to fall over one by one as all of the energy was taken out of them in one go. It was passing through like a line of dominoes, and all of it was heading toward Logan.

With Vicky now healing him, it meant his body could take that bit more. The blast of energy erupted from the barrel, and it completely consumed the Dalki that was only two metres away.

It disintegrated every part of its body, making it turn into nothing, and the blast continued on, hitting the buildings going straight forward. It destroyed everything in its path, even reaching the edge of the planet and slightly into space before disappearing.

When it did, Logan stood there, the bodies of androids on the ground behind him.

He turned to look at Vicky, who was in tears shaking her head.

"I... I... ran out of MC cells... I had no more energy to heal you," Vicky managed to say, through her tearful eyes, as she could see blood dripping out of Logan's mouth, falling down his chest.

"I know," Logan said, falling and being caught in Vicky's arms.

Chapter 2233: A slowing heart

Logan was a small person in the first place, but when his body fell, it had landed on Vicky relatively heavily, due to the parts inside his body. However, this had caused a large fear to run right through her mind: was it dead weight?

"Logan... Logan..." Vicky called out a few times. She was speaking directly into his ear, trying to get some type of response out of him, but there was nothing there; there was no reply.

Trying to act as calmly as she could to the situation, she took in a deep breath that was a bit shaky, and placed him on the ground. She did so slowly, feeling that any sudden movements might just be the end of him.

"Logan, you're going to be okay, I promise. You won't die here, not in some useless war!" Vicky somewhat shouted.

Placing both of her hands together, she started to focus. She still had the healing ability; for a few seconds, her hands were seen glowing. The second she opened her eyes, though, the glowing stopped completely.

"No... no! Come on!" Vicky shouted. "I know I have power in me, my heart is still beating; use that, use anything, and just give me some power!"

Vicky's hands started to glow with the ability once again, but it disappeared even quicker this time. Due to the fight she had, she was completely drained of her MC cells; she had nothing.

Looking around, she wondered if any of the others could help. It was important for Logan to get seen as quickly as possible if there was any chance of helping him, but everyone was busy. They needed their focus; she bit her lip and was about to open it when she could see three Dalki coming right toward her.

They weren't five spikes, but two and three spike Dalki, those that had been watching the fight from the sidelines and had been watching everything carefully. They knew about Logan, and from what they could see, he was an incredibly big threat.

In their heads, it was best for them to get rid of this large threat before he became an even bigger problem for them.

'Why now of all times... I still only have a little bit of energy in my body, the best I can do is pick up and try to run with Logan, but without the teleportation power, they'll just catch up to me in no time.'

What else could she do? She wasn't just going to give up, and that's why she had decided to pick up Logan there and then. As she guessed, the Dalki were now right in front of her, though.

"Don't touch us!" Vicky screamed at them. "I'll make sure every single one of you disappear!"

An energy was rising in her, but it was all useless. Until, landing right in front of her, were three other figures that were all just as large as the Dalki themselves. They stood there like a strong wall, and on their shoulders, there were those with blaster guns as well.

It was the Mermerials along with the Amra. With their large arms, they clashed against the Dalki, all of them pushing back, while the Mermerials used their weapons and blades to try and cut and fight against the Dalki.

"We aren't going to let those people, these strangers that are risking their lives for our planet, just die in front of our eyes!" One of the Amra shouted as he moved the Dalki's hand away and punched it hard right in its head, spilling out green blood.

Since Logan and Vicky were fighting in one area, it had somewhat allowed space in the marketplace for fighting to resume. The two of them were safe for now, but the problem still wasn't over.

In fact, if they stayed here, it was more likely that they would get caught up in some type of crossfire, and that's when she could feel it.

"His heartbeat... it's getting weaker."

Vicky placed Logan back on the ground once again, there and there, and placed her head up against his chest.

"NOOO!" Vicky shouted. "Someone, help!"

Caught up in the fight, everyone was already doing the best they could to help.

"We can help." A shaky voice said from the side.

When she turned her head, she could see five humans standing there, four men and one woman, but the clothes they were wearing and the fact that they were human meant one thing: they were part of the other side. The side that was helping out the Dalki.

"I know you might not trust us, but all of us here are originally from Green City," one of the men said.

"We have healing powers and medical skills that can help," the woman said.

"You might not trust us, and we understand if you don't. Because the truth is, we don't really understand it either... Why we're deciding to do this, but what we do know is that Logan Green is a good person, and we have a chance to save him, so we want to save him."

It was risky. The whole thing could have easily been a trick. If they got their hands on Logan, they could finish him off. But what else could she do? No one else could get through the fighting to come toward them.

The more time that went past, the more likely he was to die anyway.

"I'll be watching you closely," Vicky said. "If you try to do anything funny, I'll kill you in an instant... but please save him."

The five of them nodded as they quickly went to Logan's side. In the meantime, Vicky herself would try to recover as quickly as possible as well.

One of the fights that were going a bit well for the group against the five spike Dalki was one with the small little Talen.

Minny had been using her speed to her advantage, she was faster than the Five Spike in her celestial form, and with her sharp red blood claws infused with her blood and celestial power, she could rip through the tough Dalki skin.

There were several cuts and large slashes across the Dalki's body everywhere. Once again, Minny ran up and slid across the ground going right through the Dalki's legs. She then jumped up in the air and dug her fingernails deep into the Dalki.

From there, she dragged her hand downward as hard as she could, creating a deep cut from the Dalki's shoulder to the spikes on its back. It quickly swung its hand behind its head trying to hit Minny, but she was already on the floor, running away once again.

"That... was a little close. Daddy always used to say these guys got stronger and faster the more they were hurt. I guess he was right." Minny said.

All of those fighting against the Dalki were having a difficult problem because it was the first time they were going up against an opponent like this... one that was able to get stronger the more they were hurt. On top of that, they were resilient, so unless they had an attack that would kill the Dalki in one go, it would mean their opponent was only getting stronger.

Thinking this, Minny started to run quickly with both of her claws shining red. She jumped up in the air, and when she did, the Dalki slammed its foot into the ground, breaking the floor beneath it and throwing several rocks into the air.

Minny swung her hands, and the claws were able to break through all of the rocks with ease. Using her small feet, she had even pushed one that was behind her to go

right for the Dalki. She threw out her fist hard but, rather than hitting the Dalki, it hit nothing but a large ice wall.

'An ability, but he hasn't used an ability this whole fight?' Minny thought.

"I was waiting to grow my power. What's the point of wasting such power until I'm not at my strongest!"

The Dalki threw out a fist, but a shadow from Minny managed to go in front of her. It covered the punch, but the Dalki was also ready with an ice fist he created from that grew from the right side of the ground, hitting her and causing her to skid across the floor.

Minny quickly got up, though only a small mark had been made, and was ready to fight back until she saw something that widened her eyes.

"Who are you!" The Dalki said, staring at a little boy who looked at most two years of age.

"Galen!" Minny shouted, wondering how he had appeared. The only answer was, he had come out of her shadow.

Chapter 2234: Family stick together

Since the fight had started, Galen had been staying in Minny's shadow space. It was an order from their mother, Layla. On top of that, Layla stated that if Minny ever felt like she was in danger, then the two of them would just have to stay in their shadow space until they thought it was all over.

These were the two conditions that had been set out by their mother in order to allow Minny into battle, but there was one problem. This all relied on Galen actually listening. Somehow, Galen also knew how to use the power of the shadows.

Whether he was secretly taught it or just learned it from observing the others, he knew the shadow powers. This meant he was able to escape from the shadow whenever he wanted to, and that's what just happened now.

'You stupid brother!' Minny thought, staring at him. 'Why aren't you listening to Mum's orders? She's going to kill me if she finds out about this.'

Minny was wondering what to do, the best way to get Galen out of there. Maybe the Dalki wouldn't care about a child on the battlefield, but she was wrong.

The Dalki looked at the child and looked at Minny. Her whole attitude, the fact that she was hesitant at moving, said everything. This person was important to her.

"When I'm done with him, I'll deal with you," the Dalki said, placing his hands on the floor.

Ice started to spread out, and a thick wall was made. Thick layers of ice had been created in an instant, and now a large square block could be seen in the market square. The only thing was Galen and the Dalki couldn't be seen, because the two of them were inside.

Immediately, Minny ran across the ground in her transformed state. A flow of red aura was being left behind in the air. Her feet were leaving footprints in the ground. With both her hands, she then shoved them forward in one go, putting her full force into one place.

The attack smashed a section of the ice, but that was all. Only a single section of the ice had been broken, where her fists had met it, but not the entire structure of ice itself. The mark that she had made was slowly coming back.

'That little brat has power even stronger than mine, but that's why I created this ice square in the form of layers. The powers we were all given weren't weak by any means. The five spikes in the past lost their lives, but we are far better than them with abilities gifted to us by Jack!'

"If you lay a single finger on him, you're dead!" Minny screamed, as she was getting her claws ready. If one single powerful attack didn't work, then she would just have to destroy the ice and break through.

Inside, the Dalki was at its strongest, having sustained a large amount of hits from Minny. He moved forward at a fast speed, ready to grab and crush the young boy. At the last moment, Galen jumped up, causing the Dalki to miss. He landed on his arm and started to run up it.

The Dalki twisted trying to grab Galen with his other hand, but the small vampire had already jumped off his shoulder. While mid-air, he had created a large hand made from blood aura.

Swinging his hand, the blood aura hand moved as well, hitting the back of the Dalki's head and creating a slap-like sound. The Dalki rubbed the back of its head as the area stung a bit. There was no serious pain, no serious threat in the attack, but it was incredibly annoying.

Locking eyes onto the child, the Dalki quickly ran straight ahead, trying to grab him with both arms. Once again, he was evaded as the vampire boy was above and created another blood hand slapping the back of the Dalki's head.

The Dalki reached the wall in frustration and attempted to get the little vampire at all costs. Never had he been so frustrated or felt so humiliated in a fight before. The power coming from the child was weak, he was no threat yet he had managed to hit him twice.

His hand on the ice wall, several spikes went out towards Galen, who quickly evaded them all. And when one spike went right towards his centre, he used the shadow to block it again.

The boy landed on his two feet totally unscathed and looked at his opponent. What the Dalki and many didn't know about Galen was the fact that he was a master at evasion.

The favourite pastime of Minny and Galen was to play games of catch. This started ever since Galen was able to walk. Minny was exceptionally fast for a vampire, and her speed was one of the traits that put her above others, including when she was in a celestial form.

At first, Minny was superior to the two when playing the game, but eventually, she was finding it harder and harder to catch Galen. It was to the point where she would even use her celestial form at times to try and get an edge.

The two continued to play this game, and their parents were completely unaware of what was happening, not paying much attention. The Dalki was finding it hard just

keeping up with Minny, which was why he was finding it impossible to catch the small vampire.

The Dalki flared its nostrils, letting out a big amount of air. Using all its strength in its legs, it blasted in one go straight toward Galen.

Who, in turn, stepped at the exact moment the Dalki started to move. As Galen touched the back of the ice-like wall a circle of shadow appeared. His body sank through the shadow and was able to get out of the ice wall from the other end.

The whole body of the Dalki smashed through the ice and continued going forward, breaking into a wall of a building off in the distance.

Minny herself had just clawed away at the ice, making a large enough gap for her to fit through, when she turned her head to see the Dalki going off in the distance.

"Galen, you're okay, you're not hurt right?" Minny asked, rushing toward him.

He shook his head, as he turned around showing her he had no wounds. After that, Minny placed him back in the shadow.

"Stay in there, otherwise you're going to distract mum. I'll deal with the rest." Minny claimed.

Not long after, the Dalki that had somewhat exited from the market square, came rushing back in. It stopped and, rather than looking for Minny, it looked like he was looking for someone else instead.

"Where is the small boy? I'll rip him from limb to limb, eating his body parts right in front of her!" The Dalki shouted.

Minny's eyes narrowed as she watched the Dalki's movements. She knew she couldn't let him get to Galen. If he did, he would have surely killed him without a second thought, which was why she had placed him in the shadow.

"You're not getting anywhere near him!" Minny yelled, her body glowing with a red aura.

She launched herself at the Dalki, just like before, her speed so fast that it was like a blur. The Dalki barely had time to react before Minny's claws had slashed across his chest. He let out a roar of pain, but Minny didn't give him a chance to recover.

She moved quickly, her celestial form and speed enabling her to dodge the Dalki's attacks easily. With each strike, she left a trail of red aura behind her. Her movements were fluid and precise, each hit landing with deadly accuracy.

The Dalki was a formidable opponent, but Minny was not one to back down from a fight. She knew she had to end this quickly, before he had a chance to hurt anyone

else. So she focused all of her power and launched a final attack. With a roar, she charged forward, her body glowing brighter than ever before.

Her body started to change even more, as the red horns on her body grew larger, circling in more. The red claw marks on her hand looked to be enhancing as the sharpness increased. A new energy was entering her body; it was the first time she felt this way.

The Dalki tried to defend himself, but it was no use. Minny's claws sliced through him like a hot knife through butter, and he fell to the ground, defeated. Breathing heavily, Minny stood over the fallen Dalki, her body still pulsing with energy. She looked around, making sure there were no other threats in the area, and wondered where the newfound energy had come from.

The power she had received felt familiar, like the energy she would use to transform, but she felt like she was already using all she could, so where had the extra energy come from?

When Minny turned her head, she noticed Galen standing there again, no longer in the shadow she had placed him in.

'Could it be?'

Minny smiled at him, feeling a sense of pride swell within her. She had protected her brother, defeated a powerful enemy, and proved that she was a force to be reckoned with. It was a good day's work. Who cared where the power had come from?

Still, she was exhausted and tired; she needed much rest, and there was still a very important fight going on. One that involved her mother.

Chapter 2235: A planet to save

In the tower, the heat of the forging room was almost unbearable. The forge itself was placed in a particular place that allowed it to reach certain heats needed to melt down the materials to make their special weapons.

However, at the moment, not only was it unnaturally hot inside because of this, but also due to the work that was being done. No one had rested so far as they continued to make the weapons. The heat from all of their bodies was adding to the room.

At the same time, whenever Quinn was working, this pressure would come off from his body. It was swirling around in the air, adding to the already tense situation. For some reason, for a while now, all of the Amra, including Dober, could feel that the swirling energy had gotten more intense.

The Amra had already done all they needed to do, but they stood a distance away, watching Quinn. He continued to hammer away at the final bits, changing the tools needed as he focused on different areas.

'I can't think about what is happening right now, I can't think about it,' Quinn thought as he continued to hammer in the same spot. 'I just have to follow the instructions he gave me. I have to do as he told me and focus on one thing.'

Alex had given Quinn a set of instructions on how to make the ultimate pair of gauntlets that could be used to fight. Those instructions included melting down the Celestial blood guns. They had their use when fighting against the demons and other opponents from far away, but the opponents he was going up against now needed all of Quinn's strength combined into one hit. This was the best option.

In the end, Quinn had gone through with what Alex had said. His final plea was too strong. He couldn't go against him, and the blood guns had been melted down. They had already been combined with all the materials needed, and now, the last few finishing touches were being done on the two gauntlets.

Although his mind was focused on the task, it was as if his body was reacting to his strong emotions. His feelings were pouring out through his aura and affecting everyone around him. That was because Quinn could no longer hear Alex. Granted, he was no longer holding onto the blood weapons, which might have been a reason, and he wasn't wearing the gauntlets either. But not hearing Alex's voice after the melting of the guns had hit him.

It was the first time in the whole process where he had taken a moment before proceeding further.

"Your task is done," Quinn said.

The Amra looked up, surprised to hear him speak. He hadn't said much to any of them.

"You have already done everything you can. There is nothing else you can help with. I know you are all worried, but worrying will do nothing. The best thing you can do is go out there and see the situation and if you can help them."

"I am sure there will be equipment that needs repairing, ships that need fixing, and those that could use your strong muscles and determination that helps you with forging to fight."

"I promise I will finish this, and I will do everything I can to save your planet, but to do that, there needs to be a planet left for saving."

The Amra looked at each other, concerned. Most of their family were in the tower as well, but it was natural that a good forger was a good fighter as well. So they felt guilty by being inside.

"We will head off," Dober said with a bow. "And we hope we get to see just what you can do to punish the attackers with the armour we helped create."

On the Marpo Cruise, where Jack was currently in charge, for a while now, the whole place had been in chaos. There was a large number of androids stationed inside, and they were attacking all over the place.

It wasn't just one area of the cruise ship that was being targeted, but multiple. It was so bad that it got to the point where H and Jack himself had to go around exterminating many of the androids. This was also part of the reason why they were unable to get updates on the situation below. The target of the androids were communication devices, among other things.

However, something had soon changed as all of the androids had suddenly stopped. The situation had calmed down, and they were no longer on the move. Finally, there was some sort of peace onboard the Marpo Cruise, but things were still hectic. The engineers were now in full swing, trying their best to repair the damage that was done.

At the same time, the Dalki that were still on board were told to destroy any of the remaining androids as they wanted to make sure that the same thing wasn't going to happen again.

As for why the androids had suddenly stopped, it was all due to the situation down below. Logan had been controlling the androids to do as he ordered. However, in order for nothing to crop up, or for others with skills similar to his or engineering skills to override his control, he was in constant control of the androids. He also did this to make sure that only the appropriate tasks were done, and that no one who

didn't need to be injured wasn't injured. Which was why, as soon as his powers had faded, so did his fine-tuning commands.

However, those onboard weren't aware of this, so they were still wasting their time, trying to get rid of them all.

"That damned Logan betrayed us, and we still have no clue about the situation on any of the planets?" Jack asked.

The men were panicked and didn't want to give him an answer that they knew he wouldn't like. So they continued to work away.

'Damn it!' Jack clenched his fist. 'I saw some of the situation, Pine seemed to be doing well, and then moved to the other planet. Things should be okay, but we still have no idea where exactly Sil is.'

'At the same time, because they broke our long-distance communication device, I can't get an update on the situation with Jim either. To be honest, I'm surprised he hasn't finished the task already and come back. This means he must be experiencing some trouble as well. It's unlikely he is behind this.'

"Sir!" one of the men shouted. "We finally have a visual of the situation on one of the planets. We should be receiving information soon about the reports."

When the camera feed came in, Jack could see it all. The people that were going against Pine: humans, those with vampire powers, and the Blades. Those that had originally ruined his life.

Based on the description he had heard from H, it sounded like these were the people that he had confronted before taking Sil. The vein on Jack's head was starting to bulge even more, to the point it looked like it was going to pop, but the anger soon turned into a smile.

"I knew the Blades had escaped somewhere, I think they had a hand in all of this. I should have known," Jack laughed. "The fact that Sil is still nowhere to be seen must mean he is still sleeping."

"Although there is one surprise, I'm surprised that Pine and the other Dalki haven't been able to deal with them."

"Sir, we just got a report from below." The man swallowed his saliva before speaking. "Two of the five Spikes have been defeated, and the others seem to be heavily injured and aren't faring so well."

Jack took a deep breath as he had made a decision after hearing this news.

"This is fine, tell H to get there immediately, and to get rid of everyone."

Chapter 2236.1: 7 or 8 spike (part 1)

The main person that would cause trouble for them all in this war was clear, it was Pine. The 7 or 8 spiked Dalki. The reason why they were finding it hard to tell, was due to the spike sticking out of the top of his head.

They were unsure if that counted as a spike, that added to his power, or if it was just a trait the Dalki was born with. Either way, whatever the fact was, it didn't stop the main goal... they needed to get rid of him.

"I have to say, good job." Russ smiled, as he couldn't be happier about the sword in her hand. He had the power of the shadow, but had no clue how it would do against the energy blast.

On top of that, similar to if Quinn was using the shadow power, blocking an attack of that level would require him to use more shadow, and in turn use more MC points.

"Oh... who is this, they don't look strong." Pine said, as the palm of both of his hands started to glow. He still had a little bit of energy left over and swung them forward, firing out two balls quickly.

Seeing this, Layla hit them cleanly through the centre. Due to the size of the energy sword, the strikes from her blade made them disappear completely.

'There is no resistance at all from my attacks, she doesn't even get pushed back, and there was that shadow from before as well.' Pine thought to himself. 'To think in a place like this, I would meet two people that were able to counter my ability.'

Pine wasn't worried though, because the reason why he used the ability in the first place, for him, was simple as it was just practice. Jumping from his position, he was directly in front of the other two in an instant with his fist out.

Luckily, Russ had somewhat predicted the next move, he raised the shadow powers he was currently using and had created a wall blocking the hit. It absorbed all of the power, and at the same time, Layla saw this as an opportunity.

She knew that her own powers, of a true Hannya, even with all the emotions absorbed and Qi inside her, wasn't going to do much. Her power before was unable to hurt a six spiked Dalki.

However, the sword was special in two ways, one in the fact it could negate all abilities and powers, and that it was able to cut through anything. This was tested when fighting against the demon tier beast that the Dalki had come from.

A sharp sound was made, and the tip of the sword ended up hitting the ground. For Pine, he had just simply moved to the side, and when Layla realised that she could see a large foot, it hit her right in the centre of her stomach, and she went flying.

She was going through the air so forcefully that she almost let go of the sword but held onto it tight. Her back crashed into several walls; she did her best to protect her body with Qi but was unable to stop her internal organs from hurting. With a cough, blood spilt out of her mouth.

"That useless b*ch!" Russ complained.

Right now, he was using the shadow power, and because of it, he was taking a more defensive approach, relying on Layla to do the high damage part, but she had done neither, leaving everything that needed to be done to him. Swinging its arms from above, Pine was ready to hit Russ and finish him off in one go, since he did look more squishy out of the two of them. Lifting his hands though, they started to transform and were taking on a very similar appearance.

Russ managed to grab Pine right by the wrist and held him there. "How does it feel, for your own power to be used against you, and in a much more powerful way?"

Russ had grown Dalki hands, and out from his back, there were eight spikes. When looking through Pine's mind, he found two figures that Pine was almost afraid of. One of them was human, due to this being the case Russ had no clue what the person's ability would be. Instead, he took on the Dalki, which he was pretty sure was H.

Holding onto Pine's hands, Russ opened his eyes, and red lasers hit him across his chest. It was burning the top of his skin. Letting go of his wrists, Russ then went on to punch his chest. Before he could reach, though, Pine with his other hand knocked it away. Russ quickly went to use the red eyes, the lasers, but Pine was out of his sight and had kicked him in the back, bending his spine slightly.

Russ, in his Dalki body, hit the ground a few times before he finally got up, and Pine was right on his tail. The punch was thrown out, hitting nothing but the air, and a shockwave was still sent out, destroying the building behind them and blasting a head off the onlookers watching in that direction.

Popping back out, Russ had appeared from a shadow and threw out a kick, hitting Pine right in the head, sending him to the ground. It was an earth-shattering kick. When Pine bounced off the floor, the whole area broke beneath him.

"Damn it, I hate people like you. Even if you have images of others that should be stronger than you in your head, you actually always see yourself as higher than them. In your mind, you're at the top. Which is why my power isn't as strong as it should be."

In a way though, it had worked out in Russ's favour because he was able to also use Quinn's shadow power, taking on a slightly weaker form, but his MC cells would drain a lot faster now.

With a blink though, Pine was no longer on the floor, and before Russ knew it, his whole hand had been grabbed.

'How... fast is this guy? Just what is going on?' Russ thought.

His whole body was being pulled forward, and a large knee hit him right in the face. Blood came out from Russ's nose and mouth. Still holding on, Pine pulled on the back of Russ's head, allowing him to see the sky.

He lifted his hand, and when he did, several abilities shot off towards it, charging it with energy once again. Rather than swinging his hand down for a punch, he placed it on top of Russ and released the energy right into his stomach.

A strong blast from point blank made his insides twist in pain. His whole body slammed against the floor, and now he was the one who bounced before landing on the ground.

The shadow was too slow, and the current Dalki body he was in was too slow as well. There was a downside to Russ's ability, and it was the fact that he was unable to pull out his own memories or past ones, only those around him.

Thankfully, there were people in the area who knew of a certain someone that was very fast. When Pine went to deliver another finishing blow with his fists right to Russ's head, his whole body moved at a quick speed, and his whole body was now purple as he took on the form of Stark.

When he reached the outer edge of the marketplace, Russ was holding onto his side, clearly hurt from the fighting so far.

'Is this the best I can do, just run in a Penswi form?' Russ thought. 'It was a good thing this guy thinks highly of the Dalki in a resilient way, otherwise I would be a goner. Even though I hit this Pine guy a couple of times, he hasn't got a scratch on him... how are we meant to win this fight?'

Russ was contemplating giving up, thinking the person he was meant to be protecting wasn't even here. At least that's what he thought until Layla could be seen walking out from the hole in the wall she had made with her body.

When she came out, the sword was by her side, and the white of her entire left eye was black.

"Maybe you can be more useful this time," Russ said.

Chapter 2237.2: 7 or 8 Spike (Part 2)

Layla, for a while now, had been trying to rely less on the sword after what happened with her battle against Mundus. For one, the sword's power wasn't her own but borrowed power. However, the real reason was due to how close it was last time to taking her own life.

She had done well increasing the use of her telekinesis along with her Hannya self. The only issue was, against Pine, he could absorb the energy of her attacks. It looked like it was the same for any attack that had Qi in it as well.

Essentially, she was going against an opponent where only the sword could really have any effect. With the level of opponent she was now going up against, she couldn't just test her skills; she needed to use them to the best of her capability.

"Layla, are you sure about this!" the sword shouted in her head, panicked and worried. The sword was able to not only see what was happening to her, but being attached to her, it could feel it as well.

"I warned you the last time when you drew this much power from me, your body can't handle it. You barely managed to come out with your life the last time."

There was another worry the sword had. The more she was using his power, the less she seemed to be resistant to it consuming her as well. He could tell by the colour of her eye. This took a lot longer to affect her last time, and now it was instant.

"What are you doing standing there!" Russ shouted. "Attack!"

Pine didn't care for this new look, and without hesitation, rushed in. He knew the sword could block his energy blasts, so he didn't care to use it. Reaching out, he went to almost grab the sword.

At the right moment, Layla without fear had shifted, moving her feet and position, so she was facing straight towards the Dalki's chest. She had avoided the hand, but now the whole body of Pine was about to crash into Layla.

However, when shifting in, she lifted her sword to strike upward and carried on moving with a spin and managed to duck under Pine's arm.

Green blood splattered from the cut in the air, and Russ moved in his Penswi body quickly out of the way.

"Our first hit!" Russ was pleased. He had no idea what this new form was, but one thing he was happy about was that she seemed like a completely different person. A master swordsman who had jumped levels.

"I need to do my part and keep up as well!"

There was one thing that Russ was doing that he never used to do before with having these constant fights, and that was mixing in abilities and races' traits. Before, he relied too much on having an unlimited supply of MC.

If it was the past version of him, he would simply just summon those that he found useful. In this case, he now used the most useful parts for himself.

"The legs of the Penswi and the arms of the Dalki!" Russ screamed in his mind as he ran as fast as he could, almost burning the ground beneath him.

Pine turned around, the large scar could be seen across his chest with blood dripping down. He was ready to confront the ones that had hurt him, but was a bit too slow when Russ was already in the air, pulling back his fist.

"ARGHH!" Russ screamed, slamming his fist square in the Dalki's face. The speed and power had created a supersonic punch that, when it hit, produced a wave of power.

Pine bent his knees, taking in the hit. He gritted his teeth and pushed back as much as he could with his head, but the hit was a lot harder than he thought, and he had something else to worry about because Layla was already swinging the black sword at its side, aiming right toward his neck.

Desperately, Pine reached out to the sword and pinched his fingers on the edge. He could feel the sword cutting into the palm of his hand, but he did manage to stop it before it could do serious harm.

Seeing how Pine had grabbed onto the sword, Layla pulled it out toward her, making a larger and deeper cut on his hand, and lifted it above her head, swinging it down attempting to slice him in half.

Once again though, the sword had just hit the ground. Layla had stopped it before it sliced into the floor. Pine had managed to move back in time.

"You were faster than me," Pine said. "But it looks like my blood flow is helping me out a bit. Thank you!"

Pine swung his arm, and Russ noticed something weird. Layla, her arm was shaking, and the veins around her neck were pulsating. The darkness that had surrounded one eye was creeping into the second eye.

Grabbing her and rushing her off to the side, Russ had gotten there in time.

"What are you doing? Why would you just stand there?" Russ complained.

When he put her down, her body was still shaking. Layla had placed her non-shaking hand on her hand wielding the sword in an attempt to stop it.

"Just a little longer... please... my body," Layla mumbled.

"Is she dying?" Russ thought. "It would make sense. How could someone as weak as her manage to become so strong? Wait, but if she dies like this, it's not my fault, right? I can't do anything to save her anyway. If she does die, doesn't that mean I'll be free?"

Russ wasn't the only one who had noticed Layla acting strangely, which was why Pine once again had called in the help of the others, raising his hands. The bystanders started to use their abilities, allowing him to absorb their powers once again.

"Let's see you try to block this!" Pine shouted, throwing his hands forward, and a large beam of energy coming out with them. It was coming toward the two, and Layla still didn't look like she was in a state she could move.

Russ turned around, looking at the beam of energy, and his body was starting to change once more.

"Even if I do want you to die, this guy is seriously pissing me off!" Russ said as he threw his hands forward as well.

The energy blast hit him, but instead of burning his hands off or the blast chucking him back in the air, the energy was going into the palm of his hands. It continued until the entire blast had disappeared.

"Whatever you can do, I can do as well!" Russ threw both his hands forward, and just like Pine, a large blast of energy had come out.

Pine had never expected this. So far, no skills like this were used, but then again, he had never gone up against an opponent like Russ. According to a particular celestial, if Russ had unlimited MC cells, he was, in a way, everyone's worst enemy.

The blast had hit Pine in the body before he could lift his hands. The power was limited to only his hands. As the energy blast hit him, he raised his hands, hugging the large amount of energy and started to absorb it, but some damage had already been done.

In the middle of getting rid of the energy, though, he could see a glimpse of someone in the air above.

"Die!!!" Layla screamed.

This was their chance. She saw it, and in her head, she was going to move her body no matter what. From above, she swung the sword down, aimed right at Pine's head.

The energy blast from Russ had just been fully absorbed, at least what was left of it from shooting toward each other, but if Pine lifted his hands up, they would just be sliced off, and moving his legs would be slow as well.

That's when he let out a small amount of energy from his hands, allowing his body to be weightless, he moved back slightly. The sword went down, slicing through the top of his horn.

Landing on the ground in front of Layla, she could see it, the single horn or spike, whatever it was, lying on the ground.

"I... I failed," Layla said, knowing she could no longer harness the power of the sword. If she pushed it any further, she would be killed.

Pine looked up, green blood running from the top of his head, down his face, and onto his shoulders, and there was a smile.

"Yes... Yes, you did."

Chapter 2238.1: Deadly combination (part 1)

Layla's body was already suffering from the effects of using the black sword. The time she had used it was far shorter than the last time, but that just went to show how little of a resistance she had to the power of the sword now.

However, seeing a chance in the fight, an opportunity to end it all, she used everything she had. Moving as fast as she could, she had gone from one place to the other and delivered a large blow, but not the decisive blow she needed.

Her body was on the verge of collapsing, her mind close to shutting down and being taken over, but it wasn't her that had stopped drawing the energy from the weapon, it was the weapon itself.

The darkness from her eyes was starting to disappear, but the effects on her body remained as Pine stood there smiling.

'I am sorry, I promised that I would protect you, I do not wish to be the reason for your death.' The sword said.

Layla tried to move her body away, but it was a strange feeling that had overcome her. It almost felt numb, not her own. It wasn't in any drastic type of pain but she was unable to move.

'Do you think this is any better!' Layla said in her mind. 'Now, we won't be able to do anything, and he will kill me on the spot. At least, if you took control of my body, used my life in some way, we could have done something to it.'

The sword didn't reply, because it didn't feel the same way. Who knew what could happen.

A new rise in energy was surging through Pine as his spike from the top of his head had been cut off. Rather than anger, he was taking in this energy. When was the last time he had been injured this much?

It would be a long time before he would get to this point and ever experience this strength again. Looking at the situation, he could feel the strange energy inside Layla fade away. Russ was too far away to do anything, and he wouldn't let this opportunity slip through his fingers.

Moving his hand, he went to grab Layla by the throat. He had picked her up and immediately squeezed his fingers as tight as he could, crushing all the bones in her neck and killing her on the spot.

"What is this?" Pine said, looking annoyed at what was in his hand.

It was a lifeless body, but it wasn't Layla's.

His hands had felt like he was grabbing someone, but at the last moment, it wasn't Layla. Two Penswi came in, one diving in front of Pine's hand, the other grabbing Layla and attempting to get her out of there.

Everything happened so fast, including Pine's action. That the Penswi that had been taken instead of Layla was already dead.

"May you rest in peace, sister. Your sacrifice is for the sake of everyone's future," the Penswi that had grabbed Layla said.

"Get her out of here, she's just a distraction!" Russ said. He went forward standing in front of them.

He had the legs of the Penswi, the arms of the Dalki, and at the same time the shadow power hovering above him. Using all three like so would take up a lot of MC cells, but not as much as summoning people to help.

The problem with the summoning as well, was the fact it would be pointless against Pine, who could just kill them in one hit.

It was demonstrated right in front of Russ' eyes. When walking forward two Amra came out to try to attack Pine. He had simply moved his hand like a slap, hitting both of their heads, knocking them clean off and onto the ground, splattering.

They never stood a chance against someone of this level, and Russ had to admit the scene made him somewhat nervous.

'He's bleeding quite a bit, and the wounds from the sword aren't healing, it can't take too much more to defeat him, can it?' Russ thought, trying to give himself confidence.

Meanwhile, behind him, the Penswi was attempting to run somewhere safe, but moving a few steps and a bolt of lightning struck near his foot. Flames came toward him as well, but water came out blocking it.

Soon, there was a mini fight brewing between the rescue team of Layla and other attackers. They were close to the edge of the market square. The Alliance was fighting against the Dalki and humans. One side doing everything they could to get rid of Layla, while the other trying to save her.

Russ, seeing the injured Pine, started to run around him at a great speed. He didn't attack straight away, and instead was running circles around him. Although Pine was quicker, when the Penswi had managed to save Layla, he realised that he was still faster, like so.

"I see what you're planning on doing, but I'm telling you now, it won't work." Pine said.

There was a glow around Pine's hands, the same as when he would expand energy outside of it, firing out his blasts. This time, the glow around his hands started to fade and began to trickle up his forearm.

A mystic variation of colours could be seen, climbing up and all over Pine's skin, and it soon had spread to the entire body. Now, all of Pine's skin was lit up, sparkling like glitter but on the inside of his skin in and out.

"I can't hesitate. I just have to go in!" Russ shouted, rushing in and keeping the shadow close to him for defense if need be.

An opening could be seen, but it wasn't at Pine's head; it was at his chest. With the speed of the Penswi and strength of the Dalki, Russ threw out his fist and hit the left pectoral. A shockwave was sent out through Pine's body. It hit a few of the buildings behind and broke the foundation as they started to tumble to the ground.

However, Pine's body hadn't moved from his position, and from the look on his face, the punch hadn't hurt him at all. Russ went to escape and move his shadow, but before he could, Pine grabbed his arms.

"I noticed something. You have some type of copy ability, but it seems like you can only copy what you have seen before or understand. So all I need to do is kill you before you can understand what's happening to me right now!"

The shadow had moved to cover Russ' head and heart, but it was slower to move into other areas. Pine threw out a punch hitting him right in the centre of the stomach, and his body was sent flying back.

Russ' insides felt like they wanted to shoot out from his mouth, but instead blood just came out. While flying through the air, he was in so much pain, not quite understanding what was going on, that his body was changing, transforming into anything, and anyone's memories he could enter.

His body shifted several times, and he had crashed into Layla of all people. The two of them continued going through the air, through the fighting that was going on, until they crashed into another building.

Russ was now laying on a bed of rubble, in extreme pain. He was back in his normal body, not having transformed into anything at all.

'That's strange, I still have MC cell's to use... not that I could win this fight anyway. But why did my body change back?'

Still lying there, Russ titled his head to look at his chest. He could see Layla on the floor, laid flat, what was more shocking though, was the sword on his chest. It was the black sword that Layla would always use.

'It's this thing, is it blocking out my powers? It has to be, if that's the case, then it would be useless in my hands.' All thought of using the sword went out of Russ's head, he picked it up and was about to throw it to the side.

'Wait!' the sword shouted. 'I think... I have a chance, we can win this fight. I think with mine and your power we can win this fight.'

Chapter 2239.2: Deadly combination (Part 2)

When Pine had descended with his group of five Spike Dalki by his side, he believed that they would easily complete the task, just like they had done multiple times before.

There were occasions where he had been called to fight when there were more troubling members, but each of them had been dealt with, and with relative ease.

One of the main reasons for this is because of the power that had been given to Pine. He could absorb different forms of energy into his body. Until today, he thought he could absorb all forms of energy, including that of Qi.

Because even if an opponent did fire out Qi, he could absorb it and take it in as power. There was a limit as the location was on the palm of his hands, but still, it was a powerful ability.

He could essentially block nearly all types of abilities, convert it into energy, and then use the power they had just expended out of them against them. It was why, when his own skill was used against him in an unexpected fashion, he had been hurt by it as well.

Today though, the task was not an easy one. He found someone who could block his attacks, energy he was unable to absorb, and an opponent that was able to change up its fighting style and think on its feet quite literally.

He never expected to be pushed to the point where he would have to use his ability in another way. Right now, the energy he had absorbed from the attack that Russ had reflected back at him was running through his body.

His ability could be used in this way as well, powering up his muscles, his strength, and all aspects of his body. Using the power in this way, it would eventually wear out without a constant upgrade in power, but it wasn't as if Pine was weak without this power. It was just making him even stronger.

With this, even if someone could copy his powers, it didn't matter. Because if he was going up against himself, then the boost in power would be from those around them. Right now, Pine, the Dalki, and humans had a lot more allies, even if some of them were slightly confused about which side they should pick in this fight.

In the distance, around fifty metres away, Russ was lying in the rubble. He could see Layla's unmoving body, although she wasn't moving by herself before, so he wasn't worried about her being dead. He was more concerned that if they didn't do anything to Pine, they would be dead soon.

Just when he thought they were all out of options, he heard a voice that he hadn't heard this entire time before. It was speaking directly into his mind.

"What is this?" Russ thought. "Is the sound coming from the sword? Is it possible that it's a special type of Demon tier weapon?"

Russ had seen the sword and its powers, but he thought it was just another Demon tier weapon with a strong effect.

'Are you some type of spirit in the sword? Wait, this is making sense now. No wonder Layla was badly hurt. The power she was using wasn't her power, and now it makes sense why I was unable to see this power in her memories and copy it as well.'

Russ was more amazed with his own conclusion than the fact that a sword was speaking to him, but he needed to focus and be clear on the decision.

'Sword, you're saying that the two of us can fight him together. What do you even mean by that?' Russ asked. 'You're not suggesting doing the same thing to me as you did to her. I saw what state she was in. I think we're more likely to die if that were to happen.'

'That wouldn't work with you,' the sword replied almost immediately. 'Remember what I said, the two of us can work together. In the first place, you can talk to me because you are holding me, but I'm sure you have noticed that you are no longer able to use your powers.'

'Believe it or not, there aren't many that can handle using me, and Layla is a special one, a one in a million that can handle my power to any type of degree.'

The comments from the sword were quite surprising to Russ, and he wasn't sure if the sword was just being nice, because this certainly wasn't a way to ask for help.

'If you were to use the sword, then it would be the same as if anyone else picked me up, it would make no difference.'

"I see," Russ said, standing up from the rubble. Dirt fell off his clothes and he looked at the opponent in front of him, seeing if there was anything he could do. Since Layla was on the floor, he knew in his mind he was unable to run away.

"This means that you're useless in my hands!" Russ went to throw the sword to the side, but once again the sword screamed to stop him.

"WAIIT!!!!" The sword shouted. "Don't you have patience?"

"Does it look like I have time to have patience!" Russ replied back.

Many Penswi, Amra, and Mermerials had come onto the battlefield. They had turned their attention to Pine and were trying to stop him, but each of them lasted less than a second, getting hit by Pine's hands. It almost looked like even those that

were attacking him would get injured more themselves than doing damage, like he had obtained some type of magical star.

"I have been evaluating your powers. I don't have time to explain my backstory, but is it possible that you can copy powers from anyone that is in this area?" The sword asked.

"I mean, that's not quite how it works, but let's say I can," Russ replied.

"Then, does that include myself? Would you be able to get powers from me? If there was some way, a way that you could transform into my former self and wield the blade in your hands, then I can guarantee that we can get rid of him!"

The power of the sword did certainly seem strong, and the fact that the two of them were conversing meant that there would be something there. Russ hadn't even thought about looking into the sword because it was just simply a sword.

Looking in front of the broken wall, he could see that Pine had set off, pushing from his feet. Abilities and Amra stood in his way, but they all just bounced off his body, nothing was slowing him down.

"Can the original owner, the original person, or whatever from the sword defeat that thing? If this goes wrong, it will be the last use of my MC cells... but what else can I do!"

Russ chucked the sword on the ground. While using the sword, it would block out his powers. There was a chance his powers also wouldn't work on the sword. However, he was in. He was able to access its memories while not touching it.

Pine had entered the building, heading straight for the two of them, ready to finish them off. The Blades were in the middle of their fight. Those watching around all reached out, as if this would help in some way to stop Pine, but it did nothing.

"Got you!" Pine said with a smile, but the smile soon faded from his face.

From the outside of the building, a large strike of black energy was emitted from the building. It was so large that it could be seen from any part of the city and even struck the clouds above, splitting them in half.

The next moment, Pine was seen flying through the air, landing back in the centre of the square with a deep cut across his chest, blood pouring onto the floor on both sides.

Footsteps were slowly seen as a figure walked out from the building. No one had any idea who this was, who the person was holding onto the black sword.

"I am the one that once went against Immortui. All of you are nothing to me."

Chapter 2240: The Black Swordsman

Entering the market square where intense fighting was going off still in all locations, there was what looked like a new person who had entered the battlefield. Those watching from behind buildings and on top of rooftops were left confused.

For they had seen the two that had been hit and fell into the building, but now a different man had come out, and was holding onto the black sword that Layla once used.

The man had long black hair that was thick and went all the way down, almost scraping the ground. It was freely moving about in the air. Meanwhile, there was what looked like a type of cloak on his body.

Yet, the cloak itself didn't look to be made of clothing, and instead was made of the same black energy that was surrounding the sword. It covered his entire arms and his pectorals but revealed a clear solid midsection.

It was hard to say if what they were looking at was a human or not, and the strangest thing was, no energy could be felt from this person whatsoever. Although looking at the figure, he looked powerful and they physically could see the aura.

Unlike other powers, they were unable to feel the pressure coming off it, and in a sense that was a very frightening thing for all of them looking at this person.

'It worked.' Russ said. 'It actually worked. Going into the memories of the sword, I was able to find an image of what the person originally looked like. I was worried though because I had no sense of what his powers could do, and if holding onto the sword would break the form, but I'm holding onto the sword just fine.'

'That's because you are what I once was.' The sword stated. 'Why would my own powers affect me? With your power like this, right now, I believe you are the only person who can use me to my full potential!'

The worrying thing was, for how long? Russ had the option of summoning the Black Swordsman, but doing so he used more MC cells, which was why he had decided to change his body into this form.

'I doubt that the hit from before would have killed him, we still have more work to do.' Russ said.

'Yes... just let the power of the sword consume you, let me take charge of the body for a bit, and I promise you, we will win this.'

Russ hesitated for a moment before, looking at the black sword in his hands. He felt a strange connection with it, as if their powers were resonating with each other. Yet the image of Layla kept appearing in his head, he couldn't feel anything now, but

what side effect could it have? He took a deep breath and decided to trust the sword.

"As long as you don't consume me like you did to Layla," Russ said, gripping the sword tightly.

'I promise,' the sword replied in his mind.

With newfound determination, Russ stood up, his body shrouded in a black aura. The energy radiating from him was unlike anything he had experienced before. This feeling of nothingness. He felt invigorated, powerful, and even a bit sinister. He glanced at his reflection in a broken piece of glass and barely recognized himself. His features were dark and menacing, but he liked it, this suited him well, more so than any of the others he took on.

Pine slowly got up from the ground. The wound was still spilling blood, yet he was able to stand up strong. Standing in the middle of the battlefield, he looked at Russ with a mix of surprise and amusement. "Give me more power!" Pine shouted, raising his hands.

As usual, all abilities from one side of the city were shot at Pine. The energy, rather than using it outward, started to spread around his body and his skin was glowing even more than before.

Russ didn't waste any time, rushing toward Pine with his sword held high. The black aura surrounding the blade seemed to grow stronger, as if feeding off Russ' determination. The sword was swung down from above, while Pine had finished charging up the energy and swung both of his hands together to meet the sword. As they clashed, their blows were powerful and precise, each strike leaving a trail of black energy in its wake.

Every time the sword touched the skin of Pine, it would cut through leaving deeper cuts, but this was also only making Pine himself feel stronger.

'I should be getting stronger, the power in me should be faster... so why... why does it feel like everything I do is useless against this person!' Pine thought.

Pine, already injured and bleeding, was struggling to keep up with Russ' newfound strength and agility. Russ' sword seemed to have a life of its own, deflecting and blocking Pine's attacks with ease. At times the side of the sword would be used to block attacks rather than the sharp edge. Yet, the power would disappear from Pine's hands when landing on the sword.

The two combatants were locked in a fierce battle, their powers colliding with a force that shook the very ground beneath them. Around them, the fighting between the rescue team and the attackers continued, but all eyes were on Russ and Pine. They were unable to concentrate on their own fight, and once in a while they were getting knocked back by the shockwaves of the fight taking place in the centre.

They continued to clash and as the battle raged on, it became clear that Russ had the upper hand. His sword, imbued with the mysterious black energy, seemed to be the key to defeating Pine. It practically made his ability useless, and with the current way Russ was, he was one of the most skilled swordsmen in existence right now, it was only a matter of time.

'Keep striking, hurry it up, I can feel my MC cells, there about to give. This guy is so resilient we have to finish him off!' Russ shouted.

'Don't worry, I was just guaranteeing our victory.' The sword replied.

With each successful strike, Pine's strength seemed to wane, his injuries taking their toll on his once indomitable power.

In a desperate attempt to turn the tide of battle, Pine gathered all his remaining strength and launched a powerful attack aimed at Russ' heart. But Russ was ready, and with a swift movement of his sword, he blocked Pine's attack, the black aura absorbing the force of the blow.

The black aura swirled out from the sword, from where it was hit in a circle, completely defusing the hit. Even a shockwave hadn't been produced from this hit.

Pine was gritting his teeth, his hand still stretched out, blood had filled his mouth and was pouring out from the sides, he had been holding in for a while.

With Pine momentarily stunned, Russ saw his chance. He leaped into the air, his sword glowing with an intense black light. He brought the sword down on Pine, striking him with a devastating blow that sent shockwaves rippling through the battlefield.

As Pine's body crumpled to the ground, defeated and battered and his head sliced off, rolling on the floor. Russ stood victorious. He looked at the black sword in his hands, now quiet and still, its energy receding, and his body was turning back to what it once was. He knew that he had taken a risk in trusting the sword, but it had paid off.

His hair was reverting back to what it once was, and just as the sword promised, there seemed to be no side effects. Almost instantly he dropped the sword onto the ground.

'The two of us made a good team.'

During the fight, Layla had managed to somewhat recover, she propped herself against a wall in the building and she had seen the form Russ was able to take on.

'The sword... I never once even took out the full potential of its power. Would I ever be able to withstand something like that, to use it as Russ did, is that possible?' Layla thought.

Russ looked around at the destruction and chaos that the battle had wrought, knowing that there would be a long road ahead for them all. The fact was, there were still a few finishing up their fights, the Blades, the two Mermerial sisters, and Jake had just defeated his Five spike as well.

This was a big victory for them all.

"Arghhh!" Russ shouted drained as he looked up, only to see a ship approaching them all.

Little did they all know, the worst was arriving.

Chapter 2241: Controlling the Dalki

The situation for the entire alliance was looking grim as reports had been sent back to the Mermerial Elders as well as the Penswi King and Queen. All of the races knew that they were at war with a frightening enemy.

Many had sent off their loved ones knowing there was a chance that they might never see them again, but they did so proudly.

The Alliance army was concentrated among three planets, with Wince taking charge as a whole. However, so far, there was next to no life on one planet, with Earth as the victors.

On another, the Dalki and humans were proving too much and had pushed all the forces back to one place. It felt like it was only a matter of time until they lost another planet as well.

Then there was the planet which had the most chaos surrounding it, a push back and forth, a fight that could have either side winning. Because of the news so far, the Penswi and the Mermerials were worried.

This fear also went on to Stark, who was in the room looking at Sil lying there on the bed. He had been walking back and forth, trying to see if there were any signs of him waking up at all.

Stark had even gone to extreme measures, he pulled both of Sil's eyelids open, he grabbed two large metal objects and clanged them together, but he still remained unmoving.

"Why won't you wake up? Do you even know how many people are relying on you right now?" Stark asked.

He had been talking to Sil a few times, updating him on the situation. Maybe there was a chance he could hear everything he was saying, and just maybe it would inject some type of fighting spirit that would wake him up.

In the end, though, there were no signs at all. Sil was still breathing, and his heart was still beating, so he felt like he should at least be thankful for that. The problem was just sitting there, the time passing by with so many thoughts in his head, it was killing Stark.

Especially with his mind that allowed him to process information quicker, just like with movement and so on, it meant he could come up with imagery of multiple disastrous situations in his head.

"Arghh!" Stark said, grabbing the sides of his head. He was about to hit the wall out of frustration but stopped as his ears picked up something, a thud that could be heard slightly off in the distance.

Looking out from the building window, Stark could see the air slightly distorted by heat. It was concentrated in one area, and when one saw this, it usually meant a ship had landed.

"Stay here," Stark said, smiling to himself because he knew that Sil could do nothing but stay in one place.

Leaving the building, Stark thought it was important he checked out what was happening. The planet was empty the last time he checked. There was also still a ship for them to use and transport to another planet. But if another force or attackers had been sent and destroyed their ship, it would be bad news.

Stark would run on the ground in short blasts, taking cover behind buildings and large rocks that were just randomly placed on the street. The Amra planets were just set up this way. He wouldn't complain as it was handy for him in this type of situation.

He continued to go forward until he eventually could hear the sound of others. He quickly rushed out to one of the main streets and hid behind a wall that was around one metre high, bending down.

"The enemy, they returned, but why would they bother coming back to somewhere like here?" Stark thought.

He could see a group of ten, and it was a mixture of humans along with Dalki. The humans that were with them, although wearing beast gear for safety, didn't exactly look like fighters and had quite a few objects on them that didn't look like weapons either.

In fact, the four Dalki seemed to be more so escorting the group of people, and there were two fighters on top of that, while the rest were using the strange devices.

'Are they researchers?' Stark wondered. 'So why have they come here?'

Listening in, he would stay close while gathering information.

"These four armed aliens are a little bit heavy, do you mind moving them for me?" one of the researchers asked, looking at the Dalki.

The Dalki looked the human up and down, and almost looked like he hesitated. Stark wasn't the only one who noticed this, as one of the other guards who was human walked forward.

"Listen to the researcher, you know that there are Jack's orders, or do you want me to inform him that you aren't capable of following orders?" the human asked.

With no complaints, the Dalki continued and lifted up the Amra, placing him in front of the scientist, who used the strange devices to examine the body. They weren't just doing this for the Amra, but with the Mermerials and the Penswi as well.

"Well, it's quite clear from what we have so far that these are three distinct races. I doubt they are even from the same sector here," one of the researchers stated.

"I would agree, it makes you wonder how these three races even came together in the first place. The stone-like creatures who seem to be the inhabitants of these planets don't seem to have advanced enough technology to communicate or travel outward."

"It isn't our job to figure out why," another researcher added. "It's our job to figure out where they came from. If they aren't from this planet, then no doubt they will become the next target, as they were most likely working with these guys to summon demons."

Judging from their conversation, it was quite clear that the Penswi and Mermerials had been added to Earth's hit list, but they were going to be added anyway. There was no need for Stark to get involved though, hopefully, after they were done with their research, they would leave the planet.

Just as Stark was about to leave, though, he could hear the human guards having a conversation that interested him quite a bit.

"Hey man, aren't you scared about talking to the Dalki like that? I mean, these guys are strong, and if you get on their bad side, I don't think they would be scared to take us out." The man bumped his friend, looking nervous, and was looking around to see if the Dalki were listening.

"The Dalki, you don't have to worry about them. If you just mention Jack's name, then they'll do what they're told. You know they listen to everything he says." The man replied back confidently.

"Still, the Dalki used to be the enemy of mankind. Do you really think they can just follow another human like so? I mean, even if he's done a lot for them, why would they listen to him so much that they wouldn't even hurt us?" The other replied back.

This time, the other man looked around to see if the Dalki were listening in.

"Alright, this is just a rumour, so take what I say with a pinch of salt. But if it wasn't true, then I think I would have been flattened by now, just like you said." The man spoke.

"You know how all of the Dalki have powers now, right? This is all because of Jack himself. He had to give power to each and every one of them, and that includes the two big guys, Pine and H.

"The Dalki that don't have powers follow these two, but the two of them follow Jack, as well as the other strong Dalki, all because of his soul weapon. Apparently, Jack has the power to take away any ability he has given, with his soul weapon.

"These Dalki care about strength more than anything, and their new powers are what allows them to top one another. So a mention of taking a power away, and these guys will do anything you say."

Stark had heard every word, and in his head, he was processing the information at a quick rate.

'Can't this change the whole outcome of the war? This whole time, we were going after Sil to revert the memories, but without the machine, he can't do that in mass, but if we were to go after Jack. Can't we force him to take all the powers away from the Dalki?' Stark thought.

Chapter 2242: Overstaying

Stark had overstayed his welcome by the wall, he had slowly been moving along with the rest of them to see if there was anything else he could hear or find out, since the information he had received so far wasn't too bad.

At the same time he didn't want to stay away for too long from Sil.

'Could you imagine, the moment I decide to go out, that guy finally wakes up, and I'm sure if he did, he would be really confused.' Stark thought.

Turning around, he was looking at his path, he just needed to run through an alleyway and take a right in one blast and he would be fine. That was until a shadow from above was cast over him.

"What's this, I thought I could smell something fresh." The Dalki said. "It looks like one of them is still alive on this planet after all. This will make our job a lot easier."

Stark didn't say anything, he didn't think of a witty response or any of the sort, and had just decided to run. He zapped through the alleyway and took a left turn and now he was down another street.

'That should be okay right? After seeing my speed, and seeing how I can out run them. They won't bother to chase after me.' Stark thought.

A moment later, crashing through the wall of one of the houses, was the Dalki. Its eyes were focused, its tongue was hanging out from its mouth. With its feet it skidded across the floor, and had its eyes locked on.

'This Dalki is a three spike, I could probably take it on my own. The armour I'm wearing does give me extra strength after all, but there were four Dalki, and three human fighters as well. I'm not sure if I could take out one quick enough before the others arrive and I don't know their abilities.'

With all of these thoughts running through his head, seeing the Dalki leap toward him, Stark decided to run.

He ran and ran, continuing to go through the city. Everything was passing him like a blur, and before he knew it, he had reached the very edge where the wall was.

"Alright, this should do. I don't think they will have any idea where I am right now?" Stark said out loud and waited a few moments.

He was worried any second now, Dalki were going to come popping out from the houses nearby, but that never happened.

'Maybe I should just check something out.'

Stark picked one of the destroyed houses, there weren't many left that were in good condition, so he just picked one that gave him the best view. Jumping, climbing, and using his hands, everything was much easier with the armour Quinn had gifted him,

Originally he thought it was something just for speed but he could tell now it was something a lot more than that. After reaching the top of the broken building, he started to look off in the distance at the city.

"I guess, I was worried for no reason."

The moment Stark finished saying those words a big explosion of dust was seen flying in the air, and one of the standing buildings started to tumble down.

"Now, what are the odds that the Dalki chasing after me did that, and is still after me?"

It was a few miles out from where Stark was, so it would be a while until they found him, and with how much noise they were making, it was easy for him to just move to another section of the city if need be.

But, the random destruction around the city was continuing, with whatever was left of buildings was tumbling to the ground, and it almost looked like there were no signs of stopping.

'Is that their tactic, to just go ahead and destroy everything that I might be hiding in or behind. These guys don't really have a brain do they?' Stark thought, but there was a large concern on his mind.

They were adamant on finding him, and if they continued like this, it would also mean they would eventually break the building that Sil was in as well.

'This is more trouble than I originally thought.'

Stark had no choice but to run into the heart of where the destruction was taking place. Just as it didn't take him long to run away, it didn't take him long to reach them either.

Not getting too close and hiding behind one of the large rocks in the street this time, Stark could see all four of the Dalki, crushing building after building with their bare fists. The humans would then search the place after, while the researchers were left in the back.

'Those researchers don't look like they'll be trouble, the difficult variables are the humans, so it might be best to get rid of them first.'

Stark waited for the right moment, and it didn't take long for it to come. The humans were confident that with their strength they could take on one Penswi. So they had split up as they went to search one of the destroyed houses.

Stark just had to pick a target, and then when it had entered one of the rooms, blocked and away from the others, he ran as fast as he could. His hand was pointed and thrusted right through the human's head.

He was dead in an instant, and was unable to even use his powers.

'In a fight to the death where you are after my life, this is one of the only outcomes.'

Stark placed his hand over the human eyes, it was a more peaceful appearance, then dragging the body on the floor he hid it between two buildings and placed quite a bit of rubble over it.

"I didn't see anything inside here."

"Not for me either." The other human replied.

"Don't you think Phil is taking a long time?"

"Yeah maybe we should check it out."

The two of them walked into the building where their friend Phil was. They looked around carefully and that's when they could see blood on the ground.

"Look at th-" One of the men was pointing at the floor, before he met the same fate as his friend Phil, moving from one, Stark went right to the other, and stabbed him in the back of the head, killing both of them quickly.

"There are many Penswi that have died in this war, and I still feel I have yet to do my part and avenge them, but at least this will be a start."

With the unknown variables out of the way, it was now time for the four Dalki, but he still wasn't confident he could beat all of them. Lifting one of the dead human's bodies on his back, Stark went to walk out.

"Hey!" He shouted.

The Dalki that were eying up their next building to destroy turned around when they could see their target, but he had something strange on his back. Stark threw it on the floor.

"I've already dealt with three of you, and the same thing will happen to all of you." Stark taunted them, and in doing so, all four of the Dalki acted rather than thinking. They ran straight for Stark.

Seeing this, Stark ran ahead avoiding a fight, but he didn't run at his full potential. He wanted the Dalki to see him, just like when running away from H. The Dalki continued to follow, ignoring everything in their way as they crashed through rocks, houses, and rubble.

'This should be far enough.' Stark thought, knowing that the wall of the edge was soon coming up. Now he ran full speed.

He soon got out of all of their sight, but instead of running straight or backwards, he ran to the right, all the way round, until he had come back to the point at where he needed to be, he was back at where Sil was.

"It should be a while before they get to here, that should buy me some time." Stark said, as he entered the building and started to walk up. He thought about whether he should continue to try and fight the others, or maybe it would be a better idea to move Sil.

When reaching the top of the stairs though, his footsteps stopped dead still, because he could see a certain someone staring out of the window.

"You're... finally awake."

Chapter 2243.1: Sil Remember? (Part 1)

Stark was standing right by the entrance, staring at the person standing up. His figure was frail; he didn't have much muscle on his body, while his hair had grown long and was slightly ragged.

They had been waiting for this person to wake up for a long time... a being that was said to have the power to stop the war. Of course, Stark trusted Quinn and his friends, which was why he did everything he could to save this person, but his appearance made him wonder, could he still be that person?

His captors had barely kept him alive from the looks of things, making him weak on purpose. From the looks of things, it was a surprise he was even standing, and a big question loomed over Stark's head: did he still have his memories? Was he a friend or foe?

Sil stopped looking out of the window and turned around, facing the purple man. His eyes didn't show much sign of life as he looked him up and down.

"That armour... why do you have that armour?" Sil asked, then started to look at the surroundings of the room. It was clear that he hadn't been awake for long, which was a good thing. Otherwise, there was a good chance that Stark would have lost him.

"Wait, there are more important things. Where are we? What planet are we on, and how did I even escape that place?" Sil asked.

Stark was thinking about a good place to start their conversation, but he was happy that the human didn't consider him an enemy at first sight.

"I know you must have a lot of questions, but the others, they told me to make sure of one thing before I said anything to you. Do you know a person called Quinn Talen?" Stark asked.

As Sil went to open his mouth, a large explosion went off in the background, and several buildings started to crumble. It didn't seem to be too far away either, around half a mile away.

"They still haven't given up!" Stark furrowed his eyebrows. "If they continue forward, they're going to find the ship. I'm sorry, but I need to do something first. Please stay here. I know you don't have your answers, but I promise you one thing... I am on your side. I... no, we have been waiting for you to wake up."

Stark ran off in a blink, and turning his head around, Sil could see him from outside of the window. He also noticed several other dead bodies that looked similar to the purple man, as well as other alien races.

'This place, I've been here before, but why would I be here? Just what is happening?'

The four Dalki were using their strength to destroy building after building with a single hit. They didn't care about what they were doing, and the researchers were starting to get a little concerned about what was happening.

"Is this really necessary?" one of them asked, his voice shaky. Unlike the guards who had perished, they hadn't heard the rumour, nor had any idea why the Dalki were working for Jack and helping them.

During their time observing the Dalki, they felt more like hungry, power-hungry beasts rather than humans that could be rationalised with, which was why they approached them in a gentle manner.

"There might be others that are still alive in the area or hanging by a thread that we can get our answers from. Destroying everything like this might not benefit us at all."

The Dalki, who had originally chased Stark, who had a longer tongue than the others, turned around. They had all stopped destroying things for a second.

"For a researcher, you're certainly not using your brains," one of the Dalki replied. "For as fast as that purple man was, when did he slow down? And on top of that, why hasn't he left this city if he's scared for his life?"

"The answer is simple. He's trying to protect something. He was luring us away! Maybe he's gathered a whole group of them already. Just shut up and don't complain. We are all doing the same job."

When the Dalki turned around, a large smile appeared on his face because it looked like his plan had worked. Stark was standing in front of them all.

"I understand now, all of you won't give up until you find me. Little did you guys know, I was the one that was giving you a chance," Stark said, walking forward.

The Dalki welcomed the challenge and was excited that this person would face up to him. When he was in range, he kicked off his back foot, going forward with a punch. With Stark's amazing speed, it was simple to dodge, and his sharp hands went to rip through his body.

The idea was to penetrate the Dalki, but instead, the drill-like claw that Stark was using was almost pushed back by the hard muscles and skin. In the end, it made a shallow cut against the Dalki's ribs.

"B*stard!" the Dalki shouted as he swung his arm back but hit nothing but the air. Once again, Stark used his hands to create cut after cut.

"The strength the armour is giving me, and my speed allows me to create quite a powerful hit. Yet against some of these Dalki, it's still difficult!" Stark thought.

Out of anger, Stark shoved his hands, and this time, they penetrated his back going in around three inches. With his hands rapidly moving, he had pierced the Dalki six times before it could react.

Stark jumped backward, and when he did, there was another Dalki ready to grab him. It swung both of its arms shut but was still unable to do anything as Stark moved again. The remaining two went to attack, but Stark avoided both of them as well, and he now was looking at four angry faces toward him.

"I have the title as the fastest in the universe," Stark stopped himself there as he remembered his recent loss. "I have the title of the fastest Penswi. If I allowed you guys to lay a finger on me, then I would never be able to live up to that name."

Stark was delaying at the moment, but he didn't really have a plan. Would he have to try and defeat four Dalki on his own? How could he do that when he was barely able to injure them?

"Are you guys going to do anything?" the Dalki shouted, trying to get the researchers to act.

Little did he know, they were already acting. Several of them had their hands on the ground, and looking at the floor, Stark could feel something different underneath his feet. His body was sinking in.

When looking down, the ground beneath him had almost turned into a paste-like mud. He lifted his feet, which he could do, but trying to move them forward was impossible. He was being dragged down and just sucked into the floor more.

The researchers had been selected for this task for a reason. Knowing that the traits of one of the alien races were speed and the fact that they would have to trap subjects, they had prepared for this.

"Nowhere to run now. I'm going to enjoy my time with you," the Dalki licked his face with his large tongue.

Stark was struggling to get out at first, before the Dalki reached him, but then suddenly stopped as he could see someone out on the field.

'When did he get here?' Stark thought.

The Dalki noticed that the purple man's gaze was not on him, but what was focused behind him.

"What are you looking at?" The Dalki turned his head, and could see a man in white robes, almost frail and sick looking, like a hospital patient.

The frail man's arms started to light up with lighting, spiralling around both of his arms, then four of his finger tips soon started to glow bright blue, almost turning into a white light.

"That man, I need to speak to him, so get out of my way." Sil said.

Four sparks came out from his finger, producing lightning bolts. With it, a thunderous bang erupted in the area. The researchers' ears exploded with blood, falling to the floor, and as for the Dalki, each of them had a large hole in their chest, where the lightning had struck, and they soon fell to the ground dead.

Chapter 2244.2: Sil Remember (Part 2)

When the researchers were given the task to come to the planet that was meant to have next to no life on it, they thought it was an easy task. The Dalki, as well as the Travellers that were quite high up in terms of ability level and beast gear, were there just in case they ran into any trouble.

Maybe a few that were still alive that could cause some trouble. Never had they expected for this to happen. The attack used by the frail man was so powerful and had made such a devastating noise that it had broken their eardrums.

They could hardly hear anything, apart from a dull ring, and as that faded, everything was muddled. Blood was dripping down the side of their heads, and even their brains felt like they were somewhat in pain.

Huddled over, they were grabbing their head and ears, rolling back and forth. Usually, beast gear or Qi would give one enough energy to protect themselves from the sound of an attack like this, but they had none of that, which was why they had been so affected by the attack.

The mud around Stark's feet was starting to harden slightly. He was no longer sinking into the ground, but it would still be hard for him to get out on his own. Still, he stood there stunned once again, staring at this person.

'So this is Sil... this is the person that everyone has been waiting for. What is this power?' Stark thought.

In less than a second, Sil had taken out four Dalki just like that. The attack was so fast that even Stark felt like there was a chance that he wouldn't be able to escape it.

'I understand now why they said this person was our hope. Even without him using the machine, with his power alone he has enough strength to turn the tide of this war and save us.'

Sil had opened up his special soul weapon book and selected a few abilities. After that, he walked over to where Stark was and placed his hand on the ground. The mud substance underneath his feet started to move, and Stark was shot right up. When he landed, the ground was hardened again and was back to normal.

The things he was seeing, the powers he was using, it was amazing for Stark even now. He had heard what Sil could do from the others, but seeing one person use a variety of abilities, and each one so skillfully, was still an amazing thing for him to see.

"We need to make sure these researchers don't talk," Sil said, placing his hands on the ground again.

Soon, a whirlpool of mud appeared underneath all of their bodies. They were getting swept in until their whole bodies sunk underground, and only their heads could be seen. After that, the mud around them started to harden.

Sil could easily kill them, but he felt that doing so would leave a bad taste in his mouth. After all, they didn't truly know what they were doing.

"To answer your question from before, I know Quinn. I know him very well, in fact, enough to know that what you are wearing right now used to belong to him," Sil answered.

This rise of energy started to overcome Stark. He didn't know what overcame him, but he fell to his knees right there and then. Without realising it, he had built all of this tension in his head, and after seeing his powers, he was waiting for those words.

"There is a lot... a lot I need to tell you," Stark said.

Stark started with Quinn's story, what had happened to him. How everyone forgot his memories. After all, Sil had been trapped, and in doing so was unaware of what happened after he disappeared.

After that, he went on to explain the war that was taking place right now, and how they had managed to save him. He even included details about how the Blades were currently there, and who was on their side fighting for them on another planet.

"Those bastards, they kept toying with me!" Sil gathered Qi in his body, which helped him bring strength in his fist since his natural muscles had been vastly depleted.

Sil remembered some things very well after he was brought in by H. He knew that Jack was behind everything because there were a few times where they had met in that special room.

During the fight with H, Jack was curious about Sil's powers, and after trapping him, and draining him of his energy until he was not a threat anymore, he brought in those with powers that could be used against him, powers that would often be useless in battle.

One, a rare ability that worked similar to that of the vampire influence skill, but since it was an ability, it was far more effective. It had conditions, such as only working a few times on one person, but with it, Jack had managed to get the fact of how Sil was able to use so many powers, and it was due to his Soul Weapon, the book.

This information, however, had actually caused Jack to fear Sil somewhat. Who knew how many abilities he had? With his power, there was a chance that he could maybe reverse the memory change ability.

Even if he didn't, if he was let free, with his future sight, he would be able to see things that didn't make sense, or maybe even rewind time to the point where the ability didn't work on him.

Jack had considered Sil too dangerous to be used in a way he was using powers, which was why he was locked up the way he had been. It also scared Jack to the point where he didn't wish to take Sil's power, too worried that maybe his power would be taken as well.

After all, would Sil still have a Soul Weapon? If that was the case, then how would it work? Either way, it wasn't something Jack wanted to test.

However, through his weakened state, other ability users could force Sil to do their bidding. To control his mind in other ways whenever they needed to use him, and Sil remembered everything he did.

"I need to pay them all back." Sil gritted his teeth. "I will get all of them, including H for causing all of this!"

"Then we should hurry quickly, who knows what is happening to the others, I have a ship not too far away!" Stark stated.

Thinking about everything though, Sil once again opened his book up, changing his abilities once more.

"Before that, there is still something that I need to test. We need to see if it works and how to use it."

Stark was unsure what Sil was talking about and just watched him as he walked up to the researchers. One of them had the mud ability anyway, so Sil was sure once they had recovered enough they would be able to break out from this place anyway.

Using their ability was just to keep them here for a bit because he had another use for them. Sil gently placed his hand on top of one of the researchers' heads.

"I've been forced to use the power a few times, but I was in a lot of pain from using it through that machine, but I think I got it," Sil said as he lifted his hand.

"You said to me before, that everyone forgot who Quinn Talen was right?" Sil asked.

"Yeah!" Stark replied back.

"Alright, so tell me, do you know Quinn Talen?" Sil asked.

Both of them looked at the researcher for a while waiting for him to answer, but there was no answer.

"Ah right, I almost forgot." Sil knelt down and placed both of his hands next to the researchers' ears. They started to glow, and his ears started to heal.

"Sorry about that, now let me ask you again, do you know Quinn Talen?" Sil asked.

The researcher looked dazed, confused, and mostly scared.

"Please don't hurt me... please!" the researcher stated.

"Then answer the question!" Sil said, his hands lit up with lightning.

"Yes! Yes! Of course, I know Quinn Talen!"

Chapter 2245: The war over?

On one of the many Amra planets where the fighting was taking place, it had almost completely stopped on one planet. Intense battles between the two forces' very best were going on.

At first, the humans and Dalki were both very confident in their victory. They had already pushed the enemy so far back that they only had to get through the market square and then to the enemy's camp that had been set up to finish them off.

However, help had arrived at the last moment, but even with the help, they knew they had Pine and his team of Five Spike Dalki on their side. Still, they thought victory was in their sights until the Five Spike Dalki started to lose one by one.

Each battle against the Five Spikes had been tough so far. Minny and Galen, with both of their hard work, had finished the Five Spike off. The two of them had come out of the fight mostly unhurt and wished to help the others. By the time their fight was over, though, Layla was on the floor lying in one of the partly broken houses.

In order to protect her and make sure she didn't get hurt, she went with Galen in her shadow to stay by her side while the fight between Russ in his Black Swordsman form and Pine had continued.

Logan and Vicky had managed to defeat the Five Spike, but in doing so, Logan was on his last breath. He was close to death until the humans from the enemy side had intervened. Conflicted on who they were fighting for and why Logan would fight for the other side, they had decided to help him.

Currently, they were on the rooftop of one of the buildings near the square. Those with healing abilities were doing what they could to make sure Logan would make it out there alive, while Vicky was meditating, trying to get her energy back.

Thankfully, due to the tense fight and power that was coming from the battle between Pine, Layla, and Russ, nearly no one was paying them any attention or attempting to go after their lives.

Still, there were intense battles with the other Five Spikes going all over the place. One of them was Jake. He had no trouble going up against the Five Spike. He had yet to be seriously injured, and his combination of mixing powers to create new ones made him versatile and able to do things that the Five Spike couldn't imagine.

The only thing he was having trouble with was the fact that the Dalki he was facing just wasn't dying. In the end, though, stabbing the Dalki with metal spikes through its body, freezing its legs in place, Jake was also able to melt the Dalki's head, killing it completely. He was able to make a molten, lava-like substance by combining his earth ability with a bit of his hardening ability and then melting it down with his flames.

This was something the Dalki was unable to deal with. Just like Vicky, though, Jake had expended a lot of MC cells and moved slightly back to heal a bit. He wished to help the others, but the thing was, they didn't need any help.

The two sisters alone were able to deal with the Dalki they were facing as well. The versatile water blood that Ceril could use allowed them to attack from all sorts of different angles.

Meanwhile, Wince was able to do most of the damage with her Celestial strength, her demon-tier spear, and her water powers. A combination of the two, attacking the right point, made them an incredibly strong duo.

It looked like they would have been able to deal with their Five Spike a bit earlier compared to the others. The only problem was Wince had injuries from before.

Finally, there was the group of Blades. They had already lost a number of their group before Shiro had arrived, and unfortunately, even with Shiro there, they found the Five Spike Dalki difficult to deal with.

Shiro, switching between Vorden and Raten, had done a lot of work against the Five Spike, but they still managed to lose a couple more Blades to the Five Spike before managing to defeat it.

It was almost as if the Dalki knew it was going to lose its life and did its best to take a couple down with them.

With that, all of the Five Spike Dalki that had arrived in the attack had been defeated, and then there was only Pine left. The thing was, the Dalki and the humans watching never expected him to be defeated.

Even while watching the fight, nearly throughout the whole thing, he had the upper hand, but now his head was on the floor, and his body was there as well. Strangely, though, the body started to turn into particles of dust.

'What is this?' Russ thought.

No one dared approach Russ. They had no idea that he was completely spent of his MC cells. In their head, he was just the one that had finished off a single being that could take out their whole army, so they didn't want to approach him for fear that he would do the same.

After the particles of dust started to disappear, a crystal was left in its place. Russ bent over and picked it up. It was long and quite thick as well.

'I've never seen anything like that, and this was inside his body?' Russ thought. 'It doesn't feel the same as those Nest Crystals, but I wonder if I would be able to

absorb it just like the Nest Crystal. If it's even able to give me a fraction of Pine's power, it would be worth it.'

Activating one of his storage rings, the crystal was placed inside. He would keep it for himself. After all, he had earned it.

On top of the rooftop, the colour could be seen returning to Logan's face. He was now breathing in deeper than before. It looked like they had managed to reach him in time.

"It's a good thing we brought some engineers with us to have a look as well," one of them said.

"Yeah, some of the backup circuits were used to help his body function in a certain way. Honestly, it's because of that, he managed to stay alive as well."

Finally, Logan opened his eyes. He could remember what had happened, but the first thing he did was turn his head, and he could see Vicky sitting there meditating. She was ignoring everything around her and didn't even realise that the one she had been worried about this entire time was awake.

'I can see her clothes are wet. She must have been crying quite a bit,' Logan thought.

What was going to happen now, though? Was the war over on these planets? It was clear that many of the humans and even the Dalki no longer had a desire to fight. None of them had jumped in after the death of Pine, nor had continued their fighting.

Perhaps this was a chance for them to split ways from each other and end the battle there.

A sound had soon entered Logan's ears, and everyone else's though. Looking up, they could see a spaceship flying by. It soon hovered just over the market square.

Not getting a good feeling of what was about to come, Russ, who was below, decided to move and headed back to where Layla and Minny currently were.

The ship never landed, but the hatch had opened, and falling down from the ship were three figures. When hitting the ground, they had done so in a heavy way due to the planet's gravity, and a cloud of dust spread out by their feet.

All three of them, based on their shape and size, were clearly Dalki, but when taking a closer look at them, one could see that they were different from the others. For one, two of the Dalki had six spikes running from the top of their back down, getting smaller as they went closer to the tail. Then there was the one in the centre.

"It's H... he's finally here," Logan said, looking from above.

"I believe you know why I'm here. Now, where is he?" H asked.

No one had given an answer, and in that moment, one person had decided to act. Was it through fear, trying to get the upper hand, or just desperation to do whatever they could to take this monster down?

Wince stood on her feet. She started to run forward, blue aura surrounded her, mixing in with the celestial energy. More water started to gather around her trident. She was putting every little ounce of strength she had into this attack and hurled it, throwing it over her shoulder.

Her strength, the power, all pushed the spear forward, creating a wave and stream of water that would have been able to cut diamonds, it had so much pressure behind it.

The spear was aimed right towards H, who simply raised his hand. He stepped to the side and grabbed it. When he did, he spun his body and hurled it back. Several loud bangs were heard as the trident was breaking through sound and air barriers.

The trident had moved too fast, the attack was too fast, and now, Wince, looking down at her stomach, there was a large hole. Nearly her entire midsection was missing. She didn't even have time to say her last words as she fell to the floor, followed by the screams of her sister.

Chapter 2246: Unexpected outcome

Inside the celestial space, sitting in his self-made chair, Mundus was tapping his finger away. He was away from all the other celestials allowing them to continue their tasks. They just went on doing as they usually did, having no idea what was going on.

Because Mundus had been keeping an eye on the situation, he knew what planets the fight would be taking place on. It allowed him to open up several portals, and he was watching everything that was happening in real time.

'I knew these Earthlings would be big trouble, it looks like our guess was right.' Mundus thought. 'After sending a few celestials to deal with them, we realised that they had a few of those with the power of God Slayer. Not only that, but they seem to be progressing at a fast rate.'

'Is it due to the wars, due to them pushing themselves so hard?'

When Mundus was talking about this, he wasn't just referring to the Dalki, but the vampires as well. He could see what Jim had been trying to do, creating a situation where only the strongest would survive.

In times of war, there were always those that had to fight and rise to the top just to survive. Everyone had their own story, everyone had their own lives, and there might even be seeds of those growing stronger that no one knew about.

'I did a lot to help you out in this war Quinn, I hope my gamble is going to pay off, and these guys... just what are they doing? She has always been an outlier, sometimes I feel like she is more trouble than Immortui... but they don't see it that way I guess. Well, there's nothing we can do about her anyway.'

When looking at the portal, Mundus was looking directly at Sera, the one known as the God of War, who had suddenly decided to join this battle. He had a feeling it wasn't due to his own choice.

Before the invasion had taken place, there were many humans that lived on planets different from earth. One of these places was the Graylash faction. Their memories of events had also been altered, however there wasn't an attempt to convince them to join Jack's side so much.

In the first place, after the first war against the Dalki, the Graylashes had taken a neutral stance. Overcomplicating things and trying to get them to join the war would have been a hard thing to do.

On this planet though, someone who had been travelling for a while now was out on the planet, searching through a thick jungle. They were with a group of travellers.

A large long neck like dinosaur creature was staring at them, they were all in the middle of combat and had been fighting it for a while. Some of them had broken arms, a beast shield had been broken and smashed, but one person at the very back, hadn't been hurt.

"We're screwed, we're all going to die, who knew a demi-god tier beast would be in a place like this!" One of the men said, with his beast weapon shaking in his hand.

The weapon in his hand was only at the advanced tier, and it was struggling to even pierce the skin of its opponent.

"Give me that." One of the travellers at the very back said, as he snatched the sword from his hand.

The traveller looked confused, he had a tight grip on the weapon, yet when it was pulled from his hand it felt like it almost slipped out, and there was no resistance at all. As if the weapon wanted to get into his hand.

"What is Silk doing! Does he really think he can fight against that thing?" One of the travellers said.

"Wait come to think of it, hasn't Silk just been at the back of the group not doing anything?"

With a big puff of air, the traveller known as Silk swung the weapon. Out came an energy blast that went right through the long neck dinosaur's head. It looked almost as if nothing had happened at first, but slowly the top of its head started to fall off.

"How in the... how is that even possible, I didn't even know the weapon could do that?" The man asked.

"It can't." The man replied. "At least not in your hands. Now all of you, get back and scram out of here. You were just given a second chance at life, so you better treat it well."

The others looked at each other, they were happy to go back after that encounter, and maybe from now on would stop venturing into such dangerous palaces.

"Erghh, excuse me, my sword?" One of the travellers asked.

"What did you say, I just saved your life, and now you're really asking for your sword back!" Silk replied.

The man ignored that his sword had been taken, and turned away with the others with tears down his face, he had saved up his whole fortune to buy that sword and now he wouldn't be coming back with it.

Now the man known as Silk was on his own, deep in the jungle, at least he thought he was.

"Is this really what you thought you would be doing?" A soft voice said.

Turning around, the man could see a woman holding a staff, covered in robes.

"Sera, what are you doing here? You never go into the Celestial space, communicating and making deals with the other celestials, you always stay near Earth?"

"And you care why?" Sera replied. "The only reason why I can guess you are here to speak to me, is because you want something from me."

Bliss clicked her tongue, and gave a smile back, because Sera was right on the mark.

"Aren't you one of the Gods of War? I wonder then, why someone isn't taking part in a war. One who has the strength to empower those that are behind them. One of the best strategists in the battlefield and a person who can use any weapon better than themselves.

"Yet you're here, with travellers fighting Demi-god tier beasts. Why haven't you joined the battle... and helped the humans at the moment."

During Sera's time here, Jack and Jim had already gone into countless wars against other races. Sera could have fulfilled some of his condition by joining those wars, even if it was as a normal recruit yet he had chosen not to.

"Do Celestials have a sense of right and wrong?" Sera asked. "Or once you become a celestial then do you just end up doing everything you can to fulfil your condition?

"There is a large difference between me and you Bliss. As you said, I am the God of War. I was a celestial that was originally human, and due to all the people that worshipped and prayed to me, I ended up becoming a Celestial.

"Was it the same for you, or were you always a Celestial?" Sera asked.

"That won't change anything." Bliss said. "You know my powers, and I thought I would just come here to inform you of something. Whatever your reason, you have decided to not join this war... on the humans' side, on Jack's side.

"Maybe it's because you still have an obligation to complete, or you feel guilty for failing the one named Leo. Either way, you have made your choice whether you know it or not.

"There is a big war coming, one of the biggest this universe will have to deal with, and if the outcome of this war is one sided, then there will be a clash, and possible destruction of the universe.

"Now, you can continue hunting and take your time relaxing. I have seen what happens. You decide to eventually act, but by then it's too late, so I'm telling you to act now. When you want to act, contact me, I'll send you to the place that you need to be."

"This is a lot more interesting than I thought." Sera said, standing and looking at Chris and Peter.

Chapter 2247: The weapon master

Peter was just seconds away from dealing with Nock, one of the Amra that had celestial energy that had been gifted to him. The demon-tier shadow beast had been trying to aid in the background, but the vines were useless to Peter's head tail that was able to cut through nearly everything that came his way.

In the end, before he could reach his target, a spear had come out, stabbing him right through the stomach. The force was strong in the attack and had managed to push him back.

Using his hands and strength, Peter had managed to stop the spear from spinning, but it had ripped the skin of his hands, and the spear had still penetrated right through his body.

'This spear... it managed to cut through my power that is covering my hands and body.' Peter thought. It was the first time he had been hurt in such a way, and there was something else he had noticed as well.

Initially, he thought the spear had to at least be on the demon tier level. Otherwise, why would it be able to generate that much power? Perhaps it was due to the person who threw it, but even then, Peter reckoned he was one of the strongest beings in existence.

So the only way for him to be pushed back was a combination of powers at play, but now holding onto the spear, he could tell it wasn't that great. So much so that with his strength, he broke both ends of the spear and allowed it to drop to the floor.

Soon, the hole in his body was starting to heal.

"What fucking stupid human has decided to get involved in my fight?"

It was a question that not just Peter had, but the Amra around as well, as they did not recognize this person. But to Geo, he had just saved Nock's life, and in a time like this, rather than ask questions, he saw him as an ally.

The man in question was covered from head to toe in weapons. The armour on his chest had strange circle devices that were embedded into it. Around his wrist, there looked to be multiple small daggers, and he even had gloves that looked to be hiding something on them.

Then on his back, there were still two spears that could be seen on top of a few swords along with a greatsword. Even along the side of his leg, there were compartments for different types of weapons.

This was someone who was clearly ready for action.

"That man..." Chris said as certain memories were starting to flood into his head. Although Peter had seen Sera before, it was brief and for a short while. At the time, he was also pretty well hidden.

For Chris, though, he knew him quite well because at the time, Leo and Sera had gone against Chris and Zero. They had fought against each other.

Of course, Jack and Jim could only ask for the memories to be changed of those that they knew, and they were unaware of the existence of Sera.

"What is he doing now here, fighting along with these aliens? Things are getting quite confusing," Chris mumbled to himself.

Peter didn't care about asking questions though; he was incredibly annoyed and had decided to dive straight forward toward the new opponent. When he did though, a large rock came out from the side and hit him clean.

It pushed Peter's cheek until he could react and break the boulder with his arms.

"There is more than one person in this fight!" Geo shouted, appearing right behind the broken rocks and throwing a solid hit to Peter's cheek.

In turn, Peter grabbed the arm that hit him and punched hard at the elbow joint, attempting to break it in one hit. Geo could feel extreme pain as he gritted his teeth, but his hand survived one hit.

'I'm not sure if I can survive more!' Geo thought. That's when he could see someone else approaching from the side; it was Nock. Getting a second wind on seeing someone coming to help, he swung all of his arms and hit Peter this time in the ribs.

It didn't move Peter at all, but allowed for his grip to weaken and Geo to break free. With his legs, he pushed off and tackled Peter with two of his arms. While with his upper two arms, he hit both of Peter's away before he was ready to do anything.

Then with his bottom two hands, he lifted Peter off the ground and slammed him into the floor.

"I'm sure he'll be okay," Chris said. He wanted to focus on another person in front of him.

"Do you remember me?" Chris asked.

"I'm sorry," Sera replied. "I don't remember weaklings."

Hearing this, there was really only one thing that Chris could do... he charged forward, and as he did, his body started to transform. Unlike the times when he was fighting before, this time his entire body seemed to change.

His facial structure was completely that of a werewolf with his razor-sharp teeth, his legs, and his forearms and claws.

When his transformation finished though, he could see several daggers going right towards him. They were lit up with energy as well. Using his clawed hands, he was able to swipe and knock all four of them away, but he could feel the strength behind just the simple daggers.

'The last time,' he thought, 'was he taking it easy on us when he was helping Leo before?' Chris thought.

"Don't you think it's only fair?" Sera said. Touching his chest piece of armour, he pressed down on one of the circular devices. In doing so, it popped out. As it did, the circular device had these sharp razor blades coming out from the sides.

"Now that I'm fighting against those with celestial energy and god slayers, don't you think I should use celestial energy myself?"

Chris's ears could pick up a change in the sound of the wind from behind, but it was a little too late. All of the daggers that he had knocked away were still flying through the air, and they had pierced him right in the back and through his thick hide.

'Crap! It's able to break through my hide, and were they some type of homing daggers?'

For a second, as all the daggers went in his back, he had flinched, closing his eyes. When he opened them, he could see the small circular device right in front of him beeping. It exploded right in his face.

It was a large explosion that shook the buildings nearby, and a large cloud of smoke had covered the entire area.

"Arghh!" Chris screamed as he swung his claw randomly but managed to hit nothing. Before he knew it, a claw had scratched his body. It was deep, and blood could immediately be seen.

From his gloves, Sera had summoned deadly claws that shot out from the top, and they also had a poison effect, one at the demon tier level. With a thrust forward, Sera tried to stab Chris in the heart, but he was able to swing his arm and knock it out of the way. Soon, he pounced back out of the smoke and could see clearly once again.

Tensing the muscles on his back, the small daggers came out of his body, and the mark was healing on his chest as well. Even the poison that had entered his body and had made him feel slightly weaker for a second was disappearing as well.

All of these were the effects of his werewolf body. They were even more resilient than the Dalki, with a great healing speed.

"You weren't this strong before, and it's not just the energy, what is this?" Chris asked.

Sera stood there calmly on the other side.

"I told you already I can't remember you that well, but let me ask you a question, how many weapons did I have when I went up against you last time?"

Thinking about it, maybe there were two weapons. It was nowhere near the amount he had on him now, but what difference did that make?

Sera just smiled.

"The more weapons I have, the more serious I am."

What Sera was saying was true. His ability allowed him to turn any weapon up to the demon tier level, even if it was a basic tier weapon. What that meant though, was not only was the weapon itself a demon tier, but the strength it provided the user was at the demon tier level.

Right now, with all the weapons he had on his body, he was using his ability to bring them up to the demon tier level, and in turn, they were all strengthening his body. This was Sera at his very best.

Chapter 2248: Peter's determination

Originally, Chris was slightly concerned for Peter, even if he didn't openly show it. This was because Peter was going against not just one opponent, but essentially three.

There was the demon tier shadow beast that was controlling the vines, Geo, and Nock. He had no clue where the demon tier Owl went. It seemed to have disappeared after getting hit a few times.

However, Geo was fine with this, because he was sure that it was being used to support other areas. After all, while they were fighting against these two, there was Jim himself, as well as the original vampires all still fighting.

The truth was, they were annoyed that this had taken a lot longer than they initially thought. As time went on, there was a large amount of pressure going on in Geo's mind about the fight, which was perhaps why he was pushing himself.

In the end though, Chris realised that he had no time to worry about the other battle, he would just have to trust the one by his side, because his opponent was going to be tough.

"Arghh!!" Peter screamed as he pulled himself out of the ground, as pieces of rock went flying in all directions.

Geo quickly went to grab Peter, trying to attack him in the same way as he did before, but with a swing of his head, he had hit the arm away. Then there was Nock as well that wasn't so far behind, attempting an attack.

"You will pay for this!" Peter shouted, the outside of his fist was glowing with energy. When throwing it forward, a large ball of Qi came out. This was something unique to Peter.

He couldn't do the third stage of Qi type attack, he never learned it, but somehow using the first stage of Qi, that he didn't really understand in the first place, he could force the energy out of his body.

It slammed into Nock pushing him back, and as it hit his skin it was starting to damage it.

Worried, Geo came forward and started to hit the energy himself, punching it with his golden arms.

While the two were worrying, finally Peter was given a breather. The inside of his bones were healing after they had been crushed by the large attack, but what was really concerning him a bit was the hole in the centre of his stomach. Although the wound had healed, there was still energy that was lingering inside.

'It's the same for the alien's attack as well. Their power is able to get through my own special energy. Who cares about that, the only thing I need to do is take them out.'

Creeping towards Peter while he was in the middle of his thoughts were several vines. In his celestial form, his head tail started to grow to the point it reached the bottom of the floor and curled up like a tail, even though it was attached to his head.

Swinging it, all of the vines from the demon tier were cut through, and Peter charged through, towards his two opponents.

That was until a green wall appeared right in front of him, it was several vines combined together to make a thick wall. Just like with everything else though, Peter was able to use his head tail to slice through it.

When he did though, the two Amra were nowhere to be seen. They had jumped to the side, and using the strength in their legs both blasted right toward Peter.

Reacting, Peter curled up into a type of ball. He tucked his legs in while using both of his arms to cover his head. Geo's and Nock's fists were flying, hitting Peter everywhere they could.

They hit his arms, his side, the side of his legs and more. They continued to pound away not taking a single breath, if they did, then it would give a chance for Peter to attack.

'What is this person's body made out of?' Geo thought, as he continued to punch with his golden arms as much as possible, but the glow around them was starting to fade.

Normally, hits of this level, and consistency would turn anything to rubble, yet Peter was still there, curled up in a ball.

At the same time though, Peter himself had a similar thought.

'What are these guys' hands made out of, their hits are getting through everything, and they're causing fractures in my bones.'

It felt like a competition of holding out between them. Whichever was the first to give in would lose the battle.

As the two Amra continued to hit, they started to slow slightly, as they still hadn't taken a breath. Their chests were hurting, the acid was building up in their limbs and their arms were feeling incredibly heavy.

'I can't do it... I need to breathe.' Nock finally said, as he went to throw out a punch and at the same time lifted his head slightly to take a breath.

This was the moment Peter had been waiting for, he kicked with his left foot deep in the ground, surrounded by the yellow energy. For a second it had emitted so much power that it caused Geo to flinch slightly.

'No... I have to push through this!' Geo thought. He attempted to push through and finally broke through the energy that felt like it was burning his skin away, but he was soon met with the long head tail, swiping right towards his neck.

Now, the head tail was covered in the strange yellow power as well. Geo had no choice but to lift all four of his arms. The blade cut right through causing his blood to leak slightly. It wasn't enough to go through the dense bones of the Amra, but it hurt.

When Geo pulled his hands down though, he soon realised that the head tail, the kick to the ground... all of it was a distraction, to try to get him away.

Because, right now, he could see Peter, with his hand right through Nock's chest. Swirling around his hand was another head tail. During the whole fight, Peter had never shown such a thing, and it was because it was a first for him as well.

Peter wasn't the type to win by tricks, or use his head much, but just used his will, which similar to his celestial form, allowed things to change. Wanting to produce the strongest attack possible in order to finish Nock off.

The head tail had split in two, it wrapped around Peter's hand, giving it a sharp edge and twice the power.

Just like Geo, Nock had managed to get his hands up to block but it was useless. The strength of the punch, the power behind it with the sharpness of the head tail, ripped right through Nock's skin, and continued on eventually causing a large hole in his chest.

Blood was starting to pour out of his mouth, Nock's eyes weren't filled with anger, instead it more so felt like disappointment. He wasn't looking at Peter either, but instead was looking at Geo.

"It looks like we won't have to compete against each other any more." Nock said.
"You win my friend."

His head flopped toward his chest, and there were no signs of life in Nock anymore.

"NOOOO!" Geo screamed and rushed forward throwing out a punch.

Peter quickly pulled out his arm, and jumped out of the way. The powered golden fist punched the air, and loud bangs were heard as the fist landed against the air.

It distorted and a pulse of energy went out, moving part of the clouds in the sky above.

"Beast, take him away, take him back." Geo ordered.

The vines controlled by the demon tier beast, started to pull Nock's body away. Geo wanted to grieve, he wanted to talk to his friend even more, but it wasn't the time.

"What... is this?" A voice was heard.

Turning his head, he could see another Amra was now where Nock was being pulled, and it was one they knew well.

"The young ones... they shouldn't have gone before me." Dober said, one of the other leaders of the Amra who had come from the tower.

'If Dober Is here, does that mean Quinn...?' Geo thought.

Chapter 2249: Abandoned

Seeing Dober, for Geo, was a big surprise. After defeating Athos, three Amra in total had led the race and their multiple planets and this included Dober himself. Although originally Dober wasn't a fighter, he had grown quite strong.

He was brought into the group due to his smarts and information he had on new technologies. Back then, he was one of the few Amra that was researching technologies that they could use.

However, being around Geo and Nock who had great power, had also somewhat influenced Dober. On top of that, he gained natural strength as he worked in the Forgery and helped around in several places in and outside of the tower.

This was why Geo was surprised in the first place, because Dober was in the tower, and if he was now out of it, there was a chance someone else was as well.

"Don't get your hopes up." Dober replied. He knelt down and looked at the face of Nock. There was nothing, no equipment, no crystal that could save him now, the life had completely gone out of his eyes.

Dober hadn't seen any part of the fighting or what was going on, but seeing Geo's reaction and what happened so far, it was no wonder he was putting a lot of hope into that person.

"He is working hard away, and is in the final stages, but it is impossible to know and it would be wrong of me to give you a time frame... but for you, what is happening here?"

Peter's body was relatively hurt from the constant pounding. His body was healing and he could still fight, but in order to heal properly he needed to heal. If needed then he would fight Geo back in a desperate attempt.

However, the hunger was quite painful for him, so Peter went to find one of the dead bodies that were nearby, for a quick meal to replenish him. He wouldn't usually do such a thing.

Even he had respect for the dead that fought their lives in the war, but it was an important time. Seeing how Peter wasn't attacking him, Geo realised he had some time to talk, but was unaware of exactly what Peter was doing, so he kept an eye on him, while talking.

"I'm not sure we can do anything." Geo replied. "These two are stronger than I imagined. Nock gave his everything, he fought alongside me with everything we had, and we still were unable to beat him."

"The strength in my own hands is dwindling, I am not as strong as I was at the start of this fight."

Geo was being kind, Nock was stronger than Dober, so if the two of them had no chance at winning the fight, then with Dober, it certainly was the case. As for his powers, the glow on his forearms was fading, the celestial energy he used to power himself was running low.

Most of the energy had been used up in his current fight, but Geo had been fighting all over the place, going against the vampire leaders and going from one place to the next, while Peter and Chris were very fresh.

Maybe because Geo had just lost Nock, but he wasn't feeling very hopeful about the situation, and was believing there was no point for him to go on fighting.

"I'm afraid, that I don't have good news to bring to you, but I thought I had to inform you." Dober stated. "Me and the other forgers, we all left the tower and immediately could see that several areas were in trouble.

"We spread out and are doing our best to help out all groups, but we are being pushed back in all areas. Without any help, it will only be a matter of time before they reach our base... and reach the tower."

Looking at Peter, he was seen chowing down on human flesh, ripping part of its skin and eating it on the spot, but what Geo really wanted to do was glance at something else, another fight that was going on.

Several pulses of energy were felt, ripples and waves sent through the air that would hit them.

A powerful claw was thrown from the side, and with two swords swinging down, Sera managed to cut through Chris' skin once again. He could feel that it managed to hit the bone and had stopped just there.

'He is going through even all the Qi that I have placed in that area. I'm even having to use Qi to protect my raw bones, otherwise his weapons would have cut through that.'

Chris, out of anger, went to open his mouth, and attempted to bite at Sera. Before he could do so, Sera lifted his leg and kicked him across the face. A big shockwave went off with the hit, and a large cut was on the side of Chris' face.

Looking at the foot that hit him, he could see a blade sticking out of the end of the boot that appeared to be hidden.

'This person, just how many weapons does he have!' Chris, out of anger, swung his fists, not caring whether he was hit or not.

Sera could feel the anger, and rather than going in for a strike and risk taking hit for hit. He decided to block, lifting the two swords. One of the swords he held took the brunt of the impact, and he could see part of it shatter.

'With my powers, this weapon should be on the demon tier level, and this person... has the strength to basically break it?' Sera thought.

Moments later, what he had feared had come, as the sword shattered. With a kick of his boots from the ground, they had activated an active skill, that was almost like a puff of air, and Sera increased the distance between the two.

Chris would have been able to catch up, but during the fight, more than once, he had been hurt trying to follow after his opponent. The wounds on Chris' body were piling up, but still healing.

"Your healing, the more I hurt you, the slower it's starting to get. I guess you're not as invincible as you thought?" Sera stated.

"I never thought I was invincible." Chris replied.

There was something strange about the fight he didn't understand. Even with all the strength his opponent had, Chris still felt no less than him physically and with speed.

Sure, his opponent was skillful with weapons, and could use their active skills during the fight that was helping him, but Chris still felt that it wasn't the deciding factor, it wasn't the difference between the two, as to why Sera was winning the fight.

"You don't understand do you?" Sera said. "I can tell you the answer, I don't mind because it's not something you can fix anyway. It's because you are scared of death, but you see for me, I'm not scared of dying, so I can take more risks than you."

Chris listened to his opening words but didn't understand it. Chris didn't feel scared when fighting, and he had fought with his life on the line multiple times.

Regardless of these things though, the subconscious thought of death would always enter one's head. Blocking large attacks, being careful when attacking, the use of Qi, and skills, a lot of decisions were made because one wanted to preserve their own life.

For Sera, being who he was, he didn't have these fears, death was more of an annoyance more than anything.

"There's no point me trying to figure this out now, all I need to do, is get a lot stronger than you." Chris' voice trailed off for a second, because in the back he saw something he didn't expect.

Geo, and Dober had jumped up to a building.

"Sorry my stranger friend... but the city and my people are in trouble. I wish you good luck, and all your power in attempting to defeat these two."

With those words, Geo and Dober had left the battle scene. Peter had just finished recovering and felt like he was back at a hundred percent.

'Did that alien just leave me to deal with these two on my own?' Sera thought.

Chapter 2250: The god of war

Sera had to do a double take when he looked behind him, and back at Chris and Peter again, because he couldn't believe the audacity of these aliens. He, in the first place, didn't want to join this war, and then when convinced to join it and help the losing side, they had gone and abandoned him just like that.

"And now look at the situation you have gotten yourself into," Sera said to himself, shaking his head.

From the corner of his eye, he could see Peter jumping up in the air. It looked as if he was going after them.

"Well, if you're going to do something, then you might as well do it right." Sera sighed as he held out his hand, and one of the rings underneath the gloves he was wearing started to light up.

A crossbow appeared in his hands. Pulling the trigger, several bolts had come out, and each one of them was covered in flames. One bolt was shot right in front of Peter. If he carried on moving, he would run into the flames.

Punching the air, Peter managed to stop his momentum with a bang while making a large hole right through the fire as well. Soon he was dropping to the ground, and that was when the other bolt of flames was coming toward him.

With the head tail full of his Qi energy, he swung it down, splitting the flame produced by the arrows in half and even hitting one of the bolts completely in half.

"Oh, very impressive," Sera said.

Meanwhile, Chris had jumped up, with his claws ready to pounce. Similarly, as he did with his right hand, with his left hand, the ring started to glow and produced a round shield.

Chris' claws hit the shield, but he felt like all of the power had bounced back right at him, and he was chucked in the air, performing somersaults before he landed on his feet next to Peter's side.

"You piece of crap, do you really think you're so tough fighting with all these weapons? Use your fists!" Peter shouted.

"All I hear are cries of a sore loser," Sera replied back with a smile, putting both of his weapons away. He then pulled out two long sabers from his back and held one in each hand.

"I think it's best if you ignore the others for now," Chris said. "This person might not be someone that we can take out on our own. Do you remember what we did back then when we fought against that celestial?"

Peter had a horrid look on his face as he remembered what Chris was suggesting. "I thought we had grown stronger than that."

"Whether you like it or not, this person is strong, and it's the best thing we can do!" Chris shouted, not giving Peter a choice.

His body started to change once more, but not into that of a werewolf. Instead, it turned into that of a large wolf. In this form, Chris was far faster and agile on his feet. He immediately went towards Peter, who jumped up and landed on Chris' back.

"I see now, so it's two against one, but I'm the one getting called out for using weapons" Sera said, gripping the spears tightly.

Before he knew it, the large wolf was running straight toward him. At the right time, Sera took a step forward and thrust the tip of his spear. A large amount of power left from the tip and made a really large hole in the buildings off in the distance, but that was because it had hit nothing but the air.

Seeing the attack, Chris had moved to the side, and at the same time, Peter swung his head tail. His own speed was being added with Chris', producing a strong blow. With the other spear in hand, at the last moment, Sera was able to lift the spear up and block the attack.

Ripples of energy were shaking through the air, and that wasn't the only thing that was shaking. The entirety of his armour was as well.

"That attack, it was crazy powerful. I'm not sure I can block that too many times."

The thing was, the attacks didn't stop there. With Peter and Chris working together, they continued to run circles around Sera. With his spear, he attempted to attack but was hitting nothing and would get several strikes back.

He blocked most of them, with one hitting his shoulder. It had caused a crack through his armor and pierced his skin slightly.

"Crap, that hurt," Sera thought.

The wolf pounced in, and Sera tumbled, rolling underneath it. When he did, he shoved the spear from below, but Chris had already landed with Peter and swung in for another attack.

This time, rather than using the edge of the head tail to try and hurt Sera, it was wrapped around one of his spears. Chris started to run in the other direction, and Peter pulled.

There was no choice for Sera, as he had to let go of his spear. It flung out and was thrown to the side, and now it looked like Chris and Peter were coming in for another round.

"So what if you take that weapon? I have lots of weapons I can use... but you have seriously pissed me off," Sera kicked off the ground with his boots, and a suction of air shot him high up.

He was now higher than the buildings were, and signs of fighting going on in other areas. "I can see why the others rushed off now... it looks like this war won't last too much longer."

But that wasn't his concern for now. Instead, the rings on his hands were glowing, and weapons started to appear in his hands.

Immediately, Sera threw them onto the ground. They weren't going toward Chris or Peter; instead, they were just hitting the ground. Weapon after weapon was hitting the ground until there were about fifty weapons there.

With another spear in his hand, he spun his body, and a tornado surrounded him. It looked devastating, and Chris and Peter didn't want to see if they could get close or not, when crashing to the ground.

Several of the weapons that were on his body had also entered the ground, and they were in all different areas. Staffs, maces, spears, short swords, long swords, daggers, spike balls, and even things that had never been seen before.

Chris could sense that this was something different, and he decided to use this chance to take a breather.

Now Sera looked different compared to before. There wasn't a weapon on him apart from a single spear and the armor he was wearing. Everything else was stuck in the ground.

Spinning the spear about, Sera then stuck the bottom end into the ground and lifted only his left foot up.

"You are in my zone now," Sera said.

His eyes started to light up with white energy, and no longer could his pupils be seen. The energy was running up and down his body until it went running down just one of his legs.

His foot slammed onto the ground, and the white energy spread out. It didn't create a crater, nor did it seem to injure the ground. If anything, it looked like a ripple of thought just floating on top of the land.

When it touched the weapons on the floor, the energy rose, covering them. It wasn't just one of the weapons, but all of the weapons that had been thrown onto the floor were now covered in this white energy.

When the white energy reached them, for a split second, Chris allowed it to touch his foot. He felt no malice in the energy, nor did it feel like it did any harm to him.

"This person, their calm and relaxed demeanour... it's frightening me, more so than anyone I have ever seen before," Chris thought.

The final weapon in Sera's hand, that too was thrown onto the floor, and calmly, Sera started to walk towards them.

Chapter 2251.2: The god of war (Part 2)

The strange white energy glow that had been surrounding Sera's body was no more, but his eyes were now filled with this energy, as were the weapons all along the ground.

When he walked towards the others, Chris could feel what he meant by his words from before. That this person had no fear, no fear of dying.

"What gives him this strength? Is it because he believes he is much stronger than us? Or is it something else?" Chris thought.

"Are we just going to stand here all day and play with ourselves, or are we going to fight?" Peter shouted, as he used the back of his heel to dig into Chris' side.

It was true, they had to fight either way, but there was no harm in being cautious. With Peter on his back, the two of them entered the field of weapons. They ran past several, and Chris began to circle their opponent.

The speed was fast enough to kick up dirt particles from the ground, and if someone was watching from the outside, it would look like a tornado was surrounding Sera.

Just like before, when the opportunity felt right, Chris pounced in, and Peter swung his head tail. Sera reached out to his right and grabbed one of the weapons on the ground, and it was just a simple staff.

It didn't look impressive and could even be confused as just a stick. Moving to the side, Sera had dodged the sharp end of the head tail and swung down the simple stick, pinning the head tail right to the ground.

A burst of white energy filled the bottom of the stick. Then, bending slightly again in a small movement, Sera picked up a sword. He could see Chris attempting to attack him by using his mouth and opening it up with his razor-sharp teeth.

With another swift movement and perfect timing, he moved to the side and slashed, hitting the back leg of Chris. It was a deep cut that caused Chris to crash his head into the ground and tumble. Peter had fallen off but managed to get up just in time.

When the two looked at their opponent again, this time they could see a bow and arrow in his hands. Letting go, a stream of energy followed behind it. It was sharp and fast.

"I can only attack it!" Chris gritted his teeth, transforming back to his werewolf form and swinging his fists. Before it reached though, the arrow had split into several smaller beams of energy and moved around it.

Two of the arrows went right through the arm of Chris and the shoulder. They were big blows, creating small holes in the werewolf's flesh. His healing abilities were working overtime.

Meanwhile, the rest of the arrows had headed towards Peter. Curling up into a ball, he had managed to protect himself again. The arrows pierced through his arms as well, aiming for his head, but they didn't get through.

When the arrows tried to pierce further, his own internal energy was fighting back against the arrows, essentially disintegrating them before they could do any more damage.

"What is going on?" Peter shouted, uncurling himself. He felt embarrassed that he had to protect himself in such a way, and he didn't understand what was happening.

There didn't seem to be much change in Sera, only that he no longer had the weapons on his body, and shouldn't that be worse for him in the first place? The truth was, Sera had more powers than the others had imagined.

Right now, he had created a battlefield for himself, at least what represented a battlefield, with the fallen weapons on the ground. In truth, it was a battlefield. Even in the zone where the weapons were, there were fallen enemies and friends, and battles were continuing all over the place.

All of this was giving energy to Sera, giving him celestial energy. In turn, he could use that energy to create a zone where his weapons would all have the same effect as if they were on him.

They were all at the demon tier level, and all of them were powering him. At the same time, while in the battlefield zone that he had created, he would get an additional boost.

Before, too slow to react to the speed, he was now enhanced and making minimal movements, and combining all the uses of his weapons, his fighting was coming out.

The two attempted to do the same again, Chris turning into his wolf form and Peter getting on top of him, but in the middle of it, a spear had been picked up and was thrown right through the air.

"Do you think I would let you do something so annoying again?" Sera said.

He now had small objects in his hand that had razor-sharp edges. It looked similar to what was attached to his armour before, only these were thinner and lighter.

Throwing them out in the air, they started to go off in all sorts of different directions, and now Sera ran towards the two, being on the attack. On the way, he picked up two curved weapons and held them in his hand.

Peter, seeing this, had gathered energy in his fist and threw it out. A yellow ball of energy was going towards Sera, but rather than strike the energy or move out of the way, with his foot, Sera kicked up a large axe from the floor.

Midair, the weapon collided with the energy. Keeping both in place, the axe spun on the floor and eventually lost out in the struggle of power, but the attack had been blocked and allowed for Sera to now be above them both.

Sera swung his sword down, hitting both claws of the wolf that had now transformed back into a werewolf. The energy created from the strike had pushed Chris deeper into the ground.

Peter went to attack with his head tail, and throwing towards one of the swords with the head tail, he was able to deflect it. Then a secondary head tail came. Once again, in a desperate move to harm Sera, a second head tail had come out.

With his other sword, though, Sera just left it in place, hovering with his energy, and moved to the side. The head tail collided with his second sword, and now there was nothing in Sera's hands, but he was by Peter's side.

"You said that I should be using my hands for combat, right? Then tell me how this feels!" Sera threw a fist, and it landed cleanly right on Peter's nose. A cracking noise could be heard, and the bones themselves could be felt breaking, including those in Peter's skull.

Luckily for him, his healing capabilities were kicking in as well, as he was sent away and off into the distance.

Turning back around, Sera was ready to deal with the other one, but when looking at where he had last seen Chris, he noticed that he wasn't there, and only the imprint of his body on the ground was.

Soon, though, Sera could feel a rise in energy. It wasn't a power like he was used to. It wasn't celestial energy.

"Just what is going on?" Sera thought. That was when his eyes locked onto the energy.

"I thought that there might be more trouble that we would have to deal with," Chris said. "The fact that you are here, I thought it meant that there would be others as well."

"I still don't understand why you are helping these aliens, but when my life is on the line, I don't have the time to be answering questions."

A short burst of energy, a last-ditch effort. Chris had activated the fourth stage of Qi, using the Pure's invention of a soul weapon, and while doing this, he had completely transformed into his werewolf state.

Both of these things combined made Chris the Crimson Red Werewolf.

Chapter 2252: A cornered Army

The red skin and fur of the werewolf standing in front of Sera looked fierce. The power was something he had never gone against before, and he could feel how alive it was, how much vitality it had in front of him.

It was almost as if all the attacks he had made before, the buildup of damage that had been built up from the fight, had disappeared in that instant.

Rolling on the ground, Sera managed to reach a large greatsword and pulled it out from the ground. He was ready to face whatever his opponent had to throw at him. That was until he had no clue where he was.

"Has he disappeared?" Sera thought.

There was a blur in his vision, moving about side to side. A clear view of the werewolf couldn't be seen. It was only because of the disturbance he could feel in his zone of power that he knew where Chris was.

That was why he knew exactly when Chris had gone to attack him. He lifted his greatsword up, and the claws of Chris and Sera clashed. Unlike the times before, though, the entire greatsword was smashed into several small pieces.

The energy from the claws, even though not directly aimed at him, continued forward, hitting his armour, and it was piercing right through until it was eventually reaching Sera's skin.

He could feel a great burning sensation as it got to him. With no weapons in his hand, he had to do something, and he had made his choice.

"This fight has gone too far for me now. It's no longer any fun," Sera thought to himself. "There is no longer any benefit if I help out anyway. The end is near."

Stomping his foot on the ground, several of the weapons on the floor lifted and started to come towards him. Chris, being cautious after being hurt by the mysterious man several times, backed out.

He wondered, was this one more attack, a great power just like before to match his red werewolf form? Whatever it was, Chris needed to beat it, and he needed to be fast about it because he couldn't keep up this form for long.

When the weapons touched Sera, they started to disappear, as if they were going back into storage. Suddenly, several of the weapons just fell to the ground, and when they did, Sera could no longer be seen.

"What the..." Chris turned his head left, he turned his head right, expecting Sera to come out and attack him at any moment, but he never came. The weapons that were on the floor, some that were still on the ground, no longer had the white glow.

"Tell me!" Peter shouted, running back to the fight scene, creating a dust cloud behind him. "Where is he? Where is he?"

"I think," Chris said as he started to cancel his red werewolf form but stayed in his werewolf form just in case. "He ran away."

"What? After all that, he just runs away. Who even was that? Why would he just... what the!" Peter felt like pulling his eyelids off his face.

They had no clue who that was. Their reason for interfering, and because of that, Peter felt like he could never repay this person for attacking them.

"His energy, it's gone... it's gone!" Peter shouted.

Not really knowing himself what he meant by that, but the celestial energy that was similar to Peter's felt in the area was no longer there.

One of the many abilities Sera had was to be able to know what was happening in the general area. It was almost as if he had a bird's-eye view of the situation. It was one of the skills that helped him win many wars, being a great tactician.

This was because he knew the movements of the enemy's side. It was more helpful than one would think in a large-scale war, but what he could see, there was no hope of turning around, not at least with his power.

The vampire leaders had managed to push from all sides. There were vampires and a few Dalki. All of them had managed to push the Amra back. If he had given it his all and won against Chris and Peter, then that wouldn't have changed the tide of the war, which was why as quick as he came, he left just as fast.

Geo had come back from the situation, and with him, he was bringing back Nock's body. In order not to dishearten the other Amra who were fighting, he did this secretly and asked the vampire controlling the demon-tier beast to put him away.

The situation they had come back to was worse than they thought, though. Thanks to Dober and the Forgers from the tower, they had managed to survive this long by setting up a literal wall.

Materials had been brought out from the tower, and in a mile radius around the tower, a wall had been made out of solid rocks. On top of that, there were rocks that had been given to the Amra.

The enemy was now coming at them from all different directions, and the Amra didn't rest. They hurled rocks towards the vampires while others fought on the ground and front line.

The owl demon-tier beast was seen striking, lifting up vampires, and hitting others with its long neck.

Once in a while, though, a large attack would happen on one section of the wall with the Amra as the leaders got involved with their blood aura attacks. But rather than going in all at once, they would back off after doing some damage.

"Do you not think this is cruel?" Edvard said, watching the situation. He was standing on top of one of the Amra houses from a slight distance. This way, they could give better orders on the attack.

For Edvard, though, he hadn't been involved in any of the attacks at all, and Hikel often stayed by his side. He was looking after his dear friend, who seemed to have changed so much after the attack on the Namriks.

"When a beast is cornered, that is when it's at its most dangerous," Hikel replied. "We have lost a lot more vampires than I would have liked. I don't wish to lose more. If we continue like this, concentrating on strong attacks, here and there, we will chip away at their armour."

Hikel's plan was working. The moment Geo reached the area to help, the main attackers would have disappeared, and he could tell his people were getting tired. Their numbers getting smaller, 1000, maybe 2000, was that what was left of the Amra now?

Seeing the enemy on the other side with their numbers unknown, it was a lot of pressure on their mental health. One of the Amra picked up a rock, and when he did, his arm felt incredibly weak suddenly, tears were rolling down his face.

"This is it... isn't it... this is the end for us. There is no way we can win." The Amra was disheartened, broken down, and a blood aura strike came toward him. He had almost accepted his fate until Geo stood in front, taking the attack.

"It's only over when we say it's over, and it is not over!" Geo shouted back.

At that moment, a planned attack occurred and the wall that had been weakened in several spots. The leaders unleashed a flurry of blood swipes with great aura towards the made wall. The rocks that were pushed from the base had fallen, the wall had fallen, and the vampires were now freely able to attack them.

The vampires were seen running toward the Amra people, and Geo reached out, wishing to help them all. Running past him, he could see several things collide right into the vampires.

A bull-like beast pierced a vampire with its horns and then started to chomp down at its neck with its mouth.

"Beasts..." Geo said.

It wasn't just one beast, but there was a whole army of beasts that had appeared behind the Amra. They were clashing with the vampires. Turning his head, Geo noticed that they were coming from the first floor of the tower, and it could only mean one thing.

Chapter 2253: The man in red, arrives.

The battle scene had completely changed in a matter of seconds. The Amra had been retreating further and further towards the tower. They were ready to make their last stand, and in that final moment, it was when what looked like a miracle appeared.

Beasts had joined the battle, coming from behind the injured and tired Amra. They were of all sorts of different types, ones who ran on four legs, ones with vicious teeth, large bear-like creatures, plant creatures, and more.

The beasts' numbers were in the thousands, and they were taking on the vampires without a hint of hesitation.

"Ronkin, are you seeing this?" Jeouk asked, who was giving orders to one of the demon-tier shadow beasts.

"Yeah... yeah... I am," Ronkin said with a large smile on his face.

The two of them had been somewhat hiding out of sight. They stayed in a building where they could watch everything because they weren't on the vampires' side, but the Amra wouldn't know that, so it was best for the two to just observe the fight from far away.

The vampires were struggling. They were using their daggers to try to slash right at a black wolf-like beast's neck. The dagger managed to hit, but it didn't go in deep enough to kill the beast. That was because there was a strange lingering shadow coming off the beast.

In turn, the dark wolf turned around and bit the vampire right in the arm, holding on tight and shaking its head. It lifted the vampire in the air.

"Everyone, help those around you, stick in groups. Don't be arrogant and try to take on these beasts on your own!" Hikel shouted.

So far during the fight, the vampires had been rotating those who were attacking and resting. This was part of their plan to chip at the strong wall slowly while tiring out their enemy, but now with the thousands of beasts that had suddenly joined the fight, they needed to act.

Another large bat-like beast was flying through the air and had come right at Grenlet. It dived, hitting his large belly, but a shield of blood aura deflected the attack, and the creature was lifted into the air.

Jumping up, Grenlet created a large hammer out of his blood aura in his hand and whacked the bat down, slamming it into the ground. The beast struggled for a bit until it eventually stopped moving.

"These beasts, they aren't normal," Grenlet answered. "That was, what, maybe an emperor-tier beast, but it took so much effort to take it out."

Hikel could see it as well, and soon, all of the other originals were starting to gather around him. They all were there to report the same thing to him, the struggle they had against these beasts.

"There has to be a reason for the beasts to suddenly come out like this. The tower... this whole time, have they been backing up to the tower to protect it? Is this their trump card?" Hikel said to himself.

Jim was also having a look at the situation. He was away from the others, looking at the back of even the leaders.

"I can't believe it, these vampires, they can't even take care of some beasts, but maybe this will be the push they need to finally evolve!" Jim said to himself and was wondering what was happening with another situation that had been occurring from before.

The energy from the battle seemed to fade, so there had to be an outcome of who had won and who hadn't.

"You idiots," Jim said to the leaders. "Seeing how all the beasts are coming from that tower, take it down!"

The message was transmitted through a telepathic vampire, and they all heard the order loud and clear.

The original leaders had gathered, and now all of them were walking together towards the tower. The beasts came to attack them, but with their blood powers and abilities as well as physical strength, they dealt with them with relative ease.

Their moment wasn't slowed as they went further and further ahead. Geo and Dober could see this. They were busy fighting as well and could see them walking toward the tower.

"Should we stop them?" Dober asked.

"No... it should be fine," Geo answered because he knew.

Right now, standing at the base of the tower, a certain individual had finally left. He stood there for a while, observing the situation in front of him, and quickly had to do something.

"I... was longer than I thought," Quinn said to himself, smelling the blood of the battle in the air. He could feel the blood that was being spilled everywhere. He could sense it. Not just of the Amra, but also of his fellow vampires that were like

him, and in this situation, it pained him that he was unable to do more before it had gotten to this point.

Raising his hands, two large shadow portals appeared behind him, right by the base of the tower. All of the regular beasts that Quinn had gathered from the vampire settlement in his spare time and from the Penswi planet were unleashed onto the battlefield.

The vampire leaders, the original vampires, the first that had been turned, all eight of them that were still present and alive, continued to push down to the centre. Getting rid of as many beasts as they could on their way. They were still a large distance away from the tower, but now they could see someone standing at the base.

"Who... is that?" Bianca asked.

Due to the distance, some struggled, and due to what the person was wearing, it was hard for them to recognize the person, but one of them was breaking down in a sweat once more.

Grenlet fell to his knees. His entire forehead and the side of his face were drenched, his heart was beating fast, and he was in pain.

"This reaction... it's happened before," Hikel realised.

Looking at the man in question, he was covered from head to toe in an armour set. It all looked like a single piece of armour, and no one would even imagine that they were made from multiple different crystals based on the way it looked.

A dark red colour had been used as the base of all of the pieces of equipment, with large engraved designs and accents of gold. It wasn't too bulky as it sat on top of Quinn's body but looked fierce as ever.

The boots were crafted perfectly, covering one's feet, and when it bent at the kneecap, there was an appliance, an illusion almost of fangs. If one bent the knee, then it would close these fangs to bite down. On the side of each of the boots, made in gold, there were what looked like two large feathers sticking out.

From there, the chest piece was thick in the centre, like that of a grand knight. Just like most of the armour, it was covered in a dark red, but engraved on the outside in gold was an image of a phoenix. However, this engraving didn't look normal. The golden Phoenix looked to be moving, as if it was burning even now on top of the armour.

Although separate, the design continued on the shoulder pieces as well, with two phoenixes that could be seen on either shoulder with the same glow. The chest piece had been made with the Behemoth crystal and the Phoenix crystal.

Then, there was the mask that covered his face. Just like Quinn's original mask, he had gone for a traditional design. There were large fangs that covered his mouth, but at the side, close to the edge of the mouth, there were two large circular objects that stuck out slightly. Even while standing there, little sparks of lightning were going off.

Then, finally, there were the gauntlets, extending from his fingertips all the way to his elbow. Although the colour base was also red and gold, the golden glow seen on the gauntlets emitted radiant power. The fingertips of each gauntlet were glowing gold, and there was a red base with a golden power, like a volcano steaming all the way down to the elbow.

All of the equipment that Quinn was wearing beamed with power, so much so that it was almost as if it could not be contained by the armour itself.

"I have a message for you all!" Quinn shouted. It wasn't loud enough to reach the end of the battlefield, but it was loud enough for the vampire leaders to hear.

When they heard the voice, their suspicions were confirmed at that moment.

"I am Quinn. I am part of the Shadow Convent, disciple of Arthur, and the previous king of the vampires. With this information, choose what you will do next wisely."

Raising his hand in the air, several shadow portals started to open up from the portals, and dropping out of them from above were shadow beasts. But unlike all the ones from before, all of these were Demon-tier shadow beasts, ones that had been collected from the planet the Behemoth resided on.

Chapter 2254: Nothing but blood

Quinn lifted up both of his hands, and in doing so, large portals of Shadow had been summoned all across the battlefield. Most of it had become a wasteland full of rubble.

Nearly all of the buildings in the area had been destroyed, and the fighting was continuing on the hard ground, or on top of the rubble, but the large shadows had caught a lot of the vampires' attention.

The vampires were still greater in number compared to the beasts and the Amra put together.

Although the initial surprise had caught them off guard, they were adapting and learning how to deal with the beasts, but they weren't prepared for what was coming next.

Falling out of the shadow's were gigantic beasts. First they could see a large dangling claw like red arm from one, and then the whole body of a creature that looked like it had come from the dark depths.

Out of another portal, there was a beast three times larger than an elephant, with ten trunks coming out from its head. As soon as it landed on the ground, it swung the trunks hitting the vampires far away.

The vampires used their blood aura on the elephant like beast, but were unable to leave a scratch as it continued its rampage. This continued on, as more and more deadly beasts were coming out from the shadow portals, all of them with the same traits, all of them with a lingering shadow that covered their body.

"We need help!" A vampire screamed. "We can't take them on, it's impossible."

The vampires could feel their immense power and it was only confirmed as they had attempted to fight back. These beasts, they were all at the Demon tier level.

"It's Quinn!" Ronkin said with the biggest smile on his face. From where he was and the angle he was watching the battle from, he was unable to see Quinn, but just seeing the demon tier beasts he knew it was him.

"He did as he said he would." Jeouk replied. "With the beasts now supporting the Amra, especially at this level, there's no telling who will win this war."

The war was pretty one sided, but demon tier beasts weren't something that just numbers could beat. They were a power too strong for regular vampires to handle. Still, they could see that there were some vampires that were stepping up to the plate.

Past leaders that had been placed in a slumber, and woken up, the likes of Muka and so on. There were also talented vampire knights as well that were doing well.

However, that was it, they were just doing well. These beasts seemed to be even more difficult than the regular demon beasts, and that was all due to the environment they had come from, having to live on the planet where the Behemoth existed.

"Quinn... you have become our saviour once again." Geo said, looking at the situation, but he couldn't let him do all the work, and raised his hand. "Fight side by side with the beasts, lets get rid of those that are not welcome on our planet!"

The Amra that were spread out on the battlefield all heard Geo's words, and in response cheered loudly. They were getting a second wind in this fight, and although Geo didn't want to admit it, in some ways he felt like he could rest now, as he could let Quinn deal with the hard ones.

The original leaders all stood there in place, they were looking at the chaos around them and were wondering what to do.

"Should we split up?" Wallace, one of the Originals asked. "We have to deal with the demon tier beasts. I don't think the others can handle it. Otherwise all the vampires will be done for and we will lose this war."

Although Wallace had asked a question, the person in charge, who would usually say something hadn't done so, Hikel was dead silent.

"That's not what we should be doing!" Magnus shouted. "We should be going after Quinn. He is the person we have been looking for, and once again, here he is shouting his nonsense!"

It seemed like quite a few of the other leaders agreed with him, but the only thing was, they still remembered from last time, they had attempted to confront Quinn and he had pretty much beaten them all. So how would it be any different this time?

They needed to wait for Jim to act.

"I'll deal with this!" Magnus said as no one else seemed to be responding, but when he took a step forward, Hikel was standing there in front of him, his hand on Magnus's chest.

"What are you doing, why are you in my way?" Magnus grunted through his teeth.

Bianca, Edvard, and Grenlet all looked at Hikel. Their expression showing signs of nervousness.

"Are we really going to do this?" Bianca asked.

"Do what?" Wallace asked, and the other leaders were starting to get weary around the others.

"You... you heard what he said." Hikel stated. "I wasn't so sure before, but he mentioned himself. He is part of the Punisher's Convent, and as part of that Convent we will do everything in our power to support him!"

The other originals had no clue what Hikel was talking about, but based on the tone of his voice and the uneasy feeling they all felt, they knew something was up, but it was a little too late.

Magnus could see blood falling down the armour on his chest, and the blood was coming from Hikel's hand.

"You bastard!!!" Magnus screamed.

A huge explosion went off, and Magnus was sent flying backwards. At the same time, the other leaders started to act, Grenlet had summoned a blood hammer, and threw out his blood needles trying to apprehend and stop the other originals.

Meanwhile, Bianca skillfully kicked one of the other leaders in the head. Even Edvard who had been quiet before was acting, as he punched another original in the stomach, before receiving a hit himself.

"What is going on!" The vampires shouted.

They could feel the immense power from behind them. It was a power they recognised, so they turned their heads, and in doing so they could see their own leaders, now fighting against each other.

Just like how the Amra having the beasts on their side had boosted their morale, the vampires seeing their own leaders fighting against each other had lowered theirs. It was confusing for them all.

Edvard was going against Wallace, the 7th leader, who boosted his strongest defence with his cape. He was able to transform and turn it into anything he wished.

Edvard had been throwing punches but as it hit the cape, his attacks felt like he was hitting nothing but soft air, and soon the cape would change shape. It turned into a spear and was heading right for his head.

A pain could be felt running through Edvard's body at that point. There were deep injuries inside him, injuries that had yet to heal fully that had been given to him by Jim.

A slip up, in a fight between two originals though, it would be the end for one, that was until a man stood in-between both of them, Quinn holding out his hand, he held onto the spiked cape.

"Quinn?" Edvard called out... confused as to why this person would help them.

"I know you probably don't remember me." Quinn said. "Maybe you can just think of this as part of your powers. That fact that you were good to a person like me."

Quinn then raised his hand up, it felt like almost no energy had gathered, but still for some reason, Wallace felt like he needed to do everything in his power to stop this attack.

He covered himself from head to toe in the cape. With his hand raised, Quinn slammed it down, the cape's strange substance did nothing, its ability did nothing as Quinn physically felt Wallace's head with his finger tips, pushing down, until almost a pop sound was heard... the cape fell to the floor, and on the ground where Wallace once stood there was now nothing but blood.

"When this is all over, let's go for a drink together, like we used to." Quinn smiled.

Chapter 2255: A calming anger

Edvard looked back at Quinn and stared directly into his eyes. He was pulled in by time, and didn't even look at the scenery around him nor had he quite taken in what happened.

Because, the look in his eyes was gentle and had a hint of sadness, as if it was meeting a long time friend. The thing was with being a vampire that lived 1000's and 1000's of years, one got to read emotions on a face a lot better.

If they really wanted to, they could put the time into becoming an expert in nearly every field, as long as they kept up with the new developments, but reading faces was something a person did naturally. The heightened senses, going through the same situation again and again. It made them an expert at reading people, and only those that had experienced as much as them were good at hiding it.

For Quinn, technically he had lived a long life, but in reality the years he had experienced were few, so his emotions always showed easily on his face. Which was why Edvard wondered, why did this person look at him in such a way?

In his mind, there were no memories of him and Quinn. They had all been removed by Malik. In its place were stories told about how a vampire, no, a demon from the original world where they had come from, had manipulated him but thankfully they had saved him.

Even the beatings he had taken and the weakened state that affected his internal energy, rather than all of that punishment coming from Jim, in his memories it had come from Quinn.

Based on what he could remember, he had no choice but to believe it, and go on with his life, yet Edvard always felt that something was missing.

An original getting tricked, when why? Why would they even choose someone like him, when there were more capable Originals. In his head it didn't quite make sense, which was why he had decided to just distance himself away from others and everything that was happening.

As for why he had gotten involved now, it was because of the simple words, the Punisher's Convent. An old friend in Arthur, a promise and words that were only known by a few, that was why he had decided to help.

With all of these thoughts in his head, it was why Edvard gave a simple reply.

"That would be nice." Edvard answered.

The other leaders similar to Edvard had been locked in battle against each other. They were using a great amount of strength, but at the same time weren't

attempting to kill each other. The originals had been around each other for a long time.

They had their differences during those times, but other than with the 1st original king Laxmus, they hardly had large-scale direct confrontations. It was hard for them in some ways to fight each other like this, once again.

Because of this as well, all of them felt like they had a connection with one another. Something that set them apart from the other vampires, because they were the first of their kind.

They could feel that one of them had died. They all paused and turned their heads to see the scene of blood on the ground. They didn't quite understand what happened, apart from the fact one of them had died.

The reason for their confusion was because there was no rise in power. They couldn't feel the overflowing vampire aura coming from Quinn as it came last time.

Even then, if one was to attack with blood aura, or any type of energy, surely they would have felt it. What it meant was that the attack that Quinn had dealt, was purely a physical one, and it had reduced Wallace to that.

With a burst of his hand, a slap. It was like Quinn had swatted a bug into the ground. An attack so strong in pure strength that it could break through Wallace's defence, his healing, and all of his energy.

With this display alone, not a single original was going to try and stop him. Quinn had already surpassed all of them before, but this was to the level where their interference would be even less than a simple annoyance.

"I'm going to end this war." Quinn said. "Tell me, where is Jim?"

"He should be around 10 kilometres south from here. He won't be any further than that." Edvard answered. He wanted to say more, he wanted to warn him about Ray, and the others that would try to stop him, but for some reason he felt like there was no reason for him to worry.

At the same time Quinn had already left, he was already running, and there was no chance for Edvard to even catch up with him.

Quinn was running through the torn city, and around him he could smell the dead. He could feel it in the air, the blood that was everywhere. The anger was bulging up inside him, but it was doing so in a calm manner, he couldn't quite explain it.

It was almost a similar feeling to when he was a celestial. Rather than anger coming out of his fists, or through his voice and aura, it was coming out through his actions.

The reason for killing the original rather than giving him a beating, was because Quinn could see it. If he hadn't stopped the attack it would have been a fatal blow to Edvard.

For getting Edvard involved in this, for him keeping his family's secret and allowing them to live a normal life for a short while, he at least owed him this.

'I have to trust that the others have managed to break Sil out. Since everyone is still fighting, then that most likely means that something had to have gone wrong.'

'I can teleport to Minny through the shadow and see what's going on, but Jim is here. He is one half of the puzzle that I need to stop now. I will kill him and make sure he never comes back.'

'I know that won't outright stop the war straight away, but it's one of the first steps to this whole thing. If I can do that, then I can worry about what will happen to Ray after, or I can just ignore him completely.'

The new armour Quinn wore, that he had travelled the whole universe to create, he knew it was powerful. He could tell from just using it and wearing it now.

However, there were two problems that he had, one was Ray himself. His strength, it was hard to gauge. Even in the last fight, it never felt like Ray had been taking him seriously, as if he still had a lot more to give.

His own armour was powerful, and synced up with him perfectly.

'I have to remember, he was a being that at one point gave all of his powers to humanity. The powers that were used and that stopped the first Dalki war.'

During the last fight though, Quinn did notice that Ray hadn't used any abilities. It seemed like even though he was using the demon tier dragon's body as a host and his old armour, he was not at the level he was once before, this was not the Ray of the past he was going up against.

The second problem was, Quinn had no time to test out all of the skills of his new armour set. Wearing multiple pieces of armour, made from the strongest god slayers, there were bound to be some strong active, passive skills, and there was even a set skill that Quinn had never seen before.

'Before I get into a fight, I should take a quick look at all of them again, and just give myself a reminder of what they do.'

Out of all of these things, there was also something the system stated about his equipment that he had never seen before.

Chapter 2256: The first Armor of its kind

The new set of armour Quinn was currently wearing was a full set, just like the Blue Fang set. It was hard to come by high-tier sets for a number of reasons, one of them usually being the fact that they needed to be all made from the same type of crystal.

For Quinn himself, he had never had the chance to create an armour set, nor had he come by many that had an armour set. The only reason why he had one was due to Helen in the first place. Which was why it was considered such a big gift at the time.

Due to the way armour sets were made, if a person wanted a demon tier set, rather than just a single piece of item, it meant they would have to try and find the same demon tier beast to create a set. This was more possible with lower-tier crystals as there were usually multiple of the same type.

However, there were some exceptions to this. A skilled forger would be able to create a set as long as the beasts had similar traits. If they all focused on speed, the power of fire, or something along those lines, there were also the newly discovered upgrade crystals that could be used as well.

With these, again, a skilled forger could upgrade certain armors and then try to recreate other items to create a set as well.

With Quinn's current armour set, he felt like what he was creating didn't fit any of these standards. The God Slayers he faced, their powers and traits were completely different, nor did he use any of the other methods. Only the styling and colour of the armour was the same due to the materials and the forger itself it was made from. Yet, despite all of that, the armour Quinn had created was a set, and with that, it meant it had a set skill. Not only that, when Quinn had finished creating all pieces of the armour set, the system had popped up with a message.

[Congratulations, you have successfully created the 'God Slayer Armor set.]

[You are the first person to have successfully created a God Slayer Armor set!]

'The first God Slayer Armor set, does that mean what Ray is wearing, his armour is not considered at the God Slayer level? Still, how was this even possible? Is it just because I used all God Slayers to create the armour set, or is there some other type of link?'

Although Quinn wasn't so sure, there was one person he had to thank because he was sure it was impossible without him, and that was Alex.

What Quinn didn't know about Ray's armour set was that it was special in its own way, and there was a reason as to why it wasn't considered a God Slayer set. That was due to it actually being made from Ray's original body. It wasn't made from

crystals like regular armour, and anyone who wore the armour would be able to summon somewhat of the fierce power of the Red Dragon Sen.

[When wearing all pieces of the God Slayer Armor set, the current passive skills are active]

[Self-healing durability]

[All armour pieces have the ability to restore itself to its original full condition. No matter how damaged a piece is, or if split into several parts, the largest piece will restore itself to full condition.]

[Depending on how damaged the armour is, the time for restoration may vary.]

The description reminded him a lot of the demon-tier wings that Quinn had as well. Only in this case, it was an effect that worked on all the armour. Never did he have to worry about creating a new set of gauntlets again. Time and time again, he had lost equipment due to one reason or another, and unless he had a failed quest penalty like he did a long time ago, he would never have to worry.

[Celestial resistance]

[The will and hatred of all the God Slayers used to create the crystal have been passed onto the armour. In turn, the armour has great resistance to Celestial energy.]

'This is a skill that certainly suits the name of the armour. The best thing to go against Celestial energy has always been other Celestial energy. However, as a God Slayer, one would have to rely on their overwhelming power or powerful abilities. In a way, this armour makes it so Celestials are near enough on equal footing, but there is no telling how resistant it is, and I don't plan to fight Celestials any time soon.'

From experience, there were many Celestials that weren't good fighters at all. He could imagine that the five or maybe four-spiked Dalki were more powerful or skillful, but if the two were to fight, due to the effect of Celestial energy, the Celestial would win.

[God Slayer Zone]

[A passive skill that is always active. The God Slayer Zone is energy emitted from the armour that interferes with Celestial skills. Note: it does not interfere with Celestial energy.]

'Celestial skills!' Quinn thought.

Thinking about this, Quinn remembered when he was a Celestial, there were many things that Celestials could do. For one, they were able to enter the Celestial space,

they could also reincarnate and teleport to other planets. He was sure that there were other skills as well, but Quinn never got to see them.

'With this ability, it would stop Celestials from escaping or even contacting others for help.'

Immediately, Quinn started to think of Mundus. If he knew of these set skills or active skills, he would have never agreed to the deal. On top of that, he was pretty sure they would never let him use it again.

So far, based on the set skills alone, rather than just being a generally powerful armour, this was more so an armour specifically to go against the gods.

'Why would the universe put something like this in my hands though?' Quinn thought. 'That's what the Celestials, Logan, and Richard's information stated, right? Everything that happens is the will of the universe to a degree.'

'Allowing for an armour to have these types of effects.'

Quinn didn't dwell on it too much longer. Hopefully, when this was all over, there would be no confrontations with the Celestials. In the first place, other than the first set skill, none of the other set skills would help him against his current opponents.

It was then, when Quinn had read the last set skill, that he was a little confused. The name itself didn't give many clues as to what it actually did, and the description was a little confusing, but when he thought about it a little more, he believed it could be the best set skill of the lot.

[God Slayer Armour Set Skill]

[Limitless]

Chapter 2257.1: God Slayer Armor (Part 1)

[Limitless]

[When all pieces of the first God Slayer Armour set are worn together, it will have the Limitless effect. All pieces of equipment individually will have limitless stats.]

It was because of this explanation that Quinn had originally thought the set effect of this wasn't too much to write home about, but he knew that maybe it was more so due to the fact that he didn't really understand it.

That was when he started to look into detail a bit more. Checking out the equipment, just as the system stated, he could see that they all had this passive effect Limitless. When seeing this he noticed something else as well, and that was the fact that the equipment had no stats.

Even demon tier equipment would have a stat figure placed next to it, giving Quinn an idea of what were the strengths and weaknesses of each equipment, but here there was none.

Of course, currently stats didn't matter too much. The stats were just a boost to one's physicality, and there were now multiple energies that Quinn went against that could bypass the realms of normality. Celestial energy for one.

Still, It didn't explain much so he decided to do a little test. He only wore one piece of equipment and decided to check out the stats again, and this time he could see the system had an error sign, with a little (i) icon next to it.

[The system is unable to determine the value of this piece of equipment]

Trying this test for all of the pieces, he noticed that they all said the same thing.

'The system can't tell the value. Does that mean the stats that it gives, are beyond the system's understanding. But if that's the case, that's the value without the set boost. If we take the word limitless, doesn't that mean, as a set, the power is even stronger, to the point where it can't be measured?'

It was hard for Quinn to think, to really imagine what it meant, but the only thing he could imagine was... what if someone who had no strength at all was to wear this armour? If the system's words were right, then one just wearing the armour would have limitless power.

He imagined they would be stronger than most god slayers, celestials, and could even defeat demon tier beasts, but not just anyone had the armour, he did.

It was at that point that Quinn perhaps realised something. He had travelled with Mundus to fight some of the strongest God Slayers in existence and managed to beat them. He was already one of the strongest in the universe.

Now though, with the armour set, he was at the pinnacle and there would only be a few that could maybe hope to challenge him now.

Regardless, he would have to put this limitless power to the test, as he felt like he was also going up against someone with limitless power. With the armour it would at least put him and his opponent on similar grounds, but even then there were still more things the armour could do.

The first piece of equipment that Quinn had made were his God Slayer boots. It was the first opponent he had gone against. It was hard for him to say which opponent was the most difficult as they all gave him different struggles.

The first thing that Quinn noticed was the fact that there were more than one set of skills and this was for the boots alone.

[Passive Skill: Silent steps]

[The user who wears these boots will never make a sound as they move. No matter how fast or slow.]

When fighting, a person relied a lot on their senses and that included hearing. For a vampire that had enhanced hearing they used it a lot to track if someone was following them or near them.

Although the skill didn't sound all impressive when put together with Quinn's speed. He could leave situations with many unable to track him.

At the same time, whether it was thanks to the set ability or not, wearing all of the armour, he felt no slower than when he was using the Blue Fang set which just focused on speed.

[Flight steps]

[The User is able to step on air when using the boots. They can rise and fall, and the speed will be determined by the user's speed.]

The active skill didn't have a cooldown time, nor did it seem to run out. It was practically a piece of equipment that gave an ability to one. What Quinn liked about it though, was that it wasn't an ability similar to flight.

With flight one had to use it in strange ways, they didn't move their feet or would have to rely on wings of some sort. With this, Quinn could just run across the air as if he was fighting on the ground.

[Cloud clone]

[The user is able to make a total of three clones of themselves at one time. The clones are limited to 50 percent of the user's natural power. The clones are not durable]

Quinn already had the shadow clones that worked in a similar way. The problem was, his clones were unable to attack, they were more used as decoys. Although these could be used the same way, these clones were also able to attack.

The monkey man he had faced could produce more than three clones, but this was equipment made from his powers, rather than the god slayer himself.

All of these active skills were from a single piece of equipment and there was a lot more to go.

The next piece of equipment that Quinn had worked on in the forgery was the chest piece. In the end, the chest piece had been made alongside the shoulder guards, but with a focus on the chest piece since it covered the largest part on Quinn's body.

Due to how much material was going to be made, two God Slayer crystals had been used. The phoenix crystal, and the Behemoth crystal.

Just like with the boots, there was more than one skill for the item. However, it seemed like because they were made with the shoulder guards, that the skills were together, and would only work if the two pieces were used together.

In a way, the shoulder and chest piece had to be treated as one item.

[Sunfire Burn]

[An extreme heat with traits similar to the sun will be activated, dealing damage to those in the nearby area.]

Without using the skill, it was hard to know just how extreme the heat would be, but if it was anything like what Quinn had experienced going against the phoenix, he imagined that it would do well when fighting against multiple opponents.

[Indestructible shell]

[This skill can be used once per month. The skill allows the armour to become indestructible for ten seconds.]

This item reminded Quinn a lot of an item he used to have, the indestructible sword. The item didn't have good stats, but because of its trait there were multiple times when he could use it in a fight that helped him out.

Quinn was sure that with its stats in the first place that the armour would be pretty much indestructible, but if a large attack had the chance of finishing him off, it was a good safety move to have. Which made sense why it had a long cool down time.

Finally, there was the last skill of the chest piece, and once again, he was looking at something he had never seen before. With this new armour the system was showing him new things.

[A new flame]

[You have not met the requirements to use this skill]

Other than that, the system gave him no more information. Quinn tried to use the armour on its own, taking other pieces away, but the requirements still had yet to be met. The skills so far all followed a similar trait to the crystals they were made with, so it made him have some ideas, but still, one of the skills on the armour for now were locked.

With that, it left two more pieces of god slayer equipment that made up the God Slayer Armour set.

Chapter 2258.2: God Slayer Armor (Part 2)

Two more items made up the whole set, the mask and the gauntlets. The mask was originally meant to be the last item that Quinn wished to create, but because of the situation with Alex, and how Alex was guiding him the whole way, it had become the second to last item he made.

Because there was no telling whether or not Alex would still be there after the gauntlets.

Which was why the second to last item Quinn had created was the mask. It covered half of his face, and was designed like that of Oni masks that were made long ago in the past. This gave a vicious outward appearance and suited his armour as well as his vampire self well.

The thing was, the crystal that had been used to create the mask, was an unknown. The crystal had been received by the Dark Magus. Someone that was powerful enough to even contain Mundus.

Till this day, Quinn was unsure, if the two of them were ever locked in battle, which one of them would win. This showed not just him, but even the Celestials, that the Universe was incredibly vast and full of powerful beings.

In the end, a god slayer crystal had been handed to them, but they had no clue what from. Was it a beast, a more humanoid god slayer, what were its powers and what could it even do.

There was a chance that the god slayer crystal was even a weak god slayer, and that was why he decided to have it placed in the mask. Masks often didn't have much in terms of stats to give to the user, but were considered more of an additional item.

Like a ring, earring and so on, but knowing full well about how powerful Minny's god slayer ring was, there was a chance that this could be special as well.

[Shifting Mask]

[The mask's requirements to be powered change based on the user who is wearing it]

[Requirement blood: Blood can be used and stored in the mask as an energy source. The amount of blood that can be stored is limitless. The more blood stored the stronger the output of energy]

The mask had taken on the trait of Quinn being a vampire, which was why the requirement for him was blood. So far the mask seemed similar to when he used his own blood powers.

Having the title, Ruler of Blood allowed Quinn to control blood in the area, even from an area the size of the planet they were on. The problem was it took time to move all of that blood, then if he wanted it to become a powerful attack, he needed to condense it down to the point it could be used.

In this case, the mask could now be a storage place of blood, and there was no need to use the power stored in it. Through battles, he could continue to store the energy needed longer and longer.

While running through the battlefield, Quinn was already doing just that. There was also another use to the blood mask, something that he thought he would have never received. Now that he could store blood in his mask, he could also access that energy whenever he wished.

There was no need to use the energy all at once, it wasn't that type of thing, but what it practically meant was Quinn had an unlimited blood bank. He was able to take blood stored in his mask whenever he needed.

If they got through the armour, to eventually damage him, he could now even heal himself. With a war like this, with blood all around, it was a frightening thing to think about.

[Energy Converter]

[The stored energy can be converted into different types of energy]

[Lightning]

[Fire]

[Water]

Seeing this, it reminded Quinn a little of Sil. It was almost as if he could use different powers. The blood gathered could be used to allow him to use lightning energy, or other forms of energy. He didn't know how it quite worked as there was no time to test it just yet. Based on whatever opponent he faced though, it was sure to come in handy.

[Energy output]

[Based on what current energy is being used, the user may draw out energy from the mask. This can be used in one go, or as the user wishes.]

The last skill on the mask was the reason why Quinn could also use it in the same way as he would a blood bank, there was also no need for him to physically take the energy out. It was an automatic thing he could do with a thought of his mind.

The mask, that he didn't expect much out of, had in the end become quite the valuable thing.

Then finally, there was the last item. The gauntlets, made from the god slayer Asura. One that had frightening power in his fists and like Quinn used his fists to fight. Honestly, Quinn himself wasn't sure what to expect out of this one. It just seemed right when making the crystals but whenever he thought about the gauntlets, he had a heavy heart in doing so.

That was because not only were they made with the God Slayer crystal, but by using the Celestial blood guns. Where the soul of the best forger in the world, and his dear friend Alex was.

The gauntlets were a success but at what cost? Because, after creating the weapons, Quinn had yet to hear the voice of his dear friend, even now while using them.

'Alex, all of this in the first place is because of you. No matter what I will never forget you exist... and wherever you are, I hope you can see what you have created!' Quinn thought.

Just as he was about to remind himself of the skills and power of the gauntlets, there were two figures that had appeared in front of him. Immediately Quinn stopped as he looked at them.

"We manage to meet again." Chris said with a smile. "The last time, we didn't really get to fight each other so much."

"I don't want to fight either of you." Quinn said, looking at the other person by Chris' side, it was Peter. "I don't want to fight my friends."

"Friends? What do you mean? How can that be, look at what has happened. Jim has gone planet to planet in search of you to stop you. You have caused this war, you are no friend." Chris stated.

"I caused the war?" Quinn replied. "The races that lived on these planets were innocent. So much so that they banded together to stop your stupid conquest. Have I ever attacked you, have we ever been the ones to come after you?"

"Forget it, this is pointless. I will be going off to see Jim."

Chris's body started to transform and Peter turned into his celestial form as well.

"I'm sorry but we can't let you hurt our actual friend." Chris said.

Quinn tensed his fist, as he looked at both of them.

"I said I didn't want to fight you, not that I wouldn't."

Chapter 2259: Blood shock

Both Peter and Chris were present when Quinn unleashed his power on the planet Namrik. They felt the intense energy and, on top of that, heard about the story of him going up against the original leaders all at once.

In their heads, the person in front of them was the ultimate goal. If they dealt with him, then it meant this war was over. There was no need for them to go planet after planet chasing down a possible enemy.

Which was why, in that split second, Chris had to make a decision, as his body was transforming into his Werewolf form, his skin was starting to redden, from which was growing the fur on his body as well.

"Using this twice so soon puts a lot of strain on my body, but if I don't do at least this much, can I beat him?" Chris thought.

"Use everything you have!" Peter shouted out to Chris.

Peter was already a step ahead, having transformed into his celestial form, and his head tail splitting into two parts. In doing so, both of the head tails wrapped around Peter's fists, giving out the strongest blow he possibly could.

"I guess this is a good chance to test out a few things," Quinn thought.

Suddenly, right in front of the others, a puff of white smoke appeared, and in doing so, there were now three different Quinns entirely in front of them.

"Crap... what are these clones? Which one is the real one?" Chris thought.

He had no time to think as he went ahead and struck out with both of his claws towards one of them, while Peter had done the same. At the same time, the clones produced a strike of their own with their fists covered in blood aura. They spun like the blood drill Quinn often would use.

The powers collided all over the place, producing pulses of energy in the area, sending clouds of dust. But with Chris' speed and power, he had managed to overpower the strike, and his claw went right through Quinn's body, but it only exploded into a cloud of smoke.

Peter, with his strike, had done the same, hitting the other Quinn body, and his target had turned into a cloud of smoke as well.

"How is that possible? That attack was real, it was powerful and stronger than any of the blood aura that I felt before. How could that possibly come from a fake?" Chris was stunned.

He imagined that if he wasn't in his red werewolf form, maybe the strike would have been close to equal in power. Still, he didn't have time to think of that. Since there was still one Quinn left, it meant the real one had to be him.

A blood drill was thrown from the centre, and Chris managed to avoid it by jumping to the side and launching himself from the ground, destroying the area beneath him, he stabbed the final Quinn right through its body.

"Got you!!!" Chris said.

His risk had paid off, and using the red werewolf form from the beginning had worked. Looking up, he tried to see the pained look on Quinn's face as he said his last words, but instead, he just saw a smile on his face.

"What the..."

After the smile, another cloud of smoke puffed right in front of Chris' face. Even the third one was a clone. A feeling could be felt on the back of his head as it was grabbed and slammed down into the ground.

It cracked the floor beneath Chris, and Quinn soon lifted him up and slammed his face into the ground once again. After that, with a lift of his hand, there were several blood swords in the air around him.

Swinging it down, the blood swords went right through Chris' body, through his arms, legs, and his back, but avoided certain areas.

"I know you have good healing, so you will survive this punishment at least," Quinn said, as he got up off the floor and looked towards the other one on the field.

Chris was in pain, his whole body was shaking. Not just from the blood swords but from the head strike. He didn't understand why his body was hurting so much, and even now, it felt like it was getting attacked from the inside. His body was trying to heal while he was getting hurt at the same time.

Because of this, he was finding it hard to even move his body.

"When he slammed my head into the ground... What did he do? Why is my body acting this way? Was it something in his gauntlets... what is going on?" Chris was trying to think back to when he had gone wrong with the fight. Where was the slip-up? The main issue was the clones. Because they could produce a strong amount of blood aura, it was hard to tell what was real and what wasn't.

Because in the end, the attacks, although weaker, were real attacks, so one would have to worry about the attack from the clones as well. There was one more trait of the clones that was annoying as well, that Chris didn't consider until now, and that

was the fact that when the clones were made, a puff of smoke would appear, and the same would happen when they were destroyed as well.

The puff of smoke didn't last long, but it gave enough time for someone at Quinn's speed to do things that could be unseen. For Quinn, he entered his shadow at that moment and appeared elsewhere. While they were too focused on killing the fakes, he was always behind them, ready to strike at any moment. His new boots helped greatly, with his movements being silent as well, making it almost impossible to know where he was.

The only reason why Quinn hadn't struck sooner was because he himself wanted to test his new skill out a bit.

Peter turned his head, looking agitated that he had been tricked by a clone.

"I'll kill you!" Peter shouted, as he ran forward once again. This time, rather than wrapping his tail head around each arm, he wrapped both of them around a single arm.

They twisted around each other, and spirals of yellow energy were flowing around them, heading straight for his fist.

"Let's try and see just how durable this armour is!" Quinn thought, planting his feet on the ground, he moved his body so the fist collided right in the centre of his chest piece.

It had hit the top of the phoenix design. The yellow energy exploded on the spot, and sparks went off in all directions from the armour and almost disappeared in the air instantly. Even the energy from Peter's arm had gone, and he was confused by this.

Looking down, Quinn could see that there wasn't even a dent on his chest piece armour. Nor had he gone flying back into the distance either. He just stood there firm and strong.

"You have no clue, do you? The energy I gave you belonged to me. It's celestial energy, so of course it wouldn't work."

Peter's attack was the perfect chance to see how strong the armour was. Peter was strong physically. He even used Qi in his attacks, and it had celestial energy with his celestial form.

The effect of the armour worked, dispersing the energy, meanwhile, the armour could take the full extent of his blow without him doing anything. Quinn assumed this was all due to the limitless factor of the set.

As he thought, as long as anyone wore this armour, they would be one of the strongest there were. Quinn quickly moved his hand right onto Peter's chest.

"Just wait here, my friend... we can talk soon."

[Skill activated]

[Blood Shock]

The fingertips on Quinn's gauntlet lit up, and sparks emitted from them into Peter's body for a second. Just like Chris, it felt like almost his whole body was shutting down, trying to heal damage that was being done inside, and he fell to the ground, unable to move.

"What have you done to me?!" Peter yelled out.

"You will be fine soon, and by the time you can get up, all of this will be over," Quinn answered.

Chapter 2260: Time moves...Goodbye

For Quinn, two of the biggest obstacles had been dealt with, and it was a lot easier than he had imagined. If he had to fight Chris or Peter before, it wasn't that he never thought he could beat them. Quinn knew his strength well and knew theirs as well.

The problem was beating them without accidentally killing them or bringing too much harm to them. For one to do that, they would have to be a level higher than their opponent. Be so much stronger and confident, and in this case, Quinn had done well.

From far away, great distances away, there were quite a few people watching Quinn and his performance.

'The armour should at least be able to do this much.' Mundus said, as he tapped his finger and a smile appeared on his face. 'It took a lot of effort to get it in the end, but it seemed like it was worthwhile.'

'With this, I doubt we will have to worry so much about the growing god slayers from Earth. As long as he does his agent duties once in a while, he will be able to live a happy life. The only concern now is his son. We have to make sure no celestial ever finds out about that. Otherwise, it could be chaos all over again.'

At the same time, there were another two celestial beings that were watching the fight go on from their own space.

"Are you jealous?" Bliss asked.

"Jealous, why would I be?" Sera replied back. "He only managed to subdue them that easily because of the equipment he has. I've never even seen anything like that, and besides, I didn't lose my fight."

"Yes, you're right." Bliss replied. "You didn't lose your fight, you just decided to run away. That's a lot better way for a God of War to lose."

Sera wanted to snap back and say something, but he decided to just wave his arm as he looked further as to what was going to happen next.

Meanwhile, Bliss was taking a look at the armour. She was wondering how such a thing was even made. Once again, when something related to the Talen's appeared, her foresight skill was practically useless. It never showed her anything like this.

'Let's see how he does.'

Using the boots, Quinn kicked up in the air, giving him a more aerial view, and with his eyesight, it didn't take him long to find what he was looking for. Running

directly forward, in an area where there was nothing but rubble, he had landed around fifty or so metres from Jim.

"I should have known that you were behind all this mess!" Jim shouted. "These aliens, the beasts... they would have never been able to put up this much of a fight on their own! Why do you have to do this, why are you trying to get in my way!"

In an instant, Quinn had moved from his position and grabbed Jim right by the neck. He was holding on tightly, allowing him only to narrowly breathe, and held him up in the air.

"You even try anything, and I will crush your neck before you can do anything." Quinn said.

Two blood swords were raised, one pointed at the back of Jim aimed at the heart and another at the top of his head. One way or another, Quinn was going to finish Jim off.

"You are asking me why am I getting in your way!!" Quinn shouted back, and a wave of red blood aura erupted, passing through Jim's body and pushing pieces of the building behind in the air and sending them crashing down.

"You were the one that created the Dalki in the first place and started this whole war. Even then, after getting rid of your mess, you managed to wriggle your way back in somehow.

"You then changed everyone's memories, taking my place. But I still chose not to get in your way, to not get involved, but you just had to. You had to make everyone around you suffer, including my friends and me, just to get what you want! What do you even want? Why are you even doing this when your time ended a long time ago?"

Quinn started to pour his Qi energy directly into Jim, and in doing so, he wanted to suppress all of the energy that was inside his body. But when he did that, there was an energy he could sense, one that he had become quite familiar with.

With his other hand, Quinn ripped off the sleeve of his coat, and he could see that there his bare skin filled with crystals, not just any crystals but they were all nest crystals. From his senses, he could tell that there were even more in Jim's body.

"What have you even done to yourself? Why are you going so far?" Quinn asked.

He could tell that Jim was trying to speak, so he loosened his grip a little to hear his words. At one point, this was the man who worked by Vincent's side, and the two of them shared part of the same blood.

He also wanted to know the truth because he needed it to make sense, why Erin, why Leo, and all the others had to die.

"Because... I'm trying to take it all back," Jim answered. "I'm sure you've seen it. Power that is beyond our understanding. Even these crystals. There are entities out there that have the supreme power to change anything."

"Being as strong as you are, I'm sure you might have even met them. For us, there is one thing that we vampires can never escape, even if one is immortal, and that is time."

Vampires could live a long time, so Quinn wondered if he meant that vampires couldn't escape death. But that wasn't true because Jim and even the originals were able to live forever. So he couldn't have meant that.

"For us beings, there is something that never changes no matter how powerful we are, and that is the fact that time passes and moves in a straight line. But I've seen it, I've experienced a glimpse of it with my powers, time can move freely. It's just, for us, time moves straight."

For a second, Quinn started to think about what Jim was saying. These supreme beings, was he referring to the celestials, or he might even be referring to the Ancient Ones? It was true that they had some control over time, even Quinn did when he was a celestial.

The space where the celestials went to was said to be created by one of the Ancient Ones, and there time moved several times slower. There was even Mundus who could stop time and even speed up time in a certain area.

What Jim was saying didn't sound too crazy. There was also the second original's power, to reverse time to a degree on an object or person. If powers like so really did exist, then were the Ancient Ones able to do what Jim was stating?

Did one of them have the power to turn everything back? Did it mean he could see the faces of the others again?

"They do nothing because they don't care about us, but I will find one way to make them care, and when I do, I'll tell them to revert everything back to that day, the day when I made the Dalki!"

'Is that why Jim has no problems doing the things he does, sacrificing the lives of the vampires, killing the innocents, all because he thinks he can turn it all back?'

Quinn gripped Jim's throat tighter once more. "You are not different from them!" Quinn shouted. "You are seeing these lives as nothing, the pain and experiences they are going through is real, all of the suffering. Even if you turn things back, the suffering they have experienced is still there."

"And what if you're wrong? What if you can't do anything after doing all this? You took a chance and ruined so many lives just so you could have a chance at

repeating yours! Even if you could change it, it doesn't change what happened, and me and you will always remember. I can't let this continue... Goodbye... Jim."

The blood sword pointed at his back went right through his chest, piercing through to the other side, covered in blood.

Chapter 2261: Rush to the tower

The battlefield in front of the tower was still an intense one. Geo was still looking after the Amra, he would use his strong legs and jump from one side of the battlefield to the other and using the momentum he skidded across the floor while throwing his arm out hitting the vampires right in the face.

His strong hits could take out most of the vampires in one blow.

"Thank you, sir." The Amra thanked him.

Geo looked the Amra up and down, parts of his flesh had completely been cut off; he wasn't in a good state.

"You should fall back. Let the beasts do most of the work. I know you want to help your people but you have already done a lot." Geo answered.

"I could say the same for you sir, as long as you are out here, I will continue to fight as well."

It was an expected response from the stubborn Amra.

"Fine, but then let's focus on helping our Amra friends and then we will rest together."

Thanks to the demon-tier shadow beasts, Geo himself no longer had to deal with the troublesome vampires, and the originals were fighting against each other. This gave him the perfect chance to save as many of the Amra race as he possibly could.

His fellow soldier was right though, he was incredibly tired, he had been fighting a lot, and had been in tough fight after fight, his arms were no longer even glowing with celestial energy.

Scouting the battlefield, Geo started to look for the other Amra, and that's when he saw the large Owl-like beast land directly in front of him. Dust was blown from all sides before its feet hit the floor.

On top of the beast's neck though, there were three people. Jumping down was Dober, as well as the two vampires that had helped the Amra for a while now, Jeouk and Ronkin.

"These boys, they bring a message for us." Dober stated.

"It's not exactly from us." Ronkin replied. "The beast, it's telling us that everyone should head back into the tower as soon as possible. The beasts will continue to fight and cover us while everyone is to head inside."

Geo thought it was a strange request for them to make. The fight wasn't over. Sure the tides were turning, but the vampires were getting used to fighting beasts and were utilising their team work as well.

"You have to remember that an order from the beasts means that it was most likely one that came from Quinn." Jeouk mentioned.

"If he wants us to go to the tower, I would say that it's because he believes that it's the safest place for us." Dober commented.

The tower was safe because it practically was a space that existed not on this planet. At the same time the tower was protected from external attacks, to a degree, but even if it was destroyed and they were all inside, it meant they would all be safe and it was why the other Amra were currently inside of it as well.

"If he wants us to head back in the tower, it must mean Quinn is either afraid that we will lose the war... or that everyone is going to get swept up in something big."

Nodding, Geo agreed and they all split up to give the order to the rest of the Amra that were still fighting. Telling them all to head to the tower. They tried their best not to shout it, as they didn't want the other side getting wind of what was happening.

Bit by bit, the Amra were heading into the tower, and it was no time to be a brave soldier, as Geo stated even he would be going into the tower soon.

"Hurry up, get in there fast and head to the 25th floor, that's where the rest of the Amra are staying!" The Amra that were still in somewhat good condition stayed outside while leading the others to the tower.

The reason why it was important for them to state which floor for them to head to, was in case the tower was destroyed. If the tower was destroyed then so would its mechanism, and if that happened, the Amra would be on different planets and spread out in different areas.

Luckily, most of the Amra had made it into the tower, and only now were the vampires noticing the lack of aliens, as they were too busy fighting against the beasts.

At that moment, a large beam of energy could be felt. Everyone had stopped fighting, looking up in the sky they could see a pulse of energy push all of the clouds out of the way, following right after, a sharp red laser was shot out and hit the ground.

Right where the red laser had hit, a giant explosion occurred. It looked to just be a pure form of energy, like a nuclear blast. The wind had hit them all first, and now the energy blast was following.

"GET IN THE TOWER NOW!" Geo shouted to them all. He could see Amra that were far off in the distance. Jumping from where he was, he reached out and grabbed two of them and quickly jumped back.

Even the vampire leaders were stunned and unsure about what to do, as they saw this big large amount of energy coming towards them.

The blood sword had cleanly stabbed right through Jim's heart. It was covered with real blood and not just blood aura, the life from Jim's eyes had gone, his head flopped downward and there was no sign of a heart beat.

"I won't make the same mistake that I made last time." Quinn said. "I know you still have clones of yourself out there, I know what you're like now. You probably have backup upon backup of yourself spread out.

"Maybe even on planets that I don't even know about, but I'm going to make sure to head to every single facility you have made and destroy everything. You made sure that everyone forgot about me, well I'm going to erase every single trace of you ever existing in this universe.

"Any mention of your name in books, places that you were, or things you took part in, I'm going to get rid of it all. So you can never come back again, and I'm going to start with you."

Quinn meant what he said, and even though he knew the Jim in front of him was dead, he wanted to get rid of every part of his body.

'He's here.' Quinn looked up, and could sense the energy coming towards him, he had no choice but to let go of Jim's body as he jumped back and crossed his arms, when he did, the shadow naturally came around his front.

A huge explosion followed after, shaking the entire ground, disintegrating part of it as well as all of the buildings around them. In the end Quinn went into his shadow space, and a short while later he came back out, he could see the person he had been worrying about this whole time.

He stood there looking part Dalki and part human, more human than the last time he had seen him, covered in his red dragon scale like armour.

"I knew we would meet each other again." Ray said with a smile. "And it looks like you got an upgrade since the last time I saw you."

"I could say the same to you."

Sera and Bliss both had sweat beads running down the sides of their face when they saw the person who had arrived. Both of them knew Ray from the past and present.

"Who do you think is going to win?" Sera asked.

"You know how powerful Ray is." Bliss replied. "But he gave up nearly all of his strength and power a long time ago for the sake of everyone else."

"So you're telling me this is a weaker version of Ray? If that's the case, I'm not buying it." Sera repleid.

"You might be right." Bliss replied. "Right now he is using the body of a Demon-tier beast, although more accurately, of a god slayer level beast. Ray's soul was already powerful and added to that body he became incredibly strong."

"But then, he had to come across the dormant infinite celestial." Bliss explained. "He took its power and added it to his own, with that he practically has the same amount of energy as he did in the past."

"The problem was the body he was in, it wasn't as strong as his old body, which was why Ray was going around searching for nest crystals to improve his own body, he was getting even stronger, closer to what he once was, and finally, he managed to get the dragon armour from Edvard that was made from his own body."

"With the armour, it empowers his current body until the point it was like his dragon one. If you were to ask me, out of Quinn or Ray of the past, 9 times out of ten I would have told you Ray would win."

"Although this isn't the old Ray, he's pretty close to what he was in the past."

Sera was silent for a moment, as he picked up on something Bliss said.

"9 times out of 10 huh? I guess that means Quinn still has a shot."

Chapter 2262: H kill them all

It was the grand conquest of the Marpo Cruise with the leaders Jack and Jim. So far they had been taking it in turns as to which one was the main attacker when it came to attacking different races.

They never had much trouble doing things this way. There were times where the opponent was a little tough, but they always had forces that were bigger and stronger than the other. Yet for the first time, both were having major trouble.

Jack had yet to receive any updates from Jim about what was happening, and even if a request for help was sent out, there was no way for him to really help the other in the first place.

That was because Jack had a lot of trouble himself. The androids had destroyed many parts of the Marpo Cruise. The strong Dalki were struggling against their opponent and in the end, he had to use his trump card, H and the six spiked Dalki, but he had confidence in them that they would be able to get the job done, even if Pine couldn't.

The Dalki known as H, and the two six spiked Dalki had landed in the market square. The fighting had virtually stopped all around, but those that were fighting the five spikes just moments ago were still close by at the edge of the market.

Nearly all of them knew of the being called H. Russ and Layla had seen the visualisation of the battle against Sil. Logan, Vicky, and Jake had heard and seen him act a few times here and there so they had plenty of information on him.

As for the Blades, Shiro, and the others, they were there during the battle as well. Seeing H standing there, caused all of them to freeze. It had already taken a lot out of them all, nearly all of them had pushed themselves to the limit just to defeat the five Spikes as well as Pine, and now they had H.

However, what were they to do? If they tried to run away, there was nowhere to go, and surely he could catch them all, other than Stark who wasn't there. Could they try to talk and beg for their life?

That would have been foolish, this was war and they had already killed Pine. All of this meant, they only had one choice, they had to fight knowing full well that there was a high chance of dying, no, that they would die.

Which was why Wince had made the first move, she had ultimately realised this before everyone else, and if she could get a hit in, to damage H in any way possible, then maybe it would give them a chance to survive, or maybe at least the others.

However, the results were devastating, the trident used in the attack had been grabbed and was hurled right back at Wince, creating a large hole in her stomach. Ceril, her dear sister by her side, could see no life in her eyes.

"No, no, what are the Mermerials meant to do now? What are they meant to do without you? Who is meant to lead them, me? That won't work, that can't work, you can't be dead!" Ceril cried.

"Don't worry, you can join her." H said. One moment he was in the centre of the marketplace, the next as if he had teleported and he was right next to Ceril, with his hand raised above her head.

Only, H's hand didn't look regular. It had a sharp edge, his entire hand looked like a giant sword, and that was because he was using the transformation ability. The transformed hand, although looking like a sword, had the Dalki outer skin and hard scales.

Swinging it down, Ceril could see the attack, with her half vampire self, she tried to move out of the way, using the blood water to push her, the power of her own leg's but it was far too slow.

The bladed Dalki hand went right through the centre of her body, and the two halves split apart. Right in front of their eyes they had all witnessed it, another one of the pillars of the group had been eliminated in front of their eyes and with such ease as well.

"We... can't beat him." Shiro said.

"He's stronger than last time." Vorden added speaking in the mind. "He has more spikes than before... he has ten spikes on his back."

From the tail running up, there were spikes all along, then on H's shoulder, two spikes could be seen sticking out, even larger than that of the ones running on his back. Never had they ever witnessed a ten spike Dalki before.

When they met him on the ship, they hadn't seen his back apart from when he was chasing Stark, and he had done so too fast in the first place, now they could count the number of spikes easily.

The problem was, not only would going up against a ten spike be difficult in the first place for all of them, or near enough impossible, this was not an ordinary ten spike. This was infused with parts of the Blade family, and had remnants of Hilston's DNA.

One of the most fierce and cruel Blades to ever live. Then he also had multiple abilities running through his body. All of these things were stacking up. Even if

they hadn't gone against Pine and the five spikes from before, they felt like they would have stood no chance.

"We were idiots." Shiro clenched his fist. "To think that we could rescue Sil from them. We trained so hard, thinking that all that hard work would have enabled us to do something, but we would have never been able to rescue Sil."

"What are you talking about!" Vorden shouted in Shiro's head.

"We did rescue Sil, and we were all there! So the hard work was not in vain."

"Does any of that really matter?" Raten said. "At the end of the day, no matter what we cry about, we need to fight this bastard, and somehow live."

In other areas in the marketplace, there were those that were contemplating what to do.

"We have to get out of here, if they found out we helped Logan we could be done for as well!" The humans shouted, already running away.

"I think that's our cue to get out of here as well." Vicky said, putting Logan on her shoulder.

"What are you doing?" Logan said. "Didn't you want to take revenge? That person is made up of your family. When we found out, you said you would do everything in your power to take him out."

"They are already dead." Vicky replied. "But you Logan, you are still alive. Right now, I care about those that are still alive a lot more than the dead. I already nearly lost you, I'm not going to lose you!"

"Then what about Jake?" Logan replied. "He is still down there, and it looks like he's ready to fight."

Meanwhile, there was one more group of people, arguing with each other.

"We have to go!" Russ stated. "We can't face that person. I was in charge of protecting you and your family, so I'm telling you now we have to leave."

"If we leave now, then that means everyone on this planet dies. Everything will have been lost!" Layla argued back.

"And how are we going to beat a guy like that in the first place!" Russ shouted back.

"You beat Pine didn't you, You were strong enough to beat him, so you can do the same again."

"I can't!" Russ replied. "I have already used up nearly all of my powers. Let's just get out of here! Minny, you want to protect your mum and uncle right, then shadow us away, or shadow us to Quinn or something, you can do that right?"

In the middle of their arguing, H had returned to the centre of the Marketplace. He placed both of his hands together, and his fingertips started to cover in frost. In the centre of his hand a large ice ball was being made.

"Let's get rid of everyone in one go." H declared.

Even the two six spike's next to H didn't like the sound of that.

Chapter 2263: No one Brave enough?

No one was quite sure what H was doing as the misty energy gathered in his hands, but soon there was a chill in the air that could be felt by all. Some thought about going in and stopping H. It was clear he was charging up a big attack, yet no one moved. They were worn out from fighting already, and if they did go in, wouldn't it just be speeding up their death?

"My sword... I can stop it with my sword," Layla said, as she got up and picked it up off the ground. Russ had thrown it to her after he was done with it. Although he did want to keep it to himself, he didn't like the feeling he had before. It almost felt like he wasn't the one in control.

As Layla went to walk forward, Russ quickly turned around and kicked her in the stomach, sending her right back down to the floor.

"What do you think you're doing!" Russ asked. "You can hardly move. Going outside would be suicidal."

Layla was holding her stomach. In some ways, Russ was right because she couldn't even see his kick. So even with the sword, how would she even touch a ten-spike Dalki?

"How are you even able to hit me?" Layla asked.

"Because of the thing your husband left inside of my head. It's to protect you no matter what, and the best thing to do is to not get involved at all," Russ claimed.

The large ice ball had finished being made from H's hand. It was the size of H's own chest, and when letting it go, the ice ball hit one of the Six Spike Dalki by his side. Its whole body froze up in an instant. From head to toe, there was now a statue of a Six Spike Dalki.

The other one seeing this tried to run away, but the ice ball made by H after hitting one Six Spike went straight to its closest target, the other Six Spike Dalki. It jumped but wasn't quick enough as the ball touched its back. It froze in place partly in the air, and then fell to the ground, smashing into tiny pieces. It was clear that the Dalki was dead.

"If that ice ball completely froze the strong Six Spike like that, if it hits any of us, we're done for!" Shiro said. "Everyone, run away."

Shiro quickly switched to Raten, the most athletic out of the lot. In doing so, he ran past the other Blades and quickly scaled the building with his bare hands. When he turned around, he could see that the large ice ball had gone toward the other Blades.

The ice ball was rapid in movement, hitting one person, going from one person to the next, freezing them all on the spot. Some tried to attack the ice ball with their

powers, using flames, water, and other abilities to push it away, but they were unable to do anything as it hit them one by one.

"We have to help them," Vorden claimed. "We can't just stay up here and watch them all die."

"How can we help them? We don't have the power to help them," Raten claimed.

On top of that, H was moving as well. It wasn't very fast. He had a large smile on his face as he entered the field of frozen Blades. He was walking slowly to each person and slapping them with his large hands. Each time he did, the ice sculptures would break into multiple pieces. For Shiro watching from above, he had bitten his lip so hard, blood was trickling down his face.

"I really can't do anything but just stay up here while watching him kill everyone we know, everything we have built up one by one!" Shiro fell to his knees clenching both hands.

Every single one of the Blades that had helped out in the fight, that was there for the war, and had survived the original attack by Jack, had now been frozen. Shiro was now the only survivor left from the Blade group.

The ice ball, having travelled through all of the Blades, was now heading right for Jake Green.

"If it's ice, then the best thing to do will be to melt it!" Jake had been gathering up his own ball of power. Using his powers of fire and earth together, he could create hot molten lava.

At the right time, he thrust his two hands forward, and the lava spewed out toward the ice ball. It continued to hit it, producing masses of steam in the air, and it looked like the ice ball was getting smaller as well, but it wasn't enough for the ice ball to completely disappear.

"That's fine, I have plenty of things I can still do!" Jake thought.

He was ready to go to the next part of his plan, but the fact that his ice ball had been affected caused H to look his way. He had caught the attention of H. There were still around ten more frozen Blades for him to go through.

"It might be best to get rid of that one first," H thought.

There was another person that noticed this, the look in H's eyes, which was why, right from behind Jake, a person had appeared. They grabbed his waist, and the two of them disappeared again.

The magma stopped, and Jake was nowhere to be seen.

"What the... mum, what did you do that for?" Jake asked.

Having gathered back a small bit of her power, Vicky had teleported down to Jake, grabbed onto him, and teleported him back to where Logan and she were. They had moved to the rooftop to inside one of the buildings still watching the scene from afar.

"You stood out too much," Vicky stated. "I know you're strong, I know you want to help, but the second that thing laid eyes on you, I saw your life vanish before my eyes, I saw everything go just like that."

Vicky was finding it hard to keep in the tears, and Jake, noticing this, didn't want to shout back.

"Mum, but if I don't stop him, if no one stops him, then who can? I was the one that came out the least injured and with the most energy. The other aliens aren't strong enough, and everyone else is too tired."

Looking out the window, the ice ball had caught their eye. Although smaller than it was, one could tell it still had devastating power, and now it was heading right for the house where Layla, Russ, and Minny currently were.

"Maybe I can block this with the shadow," Russ said as a shadow appeared in front of them but disappeared in an instant. Parts of shadow were just seen flickering, but nothing else. Russ had truly used up all of his MC.

"This is why we should have run when we had the chance!" Russ complained, and that's when Minny went ahead and stood in front of both of them.

"Minny, what are you doing? Just hide in your shadow space. Get out of here!" Layla shouted.

Russ thought for a second; maybe Minny could use her shadow to block the attack, but if the attack was too strong, it wouldn't work out, and that was just stopping them from one attack, not getting rid of the problem... H.

"Don't worry, Mum." Minny said as she reached out her hand, and the ring with the green gem on it started to glow. "I will protect us, I will get rid of the bad man."

The ring lit up, and suddenly the whole ice ball just disappeared, just like that, it had been removed. Everyone was stunned and didn't know what happened, including Layla.

This was because when Minny had fought against Mundus in the past, using the power of the God Slayer ring, both she and Russ were frozen in time. They had no idea the extent of what Minny could do, and neither did H.

"This time, I'm going to use the ring right!"

Chapter 2264.1: The power of the ring (Part 1)

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

One moment, the large ice ball was hurtling towards them. It was impossible to stop, as many different types of attacks and abilities were used against it. Even one of the strongest humans in existence, Jake Green, had used a lava attack, and the ice ball still remained.

Yet somehow, Minny was able to get rid of the attack. What was strange for those looking at the situation, though, was that there was no trace of the attack at all. The ice ball hadn't crashed into the ground.

They didn't see it clash against any type of energy. Instead, it completely disappeared.

"Minny... what did she do?" Layla raised an eyebrow and noticed the ring on her hand. She hadn't seen it before. It was an item that had been kept in her shadow space. It was very important to her since it was given to her by her father, and it was why she would only bring it out in a situation like this.

"It turns out that there are far more difficult ones than I originally thought, but it doesn't matter. There are many things I can do," he said as his hand started to spiral with lightning.

The attack went straight out from his hand, and the blue lightning bolt was going toward the small little vampire, but showing no fear, she lifted her hand up again, and with the ring lighting up, the attack had completely disappeared. The same thing happened and there was no trace of the attack at all.

Now Minny herself had transformed, and she was in her celestial form. Using her large claws, she was charging up a Blood aura attack. She threw it out, and a large celestial blood claw attack came out.

It looked like a normal blood swipe, only with more condensed energy and it had the power of celestial energy as well.

Seeing this, H was not afraid. As a ten-spike Dalki, he had incredible physical capabilities, including that of speed. So much so, before coming down, he had decided to not take a speed-based ability.

Looking at the attack, he was ready to move out of the way and attack Minny directly. That was until the attack was suddenly right in front of him. The red aura hit his face and scratched against his hard outer body.

Small ripples of red power exploded as the attack managed to hit. However, the attack had barely managed to singe H, and instead, he just had the look of annoyance on his face.

"Fine, let's see how your strange power exactly works!" H stomped on the ground, and the whole floor was instantly covered in ice.

Russ picked up Layla and rushed to the upper floors. The ice hit the building and was slowly climbing up, but it had soon stopped, as H had done what he needed to do.

Minny, avoiding the attack, had jumped up in the air. She couldn't stay in the air forever and would eventually have to land back down in the attack. As for H, unlike Jake, he was unable to use two abilities at the same time.

As he stopped putting power into the ice, he started to put power into his lightning strike again and threw out, this time, two lightning bolts towards her. Minny quickly moved her hand with the ring, one lightning bolt disappearing and then the other.

When she landed back down on the ice, she was completely fine as her feet were covered in shadow, stopping the attack from affecting her.

"This little one is full of tricks," H said to himself.

For now, neither H nor Minny were going full out against each other. After the first few sets of attacks not working, it was almost as if the two of them were testing each other out. It was incredibly intense for everyone watching as they were waiting for the next one to make their move.

So far, though, against all odds of everything they had seen, Minny was holding her ground.

'I haven't completely figured it out yet, but I'm getting close' H thought. 'She didn't bother to do whatever she had been doing so far against the ice attack. There has to be a reason, maybe she was unable to block the ice attack.'

'Then when making my lightning attack disappear, she was only able to make one attack disappear at a time. Does this have something to do with her attacks as well?'

In the middle of his thoughts, Minny had stored up power in both of her claws again and threw her attacks out. Just like last time, though, they had just left her fingertips, and as they did, they were suddenly right in front of H's face.

This time he was ready, and emitting a large amount of energy from his body, a slightly yellow aura came out, and dispelled the red energy.

"I can't believe it... that ten-spike even knows Qi... what are we meant to do?" Layla said. She didn't like the fact her daughter was out there fighting, but she was the only one who was able to go against him so far, and she knew it was because of the God Slayer item that had been gifted to her.

'It happened again!' H thought. 'The attack didn't suddenly get faster. It was almost as if the attack teleported. Either way, there's no need for me to figure out how she's doing her attacks. What I need to figure out is a way to counter them. If her far attacks can suddenly get close, then this might as well be a close fight!'

H stomped his foot on the ground again, and a spike of ice rose up from the icy floor right below Minny. She moved quickly, with the tip of the spike scratching her red celestial skin. It wasn't strong enough to do damage, and part of it frosted for a bit before the power eventually evaporated.

Spikes of ice started to come up, chasing Minny all over the place. But if there was one thing she was confident in, it was her speed. She continued to run across the ice, zigzagging from one side to the other, to dodge the spikes. Then, jumping up, she lifted both feet and pushed off the ice pillar, heading straight toward H. And just like with the attacks, one moment she had pushed off the ice, and the next she was directly in front of H.

With a bloody clawed celestial powered strike, she swiped right at H, making a fist as hard as she could. Her claws were unable to pierce against the hard scale skin of H, but it had caused his head to move slightly.

In retaliation, with his fast reflexes, H swung his arm out, which transformed once again into that of a blade, ready to slice Minny in half. But the attack had hit nothing but air.

From the movement of H's hand, the sheer power emitted from the strike was large and powerful, cutting right through the ice, going through the buildings off in the distance, and continuing on, cutting everything that got in its path.

Minny had regained distance between the two again and was standing right next to the large strike in the ice. Her heart was beating fast because she knew if she had been hit by that, she would have been killed in an instant.

"I got a hit... I managed to get a hit... but if I get hit once... I die," this thought was running through her head, and she was starting to feel immense pressure.

"I want to run away, I want to call Dad for help, I want Mommy to fight instead. All of this is really scary... but I promised Dad that I can do this... I can do this!"

Minny said, looking back at the large strike mark that went on further than she could see through the city.

Chapter 2265.2: The power of the ring (Part 2)

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

When Quinn had originally made the god slayer ring, he believed it was one of the most powerful items in existence. Because it essentially allowed the user the ability of space. This wasn't even an ability that was known, or that anyone had, at least that he knew of.

Which was why he felt like, as long as it was in the right hands, then there wouldn't be an opponent one couldn't defeat. Of course, these thoughts had occurred when he had first created the ring and was unaware of what was out there in the universe, but nevertheless, it was still a thought he had.

Right now, with the power of space, what Minny had been doing during the fight was space deletion. With the power of the ring, she could delete an area of space. This was how she was able to get rid of the ice ball, as well as the lightning attacks towards her.

It was a great defensive move and could stop practically any attack, being even more effective than the shadow. On top of that, there were other applications to use space deletion, and Minny had utilised them in the fight as well.

One of them was with her attacks. When attacking, she could delete the space between her and her opponent, causing her attack to jump. Which was why H felt like her attack was teleporting.

The deletion of space could only be used on the space itself as well as forms of energy and not on life forms. Which was why she was unable to just delete H out of existence, but there was something she could do.

When moving, she could also delete the space in front of her, and in doing so, just like her attacks, she herself would also jump. Allowing her to somewhat teleport, this was how she was able to pull off the attack and avoid the strike back, but there was one issue.

She was deleting space and not actually teleporting. There was quite a difference between the two.

If Minny was standing directly in front of H, then she couldn't suddenly appear behind him. This was because she could only delete the space between her and H. Whereas if one had a teleporting ability, they could go anywhere they wished.

The ring had more application than that, but with this one simple skill, she was causing trouble for H.

Once again, Minny ran forward from her position, she could see the lightning gathering around H's body. Out of frustration, it looked like he was going to do a large area attack that shocked everywhere.

'This type of attack will still hit me because I can only delete things in front of my right hand.' Minny thought.

The electric went out from H's body in all directions. No matter what was in the square, they were going to get hit. The lightning had touched the very edge and those that were too close watching had been zapped, losing their life in an instant.

The lightning had struck with such a large amount of force that it almost looked like they had been cremated. There was nothing left but ash.

The attack had lit up the whole area for a few seconds. No one could move; otherwise, they would have been dead. Eventually, it stopped. On the field, many expected to see a small burnt body, but there was nothing.

Until a portal of shadow opened, and Minny had popped out of it.

"I have more than just the ring's power. I have the shadow as well."

Immediately, Minny deleted the distance between the two, and she was there again. She attacked the shoulder multiple times. Rather than using the blood swipes, she had the pure aura around her fingertips.

H swung his arm, but she had moved far away again. Then quickly teleporting to the side, she moved several times before quickly moving and attacking the same shoulder again.

Still, despite attacking the shoulder again, her claws were still struggling to make a single mark on H.

"At this rate, she's going to lose!" Jake said from the sidelines. "At the moment, sure, she's fast enough to avoid the attacks from H, but it's not like he's slow. If it was anyone else out there, they would have been hit in seconds."

"She's hitting H multiple times, but her attacks are doing next to nothing. If her attacks can do no harm, then at some point or another, her power is going to run out, and when it does, it's not going to be a pretty sight."

Logan was also observing everything that was going on. They were watching Minny fast in action. It was a game of cat and mouse, and with each attack of H's,

everyone had to be careful. The whole city was getting crushed with each single movement of his hand.

The wind pressure alone was sending off blasts that were just as strong as bombs. Nearly all of the buildings had already crumbled in the area, and they were now hiding behind fallen debris.

The area the two of them were fighting was growing and growing, as the debris on the edge of the market square was getting pushed back from the wind of H's attacks.

This continued for a while, and there was eventually not a single building left standing in the area. The city was nothing but large piles and mounds of rubble. The onlookers had to be clever in their use of the rubble to protect themselves from the attacks ahead.

"What is she doing?" Russ clenched his fist angrily. "She's just doing the same thing again and again, expecting the same result."

Many thought this was a desperate struggle, but to one person, it didn't look like that.

"That little girl, I think you should give her more credit," Logan said. "I think she has a bigger plan than any of us realise."

Moving again, Minny could see the shoulder, the same place she had been attacking this entire time. Her clawed hand went out, and when it touched the skin of H, this time, it pierced the damaged scales and went in, creating a small cut across H's shoulder and for the first time, drawing blood.

"Haha, haha, this is the result of your hard effort?" H laughed. "This is nothing!"

"I know!" Minny said, deleting the space and teleporting right to the same cut again. Rather than using her red claw mark, this time she placed her ring on instead.

"But this will do something!"

Minny could not only delete space but also create space as well, and now that there was a small cut in H's arm, it meant there was a small space between the skin, where space could be created.

As the space in between got bigger, so did the cut on H's arm. The space that was created was so sudden and powerful, H's arm had been ripped off from his body and was now lying there on the floor.

Everyone watching, who had seen the little vampire's efforts, had their mouths left hanging open. A being that couldn't even be scratched had just lost an arm, green blood pouring out from the wound.

"This is just the start.." Minny said, huffing and panting.

H was silent for a moment. He didn't say anything, but the bleeding on his arm suddenly stopped. Then the flesh around the wound started to bulge until an arm sprouted right out from the wound. It was another Dalki arm and it looked as good as new.

"Will you look at that, even the small scar you put there has healed." H laughed.
"The power of regeneration is a handy one. Now after seeing all your efforts go down the drain, what will you do next?"

"And let me tell you, you're right, this is just the-"

Cut off short, a bolt of lightning shot down from the sky. It wasn't a normal bolt of lightning as it was as thick as a house. It spiralled down landing right where H was. The flash was so large and bright, many had to turn to look away.

When the lightning finally faded, they could see a frail man standing on top of H.

"I will get rid of you this time," Sil said.

Chapter 2266: A way to stop the war

The figure had crashed down in the centre of the market square, or at least what was originally the market square. It was already unrecognisable compared to the way it was before. Then, when the lightning bolt had come crashing down as if someone had angered the gods from up above, the ground in the whole area lifted up for a moment as sparks were sent out of all of the cracks.

Unlike the sparks of lightning that had come out from H, though, these sparks just had a tingling sensation when they touched the onlookers who were looking in the area. Still, many of them had been knocked off their feet from the lightning strike.

When they eventually came around to look in the centre of the market square, they could see a man standing there. Blonde with long hair that almost looked as if it was falling out in certain areas.

"Did... that strike come from him... but how is that possible, and who is he?"

Not many of the onlookers, even on Jack's side, actually knew about Sil. He was, after all, someone who had left the planet a long time ago, but it wasn't just them that were unable to recognize Sil because it was hard for the others as well.

He was a mere shadow of his former self; his wrists were so thin, his clothes were baggy on him, and they almost looked heavy on him, as if he was struggling to stand. His cheeks were sunken into his face. They had seen the state of Sil before, but seeing him awake for some reason felt worse.

"This was the person that we had been waiting for and relying on this whole time," Shiro said. His eyes were watering up and running down his face. "I feel so ashamed. Someone like this, right now, should be resting."

"He should be in a hospital, but he has come. He has answered our call because he wished to protect us!"

Underneath his feet, Sil could feel someone moving. A large ice shard rose from below, but teleporting away, Sil was able to avoid the attack and was now by Minny's side.

"You have done very well fighting him so far," Sil said. "I saw what you did from above. You can leave the rest to your uncle."

Even though Sil said this with confidence, even Minny wasn't so sure about his words, based on looking at him. In fact, Sil had taken the teleport ability because he knew that using superspeed, with the way his body was now, would be a disaster.

Crashing through the ice, H was seen in the air for a few moments before landing on the ground, and his eyes laid on Sil.

"I see, so you have decided to go against me once again," H stated. "Didn't you learn your lesson last time? In fact, you were lucky to have even come back alive. You won't be so lucky again."

"I'm sure Jack won't care what I do to you this time."

Sil started to gather lightning in his hands; it was in some type of strange rings that went over his forearm, going all the way up to his shoulder and he got in a fighting stance, of all things.

"I will use all of my power this time. I can tell, I can see that all of those that I protected... in the end, they still ended up perishing. The right thing to do back then was just to get rid of you no matter what, and then none of this would have happened!"

Up above, there was a ship that was already riding away from the planet, and on the ship was none other than Stark.

"Good luck, my friend. I hope you can do your very best to beat him, but just in case there is something that I need to do as well," Stark said.

The ship in question was heading back to the large Marpo Cruise where Jack was currently present.

After finding Sil, the two of them wasted no time travelling by ship to join the others. There was a part of Sil that wished to use his powers to teleport to the planet. It would have been quicker than travelling by ship, yet he had chosen not to.

This was because to travel from one planet to the other, since it was a great distance, would use quite a bit of his MC points, and based on the fight with H last time, he felt like he would need all of the MC points he could get.

Especially since his body wasn't in the best condition. He could gather Qi, but not as much as before, and his body still felt sluggish, but he needed to act. He had a feeling that H would be there, and he was right.

During the journey with Stark, Sil and him had talked, and he had explained all of his worries. This brought back a memory for the Penswi star about what he had overheard the others talking about.

"I'm sure that Sil will be able to overcome the monster known as H. I could tell he is a powerful one," Stark thought. "But this war is more than just one overcoming their worries or seeking vengeance. It is one that we have to win at all costs."

"Which is why if I can get to Jack and get him to take H's powers away, we can win this fight."

There was a lot of attention on the fight below, and a lot of damage had been done to the Marpo Cruise from the androids, so much so that Stark had next to no trouble at all getting onto the ship.

He soon found a large hole in one of the sides and put on a space helmet. After that, he floated his way to one of the doors, going to the control panel. It looked like the emergency door had sealed the area to stop the pressure change within the ship.

"This is nothing that I can't solve!" Stark thought. As he pushed his legs in the air with such power and the power of the beast armour, it allowed him to propel himself forward, and he crashed right through the doors, creating a hole.

Almost immediately after he had gone through to the other side, there was some type of emergency patch measure from the ship as small robots came along and sealed the hole that had just been made. After that, Stark was finally able to take the helmet off.

"With all the fighting below, there shouldn't be much on board that is difficult to deal with. But will Jack have some guards by his side, and what about him? Is he strong himself?" Stark wondered.

The ship was large, and Stark had no clue where to go, but by not using Nitro Accelerate and just running through the place, he was trying to cover as much space as he could. There were times where he would see others on board and hide, then when they turned their head or looked away, he would move to the next part.

"This is getting me nowhere," Stark said. "I don't have time to mess around."

Soon, he saw what looked like an engineer, a human that was repairing part of the ship, trying to fix something that the androids had destroyed. Seeing this as his moment, he ran and grabbed the human.

It was in one swift movement. The two continued to run down the hallway until Stark propped him up right against the wall with his forearm against his neck.

"Tell me, where is the one known as Jack, and who is with him!" Stark shouted and pushed forcefully against his throat.

Easing off the pressure, the human could breathe slightly, and the fear in his eyes showed that he was going to answer.

"Jack... he's most likely in his own separate command room. He likes to watch the videos of what's going on below. As for who is with him, I'm not sure. Sometimes he's alone, sometimes he's not," the human answered.

"Tell me what direction to go in. If you do, I'll let you live," Stark stated.

The man pointed and explained a little of what the room would look like.

"Please let me go," the man begged.

Stark, with his sharpened hand, thrust it forward right through the human's head, killing him in one go.

"I'm sorry, I made your death as painless as possible. If I were to let you live and you informed someone, there's a chance that I would get caught, and if that were to happen, then everything would be all over. I had no choice in the current situation," Stark said, as he was ready to head to Jack. There was only so much time until they would find the dead body.

For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

P.a.t.r.e.o.n jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I reply back.

Chapter 2267: Strongest powers vs Strongest body

Sil stood opposite H, a good distance away, with the lightning rings around his arms. He was getting ready and waited for H to get restless, and that's exactly what he did.

"I'll pay you right back for what you did to me, and personally!" H didn't run forward. Instead, he jumped from his position and was high up in the air, exactly like that of the Amra when moving positions.

Seeing this, Sil aimed both of his arms right at H. Sil's arms started to light up with lightning powers, and lightning was passing through the rings until reaching his fingertips. Then a surge of power exploded from his hands, and two of the rings, one from each hand, left.

It moved as fast as a regular lightning bolt and smashed into H's stomach right in the centre. As it hit, the lightning exploded from his body in all directions in the air, creating even a ring of lightning behind H.

The Dalki's body had jolted, something that hadn't happened with the attacks with Minny.

"It was a mistake staying in the air like that!" Sil shouted as he continued to fire out the remaining rings of lightning. Each one hit H cleanly, and each one responded with a large bang every time.

As the rings hit him and the damage built up, blood could be seen spilling slightly from the corner of the Dalki's mouth, but a smile still remained.

"You should at least be able to do this much!" Powering through, H's arm had transformed into that of a hammer, and he swung it down ready to smash it on top of Sil's head.

However, Sil had appeared right behind H, teleporting away. Now, instead of rings of lightning, he had rings of flames as well. Just like before, when using the power of lightning, the same happened with the flame rings. Fire powered through Sil's arms, and they lit up orange in colour.

Then fire started to travel through the rings in the arms, and like a powered gun mechanism, the flames shot out a devastating blow right on the Dalki's back, hitting him towards the ground.

H didn't fall to the floor though, despite the strong attacks hitting him. He even turned around and took a large circle of flame right on his chest. The flame ring burst around the area so intensely everyone could feel the heat on their faces, even though they were so far away.

Still, H was able to take it, even though Sil was pouring a lot of power into these powerful abilities he had. He perhaps was using the strongest flames he could muster in the existence of ability users put together, but with the strong 10 spike Dalki power and the power of Qi running through his body, it still had done next to no damage.

"You are annoying!" H's body lit up, and the whole area was covered in sparks.

Sil attempted to use his teleport ability, but moving to one area was hopeless as the range of the lightning strike was in the entire area. The second he had appeared from his teleportation, lightning went straight towards him, shocking his body.

"Arghh!" Sil screamed, his arms dangling towards the ground. A direct hit on his body with no protection was bad, and since he wasn't able to muster a lot of Qi, it had hurt more than it usually would have compared to before.

"You have no idea who you have decided to face!" H shouted.

The two spikes on his back, close to his shoulder blades, stuck out more and had suddenly grown in size. At the same time, it was almost as if the weight of H had increased as the floor beneath him indented more.

Both of his arms had transformed, turning into two deadly blades, and from a distance, he threw them through the air. In doing so, a large wave of energy, unlike any other, that would take up half the city had appeared.

"Crap... I can't dodge this without getting closer." Sil thought.

Thinking about what the best thing to do was, he opened up his book and was ready to go through the abilities he had until he saw a little girl appear next to him.

"You can be the sword!" Minny said, as she held out her hand.

The green gem on the ring lit up, and a big part of the wave of energy had been removed right there and then, and a clear path could be seen in front of Sil.

"I can be your shield!" Minny said.

Sil had no idea what power this was, but it didn't matter. He had no time to care as multiple clones of him had been made. In the area, there were a hundred Sils, each of them with a demon weapon grabbed from the portal in their hand.

Meanwhile, four of the Sils had ring elements spinning around their arms: fire, water, wind, and lightning. They were charging up with strength.

"That didn't work before, so why do you think it will work this time!" H shouted as he swung his arm out, and a large sword of energy came out. All of the people who

saw the attack moved, as the last attack had already killed and destroyed whatever was in the area.

The Sils that could see the attack lifted up their arms and weapons. Using all of their powers, they struck against the attack. Around fifteen of the clones were eliminated, having taken out the attack.

"That's how much power is in his attack..." Sil thought. "If I get hit by that, rather than his powers, then I will be done for."

H leapt into the many different Sils, and with a swing of his leg, the energy was able to eliminate a good chunk of them again. The demon weapons were swung with power and clashed against H's skin, but some of the attacks even bounced off as the power of his body was far too strong and devastating.

During the fight with the multiple clones, the Sil with the strong elemental powers started to teleport around the area. Charging up their attack, they fired them right at H.

Sensing the attack, H tried to fire his own powers against the attack, but when his lightning had clashed against Sil's, there was a clear winner. At the end of the day, Sil had more MC cells and was more powerful in terms of ability than H.

The pulse of lightning broke through H's own lightning attack, but that didn't matter. With a swing of his sword-like arm, it broke through the pulse. Sparks hit his body but were unable to do any type of damage.

The other attacks were still coming towards him.

"This is annoying!" H shouted, transforming both of his bladed hands back into his fists, only they looked larger than they did before, almost like two boulders.

With a yell in the air, he slammed them against each other. The shockwaves coming from the Dalki smashing his two hands were sent out and collided with the elemental attacks. They disrupted them to the point where they no longer existed.

Teleporting through with a sword in his hand, Sil thrust a demon tier spear against H's skin. The weapon activated but did nothing to pierce the ten spike Dalki.

"I can't believe how weak your body is... there was a point in time where I thought I wanted your body. Part of the deal of bringing you in was that I would be able to use your body, but now I see, compared to mine, it's nothing." H stated.

H swung his arm, and before it hit Sil, his body hardened. The attack with the spear had been done with the real Sil because many of the clones were already out of the battle.

Sil's body went flying, and blood fell from his mouth. Every time he coughed, blood continued to fall until Minny eventually caught him.

"Uncle Sil... are you okay?" Minny asked.

Sil's weak body and now his clothes were covered in blood. The one person they thought could change it all was losing the fight.

"If only... I could touch him, maybe I could do something..." Sil said.

Chapter 2268: A way to win

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

The sight of the great Sil pained many of those who were there. Vicky, for one, hadn't had the memories removed of her brother. It was because of him that she was able to live a good life and get everything she ever wanted, even though she never knew that she wanted it in the first place.

Seeing Sil use and display his powers, for a moment she thought that he had a chance to turn the tide, but anyone who was an experienced fighter could see that one was far superior to the other.

No ability in his book would be strong enough to deal with H, who had only had a trickle of blood appear from his mouth. The scary thing was, even if they could hurt H, he would only get stronger. And if they managed to do significant damage to him, then he could just use his regenerative powers to undo the damage that had been done.

With that in mind, though, Sil had used his soul weapon to bring out his book, and with it, he started to heal his body. The internal damage that had been done started to heal at a fast rate, and he was able to get back on his feet fairly quickly.

He could only bring his body back to the poor state it was in before, not back to his former much stronger self. It wasn't the ability to reverse time after all, and what happened to him was due to months of them only giving him enough to survive, not something a regenerative ability could bring back.

"Is uncle going to keep fighting?" Minny asked.

She was concerned for Sil after seeing that much blood. Even if he could regenerate himself, was there really no limit? Was it just an amount of MC cells? The blood and other things had to come from somewhere.

On top of that, her powers would eventually fade as well, but she wanted to continue helping Sil as much as possible.

"I will continue to fight as long as I can stand," Sil replied. "I still have a number of things that I can try."

Opening up a storage portal, Sil had pulled out a large hammer with a big head at the end. It had strange swirling patterns on it, and the handle looked like it had been made with parts of a beast.

It was clearly a beast weapon, and with everything Sil had now, it would at least be at the Demon tier.

'I'll use my ability to enhance the weapon's strength to its full potential! Then, I'll push it with the strength ability. Switching to the accelerate ability to move the weapon as fast as it can through the air!'

Although Sil was unable to combine abilities together like Jake or use two at a time, he could use them one after the other, and switching abilities like so, they would still have the effect of the one before.

The hammer flew through the air, creating a large explosion of wind as it went out. It was faster than what H had expected. Moving his hands, he was able to catch it, but the force was still strong, moving past and hitting him deep in the stomach.

H was being pushed back while his feet lifted up part of the ground. Small amounts of blood came out of H's mouth again, but eventually he had stopped the great power, just with his own strength.

"Did you not learn anything from that first one!" H said, as he lifted the hammer with one hand, behind his back, and hurled it back. "This will only quicken your death."

The book was in one of Sil's hands, and before the hammer could reach him, a portal had been opened, and when the hammer went in, it never came back out anywhere.

'I have to use what I have to my advantage. I know the powers that he has, and he is physically far stronger than me, but he can't know all the powers I have.'

Just as he thought of this, he remembered the last time the two of them had fought. Sil had gone through many combinations trying to take H down and failed. This time, H was even stronger than then, so how could he succeed?

There was one ability he had gained since then, the ability to change memories. If he was able to touch and hold H for long enough, maybe he could get them to stop fighting.

Layla, who was still watching on the sidelines with Russ, had heard what Sil had said in the conversation with Minny about how he needed to touch. She was trying to think of what Sil meant by this and had come up with her own conclusion.

'Sil's body is incredibly weak right now,' Layla thought. 'If it was the same as it was before, then he might stand a chance. Out of all the abilities I know, there is one that can drastically not just change the appearance but also make them stronger as well.'

Her head at that point turned to Russ. From what she had seen, he was one of the most powerful ability users that she knew and had an incredibly powerful ability. On top of that, he was human, meaning that Sil would have no problem copying his power.

"Russ," Layla said. "You have to let Sil touch you. If he does, he can use your power... he can do what you did before when going against Pine and win this fight."

Russ looked at her for a few seconds, as if what she was saying was completely mad.

"Are you crazy?" Russ replied back. "Do you even know who I am? Remember who I am..."

"I hate the Blade family. If there is anyone that I would never help out, it's them."

Layla knew the history well; it was a public broadcast after all when Russ had claimed his hatred towards the Blades, and he didn't hide his dislike for them.

"Can't you see the situation we are in? Would you rather not help and end up dead? Right now, this is our only option."

Although most might have been convinced in this dire situation, it didn't change for Russ, and there was a core reason for that.

"No, and it's not just about him copying my power," Russ explained. "I can tell from that book; it's a log of all the powers he can use."

"Most likely, Sil is special in the fact he can use any ability he has come across. If it was a normal Blade, I might consider it, since they would eventually lose the power to use my ability."

"As you said, I don't want to die."

Layla was unsure what excuse he would come up with because if his life was so important, what other reason could trump that?

"If I let him use my power, it would mean I would never ever be able to get my revenge against them again," Russ explained.

"What do you mean? Look, I don't think your revenge makes sense in the first place, but you can always go against the Blades after surviving today. If you don't, then you would never be able to get revenge," Layla explained, thinking the logic was simple.

"Not achieving my revenge and never being able to get my revenge are two different things. I wouldn't be able to live with myself," Russ replied. "You see, if he copies my power, then it would be impossible for me to beat him.

"He would have not only the same power as me but also a large number of other powers at his disposal. The one thing that I have is my ability, and anyone but the Blades can have that."

Taking a step back, Layla understood his stubbornness. But then, if Sil couldn't touch Russ, could he really win this fight? Because she didn't believe that to be the case, but what other way or method could she use to let Sil and Russ touch?

Chapter 2269: Courage to stop

The Marpo Cruise was so large that it could be considered the size of a city inside. There were multiple rooms, facilities, and different areas filled with a number of different things. For a normal person, or even a vampire without using the onboard equipment to travel, it would take days to explore every single area.

Yet, for Stark, he was able to travel faster than even the moving equipment on board. For him, it was the perfect job if one needed to find somewhere, and when there was a battle going on below, and a race against time, this was needed.

After forcing one of the humans to reveal the location of where Jack was, it didn't take long for Stark to find where he needed to be. There was a large locked door with no sign for him to get in other than a hand scanner.

"This door can't be any thicker than the outside of the ship. If I run at full speed and harden my hands, I should be able to break through," Stark thought.

He had run down the hallway, giving himself some room to run up to it so he could get to his full potential, but before setting off, he hesitated for a second.

"From what I heard, Jack himself isn't that strong of a person. He has a strong ability that allowed him to reach a certain position. If that's true, would a leader like that really just go around with no one by their side?" Stark thought.

"Entering like this gets rid of the element of surprise, and if that happens, I'll have to face whatever is inside."

Giving himself time to think, the nerves were getting to him a little bit. When thinking about the enemy, they were stronger than he had expected, and still, he had yet to fully go up against one. This whole time he had mainly been running away.

Only picking off those he was sure he could beat, if there was a high-level spike Dalki inside, would he be able to beat it?

"Look at me," Stark laughed at himself. "I never used to get this nervous whenever I competed before. For just being the fastest, I was always classified as the hero of the Penswi, but have I even done anything deserving of that title?"

The images of the dead Penswi on the planet appeared in his head. So many of the forces sent had been killed; there were only a few left. Out of all of them, why did he survive?

"If I turn away now... there is a good chance that everything would have been for nothing. I don't even know if this will work, I don't even know if this will even really help, but I have to try!"

With that thought in mind, Stark moved his legs, the power of the Fang set armour empowering him and allowing him to move faster than speeds he ever imagined. When he was at the perfect distance away from the door, he jumped up, spinning his body.

This move was something similar to that of the Graylash family with their lightning abilities. With both his arms stretched out and the pointed ends of the Penswi hands at the tip, he crashed into the door and ripped a clean hole right through it.

Immediately, Stark stopped himself on the other side, skidding across the floor and creating a trail of smoke from the friction with his feet. He needed to quickly get his bearings of the area.

"Where is he... where is the one known as Jack!" Stark moved his head in all corners of the room.

The room was more like that of a large office. There was a single large table inside with a few tables on the side filled with drinks and food. On one side of the room was a wall of screens, cameras that had zoomed in and were showing everything that had happened below.

Stark was able to see it, the battle of Sil and H that was going on. Thankfully, it looked like the two were still fighting, which meant that there was a chance that Stark's actions could affect the outcome of the fight.

"What is going on!" A voice shouted as he stood up from his seat and turned around.

It was a human, whom Stark could only presume was Jack. He was in the right location, and the room was secure. On top of that, his worst fear was true. There was also a five-spike Dalki that was by his side.

"I can do this, there is something else that I can do." Stark turned around in the room, and in doing so, he ran towards the door again. When he did, he jumped up, spinning his body and tearing through the metal-like steel door, then waited on the other side.

"Okay, the hole should now be big enough for me to get through if I was to bring Jack with me as well," Stark thought.

Rather than fight, Stark believed it was better for him to just run away with Jack and try to force him to use his powers, than face the Dalki in the room. Stark was ready to run back in again, that was until the door was smashed right through and the Dalki was seen breaking through the door.

"Arghh!" the Dalki shouted, looking for Stark.

"I forgot how hot-headed these guys were. I could have just got him to break the door all along. Well, that has just made things easier for me now."

Stark ran straight ahead towards the Dalki, but he didn't run at full speed. As usual with the Dalki, they were confident in their strength and speed, so it lifted its hands ready to slam them right down on Stark.

When the fists moved down, that's when Stark ran out at full speed and went completely around the Dalki. After that, he could see Jack just standing there aloof, almost unable to comprehend what was happening around him.

Grabbing him and putting him under his arm, Stark then ran back out, past the Dalki who was in mid-turn in looking behind him, and the two of them were gone.

Stark continued to run, going through the cruise ship without slowing down. He remembered seeing an area void of people. It was in the section of the ship being unused. It was almost a desert-like area.

Eventually, Stark had gotten there, and when he did, he let go and threw Jack across the floor. His body bounced a couple of times until he eventually stopped and slowly got up from the floor.

"What are you doing?" Jack said, propping himself up. "Do you have any idea who I am? Now that you have gone and done this, everyone on this ship is going to be after your life. You won't be alive much longer."

Jack started to look at the alien in front of him. He recognized it as one of those involved in the attack, and he wondered how it even got on the ship and to this situation where he was face to face with them.

"If you want to live, then you better do what I say," Stark stated. "You, you have the power to take the power away from those that you call the Dalki. I want you to use your power to take them all away. If you don't..."

Stark quickly ran up to where Jack was, in an instant and quicker than Jack could keep up with. He then lifted his foot and slammed it down right on his ankle. He was expecting Jack to scream in pain, but he did no such thing and instead pulled his foot out and rolled, standing up.

"Do you really think that I would be completely defenceless?" All of the clothes that Jack was wearing started to light up. They looked like ordinary clothes, fitting close to the body and not like beast armour at all. But judging from the power coming from the armour, it was beast armour, and at a high-tier level as well.

Convincing Jack wasn't going to be as easy as Stark thought.

Chapter 2270: Sil's staff

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

Sil was back on his feet after using the regenerative powers, but at the same time, it didn't seem like H had been hurt at all. If Sil could turn the tides, it seemed unlikely to all those around but he wasn't going to give up.

In Sil's mind, little by little, he was finding things that worked, just like the hammer he recently used. He would have to open his mind a little when it came to fights.

Once again, clones had been made from Sil, but this time, he had only made five in total. One of them had a shield in their hands, another a large great sword, a hammer, a bow and arrow and finally, Sil himself, he had a staff in his hand.

"These are different?" H raised an eyebrow. The weapons that had been used by the clones so far, had been strong. Even though they were unable to pierce his skin, he could feel their power.

Which was why H could feel the energy coming off these weapons; they were slightly different.

"This staff isn't something I like using it a lot because it feels a bit cheap, but in this situation it's for the best!"

In one hand Sil held the staff, with a strong glowing crystal at the top, and in the other, he had his soul weapon, the ability book.

"I'm sorry to ask you this favour, but if you could protect them, to the best of your ability. That would be a big help." Sil asked, looking at Minny.

She nodded, if it was just protecting then she would have enough power in her ring for that.

H, still a distance away, lifted up his two hands, one of them transformed into a large hammer head, while the other had turned into a sharp blade. Once the transformation was done, lightning was covering both of the weapons held in H's arms.

The first thing H did was lift his large hammer hand and slam it across the floor. Lightning was sent everywhere and the only other things the clones of Sil could do, including Minny was jump.

The problem was they hadn't jumped high enough and the lightning in the ground was shooting up, almost chasing them.

Seeing this, all of the clones used another ability they had, teleportation, and teleported themselves even higher up in the air. For Minny, she had great strength in her legs and had already jumped high enough and for the real Sil, with the book constantly held in his hand he could easily change to the ability of flight and raised himself off the ground.

"Idiots!" H shouted, swinging his bladed hand, and the large energy left it. The attack was a single line of aura. It somewhat looked like a blood swipe but was ten times bigger in size and had a lightning coat around the attack.

'The clones, two of the abilities they had was teleportation and strength to make the attacks with the weapons stronger, and of course one of the abilities that was claimed to be the strongest, the lightning ability.'

At that moment, a coat had appeared on all of the clones of Sil. This way the lightning from the attack wouldn't out match them. Sil was confident that his ability powers were stronger than H's but what about the raw energy of the attack.

All of the clones were ready with their weapons, and all of them went to strike the same point of the attack, hoping to break through it, but there was a little vampire behind them, with her hand held out, who had other ideas.

What Sil didn't realise was just how strong and helpful Minny could be.

'Delete!' Minny thought in her head and the attack had disappeared.

It was at the perfect time, as everyone else had swung their weapons and fired the bow, all of the attacks went forward and were heading straight for H. Seeing this, his hammer had transformed into that of a large shield and all of the attacks hit the shield straight on.

'It's the first time he's blocked like that in this fight, rather than just using his body.'

Sil didn't have time to be amazed at what Minny could do, and instead pointed his staff forward, firing out a lightning strike hitting the shield arm, all of the attacks hitting one part of H had managed to break a scale and a clean wound had been made as blood started to pour out. The attack had stopped there.

"All of those attacks, and you have just damaged a scale on my body!" H exclaimed, putting his shield away and turning it back into a hammer.

"Everything has to start from somewhere." Sil said, teleporting to the other side, his staff lit up again and underneath H's feet he started to sink into a mud like

substance. After that, large ice pillars appeared from the ground; they had done so in such a way that they restricted H's movements.

All of the ice pillars were dense and carefully sprouted from the ground so he was unable to move and build up momentum and his feet were now stuck in the ground as well.

The demon tier staff that Sil was using went incredibly well with his powers. Because it allowed him to use certain abilities at a distance without having to use his own hands.

For instance, the ice ability would have to be formed from one's hands leaving a trail on the ground. It was the same with the earth ability which was why they stomped the floor, and the mud ability.

With the staff, he was able to use all those abilities from a distance as if he was right next to H.

'Now that he's trapped in place, and Minny's done her job, it's time for the others to attack!'

All of the clones teleported in and swung their weapons, fired, or bashed their shield into the different parts of H. With the added strength and the demon tier weapons, they were making large scratches on H's body with every hit.

They attempted to go for his head, but H was able to transform part of his shoulder into a spike. It hit one of the clones with a shield and sent him flying up in the air. Minny had grabbed him with her shadow stopping him, before allowing him to teleport and get back in the fight.

They attacked and attacked, trying to finish off the fight desprealty and Sil used all the range power he could of lightning, wind, fire, all hitting H. More blood was being spilt from H because of this and it was having an effect.

Moving his muscles , powering his body, he was breaking the ice, and the hard mud from underneath. Lightning was coating the outer part of his skin.

"ARGHHH!" H shouted, and all of the ice shattered in that moment. He swung his bladed hand immediately and sliced two of the clones in half. Swinging the hammer down, the Sil clone lifted up his shield.

But the moment it made impact the shield shattered and the clone was squashed. Finally with a swing of his leg, a large amount of energy left hitting the bow and arrow user, killing him in an instant as well.

Now, once again, only Sil and Minny were left.

"Thank you, for allowing me to reach this much power." H smiled.

This was one of the major problems with fighting a Dalki, if a last stand attack of powers weren't enough to kill a Dalki, then it would mean they were now only at their strongest.

H looked strong, he just had marks here and there all over his body, but his power seemed to have increased by a large amount.

"That's it I can't take it anymore!" Layla shouted. "If you aren't going to go out there and let Sil touch you, and your just going to let us all die including MIddy, then your life might as well be useful for something."

Layla held out her hand, one pointed toward Russ the other toward Sil. Russ almost laughed wondering what she could do, that was until he could feel the energy being drained out of his body, and him falling to one knee almost.

Layla was using her soul weapon, and giving Russ's Qi energy, to Sil.

Chapter 2271: You decide

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

Russ was already in a weakened state, after using nearly all of his MC cells, and transforming into whatever it was that was in the black sword. His body was in good condition since he hadn't taken the brunt of the attacks himself, but it was more so his ability form.

Which was why he was still able to stand well, walk and so on, which was why he found it so strange when his body started to feel weak. It felt like something was reaching deep into his stomach and pulling it out his insides and as time went on, he was getting weaker and weaker until he eventually fell to one knee.

Looking up, covered in sweat, he could only assume it was the doing of someone. "You b*tch!" Russ grunted. "What are you doing to me, after everything I've done for you. I saved your life and now you're trying to kill me."

Layla ignored Russ's cries because she needed to focus on what she was doing herself. Using her soul weapon was a difficult task due to the way it worked.

Technically she was using her telekinesis ability and with her soul weapon she was also able to control what was inside one's body and that was Qi. Right now, she wasn't just taking Qi from Russ and giving it to Sil, but trying to spread out her power far and wide and getting the energy from everyone in the area.

'Russ doesn't even have a lot of Qi energy in the first place, but if I use my powers I can gather energy from everyone else.'

Since the others were further away, the effect of the drain was lessened on them, but they all could feel themselves weakening. Since they weren't taking part in the fight they didn't see it as such a big deal.

As for H himself, Layla was also taking power from him. However, he had a strong sense of Qi and it was powerful, alive. It was harder for one to take energy when the Qi itself was attached to the person so strongly, it was easier when they were weakened.

This is what made Layla realise the large difference between the two. She could see it, and even though she was giving power to Sil, there was a huge concern.

'How much had Sil weakened from that time he spent on that ship... he has all this amazing power inside him, but it's almost like he can't utilise it because of his body.'

Thinking about this, there was a worry about what she was doing. Just in case, she decided to move some of the Qi that was in the area, and started to power her own body as well.

Sil had lost all of his clones, and using his clones took up quite a bit of his MC cells, so instead he decided to try his best to focus on fighting with the staff as well as using his powers.

H was faster than he was before with his injuries, and was charging right after Sil. Each time Sil would set up a number of abilities to use against H and teleport out of the way. However, from those watching, they could see each time H was catching up as well.

Moving faster, using powers to try and trap Sil. Even encasing areas with ice. Sil was getting away, but just barely, and the tension from watching the fight was making everyone's heart beat faster.

'I can feel my body. It's getting stronger... is it from one of the others?' Sil thought as he rapidly teleported around the place. The use of H and his powers was getting quicker, better and stronger, and now there wasn't even a chance for Sil to attack his opponent.

'If I continue like this, I should be able to produce stronger attacks.'

Although most abilities just relied on the use of MC cells for them to be powerful, that wasn't the case with all abilities. One could get a good boost with a strong body with some abilities.

Especially at the advanced level, Sil had learned how to push powers through his body to give them more power like he had done with the lightning rings, but he couldn't use them to their full potential.

With this in mind, and since he was unable to use the skills of the staff, Sil placed the staff away. He then quickly gathered strength and several lightning rings around his arm, powering the power through him.

Teleporting right behind H, he threw out his fists hitting him in the back. Anticipating this move though, H had turned around as well and had his lightning hammer, he swung it out, while Sil swung out his fist.

The two collided and the lightning rings around Sil's fist bunched up together. Large electric pulses emitted in the entire area one after the other, and each time it was pushing the hammer back slightly, but in the end, the hammer's power won

out, with the immense strength that H had, the two spikes on his shoulders extended growing again and a surge of power whacked Sil away.

His arm had collapsed in on itself, all of the muscles were damaged, tendons ripped. At that point Minny had captured Sil again, and decided for the two of them to go into the shadow space, disappearing from the battlefield.

"Uncle Sil, you need to heal yourself." Minny said.

While they were in the shadow space, he could use his powers without worrying, but they needed to be quick, otherwise it would mean those outside would suffer.

H, outside was looking around the place and searching for them. He had no clue how the shadow worked.

"Do you see what's happening now?" Layla asked.

"If Sil can't fight, then H will go after us. Do you even know who that is?"

"What do you mean?" Russ replied.

"We found out the information, that thing right there is not just any Dalki, but a Dalki that's made with the Blade family, not just any of the Blades but also has the DNA of Hilston. The one who was behind the whole Chained in the first place!"

"If there is anyone that hates the Blades as much as you do, then that would be Sil. Sil would do anything to get rid of the past of the Blades, and now, there is nearly no one from the Blades left alive, of the group trying to change their name!"

Russ who liked to talk back a lot, and was now down on both knees didn't say anything. There was no way for him to confirm this was true, and inside him, it just felt wrong to do it.

"Anyway, I've given up on convincing you." Layla siad.

At that moment, Sil and Minny had come out of the shadow. She continued to give some power to Sil but not all, she knew it was dangerous for his current body to take everything in, and that even with the boost of Qi that Sil wouldn't be able to win.

She was going with her own plan. Having gathered enough energy herself, she picked up the black sword, and grabbed Russ by the scruff of the neck.

"If you really don't care about dying so much, then we should head out to the battlefield!" Layla grabbing Russ ran out, with the black sword in her hand.

She wasn't drawing power out of it, but just kept it in front of her. The energy from the battle and clashes were so intense that she might be blown back if she didn't have the sword.

Now with the two of them on the battlefield, Layla only had a last few words to say to Russ as she let go.

"Now you choose, you either die by the one you hate, or help Sil and live, you decide."

Chapter 2272: Every bone in my body

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

Stark had been given some information about the one known as Jack. He had been informed by those such as Logan as well as Quinn and the others. However, when they did update the Penswi star about all of this, they informed him that the information they had might be out of date so to say.

A lot of what they knew about Jack, was from before, when everyone thought he was dead. His powers, they were strong but he himself was weak. He knew almost nothing about Qi, and although he was one of the big four, he had no Demon tier items.

After all, in the past, the Demon tier beasts and weapons were almost impossible to find. So much so that when they came across a Demon tier beast, all of the leaders had to decide who would get the Demon tier crystal for fear that it would change the power hierarchy.

Because of this, the general consensus was that Jack himself wasn't too strong and instead it was those around him. Which was why now that he had him here in this desert, he thought it would only take a little pain to convince someone like him.

"I can see the look on your face!" Jack said, all of his clothes lighting up. There were patterns on the whole entirety of his uniform, mostly lighting up in a white and green like colour. It wasn't any normal type of armour that was for sure.

"You thought that, if you were to get to me alone, that you would be able to finish me. You stupid purple alien!" Jack laughed.

Out from the armour a strange energy had pulsed out and now there was a see through bubble that could be seen around Jack. When looking at the energy, the grains of the sand had been pushed out as well.

"Crap what type of armour is this?" Stark ran forward, he didn't charge straight ahead trying to attack the ball of energy but stopped right in front of it. With his sharp hand, he went to touch the edge of the strange bubble of energy.

The ball flickered and with his strength he tried to push through, but force could be felt pushing back against him.

'Is this a defensive type of skill coming from the armour?' Stark thought.

He pushed harder and harder but it wouldn't budge and Jack, who was in the ball, looked to be doing nothing but standing there.

"What is this?" Stark asked.

"Do you think I would tell you?" Jack smiled. "You thought you had everything, but you have nothing and you will soon realise that. All I need to do is buy time. I told you before, everyone on this ship, will be after you. They will be here at any moment, for you this is a race against time."

Of all the things for a specially made armour to do, to create a defensive barrier. It was expected of someone like Jack. Never fighting directly himself, and instead just a way for him to buy time until someone else would come over and deal with the problem he had.

Stark pulled his hand back, still staying in the position he was in. He didn't charge forward, because there was a chance that running into the shield of energy would hurt him, so he moved his fist as fast as he could. He used the power that was given to him by the armour and slammed right into the bubble of energy.

The energy bubble rippled several times, and the energy was passing through the whole thing, shifting some of the sand as well. For a second, the face on Jack looked slightly nervous. He had never expected for an attack from one of the aliens to be that strong, but the energy ball still held up.

Stark's hand was sore, it felt like he was punching a wall, but at least a wall would give or break with that type of punch, but this one didn't. It was on the cusp of nearly breaking his fist, and if he punched the energy ball a few more times like that, then his hand would probably break.

"Why are you doing this!" Stark shouted. "How can you just stay there standing with a smile on your face, and even now you don't even fight yourself."

"People are dying out there, those that won't be able to go back home to their families now! There is no reason for you to do this, what do you even get out of this killing those you don't even know!!!" Stark shouted.

It was in one's nature to try to understand the other, their reasons behind doing something like this. It felt like, if they actually knew the reason, they would be able to forgive them a little bit. Because in one's mind they couldn't imagine someone doing this for a petty reason, a small one or anything like that.

"Why do I do this?" Jack started to laugh. "Wouldn't you like to know. A person in your position, who has never reached the top, would never know what it's like to be like me, to feel the way I feel. Even if I explained it to you, you would never understand."

"Look at our situation right now, I am here, while you are there. I have gone through my whole life doing what I want." Jack said. "And all I have ever had happened to me is good things in my life, that's when I started to realise this life is for me.

"Whatever I do, things always work out for me in the end. I am the one that matters, everything is about me."

The words spoken by Jack didn't even make a lot of sense to Stark. This was just causing him to be even angrier. What reason, what the f*ck reason was this? There were no consequences for his actions. Did Jack just feel like he was the chosen one, someone playing the main character in some type of movie. So none of his actions had consequences.

Just because he had never been punished before... but he had been punished, yet after that punishment his life had only gotten better. Is this what power does to a person?

Stark, filled with this rage, ran back through the sand a great distance away. He sprinted across the sand as fast as he could, and at the last moment, just like he had the times before, he jumped up spinning his body with both of his arms pointed out.

Hitting the bubble-like shield, he spun on the outside like a drill. It spun and the ripples on the bubble continued and eventually it was being pushed back. Jack, inside the bubble, had fallen over as if he had been pushed, but the shield of energy didn't break and was still there.

Eventually, Stark had stopped spinning and when doing so he fell to the floor on the sand. Blood soaked the sand underneath him, his hard hands had been ruined by the shield due to the power of his attack.

"You fool, this is a Demon tier armour set!" Jack souted. "Did you think your attacks would ever be able to get through something like this, now look at you, you were the one that was attacking and are even more hurt."

The bones in Stark's hands were completely crushed, when he got up the floor, even the slightest movement of his hands caused a large amount of pain.

"I can't... I can't let someone like this win."

Stark ran back once again, his legs were intact they were still strong.

"Even if every bone in my body is broken, I will take you down, and use my mouth, my ears, whatever I can to force you to take their powers away!!!" Stark yelled at the top of his lungs.

[Nitro accelerate activated]

Chapter 2273: Who is my enemy?

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

The battlefield had so far remained empty. Those who were able to stay somewhat close to the fight between two titans had tried their best, whereas others had passed out simply for being too close to the energy given off from the abilities and the attacks.

In particular, it was H's attacks that, even when missing, would send heavy vibrations through the air. When hitting the humans and those who were watching, it would just pass through their bodies, causing them to shut down.

Once fallen on the floor, since no one was brave enough to go help them, they would meet an unfortunate death when H displayed some larger attacks to the ground.

It was all of these actions that made it so no one would dare go directly onto the battlefield unless they were willing to lose their life. That was when everyone could soon see two figures that had joined the battle.

The two of them had become quite familiar to all of those watching since they had seen them deal with the last threat.

"What are they doing out there? Are they trying to get themselves killed?" Shiro shouted.

Using his powers, Shiro had been moving further and further away until he had managed to see Vicky, Logan, and Jake all together. The building they were originally in had crumbled, and now they were standing behind some broken debris that had been made of some of the special strong material of the Amra planet.

Shiro went to join them behind the piece of rock as well, since there were only a few of these pieces that were spread out or made of parts of the buildings. They were able to survive the shockwaves and using them as a shield they could watch the fight. Although from time to time, they did have to make sure their entire bodies were behind the rock, otherwise, they would get hurt.

"The two of them were able to deal with Pine, so maybe they have recovered enough," Vicky stated. "I'm sure you felt it, all this energy that was escaping from us."

"I doubt that," Jake added. "For one, H is a lot stronger than Pine. Even without abilities, I think he could smash his head in. On top of that, Layla looks to be in

good condition, but I can't say the same for Russ. At the end of the day, Russ was the one who managed to defeat Pine as well. I doubt Russ will be able to regain enough Mc cells to do that sort of thing again."

Which made them wonder, why were the two of them out there in the first place then?

Out on the battleground itself, Russ had fallen over a few times. As he was hit by the shockwaves, he had no power to protect himself, and the Qi that had surrounded him was completely gone. The fight was still going on as the two had ignored the other two who had joined.

With her sword, Layla would hit and get rid of the bigger shockwaves from time to time, the ones she thought would damage Russ.

"What is wrong with you? First, you drain me of all my energy so I can't even fight, and then you bring me out here, in the middle of the fight. I know what you're trying to do. You're trying to force my hand, and I hate it when you do things like that!"

There was a lot of anger building up in Russ, but he couldn't gather any strength. However, in that little sprout of small anger, he realized something. His feelings were so strong that he was imagining himself taking down Layla.

He couldn't do it because of his energy levels, but he still gave it a good go in his mind, at least. Yet, there was no ache in his head when he had these thoughts, no pressure creeping toward his brain.

"This woman... was she getting rid of that thing called Qi in my body? In doing so, did she also get rid of what Quinn had put on me? Does this mean... does this mean I'm free? I don't have to worry about the Talen family anymore and can get out of here!"

Standing up to his feet, this thought gave Russ a new form of energy, until he was hit by a shockwave, this one with a trace of lightning powers. It hit his whole body and his legs, knocking him down on the ground.

"Shit! Shit! Shiiit!" Russ screamed in his head.

Layla didn't expect Russ to get up like that and suddenly run away. She thought she had drained most of his energy, making it next to impossible for him to do things like that.

"What is a bug doing here on the field?" H shouted.

The voice was loud and powerful, as expected. It was only a matter of time before H noticed. Sil was battling against H but was doing next to no damage to him. H

was confident enough to let his focus go elsewhere, and the sight of others was an eyesore in his view.

H transformed his hand into what looked more like a spear and charged forward, pushing off the ground.

"This is it, huh? This is how I die, by a damned Dalki Blade. Maybe I should have listened to that damned woman," Russ gritted his teeth. "I promise, if I get a second life, I will make sure to take you and everyone down!"

Russ was ready to run forward into the attack. If he was going to die, he wanted it to seem like it was at least somewhat his decision. But a frail man appeared in front of him and placed his hands on the ground.

Several large slabs of earth rose from the ground, appearing darker in color. They were condensed down with Sil's ability, forming even harder walls. However, the strong H broke through each and every one of them, piercing them with his spear and shattering them to pieces.

As he went through each slab, Sil then used his ice powers to surround them, making the substance stronger. Finally, he turned around.

"Get out of here. He's too strong. I can't protect you and fight back. I'm not strong enough!" Sil shouted.

The large ice slab had somewhat managed to stop H. His attack didn't cleanly go through, but all he had to do was move his hand back and shove it through again to break it.

"Protect me?" Russ thought. "All this time, I have been fighting to get rid of the Blades, and now one of them is trying to protect me?"

It didn't make sense to Russ. How many Blades had fallen due to his powers, due to his order? The two of them should be mortal enemies as they killed and fought each other. So then why did it seem like Sil didn't have a clue who he was?

"Fuck," Russ said to himself. "My real enemy... I guess all of them are already gone. No, there's still one."

Sil struggled as he extended the slab of earth and ice and decided to create a dome around the entirety of H's body. Then, while inside, he would extend the earth to create sharp pillars. As somewhat expected, when the sharp spikes from the earth hit H, it did nothing but break against his skin.

"A stronger body, a stronger ability. Maybe if Quinn was here, he would have been able to beat H," Sil thought.

Thinking this, a hand could be felt pressed right up against Sil's back.

"Listen well, I'm going to tell you how to use my power so you can beat that bastard!"

Chapter 2274: Till the last drop

ANNOUNCEMENT: My Werewolf System is on A.m.a.z.o.n If you haven't read it, now is your chance for a low cost of \$4. It's also available as a physical book and as an audiobook. It's a great read to get the idea of the whole system universe!

The faster one was, the more damage one could make. This was the philosophy and the way of fighting for the Penswi. Adding more weight to the attack with their sharpened hand claws would allow them to almost pierce anything.

Yet, Stark was unable to pierce Jack's special shield of energy. He even had his own set of demon-tier armour that supported him, making him faster than before, his body and strength stronger than before. He was unable to break through the barrier.

Stark's hands were bloody, they were in pain. Even when moving his legs, the small movement in the air caused shocks of pain through his body. His hands had never been in this state before, but it made sense.

He had used his whole body as a weapon in an attempt to crash through the barrier, and now all of the damage had been reversed to him instead. Many in his situation wouldn't dare do what he was attempting to do next after what had happened, but it was the only thing Stark knew.

'I have to go faster!'

[Nitro Accelerate activated]

The skill had cooled down since he had last used it, so he could use it once again. Running through the sand, one moment Jack saw Stark; the next, he was out of sight. His bloody fist was raised and slammed right into the energy shield.

Just like before, the shield rippled due to the attack, and it was rippling much faster compared to before.

"Ha... haha!" Jack had nervous laughter. He had braced himself this time and hadn't fallen over, but he now had a good look at Stark's hand. It was unrecognisable. Blood had even splattered on top of the energy shield and started to disperse into the air.

"I never expected... to take it out in a single hit... I'll get you, I'll get you no matter what!" Stark shouted.

As if Stark had teleported, once again, Jack had lost sight of him, but he could see a large impact coming from behind on the energy shield. He turned his head, but

Stark wasn't there, and now ripples were coming from all over the place, all over the energy shield with nothing but a blur that could be seen from time to time.

On the energy shield, there were blood splatters all over. The entire thing was being covered in parts of blood here and there as the entire area shook. Even being inside the energy ball, it felt like he could feel the energy slowly seeping in, hitting his body, causing a tingling sensation on the outer part of his clothing.

'What is this... just how fast is he moving... will the shield... will it really not hold up?'

For now, the shield was holding up, but Jack hadn't really been in a situation where he needed to test the full capabilities of the shield in his armour set. It was always a defensive measure to just buy time, time until others started to arrive.

And it didn't take long for that to happen. Breaking into the sand area from above was a Dalki that crashed into the sand. Meanwhile, a few humans had entered from the regular entrance and were running towards Jack.

"You might have thought you got me, but I knew all along that I would be safe. Look at this, it looks like you lose!" Jack laughed.

However, the smile on his face soon started to disappear because, completely ignoring his words, Stark continued to attack the shield again and again. There was no sign of slowing down, and it seemed like he was completely ignoring those who had just arrived.

The Dalki had arrived, and it was moving its eyes back and forth. It had stopped just short of the two, but it had no clue what to do. It then raised its fist and attempted to hit the blur it could see.

The fist had gone straight ahead, and the Dalki had hit the outside of the barrier, causing a ripple of his own.

"What are you doing, you big stupid monster!" Jack shouted.

The Dalki turned again but was unable to keep track of Stark. He was simply too fast. Soon others had arrived, and they too continued to use their powers in an attempt to catch him.

For Stark, he didn't even have to focus. Everything, their attacks, their movements, all of it was so slow to him. It was easily avoidable, and in truth, he perhaps could have spent some time dealing with them, but he was so focused on one thing, and one thing only, and that was getting to Jack.

Stark continued to go through the attack, attacking the shield of energy, not sure if it was doing anything or not, but he didn't care.

'I've lost all feeling in my legs. Using the armour's speed, it's even tougher on my body... but I can't give up here. If I fail, there's a good chance they will continue onward and get rid of all the Penswi, all those people that supported me!'

Stark pounded the energy shield, and the shield seemed to flicker at that point. Whatever it was he was doing, it was working.

'I just... I can tell I'm so close.'

[Nitro accelerate has ended]

Unlike Quinn, Stark didn't have a system, so he didn't see any such messages, but he could feel that he lost the power from the armour.

'Screw it!' Stark said to himself as he saw this message.

Using his regular speed, could he avoid the attacks still? It was quite possible, but there was still a big worry in his mind. Would he be able to do enough damage to the shield? His own hands were no longer sharp, his bones were practically sticking out of the end of them.

His body could handle the speed, but when attacking, strong shock waves would travel through his body, and now not just his hands were being affected, but everything.

'I know... I know Quinn said... that the armour, there was a way to force it, to force it to use its active skill,' Stark thought as he ran back away from the others. He stood still, and for the first time, the humans and the Dalki were able to see who it was, and Jack could take a good look at the one that was causing him so much trouble.

"A power like that was bound to run out at some point," Jack thought. There was sweat running down the side of his head. He wanted to say more, he wanted to relax his body, but in a way, he felt like that it would just prove that, for a moment, he was afraid.

"Take him out!" Jack ordered.

Everyone in the area went towards Stark, and he was left looking at them, trying to come up with a solution.

'He said that I could lose my life... I never imagined that my life would end like this,' Stark thought. 'But thanks to all of them, thanks to all their cheers and support, I got to live a good life, and I got to become the fastest person in existence.'

'What's the point of being fast if I can't use that speed in some way to help out everyone? Come on, armour, you like me, right? So let me ask you one more time, for you to help me out right here and now!'

[Forced Nitro accelerate has been activated]

The armour started to glow faintly, and immediately Stark could feel an energy being sucked out from him. It was a sensation he had never felt before. He was already feeling weak, but it was as if he could feel the life force coming out of him.

Although Stark didn't have a system, he could almost feel something was wrong.

[Error... Error]

[Celestial blood is not detected]

[Replacement blood is being used]

[Unknown effect... will take place.]

Chapter 2275: Blood surge!

During Richard Eno's life, one of the Originals and ex-vampire kings as well as the past tenth leader, the vampire had done a lot of research into a number of things. Every vampire was different, choosing to spend their life following different pursuits.

For Richard, he was fascinated by everything to do with how the world worked, how everything worked, and just in case anything happened to him, he made sure that none of his research and information would be lost.

In the end, it was all passed on to Logan, and he could do as he wished with that information. In the vast amount of knowledge, one of the things that were researched was beast armour.

They held great power, made from the crystals in the beast's body, the source of everything, but there were similarities with the universe's powers just like that with the armour and the active skills, and that was balance.

Richard actually knew more about the balances than most, and that was because of his ability. Equivalent exchange was all about balancing. Giving something and getting something in return.

In the end, all great powers had a type of drawback. If they were incredibly strong, maybe there was a limited time of use. If it granted a person great power, then perhaps it would need a great body to use it as well.

Sometimes, rather than a drawback in the skill itself, it might need a high requirement for one to use the armour. However, there have also been cases where just due to the rarity of the crystals used, the balance had already been made. The requirement for getting the armour in the first place was hard enough, which is why so many armours like that just wouldn't exist.

In this battle, for Jack, as strong as his energy shield was, allowing him to block the hyperspeed attacks from Stark, it had to have some type of balance. Would constant attacks drain the energy? Was there a limited amount of time for it to be used, or did it significantly drain energy from the user?

In Stark's case, he was using the special active skill in his armour, and it was now going beyond what it should have been capable of, going beyond its use for him. Instantly, he could feel the power being drained from his body.

He felt incredibly thirsty and hungry almost immediately, and he wasn't sure, but it was as if his armour was eating his body away.

"What is happening?" Stark said to himself. He needed to desperately move, though. The armour seemed to have power, power that was also surging through his body.

It was as if a flash of power would enter him and be taken away at the same time.

"Move... move my legs!!"

Stark could see the group of Dalki and ability users coming toward him, but due to the energy drain effect, he was unable to move his legs.

"I'm going to die at this rate... If I don't move... I need to move. Maybe I need to time it right, when the energy is flowing into me, rather than being taken out."

The thing was, Stark was unable to control when the energy was coming in and out. There were times where he would feel enhanced or incredibly weak.

"I just have to move!" Stark forced his body, no matter how weak he felt, taking a step in the sand. It was much slower than he was before, before using the active skill.

The Dalki were fast, and so were the attacks, making Stark wonder if it was all a mistake, until a burst of energy went through the armour. He could feel it bursting through every fibre of his muscles down to his toes.

The bottom of the armour lit up with a red lingering glow, spiralling around both of the legs on the outside, and before Stark knew it, he had burst through right to the other side.

To his left and right, there were two large mounds of sand that weren't there before, and the view in front of him revealed the wall of the large Marpo Cruise ship. But he was in the centre of the strange sand resort before...

Turning his head, it was only then that he had a realisation of what had just happened. As a Penswi, not only were they fast, but their brains could process information faster as well. It was what allowed him to still be able to fight when travelling at incredibly fast speeds.

When using the Nitro accelerate, there were times where Stark found it a little bit difficult to see exactly what he was doing, but most of the time, it was alright. Only this time, he had no clue.

It was almost as if he had teleported to the other side. He might have even thought that was the case if it weren't for the large trail left behind. The mounds of sand weren't just next to him, but the sand had been split all across from where he was.

There was a trail left behind from where he had run forward, and that wasn't the only part. The Dalki and the humans that were ready to pounce on Stark, all of them had been blasted away through the large desert in completely different places.

The Dalki was the first to get up, the outside of his skin bleeding. It looked almost as if someone had ripped off part of the scales on his body.

"It hurts!" the Dalki shouted. "What was that... his legs, they were covered in a red mist, and when he accelerated forward, all that power just escaped and hit us all."

Jack hadn't seen Stark; his eyes were unable to keep up. But he did see all of the others blasted away just from the force that Stark made from running. Whatever it was that Stark had suddenly used, it was stronger and faster than the power of the armour from before.

"If... he creates an attack... with that speed, and he hits me straight on... I don't think my energy shield is going to last."

Jack turned around, looking at Stark. He looked like a man who only had a few seconds to live. His breathing was incredibly heavy, and he could barely keep his eyes open. One of them was flickering, while the other was half closed.

"You're going to die doing this!!!" Jack shouted, and for the first time, he had stuttered slightly trying to get his words out. "Is it really worth it? I can give you anything you want. I won't attack the Penswi. I'll leave you alone, or you can join us, and we can work something out!"

Stark managed to pull a smile, hearing Jack practically begging. "And what of all the Penswi that have already died? How do I even know you will have kept your word?" Stark replied.

Honestly, Stark wouldn't have even considered engaging in conversation, but he was waiting, waiting for the armour to stop draining him of power and give him another surge.

"Why do you think people follow me? It's because they know I keep my word. If people followed a leader that they didn't trust, then everything would eventually fall apart, so you can trust me."

Stark lifted up his hands, unable to make a fist due to how damaged they were.
"Okay... but there is only one thing that I want from you."

The energy was rising through his body once more, and not wasting time, he ran straight ahead, throwing out his fist right at the energy shield. It instantly crashed into it, turning into nothing but particles.

Stark's arm was hardly hanging on, and the attack had mangled his arm so badly that part of it had gone flying off, ripped from his body and landing far off in the sand.

"Take your powers away from the Dalki! Or the next arm is going through your head!" Stark shouted.

Chapter 2276: God Slayer powers Combine

The decision had finally been made on Russ' end. He would allow Sil to use his power. Whether it was the right thing to do or not, well, only time would tell. And if they were all to die here, then he would never find out.

There was one thing Russ was sure about, though, he had only done this because of Sil. When his life was saved, Russ felt like he could sense a bit of Sil's character, and during the fight, he could see the anger behind his actions and in his eyes.

Sil was like Russ, wishing to defeat the great person in front of him.

"I've given you my power, but you need to buy time until I explain everything to you!" Russ shouted.

It wasn't as if H was just going to let him explain in the middle of the fight, and from the looks of things, H had transformed both of his hands into two giant hammers, both of them spiralling with lightning.

Sil placed his hand on the ground, and it soon turned to mud. The mud was then shifting all over the place, pushing H back. With his strength, H had jumped out of the mud with relative ease, but when he landed on the ground again, he noticed that the whole ground was the same.

"This is annoying!" H shouted.

Changing his arms back, H now froze the mud around him, making it solid so he could stand on it. But in the middle of doing that, a large amount of water landed right on top of him, pushing him away and mixing with the mud.

As soon as the water touched his skin, it started to freeze as well, and now H was just trapping himself. With a 10 Spike's strength, though, a simple movement of the muscles would be enough to break the ice. It was more of an annoyance than anything.

Sil was doing as Russ said. Instead of using his powers to try and hurt H, he was almost delaying him instead. There was a reason why he had decided to somewhat trust Russ, who was a stranger to him.

For one, when Russ touched him, Sil could feel his MC cells changing, and in turn, he was able to acquire a new ability. This was a rarity. After so many years had passed, it was rare for Sil to ever come across a new ability, but it had happened here.

On top of that, when Sil copied an ability directly from a person like this, he also was able to know the amount of MC cells a person would have. This wasn't just a high-level ability; this was beyond any ability he had felt before.

"Has this person increased their power... maybe the same way I did? If that's the case, then this person is no ordinary person."

The fight was being lost, and something had to change. There weren't many options, so he would just have to go ahead with this.

"Tell me, what's your power? How do I use it?" Sil asked desperately.

Russ was grinding his teeth before he opened his mouth. He had never quite explained his ability so clearly to someone before, but he had to now.

"My ability allows you to access the minds of those around you. Depending on the amount of MC cells you have, you can either summon those with the power or change your own body based on those memories.

"Out of the powers you use, they can only be used in the way the person has remembered them, even if they remember them wrongly.

"So in some way, you have to have seen or know what the powers do in order to use them properly. Also, this is the important part, you are drawing out the power of their memory."

"What this means is that the power that has been drawn is only as strong as they think it is. In some cases, this is stronger than the actual power, while in other cases, it's actually weaker, so it's a risky game."

Based on what Russ was saying, even if Sil were to transform himself into H, a Ten-Spiked Dalki, there was also a chance that H didn't know his full strength. Going head to head, Sil might push H into a corner he has never been in before, and in that case, he would have no memory of when he was at his strongest and would lose. But there was another way.

Using his MC cells to transform himself and summon others as well.

The power sounded incredibly strong, but as with strong powers, Sil could only imagine that it would require a large amount of MC cells to do such things. He had already been fighting H for a while, and although his MC cell pool was incredibly large, it wasn't anymore.

If Sil had obtained the ability at the start of the fight, then he would have been able to summon another H for H to fight against, and then using his own powers, defeat the enemy. But he couldn't think about what could have happened and needed to think about how to solve the situation now.

Erupting in the centre of the area, a large flame appeared. It was gigantic in size and reached the clouds. The water in the area evaporated from Sil's abilities, while the ground H was standing on was starting to melt.

The intense heat could be felt by the others, and they were in pain just being in the area. The large fire soon condensed down and was now just emanating from H's skin, still covering his entire body.

'The power of fire, that's his fifth ability. I should have known he would have picked something like that,' Sil thought.

Although the lightning ability was considered one of the strongest elements, the fire ability, in many cases, was considered the most dangerous due to its destructive nature. With such power, one could eliminate entire armies and cities.

However, to be strong, one had to have a mix of powers to use, and too many elemental abilities weren't always the best bet unless they were able to carry a high number of abilities. That was why Sil thought the fire ability wouldn't be chosen, yet here it was.

'His MC cells, I have underestimated them myself... It can't be. The more he is damaged, the higher the power of the Dalki. Is that also increasing his MC count? Is he getting stronger the more hurt he gets in this fight?'

Sil was unsure about his thoughts, but it reminded him that he was fighting against H, not Hilston. Who knew how many powers he could hold or what the limit of the Dalki was. At the moment, H didn't look to be damaged at all, so there was a chance he could grow even higher.

"Look, I don't know what that woman is trying to do," Russ said, staring at Layla. "But I think she's trying to give you extra power or something. With your body the way it is now, it can't take that power."

"So the best bet would be to just turn yourself into that Ten-Spike, take whatever power it is that she wants to give you, and beat that guy, summoning a bunch of others around you to help!"

Although the Black Swordsman was strong, its power to negate abilities might work against Sil if the swordsman's form wasn't strong enough to defeat the current H in front of them.

"Thank you, but I have another idea," Sil said as he slapped Russ on the side of his arm, and he was teleported back away from the fight.

Teleporting himself, he soon moved Minny out of the way and teleported to Layla, tapping her and moving her back as well.

"In everyone's mind here, there is someone that we all see as the strongest. Even now, I can tell that you are all thinking about him because it's the same for me. He is someone who has never failed us, and he won't fail us now."

Shadows covered Sil's entire body, and when they spread out and disappeared, a completely different person stood in his place, with black curly hair and red glowing eyes.

The facial features weren't quite the same, as it was just something that Russ' ability couldn't completely do. Without a doubt, though, the person that Sil had decided to transform into was Quinn.

"I know that for all of you who have met Quinn, without a doubt in your minds, you would expect him to beat H. So let's make that a reality."

Chapter 2277: A Different Quinn

When looking at the man in the black clothing with red armour all over his body, it was almost impossible to tell that the one they were looking at wasn't Quinn. Even the shadow that lingered around his back looked the same.

However, from the front the facial features, the strong sticking nose, and the slightly sunken in eyes made it clear that this was Sil. Of all people to choose from, in the memories of all those around, Sil had chosen to choose one of the people that he considered the strongest.

'He picked Quinn's body...' Layla was almost taken away when seeing him. She thought, just like the times before, Quinn had arrived to save them once again.

This hadn't actually happened of course, but in some way, to her she still felt like Quinn once again was the one that was coming to her in this time of need.

'If Sil has decided to take on Quinn's body, then he can definitely take on the Qi, in his body to the fullest. From the distance she was, she started to use the power of her Soul Weapon again. From all those watching, including H himself, she tried to put all of that power into Sil, and this time Sil was accepting it all.

Sil stood there with H opposite him, who was confused about the sudden change. What this power was, how could it make someone feel so different from him suddenly.

With a smile on his face, Sil was the first one to act, he ran across the ground and blood gatherd around his hand, the Qi in his body and of those around started to form. As the two powers combined they spun like a giant drill.

Seeing this, H decided to retaliate with the same, he transformed his hand into a pointed point, and covered in the power of flames throwing it outward. The two large powers clashed, the blood drill constantly spinning at H's hand.

However, soon shadow started to escape out from Sil's hand and covered the flames. After covering the attack, Sil quickly moved with his speed right into H. He bent down, and gathered his blood aura creating another drill, and struck right from below, right on H's face.

It lifted H up off his feet, such power had never been felt from the blows from before. Blood could be felt filling his mouth, and from before, the scales from his transformed hand, they had started to bend slightly as well.

While H was flying through the air, Sil had gathered the blood aura, into a large sword, and condensed it, he lifted it above his head, and with his other hand created a shadow on the ground.

'Why is he creating a shadow there...' H thought.

Before he knew it, while being forced in the air from the attack, a shadow had been created above him. When going through it, H had appeared right through the second shadow that was made on the ground. That meant, he was now right in front of Sil.

With the blood sword, he swung it down, with great force, a wave of blood aura followed from both sides, as if one was splitting a red sea in half. It managed to hit right on the top of H's head. As it did, H immediately tried to use his ice powers to create a barrier between his skin and the attack, but the blood aura won out, and a large cut was made on top of H's head.

"Arghhh!" H screamed at the top of his lungs, his whole body covered in lightning and soon his whole body somewhat transformed into a bolt. It struck at everything in sight, but Sil was prepared for this as well. He had already gotten the shadow to come back and cover his body.

When the lightning strikes had stopped, Sil took the shadow away and could see that H had backed off, he was on the other side of the square where they were fighting. His hand was injured, blood dripping from his knuckles.

The top of his head had a deep cut as well, and his mouth was filled with blood. His breathing was heavy, but it was mostly due from shock rather than being tired, and when H realised it, he started to calm down a little.

"You might have had a sudden boost in strength, but even you must know, unless you can kill me in one blow, all of this is useless." H stated.

H had decided for the time being that he wouldn't use the regeneration skill, because he wanted the special trait of the Dalki to activate.

"It seems that Quinn has either gotten stronger than I thought, or everyone thinks quite highly of him." Sil claimed. "You know, I have always wanted to use his shadow ability, but I thought that I might never get the chance to, yet here I am."

"I guess with this, I can also experience being a vampire, without being a vampire."

Before H realised, he was completely surrounded by Blood Swords. At a snap of his fingers, all of the blood swords went straight towards H. Seeing this, he swung his arm and a large burst of energy went out, colliding with half of the swords in the sky, they all disappeared as the large power clashed against the swords.

However, the other half of the swords had reached his back. Like a hedgehog, H bent his back slightly, and fire started to emit right from his spikes. It was a large flame like a rocket, blasting out and melting the rocks behind it, as well.

All of the blood swords had quickly disappeared, when the fire finally stopped. H stood there with a large smirk on his face.

'It seems that my theory might be right after all, that his abilities are getting stronger, along with his natural strength, this could be a tough one to fight.'

H charged forward running with his full fist out, and Sil did the same, gathering up his Qi and the power of the blood aura, fist collided with fist shaking the entire planet as the two hit. They continued to hit each other, matching speed for speed.

However, with the hits, Sil could tell that H was actually stronger, once in a while H would use a bit more power, but when this happened, Sil would use the shadow to slip the other, then when there was opening he would use a blood attack, but he stopped himself just before piercing the skin, continuing to just match the hits for hits.

Until he eventually stopped, moving away. H could tell that something was up, why would one suddenly stop hitting.

"I wanted to see how strong Quinn has become, and it seems that he is just as strong as a ten spike... but I know the real Quinn would probably come up with a way to beat you." Sil stated.

"Beat me... you have given me nothing but a couple of scratches, I can tell you are scared to hurt me more. Just in case I gain power to overpower you, but you can't last like this forever. Eventually your MC cells will run out, but for me I will only get stronger." H exclaimed.

"You know I never planned to beat you as Quinn." Sil claimed. "It wouldn't seem right. You know the Blade's ability is strong, but there is just something that I could never do. I could never use more than one ability at once?"

"However, this new power that I have obtained is truly amazing. If I wished I could turn my arm into that of a Dalki, while keeping the rest of my body the same. Meaning I could continue to use Quinn's powers, but did you know something?"

"I can use the powers and draw an image of those that the others have seen, and the others were able to see my own powers. The strength of Sil. So by using the power I just obtained, I can use part of my own power, and that of Quinn's as well."

H wasn't quite following what Sil meant, that was until his body started to duplicate, just like before when there were multiple Sils, there were now multiple Quinn's as well all spread out on top of that, lightning ring's were emitting from all of their arms as well.

With Russ's power, and the vast amount of MC cell's that Sil contained, he was able to combine his own power and Quinn's together. It was quite possible, at that

current moment and time, that Sil just unlocked the potential to be considered the strongest in the universe.

Chapter 2278: Unstoppable power

There were around fifty different Quinn's or more accurately they were all Sil around the place, all of them looking identical to the first Sil that had transformed. They all had rings of lightning around their arms, and they were larger than before.

Due to the Qi powering him and his new, stronger body, Sil was able to input more power into his attack.

There weren't as many clones as there were the first time when Sil was using his own power, but he had already been fighting for a while. He had a bit of a boost in MC cells thanks to Russ, but he still needed to fight and finish off H.

"I have gone through so much, I won't... I won't... I won't be taken down by you again!" H shouted at the top of his lungs.

This was a strange comment to make because technically H hadn't lost to Sil or Quinn before, but due to the DNA being mixed in and how H was created, strange memories were being mixed in.

A feeling was starting to enter H, one that he hadn't felt before, it was as if his body knew, he was afraid.

He lifted up both of his arms, transforming them into hammers once more. They were coated in the strong flames from before rather than the lightning.

The moment he lifted his hands, though, shadows had covered both of them, completely subduing the flames.

"Right now, I have the power of fifty Quinns, and all of them are able to use their shadow and blood powers."

On top of the shadows being created, large blood swords could be seen from above. They were gigantic in size. From space, from the Marpo cruise, these large swords would have been seen.

All of them moved, and all of them were heading straight for H.

"If I jump, I'll be able to escape the shadow and use my arms!" H thought, bending his knees down.

Before he could take off, the clones of Sil fired out rings of lightning. They were more powerful than the initial attack from before and coming at him from all angles. As the rings of lightning hit H's body, a pulse of lightning in a ring shape emitted throughout the whole area.

This was going off again and again as each ring of lightning hit H. He was unable to move no matter what he did, and each time the lightning struck him, blood splattered out from his mouth.

"This is impossible. How can I be unable to do anything? I have become a ten spike with great power!"

From H's back, the flames emitted like a rocket once more. He lifted his legs, hoping it would propel him forward and defend against the attacks or at least get rid of the lightning circles that were hitting him.

However, when the flames came out, instead of lightning strikes, large amounts of shadow created a wall, blocking out the flames. They were unable to harm anything, and now, more lightning strikes from the front were fired, hitting H directly.

With the damage building up, for the first time, H was able to take a step forward, but as he did, gigantic blood swords fell down from above.

The first one hit H's arm, slicing through his thick skin, going a few inches deep. Before he knew it, the rest of the large blood swords had struck H all over his body.

The blood swords, upon touching H's body, condensed into a raw form of blood power—smaller in size but continuing to exert pressure. Each sword continued to strike at H.

"The energy... it's still rising in me, but with all of these attacks, at this rate, I'll be dead soon."

With this in mind, H did something he perhaps never should have done and started to use his Regeneration ability. Pinned down on the ground by the condensed blood swords, he tried to lift himself up.

"That was a big mistake!" Sil said as all of the Quinns charged in with large blood drills around their hands. The drills spiralled as they descended to strike H.

He covered his head, hissing as he used both of his forearms to shield himself. He had managed to pull himself out of the blood swords just in time, but all the devastating strikes crashed into him.

The waves of power were sent out far and wide, causing the planet itself to react to the attack. Storms brewed, clouds rained, thunder rumbled, and lava spewed from the cracks created by the fight.

In an instant, it was as if the whole planet's scenery had changed as the force of multiple blood drills hit H's body.

As quickly as H was being injured, he attempted to heal his body as much as he could. Dalki were very resilient, and being a ten spike meant he was even more so.

However, he was barely hanging on as the damage continued to accumulate, and his healing abilities were unable to keep up.

After the Sills had attacked with the blood drills, they moved out of the way. Now, levitating in the air, there were several Sills with flame rings around their arms.

"I know that it might not be enough to kill you. I need to make sure that you are never able to come back again. I need to ensure that every last bit of you is burnt up!"

The rings of fire came out from each Sil, and just like with the lightning, as they hit H's body, giant rings of flame aura spread out through the area. These pulses of power were all aimed below, further and further into the ground, hitting H relentlessly.

The onlookers were unable to see anything as flames erupted in one particular place, and the heat was too much for them to handle. Eventually, though, sweat could be seen running down Sil's face.

He was getting tired, but he continued to use his powers, and soon one by one, the clones of Sil started to disappear. Sil stayed in the air, continuing to fire out rings of fire.

"You killed them... you killed everything that I tried to protect. Why did you have to, why did you have to take everything away from me!" Sil shouted at the top of his lungs.

Then, he was the only Sil left. His hair started to revert back to its original state, and his body weakened, returning to its frail self once again.

Using Russ's powers in the way he was using them, even with his seemingly infinite MC cells, was starting to drain, and eventually, Sil landed on the ground, puffing and panting, barely able to stand.

The whole planet looked nothing like it did before. The ground was scorched black, and so were all the rocks around it. The unusual environment created by the fighting had caused mass destruction here and there, but now it was starting to settle down as the fight appeared to be over.

"I can't believe it, even after all that?" Sil stated.

His eyes amazed him, and as the others started to approach, they could see why. They expected H to be nothing but a pile of ashes, yet his body was still there.

It was hard to call it a body, as its skin had been torn open to shreds, with dried and burnt blood. The bones of the Dalki were on full display. It was clear from the state the Dalki was in, despite its powers and special traits, that there would be no coming back from this.

It was astonishing to even see that there was a glimmer of life in H's eyes, his mouth barely intact.

"You... think you've won this, haven't you?" H said. "I... have nothing to lose now that I've lost. So that means we both lose... six abilities. I have six abilities," H said.

Chapter 2279: The final ability

Looking at H on the ground there was still life in his eyes, even in the state he was in. Through his ripped skin and his few sharp teeth, Sil could make out what he thought was a smile that soon turned into a chuckle.

"Ha..ha..ha." H stated.

'This Dalki, everything about him reminds me of H... and that can't just be a coincidence.' Sil thought. 'The vision I saw, of all of the Blades dying, in the end I was unable to stop it, but there are still a lot of lives on this planet around us.'

'Think if this was H, what would he have up his sleeve?'

Thinking back to a long long time ago, Sil remembered when Hilston had been defeated. At the time, Hilston had a final ace up his sleeve a trick and that was the second chance skill. Even if one was killed once, they would be given a second chance.

Either way, they were able to predict that, and through predicting it, got rid of Hilston once and for all.

'Is that it, has this Dalki taken the Second Chance skill as well? I have to assume that whatever I have is something that I can use as well.'

The laughter from H was getting slower and slower, his grip onto life was fading from him.

'The second chance skill wouldn't make any sense in this situation. I would be able to get to him, before he even had a chance to regenerate.'

'At the same time, Hilston wasn't one to make the same mistake twice. I don't know why I keep thinking of this Dalki as Hilston, but if it was him, and he didn't have the second chance skill, then what would he do.'

Sil thought back to the fight so far. The power of lightning, the power of ice, the power of fire, the ability to transform, and the ability to regenerate. With all these skills, that was five abilities all together.

Then, the last words from H had entered Sil's mind.

'Is he thinking what I think he's thinking? There is one way I can confirm.'

The book appeared in Sil's hand once more, and soon changed to his foresight ability. In an intense battle like the one he had, it was worse for him to use it, as he needed to see the future images and also react to it.

The two of them were too strong and too fast, so much so that it would have only had a negative impact on the fight between the two.

Finally, Sil was able to see what was going to happen, and his worst fears had come true.

"We will both lose... that's it, it's the only ability I can think of, you... you b*stard!" Sil screamed. "You already took out so many people. You won't even be alive anymore, so why would you even bother to take such a thing!!"

H smiled once again.

"Wherever I go to, whatever happens to me after this. I will be happy to know that i took everyone with me!"

There were hundreds of abilities that Sil had copied during his time, and during that time he had memorised all of them, learned how to use them best and come up with new ways to use the abilities, but there was one ability that could never be tested.

Its powers he had seen before, it was even written in Hilston's journal. He would force some to learn it, so it could be used in cruel ways. It was the power of self destruction. It was an abaility that was increadilby strong because it only had one condition for it to be reached, the user had to die.

'That ability, it works on the user's MC cells just like anything else. In the usual case, one could't really use this abaility so the MC cells would still cause it to have a pretty devastating explosion. That's the case in a normal person, but in the case of H?

'He wasn't able to use much of his MC cells during the fight, I didn't give him the chance to, and if even now as close to death as he is, the Dalki trait is working, it might have boosted his MC cell's to the max. Just what type of explosion... is going to happen?'

"It seems you've figured it out... haha!" H laughed.

H could feel it, maybe he had three more breaths in him, before he would no longer be, and then he could only imagine the destruction and devastation it would cause.

'Should I try and teleport him?' Sil thought, sweat was running down his forehead and dropping onto the floor. He used his foresight ability once more, and he could see the result straight away.

'The explosion it would cause... It's too big. I don't have enough MC cell's to take him that far away from here. Never mind coming back again as well. What if I was to try and heal him? If I heal his wounds then the damage would be smaller, maybe even stop the explosion from happening?" Sil thought.

Once again though, looking into the future that wouldn't work either, it would only delay the time before H's death.

"Sil, use me!" Layla shouted.

She wasn't sure what was happening, but she could see a large amount of Smog that was building up above Sil's head. It was heavy and she only guessed that perhaps H had something up his sleeve.

With her sword, there might be something she could do. She threw it up in the air straight at Sil. He glanced to his right while reaching out for the sword. The life in the eyes of H were disappearing, they were going away, Sil managed to catch the sword in his hand and immediately he could feel his powers disappearing.

At that moment, he believed he had made a mistake, now he was unable to even use his powers to stop H. There was only the sword, but it was all too late, H had taken his last breath.

Sil could no longer feel any life coming from H.

"Everyone get down!" Sil shouted out of instinct, even though it wouldn't matter, because all of them would be dead anyway.

Instead though, he lifted the black sword, and was aiming to stab it into H, but stopped, as he noticed nothing was happening.

"What's going on... was it a trick? No, that's impossible. I saw with my own ability that H would blow up.'

Dropping the sword on the ground, Sil used his ability once more, but there was no sign of H blowing up anymore. Just what had happened?

"I've done it!" Jack shouted out, blood spewing out from his mouth. Most of his teeth having fallen out.

Holding him by the scruff of his neck with his one good arm, was none other than Stark.

"I did what you asked... all of their powers have been taken away, so just spare me please!"

Jack's body was incredibly damaged, several holes were in his body, as well as broken bones. After breaking the shield Stark had to do a little convincing, but in the end. He had achieved what he had set out to achieve.

'I hope what I have done has helped out in any way possible.' Stark thought.

H had perished and he was no more, and soon his body was turning into nothing but particles, floating in the air. However, some of the particles on the ground had started to gather, and when the rest of the body disappeared, there was now a crystal in its place left behind.

The crystal had some dark scales on the outer surface of it, like a type of skin, while the inside was raw with yellow energy bouncing around.

It was now, all that was left of H.

"It's over... it's really over." Sil said, looking at the crystal and he carefully watched as a dark hand picked the crystal up off the floor.

"Yes... it really is over." Mundus said, with the god slayer crystal in his hand.

Chapter 2280: The hero is tired

Stark's vision continued to go in and out. The desert around him was all but a blur and it wasn't due to the heat either. In fact, he wasn't quite sure what the reason was.

'Could it be the armour?' Stark thought. 'Maybe it's blood loss from my arm. The wound... it stopped bleeding, but I lost a lot of blood during the fight.'

The Penswi didn't have amazing healing capabilities like the vampires, but unlike humans, if they were to lose a limb the area around the wound would seal off to stop them from bleeding to death.

The problem was, while using the armour's strange skill that was taking the life out of him, he could feel that his arm hadn't healed, it wasn't healing during his confrontation with Jack, and only now that he had stopped drawing power from the armour, had his arm healed up.

'Let's try and look on the bright side, without an arm it means I weigh less, so I should be able to move faster now, right?' Stark thought.

He stumbled a bit, but managed to catch himself. He imagined that the effect of the demon tier armour was the only thing that kept him standing, and the fact that there was still unfinished business.

In the sand lying in front of him, Jack had a hole in his shin, a hole in his arms, and holes in other places of his body. All of these had been made with Stark's good arm. It was done so Jack wouldn't run away, and also to convince him to take away the powers of others.

While attacking, Stark did also notice something else, a crystal that was embedded in his body, it was next to his chest glowing with power.

'I'm not so sure what that is... but if I was to guess, it is one of those crystals that Quinn had asked for, a nest crystal? It's not glowing as bright though, maybe its power was already somewhat used.'

Without realising it, Jack was also powering his own armour with the power of the crystal, but with Stark using the celestial armour and his own strength, he managed to break through the barrier.

Although nest crystals were somewhat considered an unlimited source of energy, even they needed time to recover their energy.

Stark started to move toward Jack, and eventually lifted him again, pulling him up with his one good arm. The strength of the armour was still working, allowing him to do so with ease.

"I did what you asked... you said you would leave me alone!" Jack shouted through a swollen mouth that was only getting bigger.

"I need to confirm you did as you said, and besides, if anyone else comes after me, I'm going to need a hostage." Stark replied.

Stark made sure that Jack was unable to do anything, checking that the bones, and the tendons in his arms and legs were slashed. He was unable to move, and then placed him on his back.

Two of Jack's arms fell past his neck, and with his one good hand he held Jack's hands together close to his chest. After that he moved his leg's sprinting forward, he ran through the sand before stopping after half a kilometre.

Stark coughed and blood spilt out of his mouth falling onto the floor.

"If you force yourself to move you'll die!" Jack said.

"If I stay put, and your people find me, I'll die." Stark replied.

He continued to run, going back the way he came, but unlike before he would have to take frequent breaks and rest for a bit. Each time Stark had to take a break, the intervals were getting shorter, while the breaks were getting longer.

'My damned eyesight is just getting blurrier... how much longer can I hold out!'

With one last stint, Stark had eventually made it back to Jack's personal control room. There were people running all over the ship, but no one was at the start of the scene of the crime.

Perhaps they thought that Stark would never return here with Jack. Maybe thinking that they would do anything they could to get off the ship. After all, if they stayed on it, they would eventually be found, and then killed.

In the control room, the screens were looking at what was going on down below. Stark could hardly see what was on the screens, but Jack's reaction was enough for him to know what had happened.

"Where is H... he was down there, he was sent down to fight... to fight that person!" Jack screamed. The only usable part of his body was his mouth it seemed like.

"Sil... Sil is right there, but H is nowhere to be seen... that's impossible. Did they manage to kill H, but how could that be. Even if Sil was at full strength he wouldn't have been able to beat H, but he was nearly half dead."

For Stark, the voice of Jack being unable to comprehend that H had lost to his allies, it was music to his ears.

"Was it really because of me, because I took H's powers away, but that wasn't too long ago, he would have had his powers long enough to deal with them all."

Jack didn't want to believe it, but the scene of the ground and everything around them, it was clear that a huge fight had taken place.

"Even without H... they should be weak, if the others attack, they will be able to finish them all off, and then I can just ask Jim to help me create a better H. I can't be taken out here like this, my name was meant to live on for the ages, written down and planted in history!"

Hearing all the useless babble at the side of his ear, Stark moved his shoulders and let go of his hands allowing him to drop on the floor. Jack now laid there on his back, and Stark soon propped his knees on Jack's arms.

"What are you doing?" Jack asked. "You have your confirmation, I did what you asked."

Stark then pulled back his one good hand, and putting his fingers together he made the sharp pointed end.

"You're going to kill me, you're going to go back on your word, then you are no better than me!"

"Me, no better than you?" Stark laughed. "You just went on, and on, about how you would do this all over again. You are someone who can not live. You have taken their powers away so there is a good chance you can always just give them their powers back."

Jack tried to lift his arms, but he was unable to, nothing was working.

"No... no! I can't give them their powers back. I have to touch them... I have to transfer powers through my mouth! You can make sure that I don't give my powers to anyone! And didn't you say, you would use me as a hostage, if you kill me, you won't be able to leave this ship!"

"I'm sorry." Stark said. "But there's no way I can confirm what you said is true... and I think... I'm too tired to leave this ship anyway."

Stark didn't say anything else, he just threw his hand forward, it went right through Jack's head between his two eyebrows. When pulling it out, there was a large hole in its place, and Jack's entire body was lifeless, he was dead, and there was no coming back from this one.

Standing up, Stark waddled again, and now he was unable to see. His eyes were open but he couldn't see at all. With his one good arm, he reached around until he eventually felt a chair.

Making sure the chair was sturdy, he sat down, and started to close his eyes.

"I'm so tired... my leg's... I don't think I can move them anymore. Everyone, I wish you good luck... I need to go to sleep now."

Stark's eyes closed, and his one arm fell dangling by his side.

Chapter 2281: A way to stop it all

The whole city, the entire planet that Sil and H fought on, had practically been destroyed. Whatever large structures there were, they had been reduced to nothing but rubble.

It would be hard for one to believe that there was a civilization on the planet if they were to land on it now. Still, there were quite a few who had managed to survive, trapped under rubble, too far away from the fight to see but still feeling the energy that passed through the planet.

Hiding, waiting for it to stop, waiting for a result, and one had finally come. Sil was the victor, the one who fought on the side of the Mermerials, the Amra, and the Penswi. However, going against Pine and H back to back had come at a great cost.

For one, they had already lost nearly all forces on the planet prior to this one. When leaving it be, Pine had killed everyone on it, and on the current planet they were at, there was only a small token army of around 100, a mixed bag of races.

Then, there was the worst outcome of the battles—the Mermerials had lost two members of their Royal family, Wince and Ceril. They had fought a hard battle, not giving up and eventually dying, fighting till the very end.

The news had yet to spread to the other planets. In fact, the fighting still went on elsewhere, as no one was aware of what was happening with each other, too focused on their fights.

Then, there were also the Blades that had lost their lives, sent to a far distant land for their survival, always fighting to try to change the image they had of the past, and in the end, still losing their lives to the one that caused them great trouble.

It was a sad fact that Sil had yet to come to terms with fully. He had done a lot to try to protect them and still failed. He was starting to understand how Quinn felt. At the very least, he wished to pray for them and give them a proper burial, but nearly all of their bodies in the area had already been burnt.

Still, there was a moment of relief for Sil, that everything was over, but that was all it was, a simple moment, as his eyes laid on the large figure in front of him. A species that he had never even seen before stood in the center, confident, holding the crystal that had come out from H's body.

"Sil," Layla called out, "Don't do anything rash."

She was now next to him, along with Minny. The two of them had run out when wishing to give the sword to Sil.

With how close she was, Sil had noticed that Layla broke out in a sweat and she was shaking. Minny had reacted as well, covering her body in a shadow and baring her fangs toward this person.

It was natural for Layla's body to react in such a way because she remembered everything about this person and their great power.

"I guess there are too many around us who are looking," Mundus said, and soon the air outside of the area they were in was still. There was almost no sound being made. Sil could tell something was different, but he didn't know quite what.

"I have to congratulate you because, thanks to you, you have managed to turn the tide of the war!" Mundus said, sounding quite excited. "But you should know that the battle isn't over yet. There is still more to be done. Nevertheless, you have already done so much. I have been watching you very... very carefully."

Sil was still trying to figure out if this person was an enemy or not, and whether he needed to use his powers or even if he could, since his MC cells had nearly depleted to the bottom of the barrel.

"Don't worry, I promised a certain someone that I wouldn't meddle in Earthling affairs, as long as everything works out in the end. And besides, the quickest way to end this war is still through you."

"It's just, I can't let there be any more troublesome ones coming from your planet, so I will be the one to take this." Mundus shook the crystal in his hand.

Sil wanted to keep the crystal in case he or someone else wanted to use it, but since he could see Layla's reaction, he thought it was best to just let this person do what they wanted. Sil himself realized that they had made a good point.

He still had the memory change ability. Even if the heads at the top and all the powerful opponents were eliminated, everyone would still know no better. In a way, if Sil had died in the battle, then everyone else would have suffered greatly in figuring out what to do.

"I have a warning for you," Mundus said, looking at Sil. "In the future, it's best that you stop your exploration. I don't know why you are doing such a thing, but you never know what can come about due to the result of your actions."

"Look at what happened here. They tried to push too far, and now they are paying for it. You Earthlings seem to be quite obsessed with protecting people, but another way of protecting people is to stay out of trouble."

Those words hit Sil harder than he thought. He had seen a future where great beings had attacked Earth, as well as one where all of the Blades died. He was

unable to stop the Blades from dying, but what if the future was due to him trying to meddle in the first place?

It was something that he always had to try and live with and was why he never tried to look so far into the future.

The sound of the wind moving again entered Sil's ears. When he looked up, he noticed the being was gone. Both Layla and Minny were fine once more, now that the threat was gone.

They all stood there in silence for a bit, still stunned at everything that was happening, until they could hear an explosion go off in the distance. It started with one, but soon many more followed.

"What's happening?" Minny asked. "Isn't the fighting over?"

"No," Layla answered. "The fighting won't end with just that. Those fighting have lost the lives of those they care about, that were right next to them moments ago. They also have the old memories, and with it, the fighting will continue until then."

"Then we just have to change their memories again," Sil said. "I can put a stop to this war. Jack originally used me to change everyone's memories. So if I go back in that device, then I can use it to change everyone back."

It sounded a bit strange, after rescuing Sil, that they would have to go back to the place where they started, but it was the original plan.

"It will work. It will stop the fighting, not just here but everywhere, and they will all know the truth. How they deal with that after, that's down to them."

"Not to be a bearer of bad news, but I think there's one problem that you're forgetting about," Russ added. "There are no ships on this planet anymore. All of them were destroyed."

Teleporting to their side, another group of people appeared: Logan, Vicky, Jake, and Shiro. There was a lot Sil wanted to say to them, looking at them, but now wasn't the time for words.

"Jake and I will deal with the Dalki that are still on this planet," Shiro stated. "We aren't beaten from the fight. There is still a lot we can do."

"And I can make you a ship to get back up there," Logan stated. "We just need the materials, but once we're up there, we can end this war."

Chapter 2282: Unveiling Shadows: Paths Converge in the War

The war had spanned a lot longer than originally intended, and the truth of the matter was that neither side knew who was winning or what was going on. For the Alien Alliance, they all felt like they were defending with everything they had, close to losing everything, or perhaps they had already lost it all.

There had been next to no communication from the other planets, making them believe the worst-case scenario. Still, they clung to the hope that until they heard news of a loss or heard the word to surrender, they would keep on fighting.

This made it harder for the Dalki, human, and vampire forces to fight back. The whole battle was far harder than they had ever imagined. In the end, though, the group composed of many Dalki and humans had managed to finish off another planet.

This meant that of the three battles they had taken part in, on the three separate planets, they had now won against two of them.

"We'll make sure to take out every single one of these on here that is alive! Make sure not a single one of them is hiding!" A five-spike Dalki commander shouted to the others. The Dalki looked around at the destruction, the losses they had accumulated.

"Sir!" A young human came over with a large device on his back. It looked like a backpack but was made completely of electronic components. After approaching the Dalki commander, he swung the bag around his back and placed it on the floor.

"I did as you asked. I contacted the Marpo Cruise base asking for orders. I was trying to get an update on the current situation, asking whether we should go aid the other forces or just head back, but the news..."

"Just spit it out!" The Dalki angrily said, already impatient and fearing that he would be blamed for the current mess they were in. They had struggled greatly, and a lot of blame would be put on them.

Instead of explaining the situation, the human thought it was best if he just played the messages that he had received.

"This is an urgent message: Jack Truedream has been kidnapped! I repeat, Jack Truedream appears to have been kidnapped. All forces are to search for him on board the Marpo Cruise. All those on the ground are to look for him on the current planets you are at. Find Jack Truedream at all costs!"

When the message ended, there was a concerned look on the commander's face, and he didn't have a good feeling about what he had heard. Their battle had ended a

while ago, and most of them were recovering, just doing simple searches in the area.

Placing his hand out, the Dalki pointed it towards some rubble of a broken building in the distance. His hand started to shake, his eyebrows furrowed, but nothing happened.

"It's true... Something must have happened to Jack Truedream... I've lost my powers."

The emergency message had been played out loud and clear, and the news had also spread to the other Marpo cruise that belonged to Jim Eno. Most of the vampires on board had already been sent down below, at least those taking part in the fight.

There was a small skeleton crew that had received the message, and they were panicking even more than before as they held their heads in their hands.

"What is going on... All of the cameras on board, they don't seem to be working properly, so I can't get a read on what's happening below!" one of the vampires panickedly said.

"We need to move. There is an energy source coming off from the planet. It's swirling and hitting the bottom of the ship. The ship's systems are detecting it as a threat."

"That's crazy. There are no energy blasts or anything that can be seen outside. Are you saying that just pure energy coming off from the planet is harming us? From all the way down there, but it doesn't even look like any fighting is going on"

"We can't get in contact with Jim either. He's down below... What are we to do?"

Down below, where the capital of the Amra resided, the scene was drastically different from what it was moments ago. The Demon tier shadow beasts were fending off the strong vampire forces. The vampires had to gather in groups, using their powers and weapons just to push them back.

While the fight was going on, an order had been declared for all of the Amra to head back into the tower. The shadow beasts, rather than attacking at that moment, concentrated on defending, and little by little, all of the Amra forces had headed right back into the tower.

Geo took one last look at the scene outside before deciding to head in, and the two vampires, Jeouk and Ronkin, who had helped, were guided inside with Geo as well.

The Demon shadow beasts continued, but noticing that all of the Amra had disappeared, the vampires had decided to push, getting closer to the tower.

"Stop!" Hikel shouted, the fourth original leader. "There is no need for us to fight and kill each other!"

"Hahah, are you only saying that because you fear that you will lose?" Magnus replied.

Hikel, Edvard, Grenlet, and Bianca had all gathered in front of the tower. They didn't head inside because although they were helping Quinn, they weren't part of the alien forces. The rest of the vampires were still out there on the battlefield.

"This is ridiculous!" Hikel shouted. "You are following someone that we have next to no connection with. They made all these claims, and the people stated they were true, so we decided to help out. But haven't you always thought things were strange?"

"Haven't you thought that maybe the one named Quinn was telling the truth?"

Magnus, as well as the other originals, had stopped for a second. They continued to gather blood aura around their bodies, ready to fight at any moment.

"You certainly seemed to have changed your tune fairly quickly," Magnus said. "Why is that? Is it because the vampire that you are going against has the powers of the Shadow? I guess you plan to betray the current leader with the Punishers, just like you did to me back then."

Hikel grunted, knowing this would be a hard one to convince. The Punisher's covenant was created in the first place when Magnus was the king of the vampires. When war broke out, there were those on the Punishers' side and those on the king's side, and the current king in question was Magnus himself.

To him, it seemed like history was repeating itself.

"Look, whether or not you and I see the same goal is a different thing altogether," Hikel stated. "We both, no, we all care about what happens to the vampires. We all care about the future of the vampires, and that's why we strongly fight for it. In the end, the vampires came from us, so their lives are our responsibility."

"But this, look around you, look at all the death, and even us fighting against each other. Why are we fighting alien races when we don't even have a proper reason for fighting them? The vampires as we know it could go extinct because of this one person. So I'm just asking you to stop and question what is going on for a moment."

Magnus didn't say anything, and the other originals that stood by his side were looking at him to make a decision. Because if one of them backed down, especially Magnus, who was one of the stronger originals, then the fight would be pointless.

The aura around Magnus disappeared, as it looked like it would come to an end.

"The only reason why I am backing down is because the outcome of this whole thing won't be decided by us, and you know it," Magnus stated. "You can feel the energy coming from behind us, can't you? The victor of those two will be the one that determines what happens here.

"As for me, I will choose my own path."

The wind blew, and Magnus disappeared from all of their sight, off in the distance. Where he went, they weren't quite sure, nor what he would do from now on. To a lot of the originals, though, when they had been woken up by Jim, they were going with the flow of this new world.

Some of them even wished to go back to slumber after all of this was done, but there were others, like Magnus, who had goals of their own to achieve.

With Magnus gone, the other originals stood down, and Hikel and Edvard stared into the distance.

"You can feel that energy, right?" Edvard asked.

"Yeah... It looks like Jim's protector is going up against the one named Quinn," Hikel answered. "Although I don't like to admit that Magnus is right, in this situation, I think he is. This whole war won't be determined by Jim, Jack, or the leader of the aliens. It will be through those two."

Chapter 2283: Clash of Fates: The Phoenix and the Dragon

Since Magnus had suddenly left the scene to do who knew what or go who knew where, the other leaders were reluctant to fight anymore, especially against Hikel, who before this mess was doing a pretty good job leading them all. They respected Hikel a lot but were somewhat confused by the sudden change of heart, as they weren't part of the Punishers covenant like the others.

"What should we do now? Do we stay here, or what? It even seems like the Shadow beasts have just gone off and disappeared somewhere?" Edvard commented.

In the middle of the Originals' scuffle, it was true the Shadow beasts had a shadow appear behind them and suddenly disappeared, leaving the remaining vampires with no enemy to fight. The Amra were no longer there, so the vampires were just left confused but on high alert.

"There has to be a reason why all of the aliens retreated into this tower. For now, let's just make sure none of the vampires enter the tower," Hikel replied.

Bianca was also curious about the tower and had walked up to the outer edge. She reached out with her hand, and when it was close to touching the walls, small sparks of energy came off from it.

It certainly was an interesting thing, and it didn't look like one could enter it by just pushing the two front doors open.

"I'll go ahead and tell the other vampires to stay in the area then. The last thing we want is them getting swept up in whatever is coming," Grenlet said. He was ready to jump from his position when suddenly he felt extremely weak.

So weak that he had fallen on one knee for a moment. The energy was draining from him, his legs, the power in his arms, and of all things, there was a pain in his head that Grenlet didn't even recognize—a dull ache like that of a headache.

"What is this? What has overcome me? Is it a type of poison, or is someone using some type of skill on me?" Grenlet thought. "Who is it? Is it one of the leaders?"

Thinking this, Grenlet turned his head but soon noticed that it wasn't only him that was being affected. It was all of the leaders. Although they weren't on their knees, there was a look of discomfort on their faces.

Sweat could be seen on them, with beads running down their faces. Eventually, Grenlet was getting used to the feeling and was able to stand up again but noticed that he was sweating quite a bit as well and was starting to feel quite hot.

"All of these feelings, it's unusual. And what could be affecting the other leaders as well?"

"Is everyone feeling the same thing right now?" Edvard asked, and he could see everyone replying with a nod.

"Look... look at the others," Bianca said, pointing.

If one thought the leaders were struggling with whatever this was, they could now see that the rest of the vampires had collapsed and were on the floor. Hikel jumped from his position.

He was still relatively strong, but he could tell he had lost half of his power. When looking at the vampires on the floor, Hikel could see that they were experiencing similar symptoms, and that's when he noticed something else—a slight burn on the face.

"This can't be?" Hikel thought and immediately looked at the vampire's hand, noticing he was wearing a ring.

"What is it?" Edvard said, landing by his side. "It seems you have figured something out."

Hikel then tilted the vampire's face so Edvard could see the same thing.

"Wait, these symptoms... is this the effect of the sun? But how can that be? They are wearing their rings, aren't they? And it has been a long time since we were affected by the sun."

"It's been so long that we forgot what it even feels like, but I'm sure of it," Hikel replied. "For whatever reason, everyone is experiencing symptoms as if they were being hit by the sun. We have no choice; we need to evacuate every vampire from this planet as soon as possible."

It might have been a rash decision, but there were only a few vampires who could stand, and whatever this feeling was, it was consistent and building up. If they stayed in it for too long, eventually some vampires would possibly die.

The evacuation of the vampires was underway. The vampire leaders also had the ability to communicate with those on board the Marpo Cruise, and ships were being sent down to their location.

At first, Hikel was a little worried that they would be attacked on the way, but there were no such attacks.

Meanwhile, as all of this was going on, Geo and Dober were making sure the rest of the Amra were being treated, while they tried to calm down those who were unable to see their loved ones.

They were now with the rest of the Amra after all, but they didn't complain for long. They just held in their tears because they knew it was a tough situation for them all, especially those who had managed to survive and head back.

The Amra were staying in a village that had been established in the tower on one of the floors. After everyone was settled, in a vast field where most of the wounded Amra were being treated, Dober decided to bring out a strange square-looking device. He placed it on the ground in the middle of the field, away from the others, and a projection appeared in the air.

"What's that?" Geo asked.

"It's our planet," Dober replied. "It's a device connected to the tower that allows us to see what is going on outside. I kept this a secret from Quinn, as I didn't want him to feel distracted when making his equipment."

Controlling the strange device, Dober went through the entire city, or what was left of it, and eventually could see Quinn and Ray standing opposite each other, both in their full suits of armour.

Quinn looked at Ray intently. Ray stood there, looking part Dalki and part human, more human than the last time Quinn had seen him, covered in his red dragon scale-like armour.

"I knew we would meet each other again," Ray said with a smile. "And it looks like you got an upgrade since the last time I saw you."

"I could say the same to you," Quinn replied. "You didn't listen to me last time, so I guess you're committed to fighting?"

Ray's smile said it all. There was no changing his mind, not unless they could completely alter his memories.

"At the very least, don't you think we should give everyone a chance to leave this planet? I would like the vampires who have no part in this to have the ability to leave."

"That would make sense, since you are a vampire after all," Ray replied. "I guess you still have some positive feelings towards them. But how do we clear the area? You want me to just shout really loud?"

"Don't worry about that, I have a way," Quinn said.

[Skill activated]

[Sunfire burn]

The phoenix markings on Quinn's armour lit up, and a light red power emanated from his armour. It could only be seen for a moment, but there was a slight dark orange mist that quickly dissipated. However, in the area they were standing, there was an intense heat that could be felt, and it quickly spread throughout the entire planet.

[Passive damage is being dealt within a certain area]

[The power of the Phoenix spreads out.]

"That's quite a fancy armour you have there, but this only tickles my skin," Ray commented.

The two of them waited for a bit and could see the ships coming back and forth from the planet. With this, Quinn felt satisfied.

"This is good. Now I can fight without any distractions."

Chapter 2284: The Fiery Showdown

The Sunfire Burn skill had been activated. It was powerful and the range was a lot further than Quinn expected. To the point where any vampire that was in the city and perhaps even further on was able to feel the effects of the armour.

The scary fact was, that there was no resistance to it. Just like when Quinn had fought against the phoenix, even though he had long grown resistant to the sun, the phoenix still affected him, and in this case it still affected the vampires as well.

If any person was to wear this piece of armour and was to use this skill and walk into the vampire settlement, they would have a devastating advantage.

This was the first skill that Quinn had used in the fight with Ray. Of course, Quinn himself while wearing the armour was unaffected and it didn't come as much of a surprise that Ray seemed completely fine even though he was the one closest to him.

Sure, Ray wasn't a vampire, but there was still a burning effect and passive damage that would be done to non-vampires as well, it just affected vampires a bit more.

Quinn stared straight ahead at Ray, his eyes glowing red, shifting his feet slightly. The mask could be seen over his mouth. At the side of the Oni mask, where the two dials by his cheeks were, red mist was being sucked into the mask.

Even now the mask's power was being used, storing blood power from all around. Then finally the last ship could be seen leaving the planet.

"You said that there are no distractions for you right, so I assume you won't be holding back, so neither will I!" Ray lifted up his foot and a strong energy gathered around it.

It looked almost like flames, but the colour was a darker red, not quite the same as blood aura, not quite the same as fire.

Stomping the ground, this energy dispersed outward in all directions. The wave of energy blasted out and hit Quinn. The energy had blinded him for a second but passed through him, he didn't feel any pain or discomfort, whether it was due to his own power or the armour protecting him he wasn't sure.

When Quinn could see again, the entire scene in front of him looked vastly different. The rubble of the broken down buildings, the rocks that still stood strong while the fighting had gone on, all of it was gone.

It had disappeared and all that could be seen now was the planet's surface. Somehow Ray had turned all of it into nothing.

The strange thing was, only the structures had disappeared, apart from the tower that could be seen in the distance. All the bodies from the battle still lay there on the ground, the blood still present and even Jim's, Peter's and Chris' bodies who were still outside on the planet.

"I just thought we should have a nicer area to fight in that's all!" Ray said, as he grinned and out from the back, piercing through a slit in his armour, two large red wings popped out. Not wasting any time, Ray kicked off with his feet, and flapped his wings.

When he did, with a boost in speed, he came out right at Quinn. His wings then gathered close to his body, as he spun. The same energy that had gathered around Ray's foot now gathered around his whole body.

Quinn thought had been waiting for this, he was waiting for Ray to move, and he had moved at the same time. Running off from the ground the armour set was activating with its full power, giving him the same speed as he would have if he used nitro accelerate.

The whole armour was glowing a light blue as the Limitless skill was activating. Pure power was running through Quinn but he wasn't going to let all the armour do the work.

Following from behind his fist, Blood aura lingered in a huge wave that filled the entire area behind him. The image of a dragon was being made, and to top it off, Quinn poured in his Qi into a pinpoint area.

The fist slammed right into Ray's aura and the two powers clashed. A large wave spread out immediately from the blow, throwing the dead bodies, and those still alive that were close to it, off into the distance.

The ground beneath their feet lifted up and started to disintegrate due to the force.

Quinn looked at his hand, he had done the Dragon pulse blood strike, it was the most powerful version of the attack he had ever done, yet Ray's hand could be seen gripping his completely.

"Of all things you chose to do, you create the image of a dragon out of your blood strike. Let me show you the strength of a real dragon!" Ray gripped tightly onto Quinn's hand making sure he was unable to let go.

Opening up his mouth, the aura could be seen building up, his mouth spread wide, and a condensed fireball blast came out, hitting Quinn right in the chest and at close range.

'What the... there's not a scratch on the armour?' Ray was more than surprised.

Taking this chance, Quinn twisted his foot and threw out his other hand right at Ray.

'I know, using the blood aura, in weapon form, or as blood swipes and so on is useless against someone like this. That armour on his body, will just protect him from it all. So the only way I can do damage is to put all of my power into my fists and, with the gauntlets added strength and try to do some real damage!'

In the middle of throwing out his hand, Ray had moved his head, firing out another fireball, it clashed with the hand and stopped Quinn's fist dead in its tracks.

'That fireball was strong enough to do that?'

Soon, condensed fireball after condensed fireball crashed into Quinn's chest piece hitting him one after the other. The attack's weren't enough to harm the armour but the sheer power still vibrated through Quinn, damaging him on the inside.

In a desperate attempt, Quinn went out to throw another blood powered fist, it missed and the attack continued outward, going far across the land. Ray then grabbed his arm, lifting him above and slammed him right into the floor below.

Ray opened up his mouth again and the fireballs continued to hit Quinn, forcing him deeper and deeper into the ground. Then grabbing Quinn, he threw him up in the air slightly, before giving a powerful strike with his fist.

Quinn was pounded and sent further up and higher into the air, and blood fell from his mouth, leaking through the Oni mask.

"I guess that new fancy armour is just for show." Ray said , as he opened his mouth wide again.

The dark orange energy was building inside him, the veins around his face were glowing with the energy and it spread throughout his wings as well. Leaning back slightly, Ray let out an eruption of dark orange power.

Quinn was recovering but was still up in the air.

'This attack, this is what my shadow was unable to block last time. I thought with the armour, I might be faster than him, or stronger than him, but... is he still stronger? If that's the case, I just need to utilise everything I have.'

The orange flame continued to spew out of Ray's mouth and it covered the entire sky. It went out for a few seconds before Ray eventually closed his mouth shut. When the flames stopped, he could see nothing in the sky.

'No... that's far too easy for him to go out like that.'

A shadow appeared in the sky and Quinn was seen appearing from it. He had avoided the attack. With his boots active skill, he started to push off the air and ran right toward Ray.

In the middle of his run, a cloud of smoke puffed right in front of Quinn, but when continuing to run forward, Ray could see him right ahead.

'What was that?'

Ray focused on Quinn coming toward him, he soon heard footsteps to his side, and they had immediately grabbed him holding him in place.

'I used the clouds to create the clones and then using my shadow power, transported them to Ray's side, and now with them holding him still.'

Quinn crashed like a flying sword hitting Ray right in the chest and pushing him across the ground tearing it up left, right, and centre.

Lifting his hands, Quinn's blood aura started to spark around his gauntlets.

[Energy converter has been used]

[Special trait activated lighting]

[Lightning blood can now be used]

The two dials on the side of Quinn's mask had moved and the red mist turned into sparks of red lighting.

"Maybe this will do more than just tickle you!"

[Blood shock]

Chapter 2285: A building rage

The blood aura that had been surrounding Quinn's gauntlets and had been following behind with every punch, had suddenly changed. It now started to spark all around his fists. While on top of Ray, opening up his hands, he slammed them right against Ray, one towards his chest and the other on top of his head.

Quinn was gripping tightly but no matter how hard he gripped he was unable to break through the skull of Ray. There was power surging through him that was protecting him but that didn't matter, because Quinn was aiming for something else anyway.

[Blood shock]

Out from his fists all of Quinn's blood aura had gathered and streaks of red lightning appeared from his hands, it encased all of Ray's body. The lightning strike looked like a storm above the two as lightning fired off in all directions and high up in the air.

The blood lightning had hit both of Quinn's clones in the process making them puff into a cloud of smoke.

"ARGGHH!" Quinn screamed at the top of his lungs putting more of his aura into the attack aiming to take out his enemy right here. This attack had worked against Peter, so he was hoping it would do the same here.

Blood shock was a move that was able to be created thanks to the God Slayer mask that he was wearing. The blood aura from the battle around him as well as his own could be stored in the mask.

This allowed him to have a somewhat unlimited blood bank as well as a way to use extra blood aura energy when needed, but there was another skill of the mask.

[Energy converter]

Using this, Quinn had converted the energy to that of lightning. At first Quinn thought it would just give him some sort of lightning attribute to his attacks, but it was far better than that.

The lightning was mixing in with his blood to create a new special type of attack. This not only had the power of a lightning strike like the Graylash ability, but was also able to strike internally.

The lightning went through the body, reacting with the user's blood inside. Little sharp shocks of power were going through the entirety of Ray's body, and one would normally be in excruciating pain.

"Haven't you learned not to come so close to me?" Ray said, gritting his teeth and moving his arms, grabbing both of Quinn's wrists, the one on his head and the one on his chest.

Ray's leg was covered in the same energy in his initial attack that he had used to clear the area. From his knee all the way down to his toes. Lifting his leg up, he pulled on Quinn's arm and with the bottom of his foot slammed it right into Quinn's stomach.

A loud pop was heard as Quinn's arms had been dislocated from his shoulders, the energy had also gone right through Quinn's body exploding on the other side.

Gritting his teeth, shadow started to wrap around Quinn's arms, and eventually created a layer over his gauntlets, it was pushing away trying to break the strong grip that Ray had but it seemed useless as Ray got up from the floor, and swung his broken arms slamming him onto the ground on one side.

Then lifting up Quinn's body again, he slammed his entire body on the other side. Quinn was trying to break free, but his arms were damaged, making it harder for him to pull away.

The crazy thing was, due to Quinn's armour and his own blood supply that was coming to him, his body was healing his shoulders, replacing all the muscle fibres and popping his shoulder back in place.

However, each time Ray swung his body and slammed him into the ground, he would break the muscle fibres and pop his shoulders out once again.

'I need to break free from this!'

[Energy converter used]

[Fire selected]

Gathering all of his power in the palm of his hands, this time blood aura that was viscous and growing in size came out all at once like an explosion. It hit Ray right in the face, burning some of the scales on his skin and forced him to let go.

While Quinn was flying through the air, he had safely landed on the ground, only to see that Ray's face was healing up.

"Are you tired yet?" Ray asked. "You seem to be using nearly all of your energy in each attack."

Quinn wasn't tired at all. With this armour, even if he put all his strength into every hit and every kick, he didn't tire.

"Do you really have the time to talk?" Quinn asked, as he puffed into a cloud of smoke.

Once more, two clones had come out of shadows right next to Ray, but he was ready as he kicked one in the stomach making it disappear, and grabbed the other by the head. Opening his mouth a fireball came out destroying it on the spot.

When the smoke settled though, Quinn was there once again, he swung his hand diagonally like a sword, the blood aura was sharp this time and different from what it was before.

[Energy converter]

[Water selected]

With water mixed in with his blood aura he was able to make it incredibly sharp and struck right across the chest. Following up, Quinn attacked again striking from the other side and the momentum seemed to be in Quinn's upper hand.

"Let me show you the strike of a dragon!" Ray shouted back.

The claws on his hand extended, and through his sharp claws the dark orange energy was condensed in his nails. He swung out hitting the blood water causing it to break. Then with his other hand he went to strike at Quinn.

Quinn blocked the attacks with his forearm, lifting his legs up one after the other, but with such force behind them, he could feel that each of the strikes were heavy.

'I have to try to find an opening, I can't keep blocking these strikes, otherwise, he'll be able to hit me eventually.'

He gathered shadow around his arm, and created a wall thinking it was his chance, but Ray struck through the wall, and his sharp nails went right through the shadow breaking it on the spot.

Quinn went to block another attack, but he had made a mistake and the attack hadn't come. Instead Ray had jumped back, and then pushed off the ground, he flapped his wings giving him more power, and slammed right into Quinn's stomach.

Straight after, Ray slashed with his claws, hitting the chest piece again and again. Once in a while Ray would aim for the head, but Quinn lifted his arms up just in time to block but that's all he could do against the flurry of punches.

'Quinn... what are you doing!' A voice was heard in his head.

'Am I imagining things at a time like this. I'm not badly hurt, I'm not heavily injured, but I can tell, I'm losing this fight. This isn't even Ray's original voice, just how can one person be so strong.'

'If Ray had gone against those god slayers like I had... he would have been able to beat them all as well, I can tell. I thought... I thought after beating them, and getting the armour it would have been enough.'

'What are you chatting so much sh*t about Quinn!' the voice shouted in Quinn's head again.

'I didn't give up my life, I didn't put everything including my own soul into those weapons for nothing! F*cking wake up, and show this stupid dragon your power!!!'

This voice, it wasn't just any voice, it was one that Quinn thought he had lost, the one that had created the armour in the first place, Alex's.

Quinn wasn't sure if he was imagining the voice or not, but whatever the case was, he was right.

'All of those that died, everyone to get to this point. They did everything in their power to put a stop to you, so I'll do the same!!'

Both of Quinn's gauntlets started to glow gold with power. Each hit of Ray's was blocked, and rather than swaying his body from side to side, Quinn was getting better footing.

"ARGHH!"

[Asura's Rage activated]

Chapter 2286: The Wondering Eyes

[ASURA'S RAGE]

With both his gauntlets glowing, Quinn threw out a desperate punch, right now he also had the mask converted to the fire blood energy, allowing for the blood fire aura to spew out behind his fists.

Seeing this, Ray threw out a fist of his own and the two of them collided. Immediately after, Quinn threw out another fist and Ray matched that as well. The two of them were looking for areas to hit each other but instead, both of them were hitting out a flurry of punches that were just hitting knuckle on knuckle, gauntlet on gauntlet, and for the first time, it looked like the traded blows were equal in strength.

Each blow that was blocked or exchanged by Quinn and Ray was devastating to the planet. The two of them didn't realise it themselves, but they had already destroyed a few layers of the ground beneath them.

Not just where they stood but almost for the entire planet. This was because Quinn had his special boots that allowed him to hover and fight just as if he was on the floor, while Ray had his wings.

When the two eventually touched the ground, they were too focused on the fight, just believing they were touching the ground.

But, their powers were destroying the planet bit by bit, even without any of the attacks landing on the planet.

Nearly all of the vampires had already gone off the planet, having been taken away, but there were some that were too injured to move. They had been swept up in the battle, most likely already dead from the effects of the fight

That was how devastating the energy was that was radiating off the two. However, there were a few that had decided to stay behind. The last of the ships from the Marpo Cruise had left a while ago, attempting to avoid the fight, and not be caught up in whatever was happening, but three originals had decided to stay behind.

Hikel, the fourth original leader, along with Edvard and Bianca. These were all part of the Punisher's Convent. Only Grenlet had decided to leave, stating that there was no reason for them to stay there.

Their presence wasn't going to change anything. Hikel knew he was right, but there was a reason why he was staying here.

"I... never thought two people could even get so strong." Bianca said, watching from a distance.

In fact, all three of them had decided to stay behind the tower that was still standing. The energy that was swirling about was hitting the tower, but the strange defence mechanism seemed to protect it.

The distance between the tower and the fight was incredibly far. With their eyes alone one wouldn't be able to even see the three of them, that was if they were a regular human. However, the original vampires had enhanced vision and were watching the fight from afar, too afraid to get close and get swept up in everything.

Although it was now easier for them to move. The strange power from before had disappeared after the last ship had left. This was because Quinn had cancelled the skill. It had no effect on Ray, and even in the middle of the fight, Quinn was worried about others.

What if there were those badly injured on the ground unable to move, it was quite possible that they could die due to his skill being used.

"I understand what you mean." Edvard replied to Bianca's comment from before. "When I wore that dragon armour in the past, I thought that I had reached the pinnacle of power. I wouldn't be afraid of anyone back in the past with the armour.

"But now... I see that I hardly drew out any of its power. Even with the armour I wouldn't last against the two of them."

Bianca looked at Hikel who had yet to say a word, and his eyes were fixed on every movement of the fight as if he was a madman.

"Why... did you choose to stay here?" Bianca asked.

Hikel smiled in response to that question.

"I could ask the two of you the same question." Hikel stated. "Throughout our time, there has been a lot that has happened. Yet even for as long as we have lived, no fight, nothing quite on the scale of this has happened before.

"The fact that Quinn mentioned the Punisher's Convent means that we are a part of this, whether it is small or big, who knows. What I do want to know though, is how all of this ends, and whether the decision I made was the right one. I want to see with my own eyes... the outcome of everything that is to take place."

There were more eyes on the fight than Quinn thought, because even in the tower itself, the Amra were able to get a closer look at everything that was happening. On the floor, the projector played, showing the fight that was taking place.

"Come on Quinn!" One of the Amra shouted as the punches were thrown at each other. Large destructive blows.

"We put all our sweat into making that armour, you have to win!" Another shouted.

Originally, the projector was set a bit away from the village. Because it was placed among the injured Amra that were receiving treatment. Eventually though, due to all the cheering and noise that was going on, those that were in the village until now had decided to come out.

They were the Amra, the children, and those that felt too weak to take part in the fight. Some had gathered to help the injured while news had spread of the big fight taking place. All of them knew of Quinn and while watching the fight it felt like once again he was fighting for their fate.

"Quinn, you have to win this fight!" Ronkin shouted. His memories still fresh with everything Quinn had done.

"I don't even know of the consequences of what would happen if he were to lose." Jeouk stated.

On top of those in the tower that were watching, there were also those in the celestial spaces as well. The fight wasn't quite what they had expected as it was closer than they thought.

Still, all of them who were watching one way or another had played a big part.

The focus on the battle was so much on Quinn, that there was something else going on the planet that no one had realised.

Due to the shockwaves and power released from the battle between the two strong foes, a particular body that was originally near the fight scene had been moved away.

It continued to be pushed back more and more with every attack, the body in question was Jim.

Jim's body laid there flat on the ground, parts of its skin and flesh burnt, but that's when something strange started to occur. All the crystals that were embedded into Jim's body, they started to light up.

They shined so bright, all at once that the glow could even be seen through the clothes. Suddenly the glow of power started to beat, just like a heart. The whole body was pulsing like a heartbeat, as it was lifted off the ground.

The skin on Jim's body, the wounds internal and external they were all healing by the strange power, until it had suddenly vanished. Jim opened up his eyes, and one of the crystals had popped out of his arm.

It fell to the floor, black in colour. It was no longer like the other crystals on Jim's body that were filled with a mystic space-like colour swirling around.

"Damn it, did I f*cking die!" Jim said to himself.

The next moment, another large wave of energy had hit Jim, skidding him across the floor it was so powerful. He lifted his arm, to cover his head, and eventually was able to see what was going on between his arms.

"It was him, it was Quinn. Damn that guy, that b*stard... I'll rip him to shreds!" Jim said.

Chapter 2287: The Unknown Hero

On another Amra planet, a particular group had no clue what was taking place at this moment and time. All they knew was that the war was still going on. Fighting was still erupting in different places and they needed to stop it.

It wasn't about one side winning the war, It was about stopping it completely so neither side would suffer more losses, because in the first place, although the humans and vampires weren't aware of it, they were fighting for no reason.

Shiro, Jake, and Vicky as well had split off all over the planet, to help the surviving aliens fight against the Dalki. Jake and Shiro had hardly been hurt in their fights, and Vicky had recovered rather quickly due to her meditation.

She wouldn't be as strong as she was before but it still would be enough for her to at least help out the others, it was the least she could do now that the tough ones were out of the way, but she did give a warning to the others before splitting with Logan.

"If he's dead, and any of you come back alive, you will be seeing him very soon."

Those words were ingrained in the back of everyone's mind as they went off. Logan, Layla, Russ, Minny and Sil. They were planning to head back to the Marpo Cruise.

At the moment, they were running around, in search of something salvageable to fly back to the Marpo Cruise. All of the ships had been destroyed, but with Logan's soul weapon he could quickly make a new one, as long as he found some materials to do it with.

"It... feels so empty." Minny blurted out, as she continued to follow the others.

Since no one was saying anything, and focusing on the task ahead, everyone had heard Minny and they knew exactly what she meant. For one, the streets, they were emptier than before.

That was because they were mostly filled with the dead, or the buildings had been crushed with no sign of life at all. Although the fighting did continue, it was only in secluded places rather than all over.

Lastly, there was another reason Minny had made the comment, it was because she was talking about the group they were in. They had once set off to travel to the Marpo Cruise, and it wasn't too long ago, but back then, there were far more of them than there were now.

"I know sweetheart." Layla said. "We need to stop it all, so none of it ever happens again."

Eventually, Logan had found a destroyed ship. It had a few lacking parts so the group quickly gathered some more materials until Logan felt like it was enough. Placing his hand on the random parts of metal and such, it all started to move and started to form what looked like a ship.

When the ship was finally done, Logan was sweating quite badly, his face was scrunched up and he had stayed in a knelt down position.

"Are you okay?" Layla said.

"Yeah." Logan replied, lifting his head up. "I just haven't recovered as much as I thought I had."

"Good, because if you were to be hurt, I'm a little frightened at what Vicky would do to us."

After getting onboard the ship, they were off heading for the Marpo Cruise. It had taken the group a lot longer than they thought to make a ship, and they couldn't help but think that as more time passed, more would die.

While on the ship, Russ was away from everyone staring out the window.

'Why am I even on here... I kinda just ended up getting swept with the flow, going along with everything.'

'I don't even have that strange feeling in my head anymore, which means I no longer need to protect that damned Talen family. It's because of them that I had to go through all of this in the first place.'

Russ was thinking back to the somewhat peaceful life he had been living, but soon remembered when the celestial had turned up and ruined it all.

Soon his mind started to wander to other things, one of them being Sil. Seeing Sil's power, to clone himself as Quinn and yet at the same time still use his own powers of himself.

That was Sil that had already been fighting for a while as well. It made him wonder what a fresh Sil with max MC cell's would be able to do.

'Would I even ever be able to defeat him?' Russ thought.

Although this was already a worrying thought for Russ, for some reason, when looking at Sil the same strong feelings he had before were gone. This anger inside him that he thought would never disappear, it had vanished and he didn't know why.

"I still don't know what happened." Sil said out loud, it looked like he was busy in his mind with his own thoughts as well.

"Why did H's final ability not set off?" Sil said. "I saw it, I saw it in my vision, it definitely was that ability, yet it didn't work."

If Sil didn't have the answer, the rest of them certainly didn't.

The ship continued to head towards the Marpo Cruise, and Logan was prepared to push himself again. Using his powers to create some defences as the ship attacked them. He knew that his androids inside were no longer working.

However, as they got closer to the ship, nothing happened whatsoever. It was as if they weren't even a concern. Regardless, Sil still placed his hand on the floor of the ship and cloaked it in an invisibility ability.

When they got close, just like before, he teleported them all inside.

"Alright, before anything, what we need to do is disable the sleeping agent that Jack placed in the device. Otherwise, as soon as Sil goes back in that machine, he'll fall asleep again."

"The device works via Jack's fingerprint. On top of that, I think it would be best if we got rid of Jack while we are here. There should be no one else that can stop us from doing so."

The others agreed, finally they would get to take down one of the two that were responsible for all of this.

"I was able to map this place before I left, and I have an idea of where he will be."

Logan could see that there was a private viewing room, and he had even seen Jack go in it a few times when fighting had started on other planets before. The one thing they did need to be ready for though, was if Jack had any tricks up his sleeve.

The group was moving around the ship carefully, there were still multiple people running around all over the place, but with Sil it was easier for them to move to empty rooms at those times, but at other times they would have to wait until other patrolling groups moved.

"Is this Jack strong?" Minny asked, wondering if she would have to use her ring again.

"Not really." Logan replied. "He has always been one to use others to do his dirty work, but his ability along with others is what makes him strong. So let's be ready for anything."

Finally, Sil had teleported them to the hallway, and straight ahead they could see a large hole through the door that they were meant to enter.

"What happened here, was there some type of fight?" Layla asked.

The group carefully headed toward the door, and took a peek in. The first one to enter was Minny who was fast, had the shadow, and was perhaps the one with the most strength out of all of them for now.

They were expecting Minny to say something, but she was silent.

"Minny, is everything okay in there!" Layla shouted.

"It's... it's... Uncle Stark!" Minny shouted back.

Chapter 2288.2: The Unknown Hero (Part 2)

Layla thought she must have misheard Minny, because the name that came out 'Stark', was one that she didn't expect. He shouldn't have even been on the ship, and if he was, of all places why would he then be in this room? Things weren't making any sense.

"Mommy, hurry! Uncle Stark, he's not answering me!" Minny shouted, this time her voice was a bit shaky.

After hearing that, they all entered the room and they could see blood inside, but rather than letting their eyes follow the blood, they looked at Minny instead. All of them paused for a second.

The room was quite large, yet closed off. There were several monitors showing what was going on down below and in the ship. The people on board looked like they were in a state of panic in the ship itself.

Just below the monitors was a large seat, a swivel chair that was faced toward them, and in there was a man. A purple man, with a single arm on his body that fallen to his side. The body was slumped in the chair and his eyes were closed.

"Uncle Stark... Uncle Stark!" Minny called out, holding his one hand and shaking it. She continued to call out his name, expecting him to reply, but no words came out.

"No, not you too Uncle Stark... Auntie Ceril and Auntie Wince, they already died!" Minny shouted. "You can't die, why... why... why is everyone dying!" Minny screamed.

Part of her blood aura was let out in the room, passing through everyone. The sight of watching the little girl upset was truly a sad one for them all.

In truth, Minny had already known Stark had passed. She could tell when she entered the room and saw him, it was why she was silent. Because, Minny was unable to hear a heartbeat present.

She just didn't want to believe that another one was taken away.

Most of them didn't know Stark well. He was a quirky alien that introduced himself through Quinn. Always claiming that he was the fastest in the universe. They truly got to see that when they had managed to save Sil.

"What, was he even doing here?" Russ asked. "Didn't he leave with Sil, why would he even come back here?"

Sil hadn't even thought much of it. The alien had dropped him off at the planet where H was, and then quickly left the place. Sil had assumed he had gone back, not come here.

Minny continued to sob and let out her aura once more. It was stronger than the last time and in doing so, they heard the aura move something in the room.

Layla was the one who went to check it out, and behind the desk with the monitors, that's when she could see it. The body that was on the floor with a hole through its head.

"I don't believe it." Layla had her hand over her mouth. "Everyone, it's Jack Truedream, it's Jack Truedream!" she said the name twice, as if she didn't believe it herself.

The others quickly rushed over, and seeing the body and the face, they had confirmed it themselves. This was one of the big four, the man who in the past and present had caused them so much trouble.

And there he was on the floor, lifeless. It was hard to think, someone who gave them so much trouble, could look so weak on the floor. Taking a closer look, Layla noticed the hole mark through the head.

She had fought side by side with the other Penswi, and noticed the wounds they would inflict. It wasn't just in the head, but it was all over Jack's body. Turning, she looked at Stark, and then looked at Jack as well.

"Stark killed Jack." Russ said, before Layla said anything.

Looking at Russ, Layla noticed that there was a bit of dark fog above his head. It was a first after seeing someone die.

"I think you're right." Layla answered. "The markings on Jack's body, the state this room is in, the state that Stark is in as well. He must have come onboard and dealt with Jack himself. He knew he was one of the leaders behind the attack."

They could only imagine what Stark had been through. How he had taken it upon himself to deal with the threat. He certainly had lived up to the name as a hero of the Penswi.

"He didn't have to do that, the idiot." Russ said. "We would have dealt with Jack eventually, but he came here and just quickened his death."

While the others were talking, Logan had gone up to the terminal and on one of the screens he was playing it back, playing back what happened, and eventually he found footage of Stark and Jack's battle.

Everyone gathered around and started to watch the screen. The audio played of everything that was going on, and not a single one of them said a word. The fight, they could see Stark go beyond his means, going beyond what he was capable of.

But when watching the footage, they soon learned why Stark was doing such a thing. Through the conversation they had, they could hear what Stark was trying to do, and in the end, they saw that Stark was finally able to achieve it.

"I found footage of the fight between Sil and H as well. The time, it marks up right with when Sil had finished off H."

Sil was left in silence, he looked at the video, and continued to watch as Stark lifted Jack and moved him here. The footage continued, with the last moments of Stark in the room, saying his final words.

It was hard for them all to watch, even Russ had his head held down, but they all heard him.

After the video ended, Sil walked up to Stark's body and fell to his knees.

"I am sorry... I wasn't able to help you." Sil said. "You looked over me while I was in a bad state. I didn't know you for long, yet you risked your life to save me, you then risked your life to protect me.

"Then after that, you finally had your life taken away. It wasn't taken away in vain though, it saved me, it saved everybody here! Without you... without you so many would have died.

"In return, I promise you, that no matter what threat comes to your planet, to your people, I will protect them with my life. They will be protected for as long as I can breathe.

"And I promise, when this is all over, I will make sure that everyone knows about what you did. Of how you were a true hero of this war. Even if I have to force it into their memories, I will make them remember you!" Sil shouted.

After his words were done, Sil bowed down a few more times. His goodbyes were said. Layla instructed Minny to put Stark in her shadow so they could give him a proper burial later.

Because for now, they had one last task left to do.

Chapter 2289: First blood

Both Quinn and Ray continued to clash fist with fist. They weren't using anything else to fight as both of them seemed to be putting their all into just throwing out a punch with all their strength, all of their power, with the aim to take out the other.

The whole planet started to vibrate with each hit, and the two of them had long stopped fighting on the ground. Ray was trying to strengthen his punches by using his wings as a boost.

From time to time, he would fly backwards and then dive in, but Quinn would equally run in the air picking up speed, and throw out his fist. He didn't bother to try and use tricks with the cloud clones or anything else, because he was aiming for something else.

The gold glow on the gauntlets continued, and the energy surrounding the gauntlets themselves was growing ever so slightly.

'I have to keep at it, I can't slow down or let up. A punch... a punch will get through!' Quinn thought, throwing out his fists again and again.

Some might think the two were just desperately fighting, with no plan at all, but that wasn't the case for Quinn.

[Asura's rage]

[With each hit successfully landed on the same opponent, the energy will continue to grow. If a different target is hit, or the same target is not hit within 10 seconds, then the gauntlets energy will reset]

Right now, Quinn was betting on the active skill of the gauntlet. Its effect was the same as one of the vampire leaders, but with the boost in strength and speed the gauntlets gave one already, it was amazing that an item could have such an effect.

But because of the active skill, Quinn wasn't using anything else, and just continued to punch, increasing the strength of his weapons bit by bit. The good thing was Ray didn't seem to notice as he had allowed the two to fight like this.

"This is exactly what I like, a good old fashioned brawl!!! Let's see which one of us tires out, or slips up first!" Ray shouted.

The two of them continued like this for a while. Time continued to pass with the punches not letting up. A few minutes had turned into several and it was when Quinn started to notice that something had to be up, something wasn't right.

'How? How is this happening. I can feel the energy in the God Slayer gauntlets rising. It's even rising now as our fists hit, so how... How is he able to match the

power? Is his power increasing as well, with every hit? Is he matching me punch for punch still even now?"

It was hard for Quinn to believe, but it had to be the only option. Regardless, he continued, if Ray was able to match his power, then he would have to tire out eventually, right?

As a few minutes passed again, he quickly realised he was wrong about this as well.

"Did you think you could tire me out? If you thought that, then I have to tell you, you are very, very, wrong." Ray stated.

Ray had fought even in the state he was in for several days without tiring out. This was even with him putting a 100 percent into every hit, and it was all because of the other celestial power that was inside him.

When Ray had helped out fighting against the Chained, Ray had come across an old celestial, one that allowed someone unlimited amounts of energy. Which was why he could go on all day every day.

What Ray didn't know was that it was the same for Quinn. Due to the Limitless set effect on his armour Quinn wasn't tiring either, not one bit. The only thing the two were doing was chipping away at the planet beneath them with the strength of their strikes.

"If this is all you have to show, then I have to say you have already begun to bore me."

Turning his head to the side, Ray opened up his mouth and fired out several fireballs. Quinn had counted ten of them.

In this moment Quinn continued with his hits, thinking that if he was distracted with doing something else, it was his chance to get a hit in, but Ray continued to open his mouth, firing out fireballs in all of the areas in the air and all around them, not having a single one of them aiming for Quinn.

That was until he opened his mouth aiming for one right at Quinn. Spinning his body Quinn managed to avoid the fireball but there was another one that went straight at him hitting him on his back and exploding.

At the same time, Ray came out from the side, throwing a punch hitting Quinn right on the side of his face. His body moved away and crashed right into another fireball.

At that moment, all of the fire balls were right next to Quinn and started to hit his body one after another again and again.

Ray had been setting up the fireballs leaving the energy floating in the air all around. They were like small bombs that he could set off whenever he needed them, and now all of them were exploding at once right on Quinn.

Bracing himself, Quinn placed his arms up and took the hits, he could feel it damaging his skin and bones and his body was trying to heal from the wounds.

'I can't go in my shadow right now, it will waste too much time, I have to get another hit in, before it's too late!'

Eventually, covering everything in a shadow around him, Quinn burst through, spinning his body and letting his shadow do the work to block most of the fireball explosions. Opening up a shadow portal in front of him Quinn went right through it and appeared by Ray's side.

It was the same trick he had done with the clones, but this time it was him. The fist was thrown by Quinn, but Ray had flown up in the air avoiding the hit.

"Do you think the same trick would keep working on me?" Ray asked.

[Asura's rage has been reset]

Quinn hadn't managed to hit Ray in time, and the golden glow around his gauntlets had subsided. From his position, Ray dived in.

He had no idea about the gauntlets and just threw out his fists like normal. Seeing this, due to what he had been doing this whole time, Quinn had decided to do the same. When the fists collided, there was a clear winner in terms of power.

Quinn's fist was chucked back, along with his body. Ray had even stopped punching for a second due to how surprised he was.

'That... that confirms it, he must have been getting stronger with every hit as well, but it's not an effect, he was just getting better, and now his hits are a lot stronger than mine.' Quinn thought.

'I have to do something, and fast, otherwise, I'll lose this fight.'

"You were right." Quinn said. "I was trying to wear you out. I thought that I had the advantage in that area at least but it's clear now that I don't. So I just have to use all that I have."

The shadow had risen from Quinn's body and soon spread out producing a mist in the air, covering the whole area the two of them were fighting in.

[Soul weapon activated.]

After that, the dark shadow covered his gauntlets but Ray had noticed there was something different in the shadow's colour, it was slightly red this time.

Ignoring what was happening, Ray went forward again and threw out his fist and Quinn had done the same. It was the same pattern as before as fist collided against fist.

Ray's power overpowered Quinn causing his arms to jerk back slightly, and when the other hand hit, it had done the same, but when Ray went to throw out another punch he felt a delayed strike hitting his hands pushing them back slightly.

"This won't even tickle!"

Both of Quinn's palms struck out, hitting Ray right in the stomach, behind his hands were the flowing image of fire red blood dragons made of blood aura going right through Ray's body.

[Twin dragon blood palm strike]

For the first time in the fight, blood spit out of Ray's mouth, and the strike wasn't over yet, because thanks to the blood shadow, Ray now had to deal with it for a second time.

Chapter 2290.2: First Blood (Part 2)

A liquid substance could be felt coming out from Ray's mouth. He had to admit that the blow was an impressive one to cause him to spit out his saliva, but when wiping his mouth, the black blood on his hands made him aware that it wasn't saliva, but it was indeed blood.

'This one, he manged to hurt me, through my armour, and through my body?'

The fight might have seemed even, or going back and forth, but when one observed the fight closely, Ray had hurt Quinn several times. It was only due to his vampire healing abilities and the blood stored in his mask that he would regenerate back to the way he was.

For Ray, he felt like this was the first true wound of the fight.

'Let's give him something back!' Ray opened his mouth and the orange energy bubbled in his mouth.

In the middle of preparing his attack, a large pain could be felt right in his stomach once again. A pulse of red aura, the same as the last time had appeared, coming from his stomach. Ray was forced to close his mouth shut, as the force of an attack sent him backwards.

Opening his mouth, part of his dark orange aura has escaped everywhere, while bits of blood was mixed in as well. This attack had done more damage than the first one, as Ray was unprepared for it.

'How... where did that attack come from? He didn't touch me, it didn't look like he moved either.' Ray thought, gritting his teeth.

He flapped his wings, recovering fast, and opened his mouth, firing out fireballs once again. He didn't want to get hit so fast, not until he discovered what had occurred.

Quinn quickly moved out of the way of the two fireballs, and gave chase towards Ray. Flapping his wings, he continued to move, firing fireballs, and it almost looked like Ray was on the back foot running away.

'The attack... it must have hurt him!' Quinn realised. 'His reaction has completely changed now. The flow of the fight, is in my court.'

The red shadow, a combination of the shadow and blood aura, something Quinn had spent time creating, had a delayed effect, where the original attack would repeat itself. It was how Quinn was able to push back the fists even though he was weaker in power than Ray.

And, it was how he was able to get a second attack on Ray. This was the skill that allowed him to overcome Asura in battle, and it might be the winning factor for the fight with Ray.

'I have to do as much damage to him before he figures out what's happening.'

Ray was constantly running away, and he could see Quinn was doing the same trick as last time. While firing some of the energy blasts towards him, he was allowing for some of them to linger in the air.

Which was why Quinn decided to somewhat return the favour, moving around with his hands, he was opening up shadow portals almost everywhere. Then activating the effect on his boots he had made a total of four clones of himself; the maximum was making four Quinn's.

Finally, Quinn also used the shadow to make a further fifth clone, and now there were five clones. Each of them split off, in search of Ray, trying to come at him from different directions.

'This is nothing compared to what Sil can do, but it's still something that I can do, to win this fight!' Quinn thought.

Ray had no idea which of the Quinn's was the real one, so with all the flames in the area, he decided the best thing to do was attack them all, the problem was Quinn had made the first more.

Each of the clones including the original, gathered their aura, they gathered the blood shadow as well, and started to produce the most powerful blood swipes they could create. The attacks went through the shadow portals that were placed everywhere and the attacks were now coming from all different directions at Ray.

When the blood swipes hit Ray, they dispersed in the air, turning into nothing but particles. One after the other continued to hit Ray.

The attacks did next to nothing, his armour was too strong, the power was too weak. Quinn knew this, he could have gathered more of his aura to create a large blood sword, or a blood spear that might have done something, but that wasn't his intention.

Soon, as the blood swipes continued to hit Ray, he was feeling the effect of the blood shadow, now it felt like he was being hit with twice as many blood swipes.

None of the attacks were getting through, but even if one wore a complete bulletproof vest, the raining down of swipes would distract them and that's exactly what Quinn was aiming for.

In the middle of all of the attacks, popping out from one of the shadows right from behind, Quinn gathered both of his hands, the fire effect from the mask continued to power his blood, and it was thrown forward right into Ray's back.

The two giant blood fire dragon's covered in the blood shadow were seen in the air as it smashed against Ray's back and went right through again.

HIs wings crumpled in pain as he crashed into the floor. Ray had been hurt, but he was quick to get up; he wouldn't be down for long, but the second attack had taken its effect, it hit him once again breaking the ground and causing him to grit his teeth until he had eventually stopped.

Ray had lifted his hands while his head was down, and spread them out, all of the fireballs in the air continued to move and crashed into the shadow. When they did, all of the shadow portals that were around the place had disappeared.

"I should've aimed for the shadow from the beginning rather than the stupid clones." Ray said looking up, still seeing the five Quinn's in the air.

Ray also noticed that even if Quinn had gotten the jump on him, that he should have been able to stop the last attack, but his movements were slightly slower. The mist that was all over in the air, at a close inspection it was the shadow.

"I know the shadow power very well. My own power can even get rid of it!" Ray said. HIs raw energy had been shown multiple times to break through the shadow.

That was why Quinn was unable to use it to block, and just now, it was how Ray was able to destroy the shadow portals.

"But these uses of the shadow, and that Dark Red shadow, is something I have never seen before. How is it possible, how long have you had the shadow for?" Ray asked.

Quinn saw a moment here, a moment that he could perhaps convince Ray.

"You are starting to realise that something doesn't feel right?" Quinn said. "I have technically had the shadow power for over a 1000 years. You were the one that told me the shadow power came from someone you knew!"

"How would I know this unless you told me! You said you placed all your powers into the tablet to protect the humans from the threats in the future. I know you're a good person Ray, you're just fighting for the wrong side!"

"The wrong side?" Ray said. "The humans are the ones behind me, while you have teamed up with aliens. It's quite simple how you could know what happened in the past, but you do have a point about having the shadow for so long and me not knowing about it... it doesn't fit.

"But there's one thing I do know, if the shadow has come back, and it's stronger than ever, then I have to get rid of it once again."

Ray tapped the chest piece of his armour. In between the lines of the carefully crafted scales, it all started to light up red with power. In doing so, Ray's appearance also started to change.

Rather than the black scales that were on his face, and the Dalki features he had, they started to turn a dark red, including the spikes that were on his back, and his wings as well.

"You are impressive enough to force me to use the power of the Dragon armour."

Chapter 2291: The Dragon armor

From far away behind the tower, the Original leaders were continuing to keep up with what was going on. They were unable to keep their eyes off the fight, only missing things occasionally as they hid behind the tower when a wave or pulse of energy came out toward them.

They were witnessing the transformation take place, the lighting up of the special armour, and the changes in Ray's appearance. This led to all of the leaders turning to Edvard, taking a long look at him.

Since he was the previous owner of the armour he would have to have an answer for this. His mouth was left a bit open as he saw the same thing as everyone else though.

"I know you guys are looking at me, waiting for a type of answer, but I don't think you're going to believe what I'm about to say." Edvard said, and took a gulp soon after. "It appears that all along, for the duration of this fight, Ray hasn't been using the power of the armour at all.

"He has simply just been wearing it, and it wasn't until now, that he has activated the power of the armour."

The mistake had been made due to the energy that was coming off from Ray during the fight. Edvard having used the armour in the past knew what the energy felt like and he could feel the same energy resonating off of Ray.

The thing was, the armour was originally a part of Ray's body in the first place, which was why they had the same energy, and now it was being used.

"How could he be so confident to even do such a thing?" Bianca said. "He's been fighting with a handicap this whole time, is this just a game to him?"

If Quinn was easily able to overpower Ray, then this holding back would have been a bad move. These two were fighting at such a level, that one could finish the fight in one move, and then the other would have no chance to bring out their full power.

Quinn had been fighting with his full power from the get go, he was just utilising all his different skills of the armour, shadow, and blood to try find the best way to combat Ray, who seemed to be dealing with everything using just his strength and now he was even stronger.

Using the power of the armour, a surge of power rushed out from him. It was a ripple that went out through the entire land. It didn't look to disrupt or destroy anything but just passed through everything as far as the eye could see.

There was a resonating sound like a silent roar of the dragon in the wind when the pulsing energy passed and while it was passing through the land, it had managed to

pass through two people in particular who had been knocked back far from their original position.

Their bodies lay there on the floor, face down, and slowly the two of them started to get up, as they had feeling in their bodies again.

"Peter are you okay?" Chris asked, standing on his two feet first. Peter was still struggling to get up, the tingling sensation was felt through his body.

"That damned vampire demon, I'll kill... kill." Peter was stumbling at the last word, and looked at the two in the distance.

"I don't think that's something we should get involved in, not unless we want to die." Chirs commented, somewhat surprised that they weren't dead right now.

The transformation of Ray had finished, but his armour was still glowing brightly. He no longer looked the same as before, his eyes were narrower, his facial structure changed, and his hair was now red on top of his head.

He still had scales on his body, spikes on his back and a set of wings, but they no longer looked like that of a Dalki. If one was to guess, he now looked more like a humanoid dragon hybrid.

'The energy, internally, I can feel that it has increased for him.' Quinn thought. 'And the energy, it's spilling out of him as well.'

It was hard to see with the naked eye, but all around Ray now there were parts of his energy, his aura. It was dark yellow and small in size, but the reason why Quinn was able to see it so clearly was due to this energy completely getting rid of his shadow mist.

Any part of the shadow that was inside him, would have completely disappeared now, and any part of the shadow that was around him, would no longer get near him, or touch him.

'The shadow... will it even work now, will the blood shadow even work on him now, or will that just disappear as it touches the armour?' Quinn thought.

He wanted to know the answer, he wanted to try it out, but doing so would be a big risk, getting that close to Ray. For now, Quinn had stopped his soul weapon.

The shadow mist that was spread out thin in the area completely disappeared. There was no point using it anymore if there was no effect, there would be better ways to utilise his shadow.

Then, Quinn once again went with the same tactic. His clones all spread out into different directions and started to throw out blood swipes. Shadow portals were being opened everywhere allowing for all the strikes to hit Ray.

As the strikes got closer to Ray though, the power was so overwhelming from him and his armour, that the blood swipes would begin to disappear. The shadow around it had completely disappeared and finally only a regular blood strike had hit Ray's armour doing next to nothing.

Ray bent his knees slightly, his wings were brought in closer to give him a more aerodynamic form, and he looked carefully and locked eyes on one of the Quinn's.

"Locked on!"

The ground beneath Ray's feet exploded and a fist was right next to one of the Quinn's, it went right through one of the Quinn's head exploding it into a cloud of smoke. It wasn't just one puff of smoke though.

Ray went from one, right on to the next Quinn, and crashed his whole body through theirs, creating another cloud of smoke.

'He's gotten faster... a lot faster and although I don't know about his strength yet, I'm sure he's gotten a lot stronger as well, but I don't want to find out.'

It was beginning to look like Quinn had no choice, he couldn't think, he couldn't act, as Ray destroyed clone after clone until there were no more.

After defeating the last clone, Ray flapped his wings hovering in the air, and turned to Quinn.

"What are the chances that the real one is the last one?" Ray smiled. "You have done well, and your powers are strong, its just a shame that you went up against me. I always would think of ways to combat the shadow, if it ever came back again."

"I might be the only person in the universe that can completely get rid of your shadow in a way like this. For putting up a good fight, I will end you properly."

Ray lifted one hand into the air. From the tip of his fingers, the strong dark orange aura started to gather like flames around his gauntlet hand. He then pointed it towards Quinn, bending it back.

The dark orange aura continued to gather around the gauntlet hand, to the point where the hand could no longer be seen and another image was forming. Of all things, it was forming the image of a sword.

"The Dragon sword fist. It might be over kill, but that is how much I respect you."

Ray burst through the air, just like he had done with all the other clones. Quinn didn't even want to test if his armour would be able to withstand the attack, even if it could, he feared he would still die anyway, so there was only one thing left to do.

[Shadow space.]

Panic started to set in Quinn, because the skill Shadow space wasn't working.

Chapter 2292: An awakened soul

For a long time, the Shadow Space had been Quinn's safety net. It was a power that was unique even for the shadow itself. He was able to store living things in there, go into the space himself and those that were in the space, reacted differently to the current time that passed outside.

One of Quinn's big uses for it, that he had used in battle more than once, was to avoid large scale attacks. At the last moment he could enter the shadow space, he would disappear from the enemy's sight and they would know no better as to where he was.

In most cases, they wouldn't have a way to access the space either. When an enemy used a large scale attack just like Ray had used now, it would make it redundant and the opponent would just waste their energy.

There were a few problems with it though, for one it took some time to enter into the shadow space. So in a lot of cases, if the opponent was fast enough, it was best to just avoid the attack, rather than risk getting hit before entering the space.

Also, if Quinn wanted to deal damage, it was incredibly difficult to time it so he could enter and leave the space in that way. Regardless, Quinn saw the best opportunity to use it now, and for some reason, it wasn't working at all.

'This... none of my shadow abilities have been working well, ever since Ray started to use that armour, even my blood shadow seems to have been affected.' Quinn felt like he should have realised sooner, that there was a possibility that his shadow space didn't work. What this also meant, was his other escape like skills such as shadow link wouldn't work in this situation either.

The fist was coming toward him, everything seemed to be playing out in slow motion for Quinn. He could feel the power of the attack, the second Ray started to gather the energy. Now it was coming towards him, Quinn's mind was going through all the options, all of the possibilities and he was starting to think that this could be the end.

'This is it, this is how I end up dying, right here, to an all and mighty powerful relative!' Quinn shouted at himself clenching his fists. 'No, there is still a lot I can do...' For a second, Quinn tapped the side of his mask. During the entirety of the fight, particles of blood energy were drawn in from the area.

For the entire battle, it continued to build up inside the mask. He had used the additional energy, and the converter here and there, but had stopped once he found out that it wasn't doing much against Ray. Still, in his blood attacks he did use the fire attribute to give it more of a devastating effect.

Ray's fist was chucked right toward Quinn's chest and the pure energy of the sword was nearly as large as Quinn's entire body. The power exploded covering the entire

area, and continued to strike out far and wide. The powerful attack went through Quinn's body and continued on, to the point where from space, a large sword of a dark orange colour had flashed for just a second before disappearing.

Ray had his arm stretched out, his wing's still flapping, but he was paused in that position, his stretched position. 'Something... doesn't feel right.' Ray thought looking up. He could see, his hand was pressed against the armour. It was right in the centre of where the phoenix pattern resided, yet there wasn't a scratch on the armour.

Instead, the armour was lit up in a light blue in colour. It was pulsating strongly.

"How... even if your armour is fine, how can you be completely intact from that attack!" Ray said, baring his teeth towards Quinn.

[Indestructible shell has been used]

[The skill can no longer be used until the cool down has reset.]

[Current time 30 days]

In the armour, there was one skill, a safety net that allowed Quinn to receive no damage, to essentially block out one attack, but he couldn't just use it whenever he wished. He needed to be extremely careful about when to use it, because of the cool down.

In turn though, Quinn, knowing the attack was going to be blocked, had readied all of his energy into his hands as much as possible. He threw them both forward and the dragon aura behind his strikes appeared as they went right towards Ray's head. Before they could reach, Ray raised both of his wings. The attack collided with the wings and now they were both pushing against each other. Unlike before, where Ray had fallen to the ground after the attack, the wings were doing just fine.

"If that attack didn't work, then I'm just going to have to beat you the old fashioned way!" Ray said, as he flew slightly above and punched Quinn on the top of his head. Quinn hurled toward the ground, crashing and bouncing off it. While Quinn was midair, Ray fell down and with his leg, he slammed it down, hitting Quinn with his heel, pushing Quinn further into the ground and creating a crater that was as large as the city they were in.

'Crap... crap!' Quinn thought, as blood spilled out of his mouth. He no longer had the shadow, and Ray was far stronger than before. Without the effect of the blood shadow, it seemed impossible for him to win in a one on one fight. The only saving grace was that since he had stopped Ray's ultimate attack, Ray thought he might have a way to stop the attack again. But, he was getting a beat down instead, really better.

Ray reached Quinn, who had yet to recover and picked him up by his foot, he then threw him across the land, until he had reached a large rocky mountain. Quinn's

body crashed right through the mountain, creating a large hole. Through that hole, Ray wasn't too far behind trying to strike again.

With his hands, Quinn created two large blood swords, and held them towards Ray. Not slowing down Ray spun, and with his fists, he punched, breaking the blood sword, and then punched the other in succession, destroying the swords completely. Picking up speed, Ray then grabbed Quinn right by the neck, and was holding on tight.

"You have this strong armour, you have the power of the shadow, but what do you have yourself. What of your own powers do you have that you can use?" Ray asked. Quinn was already putting everything he had into every attack, using all of his Qi, and blood power, so what else could he do.

'The... demon form?' Quinn thought.

The demon form, Quinn still had no idea what it really did, it wasn't something he could control either, so there was no guarantee that he could be saved by it, but if he was going to die anyway.

'No Quinn!' The voice said in his head again. 'You don't need to do that..... You still have one more thing you can try. It's ready!'

The voice, now Quinn was sure of it, it was Alex and unlike before Alex was directly talking to him. Why, why was Quinn unable to hear Alex before? The answer was something that Quinn was unaware of and unaware of what was happening.

The power from the mask, part of it was going into the gauntlets, all of the blood energy that was being used, was also going to the gauntlets, because it was yet to be fully awakened. Alex had a brief moment, where he was able to talk to Quinn, but he had yet to reach his full self. Now, that the blood from the mask had gathered enough power and shared enough with it to awaken Alex, it meant one more thing.

[A new skill has been unlocked]

[Asura's Blood Form]

Chapter 2293: Getting rid of everything

Stark's body had been stored in Minny's shadow space. They wished to give him a proper burial and at least take back his body to his home planet where it belonged. On top of that, there was also the armour that Quinn had loaned Stark, it was still on his body.

Everyone was getting ready to leave the monitoring room, but before that there were a couple of things Logan needed to do. Kneeling by Jack's body, several pieces of equipment attached to Logan were scanning him all over.

What was surprising, was how Logan had picked up Jack's hand. His finger transformed into a sharp tool-like knife and sliced Jack's finger right off.

"What are you doing?" Layla asked.

"I'm making a scan of Jack, so we can bypass all of his systems. He had a lock on that system that I was unable to override. One would need a face scan or his finger. I can analyse his face enough to input it as a type of password into the system, but I could never get Jack to stay still long enough."

"Now, he has no choice really."

Layla wanted to ask, if he could do all that with just scanning the device, then why did he need to chop off his finger like so, but she thought it was best just to avoid this subject for now. Otherwise, she would have to hear some of Logan's crude jokes.

"Done!" Standing up, Logan went to the large bundle of monitors, and placed both of his hands on the console underneath.

"What are you doing now uncle Logan." Minny asked, her finger on her lips.

"As I said before, I'm disabling part of the large machine that Sil needs to use." Logan explained. "But there's a lot more than that, that needs to be done."

"The Marpo Cruise is a business that was set up by Jack and Jim. They started it on another planet, and they have more ships than just these two."

"We need to make sure that no one can take over their goal. We need to find every single facility they have that helps them create the Dalki. We need to look into any facilities they have at all, and any secrets that Jim was hiding as well."

The other's hadn't thought about that, what would happen beyond the war. There were always times, where one would try and seek revenge, or try to finish accomplishing what another was unable to do. They were happy that they had Logan on their side.

"There's only so much information I can get on my side, and I'm sure, knowing what type of person Jim is, he would have restricted access to multiple things that Jack didn't have access to. Which is why I'm sending everything I know to someone on the other side, on the other Marpo Cruise ship."

Layla raised an eyebrow wondering who it could be. The person on the other side was quite trusted by Jim. He was sure he had him so under control and on his side that he took him nearly everywhere with him, and that person was Vincent.

In his lab, Vincent was receiving all of the information he needed from Logan, but there was also something else he needed to do.

'Jack... has been killed as well as H!' Vincent was surprised upon hearing the news. He had seen H's power, and Jack, he was always someone in hiding, never letting anyone get too close. He felt like someone like him would have a trick or two up his sleeve to survive death, but if the news was coming from Logan, it most certainly was true.

'Jim is no longer on board the ship and neither is Ray. The Marpo Cruise has been forced to move away due to the rapid pulses of energies coming off from the planet. This is the chance. I need to find Malik... and do my part in all of this as well. As Logan said, we need to make sure something like this never happens again.'

After getting everything they needed, the rest of the group were on the move. Logan had attached part of the ship's monitoring system to his own device. He could project the image of the cameras out from his forearm.

Using this, he was able to help the group move through the area without running into the people on board. Fighting now would only slow them down.

Sil would have teleported them all there, but he was focusing on recovering his powers. Using the device was quite tiring, and if he was to change the memories of everyone on the Amra planets, and the Marpo Cruises, it would be quite the big task.

Eventually, the group stopped down one long hallway. Layla, MInny and Russ were starting to notice where they were.

"We are basically here." Logan said. "But I have to warn you, I can see that they have put a lot of personnel by the entrance. Most likely Jack figured out our plan, and it was an order of his."

"What do you mean by a lot of people?" Layla asked.

"There are around fifty of them, and all of them are human... you have to remember that they are not the ones at fault for this. They believe they are doing

the right thing, it would be best if we could find some way to get rid of them without hurting them."

Russ and Sil felt like they could have done the task if they were at full strength, but with Sil trying to restore his power and Russ still extremely drained, there was only a couple of them that could fight.

"I'll deal with it." Layla said. "I've recovered most of my power. I can do it."

Layla didn't wait for the others, she walked out down the hallway and pulled the bow out from her back. There were no arrows in the bow but that was because she had long surpassed needing them. As she walked forward, she started to pull the string and let go.

Suddenly, three men felt extreme pain as something went right through the knee's in their legs and they fell to the floor. What Layla was using was Qi arrows.

"We're under attack!" They shouted, and soon all of them turned to the woman coming towards them.

Layla pulled at the string several times, and as the arrows went out, they hit several of the attackers in the knee one by one.

Not a single attack had missed, and they didn't quite know what was hitting them.

Ignoring what was happening, they started to fire out abilities from their hands, but Layla's fast speed allowed her to jump to the side, and pull the bow string more, hitting more and more of them. They were falling one by one.

"You know, I always thought she couldn't do anything with that sword, and even with the sword she seemed pretty useless." Russ commented. "But with the bow, she doesn't seem too bad."

Eventually, people started to reach Layla, and when they were close, she used the bow itself to whack one of the men in the face, and then pulling out the sword she slashed another. Bending her knees slightly she got ready, as she went from one person to the next slashing them one after the other.

A few seconds later, Layla stood there with the sword in her hand, and all of them had been injured, not to the point where they were killed, but injured just enough to where they were out of action.

"Mommy, you were so cool!" Minny said, running over. "I thought, maybe mommy would need my help, but it was like you had eyes in the back of your head! Mommy and daddy are really strong, so that means Minny and Galen will grow up to be the strongest!"

Layla smiled as she rubbed her daughter's head, but truthfully she wished it would never have to come down to that.

Sil and the rest followed, running towards Layla, and they had finally returned back to the room where they had first retrieved Sil from.

Chapter 2294: Fury of the punch

Ray was flying at a great speed toward Quinn, he just had his energy gathered in his fist and it was glowing a dark orange. There was nothing fancy about the attack, there was no large display of features, only Ray himself and his raw strength and power.

In some ways, that was frightening in itself, impressive that he was able to do such things, with next to no ability. People thought the Dalki were frightening due to this fact, so then what was this? This was a complete nightmare.

'I just have to break myself out of this nightmare!'

[A new skill has been unlocked]

[Asura's Blood Form]

Thanks to Alex awakening, it looked like a new active skill had appeared in the armour. The problem was, what exactly was this skill, without knowing basic information it would be hard to use it in a fight, and would it even be helpful in this situation?

A cloud of smoke appeared, and running through the cloud were three Quinn's. All three of them gathered the blood aura heading straight for Ray, and threw their hands out. The winged dragon spun its body, going right through all three like a spear.

When the clones were destroyed, more smoke had appeared, but Ray went right through it without any fear. He continued with his fists, throwing it out. The fist was stopped in its tracks and a large gust of wind followed from behind Ray.

Looking at his stopped fist, he could see that it had been grabbed, but not just by one hand, not by two hands, but four hands held onto Ray's and they didn't exactly look normal. There was the normal hand holding onto Ray that Quinn would use, covered in the special gauntlet that lit up in a golden colour.

Then, Ray looked at the other hands, all of them, they looked nearly identical to Quinn's hands, but they were a solid Dark Red colour. They felt just as real and as solid as Quinn's other hands. It wasn't something that had just been made out of blood aura, this was something clearly different.

In total, Quinn stood there with his two real arms, and his four blood arms, this was Asura's blood form. Just like the Asura that Quinn had fought, Quinn himself was able to do the same, and the strength was not lacking in these arms compared to his real arms.

"You are stronger than me, when it comes punch to punch, but its not exactly like I'm weak either, with a little bit of help, from the power of the armour, I can stop you!"

Quinn lifted both his hands covered in the blood aura, and threw them out punching Ray. His body and his arms went flying back as a rush of blood aura went toward him. Ray was quick to shake off the hit, one that went to the body and the other to his face, but that's when he could see several other orbs of energy flying through the air.

All of them were around the size of fist. Seeing them, Ray went ahead and punched it with his own fist, it exploded on the spot, but not without some difficulty. He could feel the strength that was behind each of these attacks, and soon went to stop the next hit as well.

This energy ball was slightly different in colour when it hit Ray's fist this time, but it felt different as well. These strange energy balls were coming one after the other and he was doing his best to hit them all away. There were more than he expected and it caused Ray to be at a standstill.

He was unable to move, as all he could do was to hit these energy blasts away, he attempted to move to the right and to the left, but if he did he would get hit, and he could tell from the strength of the attacks that these would do at least some damage.

As for where all these energy blasts were coming from, it was all from Quinn's new Asura's Blood form. With all six of his arms, Quinn was able to create blood energy from his fists that would be just as powerful as a strike at full force.

He could even add his own power of Qi behind these attacks. With six arms he was sending out multiple fist waves of energy and that wasn't the only feature that the fists of energy had.

Just like the celestial gun, Quinn was able to produce different types of fists of energy. Making each arm specialise in one. It was like having the gun, but with more power in the attacks and he could fire off different bullets at the same time.

Quinn wasn't really thinking, but he was just throwing out different types of fists, not caring about what was working and what wasn't... he was just giving it everything he had.

'I can't stop moving my hands, I'll just keep attacking!'

Ray out of frustration decided to try something else, he allowed the fists of energy to hit him, they were clashing against his armour, and raising his hands he started to gather the power for the dragon sword attack. The aura surrounded his hands, and he threw it out straight to where Quinn was.

Quinn jumped avoiding the large scale attack, it took out most of his fists of energy, but while moving, Quinn didn't stop moving his hands at a fast speed, firing out the energy blasts towards Ray, he did this again and again, moving, not stopping his legs or his arms when going from place to place.

Then, it gave Quinn another idea, the shadow power wasn't completely unusable, just when he was right next to Ray it would take effect. Just using one of his free hands, Quinn started to create the shadow portals all over the battlefield, but did so a little further away from Ray so it wouldn't be affected by his armour.

Ray continued to take the hits head on, allowing them to hit him, marks were appearing on his face now, but he created another dragon sword with his fist and threw it toward Quinn. Before it reached him, he had hopped into one of the shadow's avoiding the attack.

Jumping straight out of the portal, he was swinging all six of his arms continually, hitting Ray again and again.

'I will wear him down, I will continue to wear him down until he can no longer move!' Quinn thought.

Ray looked at where Quinn was with his head, and soon he could see that the attacks were coming from all sorts of different directions. Just like with the blood swipes from before, all of the fists were coming out of each of the portals one after the other.

Unlike the blood swipes though, these had the force of Quinn's punch, and the special trait of each of the fists hitting Ray from all angles. This wasn't something that he could just withstand.

Ray's body was chocking with each hit, from each side one after the other, he tried to hit some away, and he did a good job of blocking most of the attacks, but one would get through every once in a while.

'This is so annoying!' Ray thought. 'If only... if only I was like the old me, and had my powers from before. I would have been able to deal with this guy! Am I really going to lose like this!'

The fist marks were unable to create a serious injury on Ray but the damage was building up. With the limitless armour effect as well, Quinn would continue, continue this until he took care of Ray.

'If this is the only thing that will work, then I will do this to the end!'

On the sideline, there was one person that had been getting closer and closer to the fight, and he couldn't believe what he was seeing.

'That damned person is losing! How... how is that possible!' Jim thought. 'I can't let this happen, I need to come up with something, I need to get rid of Quinn!'

Chapter 2295.1: Quest for Malik (Part 1)

After receiving instructions from Logan, Vincent knew he needed to do his part. Just like Logan, he too had his memories changed, but he had second guesses as to what the truth was.

There were a lot of things that just didn't make sense in his head. As a person that naturally had a lot of curiosity, he wondered why things became this way and Logan had answers for him.

Answers, that in his mind that made a lot of sense. In the first place, there was a lot that Jim didn't know about Vincent. The fact that he had worked with Eno, or the legacy that he had left behind in the vampire book.

Those memories were not tampered with, because Jim didn't really know about them. Which was why things didn't make sense.

Walking around the facility, Vincent was looking for something as he twisted and turned his head. He could see some regular vampires running around but not one of them questioned Vincent.

On his face he wore the black mask, the mask that was only given to those that were close to and by Jim's side.

Eventually, Vincent's eyes widened, he began to walk towards another, following them a few steps behind. Turning his head, he took a peek behind him, and looked ahead before rushing forward with all his strength.

The person he had been following heard the loud footsteps and turned his head, only to see a hand grab him by his throat and chuck him to the side.

The man was stumbling backwards from the throw, heading toward a door, but with his speed Vincent managed to reach the door button, pressing it. The door slid open and the man fell through.

Entering after the fallen man, Vincent closed the door behind them, and stared at the other masked man and the floor. Before he could get up, with his foot Vincent stomped on the individual's arms, crushing all of the bones in the wrists.

After that, Vincent went quickly and tore the mask right off of the person's face while placing his hand on top of his mouth.

"If you don't want to die, then it's best you listen to me, Jim." Vincent said.

Nearly all of those apart from Vincent himself that wore the strange masks around the facility were other Jim's. The clones that worked for himself to do important tasks that he only trusted himself with.

'There's another problem with using clones to do all your work. Even if they set up a system that requires the face of Jim, or Jim's fingerprints, then there are plenty to choose from, to use to get what I need.'

"Now, I know the Jim that is running things, has decided to keep things away from the other clones. It's quite amazing how you can all choose to work for one person that is the same as you.

"How you can all be selfless when you are the same person, but you are at the end of the day the same person, with the same mind. So I have two questions to ask you. One, where would you decide to keep the one named Malik."

It was a semi tough art of negotiation that followed. With Vincent delivering a bit of pain here and there. He had a feeling though, someone like him would speak quite easily, but whether that was the truth or not, it was hard to tell.

Vincent took the clone with him, and the first area of action wasn't to where the clone of Jim had claimed Malik would be, but was to a large database like room.

Using the clone's hand, access was easy into the facility, and now it was to get the information that Logan needed.

The clone of Jim had broken limbs and arms, he was unable to walk, and was placed on the floor while Vincent went to work.

"It looks like you found your memories." Jim said. "You know, I'm doing all of this for us."

"I've only decided to reply to you, because you could very well be the last Jim that is left alive. I plan to shut down, and get rid of all the other clones of Jim."

"And I guarantee you, with the way things are going now, all of those including the Jim with the nest crystals in his body will disappear. It's quite possible that you will be the last Jim, one that will be able to see the end of it all."

The clones of Jim were unable to pass information to one another, but they were fully aware of what was happening. Everyone on the Marpo Cruise was, things weren't going well for them so far.

They had even received information from one of theirs in Jack's Cruise ship, and from the report, they were struggling as well. Jim didn't even know the full story that H had been defeated.

They knew there was something big going on though, because the last bit of information they had received was that Jack had been kidnapped and now the Jim clone being in the situation he was in, he felt like the tides were turning.

"For your information, I have not had my memories back." Vincent commented. "I just never believed in the current situation."

"Everything we planned, everything we did to make things better, it's all going to go to waste because of all of your meddling." Jim shouted back. "Can't you see how things are, can't you see that the vampire settlement of the past was broken. How much better things are now."

"How are things so much better?" Vincent replied. "The vampire settlement wasn't at peace due to everything that this person did." Vincent pointed to himself.

"Then you changed everyone's memories, you took their credit which means none of this was because of you. You're right, I do believe the settlement was broken in many ways.

"The vampires were never able to work together, and even though we tried to come up with a system that would stop ourselves from killing each other, still trouble brewed again and again.

"But none of that was fixed because of you, it was fixed because of him. Did you ever solve anything, solve any problem for the vampires, did you ever make anyone's lives easier.

"Even now when the vampires were at peace, you decided to drag them into a war. Many lost their lives, you haven't made anything better, and just been making them worse."

Vincent continued to type away while Jim thought about the two's past. There was at one point, where the two of them were close, Vincent had tried to help his Uncle, protected him and even gave him a task as his right hand person.

"At least I'm trying to fix things!" Jim exclaimed. "What did you do, you decided to run away, to chase after a human woman. You left the entire settlement, the entire Tenth family suffered because you chose to be selfish and live your own life.

"What I'm doing know, you may think of it as selfish, but its just the same as you, and at least I'm doing it for everyone. All of it will change."

Vincent stopped typing, he got all of the information he needed, and turned to Jim.

"People make mistakes, everyone has always made mistakes. It's part of human nature, you have to remember, even the creation of the vampire was the mistake of a single human.

"It's what we do after those mistakes, how you move on from them. For the better and not for the worse. I'm sorry to see you have decided to go this way."

With that, Vincent picked up Jim, and headed straight for Malik.

Chapter 2296.2: Quest for Malik (Part 2)

Surprisingly, the information that Vincent had received from the clone, was the same as the information he had accessed from the database

The reason why Vincent had decided to make a stop here before going to see Malik, was because he thought that the clone might lie to him.

In some cases, because they knew there would be another clone that would replace them, with their same memories, they would just end their own life or not even care about it.

However, seeing Vincent, perhaps it had caused the clone to have some of its natural instincts come back.

All of the information that they could gather had been gathered from the system. Location of bases where the Marpo Cruise's were being made, and even to the point where they ranked the number of Dalki's that had been made.

All of the information was being passed back to Logan, just in case anything would happen to Vincent.

What he had said before, it was true as well, most likely they would keep one clone alive, until they were sure they got every bit of information they needed.

To get rid of everything that Jim had created, whether the clone of Jim would be compliant or not they wouldn't know, but maybe with someone like Quinn using his influence skill they could force out all the information they needed.

While travelling around the Marpo Cruise, the clone of Jim didn't say a word. Even when there were chances for him to scream at the top of his lungs at those going past.

'Is he mulling over what he has done, after everything we said?'

Vincent was ready to act, to silence the clone but there was never any need. They had finally reached living quarters of all the vampires, and on a separate floor in the Marpo Cruise, that was where Malik was located.

One had to enter a lift, and to get to the floor where Malik was on, you needed special access, one that could only be accessed by Jim, and thankfully he had what he needed right here.

Jim's finger was used on the lift and it didn't take long for them to reach the floor where Malik was located. When the lift door opened they were met with another door, down a hallway.

Heading straight ahead, this one instead of a finger, required facial recognition to access.

"You really did a lot to keep this guy hidden huh?" Vincent commented. "How afraid were you that everyone would find out the truth. Are you still afraid even now, how everyone will feel anger after they learn that you forced them into a war for no reason."

"What... what are you planning to do with Malik?" Jim asked.

The answer was obvious, although Vicnent didn't want to do it, he needed to get rid of Malik, so that way no one would ever use him in this way again.

Whether Malik was forced into this or not, it was his power that had caused all of this mess, and could easily be used again. Vincent just wondered, what if someone got their hands on the real Quinn instead.

They had managed to get their hands on Ray, but if they had changed the memories of Ray and Quinn, then perhaps there would be no one that could have stopped them.

Lifting up Jim's head, the door was heard unlocking. It slowly moved open using a heavy mechanism. The door was tightly sealed to the point where not even air could escape, and the right amount of oxygen was supplied to the room in a different way.

Entering the room, Vincent pressed a button closing the door behind him, while placing Jim on the side of the floor.

'I have no idea what is inside here, or what to expect, I might have to fight for my life.' Vincent thought.

The room they were in looked like a large apartment building. There were marble floors, high ceilings, a chandelier dangling from the top, a large open kitchen that could be seen to the left, and a living room to the right.

There was even a second floor and more to the apartment bulding. It was clear that Malik was living a life of luxury here.

Using his sharp ears, Vincent could hear the sound of footsteps coming from the corner. Blood aura gathered around both of his hands.

"Vincent... and one of the Jim's." Malik was just in regular clothing standing there having taken a corner from his bedroom.

He wore no beast gear, and looked surprised to see the two, Seeing how defenseless Malik was, it was hard for Vincent to act, but he had to grit his teeth and bare it.

'I did a lot worse things in the past, there are a lot of sins that I have to bear. Adding one more to that list is not a problem.'

At least that's what Vincent thought, as he swung his arm, he released a blood swipe. Rather than going for his head or chest it went towards Malik's legs.

A deep cut was made, the blood aura had sliced through his knees causing him to fall to the ground. He fell on his back, and couldn't even feel his legs, as blood poured out of him.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry!" Malik cried out. "I don't know what I did wrong but I'm sorry, please don't get rid of me."

Vincent was unable to get close to Malik for fear that he would have his own memories changed, he needed to attack from afar. If he had hit his blood swipe on the neck, Malik would have died there and then.

From his observations, Malik was never anyone special.

He had never learned to fight properly or have any type of strong Qi. Even now Jim hadn't given him any beast gear to use, but Vincent had read his file and knew what had happened to him.

From a young age, he was abandoned by his family, he lived through the Dalki war being moved from place to place. Being treated as useless and abandoned by everyone he met.

He had eventually used his powers to create a better life for himself, creating a fake mother, a father, sister and brother. Changing their memories so he could live with them.

However, the real family members of those that he had changed, had caught on. They reported Malik, and his powers became known as well as his crimes and he was locked up.

He was meant to go on trial, but once again it felt like he was the one that had been forgotten about, as that day seemed to never come. Little did Malik know that the location he was at was being attacked by the Dalki.

Eventually it was the Dalki who found him, and Graham who had taken him in, most likely for his power. The problem was, it wasn't easy for them to force Malik to do his bidding.

They didn't have an influence skill or abilities like Malik, and getting close would be dangerous.

For Malik, meeting Jim and Jack was a blessing to him. It was the first time he felt needed, felt like someone needed him, and because of that, he was happy to do whatever they asked of him.

Right now, seeing the Jim clone, and Vincent here and attacking him, he thought he must have done something wrong. All this time he had done everything they had asked, and never once had they been angry with him thinking of leaving him.

They provided him with a place to live, they gave him a nest crystal to prolong his life. Because they had a need for him, to use him forever and that was all that Malik ever wanted.

"You cruel b*stard!" Jim shouted.

"You should have killed him in one hit, why make him suffer."

Vincent, didn't want to, in pulling back at the last second he had made another mistake.

With a hand full of blood aura, Vincent stood to the side.

"You did nothing wrong Malik, you were pushed into this."

Vincent swung his arm and the blood swipe went right through his neck, killing him instantly. His body soon started to turn to dust, and left behind in Malik's place... was a crystal.

Chapter 2297.1: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion (Part 1)

Quinn wasn't letting up with his new form. He continued to travel through his shadow while swinging his arms, firing away all different types of energy punches.

The energy punches had the same strength as if Quinn was to directly hit with his own fist, but it was affecting Ray in more ways than one.

Ray was able to deflect and break most of the energy fists with his own power as he punched them directly head on.

When hitting the Qi filled type punch though, it would scatter into multiple particles of energy rather than get rid of it and the hit would continue on hitting his armour and parts of his face.

One of the energy fists that was thrown out by Quinn and had directly hit Ray was a Blood Forest fist.

Similar to the effects of the blood bullet, when the fists managed to hit Ray the blood particles started to spread on the armour. The effects of Ray's power were strong though and most of the armour was able to disintegrate the blood.

But with the sheer amount of Blood Forest fists hitting Ray and the size of them being a lot bigger, the effects managed to work out.

Small particles of the blood hardened stabbing into the skin of Ray.

[Beast Blood has been absorbed through Blood Forest punch.]

[No effects have been added]

The blood forest bullet and punch allowed Quinn to absorb blood through their hits. One of the advantages of this when fighting the Dalki was the strength and healing properties he would get from the hit.

Ray was currently using the body of the demon tier beast that created the Dalki. However the demon tier DNA had been mixed with humans to create a substitute that allowed the vampires to gain more strength through their blood.

This wasn't the case if they were just a beast, vampires gained next to nothing consuming beast Blood and it seemed to be the same case here.

Thanks to Alex mixing in the blood celestial guns there were more variations of the Asura blood form fists.

He kept nearly all of the different types of bullets as fists now instead, including the blood Fairy bullet, as well as others but all of these were useless against Ray.

Apart from one more type of fist and that was the shadow fist. Although nearly all uses of the shadow seemed to disappear when Quinn got close to Ray this wasn't the case for the shadow fist.

In the first place, Quinn was using the skill from far away so he could gather the shadow just fine. The other thing was, just like the bullet, this was a condensed form of the shadow.

So unlike his shadow it took a bit longer for Ray's powers to take effect and influence him. When hit with the shadow punch Ray could feel something a little strange.

His senses dulled a little, his hearing, his eyesight, sense of smell even. Eventually his power would evaporate the shadow punch but it was still affecting him.

It was because of all of these things, all of these rapid punches and effects building up on Ray, that he was having such a difficult time dealing with them all.

"Screw you, do you think these levels of attacks will ever be able to beat me?" Ray shouted.

Both of Ray's hands were covered in his orange aura creating the swords. They covered both of his hands and looked like blades at the end.

Swinging them, it slashed through each of the fists of energy.

'I've figured out the troublesome fists of attack, if I strike them down first and then ignore the rest...'

Ray did as he thought, striking down the fists that troubled him and then flew right towards the shadow portals. With a single stroke he ripped through the portal and before it could completely disappear, Ray was already going toward the next set of shadow portals.

Quinn, seeing what he was doing, continued to jump from his position and soon created three more clones through his boots' active skills.

The clones that were made had the same weapons as Quinn meaning all of them had six arms as well.

Every single one of them, from slightly different angles, started to throw out their fists.

The attacks from the clones were at fifty percent of his strength, but it was impossible for Ray to tell the difference between the real attacks and the fake ones.

While Ray sliced at the shadow portals with one dragon sword he opened his mouth up and, instead of the balls of fire, fired out a large content stream of flames.

It covered the whole sky to the point where a large shadow was cast underneath. Wasting no time Ray was seen flying right through his flames and heading straight towards Quinn.

Lifting up his gauntlet Quinn stopped one of the dragon sword strikes, it was powerful knocking his hand down, but his two clones by his side punched Ray on his chest, head, and body by its side.

This wasn't through the normal fists of energy but a direct hit. With the clones being close to Ray they were able to hammer at him with all six of their arms, throwing them constantly out.

Ray was getting hurt but by bearing the brunt of the force of the attack he swung his dragon sword cutting through one of the arms. A cloud of smoke puffed out.

Opening his mouth he fired out at another destroying it, and that one too had puffed into a cloud of smoke.

When Ray closed his mouth a fist had come out from the real Quinn slamming him on the side of his face.

Ray skidded across the floor and following up were several spears of blood that had been hurled at him.

Quinn also placed his hands on the floor and blood electric currents were being sent out right to where Ray was.

The ground electrified with red blood around where Ray was hitting him as hard as he could and the attacks still didn't let up as Quinn continued to throw out all of his fists toward Ray.

It hit him constantly, his armour glowing with power, pain could be seen over his face.

Reaching out he moved toward Quinn, jumping from one side to the next. A slash of the dragon sword came down and a blood arm was lifted.

It went right through the blood arm causing it to fall to the floor, but with Quinn's many limbs he was able to hit Ray right in the chin.

"I'm going to take you out right here!" Ray forced his head down with sheer will and threw a punch back on top of Quinn's head.

His knees buckled slightly but Quinn stood strong tackling Ray with two of his arms he grabbed him and his wings before slamming him into the ground and bashing him on top of his head with his other two arms.

It was a constant back and forth, and blood was spilling from each side's mouth, the shockwaves continued to vibrate through the whole planet as the power continued to increase to levels that the planet was unable to handle.

The two of them were now fighting in close quarter combat, for every move they needed to concentrate to avoid or strike back, and there were small movements in one place.

Neither one of them wanted to take a step back as they continued to pound into each other.

On the side though, Jim had been preparing something. The nest crystals all along his arms lit up and the power was combining in the palm of his hands.

"Both of them are hurt, there's no telling who will win this fight and that's just too much of a risk for me." Jim stated.

'using the power of this many crystals, it will be around two thirds of the amount I have, it will draw out all of their energy in one blast.

'It's a lot, nearly all the work I have built up over these years are in these crystals but to take them two out, it's worth it!'

The energy of a large number of nest crystals blasted out of Jim's hands and went out straight toward Quinn and Ray. The blast was so large it looked like it would consume the both of them.

Chapter 2298.2: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion (Part 2)

Of course, Quinn knew this was going to be a tough battle, it was why he had done so much preparation beforehand. Why he had stayed in the tower for as long as possible making the best equipment he could possibly make.

There was a chance that he would regret the decision, as many lives would be lost while he was busy making all of the equipment, but now he knew he definitely had no regrets. If he didn't even have one of the pieces of the armour, then he was sure that he would have lost the fight.

This was easily Quinn's toughest fight as of yet. It took everything he had. Everything he had learned from his experience in various fights, against the vampire settlement, against the big four, the demons, and the celestials. All of those experiences and he had used in this match.

On top of that, he was using all of the skills of the armour and all of the experience he had gained in his previous fights during this fight. It was clear that he was giving it everything he had.

Even in this fight, like the last, he felt like he had unlocked new levels, new strengths... but it still didn't seem to be enough. There was only one thing that Quinn had yet to use, and that was his demon form, but with some others still being on the planet, and even the tower itself still standing, he was a little afraid to use it.

For Ray, on the other side, this match wasn't a walk in the park either, not like he would have expected or many of those that he had met before. He also felt like this was the most difficult and hardest fight.

Even when going up against Krad, the original owner of the Shadow ability he hadn't struggled this much. His opponent was learning on the go, growing in the middle of the fight. At first, Ray wouldn't have claimed it was his toughest fight through his long life.

In fact, there was even a time where he had suffered a defeat in the past, but as the fight went on, now he was sure that this was by far his hardest fight.

Two of the four blood Asura form's arms had been destroyed by Ray. He had held on tight, using his pure power to crush them. While Quinn continued to hammer his body, head, and every part of Ray.

Out of the exchange Quinn had managed to do quite a bit of damage to Ray, while Ray was able to weaken Quinn one step at a time. The fight was still fierce with each of them continuing toward each other.

Off to the side of the fight, there were still all of those that were watching, but one person in particular, as they watched the fight, they were inching closer and closer towards it. Even though the shockwaves of power damaged the top of their skin.

Their body would heal, and he would push through.

"What are you doing Peter!" Chris called out.

Peter ignored Chris and continued to get closer and closer. Chris was already quite a bit behind Peter. He didn't want to get caught up or involved, and knowing Ray's personality as little as he did know it, if they were to get involved and try to help him, it would be them that would suffer more.

Close to the battle between Quinn and Ray, it was almost impossible to miss, Peter and Chris turned their heads. A rising energy, a bright glow that had a cosmic colour to it, there was a person.

'That's... that's Jim!' Chris could see that he was gathering some type of large power, with his eyes fixated on the fight. 'With that much energy, he won't just hurt Quinn... he'll hurt Ray as well... could it be? Is that his plan?'

It was too late to stop Jim now, he was too far, and Jim was already in the middle of his motion, throwing both of his hands out. The large cosmic power went right out from his hands. As the power left, the nest crystals on his body started to empty one by one and fall to the ground.

For Ray and Quinn, the two of them were concentrating on each other, watching the other's every move, their arms, their legs, what gestures they made and any weird habits that they could pick up to see the next move. They were totally focused on each other.

Yet with how powerful and skillful the two of them were they did notice the large amount of energy to their right. When they turned their heads though, they were too late. That was because another person was already standing in front of the large amount of energy.

His whole body was covered in a dark red aura, and his head tails had split into two, wrapping around his arms. When the energy went to hit, he gave it his all as he threw both of his fists first into the energy.

However, the mysterious nest energy was powerful, and it started to consume both of his fists, taking it in.

"Peter!!!!" Quinn screamed at the top of his lungs, as he rushed in towards him. Charging all of his energy and power, to fight back against the energy, disregarding and forgetting the fight with Ray.

Quinn threw out his fist, trying to create as much energy as he could, he was punching as fast as he could, to try and not lose Peter. He had lost too much, too much in this war and Peter was one that had always been by his side.

Even to the point where he stood there protecting him for a 1000 years. With his back turned to Ray, it was easy for Ray to finish off the fight.

Quinn could even hear the sounds of the footsteps of Ray moving toward him, but he couldn't focus on that.

'I'm sorry everybody, this might be selfish of me, but I can't watch Peter die!' Quinn thought.

The footsteps stopped, adn rather than getting struck from behind, or beheaded like he thought would happen. Ray was standing by his side.

The energy was being pushed back, it wasn't surrounding Quinn, but it was still moving around Peter, creeping in, his arms could no longer be seen. And it was starting to touch his body.

Peter was doing his best to lean back, to avoid it touching his head, as he poured every fibre of the power of Qi he had into his body.

"I hate it when people get involved in my fights." Ray said.

Both of his arms were covered in his aura, and it was brewing in his mouth as well. He lifted both of his arms and threw it out, two large dragon sword fists came out, and opening up his mouth a long continuous breath of energy hit back.

With all their powers, it pushed back the nest energy completely destroying it.

Chapter 2299.3: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion (Part 3)

Ray and Quinn both didn't know where the large amount of energy had come from. They were far too focused on their own match. What they did know was the energy was powerful, they had both felt something similar to it before, just never at this large of a scale.

It was quite possible that if they had seen it beforehand, then Quinn would have been able to suppress the attack with just his own energy, but it was so sudden he could only put so much energy into stopping the attack.

At the same time, he was unable to use the Shadow powers, due to how close he was with Ray, since he had been fighting hand to hand at a close quarter range, but with all three of their powers they were able to suppress the attack.

It dispersed into the air into small particles, shaping the air around it. It was a mystic mist like glitter filled with all sorts of colours. For a moment, it almost looked the same as the familiar world.

Through the other end of the attack, both Quinn and Ray could see who was responsible. His hands were still held out together at one point, staying in place. His face scrunches up, his lips shaking.

Because just like them, even he was surprised at the fact that the two of them were still alive, that they had managed to survive the attack.

'That... damned undead he came out of nowhere! He bought them a fraction of a second that allowed them to act!!! What is this, why did he act!' Jim thought, his legs still shaking.

He was debating what to do, he still had some nest crystals left, but attempting to use them against these two, it would be suicide.

Quinn didn't have time to deal with Jim though, because Peter who was by his side, his body didn't look the same as it was before. All of the skin was a dark black as if it was burnt and turning into nothing but ashes.

Only his head looked fine. Right in front of Quinn's eyes, on the spot, Peter's body burst into ashes and fell to the floor, leaving nothing to support his head. Before it fell to the floor, Quinn slid across the ground on his knees and caught Peter's head looking down at him.

All Peter had was his head, there was nothing else from the neck down, it had all been destroyed and the look in his eyes, it didn't look great to Quinn.

"Peter!!! Are you alive, speak to me, stay with me!" Quinn shouted and aura seeped out from his body. He was quick to control it, not wishing to hurt Peter anymore than he already was.

"You seem to care an awful lot about me, for a stranger." Peter said in a weak voice.

For a moment, Quinn thought that maybe Peter had gotten his memories back, that's why he would even attempt to do such a stupid thing.

"Did you remember, do you have your memories back?" Quinn asked.

"I have no clue who the f*ck you are." Peter said in a weak voice. "This stupid body... every time it saw you getting hurt, it started to move on its own. I don't know why, and now look at me. This is what I get, I'm just a useless nobody who can't even control his body."

"You're not a nobody Peter!" Quinn shouted.

How could Peter call himself a nobody. After everything he had done, not just for Quinn himself but for the whole world. He had been there all the time fighting, fighting, and fighting again.

The scared and afraid Peter, who didn't want to get involved and just live a peaceful life, ended up doing everything he could to fight for everyone else, and this was the result. Was this the result of everyone who decided to be selfless?

It had been a long time, but seeing Peter in this state, it was bringing tears to Quinn's eyes and they were dropping down onto Peter's own face.

"Why... would someone like you cry for me?" Peter said in a soft voice.

"Protect the head." Quinn said. "I have your head, we protected it, so that means you will live right?"

The sobbing from Quinn wouldn't stop. The tears continued to flow. Quinn always kept a lot in, because there was a large weight on him all the time. If he broke down in front of the others, then what would they think?

He needed to be a symbol of strength for everyone, he needed to stay positive, but the truth was that he was just like the rest; he always had other thoughts lingering on his mind. What if he wasn't strong enough to beat Ray?

What if he wasn't able to protect everyone, what if he just wasn't good enough? Right now, he felt all those worries, because one thing he was scared of the most, each time he went into battle, each time he chose to fight with others by his side.

It was the thought, what if this is the last time I'll see this person. There were multiple times, in fights where Quinn would lose someone, and wouldn't even be able to say any last words to them.

At times, these things kept him up at night, there were those that he wanted to speak to again, but never could, and no matter how much stronger he got, for some reason these things kept happening, and even now it seemed to be the case.

"Protect the head... how do you... how do you know that?" Peter said.

From the side, Chris had started to run in, after noticing that Peter had gone to defend the attack. Chris wasn't standing too far from where everyone was but they were all ignoring him.

Still, with his enhanced hearing, he was able to hear the conversation between Quinn and Peter.

"I knew... something felt strange, this whole thing feels strange. Would a person who really wasn't involved with us, act like that? Would he shed tears for his enemy?" Chris was angry with himself as he clenched his fist.

He felt tricked, but why in his head, no matter how hard he looked, did he not know the person in front of him.

'If he was our enemy he would have killed us, but he let us live, and then there is Jim... who doesn't care for us at all.'

Meanwhile, before Jim could even put his arms down by his side, immediately Ray was right next to him. Jim had only just twitched a muscle and immediately Ray placed his hand around Jim's throat and lifted him in the air.

"What do you think you are doing?" Ray asked. "1, that attack you just did, it would have struck the both of us. 2, you shouldn't get involved in my fights. Do you think your shitty attack can actually do something?"

Ray was squeezing hard, too hard to the point where Jim was unable to breathe, out of desperation he started to strike Ray on his arm, hitting his armour but it was like a toddler against a giant, the attacks had no effect whatsoever.

"There is a limit to my patience, even if you did save my life, there is only so much you I can take!"

Taking a deep breath Ray was ready to let him go until....

A few moments before, Sil and the others had returned to the large room in the Marpo Cruise. The large ball shaped object was up in the air, but they needed to wait a few moments.

Because Sil was still gathering as many MC cells as possible, in order to use the machine to its full capability.

Many enemies started to gather at the area, and Layla along with Minny did their best to defend, eventually Sil had regained enough MC cells, he hopped into the machine and it closed.

"Let's make everything go back to the way it's meant to be, let's end this war!" Sil shouted.

The machine activated and a pulse was sent out far and wide, out beyond the planet they were on.

Chapter 2300.4: Dragon vs vampire, the conclusion (Part 4)

Using the device, Sil could feel his energy being drained. It was a painful procedure, but one that he bore as he bit down on his teeth.

A pulse was sent out from the device, at first, it spread out through the ship. All of those on board the Marpo Cruise started to feel a ringing pain in the back of their heads. A strong headache started to come over them, some even fell to their knees.

It wasn't just one or two experiencing this; everyone on board the ship was. The pulse continued to go out of the ship, past all the planets in the area. They were having the same experience as those on the Marpo Cruise.

This continued, reaching the other ship, changing back all of the memories of the vampires of what really happened. Although the pulse had gone out far, it was only in this area. They were far away from Earth or the beast planets; that would have to be changed another time.

The sphere opened up, and immediately Layla leapt up to pull Sil out from the machine and brought him back down to the ground.

"Is it all done?" Russ asked.

The group looked at the people that were attacking them not too long ago. They stood there, eyes open wide, confused. They looked at their hands shaking, dropping their weapons. Many fell to their knees.

"What have we done... what has happened?"

Some of them were heard speaking to themselves.

"It's done. I got rid of any altered memories, so now all of their memories are real ones they have experienced. Unfortunately, it also means they will remember everything they have done till this point. They will have to live with the sins they committed while doing someone else's bidding."

On the other planets, what Sil said was true. The fighting had immediately stopped. The explosions that were going off, the small skirmishes here and there, even Jake, who was in the middle of battle, everything had come back to him.

"Sh*t," Jake said to himself. "We were all tricked, and not even a little bit either."

Jake was fighting for the right side, but he felt guilty for forgetting everything Quinn had done and even thinking about going against him for a second.

For the others, they looked around at the dead bodies of the alien race that they had been attacking and their own allies. Some of the surviving Penswi, Amra, and Mermerials, as soon as they saw the humans stop attacking, they did as well.

For the humans, they looked at the injured, cut, and bruised aliens fighting with everything they had. Seconds ago, they saw them as the enemy, they were fighting to the death. Now everything was just replaced with guilt.

Nearly all the humans at that point got on their knees, faces full of tears, and started to beg for forgiveness.

"We're sorry... we're so sorry!"

For them, though, they didn't care about revenge. Instead, they were just happy that everything had worked. They had won the war and managed to survive.

Chris had stopped in his tracks. All of the strange thoughts he had moments before, now they made sense, and just like everyone else, he felt guilty for everything he did. There was an anger that rose in him that was unbearable.

"How... how could I work for such scum and do everything he said!"

What this also meant was that a certain man, who right now only had a head, had gotten his memories back. He could see his friend holding him, still crying uncontrollably.

"Hey, don't waste those tears on me," Peter commented. "Do you remember when I pushed you in that portal? After that, I risked my life trying to protect you from the Dalki. There was no way for me to come back, so you ended up turning me."

Of course, Quinn remembered. He would never forget a memory like this. 'Wait a second... if Peter is talking about this, doesn't this mean...'

"You ended up saving my life, even though I'd already thrown it away, and that's why I decided to dedicate this already thrown away life to you. So me helping you out again, I guess that finally makes us even."

Quinn was unable to speak; he was stunned for words. If Peter's memories were back, then it meant the other group was successful and most likely alive as well. With his shadow, he could still connect to Minny, so that was a big load off his mind.

Meanwhile, Ray too had received his memories back to what they originally were, and instantly he threw Jim right to the ground, just hard enough to cause his body to bounce and some of the bones in his back to crack.

"You tricked me!" Ray shouted, and his aura came out of his mouth, touching Jim. It started to burn the outside of his skin slowly. Parts of his flesh could be seen underneath.

Jim was screaming in pain but was unable to move due to the broken bone in his spine.

"I forgot to add another thing to the list before, I hate being used," Ray said as the heat continued to burn Jim. All of Ray's anger and aura alone were being directed toward Jim until he was no longer moving.

"Do you really think I don't remember what you told me about the nest crystals on your body?" Ray said to the dead Jim on the floor.

Soon, one of the crystals on his body started to light up. As it did, it was healing the skin on the outside, restoring the broken bones in his body.

"It may have looked like I wasn't listening to your rambling bullshit, but I was paying attention the whole time. There was always something about you that rubbed me the wrong way, Ray."

Jim started to breathe again, but when he could see through his eyes, the sight of Ray and the anger coming from him, all of the cells in his body were shaking.

"Wait, we can change everything together, there's this thing, there's this thing the go-

Jim started to reach for his neck, and he could feel blood seeping out of it. He didn't even see Ray's hands, but it had been used to slice right at his neck, killing him again. He fell to the floor.

"I'm going to enjoy this," Ray said. "Killing you over and over again until you no longer get up."

Ray was dead serious about it, and Quinn, taking a peek over, knew he had nothing to worry about. He had just fought against Ray. It was quite clear that he would have no problems making sure Jim was dead.

'I've already killed that guy a few times. I don't need to kill him more,' Quinn thought.

He stood up with Peter's head still in his hand. "Are you feeling weak at all? Is everything okay?"

"I'm feeling weak," Peter replied. "But I don't think I'm going to die. But I'm not so sure eating flesh will be able to bring my body back. We'll just have to work something out."

Ray continued to kill Jim in excruciating ways, the most painful ways he could imagine. He even held back his strength just so Jim would suffer more. Finally, only one nest crystal was left.

It seemed like a waste of nest crystals. Maybe they could have just ripped them from Jim's body and used them in other ways. But at the same time, allowing Jim to experience a different death multiple times seemed somewhat worth it.

For the last crystal, Ray chucked Jim's body in the air. Then, opening up his mouth, he let out a stream of flames, burning Jim's body. He continued to burn it until there was nothing left of Jim.

There was no crystal and no body to bring back. It was the end of Jim Eno.

Ray turned around and looked at Quinn. He didn't know what to say but wanted to comfort him and started to walk his way. In turn, Quinn smiled back.

But in the middle of the two of them, a beam of white light shot down from the sky, and standing there in its place was one Quinn didn't want to meet.

"Mundus..." Quinn said under his breath.

Chapter 2301: Breaking the agreement?

Standing there in between Ray and Quinn, was the one known as Mundus, the messenger of the Ancient Ones, essentially the ones that ran all of the gods. From what Quinn knew, there was no ultimate power in this world.

The ultimate power itself was the universe, that would shape and change based on what occurred, but it was clear that there were beings on higher levels, and if Quinn was to make a list, in his mind the Ancient Ones would be at the top, and just under them were the likes of Mundus.

'Why is he here, is he planning to go back on his deal? Is he going to force me to give back my armour?' Quinn thought.

He shifted his foot getting ready to fight at any moment. Usually, after a long and hard battle Quinn would be somewhat worn out. However, thanks to the limitless armour set, he was ready to go full strength against Mundus if need be.

There were also plenty of active and passive skills on the armour that related to going against the celestials. Even if Mundus was to use his power, or try to escape, Quinn could even force him to stay here.

Ray, who could see the concerned look in Quinn's eyes, was ready himself. He had no idea who this was. Throughout his life he had never really encountered many of the celestials, only hearing about them through Bliss.

She often guided Ray in a way where he would cause no conflict for the celestials, but it was only the recent events and his exploration that had caught their attention.

'I'll be ready to back you up at any second Quinn, if you go in, I'll go in as well.'

Mundus lifted both his hands and then brought them together, he was clapping.

"Congratulations!" Mundus said. "Quinn, you have managed to do a task that has been a pain in our back side for a long time now. I can safely say as an agent of the celestials you have completed your first task."

Hearing this, Quinn decided to let down his guard a bit. He didn't deactivate all of the armour's skills, but had done so allowing Mundus to still teleport away. Although it was a passive skill, he could still suppress it from working. In the armour's case, the passive skills more so meant that it could always be on and kept permanently on without a cooldown as such. He didn't want him to get suspicious of his powers if he tried and it failed, but if he tried to use the time stop ability, it wouldn't work on Quinn so much.

"As you said, I completed your task, and you will keep your promise, not to get involved in the Earth's affairs anymore." Quinn said.

While everyone was fighting against each other, they were unaware of a much bigger threat that was going on. The celestials were keeping an eye on what was going on with Jim and Jack. If the two of them continued to go ahead the way they were going, then it was quite possible that in order to save part of the universe, the Ancient Ones would have just eliminated the human race all together, and all of Earth.

"Correct but..." Mundus turned his head to look at Ray. To which, the dragon human smiled back gathering aura around his fists.

"Those eyes, you're making it look like you want to fight?" Ray asked.

'This one, is one that has been left alone for a while. They were the ones that told me to leave him alone, but then they ordered to take him out, and now they have stated to leave him be... again.'

'It makes me wonder, why have they been giving this god slayer special treatment. I admit he has strong power, perhaps powers that could outmatch my own, but he is getting too involved to leave him be. Maybe I should...'

Mundus took a step forward but when he did, two large white lights came out from above, directly in front of Ray, and a moment later two figures could be seen. The white light was a clear sign that the ones that had arrived were celestials as well.

One of them was wearing a cloak and wielding a staff. Although it was hard to see the face, based on the figure it was a woman. The other, a man with multiple weapons on his back. Both Ray and Quinn knew both of these celestials.

"Bliss, Sera!" Quinn and Ray both said at the same time.

"It will do no good for you to continue with your actions." Bliss said. "You made a deal, and Ray is part of all that belongs to Earth. You must leave everything in Quinn's hands, and if he wishes for Ray to stay, then he is to stay."

Bliss held out her free hand that wasn't holding onto the staff. Soon a crystal started to appear in it that was a murky brown colour. For Quinn, he had seen many god slayer crystals before, and he knew this was one, he just had no idea whose crystal it was.

She then threw the crystal over to Mundus who caught it in the air, with his long twirling ears, and looked at it.

"That crystal is the god slayer crystal of the one that caused this mess. Honestly, I shouldn't even be handing you that, but it is a power that can cause great problems no matter where it is."

"I suggest this time, you keep it sealed away, and don't lose sight of it... again."

Mundus had nothing else to say, and with that, he turned to Quinn as his body was starting to cover in a white light.

"Remember Quinn, we will ask for you, if we need you. You are now an official agent of the gods." Those were the last words of Mundus before he was sent up into the air.

"You two are very confident to appear in front of me, after all this time." Ray said.

"Please." Bliss replied. "Me and you have worked together many times before, and I just saved you from even more trouble."

"Yet every time you get involved things seem to worsen. It would be better if you were never in my life to begin with."

Quinn soon rushed towards the two with Peter still under his arm.

"What are you two doing here?" Quinn asked. "No, where were you this whole time? You always come, and say you're trying to help, but then disappear when it's important!"

Bliss looked a little nervous, she had been attacked by Quinn in the past before. Whereas she knew how to somewhat control Ray, she didn't know too much about Quinn.

"I'm with you on this one." Sera said. "I did help in the war, by the way. I stopped your friend here, and the other Werewolf one over there, from killing your giant stone friends."

It was then that Quinn realised that Chris was behind him. He looked to be in good condition, so he was nothing to worry about.

"First, tell me about the others, if you have been watching everything, how is my family?" Quinn asked.

"Your family are all safe and alive." Bliss answered. "You did well Quinn. You made the right decision in becoming an agent for the celestials and because of your actions you saved a lot of lives."

"Anyway, Mundus will keep his word, so it's safe to say that those from Earth, the vampires and humans have nothing to worry about getting into trouble from the celestials, I can guarantee you that."

His heart started to settle, hearing his family was fine, but Quinn couldn't shake what Mundus had said about Galen. It might have been something that Bliss didn't even know.

While Quinn was deep in thought, Bliss and Sera took this as an opportunity to escape. The white light started to surround their bodies, but suddenly the white light started to fade away, until it was no longer around the two.

Bliss tried to activate it again, and tried to enter the celestial space but she was unable to.

"Where do you think you two are trying to run off to. I still have things I need you to do." Quinn said, having turned the passive skill back on.

Chapter 2302: The god slayer vault

Bliss was beyond shocked. She had no clue what was going on, or why her celestial powers weren't working, it wasn't just her, it seemed like Sera was unable to do anything about it either.

In all of her time, for as long as she had existed, something like this had never occurred before, she had never heard of a power like this. When looking at Quinn, and his tone of voice, it sounded like he had something to do with it.

'What is going on with Quinn... How is he able to do something like this? Do the other celestials know about this?' Bliss thought. 'No, that's impossible knowing them, if they knew he had this type of power, then they would do everything they could to get rid of him.'

"What... Do you want?" Bliss asked. "There isn't much I can do. Everything is already over, is it not?"

Quinn took Peter's head from under his shoulder and thrust it forward, right in front of her.

"I was going to ask Mundus to help out with Peter's state, but he left a bit early." Quinn said. "But, I imagine someone like you, who knows magic and can do a lot of different things, might have a way to return Peter's body back to the way it was."

Before answering, she looked at Peter, and could see his eyelids moving up and down.

"As long as he is not dead, then there is something I can do. Place his head on the ground for me."

Quinn did what Bliss said. He was a little reluctant to trust her, even though he had been the one that asked her for help, but he felt that now she knew that she was unable to escape that she wouldn't attempt to try anything. He was sure that she didn't want to experience a reincarnation.

At the moment, using the bottom of her staff, Bliss was drawing a large circle, and after that, she started to draw multiple symbols inside. It looked like those special magic circles that Quinn had seen a few times and the same one that was used to open a door to the other world.

While she was busy drawing the circle, Quinn took this as an opportunity to ask a few things he was curious about.

"That crystal that you gave to Mundus, it was a god slayer crystal right? You said it belonged to the one that caused all of this mess, what did you mean?" Quinn asked.

Bliss sighed as she continued to work away at the magic circle, she somewhat never expected this, so she was a little unprepared.

"I suppose you won't let me go until I answer those questions either, right?" Bliss replied. "Although events like this, where one race causes so much trouble, are rare, it has happened before."

"I'm sure you already know that when one is considered a god slayer, that they leave a crystal behind. Which allows its powers to be passed onto another. Now, when someone consumes that crystal, they obtain the power and it might not mean they become a god slayer immediately, but they will still have a crystal."

"You, yourself, are a prime example of that. You had the power of a god slayer, but at first you didn't have the original source power, now you do but you weren't always considered a god slayer, but your power was. Even if you were to die before you became a god slayer, a crystal would have been left behind."

"Now it's safe to say that if one obtains a god slayer power they have a higher chance to become a god slayer themselves, so in order to stop this, the god slayer crystals are locked away. The crystal I gave to Mundus was a god slayer crystal, the one belonging to the human named Malik. The one that was able to change memories."

Quinn knew of Malik's existence but according to the information he had, he wasn't much of a threat. Other than his power, it was hard to see him as a god slayer, but now it made sense if he had obtained his god slayer power through other means, just like that time Bryce Cain had used the shadow powers.

"There was something else you mentioned. Based on what you just said, how did Malik get the power in the first place, was it stolen from this vault?" Quinn asked.

Bliss was checking the finer details of her magic circle, leaning forward, she didn't answer straight away and instead another crystal appeared in her hand. This time it was a nest crystal.

It made Quinn wonder, for him these things were incredibly hard to find, but the celestials, at least the older ones, had a number of them. Was there some way to create them, or did they just have a way of finding them. She placed the crystal down at the bottom of the magic circle, and banged her staff on the ground.

The crystal along with all the lines she had drawn started to light up, and energy began to go straight into Peter's head.

"You are paying quite a bit of attention to what I said, but you are correct. The god slayer crystal, it was stolen by someone, and fell into the hands of Malik. As to who it was, we have no idea."

"But the crystal would have had to have been stolen by someone in a high position, or someone close, most likely another celestial themselves. Then you have to ask why they would do such a thing, and what their goal was in the first place."

Unlike Bliss, that wasn't Quinn's worry. Did he really care about what happened to the celestials? No, it was more how it affected Earth and his position. If someone was able to steal these god slayer crystals once, then there was a chance that they would be able to steal them again.

He was starting to imagine what would happen if all of the god slayer crystals were stolen and used, it was a frightening thought.

Looking at Peter, his body was starting to be restored. It was back to the way it used to be, and was shining strong. The nest crystals were amazing things, if they were able to create beasts just out of its own energy then the least it could do was bring back an undead body.

"Now that I have done as you asked, and answered all your questions, am I free to go now?" Bliss asked.

"Sure...and I truly hope that I never see you again." Quinn said.

"Same for me." Ray nooded.

Bliss didn't say anything else and gathered the white energy around her and Sera, in a blink they were gone up in the white bright light.

In the middle of space, there was one that was flying away from all of the planets, a particular vampire original who had managed to get away, Magnus.

Magnus was not just any vampire original, but was one of the previous kings of the settlement. While flying away, he felt the pulse of energy, and a slight twinge in his head.

"It looks like they were successful in changing everything back to the way it was." Magnus said, a marking on his forehead started to glow, the marking of a single eye with wings.

"I am afraid I was unable to get a hold of any of the Talen family, and that Quinn... he has gotten even stronger. It will be hard to get close to them at this rate." Magnus said.

There was a pause after he talked.

"There is another way you say? Well, of course I will be up for the task, I have been waiting a long time for your return. It's time you came to this world, and make the vampires remember their existence in this world."

Magnus punched in the coordinates on his ship, and the location was set for Earth.

Chapter 2303: Half the journey

Peter was back to normal and in one piece, he moved his limbs about as if they were foreign to him, swinging them about in the air and jumping a few times several metres in the air.

"I hate to say it, but I think that was a close call." Peter said

"It's a good thing that one memory wasn't removed from you." Quinn tapped the side of his head.

"Yes, always protect the head. Although I feel like even though I would have protected my head the rest of my body wouldn't have come back."

Quinn had to agree, perhaps this time he would have to owe it to Bliss for bringing Peter's body back, but then again, would she have done anything if he didn't force her?

Regardless, both Jim and Bliss were able to do things with a nest crystal that I never knew about. A nest crystal even managed to save my life, and it was only because of Sil, I learned how to increase my MC cells, looks like I'm the one with the least knowledge about these things.'

Footsteps came over toward Quinn, armour rattling with each step, for a second Quinn turned his head and was about to go into fight mode with Ray, but he realised that there was no need anymore.

'I was fighting him for so long it was almost just natural instinct.'

"You have grown a lot stronger since last time." Ray said. "I know in the past we never fought toe to toe but I always had an idea of your strength and I have to say I'm beyond impressed."

"I thought that maybe no one would ever surpass me in strength, but if someone did then having it be someone that belongs to my family line, I think I would be happy about that, and hey maybe you will be able to do it."

'Able to do it, does that mean Ray still thinks he is stronger than me even after that fight. Ah, I guess I should just see it as a compliment.' Quinn thought.

"You managed to stop me from doing far worse than what I would have been capable of. If it wasn't for you, maybe all three of the alien races involved would have been killed."

"Although I have long passed beyond the point where I feel guilty for these types of actions, I still feel like I owe you. If there is ever anything you need in the future, you can turn in this favour."

After having a battle with Ray, Quinn knew that he would be a valuable asset in the future. Whether he would need him or not was another thing, but it was always good to have.

"Do you know why Mundus went away, when the other's showed up. It seems like the celestials don't bother you too much?" Quinn asked.

"Mundus?" Ray replied back, having no idea who that was. "You mean that alien looking person. I don't know much about him, or the celestials, like I said. I figured I was just too strong for them to deal with."

"They probably had decided long ago that it was better to leave me be, rather than try to take me on. It's better for the both of us, but don't feel jealous. That Bliss and Sera have both gone against me before. Well, in Bliss' case, she made me go through a re education."

A little of Ray's aura crept out. Speaking of his past with Bliss seemed to put Ray in a sour mood.

"Anyway, there is no use talking to me, you should use your shadow thing to go ahead and be with your family and friends. I'm sure there is a lot for you to do, changing everyone's memories, including those back on earth, for one."

"You should let me deal with everything else."

"Everything else?" Quinn replied.

"I spent quite a bit of time with Jim." Ray explained. "I know where the Marpo Cruises were made, I know all of the bases that he built and went to. I won't rest until I get rid of every single one of them."

"Before I go, I'll stop by and see Logan, just to make sure he has a device ready that you can use to contact me. He can update me on information on anything to do with Jim, and for you to call in that favour whenever you need it."

Quinn nodded, if it was Ray, then he was sure he could deal with whatever surprises Jim had, even if it was a ten spike Dalki, Ray could take them out. Not that they expected trouble of that calibre to pop up.

"One more thing, your shadow power, you have done well to make it your own but I do have to warn you." Ray thought back to the battle, to the infected Shadow beasts he saw. "Be careful with the shadow. It is a power that has always had a will of its own."

"In my time, one of the shadow infected even broke off from the original host making its power its own. I'm sure you have seen it, the shadow adapting to each

person it has, just make sure that your always the one in control and not the other way round."

It was the last piece of advice from Ray, and Quinn would take it seriously. With that, he activated his shadow link and it wasn't long till he was able to link up with Minny.

The shadow behind Minny started to extend creating a pool of shadow behind her. Then a figure started to seemingly grow out of the shadow. It had caught the attention of everyone there.

"Quinn!" Layla shouted running up and giving him a big hug, she held onto him tight, but it was hard to do so properly with all the armour on his body.

"My, my, my, you have changed a lot since I last saw you, that armour is certainly impressive." Logan commented.

Quinn didn't say much, he just looked at everyone with a big smile on his face. He was taking in the moment, of everyone recognising everyone. His eyes did fall on the frail Sil, and it angered him a little, but realised there was no need for him to be angry anymore.

"Tch, look at him." Russ said. "He's not even injured, while we were all risking our lives, what was he even doing? The reason why the war stopped was because of us anyway, he didn't even do anything."

To Russ, it would look like that, since his armour was healed already from the marks that were on them and Quinn looked completely fine, not even tired from his fight.

"What happened, how are the Amra?" Layla asked.

"The Amra, a lot of them died. I didn't make the armour as quickly as I thought I could, but quite a few of them managed to survive. At the moment they are still held up in their tower.

"I was planning to get Wince and Stark to come with us and head back to the tower, that way the three can talk."

Quinn looked around, they were still on the Marpo Cruise at the main console. It was slowly descending toward the planet they were on before. The plan was to get anyone who needed emergency help, the help they needed as soon as possible, to try and save as many lives as they could from this war.

"I don't see them here, I guess they must be down on one of the planets below." Quinn said.

The faces of the others were scrunched up, and looking away from him, and as for his daughter, she was unable to stop sobbing as she thought about them.

"What happened... what happened to them?" Quinn asked.

This is the end of part 1 of 2 of the final Volume. We are truly in the last part of my vampire system. I don't know how long this final part will be, but it has been a very long time coming and I hope everyone stays till the very end.

Chapter 2304: The fallen king

The others had given the terrible news to Quinn. Stating how they had died, and what they had all gone through. Fighting Pine, and straight afterwards needing to deal with H as well. When telling their tales, they didn't diminish any of their feats.

How the Blades, Ceril, and Wince had fought against the five Spike Dalki, doing their best and doing everything they could to hold them back, in order to protect the people. Then there was Stark.

His tale was a large one. They explained how he had helped rescue Sil in the first place, then went on to detail how he had helped Sil in protecting him on one of the planets, finally his sacrifice in taking Jack out, and how it had an impact on the war, and on what H was trying to do at the last moment.

Quinn was more than upset hearing all of this, all he could do was think about them and their thoughts as they went through everything. He had expected losses in a fight of this scale. Of course it would have been good if no one had to lose their lives.

But what troubled him the most, was the fact that it was outsiders who had lost their lives in this war. People who Quinn had come to and asked for help. If he had never gone to Wince and Ceril, if he had never gone to the Penswi planet, then would they all have lived through this war.

'You can't think like that.' Alex said, speaking into Quinn's mind, still present in the armour. Due to the connection the two had this way, there were times where Alex could hear Quinn's thoughts.

'Thinking like that diminishes their sacrifices. Without Ceril, would you have ever been able to find the information you needed? Without Wince on your side and the Mermerials, would they have been able to fight back as long as they did, and without Stark would any of this have worked out?'

'In the end, if none of them did these things, then there's a good chance we would have never won this war, and then both the Penswi and the Mermerial planets would be gone. So you thinking that it's your fault for dragging them into this, that's just disrespectful to them.'

Alex's words gave him some comfort, but it was still not enough for Quinn. He had a big question on his mind, was there ever a time, or a way he could stop losing the people he cared about? Conflicts seemed to continue to rise one after the other and what was the cause of it all.

Quinn and the others still had a lot to do even though the war had ended. The Amra along with Geo and Dober safely left the tower. They were saddened by the destruction of the city and all of their planets.

Everything would have to be rebuilt from scratch. Although they would have help in doing so. The Mermerials and the Penswi all agreed to send aid and help.

On top of that, the Earthlings would help as well. After Sil made a full recovery, eating and looking like his former self once again. The device had been used on Earth and all the local planets, changing everyone's memories back to the way it was.

This continued on the beast planets, where the Graylash faction controlled, and the vampire settlement as well.

When people had learned of what really happened, there was a lot of anger, and they wanted that anger to lash out at someone, someone to blame. At first a lot of it was pointed towards Logan, even though he wasn't to blame.

The ones to blame were dead, but the people needed to push their anger out somewhere. In the end, Quinn was needed to make a speech, he was the one that was able to calm everyone down.

Because, in all of this, Quinn was the biggest victim and they listened to his words. The anger had turned into guilt, and in order to get rid of some of that guilt, the humans and vampires needed to act.

They were to help with the restoration of the Amra planets, and not only those planets, but the Namriks and every other planet that they had attacked. They would help the others with technology, passing on knowledge and so on.

This wasn't a one time hand out either, Quinn wanted to make it a longer commitment. They had done so much damage to the other planets and they needed to repay that.

There was also a special ceremony that had been decided to be held on the Amra planets. It was to honour all of those that had fallen in the war. All three races had agreed on a date to meet and honour all of those that died.

Quinn had also been invited, along with the others that had helped in the war. A large stage was built, and a special large monument, a thick large pillar, that had the names written down of every single person who died.

Right at the very top there were four names displayed, of those who had contributed the most in the war, names that were never to be forgotten.

Speeches were made of each person's story and the sacrifices they had made, to some it might have sounded like the stories were amplified for the sake of their heroic deeds, but many of them knew that it truly wasn't the case.

After the ceremony was over, Quinn decided to head back to the vampire settlement, and live there with his family once more. There was still some clear resentment between vampires and humans.

Although no longer enemies and both aware of each other, they just felt safer living apart.

In the vampire settlement itself, Ronkin and Jeouk were standing on top of one of the houses, looking out at one of the castles in the distance.

"I still can't believe it, that I was next to the great Quinn the whole time, and I didn't even know it." Ronkin said. "It's so strange, every time I think about it, I want to kick myself, how can one's memories be affected so much?"

"Do you know, we used to just go around patrolling together every day, no one would believe it."

Jeouk nodded along, as he heard this for the tenth time already.

"I knew he was special even without memories of him. Ever since I saw him on that ship, training everyone in hand to hand combat. It's why I never went against him. I wonder what he's going to do now, and how he's going to change this place."

"Well, one thing is for sure, his family will definitely be treated completely different now. I can just imagine the look on all of the kids faces when Minny goes back to school."

Behind the castle, in the large garden around the round table, a meeting was taking place. All of the originals, as well as the old family leaders that had been awakened, and those like Muka were there, while Quinn sat at the head of the table.

There were a lot of times where he would just push the duty off to someone else, but somehow he had become somewhat in charge of the vampire settlement. It felt natural to all of the others.

Rather than running away, Quinn just went with the flow this time. It was a lot easier compared to the past, as everyone felt like they were more inclined to listen to him.

"There has still been no news about where Magnus currently is, and no one has seen him." Edvard stated.

"Is he really someone that we should be worrying about so much?" Bianca replied.
"He is just one vampire and can't do much on his own."

"Your correct." Hikel interrupted. "But he is not just any vampire, he is one of the originals and a former king who had ignited a war. His beliefs are still the same as they were in the past.

"The fact that he hasn't given himself up and gone into eternal slumber means he must be planning something."

A lot of the originals wanted to go back into eternal slumber, leaving everything to the newer generation, but they felt like Magnus was their problem to deal with, and until that was dealt with, then they wouldn't go back to sleep.

"There is one connection we can try." Grenlet added. "Magnus had a student, no? Perhaps he knows something, or what Magnus was planning."

Honestly, Quinn was considering leaving this whole thing alone. Jim and Jack had been dealt with. There were no more big threats, so why go chasing after one. The celestials had kept their word, and hadn't gotten involved at all.

Yet, there was a sick feeling in his stomach about all of this.

Part 2 of the final volume begins! I hope everyone enjoys!

Chapter 2305: Things can never return to normal

One of the things that were the most normal in the vampire settlement was the vampire school, Roland Academy, as it was called. Even during the war, the students never really stopped going to school.

After all, basic education was important, and Jim was also putting pressure on the new generation of vampires to fight as well. However, it had been a long time since Minny had gone to school.

Having left in the middle of everything, her family being accused of being these grand villains and more, it was safe to say, she was nervous as she walked down the settlement's streets.

A big difference from before though, was that nearly every vampire was stopping to look at the two of them. Some smiled, others waved, and there were even those that whispered. What would also occur once in a while was some of them stopping to give Layla and Minny gifts.

"Mum... this is so strange, everyone is treating us so differently." Minny said, holding her mother's hand.

"You're right, it is a bit strange, but they are just being grateful for what we've done. Now that they have their memories back, they know about your father's good deeds in the past, and don't forget about yourself. You're a hero as well now, and you should be proud. It's just easier to smile back and accept the gifts." Layla explained.

Layla was sure that it would all calm down at some point. It was just that the events were very recent and the people... they needed something to celebrate, because with the war having taken place, the settlement was looking a lot quieter.

It was around one third of the size of the settlement before they had left. The vampires had suffered a lot in the war.

"You're a hero too mum, remember you helped out as well, and with that cool sword, you and uncle Russ did a good job beating the pointy Dalki!" Minny excitedly did a little hop. "Mommy, where is uncle Russ? I haven't seen him since the war. Wasn't he meant to stay and protect us, he's a hero as well, right?"

Layla wasn't too sure how to answer this question, because she was unsure where Russ was either. He didn't really care for others' lives, and had a huge drive for revenge, but soon after the war he was never seen again.

According to Quinn, he must have figured out some way to remove the Qi control from his mind. Although Layla felt like she might have had something to do with that. Still, Russ did save them, whether he would have done so without the Qi

command or if his own life wasn't in danger was another thing, but as long as he wasn't causing trouble, then that was fine with her.

Somewhere on one of the Graylash planets.

"That will be 4000 credits per night for the resort, sir."

"Achoo!" Russ wiped his nose. "Someone must be talking about me, I guess I'm pretty popular now."

Eventually, Minny had arrived at school and the stares from the other parents and kids didn't stop there, but there was nothing Layla could do but give Minny a big hug and wish her good luck.

"You have to grow up strong, in the future your brother is going to attend the school as well, and we need someone to protect him, alright?"

Minny nodded her head, she was quite the family person, so whenever Layla wanted her to do something she had to say it was for the family. It was technically true, but Layla did feel somewhat bad saying these things.

When Minny entered her classroom, unlike most of the adults that would smile and wave, nearly all the kids would just whisper about her, and it wasn't like she was unable to hear any of it.

"Minny's dad was Quinn Talen, the previous king of the vampire race, and I hear he's basically running things now."

"Wait, does that mean Minny is like some type of princess. What happens if we do something wrong? Will we be punished, will our whole family get kicked out of the settlement?"

Eventually Minny saw someone she had wanted to see for a long time, Abby came through the door, her first friend she had made.

"Abby!" Minny said coming over and grabbing both of her hands. "I'm so happy to see you, it's been so long!"

Minny was unable to hold back the tears, but Abby gave a nice smile back.

"It's good to see you as well." Abby said. "But, are you sure you still want to be friends with me? I mean, you're practically a princess, shouldn't you hang around the other family leader's kids or something."

Minny shook her head violently.

"Please no... no... no... no I just want to be treated like normal, and I hate that people keep calling me princess!" Minny stated.

Abby was happy as well, she wanted to continue being friends with Minny, but was unsure if she would still want to be friends with her. She was sure that many would be trying to get close with Minny now, unlike before, and she might just get in the way.

For Minny though, all of those would just be fake friendships, Abby, who was her friend when she knew noone, that was her real friend.

"PRINNNNCESSS!!!" A voice called out entering the classroom door. "Where is the princess?"

Immediately, Tobi's eyes latched onto Minny and he started to run over, bowing his head.

"Minny, I always knew you were amazing, but to think that you were a long lost princess. This is... this is... perfect. Just like those TV shows, the princess always rejects the prince and decides to go for someone more common and I could be... I could be... I could be.."

"Stop it!" Abby said. "Minny doesn't like to be called princess, just call her Minny."

Seeing Tobi and Abby again, it really warmed her, she could just be herself again, and not worry about a grand war, or having to fight, this was one of her favourite memories, being at school together with them.

She didn't realise how much she missed it, until she was unable to attend.

The rest of the day continued like normal, there were some differences for Minny, for example when she put her hand up, the others put their hand down allowing for her to answer. She noticed this after a few times and then stopped putting her hand up after.

Other than that, it really had gone back to normal, but there was a strange mood in the air. When listening into others' conversations, Minny could hear it, the others talking about some of their parents having been killed in the war.

Luckily, Abby's parents were fine, her father was on the research side, and her mother was the designated parent. For Tobi it was the same, only his father was in the settlement since his mother was banished, so he was the dedicated parent for Tobi, meaning he didn't have to go out to war.

Finally though, it was time for break, and Minny could try to forget about all of that. When break came, there were still many interested in Minny. For one, now all those in the higher grades were giving her more attention.

"If she's Quinn's daughter then she must be super strong. She must have held back in that assessment that happened a while ago."

"Hey, just because one is strong doesn't mean the other is, and besides haven't you heard, I think she was adopted."

"Damn, I wish I was adopted into the Talen family, could you imagine that!"

Rumours were spreading all over the place, and she didn't like it one bit. Still, no one was approaching the three, almost too scared, that was until one student, an older one, walked toward them.

"Sister Hebe!" Minny called out.

She remembered Hebe, she had kept her secret about her powers and her mother's at the time, and was one of the students selected to be taught by one of the original leaders.

"Minny, I hate to ask you this, but I need your help." Hebe said. "It's about Jared, do you remember him?"

Hebe and Jared were the two that kept Minny's secret and were always nice to her. She had even fought against him in the assessment. In the end, Jared had Magnus as his mentor teacher.

"Jared has been taken away by the leaders, I think he's under investigation for something. Which is why, I need your help, I need you to speak to your father, I think Jared is in trouble."

Chapter 2306: The vault

The celestial space was originally created by one of the Ancient Ones. Celestials could create their own celestial space, but none were as large as the celestial space used by all.

Time passed slower than in any other space, and there were certain things one could do in this special space that they weren't able to do in others. For example, travel to other planets and areas.

This was something unique to the Ancient One. When creating spaces, he could add unique elements to them, but with all of the spaces he created, hard-set rules needed to be applied.

The number of rules, how many people these rules applied to, what type, and who... all of these things would dictate the strength of the space created.

Using this power, the celestial was also able to create prison cells for the celestials that caused too much trouble. Killing them would result in their rebirth at some point, so it was best to put them in their own space with no way of escaping.

Quinn had been subjected to this before. The rules were simple, making it nearly impossible to break out using his powers alone, but he had found a way around them by giving up his celestial title and turning into a god slayer.

It was something unique to Quinn that had never happened before.

But the celestial space was just that, a space. It was used as a tool to make their jobs far easier, a way for all of the gods to work together and accomplish the bidding that the universe wished for them more easily.

The person the Ancient Ones put in charge of the celestial space was Mundus, and that was how he became known as the Messenger. There were very few celestials who had seen what the Ancient Ones looked like.

Moreover, they rarely observed things themselves and simply received information passed on by Mundus. With his information, they would make decisions on what to do, rarely getting involved unless it was of utmost importance.

What this meant was that the Ancient Ones didn't live in the celestial space; they lived in the grand universe outside it. In a strange solar system, where there was one planet that orbited the sun.

There was almost nothing in space; no asteroids or other planets. Whether it had always been this way or had become so, only those who lived on the planet would know. The planet resembled Earth to a large extent, with vast blue seas and greenery spread all over. It mostly looked like a wild jungle that had been spread

across the surface. However, there was one major difference... the clouds. Instead of being high up in the sky, they were low, close to the ground and everywhere.

As they passed through objects, they would leave a significant amount of water vapour on the trees. There were also more clouds than there would be on Earth, covering a large portion of the planet's surface.

One area, however, remained clear of clouds, as if it wasn't allowed to be touched. It was a castle, a large castle with rectangular-shaped walls and only one gate, one entrance.

The place was surrounded by clouds, as if it was floating on top of them, and it was hard to find if one tried to look for it from the surface. This was because, like a giant flying object, it constantly moved around the planet.

Walking atop the clouds, heading towards the gate, was none other than the Messenger. Reaching the front gate, two guards stood by the side of the doors, dressed in identical armour.

The armour was covered in red, blue, and white stripes, giving the impression that they were wearing some kind of clown uniform.

"Hey, so you guys are still here, like always. This place never changes," Mundus commented, but neither of them said a word.

Holding out his hand, celestial energy was released, hitting both of the doors. The doors lit up, and on the other side, a mechanism started to turn as celestial energy continued to move it.

These were the castle gate doors, and the only way to open them was by using celestial energy, but not just any celestial energy, it had to be registered. When the doors were created, they were infused with celestial energy.

After that, only the person who created the doors could open them or register new energy for them to be opened. Mundus was one of those registered, so the doors would open for him.

There was a simple reason for this: the place, the planet where Mundus currently resided, was where the Ancient Ones lived.

Once the doors opened, one could see inside the castle. It was large and filled with ornaments and paintings. The ornaments and paintings seemed to be from long ago, but the strange thing was that each item appeared to be from a different time period.

Some items looked much newer than others, and it was difficult to see them displayed together. As Mundus continued to walk through the hallways, there were items that seemed to be from entirely different planets.

"This collection changes every time I walk through these halls, but I suppose when one has the ability to do absolutely anything, they must have some sort of hobby."

Eventually, Mundus found a staircase leading down below. Once again, he was met with a door with a peculiar locking mechanism in front. Just like the last door, he held out his hand and blasted it with celestial energy.

The lock twisted and turned until the door eventually opened, and steam started to emanate from the bottom. Stepping inside, Mundus found himself in a completely silver room.

It was long, stretching so far until the end was no longer visible, resembling a tunnel. The walls, at least in the first part, were filled with all sorts of weapons. They had various shapes and sizes, clearly crafted from the remains of powerful beasts.

Just by looking at the weapons, one could tell that they held immense power. The wall was adorned with them, hanging in place. These were the god slayer weapons that had been confiscated and locked up.

Mundus had been walking for about an hour until the weapons finally ceased, but the tunnel continued. Instead of weapons on the walls, there were now crystals.

First, Mundus went right to the end and placed H's crystal in an empty slot, with the rest of the slots ahead still unoccupied, indicating that there was room for many more.

"I hope I don't come across any more powerful God Slayer items, though. Otherwise, I'll have to go through that whole moving process again. This tunnel and system weren't very well thought out."

After placing H's crystal down, Mundus searched for an empty gap. Finally, he found it—the spot where Malik's crystal was meant to be. He placed the murky-coloured crystal in its original position.

"Locked down in here, you should never be allowed to roam freely and cause so much trouble again," Mundus said to himself proudly. "Although 'should be' is a very important question. It still perplexes me to this day how someone was able to get in here."

"The only ones with access are me and the Ancient Ones, but it couldn't possibly be any of them, and it wasn't me. Unless someone used memory alteration on me, I would have remembered something like that."

Mundus continued to walk through the walls of crystals until he eventually came to another empty gap on the wall.

"That day, two crystals were stolen from this vault. One was returned, but the other has yet to come back."

Chapter 2307: The last message

Jared's legs couldn't stop shaking, they were almost rattling as they bashed against each other. He looked around the room, it was dark and there were only one or two light sources produced by the nest crystal torches.

He could see well in the dark because he was a vampire, but even vampires still preferred to see more naturally if they could. The light sources shone on those in the room. There were vampires standing by the edge of the wall, completely still.

There were four of them in total in the small room, each of them just standing there, not saying a word and just looking over at him.

'Why was I called in so suddenly, and to a place like this?' Jared thought. 'They even blindfolded me before taking me here. What could this even be about, I didn't do anything wrong... did I?'

The whole situation was making him nervous, because usually a leader would just summon someone if they wanted to ask questions, but the lengths they had gone to, to bring him to wherever he was, showed how serious the matter was.

The sound of a sliding door was heard, it lifted a part of the wall, a hidden entrance. The person walking in, Jared recognised the person well and everyone would have noticed what he looked like, he was the talk of all the vampires in the past and present.

"Sir Quinn!" Jared said, standing up from his seat and immediately bowing down with one hand across his chest.

"Sorry about this, you must be a little scared with everything that has happened." Quinn said.

Entering the room, behind Quinn, was both Edvard and Hikel. The latter went ahead and talked to the guards who all quickly left the room and the door was shut behind them, leaving only them and Jared in the room.

"This case, and the questions that we need to ask you, is quite a sensitive matter. So it's important that we have no one else listening to the conversation." Edvard explained.

The three of them went ahead and took a seat opposite Jared. They weren't afraid of him, they were all strong vampires, and Jared, although skilled for a child, wouldn't have the strength to beat a single one of them so he wasn't restrained either.

However, just as Edvard had stated, this investigation was being run in secret. Magnus was capable of starting a war between vampires, so it was clear that there were those that would support his ideals.

Especially among the other leaders and possibly the other originals as well. It was why Hikel and Edvard, who were members of the Punisher's convent, were selected by Quinn to do this task.

"We want to ask you a few questions related to your mentor Magnus. I'm sure you have already noticed but Magnus is missing." Quinn stated.

Of course, Jared knew Magnus wasn't around but he didn't know he was missing. This information wasn't made known to the public, they didn't want to scare them with anything, and especially not until they knew what Magnus was doing.

But the line of questioning would have made it obvious to Jared that they didn't know what had happened to him.

"I want you to answer the next set of questions honestly, and I would rather not use the influence skill on you to get the answers we are looking for. I trust that you are a good kid and understand what I'm asking." Quinn said.

Quinn could reasonably guess if one was lying or not by the change in their aura and heartbeat. When trying to determine if a vampire was lying, it was a little more difficult but, the younger one was, the more honest their bodies were.

The influence skill had its restrictions as well, only answering directly the questions asked, and they were hoping that asking in this way would expand their knowledge.

"I understand sir, I will help you the best I can." Jared stated.

The questioning began with Edvard and Hikel taking it in turns to ask the questions they wanted. It was questions such as what Jared and Magnus would do in their mentoring sessions, did Magnus leave the castle much, or did he ever say anything that seemed out of the ordinary.

For the most part it sounded like Magnus had treated Jared as an official student, doing well for him to learn his ways. What did come as a surprise though, was Magnus asked a lot about Jared's power.

He knew how to use the first family's ability. Finally though, it looked like they were able to make some sort of breakthrough. Jared was nervous, sweat was running down the side of his face, but taking a big gulp he spoke up.

"There was a way, me and my master... used to be able to speak to each other. A few days ago, I tried to contact him but there was no answer." Jared answered.

"A way you two used to contact, you mean like telepathy?" Hikel asked. "Then are other vampires involved in this?"

Jared shook his head.

"It's like telepathy, and works the same way, but it's not. Using a writing crystal, I would draw a marking on the palm of my hand. It would last a few days, but with the marking it would allow me and sir Magnus to talk to each other."

The leaders looked at each other, they had never heard of such a thing.

"Maybe, Richard would have known what this was, or we could talk to Vincent?" Edvard suggested.

Quinn had other ideas though, when Jared explained drawing the symbol on his hand, he noticed the shapes that were drawn.

"You can use blood aura, on your finger tip?" Quinn asked.

Jared nodded thinking it was a strange question to ask out of the blue, but he showed Quinn he was able to.

"Can you draw the symbol in the air?"

Jared did as instructed, and with his finger lit up he drew the shapes of the symbol. The other leaders were still confused, but when Jared was done, immediately Quinn drew the symbol with his blood aura in the air again.

Now all the others could see the symbol that was drawn quite clearly. It was a round large eye, with bat like wings. It was a symbol that Quinn had come to know and had seen a few times.

"Immortui..." Quinn said under his breath.

"You... you know that name?" Edvard was stunned. The originals knew of Immortui, but it was mostly through Richard Eno. Spending a long time together as the originals, they were quite aware of the one that had turned them all into vampires in the first place.

So they also knew about the being that Richard had contacted that had turned them, but it was a name that was never brought up.

"Yes, I do. This symbol is one that belongs to Immortui. It's his marking on those that follow him. I don't know if you're aware of this, but Laxmus also had a marking as well."

The more Quinn thought about it, there were other times where Quinn had seen the marking, or learned about it. Zero, the black sword, Laxmus, and now it was possible that Magnus was linked to it as well.

'All of these things, and the people they have caused great conflict, and always someone with the marking is around during it. Is it a coincidence?' Quinn thought.

There had been a question on Quinn's mind for a while now, why did conflict among the vampires, not just the vampires and the humans keep on appearing. Sure, throughout history there had always been conflict, but not at this level. Maybe Quinn was starting to see an answer somewhere.

"The marking that you drew on your own body, is it a temporary one, or do you have a permanent one?" Quinn asked.

"I always just drew the marking on my hand and it would last a few days, I would then have to redraw it as well... but Magnus, I believe he always had a marking and never had to draw one."

Going into this, they weren't sure whether or not Magnus was a threat, but now Quinn was pretty sure that Magnus would be up to something.

"Quinn, Sir, there is one more thing, something that I never understood." Jared said.
"Magnus gave me one last order, when I last saw him and when I last spoke to him. He told me, no matter what, to keep the Talen Family alive."

Chapter 2308: A connection?

It had become quite clear that like Laxmus, Magnus was also under the control of Immortui. For whatever reason, these two were doing the bidding of the celestial that even the Ancient Ones feared, so much so that they locked Immortui away to another plane, one not directly linked to the one on Earth.

Without meaning to, Quinn and his friends had managed to kill nearly all of the dedicated followers of Immortui that were causing great chaos, Quinn had even removed the marking that was originally on the black sword and replaced it with his own.

Ultimately, a portal had been opened to the other plane, but once again it was closed by Quinn. So then why, why did Magnus tell Jared to make sure the Talen family lived, wouldn't it make more sense that he wanted them dead.

"Did Magnus ever give you a reason?" Quinn asked.

Jared shook his head.

"Not quite, but there were some strange things. He would often ask me questions about Minny, but when he found out that she was adopted and wasn't biologically related to you, he stopped.

"I have no clue why he asked to keep your family alive."

The original leaders were amazed that Immortui, the god that made them become vampires, was interested in Quinn, but they felt it was only right after knowing what power he had.

Thinking about Quinn, a thought came to Hikel's mind.

"Weren't you the one that originally created that item, the red heart?" Hikel asked.
"We learned a bit about what happened when we were under Jim. He updated us on the situation and talked about sealing off the portal. If we replace the deeds he told us he did with you, then I assume you were the actual one that created what was known as the red heart."

The originals were in eternal sleep, so when they were awoken, Jim informed them that he was the current leader of the vampire settlement, while explaining all of the feats he had achieved.

This was backed up by Muka who had her memory changed as well as everyone else, so the story fit for them.

"Maybe it's not just you, but your family that is able to open up a portal to where he is. If you or your family died, then he would have no way of opening up a portal."

This reminded Quinn of why Mundus had locked him up in the first place. He had been told that he had a strong link to Immortui, and while he was alive, there was a way for Immortui to get out.

What if he had figured out a way to do so without Quinn but just members of his family. It would mean Galen was in danger or at least a target.

'I thought the link was only the case as while I was a celestial like him, but if that's not the case maybe it's still possible. Mundus is just honouring our deal.'

The three continued to ask Jared questions about Magnus, in hopes they might have known where he had gone. If his goal was Galen or Quinn, then he would still have to be close. They had received a list of locations, but they were all places that they had already checked over, before even questioning Jared.

"Thank you for all your help so far, you have given us a lot of great information." Quinn said, his eyes starting to glow red.

"There are just two more questions I need to ask you. Did you answer all of the questions today to the full extent of your knowledge and truthfully?"

"Yes." Jared answered clearly under the influence skill.

This was a sigh of relief for Quinn, the last thing he wanted to do was to have someone a little bit older than Minny, be an enemy of some sort.

"I'll need to do a full search of your body. I know you said the marks were temporary that you drew on yourself, but we just need to see if there are any permanent ones. The search was done and they were unable to find anything."

As soon as the search was done, Hikel had an odd look on his face, as he heard something being sent through his head.

"Ergg Quinn, apparently your daughter is outside, asking for you and she says it's urgent." Hikel said.

Quinn, hearing the words urgent, placed everyone there in his shadow space. After that he used shadow link, and appeared right behind Minny, letting everyone out of the shadow space.

"What's the emergency, Minny, is everything okay!" Quinn said, looking around. He noticed they were in the entrance way of the tenth castle. They were all standing on a red rug that split off into two ways and went up a large staircase to reach the second floor.

There didn't seem to be any attack going on. There were just the guards of the castle near Minny, and standing by her side a slightly taller older girl, it was Hebe.

The two girls immediately spotted Jared at the back, his face was pale and a little red. He looked flustered, but it was mainly because he had just been searched naked in front of the other original leaders, which was somewhat embarrassing of itself.

"No, don't!" Hebe shouted. "You can't take Jared, you can't kill him, he did nothing wrong, and even if he did... he's a good vampire, he's a good person. He always even looked out for Minny on the side."

"Daddy, please don't kill Jared, I don't know him very well but he kept Minny's secret, so I think he's a good person." Minny said.

"Not think... he is a good person!" Hebe continued to shout.

The leaders had to take a step back due to all of the shouting, they were confused at what was going on.

"Guys relax." Jared spoke up. "They're not here to kill me, they just wanted to ask me some questions, that was all. None of you should be talking to the leaders like this, especially Quinn."

Hebe knew he was right, but how was she supposed to react?

"You mean they're not going to kill you? Then why did they suddenly put that bag over your head and drag you away!"

Edvard slapped the top of his forehead loudly after hearing that.

"My men did that, right in front of you? I'm sorry, they must have given you quite a scare. It was no wonder you thought they were going to kill your friend."

It was a complete misunderstanding and Edvard felt like it was his fault. Letting Jared come through he ran over and gave Hebe a big hug.

"Thanks for always looking out for me, but you worry a bit too much." Jared said.

Hebe was crying and one would suspect that their relationship was more than just friends by the drastic reaction. After a long hug, the two let go, and Jared looked at Minny.

"I can't believe that you even went through all the trouble to get Minny to try and convince her father, and you..."

Jared went to about eye level, squatting down on his knees to look at Minny.

"I can't believe you were ready to try to convince your father, thank you." Jared said.

His hands raised up, and a dark red glow filled his eyes. In an instant his hand had conducted a strong condensed form of blood aura, all to one point in his finger, going right toward Minny's head.

"What do you think you're doing?" Quinn said, as he held onto Jared's hand, stopping the finger from hitting Minny's head, less than a centimetre away.

Quinn immediately pulled Jared away from Minny, and held him by his throat as he slammed him against the wall. The wall cracked but Quinn held back his strength so Jared wouldn't die nor would he go through the wall.

He glanced at his right hand, and in the palm, the symbol of Immortui could be seen.

"What are you doing!" Hebe shouted. "You just said he was fine!"

Both Edvard and Hikel stopped the two girls.

"Stop, your friend, just attempted to take Minny's life."

Chapter 2309: They finally meet

The original leaders Edvard and Hikel both saw the same thing as Quinn. They witnessed what Jared had tried to do in his final moments. Condensing not just a small amount of blood aura but it was an extremely large amount, in fact too large for someone who was just his age, unless they were some type of genius.

The thing was, after all the investigation they had done, after seeing how Minny and Hebe had welcomed him back, they never thought, right there and then in front of Quinn, that Jared would attempt to harm his daughter.

"What are you talking about, Jared would never try to hurt Minny!" Hebe shouted.

The leaders emitted blood aura creating a type of barrier, warning the two girls to stop. However, Minny wasn't trying to push forward, and that was because she felt it as well. The great power that was coming toward her.

It was a good thing Quinn was there because then there was a chance that no one would have been able to stop it. At the moment Quinn wasn't wearing his god slayer armour. He never really had it on since the day he had fought against Ray.

The armour was meant to be a secret from the celestials, so it would be best that he kept it that way. He wouldn't want to be using it, and have some celestial taking a peak finding out what he had.

Regardless, without it, Quinn was still plenty strong and plenty fast.

'What is this?' Quinn thought as he held up Jared. He was struggling, kicking his legs, and swinging his arms. The energy around him was running wild, and just like with the strike before, the power behind them was far more than he was capable of.

This was the power of a vampire knight, but of course to Quinn these hits simply bounced off him.

'The look in his eyes, has he lost control, it doesn't feel like I'm looking at the same person I was looking at before, and the marking... I should have known that they would have been able to hide it, most likely all of this is Magnus or Immortui's doing.'

'But why target Minny, he already said she has nothing to do with all of this. She can't help them in any way, so why would he try to kill her, and if I wasn't here, if he had decided to just pretend to get along, leave the castle, he could have attacked her while I wasn't next to her.'

This thought made Quinn shudder with fear.

"Stop struggling for a second!" Quinn said, as he sent a wave of Qi directly to Jared's head, as it hit him, it caused him to pass out immediately. He stopped struggling and Quinn let him go onto the ground.

"Did you... kill him!" Hebe asked.

"Don't worry, your friend is very much alive, but I'm not sure you will be able to see him so soon."

The two girls were sent home, Minny was told to go straight to Layla and stay with her, to not get out of her sight until he had come back, in the meantime, he needed to deal with the current situation.

The good news was that they were in the tenth castle, and in the tenth castle there was possibly the one person that would prove to be the most helpful in this type of situation, and that was Vincent.

The three were inside his lab, and Vincent had asked the others to carefully lay Jared down in a strange room that was built into the wall of the lab. When they moved out, a glass door slid closed.

It was a type of cell, but not for prisoners, it was more so for experiments on other things. The reason why Quinn had gone to see Vincent for help was because he was a great researcher and on top of that he stayed in frequent contact with Logan.

According to Vincent, Logan had recently nearly passed on all the information that Richard Eno had given him. It was as if they had Richard Eno himself with them.

"I'm sorry Quinn, but I'm not sure there is a way to remove the marking from Jared. We could attempt cutting off his hand, but it wouldn't be a guarantee and it's not like we have other subjects we could test that on."

"And I doubt something as complex as this can be removed just by cutting a part of it out. Wouldn't you have more ways of stopping this, considering your experience?"

As a celestial, Quinn used to be able to mark people himself, and he had broken one marking before, although that was on a weapon, but with him no longer having celestial energy any more, there was no way for him to do anything himself.

'I can think of one thing.' Quinn thought to himself, but just having the thought itself made his stomach twirl a little bit. 'The marking doesn't have to be removed by me, it can be removed by another celestial.'

'As long as they have enough points to remove the marking, but if we were to do this, then it would have to be a celestial that I trust, or one that I can ask help from.'

There were certain names that were popping up in Quinn's head, but none of them quite fit the bill.

"We don't have a lot of options. Tell Logan to do a search on anyone that matches Magnus's face, and also for him to see what every vampire is doing on earth. At the same time contact Zenon from the Graylashes and for him to do the same.

"I know we might not find anything, but we have to try. As for the vampire settlement itself, we have no clue who has a marking and who doesn't. Jared was the one that worked closely with Magnus, but he might not be the only one.

"We need to do a full investigation on all of those that have had contact with him, including the other leaders. They might not like it but we have to."

Although the others agreed to the orders, there was still a problem of what to look for. If they could hide their marking, then they were meant to just observe people until they finally acted, but what else could they do?

He needed to know what they were after, was it him, his family or something else. Right now, they were on the defensive.

'The attack, they knew I would stop it, otherwise they would have never attacked right in front of me.'

"You are absolutely right." A deep voice that echoed, and was distorted could be heard throughout the room. It was almost so distorted to the outside that one wouldn't be able to understand what was being said, yet all of them could hear it clearly.

They looked ahead, and through the glass, Jared was slowly getting up off the floor. He pushed himself up with his arms and lifted his head, revealing glowing white eyes, full of celestial energy.

"I have been wanting to talk to you for some time now... I never thought though, this is how the two of us would meet Quinn Talen." Jared said.

It was clear to all of them in the room that this wasn't Jared speaking, just like before, it was someone else.

While the others somewhat stood back away from the glass, Quinn had decided to take a step forward.

"You've been waiting to speak to me, well then speak, but tell me who am I speaking to?" Quinn asked.

Jared started to break out into laughter swinging his head back. The sound of the laughter was getting louder and louder, it was incredibly powerful and all of the

machinery that Vincent had monitoring the inside of it was going off the charts as beeps and other things were heard.

The laughter stopped, and so did the rest of the equipment going off. Jared looked straight ahead at Quinn.

"Can you really not guess, it is I, Immortui... now let's have a little talk, shall we?"

Chapter 2310: The most dangerous person, acts!

Immortui, a figure that Quinn had heard a lot about, and someone that had been involved in his life in more ways than one, yet the two of them had never directly talked to each other.

There was no way to confirm that the one they were really talking to through Jared was Immortui, but Quinn could tell. Only a powerful celestial could do something like this to their followers.

He doubted this was something Magnus, another dedicated follower, could do.

"I know a lot about you." Quinn said. "I know about your past, and I know why you are locked up, and how there is a particular group that would like to keep it that way."

It wasn't that Quinn liked the celestials, heck, Immortui was a celestial himself, but it was almost as if he was chucked into the middle of this battle between the two groups, and to them it didn't matter how much those from Earth suffered.

"I see, then you should understand my desire to escape, and rightfully change the way things currently are. I'm sure you have felt it at times, that the way they deal with things isn't exactly fair." Immortui stated.

"You might not know it, but I have attempted to get out of my plane several times, yet each time I have tried, there have been things that have gotten in the way, and one of them is you Quinn.

"Regardless of whether you have done it on purpose or not, you have gotten in my way multiple times."

The energy was rising inside of Jared's body when he spoke these words, but the thick glass was keeping him back, at least they thought it was, since he hadn't attempted to break out.

"But you see, I am willing to forgive all of that. You, Quinn, have grown incredibly strong, stronger than any of those like you. The vampires, they came from me, they were a part of me, but you have gone beyond that, but you will never be able to get rid of that link, that you are a part of me.

"You have the power to free me, I know you do, and I know you know that as well."

Quinn's guess was right on the money, Immortui was now after him.

"I wouldn't be too sure about that, and even if I could, setting you free would just make me a target of those that sealed you away in the first place." Quinn answered.

"Ah yes, but it would be too late for them to find out, by then the two of us, as well as those that believe in our goal, would rise up against them."

"But you lost." Quinn said. "You lost last time, so what makes you think you can win this time?"

"The punishment they gave me, it was a blessing in disguise. I have become the grand ruler of this plane already. In this world, there are beings far more fierce than those on earth, and I rule over them all.

"More than that, demons made from my own blood, just like the vampires, have grown in this world full of fighting and death. It won't be a war, but a one sided massacre."

Quinn was sure that the celestials had to be aware of this, and he himself had gone against one of his demons. He had to admit that for normal vampires, they stood no chance. If the celestials hadn't acted, then they had to be confident that Immortui would be stuck where he currently was.

"Isn't there anything you want in this world... someone you might have lost. I can bring them back. With my power, I can bring back those dear to you. The celestials, they don't care about any of your lives. They would rather have you all die, and for me to just never return, but at least I am offering you something you want."

Quinn's fist was starting to shake, and his eyes were glowing red in anger.

"You b*stard, half the people that I lost, that I care about, were lost because of conflicts that you caused! Making a deal with you, would be kicking the dead in the ground!"

The smile on Jared's face, that had been there the whole time had disappeared.

"I was being nice to you Quinn. I was giving you a choice, when in reality you have no choice. I tried to show you that even with this simple body, how easy it was for me to take away something you cared about.

"And even then, you are choosing to go against me? If you had chosen my side, then at least I would be helping you, but where are the celestials now? Where are they, will they be the ones that save your family?"

Grinding his teeth, Quinn had an answer.

"No, but you won't be either. All this time, I've been the one protecting them. Immortui. If you're trying to pick a fight with my family, then even if I have to come to you, I will do so and make sure to kill you, just like I have done everyone else so far."

It was clear now, this was Quinn's answer, he wasn't going to work for Immortui. That thought hadn't crossed his mind. He just wanted to live his life, and there was one last person that was stopping him from doing so.

"You threatened me! You threatened me!" Immortui shouted with the aura coming out of Jared once more. "No god has ever dared to do that! Even the Ancient Ones feared my power, were scared of angering me, but you act like you have no fear, but I can tell you're scared.

"In the past, I always focused on conflict. My attention was on growing my own power, you just happened to get in the way, but now, I will focus all of my attention on you.

"How many people do you care about Quinn? Do you care about this person's life as well, the one I'm controlling right now? This is a nobody and I nearly killed your daughter.

"For the rest of your life you will have to live in fear, fear that anybody could be your enemy, anybody could be me waiting around the corner, targeting all of the ones that you love, all of the ones that you care about.

"I will show you that you have made an enemy of the wrong person. I will show you how dangerous I can be, without even stepping a foot in your world."

Jared finally started to calm down, the aura around him starting to fade, but the eyes were still filled with white, still showing that Immortui was in control.

"How many can you save Quinn?" Immortui asked. "Well, let's find out."

Jared lifted his hand and all of the powerful aura went towards one point at his fingertip, with the finger he swiped it across his neck. His head fell to the floor, blood spilling everywhere.

Jared was dead... and it was one life Immortui had taken away, and one life Quinn was already unable to save.

Chapter 2311: Cat and Mouse

As soon as Jared swiped his finger across his neck, Quinn had rushed forward with his fist, he threw it out breaking the solid glass container, and went to lift Jared's body up. The cut was incredibly deep on his neck, and just from holding him Quinn could tell.

There was no heartbeat, no Qi energy flowing in his body anymore, he was dead and there was nothing they could do about it.

"I'm sorry Quinn, I should have put him in a place where we could restrain him, then this would have never happened." Vincent said.

His eyes were heavy staring at Quinn's back holding onto the boy.

"It's not your fault, Vincent. We never knew Immortui would attempt to do this. If he had a dedicated follower doing his bidding, then why take the life, there was no need to, other than to get to me." Quinn answered.

The room had a moment of silence for Jared, both Hikel and Edvard didn't say anything, but standing up with Jared still in his hands Quinn knew he had to act, they didn't have a lot of time.

"Report everything that happened here to both Zinon and Logan. They need to be kept up to date with everything that's going on. Also tell them to note anything that is suspicious, a rise in deaths, any strange deaths, anything."

"And I'm sorry Vincent, I'm going to have to rely on you to try to spot something. You're a bit better at this than I am."

Vincent nodded and was already working away. Their enemy was only a single person, but it was a powerful god, and the only way they could get ahead of him or stop his plans was to use everybody.

Just as Immortui stated, Quinn couldn't be everywhere at once, so he needed to use his allies' help.

There were some major problems though, they knew Magnus was marked but that was all. It was possible that Magnus was able to mark others as well, just like he had done Jared, so there was no telling how many actually were marked.

On top of that, even though Immortui had been stuck in the other plane, he was still somehow able to mark those on this side. Laxmus and Magnus could be explained, maybe a connection was formed when they were first turned, one deeper compared to the others.

Something Immortui saw in them that he could exploit, but as for those after, he had no idea. So Quinn had to go on the theory that Immortui could still mark new

people as well, without physically being in this world, which made his job that much harder.

'If he goes after those closest to me, then that would be my family.' Quinn thought. 'Minny, Galen and Layla. All three of them are together, but not all the time. Minny still goes to school.'

'The safest thing to do would be to take her out of school, but would that be the best thing for her? She only just got back to school... my family only now just started enjoying their life again.'

Gritting his teeth, Quinn had to bear the pain, he felt like it was his fault that his family were unable to just enjoy their life.

'I have a plan... that should work.' Quinn thought. 'Let's see if he tries and targets Minny again.'

"I have a suggestion to make." Edvard interrupted Quinn's thoughts. "The girl from before, Hebe. I think she should be kept under watch as well. Her and Jared seemed to be good friends. I'm sure after she hears the news all sorts of emotions will be running through her."

"She will be an easy target to control and influence, and with her being in the school..."

Quinn understood where he was coming from, walking over he handed over Jared to Edvard.

"I will go and inform them... of what happened here, make sure his body is well kept, and there is a proper service for him." Quinn said.

Both of the girls had been waiting in the reception area of the tenth family castle, they hadn't left and they refused to until Jared had come back. Soon a shadow crawled across the floor, and rising from it was Quinn.

Minny had a big smile on her face as soon as she saw her father, but for Hebe it was different. She immediately couldn't see Jared, and took that as a bad sign and then, she spotted blood on the sleeve of Quinn's clothes.

"What... what happened, what happened to Jared!" Hebe got up from her seat and ran over.

"Jared was a good person, a good student, but someone was controlling him." Quinn answered. "That was why he attacked Minny, it wasn't Jared, but the one controlling him."

A deep lump was felt in Hebe's throat, and her eyes were tunnelling in on Quinn.

"Was... why are you using the word was?" Hebe asked.

"Because." Quinn looked at them both. "Jared is dead. The thing that was controlling him, it took over and killed him. I'm sorry, we were unable to stop it."

The horrible feeling that Hebe could feel, it exploded in that moment. For some reason, when Jared was taken away in front of her, on their way to school, she felt like it was quite possible the last time she was going to meet him.

When she had met him, a few moments ago, that thought had gone out of her mind for a moment, but now that it was a reality she didn't know how to deal with it,

"AHHHH!" Hebe screamed into the air, she continued to scream as tears came out of her face, and started to run right at Quinn.

She crashed into his body, it was a hard hit but he could take it. Then with the bottom of her fist she swung them repeatedly bashing it against Quinn's chest one after another, she was even using her vampire aura she was so stunned, not realising what she was doing.

If it was anyone else, perhaps the attacks might have hurt, but not for Quinn. He didn't say anything as he wanted her to let all of her anger out.

"Bring him back!! Bring him back!" Hebe shouted. "It's your fault... you took him away, it's your fault that he's dead. I thought you were meant to be some type of hero, someone who saved the vampire race, yet you couldn't even save one person!!!"

The screams, the shouts and the insults continued, until her hands eventually slowed down, they were just dragging along Quinn's chest now.

"I know you might not be in a state to listen to me right now." Quinn said. "And it might not be what you want to hear, but I wish to stop this from happening, to stop what happened to Jared and you, from happening to others, and due to the situation I need to say it."

Hebe continued to cry, her shoulders moving up and down so it was hard to tell if she was really listening or not.

"The dead can not come back." Quinn stated. "Once dead, they are meant to stay dead, and if anyone states otherwise, or even attempts to tell you that there is some way, then I want you to come to me immediately."

Hebe fell to her knees there and then. Of all the things to say to her, couldn't she even have the hope that he could come back.

"You're... so cruel." Hebe whispered.

In a world covered in red clouds and dusty skies, there was one that couldn't stop laughing in joy. He was excited for what was to come, and hadn't been this excited in a number of years.

"Oh Quinn, let's see how long you manage to last, and then when you finally give up, I'll be free from this place and... even if you never choose to break me free it won't matter anyway. I will come one way or another."

"Now, where to start?"

Chapter 2312: Good luck or Bad luck

Currently, Muka had been one of the vampires that was leading the investigation looking into those in the settlement that could have a marking. The problem was there was so much to go through.

There were the conflicts that would happen within the settlement, there was the family belonging to Magnus, all of those that had been in contact with Magnus, and to try to look out for everyone that was close to Quinn.

It was something that needed a large force to act and go through, but who could they trust? Even hand picking people Muka had to make sure that none of them were marked and it was a hard process.

She had first gone to some of the new vampire knights in the 9th family. Edvard, although an original, had stepped down as leader of the family leaving it all to Muka. He had always thought she was a better fit anyway, and he wanted to help Quinn more by being right by his side.

The knights should have had little contact with Magnus, but just in case an intense questioning period had begun. Muka was using her influence powers to ask them a series of questions.

Then based on those questions she would decide whether they could be trusted or not, and they had passed, but a team of three was still an incredibly small team.

A 3D projection was being displayed to Muka in her castle. It was several lists, and she had no clue where to start.

'Quinn trusts me to do this, based on my inquisitive mind, and how I helped him out before... but stopping something before it even happened, is a really hard thing to do.'

Muka started to just wander with her finger, she was dragging it down and thought to just stop somewhere, maybe her ability would kick in and give her some sort of luck.

"My lady!" one of the vampire knights had burst into the room, her name was Leona, another female vampire, who had her hair strangely dyed blue, and split into two ponytails. "We have found one with a marking, the marking that you are talking about."

"That was fast." Muka was surprised.

According to the information she had received, they were able to hide their markings, so unless a person was showing it off or using it, then It shouldn't be seen.

'Maybe, my good luck is working out, after all.' She thought to herself.

"Where were they discovered, what were they doing, and who are they?" Muka asked.

Leona bowed, before giving her report.

"Yes ma'am. We found out that Magnus was frequently visiting the cells. We were able to get this information fast since the 9th family is also in charge of the locking systems to the underground cells.

"We then checked all of the locked up prisoners, and have found a few with the markings you speak of."

"A few!"

At first, Muka thought the news of a marking was a good thing, but now hearing that there was more than one, it was worrying her for some reason. She had this tingling feeling in the back of her head.

Regardless, she had decided to contact Quinn and inform him of what they had found, it was what he had ordered after all.

"That's great work Muka, I'll be there straight away and meet you there." Quinn replied.

This tingling feeling wouldn't go away from Muka though, and she went back to look at the holograph of lists she had up. She went ahead and looked at where her finger had landed, and could see it was on a particular name.

"Quinn will be able to deal with whatever is happening in the cells himself." Muka said as she wafted the screen away. "I need to check this out instead."

The underground network for vampires had been recreated, including that of the special tombs for the families, and just like before the ninth family were in charge of putting combination locks in the tunnels.

Of course, not every society was perfect, no matter how good one's life was. There were just people who did bad things.

Which was why, the main prison for vampires had also been created underground at the back of the settlement. It wasn't located directly in the settlement; it was located behind it, away from others.

With Quinn's shadow travel he was able to get through everything with relative ease, and he was now walking through the cells. They were different from other

cells. The criminals were all trapped behind special glass, similar to the one Jared was trapped behind that was made by Vincent.

In front of the glass, there was also a wall of pure energy powered by beast crystals, Quinn could feel it.

Having entered through unconventional means, several vampires were rushing towards him with their weapons drawn, but as soon as they saw who it was they put their weapons down and bowed down.

"Sir Quinn!" The front of the small defence squad said. "I didn't realise that you would be inside already. Vampire Knight Leona has advised that no one was to go close to the subjects, including us. Everyone has been keeping an eye on one another to not go close... it's the last two cells on the right."

"Stay here." Quinn ordered and quickly ran to the cells and could see them standing there. They certainly did have the mark, it was clear on both of them, lighting up on their heads.

'They are not in the same state as Jared... it looks like they are in control but the marking is just lighting up on their head.'

Looking inside the cells closer, Quinn could see that there was blood inside, but the vampires were the only ones in their own cells, so it meant that the blood could have only come from themselves.

"Immortui, what game are you playing, can you hear me?" Quinn asked.

The two in the cell looked confused, as they just stared back at Quinn. Something didn't feel right, the markings on their heads now of all times, and the blood in their cells. Why here, why chose prisoners that were locked up to mark, what exactly could they do?

To find out, he would need to do more questioning.

Muka had finally arrived at where she wanted to be, it was a different location from Quinn. Rather than to the prison, she instead stood in front of what seemingly seemed like a normal house.

She went up to the door and gave it a knock a couple of times. She then tried to knock louder when there was no answer.

"Hello!" Muka stated. "Is anybody inside?"

There was still no answer, but it was the middle of the day, so it was quite common for everyone to be out, but due to the annoying feeling she could feel, Muka decided to push the door handle down.

To her surprise it was unlocked. She let herself into the house, and so far all was normal, but turning her head right she could see that the kitchen was a complete mess. The table had been destroyed, broken into pieces, and it was the same for some of the chairs.

That's when she could see it as well, there was blood on the ground.

"Wait, I can hear something."

Listening, Muka was hearing very faint groans, quickly she rushed to where the sound was coming from, in the living room, she could see a beaten and bloody woman. Her arms were cut quite badly but she would survive this,

"It's going to be okay, I promise, here drink this." Muka said, giving the woman a flask.

She gulped the blood down, and as blood did, it started to work its magic.

"Who did this to you?" Muka asked.

"I... I don't know. I've never seen them before... I just know they were male." The woman answered, still relatively weak.

"Please... they took my husband, I don't know why, he tried fighting back, but they were too strong and they took my husband." The woman continued.

The annoying feeling, Muka's heart was starting to race, because for once she didn't want her good luck to be right.

"Your husband's name, is it Ronkin?" Muka asked.

Chapter 2313: A way to Mark

When it came to making a list of those Quinn was close to, the list was a rather long one. It was because even though they might not be those very close to him, there were still those with a connection.

In the end, the list that had been made, was made with the idea of those who Quinn would fight for and protect. The problem again was, that was a pretty broad answer, because he would fight for the whole of earth and the vampires, he had done that before and would do so again.

So, the list was done by order of relation to Quinn. Even Muka's name was on there. When scrolling with her finger, it had landed on Ronkin.

A vampire who was a simple guard, but had been promoted onto one of the expedition teams. After all of the trouble with war and such though, he had been asked to become a guard once again and that was his current job.

While a guard, he had worked closely with Quinn, and him along with another vampire named Jeouk had done a lot in the war, such as guiding the shadow beasts to do battle.

When asking the question to the woman on the floor, she already knew the answer. The woman nodded her head, confirming that it was Ronkin that had been taken.

'Taken... not killed?' Muka thought. 'What's the reason for that, and for those at the prison to appear now as well. Unless, is it all a distraction.'

A lot of information was given out at the ceremony. When everyone came together to thank all those that had died and fought in the war, there was a special mention for those that had worked extra hard, such as Ronkin and Jeouk.

It was possible that they considered Ronkin a lot closer to Quinn because of that.

"I have to inform Quinn, immediately!" Muka said, as she went and picked up the woman off the ground. "I'll transport you to the ninth castle, if you stay there you should be fine."

"Wait!" the woman called out. "Are we being targeted, is my family being targeted? If that's the case my son... he goes to Roland academy, we have to get him out of there!"

"If your son is at the school, I think that might be one of the safest places out there." Muka smiled, reassuring her.

Minny had gone to school the next day, after she had been informed of the big event. She wanted to talk to Hebe, try to cheer her up, but it looked impossible. In

the end, Minny was told she had to go straight home anyway, so she was unable to do anything.

Although Minny was saddened by Jared's death, it wasn't too significant for her. She hardly knew Jared, and not only that, but due to her situation, she had become quite accustomed to people that she likes disappearing from her life, it wouldn't have been the first time.

She wanted to explain that the feeling would eventually go away, but many would assume Minny had no idea what she was talking about due to her age, even though she probably knew about loss more than most.

When coming to school, the next day there was quite a change. For one, there were guards from multiple different families standing around the entire area. The students and the parents weren't sure what it was for, but a statement came out that they were just protecting the future generation, and there had been a report of beasts in the area.

Since what happened the time before with beasts, the vampires bought the lie. If they learned the truth, then things just would be too hectic.

Looking around though, Minny was trying to see if Hebe had appeared, she wouldn't be surprised if she took the day off.

When entering the classroom, the changes didn't stop there though, in Minny's classroom, there were two vampire guards at the back, and they were vampire knights as well. Although the other classrooms did have guards, none of them were knights.

"Do you think they put the knights in this class because of Minny?" Tobi asked.

"That would be my guess." Abby replied. "I mean, she got to be one of the most important people, right."

Walking into the classroom was Miss Bedford, and when she entered her feet were a bit wobbly, and finally getting to the front, she took a deep stare at all of the students without saying a word.

"What's wrong with Miss Bedford today?" Abby whispered.

"I'm not sure, maybe she's just nervous because of all the guards and the situation." Tobi replied.

It was clear to all of the students that something was going on.

Leona had eventually appeared at the underground cells and rushed to where Quinn was. Muka had informed her that she wouldn't be going, so it was her job to look after and do as Quinn asked.

Just seeing the great leader though, her heart was beating too fast.

"Open one of the cells." Quinn ordered. "I need to go inside and speak to them, and figure out what is going on."

When the glass to the cell door opened, some would think that the prisoner would try to escape, but when they saw that Quinn was entering, all of those ideas went out of the window.

"Sir!" The prisoner said, bowing his head down.

The glass panel went up from the ground locking the two of them in. The prisoner was respectful to Quinn. Even if they were in here due to crimes, or for violence against another vampire, they all still respected him, their current leader who was like a king to them.

"I need you... to answer a few questions." Quinn asked. "Did Magnus come visit you at any point and time, and how did you get that marking on your head?"

The man lifting his head looked at Quinn, he was a bit nervous to answer. The influence skill wasn't being used just yet, but he knew that it could, and would force him to spill everything.

"I... have never met with Magnus before." The man answered.

If this was true, then it would mean that Immortui had marked them another way. It was important they knew how, otherwise they would have to suspect that anyone could become a dedicated follower of his.

"The marking... it appeared after I woke up." The man answered.

Something wasn't quite right, for one his heart beat, it was starting to beat faster and even the man's pupils were darting around the room, trying to look everywhere but directly at him.

'If he knows I can use the influence skill, why would he lie about this, but judging from this reaction, he didn't lie about meeting Magnus.'

"The blood." Quinn said. "It's quite recent, and fresh, whose is it, why is it here?"

The sound of the man's heart beating louder was heard again until it finally calmed down with a loud exhale of air.

"I'm sorry sir... I was embarrassed to tell you." The man stated. "It's true, the marking appeared after I woke up, but there was something that happened before I woke up. I have been in these cells for a while now... and I have lived a relatively long life. So I decided that it was best if I just ended it."

"I attempted to slit my own neck, the blood on the ground is my own. When I woke up though, my neck... it was healed and the marking on my forehead was there."

Quinn's eyes widened as he came to a realisation.

'Is that it, is that how Immortui can mark people. Those that are close to death, he can save and make them dedicated followers. If that's the case, then those followers could bring even more followers in as well.'

'Knowing the condition though, we can narrow down the source, at least in the vampire settlement where the population is low.'

"Quinn!" Leona shouted. "I just received a report!"

She stood on the other side of the cell door, panicked.

"It's about a vampire named Ronkin, he was missing, but it looks like he's been found."

Chapter 2314: Pick 1

Ronkin, although not one of Quinn's closest friends, did have a lot of fond memories with him. The times the two were just walking around the city as guards were some of his best moments.

To top it all off, he was a family man, he had a wife and a child. There was no reason for him to be involved in this.

'Ronkin... he's been brought into all of this mess, because of me.' Quinn thought.
'What's happened to him.'

"What do you mean, he was missing and now he's been found?" Quinn asked, confused he was unable to think straight. He knew Immortui was going to act, but this fast, they were unable to prepare for any of this.

"Yes, Ronkin was taken from his home, Muka was the one that found out about this, and now he has been found again, or more so he is in the public eye. He is being held hostage by a particular vampire standing on top of a manor." Leona explained.

There was more she wanted to say, but Quinn was already on the move, that was until he could hear a sinister laugh coming from the man in the prison cell.

"Have you figured out my powers yet?" A deep distorted voice came out from the prisoner.

It shook the body when one heard it, to the point where Leona almost fell to the ground.

"Have you now figured out what I can do?" Immortui stated. "This is just a small taste, and the longer this goes on and you are indecisive, the more hardships you will face, and the more you will lose."

Quinn decided that it was best to ignore him for now, the two markings in the prison, the whole thing was just to distract him.

Muka was the one that had been running around everywhere looking for Ronkin, it turned out that she didn't need to go far, because a lot of vampires knew where he was. There was a commotion going on.

Around one of the manors where all vampires could live now, there was a vampire standing on top of the house. He wasn't anyone of any significance, but he did have a marking on his head and on one of his hands. He was holding Ronkin right by his neck.

Ronkin's legs were dangling on the roof tiles, he had cuts all over his body and just like his wife, he was badly beaten with his arms most likely broken with the way they weren't moving.

His eyes were still alive and showed plenty of resistance, but the rest of his body was doing nothing.

"Don't think of getting any closer!" the vampire said out loud to the public and the guards in the area. "If you do, I'll kill both of them."

This was something that had completely been overlooked, because in the man's other hand, there was another hostage, and it wasn't just any hostage, but a child that looked to be around four years of age, a female girl.

'That girl, I don't recognise her either, she doesn't have any relation to Quinn... does she?' Muka thought. 'So why take her?'

"What do you want, why do you have the need to have hostages!" Muka shouted as she walked forward.

"Hostages?" the man replied. "No, these aren't hostages. When you have hostages usually you demand something. I am not asking for my freedom, or anything like that, these two here are a part of my game."

A game with people's lives, Muka once again wasn't liking the feeling of all of this. It didn't take long for Quinn to arrive at the scene, and when he did, Leona popped out of his shadow travel with him this time.

Immediately he looked up and could feel the energy. There was one who had been marked by Immortui, but not just that, Ronkin was being held in one hand while a child in the other.

'Crap, I didn't know there was a child involved in this as well, what is going on, what is happening right now.'

"Ah, so you have finally come." The man said, the voice was deep, similar to Immortui's but it wasn't as distorted as before, nor did the power flowing through the person seem to be as strong.

"I have been waiting for you Quinn." The man said. "It feels like we were just talking seconds ago, were we not? Anyway, I don't think I need to say much, but if you attempt to get any closer, then the lives of these two will be lost in my hands."

"I know you're fast, but I won't even let you get close to me, or I will act. You already failed to save one life, will it now be three?"

This was hard for Quinn, because he knew that in some way he had already failed, because Ronkin and this child could have already been killed, yet he had decided not to.

"I have information on the suspect." Muka said, having received a telepathic message. "They stated that the vampire was part of one of the squads that recently fought in the war. There were no signs of him connecting with Magnus that we know of."

From the recent information that Quinn had obtained, it meant one of two things. This man might have recently been close to death, or the more scarier possibility is that during the war, when he was on the verge of death, Immortui had marked him.

If that happened, then how many were marked, there were a lot of vampires that had participated in the war.

"Quinn!" The man yelled. "As I said to the people before you, I have a sort of game to play with you, and you will be the player, and you will be the only player.

"In my right hand, I hold onto your dear friend. He was on guard duty with you for a long time, and I'm sure the two of you have shared many stories together. He also aided in the war by using some of your shadow beasts back then.

"He also holds his family extremely dear to him, and they rely on him a lot. Without him, I don't know how they would cope."

Moving Ronkin, he placed him closer to the tiles of the roof, and then lifted up the girl in the air.

"This girl is a vampire in the vampire settlement, she is perhaps the complete opposite to Ronkin. She has no relation to you whatsoever. Her family took part in the war but her father had died and her mother was already dead, leaving her completely on her own, being looked after by the castle vampires. Meanwhile, she is even too young to go to Roland academy. So she has yet to make friends, one could even say that she hasn't started to live her life yet.

"Now out of these two, it's up to you to decide who to save Quinn. I will kill one, and let the other go, but it's all up to you."

All of the onlooking vampires had disgusted looks on their faces. What situation was this, who could be so cruel to just force people to play in such a game, and eventually they started to speak among each other as to what the best choice was.

"He has to pick the girl." One of them said. "The girl is so young, she hasn't lived her life yet."

"I agree, but Quinn knows the other man, and it's not like the man doesn't have a family. The little girl has already lost everyone in her family... I hate to say it, but if she were to disappear, then it's not like anyone would care."

The arguments between the people were intense, so much so that it even felt like a fight was going to break out between them, meanwhile the man just stood there laughing to himself.

What they all agreed on though, was they wouldn't want to be in Quinn's situation.

"Alright, you've taken long enough, you have 30 seconds to give an answer, or they both die."

Chapter 2315: Failed, or succeeded?

The pressure was mounting on Quinn to make a decision, but it was one even if he had a large amount of time, he didn't think it would make it any easier.

"Oh no, quick he has to pick one, it has to be the child." One called out.

"Either one he chooses, we have to stay behind Quinn. It's one of his friends for f*ck sake! We can't condemn him for any decision he makes."

A lot of vampires agreed with this thought, and turned to look at Quinn. A shadow was rising around him, covering his body, his back and the ground beneath him as well.

"This is my last warning." The man, who was being controlled by Immortui said.
"If you try to attempt anything, my hands will snap their necks!"

Hearing those words, the shadow disappeared from Quinn, and he looked straight into Ronkin's eyes. His face was the only thing he seemed to have some control over, and that's when he smiled.

'It's okay Quinn... pick the girl.' Ronkin thought in his mind, hoping that his message would get through somehow. 'I'm in this situation in the first place, because I wasn't strong enough to protect my family, but I know that with you looking out for them, that they will be safe, so please, don't save me, and pick the girl!'

Although Quinn wasn't able to hear the thoughts of Ronkin, the smile told him everything, he was happy if he wasn't the one that was picked.

'You think that makes the decision any easier... but it just makes it harder.' Quinn thought to himself. 'You are a great person Ronkin.'

"Times up!" The man said. "What's your answer?"

Quinn clenched both of his fists, they were shaking with his head down to the ground. Lifting it up, his eyes were glowing red.

"I chose... I chose to save both of them!" Quinn shouted out loud.

The man was stunned, because even though Quinn had yelled these words with such determination he was still standing there, not making any movement or action, he had somewhat expected for Quinn to dart right towards him.

From the crowd's point of view as they looked up at the man, they saw two strikes of red aura, and the next moment both of the man's arms fell off, dropping the girl and Ronkin. Turning around, to see who was there, the man could see Quinn right

behind him, his hands glowing red and swinging his arm he had slashed his head off.

It went up in the air before bouncing on the roof and falling to the ground.

Ronkin, who was on the roof, was looking at the Quinn here, he then turned his head to look towards the crowd and could still see a Quinn there as well.

'There are two Quinns?' Ronkin thought confused.

Soon, the Quinn that was still on the ground, started to turn into nothing but shadows as it disappeared.

'My plan... it worked, I managed to save both of them.' Quinn thought to himself.

At the time, when the controlled vampire stated that he only had 30 seconds to act, Quinn had covered his body in shadows. He hadn't moved forward and he took a risk that Immortui wouldn't act unless he tried to attack.

During that time, Quinn had created a shadow clone of himself, while he himself had entered his shadow travel. Disguising himself while the focus was still on him, the shadow travel took the real Quinn elsewhere.

He didn't have a lot of time, but there were a couple of things that he could do. One of them was putting on his god slayer tier boots. They had the ability of flight but not only that, but silent steps as well.

Holding his breath, and hiding his energy deep within, the real Quinn was able to easily get behind the controlled vampire, and slice both of his arms off before he noticed, and just before he could do or think of doing anything else, he had sliced off his head as well.

Muka, along with Leona, had quickly both gotten on top of the rooftop, and were checking the little vampire's condition while Quinn was kneeling by Ronkin's side.

"I have to admit, I was ready to die back there." Ronkin said. "Looks like I owe you a drink."

"I think, I might owe you one for putting you through all of this." Quinn replied.

The situation seemed to be over for now, at least that was what Quinn had thought, until he could hear the deep, distorted laughter coming from one of those in the crowd. Having a look, it was another man from the crowd, an older looking vampire this time, but one that had the same marking on his hand.

"Hahaha, so you chose to save both and were successful, is that how you see it?" The voice was clearly coming from Immortui rather than the old man.

"Yet, in doing so, didn't a vampire of the settlement die." The old man walked over to the head on the ground and lifted him up by his hair. "You see this person, he was a good vampire. One that fought for the settlement in the war, believing that he could help, and protect his family. He had nearly died, had gone through death once but there was a strong sense of hope which kept him alive.

"He didn't know how, but he believed it was a miracle, and would do anything he could to spend time with his family, having been given this second chance.

"After managing to survive all of that, he comes back, and then gets his head sliced off by you Quinn. You directly killed him with your own hands. That's four lives already that you failed to save."

The realisation had come to Quinn, he had been so focused, so determined on protecting Ronkin and the girl, that he had acted out more so than he should have. It wasn't the vampire's fault that he was being controlled.

There was also something else in what Immortui had said, 4 lives? Shouldn't it have been two. It was then, the memory of the two marked at the prison, because he had rushed out, he hadn't given any orders in what to do with the two others.

Quickly, Quinn's shadow went over him, his armour set had suddenly changed.

[Nitro accelerate]

In a blink, Quinn was by the old man's side, and grabbing his arms, he had crushed them to the point where they were unable to be used again.

The crowd screamed, unsure of what was going on, then before he could do anything else, Quinn had immobilised his legs, kicking them with the right amount of force, breaking them as well. He placed the old man on the floor, while leaving his leg on top of his chest to keep him still.

"Muka, this old man, he needs to be immobilised, make sure you do whatever you can, so he won't kill himself!" Quinn ordered.

After Stark's death, the armour had been obtained by MInny and she had given it back to her father. Using his powers, he had travelled at full speed to stop the old man from doing anything.

He wasn't going to let another person die, at least not in front of him.

The old man was still possessed by Immortui and looked at Quinn with a big grin on his face.

"You seem to be quite startled, the moves you are making, all of them are desperate. I can tell." The man stated. "I had the chance to kill them both, I had the chance to kill many vampires if I wished.

"Because I want you to decide Quinn, have you made up your mind yet."

Quinn looked the man directly in the eyes.

"I already gave you my decision. I know, even more will die with you free!" Quinn exclaimed.

"Very well." The old man said. "In the end, all of this was just a big distraction from my real target."

Chapter 2316: Not Worried

Immortui had disappeared from controlling the old man, but it left Quinn with a lot to think about. He allowed for Muka and her family to clear the area, make a story up for the public to believe for now.

It was a hard thing to decide, did they make the settlement aware of what was happening, or would doing so cause more panic. For now, Quinn decided against letting everyone know.

'How do I even go forward from this situation?' Quinn thought to himself. 'Every person who gets marked, they not only can affect those around them, but at the same time, they can just kill themselves at the end of the day, losing one more life in this settlement.'

There was also one more thing, the last words of the old man, all of this was a distraction, did it mean he had a bigger target than Ronkin, or just someone bigger in general.

"Muka!" Quinn called out and she appeared by his side in an instant. "I know you're busy and spread thin, so I want you to get some help from Edvard and Hikel. Get a list of all of those that took part in the war.

"Currently, every single one of them is a suspect."

Quinn had to make this decision, they were all the most likely to have come close to death on the battlefield, giving Immortui a chance to mark them.

"Once you find out who they are, then see where they currently are, and cross reference them with a list of those closest to me. Get the leaders to attempt to protect them, I will be going over every single one that's close to me."

The order was heard loud and clear.

The lessons in the classroom continued, and there was a strange atmosphere due to all of the guards. None of the kids were aware of what was happening, and they had tried their best to focus on their lessons, but other than the vampires standing in the back, there was also something incredibly strange with the teacher.

"Is it just me, or does Miss Bedford look uncomfortable in that skirt she's wearing, it's almost as if she's forgotten how to walk?" Toni whispered.

"Her explanations are really hard to understand as well, it seems like today she's just reading straight from the book." Abby commented.

All of the kids including Minny felt this way.

Eventually, lunch time had arrived, and even when they were outside in the playground, all of the guards from all of the classrooms had come out, watching their every move. There were 3 classes per grade and 5 grades in total. Each of the classes had at least two guards in their classroom.

So they were being protected by thirty or so vampires. It seemed a bit much honestly, especially since the settlement was no longer meant to have enemies.

When going back to their classes, the awkward lessons continued, as Miss Bedford continued to read from the textbooks.

Hikel and Edvard were doing as ordered, and they were going through all of those who had taken part in the war. It didn't take long as they had systems for everything, and Vincent, using his machines, was able to cross reference everything.

The two of them had yet to act, and were in Vincent's lab as they looked at all of the information.

"Alright, so these are all of those that fought in the war, and now what I'll do is create a map, so we can see all of their known locations. Of course this won't be entirely accurate. I can only put a pin on where their post is meant to be at this point and time, but it is possible they wouldn't be there." Vincent explained.

If a person was a guard, it would be harder to pinpoint them since they would cover a certain area and would move within that area. If they owned a stall then a small dot would appear there if it was their working hours, but of course they could have left the stall and the system would be unable to account for that.

The screen popped up, and several marks could be seen all over the place. There were multiple dots, over a 1000 of them, since so many vampires had taken part in the war. With all of these being potential markings they knew it was going to be a mammoth of a task.

"Wait, right there!" Edvard pointed. "Look, it seems like there is a concentrated amount, at one specific location, don't you think that's a little suspicious. If they were at the castle or something it would make sense but that's away from the castles."

Vincent zoomed in, trying to figure out what that place was.

"It's Roland Academy."

Vincent quickly brought up a file.

"It says that an order was sent out by Muka, to assign guards to the school, but that order went through a vampire named Barry Wheels. Another one who took part in

the war. He assigned all of the vampires that are on guard duty and every single one of them took part in the war."

It wasn't so unusual, as most vampires capable of fighting would have taken part in the war anyway. So it seemed like it might just be a coincidence, but all of them had the same thought in their head, it was best they inform Quinn of this, and check out that place first because his daughter was there.

In all of the other classrooms, something strange had happened at the exact same time. The guards for the most part just stood at the back, not saying a word and not moving during the whole lesson, but in every single one of the classrooms, the guards started to move.

They said nothing to the teacher or to the students as they left through the back door, and went into the hallway. The teacher's thought nothing of it and thought that it was maybe just them being called on duty, and continued to look after the kids in their classroom.

That was because they were unaware that the same thing was happening everywhere else, and all of the guards were heading to one room in particular.

In Minny's class the lesson seemed somewhat uninteresting today, perhaps because of the teacher, so she started to day dream away as she usually would. In her head she was imagining winning a jackpot of juice boxes and drinking so much of them that she turned into a balloon and floated up to the sky.

The simple thought of this brought a large smile on her face. Her and everyone else though was unaware that on the two vampires at the back of the class, the vampire knights, the front of their hands, a marking started to glow.

Both of them at the same time started to move from their position, and walked through the space in between the students' desks. The kids wondered where they were going, but didn't say much.

Both of their eyes, locked on one target and one target only.

Finding a vampire that could use the telepathic ability, the others had contacted Quinn straight away, informing him of what they had found out.

"I see, so you believe that Immortui is going after Minny again." Quinn replied.
"Then, I wouldn't worry so much. I thought that this might happen and I prepared for it. If she's in school, then she's probably in one of the safest places possible."

The vampires had no idea what Quinn meant by this.

Back in the classroom, the guards had gotten close to Minny, one of them went to reach with their hand out, when suddenly, a fist had landed right in the man's face.

The bones cracked complete as his whole body was sent flying back and crashing into the wall.

The other vampire was too slow to react, as he had already been grabbed by the head and slammed into the ground.

"Whoaaaa! What is happening!" Toby said, jumping out of his seat, because the floor was cracked beneath him. "Did... did Miss Bedford just kill the two guards."

Miss Bedford had jumped from her position, attacking the two guards, before they could even get close to Minny. She then stood up by her desk and looked outside, seeing the others coming close.

"With me around, no one will lay a finger on her." She said, and on her face, the others could see it started to crumble. As if small pieces of mud were dropping down onto the floor.

When it finally fell, another face was in its place, and the body of the person started to change as well.

"Uncle Peter!" Minny called out.

Chapter 2317: Stop Immortui

The kids in the room weren't so shocked that the guards had been defeated, or that they were attempting to go after Minny like the situation looked. What they were most surprised about was Miss Bedford.

Tobi, who wasn't too far from the situation, stared at her muscular legs, the skirt that she was still wearing and her sunken and defined face.

"Mr... Bedford?" He blurted out confused.

They were all stunned that Miss Bedford had suddenly turned into a man, but not only that, this person looked nothing like her.

"Did MIss Bedford just transform, is this some type of super power?"

"That's cool, she can be both man and woman, like a man wom... wait what, woman, has the word man in already?" Another commented.

Some were even impressed by her strength as they looked at the wall, where one of the guards had been hit into, and the ground that was heavily dented and cracked. These weren't just any vampires, they were vampire knights that Peter had dealt with in a single hit. He had long surpassed the strength of a vampire knight.

"What are you doing here Uncle Peter, why did you attack them?" Minny asked.

Peter readjusted his skirt again. It felt really uncomfortable on him. A master of disguise that had the transformation ability, and could use the mud mask to transform others as well, his soul weapon.

"Those two guards that were sent here to protect you, they were coming to you. My guess is they were going to attack you." Peter explained. "Your father was worried about you, so he came up with a back up plan, and that was for me to stay in school at all times.

"It was a bit short notice, and the only one we could confirm that hadn't joined the war and was willing to work with us was Miss Bedford."

The other children who overheard this thought that it might be the case. The guards weren't there to protect them but to protect Minny, but why had they turned and were going against her. All they could do was think about the cartoon and TV shows they would watch.

"Oh! Is this some sort of uprising? Has Quinn Talen been betrayed and now someone is trying to take over the vampire settlement?" Tobi said with stars in his eyes.

"Erghh teacher!" Abby called out. "I'm not sure if those two that were in the classroom are the only ones that are after Minny."

Abby pointed through the large glass windows, on the inside of the school, and they could see several guards making their way to where they were.

"Mister, are they here to protect Minny or attack Minny?" another asked.

"Everyone, get to the other side of the classroom!" Peter shouted.

The kids listened and started to shout, while at the same time, Peter ran forward in front of Minny and her friends. He let out his power as he started to gather celestial energy. The tables and chairs were pushed to the side crashing into the blackboard and into the wall at the other end of the room.

The head tail on his head had split into two and before he knew it, crashing through the window, breaking the glass, were several blood aura swipes. They all came raining down towards Peter but his head tails moved fast, swiping and hitting all of them.

As each head tail slashed a blood swipe, it burst into nothing but red particles. Following up with the attacks, two of the vampires had attempted to jump through the window.

The strange yellow energy that Peter was able to control around his fists more and more. The energy had gathered around both of them. Throwing out both of his fists in the air and pulling back like a loaded shotgun the energy blasts went off hitting both of the vampires right in the chest and sending them flying back out of the classroom.

"Even with their crappy marking powering them, none of these are hard to deal with." Peter exclaimed.

The other guards were standing on the other side of the broken window, from the hallway looking in. They stood there strangely in place, making the kids nervous. They could tell from the training they had done, if Peter wasn't there to stop the blood swipes, the whole classroom would have been a blood bath.

"You are quite strong." One of the marked guards said. "I have no doubt that you can beat all of these here, but can you do so while protecting every single one of those kids?"

Peter smiled at the question and even started to chuckle.

"My job was already done, the plan was never for me to beat up whatever was coming after Minny." Peter said.

Behind Minny, a figure started to rise up from her shadow.

"Maybe I can't deal with all of you guys at once, because that's not how I fight, but he definitely can."

Right behind Minny, Quinn had appeared, and raising his hands, several blood bullets were in the air, hovering. Moving his hands forward, all of the blood bullets went out, hitting the guards in their knees and arms. The bullets went right through them and they instantly fell to the ground.

In one attack, the threat was over.

"That's Quinn Talen, I can't believe he's at our school!"

"That's Minny's dad, I saw him before, but now that we know who he is, it's like a different thing altogether, and he's so handsome." Some of the kids commented.

With one leap Quinn had jumped through the window and landed in the pile of fallen guards, they were still rolling about on the floor.

Swiping his hand across his face, a shadow flickered, and now the god slayer tier Oni mask was on.

[Lightning attribute has been selected.]

Quinn placed both of his hands on the ground.

[Blood shock]

The red lighting went out through the ground in all directions, as if it was searching for something to attack. It finally latched onto the bodies and started to electrify them with blood powers, making sure each one of them was unable to move.

"Now... that has been dealt with." Quinn said, removing the mask from his face.

After the attack had been stopped, Muka and the others had soon arrived, and took all of the guards in as captives. Unfortunately, Peter had been a little too rough on two of the guards he had initially attacked, and they had lost their lives.

The settlement, as well as Quinn, were all on high alert for a while. They were waiting for Immortui's next move, expecting him to continue his rampage, but after a few hours nothing had occurred.

They felt like they could breathe for a moment, and once again a meeting was taking place. This time, Muka, Edvard, Hikel, and Vincent were at the table along with Quinn.

"Do you think he has given up?" Hikel asked.

"I highly doubt that. He's probably just planning his next scheme. After failing to take Minny's life two times, I think he won't try a third, she is heavily protected." Vincent replied.

"That's what I find a bit strange about all of this." Quinn said. "I talked to Peter, and the strength of those that have been marked, aren't strong at all. It's as if Immortui is only giving them enough celestial energy so he can control and speak through them, rather than making them trained fighters."

"You're right." Edvard said. "But wouldn't that make sense. Someone like Magnus who is his follower, it would be better to give him more power as he is already strong."

"Right." Quinn replied. "Honestly, I think if the level of the attacks today were to go after Minny, Layla or Peter, they all would have been able to handle themselves with ease. To give them trouble, they would need someone like Magnus, so where is he?"

There had still been next to no reports on Magnus, but one thing they could confirm was that he wasn't at the vampire settlement.

"Do you really think having a dedicated follower as strong as him doing nothing would make sense. I worry." Quinn said.

"What... are you worried about?" Vincent asked.

"It's about what Immortui said before, about the whole thing being a distraction, it was just one after the other, the prison cell, Ronkin, and the school. What if... this whole game that he has me in, is a whole big distraction while Magnus is off doing something else?

"That's what I'm worried about, and with no clue where Magnus is, or what Immortui wants to do, we're stuck."

Little did they know, Magnus had safely arrived on Earth.

Chapter 2318: The Target?

Earth had become a better place compared to before, it actually had somewhat improved after Jack Truedream had come to rule. That was because he had invested a lot of his earned wealth, materials that had been gathered from other planets, and more to Earth.

In the original Dalki war, a lot of land mass had been destroyed through the initial attacks, but using land mass from other planets, they had restored a lot of land on earth, and more and more started to move there.

On top of that, due to Jim and Jack working together, it meant that vampires as well as humans lived on the same planet. It was strange in a way, the peace that Quinn wished to create did happen, even if they didn't remember him.

It was only their actions that led to most of their downfall and why Quinn had decided to get involved.

However, that didn't mean there weren't still problems that arose between vampires and humans.

On Earth, on a busy street in the city, a man in a suit was running as fast as he could. He was pushing through crowds not caring for who he bumped into. He was relatively strong because those he did hit on his way would get knocked over, not slowing his speed down at all.

This was because he was a vampire. Blood was dripping from his mouth and part of it was on his shirt and tie, as he ran he would look behind him a few times.

'Damn it, I can't see her, but I'm sure... she has to still be following me.'

Straight up ahead, a group of people with weapons and armour on their body were in front. It was quite clear they were Travelers and wouldn't be pushed so easily even if he did run head on into them.

Because of this, he decided to take a left turn down an alleyway, he didn't know where he was going and just continued to run, until from above a figure dropped down right in front of him.

"Stop running away or it will only add to your crimes." The woman stated. "You are under arrest for taking blood from a human without their consent."

The vampire went to turn around, but quickly, running to the wall, the woman jumped off it, launching straight at the vampire and tackling him to the ground.

The vampire attempted to swipe his red long claws at the female, but she simply pushed the hand away. In the struggle, the vampire managed to wiggle his way out and was up on his feet.

He knew he couldn't run away, this woman was faster than him.

"Why are you doing this!" The man shouted. "We are the same, both of us are vampires, so why are you punishing me for something that is only natural and in our nature!"

"The Vampire Corps unit is responsible for all cases related to that of vampires. There are thousands of other vampires who are in the same situation as you, and they manage to control themselves. Blood supply is plenty, there was no reason to do what you did."

The man desperately ran forward, swinging his arm, but the woman was able to get in close and lift her leg high, kicking him right in the chin. She knocked his head back and jumped in the air, with the same leg she swung it down, hitting him straight to the ground knocking him out.

"And you're wrong, the two of us are not the same." She said.

A moment later, and three more vampires appeared where the two were, a blonde haired man with nearly swept back hair, and one other female and male vampire with short and long black hair.

"Captain Jessica, you can't just go out and run on your own like that, what if this vampire was part of a group. You know we need to move as a unit." Galanar said.

The three that had arrived were all part of the Vampire Corps unit. Compared to the past, their roles had evolved to be more integrated with human life. On top of being a military force to be used to defend Earth and other cities.

They also were now a force that captured vampires that committed crimes. Jessica was a little lost after splitting from Quinn, not knowing where to go.

She had attempted to become a Traveller but things seemed quite boring after the journeys she had, so instead she had joined the Vampire Corps under Andy's recommendation. She hadn't taken part in the war.

Many of the Vampire Corps didn't as it was believed that Earth needed some level of protection regardless of what was to happen. So not much had changed in her life in terms of forgetting about Quinn.

Apart from the fact that she was now a captain of her own little investigation group.

"It all worked out in the end didn't it? You always complain but it always works out, and besides I feel stronger when there's a larger group." Jessica replied, feeling her bicep.

"Well you know why I worry don't you?" Galanar said, bushing his blonde hair back with his hand, and titling his eyebrows while trying to squint slightly to make his face a bit more handsome.

"It's because I worry about my future wife." Galanar sprinted forward, to make sure Jessica could get a good look, but as soon as he did Jessica pushed both her arms out pushing him back.

"What did I tell you about getting so close to me!" Jesscia said. "Do you want me to write you up!"

"Ah, come on Jessica!" Galanar complained, shouting back. "It's not like you're taken. I'm sure you think about dating, every vampire does, most even have harems, but here I am with my eyes only on you."

"What about Quinn, Quinn doesn't have a harem?" Jessica folded her arms and turned her head.

"Yeah, but he's an exception, most vampire leaders would have several wives, anyway my point is I'm different from them, so give me a chance." The man said.

"Hey you two, let's just get this wrapped up." The other member said.

Stopping their argument, they started to move with Jessica at the back, she lifted up her hand toward one of her eyes.

'He... didn't see it, did he... I'm always worried someone might see if they get too close.'

Jessica had a secret that she kept from everyone, and that was the fact that she was a dhampir. Before, when she was in a rage or fighting against vampires, one of her eyes would glow yellow, but at some point the change was permanent.

She still had some contact with Logan, and he had managed to make a special contact just for her, that would hide her eye colour, even when it was glowing with power, but she was always worried someone would notice if they got too close.

Her dhampir powers though, were what allowed her to excel at being a Vampire Corps member, as she got a boost of power when going up against vampires. Still, she had no idea how others would react if they learned the truth.

After the case had come to an end, everyone was able to go home, and that was the same for Jessica. She lived on her own, in a nice apartment building, being a

captain paid quite well, there was a good level of security, and one would have to have a special key to access the elevator.

Of course, if they were skillful they could bypass all of that, but it was so many extra measures and steps that it still made places like this safer. Entering her apartment door, she had a crumbling sound from underneath.

"Oh, what's this?"

She picked up the crumpled piece of paper, and realised it was an envelope, inside it there was a card. The card itself was blank on both sides, turning it over she could see nothing but inside there were words written.

"I will send you the most beautiful gift you have ever seen." Jessica read out.

She looked around the card to see if she could see anything else.

"That's strange, it doesn't say who's it from... is this... is this from Galanar. I guess he can be quite the romantic." Jessica thought, as she paid the letter no mind and placed it on her table.

Chapter 2319: Mystery letter

Jessica had slept well that day, knowing that she was successful in keeping Earth safe for a little while longer. When she woke up, she decided to head straight into the office, even though she was meant to have a half day off today.

It wasn't as if she had anything else going on, and at least she could do some research on other cases and such. Eventually she had reached the Vampire Corps base.

It had changed from what it used to be, it was a large square building that was mainly made of glass, and recently a new statue had been put up of Quinn in front of it.

Apparently, there were statues of Quinn all over the place before, but they had been destroyed, now they were making them again even grander than before.

Walking through the front doors, Jessica had entered the large reception area. It was an area that was also used for socialising as they had drink machines on the sides, as well as seating areas.

There were also multiple desks set up, so those that wanted to come in to make a report and such would head inside. Essentially, a desk related to different types of crimes that would go out to different units, all of it in one big space.

Which was why she was surprised to see it rather empty, but it wasn't because it was empty, she soon realised that all of her fellow workers had gathered in one spot, they were talking quite loudly, with their voices slightly higher pitched.

'Did a celebrity visit us or something?' Jessica thought.

"Please, could you guys give me a bit of space, I'm just paying a visit to see someone." A voice said.

The crowd continued to talk, and the soft sound of the man's voice was hardly heard due to all of those talking around him.

"Everyone, the head has just ordered all of you to give him space so give him space!" An older woman shouted.

Jessica recognised that voice straight away, it was the chief of this department, Barbra. Essentially she ran the whole place.

Immediately, all of the vampires who had gathered around moved away, and respectfully gave a little bow.

"I'm sorry about that Andy." Barbra said. "These vampires haven't lived in the settlement, and they seem to lack a bit more respect."

"It's okay, I understand, it's because of me that we aren't so strict with them on that stuff in the first place." Andy smiled, and looked ahead where his eyes had met up with Jessica.

'It's Andy!' She thought. She didn't know Andy too well, but she knew that he was a friend of Quinn's. Which was why she was able to get into the Vampire Corps easily in the first place.

During her whole time here, she had only talked to him once and that was when she had tried to join.

Andy, started to walk over to her, Jessica turned her head left and right, until he had eventually stopped right in front of her.

"Just the person I was looking for." Andy smiled.

Her finger pointed at herself.

"Me!"

Everyone else was just as surprised as Jessica, why would the leader of the entire Vampire Corps unit come to see her. It would make sense if he was visiting the chief, but she was just a captain.

The two of them eventually went to an interrogation room as it was one of the few places that didn't have people around. Whatever Andy wanted to talk about, he wanted to keep it a secret from others.

"It seems you have been settling in well, you rose to the rank of captain rather quickly." Andy said.

"Yes, thank you for giving me this opportunity. It really has changed my life and I enjoy being here." Jessica replied.

"That's good to hear." Andy replied. "I would have checked up on you earlier, but after what happened... Did you know, my father was about to go back into an eternal slumber, but that was after all of this mess with Quinn had happened."

"Now he's trying to get the Vampire Corps to set up systems so no one can ever forget Quinn again, separate from Logan, and one that no one can hack to delete all of our history."

It was nice to see Andy talking about his father, but Jessica was still wondering what he was doing here, but she couldn't ask, and strangely after just saying those

few words it looked like he was about to leave, before he did though he turned to her one more time.

"I got a message, that we should be careful, anyone with a link to Quinn should watch out for anything strange. I know me and you aren't the best of friends, but we do have a common link." Typing away on some strange device on his forearm, Jessica's forearm lit up.

"I just gave you an open line to contact me if you ever need any help. If you even notice anything suspicious then contact me as well. I will be looking after my father, he's getting old. I know your situation, so I just want to say, that I am looking out for you as well."

With that Andy had left, causing as much commotion as he did when he arrived, but it left Jessica with a big thought on her mind, just what was going on that Andy had come to visit her.

Later on in the day, Jessica had been feeling a little lost, they were at the cafeteria enjoying some raw pieces of meat with a pouch of blood.

"What's wrong Jessica, you haven't touched your food at all?" Galanar said, sitting opposite of her.

"Nothing... It's just the visit with Andy today. I'm sure you heard about it, all he said to me was be careful." Jessica commented.

"Crap... does he have a thing for you as well." Galanar nearly slammed the table, but stopped himself moments before as everyone on the cafeteria table looked at him, as if he had done it a few times in the past before.

"Oh speaking of, I saw the letter you sent me, so what gift are you planning to get me to win over my heart?" Jessica asked, hoping a bit of teasing would cheer her up a bit.

"Letter, what letter?" Galanar asked.

"You know, the letter in my apartment, it was slid under my door."

"I'm sorry, but I really don't know what you're talking about."

Jessica was surprised, Galanar wasn't the type to lie and it didn't look like he was lying, but if it wasn't him, then who else could it be, there were only a few people that knew where she even lived.

In the vampire settlement, Quinn had finally received a call from Logan, and it appeared he had some good news.

"We haven't found any signs of Magnus, but we can be pretty sure that he is on Earth. We found an unregistered ship, and then when tracking it down and what

type of ship it was, it appeared to have come from the Marpo Cruise. In particular it was registered to the cruise ship that Jim was on.

"I'm going through the local camera footage to try and see if I can spot anything, or the AI system can pick anything up, but I just wanted to let you know."

"Thanks for the information." Quinn said, and the call ended there.

'The vampire settlement has continued to be very quiet.' Quinn thought. 'If Magnus is on Earth, then there has to be a reason for why that is, right? The fact that nothing is happening is worrying me... I think I have to go to earth.' Quinn thought.

Everyone could tell that Jessica just wasn't feeling it at work that day. Since she had already come in early, when she was meant to have a half day off, they told her to take the rest of the day off.

She really didn't think that would help at all, as the work was a nice distraction from her thoughts, but she was unable to as it was orders from Barbra.

Heading home, she slowly opened the door, and felt her foot crumble against something again.

"Another letter?" She picked it up, opening it, again with a few words written.

"We will meet soon."

Chapter 2320: A new leader

Inside the tenth castle, preparations were being made. Quinn was trying to figure out the last few bits of what he needed before heading off to Earth. Everything needed to be carefully planned.

He had given orders beforehand, in case anything was to happen while he was away, and he needed to make sure there was no way Immortui would know about this. Against the opponent he was going up against this time, it wasn't a simple task such as just beating them.

It was something he couldn't even do, so he needed to try his best to think ten steps ahead.

Just as Quinn reached out to grab something he had placed on the table from before he could hear the sound of footsteps from outside of his door. He lifted his hand towards the door, and two swirls of blood appeared, opening it up.

The men could be seen, and they were confused at what had just happened, as they were just about to push the door open themselves, but quickly shook their heads.

"Hey Quinn, we heard about where you're going." Edvard said.

Two originals had decided to pay him a visit, Edvard and Hikel. They had been informed of the plans due to their trusted positions, and as soon as they had, they both had decided to pay Quinn a visit.

"I was just about to leave, what do you need from me, is there something you don't understand?"

The two originals looked at each other, before Hikel stepped forward.

"We would like to ask a favour of you." Hikel said. "We want you to take us to Earth with you."

Quinn had to take a second look at the two to see if they were serious but their tone of voice said it all.

"....why?" Quinn eventually asked.

"As you know, the two of us have been in eternal sleep for a while." Edvard explained. "It's been a while since we have been to Earth, it was our original home, and I'm curious about how much has changed."

Hikel gave a quick kick to Edvard on the leg.

"What he meant to say was that Magnus is one of us, one of the originals that were with us from the beginning. We have a responsibility to bring him in, we also know him a lot better than you and can help."

"You know, with the opponent we are going against, you can't do everything on your own."

Quinn thought about it, out of the two reasons he actually felt more bad for Edvard, because he had felt the same way when he was asleep for a 1000 years.

"What about the settlement and your positions, what if something was to happen here?" Quinn asked.

"Muka will still be here along with the other leaders. Although there might be some that are helping Magnus that have yet to appear, I believe the settlement is in a strong place where there are enough people that can help defend it."

"Your wife, for one, is extremely strong and there is Peter as well. Besides, if there is any trouble, they can inform us immediately, and you can always use your shadow link to appear by your daughter."

Hikel made very good points, but there were times where his shadow link wouldn't work. Maybe this was what Immortui wanted him to do, leave the settlement, which was why part of the plan was that, from the outside it would appear as if he had never left.

Peter was no longer a teacher at the school, guarding over Minny. Instead he was now using the transformation skill to be another Quinn. There was Vincent who could take up this role as well, but he was far too busy with other things.

Peter would be taking an active role, as Quinn, leader of the settlement. Not many people knew about the plans, so it was unlikely Immortui would find out.

At the same time, a special mask was given to Quinn, that was what was on the table he had been reaching out for. This would allow him to become someone else. While on Earth it was important he wasn't discovered as well, in case Immortui found out.

And besides, it was no longer a world where Quinn Talen was able to just walk outside freely.

"If you have come up with this many reasons to leave with me, then I guess I have no choice." Quinn smiled.

He had never really journeyed with these two before, but he was sure that his time spent with two originals would be an interesting one. Maybe he could even talk

over with them, the start of the vampires and what it was like, perhaps even talk about Ricahrd Eno a bit.

A vampire that was close to Quinn, but not close enough to talk about those things. With all the plans in place, the three of them set off in a small ship heading to Earth, having no real idea what they were in store for.

Looking at the settlement, Quinn just hoped that everything would be okay without them.

Meanwhile, back in the throne room of the tenth castle, Peter was messing around with a red scarf around his neck. He flicked it to one side to fall over his armour, and then to the other side.

He was already disguised, looking exactly identical to Quinn.

"Which side do you think looks better?" Peter asked.

"Neither!" Muka angrily replied as they had already been doing this for fifteen minutes. "It is important that while you are Quinn that you act like him, Quinn never wore this silly silky red scarf."

"Oh, but it looked good and I thought it suited the king's look."

"Just get rid of the scarf and head outside." Muka said. It was very rare she lost her patience. She was always usually calm and cool headed, but she and Peter didn't mix well.

He was someone who did as he liked, didn't follow orders, where she was all about upholding orders. She felt like this whole thing would be quite the large task, as she had been asked to look over him.

The two of them were outside, and Peter was waving to the public as they walked through the markets and such

"It's important that we continue to make public appearances, so the people talk about us, and know we are still very present." Muka whispered.

"I see, I guess I never realised it before because I didn't pay attention, but Quinn gets a lot of looks from the girls." Peter said, as he went ahead and gave one a wink.

She almost fainted from the shock, that Quinn had actually interacted with her.

"Please P...!" Muka stopped herself there before saying his name. "Please refrain from doing anything that Quinn wouldn't usually do."

As they continued to walk through the streets, there were eyes on them from all areas, but sitting on a box of crates were a few vampires that were somewhat staring at Peter.

"Tch, look at him, he's taken on this king role really well." One of the vampires said.

"They treat him like he's a second hero, but didn't he kill a bunch of vampires, and what did he actually do to stop the enemy. Wasn't most of it all Sil's work? It seems like the vampires just want someone to have taken a big part in all of this."

"He has done some amazing things, but I reckon that's more due to the help of those around him. I don't think he's that strong himself."

The group continued to laugh, until they suddenly stopped. A shadow was cast over them, and they could see the person they were talking about was right in front of them.

Immediately, Peter grabbed the man that had made one of the comments by the scruff of his neck.

"I think you're right, I might not actually be that strong myself. Why don't you tell me." Peter said, as he lifted the man in the air, and threw him up. Before moving his hand back ready for a punch.

"Quinn punch!" Peter shouted out, hitting the vampire right in the stomach, he went flying in the air, and eventually crashed back down into one of the buildings in the distance.

Muka's eyes looked like they were going to pop out of her head. If Quinn was gone for a long time, she thought she might not survive this whole thing.

Chapter 2321: A new Earth

The new pieces of land from earth were attached to already existing pieces of land making them larger, rather than creating small islands. This was so the planet could focus on easy and quick transport, underground tunnels and more for development.

They wanted Earth to be as connected as possible. One of the areas that was being developed was on a coast line, it was a new piece of land so the city was still in the middle of development.

"Look at all of this stuff, it's amazing!" Edvard said as he was still in the ship at the terminal. So far there hadn't been a single worker.

Everything had been automatic, the scanning of their faces, the entrance into the city and more. There were multiple screens and holographic displays that would just come up telling one where to do.

"So where do we head to now?" Hikel asked.

Immediately a hologram display appeared in front of Hikel showing him where he was on the map, and showing him where the exits were. He was a little startled by this.

"This is really hard to get used to." Hikel had to admit.

"Oh, come on, change is great, all of these things are just to make life easier." Edvard couldn't stop smiling as everything was a joy to him.

"I know, but you have to remember, that in the past vampires were always much more advanced than humans in technology, but with us all lasting for a long time, we have decided to stick to one taste." Hikel explained.

Overhearing the two of them talk about the differences between the vampire settlement and Earth, made Quinn realise that the vampires really did live in a strange steampunk styled society.

They even had carriages that ran on beast crystals, when they could have built something a lot more aerodynamic.

"A lot more has changed since our lifetimes... thanks for bringing us Quinn." Edvard said.

Quinn turned around with a frown on his face.

"Sorry, I mean Buinn, it's hard to get used to the name, and your face, although I used to call you Buinn before." Edvard replied.

"Speaking of, should both of us have disguises, we are original leader's after all." Hikel asked.

"For you two it should be fine." Quinn explained. "If Immortui knows you are here, it might seem even less suspicious, he probably expected us to send someone. Besides, although you guys are popular in the settlement, I think you might find that no one really knows what you look like here."

As the group went outside the terminal and started to explore the city, they found what Quinn said was true. They had passed many vampires and expected them to notice them but they continued their day as normal.

In the first place, leaders were rarely seen, and the originals hadn't come out much either. Those who would have remembered their faces would long be gone, and those living on Earth, tried to not get involved with the settlement too much.

Of course, there was the possibility a few might notice them, but it was the same as if a human just spotted a politician they saw on TV sometimes, it wasn't too much of a big deal to the vampires that weren't living in the settlement.

A lot had changed in a 1000 years, and the traditions of treating leaders like they were some type of god was one of them.

The group was currently doing some exploring, the reason for landing specifically here was because Magnus's ship was found here as well. Most likely he wasn't still in the city and where he needed to be was another location, but they needed to check it out anyway just in case.

They searched quickly and through many places, even asking people if they saw any like him, but there were no clues, no obvious clues, so they decided to start looking in the more hard to see places, such as the current construction sites.

They walked on the ground floor, where the base was filled with mostly ground, and bags of material off to the side. There was a large fence on the outside that was to stop people from coming in.

These building projects took a lot more than just dirt, so there was a lot of equipment about and not just ability users.

"How long have they been following us for?" Hikel asked.

"About five minutes." Quinn replied. "They could be related to Immortui, so stay on guard."

A group of five vampires walked out with large grins on their faces, chuckling to themselves.

"Well, it looks like we have a bunch of newcomers in this city. You know, for every person that comes to this city, there is a fee that needs to be paid, and we haven't had our fee." The vampire said.

"Seriously?" Edvard raised an eyebrow. "Have I travelled back in time, what type of half made bad gang is this?"

"They want us to pay, what do they mean by this, and for what? The city is free to enter, and no one else had to pay anything?" Hikel said.

"They robbing us small brain." Edvard replied back.

"They're robbing us, do they really not recognize us... back in our day, no one would have even dared to try and do such a thing." Hikel said, sounding a little saddened in his voice.

"It's best if you guys just hand over your credits." The vampire said. "Don't even think about reporting it. The Vampire Corps are more concerned with dealing with vampire on human cases than vampire on vampire."

While saying these words, the three older men seemed to be in the middle of a conversation, and eventually Hikel started to walk out in front of them all.

"Do any of you happen to have a marking on your hand?" Hikel asked.

All of the vampires looked confused.

"I didn't think as much. In the end, I have been the one nominated to deal with you, so be gone!" Hikel swiped his hand and a single line of red aura went out.

It was too fast for the others to react, they had just started summoning their red aura, when the attack hit them, cutting them all deeply on their chests and sending them straight to the ground.

"Be thankful that I didn't kill you." Hikel commented. "And, be careful of who you mess with next time."

The three of them were off, and deciding that it was time to take a break of some sort. They all ended up sitting outside as the sun was starting to set at a coffee shop.

"I'm starting to think aimlessly searching isn't going to work." Edvard commented.

"I think you're right." Quinn admitted.

"Maybe, we should try focusing on one of the other things. We don't know why Magnus is here, but we do know that Immortui has targeted those with a relation to you before, who do you have a relation with that is still on Earth?"

Quinn thought about it for a few moments.

"I guess, there is Fex and Andy from the Vampire Corps. There is also Logan and his entire family, both of them are aware of the situation. It would be hard to get to them. Then... I guess there is also Lucia, she was someone who helped when we woke up, but as far as I know she went to the Graylash faction.

"The only other person I can think of is a woman called Jessica but I have no idea where she is."

"If we ask Logan to check the files, maybe he can confirm the positions of everyone. It wouldn't be any harm in checking if they were safe if were already here." Edvard suggested.

With no leads it didn't sound like a bad idea, but thinking about Jessica, made him wonder how she was doing, after all, she was a little different compared to the others.

"Oh, that reminds me, I wanted to ask you a question. Why were the vampires so afraid of the Dhampirs?" Quinn asked. "I heard at one point, there was one that nearly got rid of the whole settlement. Since you two are originals, I thought you would know more about it."

Both Hikel and Edvard looked at each other at that moment.

"That... happened?" Hikel asked, and Edvard shrugged his shoulders.

"I remember the war between the vampires and the werewolves, but nothing about a dhampir." Edvard replied.

Little did Quinn know, this simple question would unfold an unknown mystery to the vampires.

Chapter 2322: The secret of a dhampir

The confused look on both of the Originals faces continued. They went on and discussed big events that had occurred during their time, and while doing so, they both reminded each other of some things.

It was a hard conversation to follow, because Quinn didn't have a lot of context to go by. He continued to listen, and they started to think that maybe they had some memories removed, either that or the two of them were just old, which was also true.

In the middle of their conversation, while they were reminiscing about old times that Quinn didn't really care about, he started to think back himself, about the dhampirs.

'I remember it... it was when I first created Erin. I didn't even know dhampirs were a thing, but as soon as she was made, there was an attempt to kill her. It was made clear that I was never meant to let anyone know about it.'

'Of course, then the whole dhampir vs human mess started, but I found out later that it's possible that Erin, she might have not even been a true dhampir.'

The dhampir that Quinn had created was from his blood, it was a subclass, one that was extremely rare and next to never be seen. Then there were also the dhampirs that could be turned by another, those like Erin.

Lastly, there were dhampirs that came from a vampire and human birth.

"I'm sorry Quinn, but me and Hikel have gone over it, and neither of us can remember any large event like that happening." Edvard replied.

"That's really strange, because when one of my friends became a sub class I was told to keep it a secret. Later I learned a story about how a dhampir was the natural enemy of vampires... but I can't remember who told me that, whether it was Vincent, Arthur, or Richard."

"Regardless, I did always hear a few things, that vampires in the past would always get rid of what they were afraid of. That's why they exterminated the werewolves, and that's why the dhampirs were an existence that couldn't exist. Since they were superior to vampires."

Both Edvard and Hikel both looked at the ground, as if they were extremely guilty of something. It was clear something Quinn had said upset them.

"I think what you say might be right." Edvard said. "In fact, what we were discussing before, wasn't whether or not dhampirs were dangerous but if there was

ever a grand event with the dhampirs. You see, with the werewolves there was an event and a reason why we needed to get rid of them.

"I won't go into the details now, but what is strange is we never had an event that had occurred with the dhampirs, like you said, yet we both have heard the same thing, that the dhampirs are an extremely dangerous sub race."

Quinn tried to dive deep into his memory bank, he started to remember a few things. For one, Vincent was chased because he had killed one of the other leaders, but his reason for doing so was due to him trying to create a dhampir.

The leader had gone one step too far when trying to use Vincent's love interest. So at least during Vincent's time it was already well known that dhampirs were dangerous.

"Maybe the event had occurred while both of you were in a slumber?" Quinn said.

"No, because we knew about it before we went into a slumber, but we really don't think anything had happened. It's strange as you said." Hikel commented. "It was well known throughout the settlement. From the looks of things, did someone just spread that around as a rumour."

Rumours or not, the dhampirs, even if it wasn't a true dhampir, did cause a lot of trouble.

Edvard folded his arms, and had a smug look on his face as if he had figured everything out.

"If that's the case, and it really was just a rumour that had been spread around, then I am 90 percent sure I know the person who spread it."

Both Quinn and Hikel moved in closer waiting to hear the answer. Out of all three of them they felt like Edvard would have been the last person to guess.

"It's Richard!" Edvard stated. "Richard Eno. If it came from him, then everyone would have believed it instantly without having to ask for proof. From the beginning he was always one that knew a lot more compared to others."

"Think about it, if you had heard this from any other leader, you would have probably just shrugged it off, or maybe even waited until you confirmed the fact with your own two eyes, but I can imagine it now, if it came from Richard's mouth we would have all just believed it."

What Edvard said made a lot of sense to Hikel, he could even imagine it now. Quinn also felt the same way, for as little as he knew Richard, he tended to believe him more than he didn't. He had great knowledge after all.

"But then why?" Quinn asked. "Why would Richard say such a thing, did he experience something with dhampirs that no one else did. Or after finding a dhampir, he just realised how much of a threat they could be in the future."

They all sat in silence thinking about it more, until Hikel spoke up.

"I doubt that because those types of things, if it was of that nature, wouldn't have been kept hidden, or we would at least know some details. A good example is actually the blood fairies.

"Their existence was welcomed even with the downsides towards us, it was only later after a problem occurred, that they were a banned sub class, and usually it's because of other vampires trying to misuse them, rather than a problem with the race itself."

The words from Hikel, it had given him a hint, a hint to the answer they were probably looking for.

"What you just said, it wasn't usually the race itself that was the problem but how one would use the race. What if all of our guesses are right? Richard Eno, discovered something that a dhampir could do.

"In order to stop someone from abusing its power, he straight up banned them. Maybe the rumours about a dhampir were made up. Of course he would have thought someone would want to harness their power, so there might be another reason, another use of the dhampirs that we don't know about, as for the reason why he made up that rumour."

The more Quinn said it out loud the more he thought he was right. For one thing, this information should have been available to Logan as well, but what if it wasn't. What if it was something so big, that Richard wished to hide it even from him.

"But wait, wasn't there a case where there were multiple dhampirs. We weren't there at the time but we heard about it." Edvard said.

"Yes...but they were different, they weren't like Jessica, a vampire born from a vampire and a human, a true dhampir." Quinn said.

A message had been received from Logan, informing them that Jesscia was indeed on earth.

Chapter 2323: Getting closer

Being a dhampir, there was one luxury that Jessica did get to enjoy compared to other vampires and that was sleep. Vampires struggled to sleep, and they didn't really need much in the first place, just a couple of hours would make them feel refreshed.

While in most cases, they could go a week without any sleep at all anyway. Although this was more because they just couldn't get to sleep if they tried, their bodies just weren't tired.

For Jessica, it was a mix, she could force herself to stay awake and in doing so there would almost be a second wave of an adrenaline rush that would wake her up, or she could sleep like normal.

For this she chose the latter, because sleep was something she absolutely loved, and if she didn't have a job would perhaps sleep in even longer. However, today wasn't one of those days that she could, she was hung up on the second letter she had received.

Her eyes were wide open as she stared at the dark ceiling in her room.

'The two letters had to come from the same person, and why not just tell me who they were. Why are they being so secretive about all of this? I'm seriously starting to think I have a full time stalker on my hands... and if they know where I live they have to be in the Vampire Corps.'

'Wait, that might not be the case, they could just have followed me home, but stalkers are more than likely someone you know right, I don't think this is something Galanar would do.'

Before she knew it, she had stayed up almost all night, and it was time for her to get ready for work once more. She was hoping that just like yesterday, that there would be no active cases.

Doing her job when she didn't feel well could be the difference between life and death. On her casual walk to work, she was casually looking at the faces of those walking by, passing humans and vampires.

It felt peaceful for her, then she came to a stop, as she was waiting to cross the street. She continued gazing at other people, until her eyes locked with a certain gentleman. He was a little taller than the others, his eyes showed a lot of age on them.

'Is he staring at me?' Jessica thought.

It was quite clear that the man was directly staring right at her, the two were making eye contact without a single one blinking.

'Who is he, I don't recognise him... wait do I, does he seem familiar.'

The sound was made allowing one to cross the street, and at the brief moment she looked up making sure it was green for go, when she looked back she was unable to see the man.

She crossed the street, turning her head, looking through the crowd, but the man was nowhere to be seen.

'Could that man have been the one who sent the letters, could he be the stalker, but how did I lose sight of him?' She thought.

'Calm down, it might have just been all in your head, you get one night's bad sleep and now you're hallucinating.' She thought to herself, gulping down her fears and heading to work.

When heading into work, her mind was more scrambled than before, the image of the man was vividly in her head. She wondered, why did he seem so familiar? It was too real to just be a figment of her imagination.

'Have I really not seen that person before?'

"Jessica! Jessica!" a loud voice shouted.

Turning her head she could see that it was the chief, Barbra.

"I've been calling out your name, a few times now, on what planet is your mind on?"

Jessica was about to answer, with umms and r's but Barbra seemed to have something else to say.

"You better be on the ball today, you're one of my most trusted captains. Anyway, today, you have three new recruits joining you, so be on your A game."

"Three new recruits, at a time like this?" Jessica thought.

Currently the group was travelling via a levitating train. It had no tracks but a set path that would take them directly to where they needed to go. They thought about taking their ship, but both Hikel and Edvard wanted to enjoy trying something different and looking at the views outside of the window.

Quinn had to admit, it was nice seeing Earth's greenery, it was rather different compared to before. They had decided to head to where Jessica currently was.

They had received information from Logan that Jessica was in the Vampire Corps unit, from there it was easy to contact Andy and ask where exactly Jessica was. Things were a lot easier when you had connections, and weren't on the run or hiding.

Quinn remembered that Jessica used to be in the Vampire Corps, but came out of it, to pursue being a Traveller, he wondered why she had decided to go back.

"Okay, we're going to need to kinda talk about what we are going to do next. We heard from Andy that she is safe at the moment, but that could change by the time we get there." Edvard said.

Quinn was about to say something, the reason it was taking them slightly longer was because they wanted to go by train.

"Say she is safe, then what, do we just go off to the next target?"

"What are you suggesting?" Hikel asked, as it seemed like Edvard was going somewhere with this.

"Look, I've run my fair share of big organisations before. It might be hard for Magnus to make a move, which means that they could still very well be after her. Yet, we have no clue why they are going after her, or what they want to use her for."

"If we show up and hang around, do you really think Magnus is going to act? He's hidden from us this well so far, so searching for him isn't an option."

Quinn could see where he was going with this, and he wasn't so sure it was the best idea.

"So you want to use her as bait."

Edvard snapped his fingers and leaned back in his chair as if his job was done.

"Although you might not like it Quinn, I do believe it's our only chance. If we do manage to stop Magnus, we could find out the secrets of the dhampir." Hikel stated.

"That's if they are even after Jessica for that reason in the first place. Everything I said was more or less a guess." Quinn replied.

"Yes, but I think it's a good guess. Magnus right now, if they wanted to do you harm, could be targeting the general public or the vampire settlement, but he's not. Which means Immortui has entrusted him with a much more important task." Hikel said.

It was dangerous, Quinn didn't want to put anyone's life at risk. It was easy to just perhaps take Jessica someplace else, but he wouldn't be able to watch over her 24/7, and if they didn't stop Magnus, where would this end.

No, when Quinn thought about it even more, was stopping Magnus the end? Wouldn't immortui just continue to find another way. There was something that he himself perhaps needed to do that he had been putting off for a while now, but they would deal with Magnus first.

"So do you suggest we just watch her from afar?" Quinn asked. "Because I don't think that would work, we need to be close to her."

"Close to her without her knowing about us, and Magnus as well."

They all had their fingers on their chins as they thought about, until once again, Edvard was the one that snapped his fingers.

"I got it... the answer is so easy. I mean you're friends with Fex and Andy right, don't they run the Vampire Corps. Then the answer is simple, join as a member of the Vampire Corps, and be part of Jessica's group!"

Chapter 2324: The reliable Quinn

Lack of sleep, a possible stalker, and all in all in her midlife crises, she wondered how her day could get any worse, but Jessica soon was going to find out that it easily could get worse.

"Wait a second, why are you dumping three new recruits on me?" Jessica asked.
"There are other squads, shouldn't they at least be spread out or something! So why are you doing this to me?"

"Look, all the other captains have their hands extremely busy. Besides, you being the youngest must have the best idea as to how they felt, so treat them well." Barbra said, turning around not giving a chance for Jessica to say anymore.

She had to admit, she felt bad, but there was nothing she could do, this was an order from Andy, and they weren't to question it. It was quite clear that the three new recruits had connections of some kind, because they hadn't even gone through any form of assessment and yet here they were.

Heading into her office, she could see Galanar and the two others in her squad, Stacy and Gabe. This was her small investigation team that would deal with cases, and now standing up against a wall, there were three figures.

They stood there straight with their hands behind their backs. Jesscia looked at all three of them up and down.

The three new recruits were, of course, Quinn, Hikel and Edvard. Quinn had the special mud mask, so he looked nothing like he had done before. Whereas Edvard and Hikel, they had gone out buying wigs, changing their hair style and adding a few features to their face here and there.

They were unrecognisable compared to before, and since their faces weren't well known in the first place, they thought it was the perfect disguise.

"You three, state your name and speciality!" Jessica asked.

"My name is Edwood!" Edvard declared. "I am an extremely lucky person. With me around you will see fortune in everything."

Jessica looked at the vampire like he was a crazy person, and her immediate thought if a person said they were just lucky, was that they were an idiot and 'useless.'

"And you?" Jessica asked, moving down the line.

"I am Hike." Hikel answered. "I have the ability to blow things up with my blood. Although I am also quite fast and nimble, and have the mind for seeing the bigger picture of things."

The response from Hike seemed pretty good. Although, there was a fine line between being confident and bragging and she would just have to see how he would do down the line.

Finally, she walked over to the last vampire, there was nothing special from him based on his looks. A plain face, plain black haircut, if she saw him before on the street she would have never recognised him, yet even then, she felt like he stood out the most.

"Same question?" Jessica asked.

The others had answered somewhat truthfully, that way, if they needed to use their powers there wasn't so much of a surprise, but Quinn couldn't just use his shadow powers here. So the others wondered what his answer would be.

"My name is Bake." Quinn answered, thinking that he couldn't keep using Buinn, in case there were those that knew about the fake name as well. "I am nothing special like the last two, but I will tell you one thing. I am a reliable person.

"If you are ever in trouble, need someone to talk to, or need anything at all, then I will be there to help you."

When Quinn said these words, he didn't break eye contact, and stared directly at Jessica. She felt her cheeks heat up a little, she didn't know why, but she felt like this vampire was telling the truth.

Meanwhile, Galanar, at the back, folded his arms, and felt a little sick.

"I can't believe someone could come in and say something so cheesy."

Jessica went on to inform the three about the rules in the Vampire Corps. What their role would be for the time being, as they were each to assist a different person, just shadowing them for the time being.

She also went through what would happen if there was the sound of an alarm, and what to do on an active case, as well as days where their squad was on patrol duty. Which for them would be tomorrow.

On patrol they would just walk around the city, until they were called in for a case that would occur. They were to always move as a unit in cases involving vampires, no matter how low the risk.

This was because they never knew how strong the vampire they were going up against would be.

Jessica had handed each person off, with Quinn going with Galanar. They didn't do much and eventually it came to lunch.

"You guy's go ahead." Jessica said. "I'm going to rest my eyes for a bit."

The others went out of the office heading to the canteen, and the last one to leave was Quinn. He stood by the door looking back at her, and the two made eye contact once again.

"Just go, you don't have to worry about me." Jessica said.

"Just if there's anything you want to talk about." Quinn added, leaving it to her.

When the group got their food, Galanar couldn't help but stare at Quinn constantly, he had noticed Jessica glance his way a few times already.

"Hey, I just want to let all of you new guys know, that Jessica is already taken, by me." Galanar claimed.

"In what world is that true?" Gabe said. "She's rejected you a million times already."

"Yes, but I can tell that she just has these high walls up. I'm breaking them down slowly." Galarar explained. "Imagine this, I do all the hard work breaking down a wall, I finally do it, and someone just jumps over and steals the treasure."

When he finished his sentence he was looking toward Quinn.

"Hey hey, I think you have it all wrong, young one." Edvard said.

Based on outward looks Edvard did look older than Galanar but it was always difficult to tell with vampires. In this case though, due to being in a higher position, Galanar expected some respect but the vampire was talking so casually to him.

"You see, this one already has a wife and kids, he is happily married, so you don't have to worry about any of that." Edvard said.

Galanar felt a sigh of relief, and it was at that point he realised, he thought if the two of them would have to go over competition over Jessica, then he would lose.

"I am worried about her though." Quinn asked. "She did seem a little tired, her mind heavy on things. Has anything happened that's been unusual lately?"

The others thought about it, and they had noticed her acting strange.

"I think it all started when she was talking about that letter." Stacy commented.

"Oh yeah, but Galanar, weren't you the one that sent that letter?"

"No, I told you guys already that it wasn't me, I wasn't lying about that, I have no reason to lie about that. Besides, don't you think that's a step too far, going to her apartment? I don't want to be seen as a creep."

The others wondered if they had found something.

"Can you explain exactly what was in these letters?" Quinn asked.

Back at her desk, Jessica was surprisingly able to sleep. Her eyes were shut and she started to dream. She was chasing after a criminal, and in the fight, she had been kicked in the face hard. At that moment, her contact had come out, revealing that one of her eyes was glowing yellow.

There were so many that were pointing at her, looking at her in disgust as if she didn't fit in.

Then the yellow energy, the dhampir energy completely consumed her. The energy blasted up high and into the air, creating some sort of rift in the clouds.

When looking up, she could see a red swirling sky in the hole she had just created.

"Ah!" Jessica woke up, her heart beating fast. "That was a strange dream."

Trying to forget about the dream she continued to work, and opened up her drawer underneath her desk to put some files in, and that's when she saw it, another letter in a white envelope.

Chapter 2325: The Final task

The envelope was held in Jessica's hand for a while. She had yet to open it, but multiple questions were going through her head.

"When was this put in here? Was it before I even came to work, or was it here the other day? Did I open the drawer yesterday? I think I did, so this has to be a new letter... Wait, maybe I didn't open my drawer."

She was beginning to have second guesses but was wondering if that was because she wanted it to be an older letter. So far, the messages had somewhat linked up. She almost felt like if she were to read the letter, then whatever was said on it would end up being true.

Placing the letter down, she slid it back into the drawer and closed it, taking another deep breath.

"Let's not open it and just ignore it. I should just carry on with my life the way I have been doing. Everything has been going fine so far, so why would it suddenly change now?" she thought.

Although there was still a big worry over her head - how did it get there? It would mean one would have to be incredibly skillful to sneak into the vampire corps, or the most likely answer was that it was someone in the vampire corps in the first place.

"Is it a coincidence that I get this letter the day three new vampires turn up?" she thought. "The letters from my house could be explained with stalking, but for the one in my office... Maybe they put it in before I even got here... I did feel something as well."

"They were suppressing it well, but when I got up to each of them, I could feel the energy inside me rise a little. These vampires are no ordinary vampires. So the question is, are they all behind this, or just one of them, and why would they even do this type of thing?"

The more Jessica just sat there, her head continued to flip-flop. Nothing made sense, and she thought it was best not to accuse anyone either or jump to conclusions. She would just pretend the letters were never there in the first place.

When the others came back from the canteen, Jessica looked busy as she already had a load of work prepared for them all to do. They were looking over case files and were to try and make a report on how to make certain areas safer.

Others were working on public speaking scripts on how they should handle the public news crews and so on. Then the day finally came to an end, and everyone went their separate ways, or at least that's what they thought.

Standing on top of the apartment rooftops, with the night sky out, three people were looking down at a particular apartment. At least they were until Edvard decided to lie down and stare at the night sky.

"So what, you think that Magnus is the one who has been sending her these letters? Why would he do that? Was he meant to kill Jessica, and then when he saw her, suddenly he fell for her?" Edvard said out loud because the whole thing sounded ridiculous to him.

"At the moment, Logan hasn't given us any news about anything happening anywhere else. He has a close eye on the others, and no big events have happened regarding other cities," Quinn explained. "We don't know if it's Magnus or just a crazy person, but we have to assume anything at the moment while we have nothing."

"You mean it's the only lead we have right now. That is a bit suspicious," Hikel added. "It does make me wonder, though, if Magnus was able to get into her apartment, why not just take her away or kidnap her? Could it be they are after something else?"

"Or they're just waiting for us again," Edvard said, doing a sit-up and looking at the two. "Immortui could just be playing a game on you, Quinn. He seems to want to torment you more than anything."

"Maybe this time, he just didn't realize that we beat him to the punch. He's waiting for us to do something, and then wants to react."

What Edvard said actually made a lot of sense to Quinn because that's what he originally thought when Immortui was acting in the vampire settlement - pushing him further and further until he did as Immortui asked.

This thought reminded him, he had thought for a while now about something, and he felt like he had finally made a decision.

"I want to tell both of you something, something I have been thinking about for a while," Quinn said. His tone was heavy, alerting the others not to make any sarcastic comments at this point in time.

"Even if we stop Magnus, Immortui isn't going to stop. So after we do find Magnus and stop him, I've decided I'm going to stop Immortui himself."

Quinn was expecting the other two to act surprised, but instead, they just had a straightforward look on their faces.

"When you say stop, what do you mean by that... What are you planning on doing, and how are you planning on stopping him?" Hikel asked.

Quinn took a deep breath once more. Even just saying the words were hard for him, but he had already made the resolve to do this.

"I will make a portal, but not for Immortui to come to our world, but for me to go to his world instead. And while I'm there, I plan to kill Immortui," Quinn answered.

Once again, the two leaders had expected this, but it just seemed surreal. Was it really the only way? The only way to stop him? It felt that way so far, so they understood how Quinn felt.

Maybe if they had his strength, his confidence, they would attempt to do something the same. But for the two of them, they would never have a chance of taking down such a being.

"I've opened a portal there before, so there has to be a way for me to do it again. I mean, even Immortui thinks that's the case. All I need to do is close it when I'm the only one inside."

"But what if you never get back? What if there's no way out of that place?" Edvard said. "You're the key to get in, but that doesn't mean you are one to get out of there. Without you, we have no clue how to get in.

"How do you think your family and friends are going to feel if you're stuck there forever?"

"They will understand," Quinn answered immediately. "I am doing it in the first place for all of them. I don't plan to go in there and never come out, but I know that is a possibility. And besides, there are other problems as well."

Other problems Edvard wanted to say. There seemed to be many problems with this makeshift plan of his. That was when Edvard realized he was worried because he considered Quinn a friend.

If anyone else wanted to go away, go to their own death or sacrifice themselves for everyone else, then he wouldn't care. But it wasn't fair to Quinn. It wasn't fair to the man who had little time to himself, little time to spend with his family, to sacrifice himself for the sake of everyone else enjoying their lives.

"One of the main issues is that killing Immortui won't mean it's the end for him," Quinn explained. "One can kill a god, but they will reincarnate. The reincarnation cycle can be different each time, though."

"So maybe it will be a hundred years, maybe a thousand, or it could just be the next day he gets reincarnated. Still, there is a chance that when he does, he won't have his memories."

Although Quinn was saying all of this, that was if he killed him in the first place - the ones the ancient ones feared.

"Then the second issue. There is a theory that Richard Eno came up with. If we were to kill Immortui, all of his powers out there in the world would go away with it. Meaning, the vampires' existence would be no more."

Chapter 2326: A reliable man

While three of the strongest vampires in existence continued to watch over the apartment block from the inside, Jessica was still having somewhat of a mental breakdown. Her back was against her front door, and she was slowly sliding to the bottom with the white envelope held in her hand.

"Why did I bring this back with me?" Jessica said to herself. "I thought I was just going to ignore it all. I even said that I wouldn't accuse those guys, and yet..."

She thought back to how she had acted after lunch. Jessica had subtly asked the new recruits questions non-stop while they were doing work. Questions about what city they were in before this, why they wanted to become part of the vampire corps, and so on.

She had even been watching their every move, but they were good at their job, and they didn't seem to be interested in her, at least not in a way where they would be dropping white envelopes.

"Argh, fine!" Jessica stood up and ripped the top of the envelope open. "It's not like it's going to change anything, and the curiosity is just going to kill me."

She read the words slowly, and it wasn't what she had expected. Then again, what was she expecting?

"This will be the last letter you will be receiving."

"What does that mean... I mean, at least I know this is definitely a new letter, but why bother sending a message like this?"

Later, when she was trying to get some sleep, she realized the effect the words of the letter had on her. The words, it was almost as if someone was after her life. Stating that it was the last letter tormented her.

Waking up the next day, which now felt like the second day in a row with a horrible sleep, Jessica felt irritated. Although she didn't need it, living the way she had been doing for a while, she swung her pillow into the wall when getting up from bed. It was harder than she thought, as it burst into feathers.

Jessica and her squad had met up in the office first, but they quickly changed into the vampire corps uniform. It was all black in color, tight-fitting leather close to their bodies but made in a way where there were variations in black, so it looked somewhat similar to a police uniform.

This was so the members of the public knew that the vampire corps were trying to help them and create a better image. Once everyone was changed, they met outside of the building for a few words.

"On our forearms, there is a communication device linked back to headquarters. They will alert us if there is any case that we need to go to in our area. Usually, you would respond, but you guys haven't had time to learn the proper codes or ways of responding," Jessica explained. "So you can leave that bit to me.

"Usually, if you are chasing any type of suspect - and trust me, I use the word 'chasing' because for some reason, vampires always run thinking that they are faster than us - but if you do end up in a chase or there are multiple people to chase, then you must do so in pairs no matter what.

"Due to the current situation with the new recruits, I will now announce the following pairings. Galanar, you have the most experience, so I am putting you alone with Edwood.

"Stacy and Gabe, the two of you will be with Hikel, and I will be taking Bake under my wing."

Galanar looked like he wanted to say something, protest, but he bit his lip.

All of them had entered the main part of the city. They weren't directly together, walking down the same streets, but they were in the same area. If anything came in, they would be contacted and try to come in together.

"Come in, come in, Squad 0014. We have an emergency at the Reflector factory. It appears that members of the Black Swans have appeared. Squad 0008 is dealing with them, but they need help immediately."

The message came through on her communication device as she stated it would. Quickly, she sent out the message to all the others, for them all to meet at the Reflector factory. It wasn't far from where they were, and they would get there quicker by running at full speed.

"Sorry, Bake, this is an important one, so I'm going to go ahead without you!" Jessica said as she sprinted off at full speed.

Quinn had been warned about this during their lunch break. They stated Jessica often got heated in the moment while out in the field, and she would dart off on her own. She was faster than everyone else, so even though Galanar was meant to be her partner, he would always arrive at the scene and the job would be done.

He stated that he was worried that one day it would be her on the ground instead of the enemy due to her rash-headed decisions.

Jessica was originally running through the alleys, but jumping from side to side, she had quickly made it to the rooftop of the buildings. It was easy to travel this way, so she wouldn't get caught up in traffic or in the way of the public.

"Tell me, what are the Black Swans?"

Turning her head, Jessica was surprised to see Bake right there next to her. "He can keep up with me? I guess he really is talented."

"The Black Swan are a group of thieves. We're not sure of their size, but they are quite proud of themselves, to the point where they have even publicly named themselves the Black Swan."

"They aim for areas with high-level crystals. The factories usually have demi-god-tier crystals or two that are used for helping build certain equipment. They can be sold for a lot of money. Of course, doing what they do, they are quite strong, so it's no wonder another squad is having trouble."

It didn't take long for Quinn and Jessica to arrive at the scene, and they managed to catch the tail end of the fight with the other squad. They weren't doing so well, with the others injured.

Running ahead, right outside the front of the factory through the gates, Jessica lifted her hand and unleashed a powerful blood swipe. One of the Black Swan members saw this and created a blood swipe of his own, but Jessica's attack was far more powerful, breaking through it. The man managed to avoid the strike and continued to move.

In total, there appeared to be six Black Swan members with masks over their faces.

"Everyone, we got what we came for, let's get out of here!" The man who had blocked Jessica's attack said, and they started to run away along with the others.

"Go after them," the other captain said. "We only have light injuries, it will be fine. We need to at least get those crystals back."

Jessica and Quinn chased after the group, but that was when they split up. Two of them, the leader and another member, went into the factory, while the others split up, running around the side of the factories.

"The Black Swan group has split up, intercept them in these areas!" Jessica ordered.

The others in Jessica's squad weren't far behind, and they followed the order. At the side of the factory, Hikel, Stacy, and Gabe landed, blocking the path of two members.

"We have you now!" Stacy said.

However, from the sides, behind crates and walls, around five more members appeared.

On the other side of the factory, the same thing happened. Edvard and Galanar managed to intercept two vampires, but soon two more appeared, making it four. Galanar, knowing they were part of the Black Swan, felt a little nervous.

"Hey Edwood, I thought you said you were the lucky one, so what kind of lucky situation is this?" Galanar asked.

"I am the lucky one," Edvard replied. "So I'm guessing all the others are in a worse situation."

The inside of the factory had been cleared out of workers when the Black Swan group arrived. Surprisingly, while giving chase, the leader turned around with his partner.

"Hahaha... you, I know you, Squad Leader Jessica," the man said. "You have been a pain in our backside for a long time. I was waiting for you to come so I could finish you off today."

Multiple members of the Black Swan emerged from the machinery and the sides. There seemed to be around fifteen vampires in total.

Even Jessica looked nervous due to the situation, but she felt her strength increasing from within.

"I'm sorry, Bake, for getting you into a situation like this on your first day," Jessica said.

A sneak attack came from above as one of the men dropped from the ceiling, launching blood swipes. Quinn quickly moved, using his arms to block and break the blood swipes. As the man continued to fall before he could do anything, Quinn grabbed his neck and slammed him into the ground, knocking him out.

"I told you already, I am reliable. Don't worry about me."

Chapter 2327: A strong three!

Hikel, known as Hike to the others, Stacy and Gabe were all fighting off the Black Swan members, they were surrounded but the two still took it upon themselves to protect the newby with one getting in front of him and one behind him.

The Black Swan group were organised as they kept their distance and started to throw blood swipes toward the three of them. Both Stacy and Gabe, rather than throwing out blood swipes of their own, used their blood aura to reinforce their arms, and in doing so they swung them, hitting the blood aura away.

It was a more effective way of blocking several attacks, but it took more energy, it almost felt like they were blocking a sword with each hit.

'These two are good people.' Hikel thought. 'I am practically a stranger to them, and yet, they have decided to protect me, so I need to help them out a little.'

Swinging both of his hands, he let out blood swipes. He didn't use his full power, but just enough to somewhat push the blood swipes back, right into their line of view before turning them into nothing but red particles.

"Now!" Hikel shouted, giving them a chance to fight.

They spread out, each going to two of the members. It would be a hard fight, at least Hikel would make it seem hard, as he avoided some of the punches thrown and allowed one to hit his side.

'Oh, if only you knew who I was, the things I would do to you.' Hikel thought.

However, the hit didn't really hurt him in the first place, so he continued on with these antics, taking them out slowly, hoping that the other two would do the same.

On the other side of the factory, Edvard was fighting with Galanar. They had four members going after two of them, which also made it a bit difficult for Galanar to act straight away.

When he saw an opening to attack, another would come from the side and attempt to strike him. On top of that he was continuously turning his head.

"Hey Edwood are you doing okay? I don't need you to beat them, but just hold out against these guys. I'll deal with them, one by one!" Galanar stated, as he swung his arms, blood swipes crashed into a vampire, and he leapt toward the other pretending to go for a punch, but quickly switched it up with a sweep, hitting the bottom of his legs.

There was a reason why he would usually be partnered up with Jessica, because on their team, he was one of the closest ones that could keep up with her.

Meanwhile Edvard was avoiding every hit so far, not striking back.

"Crap, I suppose I should take a hit or two from these guys to make it look realistic. Come on hit me, I won't move."

True to his word, Edvard didn't move and a hit landed right on his face. The fist was stuck there on his face for a moment.

"Did I say hit me in the face?" Edvard said.

The attacker could feel that something was wrong, he pulled his hand away and when he did he could see red glowing eyes.

The other attacker swung a knife he had, right toward Edvard's neck, turning around Edvard looked at him with the red glowing eyes.

"Stop." Were the words he said, he was still fixing his face a bit from the first punch.

The attacker instantly stopped, he was unable to move no matter how hard he tried, and he realised it was because he was under the influence skill.

'How... is that possible, how strong does a vampire's influence skill have to be, to have some control over me... who is this guy.'

With a smile on his face, Edvard was getting ready to give a punch of his life.

Inside the factory itself, the fighting had started off with a bang. Maybe it was because Jessica was trying to assess the situation, or the fact that she had a bad sleep two days in a row, but she was unprepared for the one coming from the rooftop.

If it wasn't for Bake, then she would have probably suffered a blow.

"If you are reliable like you say you are, then it should be fine to leave you be, right!" Jessica said, as she ran forward toward the group of people, pulling out two daggers.

Quinn let go of the passed out guy's face, and ran forward by her side. She struck the first vampires, avoiding their blows, getting in deep, she wasn't afraid of getting hurt, one could see this from the way she attacked.

It was almost as if she knew she was better than the others.

Meanwhile, Quinn was fighting, while keeping one eye on her. He was using nothing but his martial art skills, mainly his Muay Baron skills. He avoided a punch from a vampire filled with aura that shot out, but grabbed the arm and pulled it

down over his shoulder, breaking the joint, before lifting the man and throwing him into another.

He had to be careful about using his powers, which was why he was using nothing but his skills, but also had to be wary that at any point and time, any one of these could be after her life.

It wasn't long, with the help of the three new recruits, that the job was completed. Jesscia stood there huffing and panting, while Quinn was fine, and was surrounded by those moaning with broken bones on the floor.

"Wow... you really are reliable, and you didn't even use a weapon or your aura." Jessica complimented.

"I am a trained fighter, so my skills rely on my fists and legs more than anything else." Quinn answered with a smile.

She didn't know why, but seeing the smile on Bake was nice, she just felt like it was someone she could trust, which was why she didn't want to ask him any more questions other than that, just happy that they had done a good day's work.

Later on, another squad had arrived at the scene. Barbra knowing that the Black Swan group had planned something big, sent three teams in, but there was no need.

When the group got back, they were congratulated by nearly the whole department, they all cheered for them, as they walked past. They had dealt with one of the major problems of the city, and of course in their heads it had to be Jessica.

When back in the office, the group needed to write a report of the events, the three recruits had been called by Barbra as she wanted to check if they were all okay, leaving all of the others in the room.

"Hey, the new guys they were pretty good." Stacy said. "I would hate to admit it, but I don't think things would have gone as smoothly without them."

"Yeah, I mean this could be a pretty big deal for all of us, we could all get promotions!" Galanar said. "Maybe that guy really is lucky after all."

The new group were happy with their department, and for the first time in a while, Jessica had forgotten about the stupid letters. When returning, they had decided to do a celebration of their own.

Taking a blood bank and having a nice drink together. They all put their drinks in the centre and cheered up in the air. It was a good day's work, and they all deserved the rest they needed as they headed home.

When Jessica got in her home, she was expecting to hear the same crumple she had done the last few days, from the white envelope but there was nothing on the floor.

"I guess, whoever sent that letter, when they said it was the last one, they must have really meant it." Jessica thought.

For the first time in a while she was able to get a good night's sleep. Little did she know she had three guardians looking over her.

Opposite, on top of the apartment building the usual three were standing there.

"It looks like nothing is going to happen today either." Edvard said.

"You're right, I thought that maybe the Black Swan group would have a marked that would act at that moment, but there didn't seem to be anything." Hikel said.
"What do you want to do Quinn?"

He thought about it, as he continued to look down.

"I think you guys are right, we can't stay here forever. We will continue to watch over her and stay in the Vampire Corps for a little while longer, but if nothing else happens, we will need to move on."

The next day had arrived, and nothing out of the ordinary had occurred. If anything, for Jessica, things were kind of back to normal, as she had managed to sleep for the first time. Although it was a little later than usual.

"Crap, am I going to be late for the first time!" Jessica said, as she rushed to put on her clothes, and started to head straight for the Vampire Corps building.

When she got inside the building itself, she could see everyone walking around, but they had nervous looks on their faces, some were mumbling to each other but everyone was speaking that it was hard for Jessica to pick up on something. That was until Barbra, who was in the reception area, had spotted her.

"Jessica!" Barbra called out, and she was the one that rushed over to where she was.

"Jessica." She said again putting both of her hands on her shoulder.

"What's going on?" Jessica asked. "Why are you acting so strange?"

The look on Barbra's face, one could tell it was hard for her to speak, but she needed to, it was her job.

"There was a report, early this morning, while it was still night... both Stacy and Gabe... they were found dead in their apartments."

Chapter 2328: The search is on

Hearing the devastating news, the sound around Jesscia was deafening. She was on such an up as she headed into a building, after days of things irritating her bit by bit, this was nothing compared to all that. Suddenly, she was wishing that she hadn't slept.

It was a stupid thought to have, but maybe if she was in discomfort, then nothing bad would have happened to the others. She just didn't understand at all, why Stacy and Gabe. Why them two, what had they done?

Eventually, Barbra had moved Jessica to her office. Thankfully, it seemed even though no words were getting through to her, she was just on autopilot following along. In the office, Hikel and Edvard were already present, Quinn was a bit late because he had directly been following Jessica and had heard of the news as well.

'Is this the work of Immortui as well. Is he targeting those around Jessica instead of Jessica herself? Or, is it just someone who has a grudge against the Vampire Corps? Maybe someone she captured in the past?'

While the rest were in their seats, Barbra stood at the front. The whole situation looked uncomfortable for her, it made sense, all of the vampires in the Vamp Corps were her responsibility.

"I want to explain to you all the current situation that we are in." Barbra said. "I'm sure many of you have already heard about Stacy and Gabe. I will give you the details of what we know for now, but it is an ongoing investigation."

"In the early morning around 4:12 am there was a report of loud bangs and fighting occurring in one of the apartment blocks. In the room itself there are clear signs of fighting as the equipment was completely destroyed.

"The active night shift team, squad 0002 arrived at the scene at 4:30, they had arrived at a bloody scene, with Gabe and Stacy lying there on the ground. As you know, the two of them lived together. The markings on their bodies, and the way they were killed suggest that it was done by a vampire."

For a second, the others looked at each other in the room. Hikel and Edvard could gauge the strength of the vampires since they fought alongside them. They were around the level of a vampire nobel, not quite skillful enough to be a vampire knight, but not just any vampire could beat them.

"As you know, its normal procedure to have another squad investigate what is happening." Barbra continued. "All of you, are too close, and will be too emotional to the case, which is why I have one more piece of information, Galanar."

Jessica's head lifted up in that moment, as she failed to realise it, she had heard the devastating news about her two members, the ones that had been with her

practically since she had rejoined the Vampire Corps, that she failed to see, that Galanar wasn't even in the room.

"As of this moment and time Galanar is missing. We had sent a squad to his apartment, where there seems to be signs of struggle like the rest, but there's no blood found, and there is no body."

Jesscia immediately stood up from her seat.

"You have to let me try and find him!" Jessica said. "I can't just sit here and do nothing. I know... I can't investigate the deaths of Stacy and Gabe, I can't do anything to bring them back. But if there's a chance that we can still save Galanar, and catch the people who have done this, don't you think we should use everything we have!"

Barbra hearing this let out a big sigh.

"I knew you would ask this, but I can't just let you go out on your own."

That's when Quinn stood up from his seat.

"We will go with her, she has an important request, and it could be linked to something else."

Barbra and Quinn stared at each other for a moment, and then he gave a small nod toward her. She knew that Quinn and the other two were here based on the recommendation of Andyl. It wasn't just any normal recommendation either.

Andy had stated that if there was anything they needed that she should comply. She was unsure whether something like this counted, but it seemed that the new vampires joining might be connected to this case after all.

It made her clench her fist, wondering if something from higher up had involved her people, allowing her good people to be hurt, but she had to swallow all of the pain in, as she needed to make a decision for what is best.

"Fine, but all of you move together. It's not like any of you would be able to do work after hearing this. You are to work with the other teams, if you are a distraction to them, or hamper them in any way, then I might have to take you off this case, do you understand!"

All of them nodded.

The group arrived at the apartment block which had already been blocked off from the regular public. Apparently the Vampire Corps got a monthly balance to choose which apartment they wished to live at, so not everyone lived at the same place or area.

Heading inside was relatively easy, it looked like most knew Jessica and let her through without even asking to see any form of identification. When they got to the actual room, they could see the state it was in.

There were some destroyed walls, furniture, chairs and other things. Meanwhile there were also those from a different squad, 0015 that were working on this investigation.

Jessica went ahead to talk to the captain to see if there was anything she could find, meanwhile the other three had gathered.

"Do you think its the work of him?" Hikel asked.

"It's too early to tell." Quinn replied. "If it was Magnus, then he could have easily had the strength to take on all three. So much strength, that there wouldn't even be a struggle in the apartment. So I would rule out the fact that it was Magnus."

"However, I wouldn't rule out the fact that it was Immortui."

"Then why attack those around Jessica?" Edvard asked.

"Maybe just like with me, it's to show her what he's capable of. I was able to save the people that Immortui targeted, but what if Jesscia believes that she can't. After killing those close to her, she might do everything in her power to make it stop, and if that's the case, she might accept Immortui's deal."

Imaging themselves in Jesscia shoes, they could see why she might go with that option.

It seemed that Jessica had no luck getting information out of the captain, but just when she was about to head to the others, another group of people had entered the room.

A man with spiky black hair, off to the side with a big cut down the side, wearing the Vampire Corps uniform, along with him, there were another two that were by his side.

"Captain of squad 0006, Captain Ryder." Jessica said, giving a polite bow.

"I heard that you were here." Captain Ryder said. "I didn't know you would have company with you though, who are they, I've never seen them before."

"Oh, they're new recruits." Jessica answered. "They have just recently joined the squad but are working with me."

Ryder's eyes lingered on them for a few seconds, before going back to Jessica.

"Unfortunately, this is not the time to catch up, but I have some good news, we have found a lead on Galanar, and we have tracked them down to a particular location.

"Our vehicle is outside, but we can do with some back up, and judging by your reputation, I could use your help."

Jessica was ready to jump at the chance.

"Of course, let's go!" Jessica said.

At the same time, Quinn and the others followed, but Ryder looked at them.

"This is a dangerous situation, new recruits shouldn't get involved."

"Where she goes I go." Quinn answered.

"He is reliable." Jessica turned back and smiled at Quinn. "They all are, they're coming with me, it's Barbra's orders."

With no choice, Ryder turned around.

"Fine."

All of them went away, off into a large flying van that shot off into the sky. Meanwhile in the apartment room, the captain had felt something was off.

"I didn't get any report that squad 0006 were involved in this case, maybe I should call it in, and just double check."

Chapter 2329: Saving the target

The vehicle that was being used was something in-between a spaceship and a car that used to be used in the past. Most cars these days were self-driven and levitated off of the ground slightly.

However, there were quite strict rules about using a vehicle in a certain way, due to airspace and collisions with buildings and so on, but the Vampire Corps were exempt from that.

The vehicle they were in wasn't designed for outer space, but they could go between buildings, zipping around quicker than a helicopter, as it took quick turns. Its deceleration and acceleration were quite fast as well.

Quinn imagined he could run faster than the vehicle, but avoiding all of the people on the ground would be a major issue. While looking out the window, they all noticed something.

They were leaving behind the grand buildings, and now they were going through large fields of just grass and trees. There was next to no development at all.

"Is Galanar no longer in the city?" Jessica asked.

"That's right, we managed to track down his communication device out here, and it hasn't moved for a while now," Ryder replied.

It wasn't good news, not moving meant that his body was already dead, and left in a particular place.

Eventually, they had reached a more wooded area that would be hard for the vehicle to maneuver through, so it landed and everyone got off.

"We will follow the location of the last ping," Ryder said as he moved forward.

Doing so, the other three squad members with him moved slowly. Jessica was at the back, she was trying to get access from her own communication device, seeing if there was an update from the base, but nothing seemed to be working, the whole thing was scrambled as the screen would just turn into fuzz every time she pressed it.

"That's strange, is this thing broken?" Jessica asked.

"Is it not working?" Quinn quickly tried his, but his was doing the same thing as well. "Mine's not working either."

"It must be a strong magnetic field, or maybe even a wild beast with certain powers interrupting it," Ryder said, overhearing them from the back. "Ours aren't working either."

Jessica had accepted the answer, but with Quinn being wary of everyone, he was finding it a little strange. If there was some type of magnetic field interfering with their communication devices, then how did they manage to get a location on Galanar's device? It wasn't making any sense.

Taking a step back, Quinn gave signs to both Hikel and Edvard. Most weren't paying attention to the two anyway, but they soon went off ahead, scouting out the area to see if there was anything usual.

The group continued to walk deeper into the forest, and it was only later that she noticed Hikel and Edvard had disappeared.

"Where did they go? Did they get lost? When was that?" Jessica asked.

"Don't worry, they thought they wouldn't be much help and headed back to the vehicle, they'll wait for us there," Quinn answered.

The group continued until Ryder eventually stopped in his tracks, and so did the others.

"He's right up ahead," Ryder said, his voice choking up a little as he gazed up at one of the trees. Because there, Galanar was. He had been pinned by his hands on the tree with some type of hard metal.

Blood dripped down the tree, his shirt was torn apart, and there were scratches all over him. But finally, the one thing that immediately stood out to Quinn was on his chest. There was an engraved marking of an eye with two wings. It looked like it had been drawn by a vampire's fingernail.

'Is he...dead?' Quinn thought. It wouldn't be a surprise considering the state he was in, but he wasn't. He could feel a faint heartbeat from him.

'This is clearly the work of someone connected to Immortui, though. The marking was there. So it was him all along... but Galanar was made a target. Why?' Quinn thought.

Jessica, seeing her friend, ran ahead, pushing past the others.

"We have to get him down and taken to a hospital right away! And then find the bastards who did this!" Jessica said.

She ran until she was right beneath him, but when her foot had landed on a certain area, it lit up underneath her, and she felt her whole body freeze.

"What is going on? Why can't I move?" Jessica asked.

The light wasn't fading away underneath her foot.

Quinn had seen this before. This was the power of the seventh family ability. They could make hidden traps that would hold you in place for a certain amount of time. So why was this one holding her for so long?

Quinn only had one answer. The trap had to have been done by none other than Magnus.

A marking in Ryder's eyes started to glow, and a marking on his head with it. Quinn knew he was suspicious. It looked like not even the Vampire Corps were safe from the likes of Immortui.

"My sweet girl, the person above is someone you would say you are close with. I don't know if you know, but right now, his life hangs in the balance. His body is not in a state where it can properly take in blood to heal itself.

"His insides have already been destroyed, and he is hanging on by a thread. By the time you got him to a hospital, he would die. But that's why I have decided to give you a choice. You see, I can save him. I have the power to save him, only if you are able to do me a fa-"

Before he could finish his sentence, a strong hit had landed on the back of the vampire's head, knocking him out completely. This wasn't just any vampire, but it was one of the captains as well.

"Bake, why did you do that?" Jessica asked.

"What they are saying is lies," Quinn answered. "Can't you see, Jessica? The communication devices not working, knowing where Galanar was... they were the ones behind it."

Soon, another one of the Vampire Corps members in the squad started to light up.

"Who are you to get in my way!" The man angrily said. "Don't worry, I had planned for some interference."

The man looked as if he was about to laugh, but when he looked to his left and right, no one was coming out until a few moments later when Hikel and Edvard were seen.

"It looks like there were quite a few of them hiding in the woods for an ambush, but we managed to deal with them all," Edvard said.

"Same on my side as well. It was a good thing that you managed to figure out this whole thing was a trap, Bake," Hikel added as well.

It looked almost as if the man wanted to ask something or say something, but before he could, Quinn ran forward and hit the bottom of his jaw, shattering it as it crashed with the upper jaw and knocking him out.

Moving onto the next set of vampires, he kicked and punched them, knocking them out in one hit.

"I won't let you get into her head. She can't start to think that this is her fault or there is a way to avoid all of this... otherwise, you will get what you want."

Hikel and Edvard helped pull out the strange metal stakes inside of Galanar and placed him on the ground gently.

"Here, he should drink this," Edvard said as he pulled out a flask with a number on the side.

"You still have that?" Hikel asked.

"I never knew if it would come in handy one day, and look, it seems like it has," Edvard replied.

He poured the blood out of the flask, but it wasn't red blood that was poured, it was green. As it went inside his body, it did its best to heal, but Quinn wanted to go one step further.

He placed both of his hands on his chest and wounds and started to help flow Qi inside him, trying to help his body to repair.

"Will... will he be okay?" Jessica asked.

"I hope so," Quinn replied.

Meanwhile, Barbra had just received a vast amount of information. It took a while for her to process it all, and it was hard for her to make the call, but she eventually did.

"Everyone, may I have your attention. The main suspect for the death of Stacey Lue and Gabe Lue is Jessica Clark. Everyone must find and locate her immediately!"

Chapter 2330.1: Calling in help (Part 1)

Quinn was flowing some of his own Qi into Galanar. He had to be careful not to use too much, but the force of power was helping his own little bit of energy he had in him, get to work as it repaired what was in his body.

However, he couldn't take all the credit, as the Green Dalki blood did a lot of work, it re-energized the body for a few moments. Giving Quinn even more Qi to play around with, the combination of the two, allowed somewhat of a miracle to be performed and a few moments later there was no need for Quinn to do anything else, as he let his hand go from Galanar.

"He is going to be okay, don't worry he won't die." Quinn said.

It was hard to believe, seeing the state he was in before, but the wounds on his body were slowly starting to heal.

"What did you do?"

"I didn't do much." Quinn replied. "It was mostly thanks to the blood he bought. Its Dalki blood, something that's extremely rare to get now."

With the Dalki, becoming essentially an extinct species. There wasn't the endless supply of blood there was before. Only what was left on the ships. It was sold around on the black market.

Since it gave a great boost in recovery and strength as well for vampires, but as more of it was used, more would never come back again. So there were many that were just keeping the blood waiting for the price of it to rise.

What wasn't taken into account though, with all of the black market deals going on, was the fact that there were different tiers of Dalki blood, and with Edvard and Hikel being the leaders during the war, they had the highest tier Dalki blood that hadn't been mixed or tainted.

If it wasn't for this, maybe Galanar would have been added onto the list of those that had died, due to Immortui's meddling.

Jessica was still very much concerned with Galanar as he was coming to, his eyes were flickering and it looked like he was starting to come around. While this was happening, Quinn walked away from the situation and looked at the other two.

Somewhat naturally, both Hikel and Edvard walked to where Jessica was, and hurdled around him, this was all to block her view.

Kneeling down, Quinn lifted one of the men off the ground, his eyes were glowing red.

"How did you get that marking on your head?" Quinn asked.

"It was from another vampire, he was strong and overpowered us all, forcing the marking on every one of us. He had long green hair."

Although the vampire didn't state the name of who was behind this, it was clear the vampire that he was describing was Magnus.

'Immortui is able to mark those that are close to death, we might have to keep an eye on Galanar and see if anything has happened to him, but at the same time. It looks like Magnus is strong enough of a dedicated follower that he can mark others as well.

'They managed to get a whole squad in the Vampire Corps, is there anywhere we can go, where Jessica will be safe... but then how do we find Magnus?'

"Tell me, where do you last see Ma-" Before Quinn could finish asking his question, the vampire started to foam at his mouth. His eyes lost sign of life and Quinn could no longer hear his heartbeat.

He stood up, and could see that the same thing was happening to the others. Hearing the strange gurgling noise as if one was choking, Hikel and Edvard turned to look behind them. Immediately, they went off, running towards the direction they came from.

"What's going on Bake!" Jessica asked. She could see how the other squad members were acting, and thought maybe this would happen to Galanar.

"The other members are all dead." Quinn answered. It was clear, it was a measure to stop them from leaking any information.

Both Edvard and Hikel had come back, heading straight to where Quinn was.

"They're all dead, all of them have died the same way." Edvard said.

"This looks like the work of Magnus." Hikel added. "During the war, he was well known for reverting to tactics like this. He is most well versed in different types of poison as well. I found a bit of a dissolved capsule in the upper roof of one's mouth."

Hearing this, Quinn couldn't help but bite down. If they had knocked them out, and then searched for the capsule they could have saved them, but once again they had failed, just how many times were they going to fail.

Coughing could be heard from behind, and a bit of blood was spat out onto the ground, but it was a good sign. Galanar was the one who was coughing, and he looked to be conscious again, his heart beating strong.

"Jessica... what are you doing here?" Galanar asked.

She didn't say anything yet, but just hugged him tight. Right now, as he felt her breast push up against him, he couldn't have been happier.

"Ah, this is good, all it took was for me to nearly die, for you to appreciate me." Galanar said.

The others started to walk over, and Galanar could somewhat guess the situation.

"Thank you all for saving me, I don't know where I am, but I remember what happened just before getting here."

"If you could tell us in detail please.' Edvard asked.

"I was in my apartment, when there was a knock at the door, it was early in the morning, so I ignored it for the most part, but they kept knocking so I opened the door, and I could feel someone whiz straight past me.

"It was clear it was a vampire and a strong one at that. I went to fight him, but when I took a step forward, I was frozen in place. Something lit up right underneath me. I don't know much of what happened after that, I was knocked out.

"I remember feeling a lot of pain after being hurt, hit, on the verge of death, and my hands."

From Galanar's story, they learned a few things. One, the apartment being destroyed was set up on purpose, because there was no fight that had proceeded. They wanted them to try and find Galanar, and the second, was that it was Magnus who had done all of this.

"Galanar, you weren't the only one that was attacked. Stacy and Gabe, both of them, they're dead... and I just couldn't lose you. I couldn't, that's why we came out here." Jessica explained.

Galanar didn't know how to process his teammates being dead, he had nearly died himself, so it all felt surreal to him.

"I guess I'm lucky that I had a captain that cares so much for me then huh?" Galanar joked, trying to lighten the mood and stood up. When he did he looked at the ones that had killed themselves.

"Why... would Ryder do this? Why would he attack the Vampire Corps... and that other guy that attacked me. I don't see him here." Galanar commented.

Jessica didn't want to say anything, but she did have a thought in her head, based on those letters that she had received. She felt like all of this was due to her. They had called her out. Ryder had come looking for her as well but when he spoke in his

last moments, it sounded like someone else, someone else controlling him, trying to speak to her.

'This feeling it's the same as before. I feel like when the dhampirs were after me. Why is it all happening all over again.'

She looked at the back of the three in front of her, if it weren't for them, she probably would have lost Galanar and had to have put up quite the fight. Now she felt extremely guilty for not trusting them.

The group continued out of the forest and was making their way to the vehicle they had arrived in hoping that it would still be there. They could finally see it, out of the forest and in the field up ahead.

While out, Jessica continued to try to get through to the base on her communication device.

"Restricted access, what is this, I've never seen this before."

"You're trying to contact the base, let me see." Galanar said, going onto his device on his forearm. He could see that there was an emergency message sent out to all Vampire Corps members, and he pressed play.

"This is an emergency message, the vampire capitan known as Jessica Clark, is the main suspect in the case involving Stacy Lue and Gabe Lue. If you see her, you are to bring her in at all costs. It is suspected that she is on the run." The message played.

"What the..." Galanar said, ending the message there. "What is going on?"

Chapter 2331.2: Calling in help (Part 2)

The others were standing just a few feet away from the vehicle. Quinn, Hikel and Edvard had tried to access their communication devices, but just like Jessica's, it seemed their access to it was disabled, the only one that was working was the one that belonged Galanar.

Seeing this, Galanar played the message out again, and everyone stood thier listening to it very clearly.

"What is happening, I don't understand, why is this all happening to me?" Jessica said as she placed both hands by the side of her head. It was as if her nightmares were coming true.

She always feared, if they found out what she was, if her contact had come out, revealing her yellow glowing eye, that she would become a target and she had become one.

"Don't be crazy!" Galanar said. "You saved me, I know you aren't behind this. They must have something wrong."

"Or more likely someone has planted evidence to be used against you." Hikel added. "If they were able to get a whole squad under their control, then we really don't know the size or the people that are involved."

"It would be quite easy for them to point the blame at Jessica."

"Still!" Galanar swung his arm. "Then we shouldn't we head back. I know who the real person is behind all of this, and I can explain that Jessica saved us, telling them the truth we can get out of this."

Edvard stood in front of the passionate Galanar.

"Do you really think it will be that easy?" Edvard asked. "Think about it, you only saw who attacked you. Right now, they are just saying Jesscia is the main suspect in the other two cases. It won't clear Jessica's name at all."

The group had decided the best thing to do was get out of the area and not use the vehicle they had come in. Most likely there was some sort of tracker inside. So instead they decided to run across the fields. They did so for a while, when they were a few miles out they came across another wooded and forested area.

After finding some fallen trees and an area that was somewhat blocked from view of the outside, they took a rest to try and figure all of this out.

"What do I do?" Jessica thought, her mind was still full. "Why, is this happening to me, it all started with those stupid letters."

"Jessica!" Bake called out. "Don't worry, I told you I was reliable right. Just leave this to me, I will sort this out."

"What...you're just a guy who joined the Vampire Corps recently, what do you think you can—" Galanar was about to go on a rant when she grabbed his hand.

"I think we should just trust them, I don't think they're ordinary vampires. They had Dalki blood, that saved you, and if it weren't for them, I think we might not have even been in this situation. Think about it, do you think you could be as calm as they are in this situation?"

It was true, new recruits would never be able to handle all of this, even Galanar was struggling with it all, but when they spoke it was as if they were giving the orders and leading everything.

The three went off to talk away from the ears of the other two. There was always a line of communication that was open with Edvard and the vampires back at the settlement. They would communicate using telepathy, and then pass on their message.

They were using this right now to check on two things, one if everything was okay in the settlement so far, which seemed to be the case, and the second, was to get in contact with Andy.

A link had been set up using the ability to allow messages to pass through a vampire between Quinn and Andy right now.

"Andy, I'm not sure you know, but have you seen everything that is going on with Jessica at the moment?" Quinn asked.

"Yes I have, I have been getting the reports. I don't believe it. I told Jessica to contact me if she had any trouble. If it was my guess, I think someone is trying to set her up." Andy replied.

This saved a lot of explanation on Quinn's end.

"That's right, I have been watching Jessica's every move for the last few days. Without a doubt, she wasn't behind those killings, and it appears someone is after her life. Would you be able to call off the hunt squad that's after her."

There was a slight pause before Andy answered.

"I can, but we need to think about this, is this really what we need to do?" Andy asked. "If I call it off, they will know that she has connections to me or someone is looking out for her. I don't know how deep this goes, or how many are involved in this."

"Right now, we know she's innocent. What I can do, is keep the Vampire Corps busy, and try to put Jessica's involvement on a lower priority, that way you don't have to worry about the others. Maybe you can use this situation to your advantage.

"There might still be Vampire Corps members after you, but you can deal with that right? You're strong enough to protect her. If you can do that until I've solved the issues from within on my side, then I think that will be for the best."

The talk had ended there and it gave a lot for Quinn to think about. That's when an idea popped into his head, he wasn't so sure if it would work, and to pull this off he would need someone else's help as well.

On top of it all, he would need Jessica to agree to it, and in doing so there was only one thing they could do.

Quinn started to walk back to the other two.

"The Vampire Corps are still after you, so we need to head to somewhere safe at the moment."

"Somewhere safe... but the Vampire Corps have a base in every city." Jessica said.
"That means anywhere we stay there'll be a problem."

"Don't worry about that. I'm going to ask someone that can help us and keep us safe, Logan Green."

The name that came out of Bake's mouth, both Galanar and Jessica were left with their mouths wide open. Why would Logan Green agree to harbour potential criminals, none of it made any sense to her.

"I know you're confused right now." Quinn said. "But there is a reason for all of this happening, and there is a reason why we are here as well. I don't want you to be confused, and I think if you knew the truth of the situation a bit more, it would be safer for you."

"The three of us, know about you Jessica, we know the real you, but we don't know why they are after you, or what they want with you, we just know that someone is after you. That's why, the three of us were sent by Quinn."

It was a name that Jessica heard often, people spoke about Quinn all the time, at the Vampire Corps and beyond, but no one knew the truth. How she had travelled with Quinn before, how close the two of them felt and how much she missed him.

Even now, when she was in trouble, it looked like he was looking out for her. She couldn't believe it.

A large smile appeared on her face.

"That man... is really incredible." Jessica said.

"What!!!! Why is the great Quinn involved in all of this!" Galanar almost screamed from the top of his voice.

A little while later, Logan had received updated details, and was aware of the guests that were coming to see him. He was aware of the situation more than most, which was why he had called in someone to help them with all of this.

In the lab, Logan stood by someone's side.

"Alright Agent 4, it looks like we need your help."

Chapter 2332: A predication

There was a small problem the group had to solve to be able to get to where Logan was, and that was to get a ship. There was no doubt that the vampire corps unit would be looking for Jessica at every port and any mode of public transport they were going to use.

At the same time, they were unable to just run there because Green City was unique in that it was built on top of the sea.

Which meant they would have to steal a ship. Hikel, Edvard, and Quinn's faces weren't well-known among the vampire corps members, but Galanar and Jessica were. After ditching their clothes, they walked into one of the space stations.

Everything was going well so far, but they had no ticket to pick up a ship to use, but that wasn't too much of a problem either. Going away from the group for a moment, using his influence skill on a random vampire, Quinn had somewhat forced one to give him a ticket.

The same trick had been used to pass security as well until they eventually were inside a random Travelers ship. It was a bit small, but there wasn't a lot of them in the first place, and they wouldn't be going too far anyway.

"Wow, how did you do that?" Galanar said as Edvard went over the controls and started to press a few buttons. Quinn had shown him how to navigate a spaceship, and surprisingly, as technology got better, it was more interactive to fly one of these things.

"How are you able to use the influence skill on all of the vampires back there? There wasn't even a hint of pushback," Galanar said.

It was an amazing feat, one that a vampire could never imagine doing to another vampire unless they were at least at the level of one of the vampire leaders.

"I've had a lot of practice," Quinn answered, thinking that things would have been a lot easier if he was able to use his shadow, but for now, there was even a chance that Galanar had been marked by Immortui.

They had asked questions that led them to believe he hadn't been, but they all knew what happened the last time they trusted the influence skill too much.

'Of course he's strong. If he's someone Quinn trusts with this whole mess, then he has to be strong to a degree,' Jessica thought.

The ship was in orbit heading to its destination. It was left on autopilot, and they thought it was a good time to talk to Jessica a little bit more about her whole situation.

Quinn went ahead to sit in front of her, meanwhile, Edvard and Hikel decided to take Galanar away, trying to make noise so he was unable to hear their conversation, just in case he was a spy.

"Wait, hey!" Galanar wanted to complain, but when he tried to push against Edvard and Hikel's bodies, they didn't budge an inch. It was then that he realized they were far physically stronger than him.

"I couldn't say it before, but I will try to explain to the best of my ability," Quinn said. "Someone out there knows that you're a dhampir. And I don't know how, but they want to use this fact for you to help them with something."

"This person is extremely powerful, though. They are able to control people to do their bidding. It's hard to trust anyone because at any time they could be working for this person."

It was a big shock to Jessica, but in a lot of ways, it was a relief to her. It meant that the vampire corps weren't really after her, nor was it these people's fault, but more so this single person.

However, when she thought about it more, it meant she was right. People like Stacy and Gabe, they died because this person was after her, and it was to do with her Dhampire self after all.

"Hey, not to be the cause of alarm, but it looks like there are a few ships following us," Edvard said.

On the front of the ship's glass display, a rear camera was projected, and they could see four small black ships heading towards them.

"Those are the Vampire corps ships!" Galanar called out.

It wasn't going to be a problem as Quinn quickly went to head outside, but Jessica had grabbed his hand before he did.

"Please... you said this isn't of their own doing, right? If possible, can you try not to kill them?" Jessica asked.

He didn't say anything else as he walked up to the door and pressed a button. It opened up the back, and a massive amount of wind was let into the ship. He could see the energy blasts getting ready to fire at them.

Gathering his aura in his fingertip, Jessica was feeling something rise in her. Her eye was glowing so bright that it was going through the contact.

A blood bullet shot out from Quinn's finger, more than one, and each time blood fired from his finger, an explosion would follow. Perfectly aimed, the bullets hit the weapons onboard the ship.

They now had no way to attack other than crashing the ship into theirs, but he wouldn't put it past them to do something like that, which was why he continued to fire away and hit the bottom of the ship. It skewed their balance, and they had no choice but to emergency land and stop the chase.

A frightening situation for Galanar, which made him fear for his life, was solved in a few moments. The back of the ship door was shut, and Quinn went back to his position, passing Galanar with his mouth wide open.

"Thank you for doing that. I knew you could do it," Jessica smiled.

There were no more instances in their travel, and they had finally arrived at Green City. The ship was already given access by Logan to head straight to the tower, where a private space would open up to allow Quinn to dock his ship, essentially where the lab was and where Logan spent most of his time.

There to greet the group as they descended from the ship were a few androids with drinks and hot towels for them all.

"If you follow me, I will take you to the master," the android said after giving everyone their drinks.

They were in a hangar of some sort, but after going through a thick steel door following the android, lots of white walls and white light came into view. It was a common feeling when visiting a place of Logan's.

He looked to be busy at a workbench, with strange tools in his hands and coming out of his back. He was always making something, but what might have been even more surprising was the person by his side, Agent 4.

'Agent 4... wasn't he the one that used the red heart to open the portal to the other plane in the first place?' Seeing him immediately put Quinn on guard.

"I know what you are thinking, but he is on our side," Logan said, stopping the work on his own project, putting his tools away, and walking to the others.

"He didn't quite know what he was getting into back then, and unlike Zero, Agent 4 was never a direct follower of Immortui, but he was by one's side for a very long time, so I believe he can help us quite a bit in all of this," Logan explained.

The group had gathered at a desk, and the androids were told to give Galanar a tour of the place. They had felt quite bad for Galanar as he was being left out of

everything, but he seemed more than happy to explore the large Green Tower, a place he thought he would never get to enter.

"I will tell you everything I know, but I doubt it will be able to help you very much," Agent 4 stated. "Immortui's goal has always been to cross over to this side, and to do that, there are several things that need to be in place.

"First, Immortui himself. A large amount of energy is needed on both sides to open a portal of sorts.

"The reason I believe Immortui had started so many wars using his dedicated followers was because he was gathering his own energy. As we all know now, Celestials need to complete their condition to access more Celestial energy, and Immortui's seems to be linked to death.

"Every single war that's happened, and every conflict, has made him grow stronger. However, even with all this strength, he is unable to open up a hole to the other side. So enough energy is needed to open up a small hole, then he himself can do the rest.

"He gained followers by promising to bring back those who are dead. I don't know what proof he has to show this, but I will tell you now, Zero was pretty certain he was capable of doing such a thing.

"The truth is, he probably expected one of two things: for one of his followers to get strong enough to open a hole for him, or his own strength to reach a point. But then there was a third way, one much quicker—those with the power to open up a hole to the other side."

Jessica didn't quite follow what they were saying as she only understood some of it, but what Agent 4 had just said reminded her greatly of the dream she had, one of her opening up a strange hole in the sky.

The dream was starting to feel more like a prediction.

Chapter 2333: A trap for the trapper

Quinn was listening to everything Agent 4 said, and so far it made sense and added up. He too had the same thoughts, war was only profitable for Immortui. Having experienced a part of his power, and how many he could control, who knew how involved Immortui actually was in each of the battles Quinn had been a part of so far.

'He said it himself.' Quinn thought. 'That I had gotten in the way of his plans time and time again, but it was by accident, more of a byproduct of what I was doing, and now I'm one of the people that can open these holes, so that's why he's after me.'

"So that's why he's after me." Jessica said.

Quinn looked at his own hands for a moment, wondering if his own thoughts had been said out loud on accident, but he soon realised that it hadn't come from him.

"You know how to open a portal to the other side?" Hikel said. "I thought only Richard was capable of something like that."

"I don't." Jessica said a little reserved. "I might sound a little crazy, but in my head it's the only thing that makes sense. You said it yourself that Immortui has to be after me for some reason, and I keep having these dreams."

"That, the vampires, they find out about what I am, that I'm a dhampir, and then all of this built up energy inside me releases, shooting up into a sky opening up some kind of red portal."

Her hands were shaking as she was telling the story, they could tell that it was all very real to her.

"What if I do it by accident, what if I open this portal. If he can control people from this other world, then what can he do if he's in our world?"

Logan and Agent 4 smirked at this comment, as the two of them knew something the others didn't.

"We have both done a lot of research into this, after the last time a portal was opened and a demon managed to come through." Logan started to explain, showing a few video illustrations to everyone.

Quinn remembered well, the demons were quite strong for what they were, he could only imagine what type of creatures this other plane had, because it wasn't just Immortui that they would have to worry about.

Only those on the level of Minny and perhaps the originals were able to fight against the demons, and if they were to go up against one of those generals, then

they would need Sil, Russ, Chris and so on, but they were also busy doing their own thing.

"There is another reason why Immortui needs a dedicated follower." Logan continued. "The universe itself has several places where it is close to other planes. Sometimes things may even be able to cross over. A good example of this are the familiars the vampires use. The vampire planet was on a plane similar to theirs which was why random familiars would appear.

"However, their world is not linked to ours. No matter how far you travelled in our universe you would not find them, the same as with Immortui."

"When I had the red heart." Agent 4 added. "I was sent to a specific location, a place where the bond between the two worlds was closer, that way less energy would need to be used, but as for the other thing Immortui needs, he needs someone who can draw the magic circle for him.

"Energy is just energy at the end of the day, and the magic circle is what allows it to be directed to a certain place. Which is why, we think Magnus is very important in all of this. The patterns and symbols that are needed to be drawn aren't so simple... for some reason, it appears not everyone can draw a magic circle even if they are to copy one.

"Which is why he won't just be able to use anyone he can control."

Hearing all of this, for Quinn it was just cementing his belief that Immortui himself needed to be dealt with, there was Laxmus, Zero, and now Magnus. Who knew who else there was and who there would be in the future.

"So what am I meant to do?" Jessica said. "Am I meant to just hide here, while he takes over the Vampire Corps, using them as his pawns to look for me. My friends that I worked with died because of this, and it's possible that more and more people will die, and continue to die.

"So, is that what I'm supposed to do, just wait until Quinn, or Andy or someone else solves this?"

She had been through a lot, so everyone could understand her frustration, especially Quinn because he felt the same way. They were stuck, but when explaining everything to Logan, he seemed to have a solution.

"Your main goal is to stop Magnus right?" Logan said. "Then based on everything we know so far, there is a way to stop this, and stop others getting hurt. My suggestion is that we use Jessica as bait."

The other's eyes widened after trying so hard to protect her, they now want to put her out in the open.

"We know the Vampire Corps are after her, so let her be captured by the Vampire Corps. We don't exactly know what Magnus is going to do or Immortui's next move is, but we can predict their next move if we look at what options we have.

"If Jessica gets captured by the Vampire Corps, then at some point, Magnus will have to take her someplace else. They won't kill Jessica because they need her. If I put an untraceable device on her, then we will know where they have taken her.

"She will lead us to Magnus, and we can stop this. Of course, I made it sound simple, there is a lot of risk involved, especially for the person in question."

Logan looked towards Jessica in all of this, without her consent then they wouldn't be able to go through with this plan, and she had to rely on the fact that the others would be able to save her.

She was thinking about it, she had seen their strength, but was it enough? If Quinn was the one that was actually helping her, maybe she wouldn't hesitate to say yes. Looking deeply at Bake, there was a sense of trust.

"I'll do it, I don't want any more people to die, just because what I am, I need to face this fact, it's a fact that I can never change, so if there is something I can do about it, then I will." Jessica said pumping her fist.

With that said, the group was working away, Logan was making a special device that would be tagged on Jessica. In order for this plan to work perfectly, they had to feel like no one was protecting Jessica and that she wasn't seen with others.

Meanwhile Quinn had asked to speak to Agent 4, he had whispered in his ear when walking past, and now the two of them were in a different room compared to the others completely.

"I have a request..." Quinn went on to explain who he was, and went into detail about his request.

A large smile on Agent 4's face lit up.

"You really want to do that... I guess I don't need to warn you about the large risks, but why?"

"There's a few reasons." Quinn answered. "A promise I made from long time ago? I don't even think any of the people I made that promise to are alive now, but I don't want to break it, and it's to stop all of this."

Later that evening, at one of the Vampire Corps' bases, Jessica walked right in through the front door, and took a deep breath.

"My name is Jessica Clark. I am wanted for a case involving Stacy Lue and Gabe Lue, I have come to turn myself in!" Jessica shouted.

Chapter 2334: Captured!

Big news had spread across the vampire crops units. After all, the story of one of thier won members, a captain no less killing two of those in its squad was certainly something to talk about. On top of that, they all became aware due to the alert that was put out.

What came as a big surprise to everyone, was that Jessica had volunteered herself in. At the Green city, thier was a giant pillar, a tower made of metal sticking out from the sea. Thier were many of these that built up the pathways, the land mass and the city that everyone lived on.

However, on one of the towers, thier was no connection to the others, it was slightly away from the others. Meaning one would have to use a mode of flying transport to get thier, this was the base of the vampire crop that was located at Green City.

Inside, Jessica was standing as a machine scanned her. A green light was emitting on her body moving up and down. A special device that was making sure they had the right person, that it wasn't some copy, or someone who had the ability to change into others.

While in this room though, she wasn't alone. Thier was a whole squad that was keeping an eye on her, five members in total, but thier were actually six in the room. Because the chief of the base, a vampire named Dzai was standing there as well.

Unlike the other vampires that were in thier corps uniform, he was stood thier with a large great sword on his back, coloured in black, and a black helmet that covered his entire face, but had two horns on the top shaped like a bull.

Jessica didn't even know what he looked like due to the mask covering him. The fact that he was a chief, of the base belonging to Green City, meant he was strong. Since Green city was practically the capital of Earth with Logan living thier.

Jessica was being moved to a holding cell, while they went through the formalities. She had a pair of strong hand cuffs on her. Half of them were made from beast crystal energy. If it touched her skin she would feel a burning sensation.

As she walked through the hallways, Dzai confidently went next to her, while others seemed a little hesitant to get close.

'This is chief Dzai, they say his strength is on par with Andy. If he were to become an enemy he would be a tough one to go against.'

These instances, where Jessica had these thoughts saddened her a lot, because before all of these people were her strong and great allies, and now all of them were potential enemies.

Eventually, just like with all criminals, Jessica was taken to a holding cell. The door was opened up, and she was told to head inside, but coming inside with her was Dzai, and the door had shut behind him.

She could feel his large presence on her back, and she was too worried to turn around.

'What is It...am I being attacked now, here alone, but there's no one to see me. Calm down...they said, that they wouldn't kill me, and I still have the tracking device on me. They didn't find anything right!'

Dzai didn't do anything apart from walking past her, and placing something on the wall. It was a round device that was stuck on the centre. It beeped a few times and then a screen displayed with a large old woman's face on it.

"Ba..Barbra!" Jessica called out. It was the chief of her own vampire corps base, essentially her direct boss.

"Jessica, I am happy that you finally gave yourself in." Barbra said.

Imemduilty, Jessica's head went to the floor. She wanted to say it wasn't her, but what would that help, would that do anything, they had a different plan now anyway.

"I called in a favour from my friend Dzai here. He owes me a few from a way back you see, otherwise you would never be able to see this message. I know you probably want to say a lot, but we should perhaps not talk...not here.

"I wanted to just let you know, that I believe that you're innocent. Even though everything else tells me otherwise, I want to believe in the young recruit that rose up to captain with those by her side, that she would never do such a thing, at least not without reason.

"In order for you to get a fair trial, I pushed and did my best. The investigation and the trial will continue, back here. Dzai and a squad will be transporting you. I want you to get a fair chance."

So Jessica was unable to say anything back, Dzai went forward and snatched the device off the wall before crushing it with a single hand allowing small pieces to fall the floor.

Jessica could be heard sobbing, trying to wipe away the tears on her shoulders since she was unable to use her hands.

"Thank you." She said, thankful that there were still some people she could believe in.

After a couple of hours to herself, Jessica was being transported. She walked along the halls away from the eyes of others and went right onto a medium-sized spaceship. It was square-shaped, long, somewhat like a plane, with two large wings and energy thrusters hovering it in place.

The squad of five and Dzai were all there, as they got on board, and the ship was on its way. She was sat down, in between two of the other Vampire Corps members, without a single one of them saying a word.

Dzai just stood by the back door with the handle of his large sword propped up against the back.

'This is all okay...no matter what happens, the others will come find me.' Jessica thought.

Right on cue, a dreaded noise was heard. An alarm was going off inside the ship.

"An unidentified aircraft is following us, sir, and it's not responding to any of our signals," the pilot shouted.

"It looks like someone trying to break her out," one of the corps members said, standing up. As he did, a loud explosion went off, and the whole ship veered slightly to the right.

"We're being attacked. Our right wing was just hit. Emergency thrusters are being used on the bottom, but it's going to be hard to steer this thing."

A view appeared on board the ship, showing what was taking place, and they could see that not only was a ship following them, but standing right on top of it was a vampire with green long hair.

'That's him...that matches the exact description that Galanar gave back then...it has to be him!' Jessica thought, her whole body shaking.

For a second, Dzai glanced at Jessica, noticing her actions. It wasn't of someone who thought they were being saved, but of someone who was being chased.

"Open the door!" Dzai ordered.

The others didn't ask why but instead decided to open the back door. A large gust of wind could be felt on all of them as the door opened, and now they could directly see the one that was attacking them.

Magnus stood on top with a smile on his face and swung out his arm, releasing a blood swipe. It looked regular, but it was far faster than what a normal person could produce. It came out as fast as a blood bullet.

At the same time, Dzai grabbed the handle of his great sword and pulled it out, striking the blood swipe right in the centre and breaking it into particles in an instant.

"Whoo!" The other members of the Vampire Corps cheered.

"That's our chief!"

They were confident that they had the chief on board and weren't too worried if anyone came after them.

"I see," Magnus said. "It seems that she does have someone close to her that is relatively strong. No wonder the others weren't able to succeed, but none of you have any idea who you are facing!"

Magnus swung his arms, and several blood swipes came out toward the ship. Seeing it all, Dzai swung his blade several times, breaking every single one of the blood swipes. This was getting Magnus quite infuriated, and so the ship started to move.

It sped up and was now beneath the transport ship.

"Block this!" Magnus threw both of his hands together, delivering a blood cannon. It ripped through the bottom of the ship, destroying all of the energy thrusters, and now the ship was falling, heading for a crash landing.

"That won't be enough to kill them, but they have nowhere to run now."

Chapter 2335: A Troubled Magnus

The spaceship still had some thrusters that were working, but it wasn't going to stay in the air much longer as it hurled towards the ground. There was no way to repair the ship while they were on the ship, leaving them with little choice left.

"Everyone, get ready to jump out!" Dzai ordered.

The others weren't too sure about this, but they would follow the orders of their chief. When they were around ten metres from the ground, each one of them leapt off. Dzai landed fine on his knees and with one arm on the ground.

He looked up and soon caught Jessica who was falling and safely put her down. As for the others, some landed but had to roll, others butchered their landing and their bodies just slammed on the ground, but all of them survived.

They were strong vampires after all, the ship continued onward, crashing a few hundred metres from where they were, it exploded and now only smoke could be seen.

"We're in the worst possible place." Dzai said, looking around.

There was next to nothing around them, apart from the tall blades of grass. There was no sign of a city either, they were in the middle of a large field out in the open, there was nowhere for them to hide.

Soon, the small black ship, that was more designed for speed rather than transport, landed a little over twenty metres away, and the vampire that had been chasing them had a large smirk on his face as he jumped down.

"It looks like to me you're stranded." Magnus said. "As you can see, I have a ship here behind me, and you have someone you wish to transport. So all you have to do is beat me, don't worry about the pilot inside."

Magnus' finger started to glow red, and the top of the ship opened up. A red laser went straight out from his finger, it was a blood bullet, and it went right through the pilot. His head sank onto the front of the ship as blood spilled out.

"Who are these people!" One of the Vampire Corps members said. "They are willing to kill their own just like that, what type of group are you working for?"

This question was directed at Jessica, even though she was wondering the same thing. The member in the ship, also had a Vampire Corps uniform, another one that had died, all to get to her.

"Stop!" Jessica shouted. "It's me you want, right! I'll go with you, just leave these guys alone, I'll go with you."

She had fallen to her knees, practically screaming those words out, her throat hurt a little due to those screams, and the other members looked at the situation in confusion.

"Ah... a very noble sacrifice, something the vampires need more of these days." Magnus said, as he continued to walk forward.

When he had taken a few steps though, Dzai lifted his sword. The edge was glowing red with aura, swinging it down, a giant red line of blood aura came out from the weapon. It was thick and went at least 30 metres high.

Magnus had no choice but to encase both of his hands in blood aura and push them both forward, hitting the blood swipe.

It pushed him across the ground as he gritted his teeth and tried his best to push back.

"AHHHH!" The marking on his head started to glow, and a surge of power beginning from his elbows pulsed out to his hands, hitting the large blood aura swipe and destroying it.

'I... an original, had to borrow power to stop that attack? I thought the new generation of vampires was getting weaker, then what is this, who is this?'

Magnus started to sniff the air, trying to use his nose. There was something different about this vampire, the smell, it was one that he hadn't recognized during his time.

"Jessica Clark is our prisoner." Dzai commented. "She will be coming with us, and I will successfully transport her, no matter what."

The frustration could be seen, clear as day, on Magnus's face, but for Jessica, it was painful. Why was another member of the Vampire Corps sticking up for her so much, when she had already decided it was best for her to just give in.

Magnus ran forward. He was no longer calm like he was before. His hands were still shaped like claws, and before reaching Dzai, he threw them out. Rings of blood went out right towards Dzai who used the large great sword to block them all.

Each time the attacks hit, large clangs would be heard. Magnus had landed right by Dzai's side, his finger nails pierced through the armour of his body and sent out a blood pulse, but he wasn't hit away like Magnus had thought. Instead, one of his hands had grabbed onto Magnus, keeping him in place.

He tried to pull back, to pull it away, but it wouldn't budge.

'What type of strength does he have, this is beyond that of a vampire.'

"You... you're not a vampire!" Magnus said, the realisation had hit.

The large sword was hovering above his head, and with that strength he would be sliced in half. Making a desperate move, Magnus purposely broke the bones in his forearm, allowing him to drop to one knee.

With his other hand free he placed it on the floor. In doing so, the ground started to light up, and now Dzai was frozen in place.

"Magnus' ability, he can create traps and if any one steps in those zones, they can't move! Usually the time isn't so long when others use the ability, but Magnus... he's an original!"

An entire second, that was how long Magnus's traps lasted, and in a fight between high speed vampires and such, it was a deadly amount of time. It gave Magnus enough time to store up enough energy to create a blood cannon in his free arm.

Throwing it forward, all of the energy burst out right in the centre of Dzai's arm, it ripped a hole through the centre and this time, his body was sent off, hurling in the distance.

"Chief!" The Vampire Corps members shouted.

They were running forward in anger, with their weapons drawn, wishing to do anything they could to help.

"No! Stop, don't fight!" Jessica screamed. She tried to get up on her feet, and get in the way of the others, but she stumbled on the ground.

"Just because I'm having a hard time with him, doesn't mean you background characters can interfere!" Magnus unleashed a blood swipe, breaking through the beast weapon that one of them was holding and slicing one of the Vampire Corps members in half.

Another had reached him, but Magnus was far faster than him, slamming his fist into his head, crushing the skull and killing him on the spot. With two more blood swipes reaching the neck of the other members, they had fallen to the ground as well, leaving only one left from the transportation squad.

"Do you know why it's so easy for me to take your lives!" Magnus said, as he ran over and knocked the Vampire Corps members hands away, breaking them and grabbed the top of his head lifting him.

"Because, if it wasn't for me, one of the Originals, you wouldn't even be here in the first place, the fact that you are here, you should be thanking me, so how dare you even raise a hand in front of me!"

While one hand held up the Vampire Corps member, the other was burning with blood aura, to the point where it looked like flames. He went to reach out and move it, but it was stuck once again.

Looking at his hand, he could see red strings attached to it.

"Strings... this ability!"

Holding out his hand, it was none other than Dzai, more strings wrapped around Magnus, and with great strength he pulled him away. Magnus was up in the air. Covering his body in his aura he started to cut all of the strings and safely landed away from Dzai.

Jessica looked at Dzai, who no longer had a mask on his face, it had broken in the attack, and under the mask, it was someone she never thought she would have seen.

"I told you Jessica, if you needed help that I would be there." Dzai said, but Dzai was not the name she knew him as.

"With the power of my father's string ability, and the strength my mother gave me, I, a Colossal Dragaur, will do everything in my power to get rid of you!"

Chapter 2336: The colossal

Quinn along with the others were still in Green City, and they were in Logan's lab. They were keeping an eye on the specially made device, and keeping track of exactly where Jessica went.

They were following her every move, and were waiting for Magnus to turn up. So they knew when this was the case, the tracking device which had been put in her skin under the back of her ear, so it wouldn't be found, was also able to transmit sound.

So they were able to hear everything that was going on, and that's why it was a big surprise to them all, when they heard who's name had been shouted out.

"Andy... as in Fex's son!" Quinn shouted. "Why is he there?"

"It would make sense. A lot of this matter involves those in the Vampire Corps. That was the creation of Fex and Samantha's work. As the leader, he wouldn't just stand by and do nothing. Besides, weren't you the one that told him to help out, and sent out a warning?"

It was true, Andy and Fex were made aware of the situation, but that's when they were going up against random marked vampires, not Magnus, a dedicated follower and orginal. Andy was strong, so Quinn felt he could deal with most that came his way, but was he strong enough to go against Magnus?

"From the sounds of it, he's been putting up a pretty good fight against Magnus, who is this guy?" Edvard asked.

Logan brought up a screen with information on Andy, thinking that it would be quicker to show and explain at the same time.

"Fex was a vampire noble, but not just any vampire noble, one related to the leader of the Sanguinis family. His wife Samantha White was a strong individual even as a human, but eventually she was turned and had become a subclass a Draugr, and later evolved into a Great Draugr."

The others being originals knew about draugrs and their great strength. A Great Draugr was even rarer but were also able to change their form and size as well.

"As for Andy, he was born as a draugr himself and learned the ability of the 13th family. However, eventually he had continued to evolve and turned into one of the first of its kind, a Colossal Draugr. As for what they are capable of, it's somewhat unknown. We only know that they are also able to use blood aura."

The two originals were a little stunned, even with all of their years of living, there were new things that were popping up with the vampires that they had never seen or heard of before.

"Quinn, I think it might be best if you make your decision." Edvard said. "This Andy fellow seems quite strong, and he is the son of a good friend of yours. If we leave him be, and Magnus wins the fight, there is a good chance that he could lose his life or be converted into a strong enemy."

"On the other hand, if Andy is able to give Magnus a run for his money, then it means we will be able to swoop in and deal with this large thorn in our backside."

Quinn looked at Agent 4 when the question was given to him. He wanted to help Andy, and it was a good chance to get rid of Magnus, but if they failed, or Magnus got away, then would it ruin the second part of the plan.

Then there was the request he had made with Agent 4, if they got rid of Magnus now, then they might never be able to accomplish what they needed to do.

Jessica didn't quite understand what was going on, she was sure of it, that the person that was protecting her right now was Andy, but he was dressed like Dzai, and he also used the same great sword as Dzai, while Andy, he was one who fought with his fists.

The two were even often compared to each other, in terms of strength.

Little did Jessica know that a secret that Andy had been keeping for a while now was unveiled. Dzai and Andy, were both the same person. Andy, being the head of the entire Vampire Corps meant it was almost impossible for him to be out in the field.

Only when large jobs came up would he participate, otherwise he would receive too much attention, or others would offer to do the job for him.

The thing was, Andy wanted to continue to improve, he also didn't want his skills to suffer. Which was why he became Dzai, the chief of the Green City Vampire Corps unit. Improving himself, he restricted what he could do, focusing on using beast weapons and his blood aura, rather than the rest of his natural abilities.

When learning of the case, and who the person was, Andy needed to get involved, he wanted to help Quinn, who had helped his father finally get the peace he wished for.

Placing both of his hands on the handle of the great sword, the edged side of the giant blade started to glow red. The aura was fiery but then condensed into a single line. After that, Andy threw it in the air, but it was attached to a red blood string.

He swung it by his side in circles, it was going so fast that one could only see what looked like a shield of red.

When Jessica looked at the floor, she could see there was a perfect cut there as well.

Magnus, seeing that Andy hadn't moved, decided to store up his own blood aura, in both palms of his entire hands, he pushed them out, getting ready to fire two large blood canons.

These attacks were so strong in blood aura they would usually do harm to the user, but the originals were able to heal from such wounds, and Magnus had found a way where the attack hardly damaged him at all.

The attacks burst out, but Andy was calm. Swinging his sword, he used it like a shield, and the blade sliced through the attacks. It continued to hit the sword as it swung, but it sliced through the constant red aura, until there was nothing left.

"This fight... it's like the new generation vs the old." Jessica said to herself.

"Now, it's my turn!"

Andy stayed in his position, he swung the sword, and the string started to extend. It had great momentum, while utilising his immense strength and swinging it down from above.

Magnus had no choice but to lift his hands above his head. The great sword landed right on top of him, crushing the ground beneath, and almost crushing him.

"Arghh!" Magnus had to use all his strength and power, including that of the borrowed power. The marking on his head glowed once again, and he managed to deflect the sword to the side, so it touched the ground.

When it did, a long line of blood aura went out for as long as one could see.

With the sword still attached to the red blood string, Andy was quick to use it again as he swung it to the side. Magnus was barely able to block the hit.

The sword was now swinging fast, coming from multiple directions and all Magnus could do was attempt to deflect the energy.

'If I keep blocking the hits like this, my energy is going to be depleted fast. Who knew there was such a strong individual from this new generation!'

Andy knew it was best for him to not get close in this fight. Otherwise he would have to suffer from the traps laid out by Magnus, which was why he continued to use his power like so.

He could continue to power the blood sword, using his blood aura through the string. What Magnus didn't know was that this was something his father had taught him as well. A vampire's soul weapon, and in his case, it was one that allowed him to pass blood aura through his strings.

It was why the sword was still so powerful but it wasn't enough, he needed a big hit to finish off his opponent.

Running forward, Andy was taking a risk, he pulled the blade from the string close to him, and held it by its handle.

With the sword held in his hand, he lifted it in the air, and his hand started to grow in size. The muscles from the shoulder, the forearm and even the hand itself. All of it was growing to the point where it looked like it was the hand of a giant.

The giant sword no longer looked giant.

"I will protect the Vampire Corps!" Andy shouted, as he swung his giant hand down with the giant sword, right where Magnus was.

Chapter 2337: Not A Vampire

With the large-scale attack coming from Andy, mud and dirt was kicked up from all over the ground, it was shaking and the floor was almost breaking underneath them. He quickly went back, and grabbed onto Jessica while the two of them moved away.

"Your... your arm... it's back to normal." Jessica said.

"Yeah, but I'm not sure if it's over yet or not." Andy said looking back.

When they got to a clearer part of land, Andy and Jessica landed back on the ground. He felt a little saddened due to not being able to pull all of the Vampire Corps members out of the area.

He had used his string powers to fling their bodies out of the way, hoping to retrieve them after the fight, but he was unable to get them all, and hoped that his attack hadn't damaged their bodies too much.

As for Andy himself, his body was back to its regular size, at least his giant arm was. As a Colossal Draugr subclass, he could change his whole size just like the Great subclass. He could turn his whole body into a giant form, which provided him more strength and resilience compared to his smaller form.

However, being bigger also meant one was an easier target. Getting out of the way of large scale attacks and so on was harder. What the Colossal Draugr could do compared to the Great subclass, was to freely change certain body parts, allowing Andy to bring out the great strength when he needed it just like right now in the battle.

The dust started to settle and a pair of red glowing eyes could still be seen burning brightly. Both Jessica and Andy clicked their tongues seeing this because it was a clear sign that he was still alive, although he was no longer in one piece.

"You ungrateful b*stard!" Magnus shouted. His left arm, from his shoulder had been removed from his body. It was a clean cut, and even with his blood aura and help of celestial energy he wasn't able to protect himself from the attack.

With his one good hand, he had somewhat burnt the end with his blood aura. The body was healing over the wound, so he wouldn't die from something like this

"I am an original!" Magnus shouted. "It's because of me, you even exist in the first place. If I ask for you to hand over that girl, if I ask you to take your life, to give me all your possessions, then you should do it!"

Andy held the sword firmly in his hand, ready to go toe to toe with Magnus again, he had already done a lot of damage, so there wasn't much more for him to do.

"Are you crazy, are you my father, are you my mother, you are neither of them, so I have no reason to thank you. You're just a crazy old man!" Andy shouted back.

The marking on Magnus' head started to glow extremely bright, and an orb of power was emitted out from him. It wasn't blood aura, the energy was more weighty. Swinging his sword again, in the same fashion he had done before, Andy was blocking the energy from reaching the two of them.

For a moment, Andy stretched out his hand, outside the zone where his sword was covering him from the energy. His hand was in pain, he could feel the great force of the energy and it wasn't like one he had felt before.

Its power was not that of a vampire, and if they were to step out, they could very well be consumed by the energy.

"Stay behind me!" Andy shouted.

What Andy didn't know was that there was a rise in power behind him as well. As Magnus was drawing more power, from a particular individual, Jessica's energy inside her, it was growing to the point where she felt great pain in her chest and head.

'Magnus, what is happening to him right now, what is he doing?'

On the outside of his head, a white solid structure started to form. It was covering the top part of his head, down to the top of his jaw. It looked almost like the outside of a skull. His eyes would normally be seen through this skull.

The clothes and armour on his body were ripping off, leaving only a trace of armour around his neck and hips. His whole body was now on show.

His bare skin was moving, as if there were bugs crawling beneath it. The shade of the skin started to get darker as time went by.

Out from his long severed arm, something erupted. It looks like part of a giant centipede as there were multiple segments. At the end, two large claws that made it look like fangs.

The other arm of Magnus exploded turning into the same contraption that had just appeared. Slowly, his feet started to change shape as well, getting bigger and wider.

His whole body grew and it looked like whatever he had turned into had finished, he was now an 8 foot creature that was only seen in nightmares.

"What has he turned into?" Andy said. "That is no vampire that I know of, or have ever seen."

At least, when Laxmus had transformed the somewhat resembles a vampire but here Magnus was nothing like that at all.

With the transformation complete, Andy could feel that the energy was no longer spreading out, with no fear, he ran ahead at full speed, and then when he was close his hand started to grow in size and rather than swinging from above he swung from the side.

Magnus stayed in place and smiled. With the sword coming right at him, he swung his left arm forward and it started to extend at a great speed. The separate segments on his arms started to grow, and in between the parts there was what looked like living flesh.

A strange green liquid was dripping from parts of his hand and floor. It crashed right into the sword, the two sharp things and Andy couldn't believe it, his strength, he couldn't move back it was pushing against his arm.

When Andy looked down, he could feel a stinging sensation in his stomach as well. While Magnus went to stop the attack with one hand with the other, he had extended it out hitting Andy right in the stomach.

"It... hurts so much!" Andy gritted his teeth, he could feel something being injected into his body, and he was getting weaker by the second.

"Hahah!" Magnus laughed. "All of you have no idea, you have no idea how small you are in this world, or who you are going against. Immortui is our creator, and we vampires are just one of the many creations he has."

"Do you really think we are the strongest of his creations? With his powers he managed to create devastating creatures, similar to what I am now, and with it, he took over the other world. The entire universe in the other plane!"

"Can't you tell, Can't you see, a being that is that powerful, when coming over to here will create a new world, and when that happens you need to make sure you are on the right side. All of you, everything you are fighting for, will turn into nothing!"

With the hand that had stopped Andy's blade, it started to retract back before extending again. It flared about in the air, hitting the giant hand from all areas. The two large fangs that were on the end of Magnus' hands were slashing through the skin, and it was taking large chunks of Andy's hand away.

"Stop!" Jessica shouted, as she screamed and ran forward. She pulled out her daggers, adn covered them in all the energy she could, she swung them down deep into Magnus' hand that was embedded into Andy.

When they hit, the extended arm looked to bend inwards doing next to no damage, but the arm retracted back. Next, Jessica was looking at what to do about Andy's other arm, but it had already been sliced to nothing and detached from his body.

Andy at that moment, fell onto both of his knees, he had no clue what was happening, but he could feel something oozing around in his body making him weaker.

In this situation what could she do, Andy was in no state to fight, and if the powerful Andy was unable to defeat Magnus in this new transformed state, there wasn't much she could do either.

Turning around, she could see the cruel smile underneath Magnus' skeleton-like face. She then pulled up her daggers and pointed it right at her neck.

"You want me right... if you don't leave Andy alone... if we don't leave right now, then you won't get what you want, I'll kill myself!" Jessica exclaimed.

Chapter 2338: Taken away

Jessica felt like her back was up against a wall. People were constantly dying and all for her. Originally, when she had agreed to the plan, the main factor that had convinced her was that no more people would get hurt.

Yet here, people were getting hurt right in front of her, so she decided that she needed to act. Both of the daggers were pressed against her neck, while she stood in front of Andy.

"Jessica.." Andy said, still struggling on his knees. The wound that had been delivered was no longer there, but he could feel the strange substance that was in his body.

Luckily, due to what he was, Andy could feel his body fighting against the substance. It would just be a little while, until he would be able to fight at full strength.

'I was caught off guard, but there are still things I can do to help you.' Andy thought. 'If you can just buy some time, until my body will heal.'

Magnus had hesitated in attacking for a second, sweat could almost be seen from his forehead, but not because he was tired from the battle, but due to him being a little nervous at what Jessica was doing.

Shaking his head a smile appeared on his face.

"You are a young vampire, are you seriously going to give up your life for these people?" Magnus asked. "Like you said, I have no plans to kill you, so why would you even think about such a dangerous act?"

Having somewhat convinced himself, Magnus looked at his strange centipede-like hand, it started to wriggle about with all of the different segments vibrating and making a strange hissing sound.

He was ready to move his hand, when he could smell it in the air, the smell of blood. Jessic had pressed the bladed part of the dagger deeper into her skin and blood was dripping down from the wound.

The centipede-like hand stopped wriggling for a second along with the expression that was on Magnus's face.

"You dumb b*tch!" Magnus shouted. "Have vampires with each new generation become more blind, and stupider, as well as weaker? What do I have to do, what do I have to go through to open your eyes!"

There was a big frustration for Magnus, but this always had been. Even during his time, during his reign as king, there were many that didn't agree with him back then. It frustrated him that he was experiencing the same thing now again.

He took a deep breath.

"At least, I have gotten what I originally came for, there is no need to push my luck."

He mumbled under his breath.

"Fine." Magnus said. "Come over here, and we shall leave him be."

Jessica was also relieved, she looked back over her shoulder at Andy. Happy that someone who was protecting her, at the risk of his own life, was going to live.

"Thank you." Jessica said, and she started to walk, heading over toward Magnus.

'NO!' Andy screamed in his head and punched the ground, it was a heavy hit and shook the floor around him. 'I can feel my body getting better, I just needed more time, but if I go out like this, then I will definitely die!'

Jessica was half way, walking over slowly, she was making sure that Magnus didn't go ahead and try a fast one. Then when she was around five metres away she stopped.

"Remember your promise... otherwise you won't get what you want. I care about that person a lot." Jessica stated.

"I understand." Magnus quickly extended his arm, and the two fangs on the end split wide like a mouth, they wrapped around her waist, before chucking her into the ship. She still had the dagger up against her neck, but now was inside the ship next to the dead body,

Using his other arm, he did the same to the dead body, before proceeding to chuck it out, then he turned around and started to walk toward the ship. He had his head held up looking at Jessica, his eye brows were furrowed.

When he was only a few feet away from the ship he stopped.

"You know what, f*ck it. Let's see if you really will go through with your threat!"

Magnus turned around extending his arm out, and it went straight towards the injured Andy. He had recovered somewhat, but not enough to move fast. With his good hand, he grew it large and covered his body.

The arm started to strike fast like a whip, cutting through pieces of the giant arm, just like before it was only a matter of time until the arm was completely removed from its body and Andy would be defenceless.

"Stop... stop! You promised, you promised!" Jessica shouted.

"And you promised to kill yourself, but I don't see that happening at the moment!" Magnus laughed and continued to swing his arm.

"This is too much fun!" Magnus shouted.

His arm was swinging again, but then just before it reached the outer of Andy's arm, large blood cannons came shooting out, hitting the arms away. They were knocked back, but powering through Magnus continued his strike, until a large amount of blood dropped down.

The blood started to light up, and a huge explosion went off. Magnus had no choice but to retreat his hands back. The area was covered in smoke, making it hard for him to see. It was clear though, that someone had interfered.

"That power... it belongs to him... he's here!"

The smoke settled and two figures could be seen. It was two originals that Magnus knew well, Edvard and Hikel.

"I think it would be best if you left this person alone." Edvard said. "Unless you think you could beat the three of us, in your bug man form."

Magnus was grinding his teeth in anger. In this form, he was quite confident he could take on all three, especially since Andy was practically a dead man already, but there was still a chance, and a risk.

"Why are you here, how did you even find me!" Magnus demanded to know.

This was part of the worry, before Edvard and Hikel set out. Sure there were many that didn't know what the two looked like, but Magnus would certainly recognize them.

"We already told you, this person behind us is very important." Hikel answered.
"We had him on our list, and thought that you might go after him."

A convincing lie and a tense situation. Would Magnus fall for the bait or not, it was hard to tell, that was until the marking on his head glowed once more.

"You are right, we got what we came for." Magnus said, as he jumped back and landed in his ship.

"Don't think I won't forget this, the next time we meet, you're all dead!" Magnus shouted through the glass.

The ship went off taking Jessica with them, which was the best result that they could have asked for, now it was just time for the next step.

Chapter 2339: The last worry

Just like that, Edvard and Hikel allowed Magnus to escape. As they looked at the ship in the distance they did think about attacking it, but of course that would go against their plan, and would harm Jessica inside.

For the two of them, the hate for Magnus was just growing as time went by.

"Why... why didn't the two of you do anything?" Andy asked.

Although in pain, Andy did manage to catch a glimpse of the two faces, and unlike regular vampires who might not know the faces of the originals, Andy made himself aware of all vampires, since it was part of his job, and that included who the current leaders at the settlement were.

So he had a pretty good idea of their strength, and with the three of them, he was sure they would have been able to do something.

"Hey, do you even know how much I had to hold back?" Edvard asked. "I was just waiting for him to try and attack you, that way I would have had an excuse to get a few good hits in."

"In the end, the best case scenario occurred." Hikel added. "Anyway, what even was that, what had Magnus turned into? Is that his borrowed power from Immortui?"

Judging from how calm the two were acting, and how they were talking it seemed like they were aware of the situation, but this was just giving Andy more of a headache than anything, and he wasn't sure if it was because he didn't quite understand the situation, or whatever was injected inside of him.

"I think... I'm just going to close my eyes for a bit." Andy said weakly, as his whole body collapsed to the side.

Andy could hear the sound of voices around him, it sounded like the same two earlier, but they seemed to be talking to someone else.

"So what do we do now?" One of the voices asked.

"We have to wait, but we can't let them get too far away from us. Logan will be arriving soon, and then we will head to whatever location they are at when they stop moving. Depending on what it's like and how guarded it is, we will make the next move." Another voice said.

Finally, opening his eyes, Andy could see he was still on the same field as before, and he was right, the two that were talking were still there, but then there was a

person he had never seen before, nor did he recognize him from his memory bank of faces.

"Oh, looks like your up." Quinn said with a smile, he was still wearing the special mud mask that Peter had given him. "You're a strong one. It looks like Magnus had injected some type of poison inside you.

"It's more aggressive than even Qi to a vampire's body, but due to your nature, and healing capabilities, it looks like you were saved."

"Hey!" Edvard called out. "Don't forget about my Dalki blood, it was the last lot that I had. What am I meant to do now, when I'm the one in trouble."

Andy still had a raised eyebrow, but he could see that his arms, both of them had regrown. Usually this would only be the case if he consumed some type of human flesh, but it appeared that Dalki blood had the same effect for him.

It was a good thing to note, since Human blood didn't regenerate his body, he was more like a wight in that sense.

"I'm sorry, but who are you, do I know you?" Andy asked.

"Ah... sorry I'm under disguise, but it's me Quinn." Quinn answered with a smile, but the smile quickly faded away. It was rare for him to smile in these moments, there was just too much on the line.

"Wait, Jessica, they took Jessica, Quinn you told me to protect her but, I failed. You were right, someone is after her." Andy said, getting up to his feet.

"It's okay, I'm sorry it looks like in all my troubles I forgot to update you completely on the situation, but Jessica getting taken was all part of the plan." Quinn explained.

"The plan?"

Quinn went on to explain to Andy about how Jessica was the one who volunteered. Since they knew she was a target, this was the best way to get to Magnus. Originally, they thought they couldn't trust anyone in the Vampire Corps, so they didn't even want to tell Andy, but he appeared to be fully on their side.

"I'm sorry." Andy said. "I told you that I was going to protect my father. I guess my decision to act must have ruined your plans."

"No, you did what you thought was right, and you fought with your life on the line. You honestly only did what I would have done, so I can't blame you for that, with what information you had." Quinn replied. "Besides, we now have an idea of Magnus' strength as well."

Andy was thankful for Quinn's understanding.

"So what are you going to do now."

"Now... we wait, we have a plan, and we just need everything to work out."

Back in the vampire settlement, Peter had been taking charge of things. He had been followed by Muka, and regularly went around the city. The first few times, he had done a few things that were questionable, things that perhaps the real Quinn wouldn't have done.

There were several bones broken, vampires hit in the face, vampires that were literally kicked until they went out of the settlement, but something surprising seemed to happen.

Whereas Muka thought this would ruin Quinn's image, instead everyone seemed quite happy to see him.

Walking around the settlement, the children would run up and give him a big hug. Others would ask if there was going to be another show today, by that they meant another beating by Quinn.

It wasn't just the children though, all of the vampires felt like Quinn was connecting with them on a more personal level, and instead of letting guards, or other members deal with the problems, he had decided to deal with them himself.

This had also affected Minny's popularity at school. Many wanted to know her even more and were asking questions about her father. Wondering just how strong he was.

Of course, Minny knew that it was Uncle Peter and not her father, so she would just reply stating that he was really strong, and maybe he would come in one day.

All of this surprisingly led to one other thing, and that was the amount of crimes that were committed in general. They were starting to lower, no one talked bad about Quinn anymore. No one did petty crimes such as stealing or scamming their fellow vampires.

Because if he got word of it, then he would deal with them, and although it wasn't in a conventional way, Muka had to admit it worked.

"I can't believe it." Muka said as she looked at the reports that were on her desk. "Everyday there are fewer reports of crimes. I wouldn't condone dealing with these with violence. It just goes and shows that violence is allowed as long as it's from a particular individual."

"In this case though, Peter is overwhelmingly strong that everyone is just living in fear, too scared to act."

While sitting at her office continuing to do her work as usual, a particular telepathic message was sent to her. She almost jumped out of her seat when she heard who wanted to speak to her.

"Has he finally solved everything, sure put him through!" Muka said.

A connection was made and Muka could now hear everything that Quinn was saying. Her excitement as she heard what was happening and what he was speaking about started to go.

"I see." Muka said.

"There is something else I need to talk to you about as well, it's very important and might involve everyone." Quinn said. "But first tell me how are things at the settlement."

Muka went on to tell stories of how hard her work had been with Peter, but she also told him about all of the positive changes as well.

"That's good to hear... if the settlement is left to him, then I won't feel so guilty now, he is a better leader than I thought he would be." Quinn said.

"Wait, leave the settlement to Peter what are you talking about."

With a heavy heart, Quinn went into detail of what he wanted to speak to next. Muka was too shocked to even speak back when she heard this, she couldn't believe he was doing this.

"But... what about your family, shouldn't you speak to them before you do this?"

"I... don't want to keep worrying them." Quinn answered. "This will be the last time I worry them."

Chapter 2340: A friend turning

Muka, who would usually be reading reports, calling meetings and discussing with other leaders how to improve life in the vampire settlement, had put all that on pause. After learning of what Quinn had told her, she was unable to stop pacing back and forth.

"I thought Peter was troublesome and the one to worry about, but now he goes ahead and drops this bomb on me?" Muka thought.

Thinking back, Quinn did always do things first, Peter was just a worse version of him. Perhaps because the two spent a lot of time with each other, meant the two had rubbed off on each other.

'Who am I kidding, both of them are trouble, but there is something about Quinn. Maybe it's the fact that he can do these things so fearlessly that attracts people around him.'

Looking around her room, she saw the old helmet that she used to wear that would cover up her entire head. For a while, not many even knew that Muka was a female leader, nor did they know of her beauty.

She had covered herself up due to all the attention she would get, but had done so less and less as time went on. The significance of the leaders and their duties in the settlement lessened, so she tried her best to take herself less seriously but it was a hard habit to kick.

The helmet had since been altered, not being as bulky as it was before, but still covered the entire face allowing for only the eyes and mouth to be seen. It was placed on a stand, like one would use to hold their wigs. Taking it off, she placed the mask on and headed outside, she needed some air to take in everything.

While walking down the streets of the vampire settlement, there were still some that would turn to look at her. It wasn't because they recognised her, but due to the beauty that would still shine with just her eyes and lips alone showing.

They were so alluring that if a person stared into them for a short while, they would be hypnotised into doing anything Muka asked them, she just wished that this would work on Quinn, then she would be able to tell him how she felt.

Suddenly, she stopped, dead centre. Other vampires had to walk around her, and were giving her strange looks, as she appeared to be a person that was lost.

'The person I feel so bad for in all of this, is Layla.' Muka thought. 'She will know nothing of what is happening, and she is to raise two kids. They hardly spent any time with their father, will they be okay? Sure, I can do my best, everyone in the settlement can help out, but I know things won't feel the same.'

She soon felt her legs walking toward the location where Layla was at, she was moving because she had planned to go against Quinn's words. She was going to tell Layla and let her decide. Usually Muka wouldn't dare go against Quinn, but if she was in the same position as Layla, she knew that she would have wanted to know.

In the middle of her walk, there was a disturbance that was coming from her right. else looked human.

01:28

Its arms were like two giant drills and even its head was shaped like a drill with two white spots for "Help... help, it's gone out of control!" A vampire shouted, as he ran out his front door and onto the street. His clothes were ripped, they were bloody, several marks were on his face, and he was so startled that he stumbled on the floor.

Following right behind, coming out from the door, there was a floating creature. It had no legs, but almost looked like the upper half of a human body. Although apart from its limbs and torso, nothing else looked human.

Its arms were like two giant drills and even its head was shaped like a drill with two white spots for eyes.

'It's a familiar... is it trying to kill its owner?'

The man swung his arm, letting out a blood swipe, it hit the familiar sending it back, and it had turned into black mist. It looked like a crisis was averted and there was no need for Muka to do anything.

Before, only strong vampires were able to link up with familiars, due to their short nature. If they didn't like their host, then familiars would often attempt to kill their host. In turn this would get rid of the familiar as well, as they had broken a contract.

They were strange things, but if whatever reason they joined a person in the first place, if that person strayed from this, or they no longer felt the same way, then this would often be the result, but Muka thought back to the reports.

It had been a while, but for some reason, familiars were appearing less and less in their world. In the first place, the area where the familiars would appear was the old vampire settlement and not the current one, but there would still be those that would journey and try to get one.

Regardless, these days, there seemed to be fewer and fewer familiars willing to join, ever since the dhampir incident.

While thinking of all of this, a black mist started to appear from the vampire man's hands, the familiar was appearing again.

"No... no! Someone help me!" The man screamed at the top of his lungs.

'That familiar, it's appearing again!' Muka thought. 'But that's so soon, it shouldn't have enough energy to appear again.'

Just like the vampire man and Muka feared, the familiar had appeared again. Seeing this situation, she ran across and grabbed the familiar right by the head. The vampire aura was strong in the palm of her hand.

"I know you things can understand me, if you appear and disturb this man again and again, then it will just be the same result. I will make sure you feel pain."
Making her aura erupt, it engulfed the familiar and it turned into nothing but black mist again.

She looked at the vampire on the ground, something was strange about the situation. The vampire was strong enough to deal with the familiar, so he was stronger than it, but why was he covered in wounds, why did he look exhausted, just how many times had he gone against that familiar.

For some reason, Muka felt like something was up, she helped the vampire up, off the ground.

"I think it's best if you go with me."

Heading back to her castle, she asked for reports to be gathered on familiars and other things. She needed to see a link. Apparently this wasn't the first case, there had been reports of quite a few familiars attacking their owners.

They had risen sharply after the vampire and dhampir incidents.

'Did many of the dhampirs have familiars?' Muka started to think. 'We have learned that the familiars feed off Qi energy. Vampires don't have much Qi energy in the first place. However, the vampire settlement happened to be in a palace where familiars were welcomed... and thanks to the rituals by Richard Eno, he had a way for us to connect to the other world and form contracts with them.'

'However, dhampirs and humans have more Qi energy than us. It was almost as if vampires were gatekeeping this fact from them. Is that why they are acting up... I'm really not sure, and how can I even look into this matter if that's the case.' Muka thought.

Walking in through the door without even a knock was Quinn, or at least the person who was acting like Quinn. For a moment she was excited thinking she could ask him for help, but Peter, what could he do?

"You look troubled, is there anything you need me to beat up?" Peter asked.

At that moment, a deafening alarm and alert had been sounded throughout the whole settlement. The alarm was put in place, for when there was big trouble on the way.

Chapter 2341: An old face

There were small borders that were placed around the settlement. They weren't quite walls per se, but more like barriers, where there would be gates and a group of vampires that would stay as permanent guards.

This was because for the most part, the settlement was safe. There would rarely be attacks from beasts, and there were next to no attacks from the outside, but just in case, they did need to install safety precautions.

One of these precautions that had been installed were towers. There were several towers that were embedded with crystal energy and technology, and there were guards as well. The idea was that those in the towers could see if an attack was coming from afar, or if one was coming from above.

At the same time, the towers had large amounts of crystal energy that could be used to form a barrier, if there was some sort of attack from the outside or above. All of this was an especially automated system designed mostly by Vincent with the help of a few others.

It had been a while since the settlement had embraced his crazy ideas and work, and honestly he was happy about it. Vincent was enjoying his passion once more, without having to worry about the responsibilities of looking after the people or trying to run the place.

He had even thought about going into Eternal slumber himself, but wished to stay at least until everything was resolved and he was satisfied once again.

In one of the towers, there were two guards that were standing side by side, looking out in the distance, one of them was none other than Ronkin.

"Man, things sure have been quiet around here, even when we're not on tower duty, it's even quiet in the settlement lately." Another guard, who was a little chubby around the face and belly, named Bret said. "I know it has to be because of Quinn. Man, he's been doing a lot lately, so much that we don't even have to do anything. He's great don't you think?"

"Yeah." Ronkin smiled, thinking back to when his life was saved once more. Quinn was certainly a great guy, but he was unable to get enthusiastic about the conversation at hand. Because, there was something about Quinn's recent actions, it just didn't feel like him.

There were even times where Ronkin would wave, and although Quinn would wave back, it just didn't feel the same way. He wasn't quite sure if he was imagining it or not.

Of course, the detail of what Peter was currently doing was even kept from Ronkin. There was no telling who would find out, and when controlled what information could be passed on.

As the two continued to look out in the open, they didn't see anything, but a small beep was sounded in the tower behind them.

Ronkin went to have a look. In the centre of the tower there was a large terminal that looked more like a table. The outside was filled with a number of different controls. What Ronkin was looking at though, was the projected map.

It covered the settlement and more.

"Look at this, it's saying it is sensing an abnormal amount of energy in the forest." Ronkin pointed.

"It... it looks like an attack!" Ronkin shouted, as he went and quickly slammed one of the buttons. If it was a false alarm then he would take the blame, but he would rather it be a false alarm than have "Could it be a beast attack?" Bret asked.

Ronkin shook his head, it didn't look like it, after all it was just a single area of energy. However, that quickly changed. From the single area of energy, multiple smaller energies seemed to be coming out. After that, it looked like more large energies like the first one were appearing from all over.

"It... it looks like an attack!" Ronkin shouted, as he went and quickly slammed one of the buttons. If it was a false alarm then he would take the blame, but he would rather it be a false alarm than have people die, which was why he had acted instantly.

The alarm sounded all over the settlement, and the vampires that were at the gates including those inside, were aware that something was happening. Out through the forest that was not too far from the doorstep to the settlement, they could see it, charging though there looked to be groups of creatures coming out.

At first they looked like beasts but there was something slightly different about them.

On the streets of the settlement, Peter and Muka had rushed out of their castle. Everyone was in motion as they wondered what was happening. As they ran through the streets though, they saw something strange.

Vampires, those that had familiar markings, and their familiars were coming out of the houses and the familiars were attacking not only their owner, but were also attacking those around them as well.

"Deal with the familiars, and keep an eye on all of those with a marking!" Muka shouted. "Make sure they are kept in an area, and have enough vampires supporting them if the familiars are to come back!"

Muka wanted to help those in the settlement, but she could feel it... that there was something bigger going on up ahead. This wasn't just something small or simple happening, it was a full fledged attack. It didn't take long for them to reach one of the gates, and Muka was right on the mark.

The vampires, they were doing their best, as they threw out blood swipes, used beast weapons and continued on with their formations, but there were many.

'Is this related to Immortui, is this his doing? Can he really do something like this, or is it something else?'

Familiars, just like beasts, were all shapes and sizes, but they tended to have more tricky powers and abilities compared to beasts, and at the same time the regular familiars were smarter as well.

What they soon could see, breaking through the trees with heavy footsteps, was a large type of familiar. It looked like a giant rhino, as its horn stuck out right in front of it, startling at the settlement. It was kicking its legs in the ground, charging up and getting ready to run forward.

"Stop that, stop that from coming into the settlement at all costs!" The vampire guards shouted.

They started to use their weapons and blood aura, hitting the rhino familiar. When they hit its thick skin, it looked to have done nothing. The rhino charged forward and showed no signs of slowing down as it went towards the settlement.

It continued to run, until dropping out from the sky they all could see hope, the person who was going around the settlement solving all of their problems lately, Quinn.

He tensed his fist, and threw it out hitting the rhino right in the horn. Its whole head sunk and crashed into the ground, before it turned into nothing but particles, returning from where it once was.

"Hmm, that thing just looked big and strong, I thought it would be a lot stronger than that." Peter said.

The others behind cheered for the vampire leader, and they could feel a boost of morale consuming them all. With the strong leader by their side, showing feats like this, what trouble could they possibly face.

Muka appeared by Peter's side, and she noticed that he was looking deep into the forest.

"What are you looking at?" She asked.

"These familiars, they're coming through portals." Peter answered. "This... it feels familiar... I think I know this feeling."

Peter soon took off running ahead. On his way though, he decided to help out the settlement a little, as he would jump from side to side, delivering a punch, and defeating the familiars in a single hit. Each one of them was getting destroyed and with each one a loud cheer was heard.

Ronkin, who was watching from the settlement, was shaking his head.

'I'm sure of it... that's not Quinn... he hasn't even used his blood powers.' He thought.

Eventually, Peter and Muka had entered the forest but Peter had come to a sudden stop. He looked dead straight ahead and could see someone, or something, that he recognised.

"You... you damn betrayer, what are you doing here, you stupid Boneclaw!" Peter yelled.

Chapter 2342: No Talking!

In the middle of the forest, standing at the back, Peter could see the Boneclaw right there. It looked the same as he remembered, with its large muscular body, displaying flesh from the top half while its bottom half was covered by a black ripped cloth. Its bony spine that stuck out, along with its sharp elbows.

The most notable feature of the Boneclaw, though, was its large long arms, and its dangling long deadly claws that scraped the bottom of the floor. It was one that would give many people nightmares if they saw it. It was familiar, one of the strongest ones in existence since it was part of the four kings, but that was why Peter was so mad because he could remember it well.

The Boneclaw originally belonged to Richard Eno and helped him in his ploys. Through its visions Quinn had learnt it played a big part in tricking Arthur and creating what was known as the Punishers. But after that, it wandered around the vampire settlement for a while before it attached itself to Quinn.

The reason as to why the Boneclaw attached itself to Quinn was unknown. Was it his strong energy, his desire, or something else, maybe it was still following orders from Richard Eno. Either way it had helped Quinn through his journey and saved his life at times.

When Quinn had fought with Graham, he needed to go into eternal slumber to rest, and in doing so, he had given up the Boneclaw.

When the owner of familiars died, it was assumed that the familiar would die with them, but from what they had learned, it was more likely that they just returned to the familiar world waiting to make a new contract with someone else.

Of course, this could have just been the case with the four kings. They were so strong and full of energy that they were able to survive in this world even without a host or contract. Either way, when the Boneclaw came back, not just the Boneclaw, but the four kings had all decided to host in a single person, Erin Heley.

The leader of the dhampirs and the one that was going against Quinn. It had made things more difficult for them when trying to take out Erin, and now, the betrayer, the disloyal mutt in Peter's eyes, was attacking them once again.

"Haha!" Peter started to laugh. "This is great, you know, I never liked how you were by his side and was supposedly supposed to be always protecting him when he needed it most. Now you're attacking the entire vampires with your army of familiars. I can't wait to bring you all down!"

Peter charged forward, running through the woods. His arm had hit a large tree, but he didn't care nor did he let it slow him down as it went right through it.

"Peter wait, I mean Quinn wait!" Muka corrected herself. She was lucky that there was no one else around. "We don't know why they are attacking. This could be a trap!"

The Boneclaw lifted its hands, and in doing so, several portals opened around the area. Coming right out from them were familiars. Peter raised his hand, the yellow aura started to cover it.

All of the familiars went toward Peter, and it looked like his whole body was encased by them, but the next moment a blast of energy came out from his fist, so large that it consumed all of the familiars, making them disappear on the spot.

When his feet touched the ground, using his strength Peter exploded off the floor right toward the Boneclaw. He threw out his fist but it had hit nothing but the air.

Peter felt a tingling sensation coming from his right. He couldn't see the Boneclaw, but it was almost as if he knew that it was there. He swung his arm out, covered in the outer energy he was able to form, and it clashed against the large claws, swinging the Boneclaw's arm wide.

"Did you think I forgot about your crappy teleporting power!" Peter shouted as he followed up with a punch, but the Boneclaw quickly moved out of the way again and was now up high on a branch while more of the other familiars came in.

One looked like a giant ostrich, but when it opened up its mouth, flames went out all over Peter's body. Covering his head and the rest of himself with both arms, he was unhurt by the flames and directly went to grab the bird creature's long neck.

"Get the f*ck out of my way!" Peter screamed as he pulled on the neck and kicked the bird creature's body, leaving only the head of the familiar in his hands.

It would have been a bloody sight if it was a beast, but thankfully it was a familiar, and when the two parts were separated, they turned into nothing but particles of energy that were disappearing.

"That Boneclaw, he's fast with his teleporting, but he can't hurt me with my current strength," Peter thought. "If I was able to use my celestial form, then my head tails would be quick enough to catch him and get him off guard... but I promised her, I promised her while I was pretending to be Quinn that I wouldn't transform into that form."

Muka was dealing with her own troubles. She was fighting off familiars in the forest as well, and she was also debating whether or not to go back to the settlement because she was sure that they were somewhat struggling.

"Alright... it looks like we might have made a mistake," a voice echoed. It wasn't coming from the Boneclaw, but it seemed like it was coming from somewhere else.

Peter and Muka were looking around, but they were unable to locate where the sound was coming from. What they did notice was that in the forest, they were still surrounded by a number of familiars. They had created a type of ring around the two, but none of them were moving in like before.

"I think it is best that we talk because it looks like this current situation isn't good for both of us," the voice said again.

Now looking at the Boneclaw, there seemed to be a black cat that was seen on its shoulder. This was Ovinnik, another one of the four kings, one that used to belong to Leo at one point, but once again, just like the Boneclaw, they had teamed up with Erin.

"You attacked us first, and now you want to talk!" Peter laughed. "What is it, is it because you realize that you're too weak to beat us?"

Muka wanted to tell Peter to shut up because she wanted to know the reason for the attack in the first place, but she felt like he was right. Why talk now? Why did the familiars not try to talk to them before? Was it Peter's strength? Or another trick by whoever had orchestrated this?

"In our desperate situation, we were unable to think straight. I assure you as well, this is something that we never wanted to do," Ovinnik stated. "The situation is not like we thought, and honestly, we are surprised to see that you are still here, Quinn."

Muka was surprised to hear this. They referred to Quinn by his name, and the way they were talking about him, it was as if he was dead.

"You want to talk? Well, right now you guys are the only ones giving us trouble, so you can talk to my fist!" Peter shouted as he jumped high from his position and headed straight for the two of them.

"Wait!" Muka set off following right behind Peter.

Seeing this, the Boneclaw waved his hand, and a portal had opened in front of the two of them. They entered the portal and landed on the ground, but where they landed, it was not the same world they were in before.

The two of them were now in the familiar world.

Chapter 2343: A lifeless world

Both Peter and Muka were on unfamiliar ground, the soil rather than black, was mystic, it was mostly purple in colour, but it sparkled like glitter while leaving all sorts of different colours. Just to make sure the floor was real, Muka bent down to pick it up while allowing it to fall to the floor like sand. When they looked up at the sky, they were able to see a mystic shifting of blue, green, and purple all mixed in together.

It was constantly moving and it was hard to see where the sky was or space since it all seemed to blend in together in one place.

And finally, there were the strange orbs of energy that were floating about, but there weren't many of them, at least not as many as the last time someone had visited such a place.

"Where are we?" Muka asked, touching her head, wondering if she was in a dream or under some type of hypnosis, but it all felt real and she remembered the last thing that had happened to them. "That portal, did it take us to another planet, another place?"

When looking at the landscapes off in the distance though, they somewhat felt familiar. The land, the trees, everything was different but it was almost as if the shapes were the same. She might have thought they were going crazy, but it almost looked exactly like the current vampire settlement. Not in terms of buildings and such, but the landmass.

"This..." Peter said. "Is the familiar world. We are nowhere near close to home."

A place that very few had ever travelled to, Muka couldn't believe that she was here, just because she was trying to keep an eye on Peter, and it looked like they weren't alone.

"You are right, it's been a while since we last saw you." A voice said.

Looking around, Muka was trying to find out where the voice had come from, that was until something small that was moving on the ground, started to grow until it was around the same size as them. Looking at it, she had to blink a few times to check what it was, but it was indeed a purple coloured turtle.

Another one of the four kings, Genbu. In the past, Muka had seen its power, as it was attached to the Graylash family. Genbu had done well not just during the Dalki war, but had also continued to help Owen during his reign of bringing vampires and humans together.

So much so, that there were even statues of Genbu on the Graylash planet. Many in the Graylash family would know of Genbu and honour him. The purple turtle with a great defensive and an almost impenetrable shell.

Portals by Genbu's side started to appear, similar to the ones that Muka and Peter had entered from, the Boneclaw, and Ovinnik had arrived, then through the third portal, a large horse, that had strange glowing light blue mist coming from its nostrils and where its hair would be.

Dunluck, the last of the four kings. The king had been used by Oscar, the former leader of the military. Although the two had only worked together after Oscar had changed into something else completely. The horse was said to have a strange strength and strange magical powers through its mist.

Here they all were, all of the rulers of the familiars were right there in front of them. Scattered around the land, there were also familiars in the background, aimlessly wandering, looking in their direction, but not acting from the far distance.

Gathering the energy in his fist Peter was ready to fight, but as the energy gathered around his fist, it acted differently than it would do from before. The energy was breaking off from his arm, bit by bit into the small balls.

However, Peter didn't care, he could still gather energy around his fist, and that was enough for him.

"Wait!" Muka shouted once again and latched herself onto his arm this time. She noticed her movements were slower than usual. She felt like something was pulling on her stomach. The energy it was being drained from her here as well. "There has to be a reason, a reason why they decided to bring us to this place and meet us here."

"That is what happens in our world, did you forget?" Ovinnik stated. "The energy you call Qi, gets taken, and it's what we feed on."

Ovinnik opened his mouth wide, and ate the ball's of energy that were coming off from Peter. Soon, even being in this place was starting to effect Peter, and even more so since he was actively using up his energy, so he decided for once to do the sensible thing and listen.

'I need to make sure I can keep on pretending to be Quinn, for his sake. Otherwise it would trouble him, so I need to live.' Peter said to himself nodding.

"You are the ones that rule this place right?" Muka asked. "Then explain, why have the familiars started to attack the vampire settlement, and why... why have they gone wild, and started to attack the vampires as well."

Genbu and Ovinnik looked at each other. Their expressions were hard to read. Ovinnik decided to hop onto the shell of Genbu, as he rested his fat belly and allowed his black tail to move in the wind.

"I guess I will be the one to do the talking, since I and Genbu here are really the only ones that can speak, but I want you to know, the attack on the vampire settlement, and the attack on the vampires themselves has been stopped. We can reassure you that the people are safe." Ovinnik explained.

Muka wanted to ask if that meant the attack had stopped completely, or was it a for now situation depending on how this conversation went, but she didn't want to stir up trouble.

"I heard what you said before." Muka said. "That it was a mistake, and you recognise Quinn, you said his name as if you didn't expect him to be here."

Ovinnik sighed as if it was bothersome explaining, which angered Peter, the energy was starting to rise in his fists again, how could the familiars be so calm about the situation, when they were the ones attacking and the leaders were right here in front of him.

"Calm down, this is a serious matter for us, I only yawned because we have hardly been able to rest, and do you think it was easy for us to all come to your world in the first place, or teleport you here? Do you have any idea how much energy we had to give to the Undead King!" Ovinnik shouted, and cleared his throat.

"You see, this world... for a long time, it has always lacked the energy that we need to survive. The energy that we gather from contracts with those from another world. We fed off the life force that you gave us through contracts that we made. Doing so, would you, Qi. It's as if this whole universe, everything inside it is dying, and that includes us as well.

"The only way we were able to sustain ourselves, was by making contracts with those from another world. We fed off the life force that you gave us through contracts that we made. Doing so, would open up connections between the two worlds allowing more energy to seep through.

"This is how the familiar world has continued to exist and why we continued to form contracts. Of course, our characters remained unchanged, which is why many of us were picky, but the natural energy in our world is leaving.

"Just look up, you can see that there isn't much energy left. To put it simply, we had no choice, our world is dying..."

Everything made sense so far as to why they would make the contracts. However, why attack the vampire settlement and what about everything else?

"I can see I haven't answered all your questions, but it is important that I tell you everything, everything that has led us up to the current actions that we had decided to take.... and the mistake that we realised that we might have made when we saw that you were here Quinn."

Muka gulped, it looked like the leaders had mistaken the disguised Peter as Quinn, and she was wondering when they found out the truth, if it would affect what they were about to say, but the best thing they could do was listen.

"I'm listening... tell us, what happened to the familiars." Muka asked.

"Everything was a plan... a plan that we had set up, when we had agreed to form a contract with the one named Erin Heley."

Chapter 2344: Joining The Future Battle

Muka had done a lot of research into the dhampirs and vampires. She was very involved for a period of time even assuming that they were behind the missing tombs.

What they had learned in the end was that Erin was one of the first to have her memories altered. How she had come in contact with Jim and Jack was unknown.

What was clear was that she had her memories altered before the attacks and since Leo and Owen were in possession of the familiar kings she had obtained these during that period of time.

"You joined with her, even though you knew that they were going against the vampires, the ones that you already made contracts with?" Muka asked with a bit of bad taste in her mouth.

"You have to understand our position." Ovinnik said. "First, contracts were only made with you vampires because of two reasons.

"One, there was an area where the link between our two worlds was strong. That happened to be on the planet where you vampires lived so we could make contracts that way.

"Second, you had a way to contact us and make contracts as well. It's not as if we chose you vampires, it just happened that you were our only option. You see, our world, as I said before, is slowly dying and what I mean by that is even the contracts we made with you vampires is not enough to save us. The energy you brought over was insufficient.

"Erin on the other hand, she had a lot of energy compared to any vampire we had ever been with before.

"Enough that even all four of us, the strongest of familiars, if attached to her would be able to pour new energy into our world."

It seemed like the theory Muka had was right. The vampires were more connected with the familiars by chance.

Dhampirs had a large amount of energy that was similar to Qi and Erin was indeed strong, but one thing was clear, looking at the state of the current world, teaming up with Erin didn't work.

"But your plan failed." Muka said. "Quinn defeated Erin, therefore there was no longer enough energy to save your world."

Ovinnik smiled when he heard this.

"Haha that's a good guess but that's not correct at all. You are correct in thinking we thought Quinn would never return.

"We never imagined him to come back and go against Erin. We were contracted with her so we were to protect her. Her death did put a large spanner in our plan but not because of what you think.

"Do you really think a single person, even if connected to us would be able to save the familiars' world? You are talking about a whole universe."

Now that Ovinnik had put it like that she did seem a bit embarrassed by saying her guess out loud.

"No, you see, our Undead king here has a great power. The power to open portals and that isn't just portals within our world but portals that can connect to other worlds.

"Such as yours. You see the plan was never to gather enough energy to restore our world but for our friend here to transport or the familiars to another world."

Muka's eyes widened, she somewhat understood but there were still a lot of things that didn't make sense so rather than guess, she would let the black cat continue on explaining.

"There are problems still even with this. From the beginning familiars can't survive in another world. Because our very core energy is still connected to ours.

"That is why even when we are in your world and are killed with no such contract, we will still form again but in our world. However, that forming can take a certain amount of time.

"The forming of energy though is due to the link that all of us familiars share. Essentially, it is what makes the familiars the way they are, and the world we are in is us ourselves.

"The world, or our world is like this because of us. As long as the main core of us manage to migrate to a new world then it will allow us to do the same here.

"Our bodies will be able to exist and just absorb the natural energy from your world without the need of contacts. So as you can see, we had no choice, we needed to come here for the survival of all of us."

Muka understood their position but still not all questions were answered.

"You said before, the link was between the old vampire world. If you wished to just migrate to us then why not do that? Why not calmly talk to us and why just attack

the vampire settlement?" Muka asked. "And it better be a good reason otherwise I won't let him hold back."

Peter was really paying attention to what they were saying and was judging everything by the reaction of Muka.

He was listening to her as well, because a lot of it was going over his head.

"Remember what I said?" Ovinnik asked. "That the Boneclaw had the power to transport us to different worlds, your world was not the only one we considered.

"There is a world that we know as Zeathun, it is a world full of beings far more powerful than us familiars, even for us kings.

"We did not know that, and we sent some familiars there long ago, wishing to migrate, and in turn they had managed to send someone back to us.

"It was clear that it wasn't the option, and now in that world their is someone even stronger that rules, one named Immortui."

This name caused both Peter and Muka to react as they instinctively took a step back, the idea that the familiars were working with him was now possible.

"You see we have been in contact with Immortui, we knew of his plans and he knew that we worked with the vampires.

"He knew that we needed a world, so he wanted us to attack you, to cause a war between the two of us. If we helped him, then he would allow us to live on one of the two worlds."

Judging by what they had been through, it was pretty clear what decision they had decided to make and now Muka was trying to think of a way to get out of here.

"Calm down." Genbu added. "There is a reason why we brought both of you here, listen till the end."

"When the deal was brought to us, it was when we were still with Erin at the time. We honestly had yet to make a decision, and that was because we had learned and heard that Quinn had returned.

"The Boneclaw, having been with Quinn for a certain period of time, believed in him. If Quinn was here then he would beat Immortui so making a deal with him was pointless, it would be better to communicate with the vampires.

"However, we still needed the energy from Erin. What happened, when Erin had been killed there was a forming period for us.

"This time, due to the energy being weak in our world the forming period took longer than we thought. In turn, when we finally returned Quinn... no one knew of him. He was nowhere to be seen or heard of.

"We thought once again he must have perished. So we felt like we had no choice, we could not go against Immortui, and he would take over your world anyway, so we had to join the winning side."

Ovinnik then jumped off from Genbu and all of them lined up in a row looking at Peter. They bowed their heads down in front of him.

"We made a mistake, we thought you were still gone. When we returned, we didn't take time to try and find out what the current situation was, we only knew how much time had passed. Immortui, isn't exactly a patient person, and from the looks of things he was gearing up for an attack on earth. He contacted us again, before we could even check things, and we decided to attack, using the energy the Boneclaw has or had but now we see that you are here, we wish to work with you once more.

"We wish to help you in the battle against Immortui. In turn for our help to find a way where we can survive as well. Please Quinn, if you agree we will do everything in our power to help you!" Ovinnik said.

Now all eyes were on Peter, waiting for his answer.

Chapter 2345: The Strongest Contract

In the end, Muka could understand the Familiars' situation well. It was a problem that they had always been struggling with and trying to solve. They were somewhat in the middle of all of this, just because they needed a place to live.

What she found most interesting, though, was how much the Boneclaw believed in Quinn. Based on the story they told, they had decided to help Immortui because they were simply unable to go against him. However, knowing that there would be some sort of giant battle and knowing what Immortui was trying to do, they still thought that if Quinn was there, he would prevail.

"The Boneclaw has been by Quinn's side and actually believes in him that much. There had to be a reason, something the Boneclaw saw in him," Muka thought.
"Although they say that the familiars are picky with their reason for picking a host, maybe that isn't true. They were just searching for people that could help them with the current situation they were in."

Despite all of this, there was still one overbearing problem that they needed to solve. Muka slowly turned her head toward Peter. She was unsure what type of expression she was pulling right now because she was extremely worried but didn't want to show the worry on her face.

"What would happen if they realize this is the fake Quinn... I mean Quinn is actually alive and well. So it shouldn't be a problem if we tell them the truth, right? Yeah, the truth is the best thing after all," Muka reassured herself.

"I see!" Peter said with a smile on his face and both hands on his hips. "In simple terms, you have decided to help Quinn again. If that's the case, then we have no problem at all. You are free to help as you wish."

The four kings turned to look at each other and nodded. It seemed like they had somewhat already agreed on this beforehand.

"Very well, but remember the deal. You are to help us in our situation. The Undead king has already used up a lot of energy trying to transport the familiars over, which means he is no longer in the position to do something like that.

"However, we will need what energy we have to help you in your battle. Once that task is done, you must find a way to bring us to your world. This is a verbal agreement and will be part of our contract."

Before anyone could say anything else, a strange large symbol had appeared in front of the four kings. Muka recognized it because it was the same symbol that the vampires would draw when trying to summon the familiars and create a contract.

Usually, there was a need for a drop of blood, but in this case, they were already in the familiar world, so there was no need. Muka wanted to burst out, telling the four kings to wait because she could already see what was going to happen.

However, all four of the four kings had turned into balls of energy and went right through into Peter's body, disappearing on the spot. Soon after, markings had appeared, four of them on all different parts of his body.

It was clear to Muka what just happened. Her mouth was left wide open, and her hand lifted toward her forehead as if she wanted to slap it.

"The four kings... just like they did with Erin, they wanted to make a contract with Quinn. They wanted to help him with his fight against Immortui, but now they have attached themselves to Peter."

It was too late to say anything now, and the four kings themselves realized the issue.

"What are you saying!" Ovin shouted. "Are you saying this is not Quinn? This is not the same feeling you got before?"

Ovin was shouting at the Boneclaw, which was communicating in grunts and such.

"Wait, we formed a contract. We are connected to this person," Genbu said. "This person, he looks the same as the one that I met. How can it not be the same person?"

The Boneclaw was insistent that this was not the same person. Now connected to Peter, he could feel the energy. While still in the familiar world, all of the markings on Peter started to light up, and the Four Kings appeared in front of him again.

"Explain yourself!" Ovin said, his head nearly full of flames, ready to attack at any moment. "You are not Quinn! You tricked us, you fooled us! Who are you? If you don't answer, then we will just have to kill you to break this contract."

The smile returned to Peter's face as he punched his fist into the palm of his hand.

"Oh, you guys do want to fight!"

"Wait, I can explain!" Muka darted in front of the two of them. "You are correct, this is not Quinn, but this is one of his closest friends. Just as you stated, Immortui has already begun to act. Quinn has currently gone to try and deal with him."

"In the meantime, he left Peter in charge to do his duties. That is why he looks like him. We were never meant to trick you. We were just protecting the settlement on Quinn's orders, and the one you believe in is very much alive!"

After saying all of that, Muka had to take in a deep breath. She had said it in one sentence, trying to get her words out as quickly as possible before a fight started, and it seemed to work, as the Four Kings had calmed down.

"In a panic to save our planet, we have been too hasty lately. We have jumped to conclusions too many times, and now we have a huge dilemma," Ovin stated.
"Even if we were to kill our host, who knows how long it would take us to reform? By then, the entire familiar world could be destroyed, and we would never form again."

"This person, they must be quite strong," Genbu said. "Perhaps all isn't bad. After all, he is able to contain all four of us. That is not something that just anyone can do. And if Quinn entrusted him with such a great task, there has to be a reason."

"Maybe you guys don't recognize me because I am disguised as Quinn, but I have met with you before," Peter said as he used his ability to cancel his transformation for a short while. They did remember Peter because he was indeed strong.

On top of that, the Boneclaw grunted a few things to them.

"Is that true... I see if that's the case, then maybe us being attached to him won't be a complete waste. The only thing we can say now is if you wish to use us to help Quinn, you must stay by his side," Ovin said.

Peter smiled once more.

"That's good with me. It was what I was planning to do anyway, and what I always will do."

In a bizarre way, this whole alteration had led to Peter obtaining all four of the Four Kings to himself. How useful they would be in battle was hard to say, and only time would tell, but at least it was one less problem for them to worry about.

That was until something clicked in Muka's head. She thought everything was over, but there was something that was nagging her, something that was said in the story.

"Before, did you say the Undead king has the power to teleport not just to our world but to the other world as well?" Muka asked.

"Yes," Ovin replied, raising an eyebrow. He could tell that the vampire was worried about something, but he had no clue what. For him, he considered himself the smarter one out of all of the kings, so it was bugging him a little.

"So, are you telling me that the Undead king has the power to transport us to the world where Immortui is?"

Chapter 2346: The Ancient Power

Jessica hadn't been tied up, nor was there someone looking over her. Instead, she was in the small cockpit of the spaceship along with Magnus. There were times during the flight, where she had imagined sticking her dagger through his neck, she was standing right behind him after all.

All ideas of that went out of her head though, because if Magnus was this confident to have his back turned, there had to be a reason. Right now, she was more so wondering if Andy was okay.

'Both Edvard and Hikel turned up, thanks to them everything was sorted out. They were able to save Galanar, so they should be able to save Andy as well. Right now, I need to stick to the plan.' Jessica raised her hand and felt the small bump behind her ear.

It was the tracking device that Logan had installed.

'Everything is fine, he hasn't found out about this, when we get to where we need to be, I'll be safe.'

Meanwhile, Jessica noticed that the ship had been going over a vast amount of water for a while now. Wherever they were, it seemed to be far away compared to all the other islands and pieces of land.

'What's that?' She thought, as she looked to her right and through the window while also placing both of her hands on the glass. She was putting her face closer to the glass to get a better look. 'Is that another ship, all the way out here?'

She wondered what this place was. She had been living on Earth for a while now and was unable to recall anything being in this area, so why was there another ship? When continuing to look out the window, she soon realised that it wasn't just one ship in the area, there were multiple ones.

There were ships of different shapes and sizes, and there were some she even recognised.

'Those ships over there, those are the ones the Vampire Corps units use as well. Why are they all heading toward this island.'

A bad feeling was overcoming Jessica, as she felt a shiver all over her body. She had no clue what this feeling was. Eventually, the ship landed on the beach of the island. There was a lot of sand, and a little greenery.

It wasn't large either, from above, she could easily see the whole island, but there didn't look to be any building of any kind at all on it.

"Where are we going, what are we doing?" Jessica asked. Stepping onto the sand and following Magnus into the jungle area.

"Do you really think I need to answer you?" Magnus asked.

Jessica was hoping the others were listening, and by talking, maybe she could get some information that the others needed.

"Don't you think I should at least know that much, and besides don't you need me to help. Won't it make more sense if you tell me and let me know what we're doing here, in the middle of nowhere, so I can help you?"

A loud single "Ha!" Sound came out from Magnus. "I don't need your help directly darling, the only thing we needed was you. Do you really think you can escape from me, or this island? You have no chance, you will see everything sooner or later anyway."

They continued to walk, and Jessica was trying to be aware of the surroundings, seeing if there was anything that would stop others from reaching the place where she was at, and as they passed another large tree grouping, Magnus suddenly stopped.

There still looked like a large number of trees in front of him, but shifting his feet around a few times, in a certain area, the trees started to blur and something else appeared in its place.

"Was it... some type of hologram!" Jessica asked, her mouth left open in amazement.

Right in front of her, in the centre of the island, there was a whole open facility. There were computer terminals spread out, people all around in every direction, and in the centre there was a large flat area with a railing around it.

It almost looked like a battle arena, and was as big as one as well, almost the same size as the coliseum. What she noticed though, was in the large arena-like area, on the ground there were several engravings, symbols and patterns, it almost looked like something drawn out of a magic book.

"You think this is something as simple as a hologram, we wouldn't be so foolish to use something that... that Logan Green could disable." Magnus stated. "There are many things that the world has lost, ancient powers that would use the energy of crystals and the energy that is around us... a world of magic. Even if someone was to fly over this place, all they would see is a simple island."

"All the spaceships we arrive in, are being broken down and sunken into the sea as we speak. No one would ever be able to find you, not that someone would come looking for you in the first place."

Jessica noticed something else happening, she placed her hand on her chest. As soon as she entered this area, a surge of power was consuming her. All the people that were around her, every single one of them that were here, and there were at least 200 or so, they were all vampires, and relatively strong ones as well.

It was causing Jessica's power to fluctuate quite a bit. Most likely, the barrier did more than just change the outside appearance.

Magnus turned around noticing that Jessica seemed to be in a bit of distress.

"What's this?" Magnus said, as he went up to her, and immediately pulled her head up by her hair.

She gritted her teeth, and energy was flowing through her.

"I don't think it's the best idea to touch me now." Jessica said.

"You mean, you think you can beat me?" Magnus tapped the ground, and as he did a strange circle appeared underneath the two. Jessica felt like she could no longer move, and with his other hand, he shoved a pill right down into her throat.

"That right there should paralyse your body for a couple of hours. It works fairly quickly, and as you said before, we need you alive. So I don't want you to go ahead and try to kill yourslef." Magnus stated.

Magnus, much like Vincent and Richard, was into research as well. Only he was into researching poisons. He would travel far and wide and planet to planet trying to come up with his own special poisons that would allow him to do a number of things, and this was just one of many he developed just for him.

"We don't need you to do anything in the first place, we just need your powers." Magnus looked right into Jessica's eye and he noticed something, instantly he reached up, and pulled out something from Jessica's eye.

He was quick, fast and rough, causing Jessica to have massive eye pain, and her eye instantly went bloodshot.

"What is this, a contact? You were wearing a contact! Ha, and you want this world to still continue on the way it is, when you have to go around pretending to be something you're not, that's brilliant." Magnus said, as he grabbed Jessica placing her body under his arm.

He then jumped from his position, and landed in the centre circle. Jessica was trying to fight back, she was trying to move, but just as Magnus said, she was unable to feel her body responding to her at all.

It was a strange sensation, especially considering she could still feel all the rising energy inside her.

In the very centre, what looked like a metallic bed started to rise up vertically, so it looked more like a door. Jessica was strapped in this time, and locked up just in case the poison started to wear off.

"Alright everyone, it's time to move into your positions!" Magnus shouted.

All the workers that had been preparing things so far, started to jump down into the arena-like space, and each of them was standing on a symbol. All of them were looking for a place and then all were facing in the direction of where Jessica was.

"When the device turns on, all of our power will be extracted from us. In doing so, it will be directed to you Jessica." Magnus explained. "With that, your dhampir power will grow, grow far stronger than any energy you have been able to contain ever before.

"With this device, the energy will shoot up into the air, opening up a portal to another world, opening up the portal so Immortui can finally join us." Magnus said. "So, let's not waste any more time."

The dream Jessica had, it seemed like it was soon going to become reality.

Chapter 2347: Magic Power

The vampires were busy getting into position around the metal-like arena, while a few of them seemed to be doing a few last minute adjustments to the machines around it. Jessica wondered why they even needed all of these things in the first place to do what they were going to do.

'They will be here... they will protect me, they will stop that bad dream from happening. I have to believe in them, I have to believe in Quinn, right?' Jessica thought. Even though Quinn himself wasn't involved, he had ordered the others to look over her, at least that's what she thought.

While all the vampires were gathering, she could already feel the energy rising, and she looked at them. Some of them she had recognised, vampire groups that had already started to make a name for themselves as Travellers.

Some that looked to have the clothes and armour of those living in the settlement. Even vampires that had done great acts in the past but had claimed to now be retired. Last, she even saw a large number of them wearing the Vampire Corps uniform.

There were those she didn't recognise, most likely from different departments, but then she could see captains and squad leaders that even though they weren't in her department, she had met them once or twice through meetings.

'These were all in the ships from before that were coming to the island, it was all of these people working on this project. Immortui has been able to infiltrate the vampire population strongly.'

Her eyes were glued to one person, and she wanted to shake her head, but she was unable to, due to the strange effects of the pill.

'No, no, not you too, how did he get to you, when did he get to you!' Jessica screamed in her head.

As she saw Barbra, the chief of her own Vampire Corps base standing in the large circle staring straight ahead. It made her think that there was possibly no escape. If Magnus had failed in capturing her, then one of the people she believed in, one of the people she had trusted would have found a way for her to get in Immortui's hands.

Seeing Barbra like so, it had taken all of the hope out of her.

'If even someone like her can be controlled, someone so close to me, then all of this will just continue, even after Magnus... I have no one anymore.'

The machine has been turned on, and the symbols on the ground started to light up. As they did, the vampires were covered in their red aura from head to toe.

Jessica's heart was thumping louder and faster than before. Her whole body felt like it was on fire. Just like the vampires, her own aura was now covering her on the outside. From head to toe she was covered in yellow aura.

'It's only a matter of time now.' Magnus thought.

The other's were already on a spaceship heading toward the island. They were going there as fast as they could, now they knew where Jessica and Magnus were, and they had heard everything. Unfortunately, it was as Quinn feared.

Jessica was a key to open up a portal to another world.

"From what we heard, it appears that this facility must have been built on another weak point. Where the separation between the two worlds is weaker." Agent 4 was explaining. "Immortui needs to channel the energy in some way, so they have created a device that will help accelerate the power, as well as crafting a more permanent magic circle."

Everyone was listening intently, they now had a few more people who were onboard and helping out with this task. Agent 4, Logan, just in case he was needed, and Andy had asked to be taken along, now that he knew the truth of the matter.

"This is not your fault Quinn." Logan said, seeing the look on his face. "We had no clue where these weak points were, nor what Magnus needed to do with Jessica. You have to think about it as well, do you really think that Magnus just marked all of those vampires just now?"

"That he managed to build a facility in just a week or so? No, most likely he had all of these marked for a long time. Immortui is that type of person, he is determined to get out of where he is. All of this had to have been planned for a long time now, we are just realising his actions now."

Hearing Logan speak, Quinn looked directly at Agent 4 who had caught his eye as well, and the both of them smiled while Agent 4 gave him a little nod, confirming that he still remembered what the two had talked about.

"There is still another thing." Agent 4 stated. "This island and facility might have a number of different protections that have been put up. Things that we have never seen before. Firstly, Magnus and his poison, and secondly the use of Magic.

"Magic is something that we hardly understand, even myself. I have only done research into magic circles. The circles, as stated before, with the symbols are like a code, it's almost as if you are running a program, telling the circle what to do with the energy source.

"There is already this mirage that Jessica spoke of, that we will need to deal with."

The group was tense, but to them the threat of magic couldn't be too strong. After all, they used vampire aura and had faced countless people with different abilities. How much different could magic be compared to that?

The ship could see the island in sight and Logan did a quick scan. His device was unable to detect any sign of life at all on the island. However, the tracker clearly stated that Jessica was here, at least it was the last place that she was at.

"What's the plan?" Andy asked. "Are we going to go on the ground and try sneak in. Or somehow try to break this magic barrier."

Using his shadow powers Quinn had passed through the ship and was now standing at the very top.

"We don't know how long we have, or what will happen to Jessica after this, we don't have time to be worrying about a magic barrier!"

Quinn lifted both of his hands up, and his eyes started to glow red. In the air, right above the entire island, particles of red aura were gathering. They were forming into a particular shape. As he was gathering his aura, he started to think of all that he had failed.

All that he had let die due to Immortui and Magnus's doing, he couldn't let Jessica die, he couldn't let Immortui get his way.

"Is that a giant blood sword?" Hikel asked.

"I guess, we're not going with sneaking in."

Swinging his hands down, Quinn unleashed the giant blood sword right where the signal from Jessica's transceiver currently was.

Chapter 2348: Never Doubt Quinn

The large sword made of blood was hovering in the air, Andy was looking at it in amazement. He had never seen so much blood aura being used in a pure form like so. He had seen Quinn fight a few times, but never directly and never like this.

It was quite clear that the rumours of the accomplishments that he was able to achieve, that they weren't exaggerated in the slightest, if anything they were downplayed.

Even the original leaders looking at Quinn doing something with such ease, just felt like if they were with him, they could do anything.

"Let's get Jessica!" Quinn said, as he swung his hands down, the blood sword moved with it. The giant sword looked as if it was a weapon that had fallen from the heavens, fallen from some kind of giant in the skies.

From down below, each of them looked up, as they could feel the energy and the large shadow that was cast above them.

"What in the world, what is that!" One of the vampires shouted and pointed, looking at the sky.

Although they were all in the facility hidden by the magic, they could still see everything clearly from their side and that included the sword.

As it touched the trees, a bubble of energy was seen flashing around the place. The sword had red sparks surrounding it, as it was trying to get through whatever the shield was around it.

"I can see it, I can see the facility!" Andy stated, looking out the window.

What were just trees moments ago, now was a large facility and looking closely they could see Jessica tied up. However, the large blood sword hadn't pierced through the shield that was protecting the place. The power of the sword was still pulsating aura around the whole thing, and it looked like the shield was doing the same back.

"Will the shield hold up?" Barbra asked. Not only her, but the rest of the vampires were concerned, because if the shield was to break, then whoever had created that thing in the first place would have free reign to attack them all.

"The shield is not easy to break. There are countless magic circles built around the facility." Magnus answered. "We have used all the resources we had to power these magic circles. All the demon-tier crystals we have gathered and the demi-god tier crystals as well. There's a lot of power in this shield, if it was going to break, then it would have broken already."

Hearing all of the vampires mumbling to each other, there was one thing Jessica realised, not all of them were being mind controlled by the being called Immortui. From the sounds of it, many were willingly helping him like Magnus, and that included Barbra.

When one was being controlled or forced to do things, Immortui would take over their actions, but in this case, they were still acting like themselves. She wondered what had Immortui promised them, what had he done for them to go over to his side.

Regardless, all of the commotion had caused her to raise her head, and when she looked up at the large blood sword, she could also see a ship not too far off from it.

'Is it them, did they come to... save me?' Jessica thought.

She wondered who would have such power though, to break the shield, maybe if there were more of the original leaders then they could produce something like this, but Jssica was overestimating the original leaders. Without the absolute blood control that was given to the kings, it would have been near impossible for them to do something like this.

In the ship itself, they could see that the large blood sword wasn't going to be enough to break the barrier, and eventually all of the energy from the sword would disappear.

"The sword isn't enough, it needs more power." Edvard stated. "Should we help? If we use all our strength and our attacks as well, maybe we can break the barrier!"

The other leaders and Andy nodded, but Logan remained calm.

"Everyone, you can do your part when it is needed, but for now you should trust Quinn, do you really think this is the only thing he can do? This is the man who can overcome anything."

It was true, if possible Quinn didn't want to go all out in this attack, and the reason was simple, because he didn't want to hurt Jessica by accident, nor did he want to hurt anyone that was possibly being controlled by Immortui.

Using his hands again, he gathered energy, and soon, right above the island, something else was forming. More correctly, there were two objects that were forming in the air. The blood aura started to gather the same as before, aura coming out from his hands and the red in Quinn's eyes growing stronger.

When everyone could finally see what Quinn had created they were left blown away.

"Just how much blood aura... does this guy have?" Edvard said.

'I will just say that I am happy that I decided never to go against him properly when I was unsure about who he was. I feel a bit sorry for Grenlet now. Now I understand why he would break down whenever he heard Quinn's name.'

In the air, hovering from the clouds, there were two more giant blood swords, they were just as large as the first one, and had just as much condensed blood energy as well.

"Fall." Quinn said, his eyes glinting red for a second. As the command was given the two large swords dropped down.

They crashed into the shield and now all three swords pulsed with energy. The shield looked like it was ready to crumble at any moment, yet it still managed to hold up, but it didn't seem like it would be the case for so much longer.

"Just one more push!" Quinn, with his blood control, now controlled the swords, pushing them further into the shield, and empowering them with the third stage of Qi from a distance. The vast amount of power crashed into and crushed the shield in an instant.

The swords were still there, while the shield was broken.

"You said the shield would hold out!" Barbra said.

"It would have, if we were going up against an ordinary opponent" Magnus replied.
"It looks like the star of the show has eventually turned up."

Jessica, seeing the shield having broken, and the three large blood swords, she couldn't believe there was such power. There was only one person in her mind that was capable of doing such a thing.

A lump was building up in her throat, as she thought about who it could be.

'No, it couldn't be, why would he come for me, why would he care for me. I'm not anyone important to him. He has his own family to protect, a whole settlement to run.' Jessica told herself, but she wanted to believe it was him.

"What are we going to do, if we just stand here those blood swords will kill us!" Barbra shouted.

"Don't worry, I have analysed his personality well." Magnus said, as the blood swords were falling toward them. "He won't kill us, he is too worried about hurting people, and he especially wouldn't want to hurt her."

The blood swords continued to fall until they were only ten metres away from hitting the facility. They stayed in the air, directly in front of them for a few moments. All of the vampires could feel the powerful energy.

Even if they were to attack the swords together with all of their might, they believed that they would have never been able to disperse the blood swords.

Yet, they exploded into blood particles at that moment, turning into nothing but red dust.

"See, what did I tell you, we don't have to worry about the swords... this man is too mentally weak to win this battle against us. He will never be able to beat Immortui."

The ship was seen hovering above, and it was time for them to descend. The top of the space ship's glass door opened up, and everyone was ready.

"Me and Agent 4 will wait above, and will come to support you when the area is cleared up." Logan stated.

The others nodded.

"It's time for us to go." Quinn said, as he jumped first off the ship toward the facility. The rest quickly followed him, jumping out after him.

All of them were falling to the ground, the vampires below seeing this, readied their powers, and started to fire out blood aura toward them. Blood swipes, blood bullets, beast weapons mixed with blood, all sorts of attacks went towards them.

The others were ready to attack back to block the attacks, but Quinn spread out the shadow from around him, covering the area where they were, including the others, as the attacks hit the shadow, they were unable to do anything.

Finally, Quinn and the others landed right on the ground, in the middle of the facility, unhurt, without a scratch on their body.

"Magnus." Quinn said. "Today is the day you die."

Chapter 2349: Full on battle! The portal is open?

Quinn and the others had arrived, landing at the edge of the facility. They were close to a number of terminals and yet there was no worker right where they were. That's because they were all in the arena-like place down below, all of them providing their power straight toward Jessica.

"What's with that disguise!" Magnus said. "Do you think you can trick me with that, with as much energy coming off from you, it can only be you, Quinn Talen!"

Jessica looked up as she heard the name, and the other vampires in question were also wondering what Magnus was talking about. They all knew Quinn Talen was the one who they were going to have to face off against, and on top of that, where was he? None of them could see him.

"I see, I guess you're right, there's no need for this thing, because I'm going to put a stop to it all." Quinn reached out to his face and scratched it with his finger nails leaving a red claw mark behind. The mask on his face fell crumbling into separate segments.

As the pieces fell to the floor, everyone was able to see the familiar face, the leader of the vampire settlement, the hero, and the vampire that was practically referred to as a god.

"What's wrong!" Magnus said, as he could feel uneasy tension behind him. "You all knew that we would be going up against him, did you think he just would never turn up? Remember who we have on our side. They may call him a god, but that is a name only, the one we serve is the real vampire god, our creator Immortui!"

Hearing the talk of Quinn, Jessica looked right ahead, she couldn't believe it. Her heart almost felt like it was about to tear apart, as an overwhelming amount of emotions came to her.

Of all people, the people she believed that wouldn't come, or help her, of all the people she could trust, the one and only Quinn was here for her. Just like he was back then, he was here once again.

"Quinn!!!" Jessica shouted out. "Save me!" She screamed at the top of her lungs, it was more than a cry for help, the depression could be felt.

"We need to stop those vampires from powering her." Edvard said. "It might be best if we deal with them from here."

Magnus started to laugh out loud as he heard what Edavrd said.

"It seems you are smarter than you look, and smarter than you have been before, but it's too late. The second you guys came here, you fell for it, you fell for

everything. I would like to thank you all for coming here, because if you never did, then this plan would have never worked!"

There was a worry in the back of Quinn's mind, a worry that had always been there from the beginning. Immortui claimed that he was the one that he needed, but how would Quinn even be used to open the portal?

When they heard Jessica's power the way it worked, he thought that maybe, just maybe he would be the trigger he needed to open the portal, but could Magnus really guess that Quinn would save Jessica.

Especially when he was disguised and there was no news of him being anywhere. Whatever the case was, it seemed Quinn's fears were true.

Magnus stomped on the ground and all of the strange runes and shapes on the platform they were on, started to glow brightly. The red energy instead of going to Jesscia went up in the air, and now above them there was another magic circle.

It was floating, moving about in the air, twisting and turning. Seeing this, Quinn went to attack it, throwing out a blood swipe. When it hit the magic circle in the air though, it went right through it, and the magic circle continued to move.

"With this, not a single person's energy on the island will go to waste."

Underneath Quinn and all the others, the same special runes that were in the metal arena were now under them. Not just them but everywhere they looked they could see runes all over the place.

Before they knew it, power was flowing out of them, out of their control, and all of it was going right to Jessica in the centre. The second it hit her, the entirety of her eyes went yellow.

There was a glow all over her body, and lifting her head up toward the sky she opened up her mouth. An energy beam consumed her whole body and went up far in the sky. It shot through the centre of the magic circle and continued to go up until it reached the clouds.

When it did the energy blast had somewhat stopped splitting the clouds apart, and started to hit one area. As it did, a strange hole started to appear from the sky. It was slowly growing larger, and they could see it, a red sky.

All of them on the island started to feel a strange sense of pressure on their chest, it was hard for them to even stand.

"Is this the power of the other world... why does it feel so heavy!" Hikel said. "Is this power coming from the creatures from the other world?"

It was the opening of a portal, a portal to the other world; the only two people that seemed to be unaffected by the strange energy was Magnus and Quinn.

"Haha, go ahead and kill me, but even if you do it won't change anything, those magic circles were to run ahead without me either way, even if I was dead or alive. The only thing we needed was for you to come here Quinn, and you did, you are the reason why Immortui will be able to come to this world!"

Up above in the spaceship, Agent 4 and Logan were looking at the yellow energy shining at the portal above.

"We planned for this to happen, are you still able to complete the task?" Logan asked.

"I have made many preparations and have studied the magic circles from back then, and from the past of the vampires with your knowledge. I completely understand the language that is being used."

"We still have time, this is the same as last time. Although a portal has been opened, it's more of a crack than anything. Certain beings will be able to pass through, but those on the same level of strength as Immortui will not. At the moment he can not pass through."

"If we reverse it before then, the portal will close."

When saying these words, Agent 4 was once again looking at Quinn. Logan could see this as well and it was clear that something was being kept from them.

"We can't go down yet though, for me to reverse the magic circle, they will need to clear the area for me. I will not risk my life." Agent 4 stated.

Back on the ground, large amounts of power could be sensed leaking through the portal as it was slowly getting bigger.

"Andy, Edvard, Hikel, I will trust the three of you to save Jessica and to deal with Magnus." Quinn said.

Andy had gone against Magnus before so they knew he was strong, and this time he wasn't the only one that was in the way of them getting to Jessica, there were plenty of strong vampires as well, including a couple of Vampire Corps Chiefs that he recognised.

"As long as we get rid of all the ones down here, then Agent 4 will be able to clear the area, was that not part of the plan?" Hikel asked.

"You're right, but then who is going to deal with them coming through." Quinn looked up and a winged creature was floating about. It looked similar to Laxmus' celestial form, and it had just as much power as well.

They would never be able to deal with such a creature.

"I will deal with whatever comes through that portal, which is why I am trusting you." The shadow started to cover Quinn's body from head to toe, and as it slowly disappeared from the bottom, they could see that his armour was changing.

[God Slayer tier armour set has been equipped.]

Chapter 2350.1: Beings from another world (Part 1)

Both Edvard and Hikel couldn't help but stare at the armour. It was glistening with such power that it had a hypnotising effect of not letting one take their eyes away. The two had seen it before, from far away when he was battling against Ray, but now they were able to see it up close.

"Do you think you will really need to use that armour?" Edvard asked, thinking that Quinn was plenty strong enough already.

"It's a precaution, we don't know what will come out of there, and how soon that could change everything." Quinn said.

He wasted no time, as he kicked the air and his own body started to rise. Of course, Quinn could create wings out of shadow blood aura or use another set of beast equipment but the god slayer boots were best as it didn't affect his speed.

He was quickly running up in the sky, and his first target was in sight. Quinn could see the large bat-like creature covered in black skin. It had a large head like that of a lion, while its wings and body structure was relatively thick, making it hard to believe that it was even able to fly in the first place.

The end of Quinn's golden gauntlet started to light up, filling with power, as he threw it out, a large blood fist went right through the air. By the time the creature realised an attack was coming its way and turned around, it was hit right in the centre.

The fist of power exploded going through its chest and killed the creature instantly, tuning it into particles of dust.

'The way... that creature just died, it's the same way as vampires do when they have been in the sun for too long.'

[Regular demon blood has been absorbed]

[Your blood aura has already evolved.]

[There will be no effects granted]

The blood fist that Quinn had used was the blood forest fist. Which allowed him to absorb some of the opponent's blood that he attacked. Before he had used a blood bullet on one of these creatures that had come out from the portal.

When he had done so, the message stating he had absorbed blood from a demon appeared and it allowed his blood aura to increase in power, to be far stronger than any other vampire in terms of just blood aura.

Yet, there was no effect this time, what he did make note of though was that just like last time, there were different levels of demons.

'I've gotten a lot stronger though, with the God Slayer tier armour set, just one blood fist is enough to defeat a demon who was considered extremely strong.' Quinn thought.

Just as he had this thought, when looking up, he could see a whole fleet of the same type of creature pouring out from the portal. It was like a group of bats. They flew through the air and their wings created an ear piercing noise along with their mouth as they flew down into the world.

Immediately, one of them came towards Quinn, spinning his body, he avoided a quick bite attack. Swinging his leg back, he kicked down hard, right at the neck of the beast, breaking its bones in an instant and sending it hurling into the sea.

Another was right in front of Quinn's face with its mouth open wide, but it was met with Quinn's fist instead. It shattered all of its teeth and its head crunched up into its body as it was sent off far into the distance.

'If there is one thing these demons do have, it seems like they have no fear. Even though I can deal with them easily, seeing their friends and allies killed like that, they're still coming at me with no hesitation.'

'Not even beasts act like this, they have some sense.'

The swarm of giant bat like creatures though, started to become a problem as well, as he could see they were spreading out. Seeing how some had come towards Quinn, they others were now heading out and spreading through the sky.

Who knew what complications it would have if creatures from another world started to mix in with theirs, and some had even spotted the ship that Logan and Agent 4 were inside of.

"I need to deal with them all at once!" Quinn thought, as he kicked the air and turned back to look at the portal above him. His hands started to glow, and his two hands had turned into 6 in total.

[Blood fist barrage]

Swinging all six of his fists, Quinn let out fierce blood bullets into the portal, they were raining upward into the sky like bullets, and they were taking out the bat creatures like bullets as well.

As they pierced their vitals, they were disappearing one after the other, the sky was clearing up, but he knew the longer the portal would stretch open, the more dangerous beings would start to come through.

"The ground needs to be cleared quicker for a safe landing, once they clear the area, we need to work on the portal straight away. I don't know how much time we have." Agent 4 declared.

As soon as Quinn had left to deal with the portal up above, there was a part of the vampire original leaders that had hoped that it would stop Jessica from using her powers.

But it seemed that she had already gotten whatever it was she needed to now power the portal. So even if they weren't there, Jessica's power would continue to run rampant.

The reason why this was clear, was because all of the vampires that had been used to power Jessica before and were standing in certain places, were moving, and specifically they were taking on the three of them below.

Both Edvard and Hikel placed their hands down on the ground, creating a blood barrier. A flurry of blood swipes had come right at the three of them.

"Don't underestimate us originals so much." Edvard smiled.

Although there were so many blood swipes coming from so many strong vampires, they were still able to block them using their own blood aura.

"These people, they would have shaken in fear in the past if they knew who they were going up against, and now they're just willingly attacking us." Edvard complained.

"It seems we need to stop living in the past." Hikel stated. "Regardless, if we are just creating this barrier, then our power will slowly drain away. It looks like Magnus is staying by Jessica's side, in case we try to do anything to her."

"Well, I guess there is an easy way to stop this, I mean if we killed Jessica that would be the end of this all, but of course Quinn would never allow us to do that." Edvard said. "And I am a lot more scared of him than I am of Immortui."

"Let me deal with the others." Andy said from behind. "I will deal with all the vampires that are in the area, the two of you will need to deal with Magnus. I already lost to him, I know I am not strong enough to beat him."

"He is one with many tricks, so I believe that there might be the need for the two of you. Trust me." Andy said, a strong determination in his eyes, and having pulled his great sword ready for a fight.

"Alright new guy, show us what you got, clear a way for us, so we can get straight to Magnus." Edvard said.

As soon as Andy heard those words, he jumped up high in the air, with his string attached to his large great sword he swung it behind him dangling in place, and then swung it over his head.

It was almost as if his large great sword was on a type of chain. It crashed into the metal ground and surprisingly only left a scratch, it was made of a strong metal that was for sure.

Still, the impact of the attack caused blood aura to swoop down the middle and rise like a tidal wave, disrupting the vampires from their attack. As soon as Andy landed on the floor in front of them, he swung the great sword.

It crashed, hitting many of the vampires right in their side. The strength was far too much for them to handle, and they were lucky that Andy was using the back of the blade, otherwise they would have been split in half.

While all of the commotion was going on, and with the vampires more split up and further apart, both Edvard and Hikel ran forward, while running Hikel decided to aid Andy just a bit, as he threw his blood to the other side, and his blood exploded sending the vampires flying away.

They soon stopped as they had reached the centre of the arena, now in front of them, there was Magnus and Jessica right there.

"You will not get the best of me!" Magnus said, as his body was transforming into its celestial form, using the power that had been given to him by Immortui.

"The kid did his job, so we need to do ours now." Edvard said with a smile.

Chapter 2351.2: Beings from another world (Part 2)

All six of Quinn's arms were moving at a fast speed and the barrage didn't stop as the attacks killed everything in sight. There was no sign of the bat-like creatures and they couldn't even be seen pouring out from the portal anymore.

This was all because of Quinn's attack that was getting rid of them before they could even come to the other side completely.

From the spaceship that was floating in the air from the side, Agent 4 and Logan were watching everything that was going on.

"We can't just stay here and watch the other's fight." Logan said, as he tapped the ship's console bringing up a screen of what was going on below. They could see Andy fighting with the others.

He was using his overwhelming strength to punch through the attacks, some he was taking head on and allowing his body to heal, and other times he was swinging his sword hitting them far and into the distance.

"It looks like down below has cleared up quite a bit, we need to get to work." Logan said.

"There is a possibility that they could still hurt us." Agent 4 stated. "The place needs to be clear first."

"I never thought you were like this." Logan said, shaking his head. "I thought the low digit numbers from Pure were meant to be strong? What happened to you, although you are a researcher you have strength."

"Me and you will be good enough to defend ourselves, it's not like we're weak."

In the middle of their conversation, they heard the loud bangs stop for a moment. The bang's that they could hear was each time Quinn's fists would stop in the air. Ripples of explosions were being created just from his punches alone, regardless of the aura that was being used with them.

The reason why Quinn had stopped was because something else was starting to come through the portal. The yellow energy was still hitting the sky, and slowly the portal was opening up wider and wider.

It had grown almost to the size of a large cloud itself. It made him wonder what a complete opening of the portal would look like. Even when looking in, one was still unable to see the other world clearly, it was almost like a mist that was constantly flowing showing everything as a blur on the other side.

What was coming through the portal part now though, was a large blue skinned hand. It was gigantic, far bigger than anything the others had seen. It looked like a human hand apart from the skin colour, and the sharp coloured nails.

'This is even bigger than Athos.' Quinn thought. 'And it is bigger than the demon tier dragon as well. Is this another demon?'

Both Agent 4 and Logan could see the giant hand slowly moving out.

"Oh, will you look at that, the area, it looks clearer than it did before. I think Andy is doing a really good job after all, why don't we head down." Agent 4 for some reason seemed to quickly change his mind, and Logan could guess why.

Seeing the giant hand, Quinn decided to do something first. This looked different from the demons he was fighting just a moment ago, and from its power it certainly was different.

'Is this on the same level as the other demon I killed, the one that had come out of the portal last time? Didn't Minny tell me he called himself a general or something?' Quinn thought.

He was unsure if this giant creature was on the same level of the demon general he fought last time or was stronger, but just in case, he gathered a blood fist, and threw it out right at the hand. It hit the centre of the palm.

It didn't cover much surface area at all, but the attack was strong, strong enough to cause the hand to be pushed back and flinch a little.

[Demon blood has been absorbed]

[Blood aura is unable to evolve]

[Blood aura is at a higher level]

The system seemed to give him a bit more information than last time, and he could only assume it was because this was a different type of demon, and that wasn't the last of the system messages either.

[A variety of Demon blood has been absorbed.]

[The system is now able to create a Demon tier list]

[Demon]

[Lesser Demon]

[Greater Demon]

[Demon General]

[The list will be updated as the system gains more access to different blood types.]

'Oh, this is very interesting. It looks like after absorbing their blood I can tell what strength the demon is at, and then using my inspect skill, I can see the grade of the demon.'

Looking at the large hand, the inspect skill was already active, and where it would show nothing before, it now had a word by it.

[Greater Demon]

Quinn looked past the giant hand and could see one of the bat creatures he was fighting before, he was wondering what strength that would be at.

[Demon]

'The lowest grade, and they were that strong. I can imagine that some of the vampire leaders might have struggled against just those bat creatures. Still, the Demon general tier I was able to beat with the guns last time.'

'This isn't any stronger, it's just bigger, so I'll just need a bigger weapon.' Quinn thought to himself.

The extra arms disappeared. He was fighting against a mass amount of enemies, and although he probably could use them to eventually destroy this giant demon he thought there was a more efficient way.

With his blood aura, one of his most favourite weapons was created in his hand. A giant blood spear had been formed, but not only that. With the power of the gauntlets, Quinn was also able to add the additional effects onto weapon that he would make, just like the blood fists.

'I have the blood fairy type fist, Qi fist, and Dhampir fist. It would be nice to add one of these to the spear to see how effective it could be, but the dhampir energy might have an effect on the portal as well, so I have to be careful.'

With that carefulness in mind, Quinn had opened to apply the blood fairy effect onto the spear.

"Go back to where you came from!" Quinn shouted as he hurled the spear.

It spun while in the air and went right through the palm of the demon's hand, ripping a large hole in the centre showing nearly only the fingers. It carried on going through the forearm, but beyond that, he had no idea how far the spear went.

When looking closely though at the greater demon, the fingers, they could be seen turning a slightly different shade of blue.

'Is this the effect of the fairy blood?' Quinn thought. 'Although demons aren't vampires. Vampires are demons. These are creations of Immortui, or beings from the other world.'

'Since fairy blood affects vampires, I thought there was a good chance it would affect demons as well.'

Sooner rather than later though, the giant hand started to turn into small particles, before he could even test the effectiveness of the fairy blood.

'Although I was unable to see the effects, I'm sure there will be more that will come through that portal... and it would be good to test out how effective all the different traits are that I can add, before I decide to leave this place.' Quinn thought.

Chapter 2352: Andy's resolve

Andy was using his strength as best as he could, he was swinging his large sword knocking the vampires out, but he was careful to use the unbladed edge, he didn't want to harm them, and in doing so it was proving quite difficult.

He jumped back in the air, and several blood swipes came toward him, swinging the great sword he smashed his sword through the blood swipes landing back on the ground.

'They're covering for each other, and it looks like they got quite a high supply of blood as well. Every time that I'm busy knocking one person out, they're healing the others. Going up against this many is harder than I thought, especially when I'm trying to not kill them.'

One of the vampires came in fast, faster than he expected, but with his fast reflexes, Andy was able to grab his hand and twist it under him, and hitting it with the bottom of his sword, he smashed the bones in the vampire's arm.

After a kick sending him to the ground, he used his string ability and started to tie him up.

'This could work, If I injure them to this point and then...' With the tied up vampire, Andy threw him behind him, as he was starting a pile, and then standing in front of the tied up vampire, he was going to try and stop anyone from getting close.

A swing of his sword, a punch, a kick, and then tying up again, one by one Andy was doing his job as he tied them up. Swinging his sword once more trying to hit one of the vampire's arms, before it clashed a strike came out full of blood aura hitting the sword dead on at an angle causing it to swing up into the air.

Andy was quite surprised, although he wasn't using his full strength for fear of killing the vampires, someone was able to deflect the attack, although his surprise soon came to an end when he realised who it was.

"Barbra!" Andy called out.

She stood there, with beast gear on both her hands. They were a set of claws that would extend out from the knuckles, they were glowing with a bright red colour, and an immense amount of heat was coming out of them.

'If I remember correctly, Barbra is one of the few that has a demon tier beast weapon in her possession.' Andy thought.

"Barbra, I can see that you aren't possessed like the others, but you have the marking on your head." Andy stated. "How could you do this, how could you willingly go against and kidnap one of your own? Why are you doing this?"

"I have my reasons Andy!" Barbra stated back. "One life, for the sake of bringing back those I care about, is that not good enough."

She charged forward with both of the clawed hands creating flames behind her. At last, she swung it toward Andy, and a spiral came out from them. Lifting his sword up he blocked the spiral of flames. But felt a stabbing pain in his right side that was starting to heat up.

Slamming his foot on the ground, the whole metallic structure started to shake slightly, while Barbra was trying to balance herself, Andy was able to pull out of that position.

Blood splattered onto the ground, and the inside of Andy felt like he was heating up slightly, but he was still standing strong.

"You have been blinded with whatever he has promised you." Andy said. "We all have lost those we care about. I even lost my mother, do you think that I don't want to bring her back?"

"But can't you see... Jessica's life is not ours to take. It's not fair to do trades like that, and her life is not the only one that has been lost. What about those in her squad? What about the ones that have been possessed? All of them have lost their lives, all of them trusted you as their boss, and look at what you have done!"

Andy came charging in, and he swung his sword, in the middle of his swing, he could see several of the other vampires approach him from the side. He had to quickly adjust himself, as he let go of the sword for a moment, and ducked down avoiding their hits.

With his two fists, he punched one in the gut, sending him flying up in the air off in the distance somewhere on the island, and quickly turned and hit the other on the head. as he did, his head slammed into the ground, and the vampire was no longer moving.

'Crap... in my haste I hit him a bit too hard... that one is now dead.' Andy thought.

It was what he had been trying to avoid this whole time, but in a desperate situation what else could he do? Now that he had somewhat gotten rid of those that were close to him, around the area, he could focus on Barbra.

'Wait, where is she, where did she go?' Andy thought as he looked around.

There were crowds of vampires in his way, blocking him from trying to locate her, and he was sure that she would be up to no good. These vampires, most of them

were like a hive mind working together, but the ones they really needed to worry about were the vampires that were like Magnus and Barbra, the ones that had free thinking to do as they wished.

In the meantime, both Logan and Agent 4 had landed on the outskirts of the facility. They were slowly approaching the area. Trying to not get noticed by the vampires around them.

In Agent 4's hand he had a device that was glowing red. It looked like a piece a lipstick in his hand but with a glowing red end. While creeping onto the arena part, Agent 4 knelt down and looked at the special symbol that was engraved.

"Now, all I need to do is alter all of these... that should take... a bit of time." Agent 4 said.

"You know, I have a vast mind but and I have the knowledge of Eno, but I have never been able to quite understand these symbols fully. It amazed me how you are able to comprehend this." Logan commented.

"That's because your mind is too straight forward thinking." Agent 4 replied, while continuing to alter the symbol on the ground. "You see, for you things need to make sense in your head, you have to understand the reason behind every action, but with this, sometimes there is no need."

"It's more of an artist expressing themselves, which is why its harder for you to understand."

A vampire at that moment had approached them, which had startled Agent 4 quite a bit. He had paused, messing up the symbol he was drawing as he wanted to pull out a certain device from his pocket.

Before the vampire could reach them though, a laser blasted him away, right in the stomach.

"I will keep to my own inventions." Logan said, his hand having converted into a blaster. Beast energy was used for the power output, and dealing with these vampires they would have no problem at all. "You just keep expressing your art."

Agent 4 carried on with Logan helping out, that was until a certain vampire came their way, Logan fired his blaster toward her, but with her deadly claws she ripped through the laser blast attack, and then swinging her own claw hand a spiral of flames went right toward Logan.

His arm started to change into that of a metallic shield and as the tornado flame hit, the fire dispersed up but started to push him back.

"It seems that she is quite a strong one, should I start worrying a little bit now?" Agent 4 said. He had pulled out the weapon he was planning to use before.

One of the inventions that had been created by Pure in the past, it was a Qi gun, using it, it used the Qi from the person and fired it out right toward the vampire, but she was too fast avoiding all of the hits.

'She can tell where the bullets are going even if they are invisible, maybe she can sense the power in the air currents or something... this might become difficult for us.' Agent 4 thought.

Logan was getting ready to act, he was planning for a tough battle ahead of them, that was until a set of strings were tied around the woman's hands, they then tied around her legs as well, and she was being pulled back and slowed down.

Landing right in front of her, Andy was there, with red blood strings in one hand and the large sword in the other.

"There is no way for you to break these strings based on the way I have tied you up." Andy stated. "Barbra, I didn't want to do this... I didn't want to kill you, but I can see you are willing to do whatever you can for your goal.

"But most of all, the reason I didn't want to kill you, is because I knew Jessica would be upset at your loss... I'm sorry."

Andy raised his hand, and it grew in size, it swung down the giant sword. Barbra was gathering her blood aura, trying to break the strings they were withering away, but Andy was able to use more strings to tie her up.

There were vampires that were attempting to help her, but both Agent 4 and Logan continued to blast them away, knowing full well that they needed to get rid of this vampire.

The large blade went right down the centre of Barbra, finishing her off there and then... she had been killed.

Andy was only able to stay in silence for a second, that was all he could give her on this battlefield.

"You two... you need to get to work and fast... I don't want to keep killing my own kind, please close that portal up." Andy requested, as he went off continuing his struggle.

Chapter 2353: The originals collide

Quinn really wasn't sure if his spear attack had defeated the Greater Demon, but it didn't seem to be willing to come out of the portal anymore. Instead more of the bat-like creatures had come through, and soon other flying creatures were seen coming out of the portal.

These had larger wingspans than the bat-like creatures and a smaller frame, at the same time, they moved slightly faster in the air as well.

With a blood forest fist, Quinn threw it out. The fists were just as fast as the blood bullets so even though the winged demons were faster than the bat-like ones, he was able to hit it cleanly, killing it in a single hit, but it wasn't his aim to just kill the creature.

[Lesser demon blood has been absorbed]

'I see, so this is a step up from the bat-like creatures, but they seem to be just as high in number.'

Using his boots, several puffs of clouds appeared and there were now three Quinn's. While the original Quinn continued to swing his arms out firing away the blood fists, the others were working on something else instead.

They were using the blood control to create the thousand blood swords. Controlling them, they flew about through the air, going right through the winged creatures. The blood swords had enough condensed blood that they wouldn't disappear after killing them as well.

That was the good thing about the clones created by the boots, they were still able to do everything that Quinn could, it was just at fifty percent of the power, but if they got hit lightly they would disappear.

In this case where his enemies weren't even getting close to him, he could use multiple different skills.

'With this I can keep anything that comes through the portal at bay, hopefully the ones down below are doing well. However, it's only a matter of time until stronger demons come through... I just hope if all goes well, I get a signal from Agent 4.'

While Andy was busy fighting the rest of the vampires spread out across the arena like platform, in the centre where Jessica currently was, there was a large-scale battle going on.

Magnus was standing in front of her, he had finished his transformation looking the same as he did before. The skull-like mask on the top half of his head. The centipede-like arms that stretched and emitted a strange green goo.

It was hard to still call him a vampire.

Immediately, the first one to attack was Magnus. He stretched out his hand from his position, the large segments extending. There were two of them aiming right for the vampire originals.

The two of them split up both heading in opposite directions. Edvard had leapt, changing his path, heading straight for Magnus.

"You are one ugly thing!" Edvard shouted. "You don't even deserve to be called a vampire."

He swung his arm creating a large blood swipe, but his centipede-like hand had retracted in time blocking the attack.

"Aren't you the least bit concerned about your friend?" A smile was revealed by Magnus as he moved his hand.

When Edvard turned his head, he could see that Hikel was trapped. There was a glowing mark underneath him, no doubt he had used his power.

'Damn it, did he set up traps all over the place, when did he do that?' Edvard thought. 'I guess in the end I was just lucky to avoid them all.'

Seeing his friend trapped, he was fighting against the centipede like arm. Hikel had his hands stretched out, holding onto the strong pincers. The green goo was spilling onto the floor and part of it was going onto his skin, burning as smoke could be seen.

Edvard held out his hand, holding it with the other by its elbow for support. Blood started to gather around the palm, and blasting out was a blood cannon worth of energy. It crashed into the side of the centipede-like hand, bending it slightly. It caused Magnus to retreat his hand back.

Now both of the arms had retracted, Magnus extended them both and they were going after Edvard this time instead. Rather than retreating back, or attacking the arms though, he charged right ahead.

"You fool, you really have no idea how much power I have, how much power Immortui has given me!" Magnus shouted.

The arms started to change in motion, as if they were alive they swirled around going in different patterns still heading toward Edvard it was hard for him to see exactly where the attack was going to come from, but he didn't worry about that.

"Did you forget who I am Magnus?" Edvard asked. "I have survived this long, even though I was meant to die multiple times, and it's all due to my power."

Magnus knew Edvard's power well, but what was he going to do in this situation.

Appearing from above, was none other than Hikel.

"Remember, there's two of us you have to go against."

Hikel swung his arm and rather than a blood swipe, there was a large amount of blood that came out through the air instead. As it hit the centipede-like arms it exploded, creating a dust cloud that went up into the air, and almost covered the whole area.

The power of the explosion could be felt by Andy and the others behind them. Coming out from the smoke on the other end, was none other than Edvard.

Who had grabbed Magnus right by the neck, he lifted his hand full of blood aura and punched Magnus in the head a few times. With every hit, a large amount of blood aura could be seen coming out from the other end of Magnus' head.

"I know that won't be enough to kill you. We almost got you back then, and we should have executed you for what you did in the past, but you still came back... well, we won't make the same mistake this time!"

Edvard punched and punched, but the strange skull mask seemed to be quite solid. It wasn't breaking, and turning his head, he looked straight at Edvard.

"Your luck has managed to make you survive you said, well survive this!" Magnus opened his mouth, and spat out a cloud of green smoke.

Immediately Edvard could feel pain all over his eyes, it was intense that he had to let go. Then from above, one of Magnus' arms hit right into his back. Hitting Edvard into the ground.

Edvard could still feel his eyes burning, but he blindly swung his arm up, letting out a large amount of blood aura, in doing so he had managed to hit away one of the other arms that was coming in for an attack.

"Damn you and your lucky self, how can you still hit me with an attack when you can't even see!" Magnus shouted, he was annoyed because he was only inches away before injecting him with the strange liquid he had used on Andy.

"Explosive fist!" Hikel shifted in at a great speed, his knuckles were covered in blood and he hit Magnus' body right in the stomach. The explosive power hit and exploded right in the centre of Magnus' body causing his feet to slide across the ground.

The edge of Hikel's hand was badly damaged from the explosion as well. His blood was explosive but that didn't mean he was immune to his own explosive powers.

'If we want to win this fight, then we have to be willing to take risks, and that includes if my life is taken as well.'

Magnus regained his footing and started to smile, the wound that was created in his stomach could be seen healing right in front of their eyes. It was at an amazing speed, as if a vampire had consumed Dalki blood.

"Hikel, you were always considered one of the stronger originals due to your power, now I understand why." Magnus stated. "But you see, people always seem to underestimate my power. Did you know that I can create a trap with any part of my body, it doesn't necessarily need to be my hands."

Hikel was wondering what he meant and it was same for Edvard as well.

"Not only that, but the trap that I can now create, thanks to the special power granted to me by Immortui, has allowed for my powers to even grow further, and the size is much larger than you can imagine."

When Magnus finished speaking, it was too late. A large white circle started to light up on the floor, and it was covering not only where Hikel was but Edvard as well, both of them had fallen into one of Magnus' traps.

"Now this time, it will be a lot easier. Let's see how your luck does for you now, Edvard." Magnus stretched out his centipede-like arms the same as he did before, but both of the originals were unable to move.

The pincers stabbed into both of thier stomachs, and pumping into thier bodies, was the strange green liquid. It continued to pump the strange liquid into them, while they could do nothing but watch, and feel the effects on thier body.

The chance of them winning against Magnus had just lessened significantly.

Chapter 2354: A secret bidder!

From JKSManga.

Hi everyone, I just wanted to let you know that this month is my wedding month on July 20th! I have just had my Bachelors party for the last few days which was why there has been a lack of chapters.

This month will perhaps be one of the busiest months of my life, but I wish to bring you all as many chapters as possible, especially as we get into the last part of My Vampire System, but I just wanted to make you all aware.

A portal had fully broken through, which meant that there was now a connection between the two worlds. Slowly creatures from one were pouring into the other. Some were attracted by the strange energy and the breath of air that was leaking into theirs from the other one.

While others had been ordered to head in, in an attempt to break through, by the current leader of the world, the one known as Immortui.

Moving from his position, the power spread throughout the universe, a large darkened red mist was floating around, and those living in the world felt uneasy. As they felt the movement.

'This is the closest I have ever been to getting out of here... it has been a long time coming.' Immortui thought.

Soon, those on other planets, recognised the large enigma that was moving, and went ahead to join Immortui, moving along with him.

"The portal, it's only a matter of time until a rift capable of containing your power will open." One of them said. "A permanent rift will then be open between our two worlds allowing us to travel in and out."

"Our power will grow and we will be able to take control of both worlds, and soon we can do as we wish, set up our own systems and have the world set to the way it was meant to be." Another creature said.

"None of that matters." Immortui replied. "Most importantly, those that have been suppressing me, those that feared me and trapped me in this place as punishment, will finally get what is coming to them."

"The great satisfaction I will feel, seeing everything they built up crumble right in front of them. That is what I strive for, and nothing else."

The two that continued to travel next Immortui nodded.

"We have sent two Demon Generals to deal with the situation, do you think it will be enough?" One of them asked. "Will they be able to defeat the one named Quinn? From what we know, he is quite strong, but the Demon Generals are strong as well."

Immortui started to laugh at this comment.

"I very much doubt he will have trouble with one of the Demon Generals. He has beaten one with ease in the past, and although I have given them a lot more power, I still don't think it will be enough to defeat him.

"He is a strong one for a reason, what I am looking to do is to buy some time. That's all we need to do. Last time, I thought it was inevitable the portal would be opened up.

"I had no clue there was one that had learned how to use the magic circles, and on top of that, Mundus went to deal with me directly. Delaying my actions to act myself to make sure things were a success.

"This time though, even though the portal has been open for some time, there have been no reports of Mundus appearing. From what we know, this seems to be due to the deal that had been made with the celestials.

"To not intervene with Earth's affairs. The deal that was made may very well be their downfall, for the Celestials and Quinn."

The large floating power of energy, and the two by his side continued to move, and the rift could be seen right up ahead. It was perfect, it had been a long time since Immortui had been to earth.

Due to the large trap that had been made by Magnus, both Edvard and Hikel had been hit. The ability of Edvard hadn't come through for him, but then again he had probably already used up a lot of his luck in the fight so far.

Out of the two originals, the first one to fall to his knees was Edvard. He reached out grabbing the centipede-like hand, holding it, he tried to push it away, but nearly all of his energy was drained completely, there was next to no resistance.

"Haha!" Magnus laughed. "Right now, my power is pumping through your whole body, destroying every single one of our cells. This is nothing compared to how much I had placed inside that person from earlier that you saved."

"I know you originals are a little too persistent and quite durable, so I will make sure that you're unable to move an inch before I pull out my arms."

Looking to his right, Edvard could see that Hikel was in the same situation, he wasn't quite on his knees but his legs were wobbly, while his hands were holding onto the head of the pincers of the hand.

'If it continues on like this, then we won't make it... no matter what, I have to try and do something.' Edvard thought.

However, the one to act was Hikel.

"This is going to hurt, so I didn't want to do this."

There was a large wound on his stomach, but with his hands he pressed it against the sharp fangs, cutting up his hands more. In this situation, he did the only thing he could do.

'Blood explode!'

All of the blood was lighting up all over Hikel, and soon went off in a large explosion.

"Hikel!" Edvard shouted.

He had a good guess how Hikel was feeling because they were going through the same thing. Although this plan might work, it meant that Hikel would experience the power of his explosions as well, and with the poison weakening him, it would be hard for him to recover and he would take on more damage.

The centipede-like hand was seen pulling away, with part of its shell destroyed and one of the pIncer's as well.

"Damn it, I never planned for him to try a suicide attack like that." Magnus said, but was still satisfied with the end result.

As the smoke cleared, Hikel was seen on one knee huffing and panting, blood over his head and more. His arms looked like they had been blown apart, they were in bad shape and they weren't healing at all.

"I'll help you Edvard, just let me catch my breath for a second." Hikel answered.

Edvard thought he was crazy, he was in no situation to worry about another, but that was until he saw something in one of his hands. It was a metallic flask, with the letter VIII written on them.

'I know that flask, wait a second, how does Hikel even have that... he never said he had anything before, has he been buying it on the black market as well? Wait, wa he that mysterious bidder who out bid me for it that time!'

It wasn't the time for Edvard to think about these things, and Hikel had acted fast as he took in the blood. Following his eyes, he could see that Hikel was trying to say something else as well. There was something that he had failed to notice in the explosion.

Looking down at the ground, Edvard could see another silver flask, right by his foot.

'Is this his as well... when did he, how much of this did he buy...did he use all of his fortune to get this?'

There were a lot of mixed feelings in Edvard at the moment but he couldn't think about that, he slammed his foot on the ground hitting up a piece of dirt that lifted the flask in the air.

Letting go with one hand, he caught the flask and ripped open the lid with his mouth, gulping down the green blood instantly. As it powered through his body, he could feel it somewhat combatting the energy of whatever it was that Magnus was putting in him.

With the surge of power, he pushed the pincers out from his stomach and slammed its head on the floor.

"Damn it!" Magnus shouted, as he retracted both of his hands. "Both of you, still used that cursed power of the Dalki! How weak do you have to be!"

"Do you really think you can say anything!" Hikel stated, fully recovered, he jumped up in the air and swung his arm. Blood came out from his wound and started to explode but not right at Magnus but in front of him.

Immediately, going through the smoke was Edvard who delivered a strong punch right to his stomach. Then, kneeling down he pushed with his hands off the floor while his legs hit Magnus right in the head.

"Your power is borrowed as well, at least ours is only temporary... and we don't have to follow anyone for it!" Edvard shouted.

Hikel had his arms stretched out and was aiming carefully. He had used his blood control to gather his real blood in the palm of his hand, and then fired it out, similar to the skill blood cannon, but rather than his blood aura it was his actual blood lighting up with his power.

The blood hit the arms of Magnus and exploded, causing the hard outer casings to fall from his hands and himself to fall to the ground.

"You think, this is enough!" Magnus said, getting up from the floor. "Enough to kill me, you were unable to kill me back then, and now I am even stronger than before."

"There is a big difference between now and then." Edvard said.

A figure appeared, jumping right behind him, holding a greatsword in the air, and his large hand enhanced.

"Back then, you had people on your side, but right now, there is no one on your side, while we have all the help we need!"

The person with the large arm was none other than Andy. Hikel had given a flask to Andy also. It had helped him heal, so there was a chance that it would help him to become stronger as well.

With his giant hand and the greatsword, it swung down. Magnus lifted both his hands, but the sheer strength of the blade sliced through them and continued cutting Magnus right in half, stopping at the midway point through his body.

It was peeling apart, half and half, with no sign of life in his eyes any longer, as his body stood there. A former king, and a dedicated follower of Immortui, who had dealt them so much trouble had been dealt with there and then.

Chapter 2355: Blood Aura Evolve!

Logan and Agent 4 were able to have an easy time as they worked on the special symbols on the ground. The strange device he held in his hands was able to alter whatever was pre-written.

When looking at the ground it almost looked like the strange writing was carved into the metal, but from the way Agent 4 was able to alter them, it was clear that they weren't.

'These symbols are certainly strange... I do have quite a bit of knowledge that was left to me by Richard Eno about them... including the original symbols he had used to connect with Immortui, but when I'm looking at all of these it looks more complicated than back then... I need to keep an eye on Agent 4, although he has helped and worked with us.'

'There's a chance that since he worked closely with Zero, that he could be doing something to alter and help out the enemy side.'

While working away, Agent 4 himself could feel a pair of eyes locked onto him, watching his every move.

'He states that he knows nothing about the runes, but I know that's not true.' Agent 4 thought. 'It was easy to add a few additions here and there when we were getting attacked by the vampires, but Andy has done a good job in getting rid of them.'

Looking up, it was at that moment that Andy had joined the fight, helping the other originals as they had managed to finally kill Magnus. It felt somewhat unreal, as if he was going to move again, or perhaps turn into another form, but none of that had happened, instead he just stayed there.

Both Edvard and Hikel looked at each other, their wounds healing.

"Well, I have to say that you are one unlucky person to end up like that." Edvard smiled.

The body of Magnus started to vanish into dust, it was breaking down into little particles. He was somewhat expecting to see a blood crystal but there was nothing in his place.

"He really wasn't a vampire in the end huh?" Edvard said.

"We have to focus on the goal, the portal, its still being opened, and now we have our path to Jessica." Hikel stated.

Tying up the last of the vampires, Andy went over to the two originals.

"Thank you for allowing me to redeem myself. With that green liquid I had the power to overcome Magnus."

"You are thanking us? You were the one that finished him off, there is no need to thank us, but we have to figure out what to do with Jessica? Do you think we should just pull her out from the centre?" Edvard asked.

Hikel started to move forward, he thought if they at least removed her from the centre it would stop powering the device.

"Wait, don't touch her!" Agent 4 said, wiping the sweat from his face as he stood up. It looked like he had finished altering the very last of the runes. "There is a chance that if you move her, all of the energy will backfire and enter her body at once, if that happens, then you will lose her."

Both Logan and Agent 4 walked over to the others while Hikel took a step back. All of this stuff was complicated for them, they didn't understand it and thought it was best that they listened to the expert.

"Then what do we do, haven't you already changed all of the symbols?" Andy asked. "And right now Quinn is still fighting above to keep them at bay. I thought that this was all meant to end when we defeated Magnus."

"Let me deal with it." Agent 4 stepped forward holding the device in his hand. "What you said, about it ending when defeating Magnus, that might have been true to a certain extent. However, the way all of this facility was set up, it was designed to continue to work without him.

"As if, Magnus and everything was all here just to buy time. What they didn't expect, was most likely that you have someone like me." Agent 4 said, as he walked forward. "It will be best for you to just stay back while I deal with this, just make sure those vampires don't break free, or that there aren't any other surprises."

As Agent 4 walked over, he felt something climb up on his shoulder. Turning his head he could see a mechanical spider, and he knew who it belonged to straight away.

"This shouldn't distract you from your work, and I would like to do more research into these runes." Logan said, with a straight face.

Quinn was continuing to battle the creatures that were pouring out, and things were actually getting easier for him rather than more difficult. Still, there was nothing he had gone against that was stronger than the greater demon, but that was until he could see strange creatures coming out.

They were just like the others that had wings, as only winged creatures had broken through, which Quinn had guessed meant the portal had opened up in the sky on the other end as well.

However, this one looked different from the others, its wings weren't feathers and looked more webbed. There was a strange pattern that looked like fish scales going across the wings.

Not large or hard like that of a dragon but somewhat a similar design. The creature had a human-like body, but didn't look human at all, with its large webbed feet that looked like flippers, and it was the same for its hands as well.

Then there was its dark coloured skin. It was a dark blue all over that stood out against the back drop.

A few of them flew out and due to the gut feeling that Quinn had, he felt like this creature was different to the others, and used the blood forest punch.

The creature was able to act relatively fast as it turned its head and opened its mouth. In doing so, a dark blue energy came out like a vortex and hit the blood fist, but the blood fist was too powerful, breaking through whatever attack it had tried and hit the creature right on the head killing it in one go.

'The way these creatures are, they remind me a bit of the Mermerials, but they seem to be stronger than that.'

[You have absorbed blood of a new type of demon]

[More information of the demons has been acquired]

[Demon race: Freylin]

[Lesser Demon blood absorbed: Blood aura evolution is not possible]

'So I the demons aren't all the same race, but then why aren't these creatures that I killed before considered their own race?' Quinn thought. 'If I remember correctly, the vampires were a creation of Immortui, so in a sense even we would be considered a demon race.'

'The vampires weren't the only variation of the demons though. So there will be plenty out there, but I'm still unsure what the other ones are, or why there is a differentiation between them.'

While thinking this, more of the same creatures as before started to come out, they were all Freylin demons like before. They were slightly different shapes and sizes, some bigger than others, or with longer claws on their hands, but it was quite clear they were all the same type.

Unlike the creatures from before that were quite different.

'I feel like something is coming, a type of calm before the storm.

Coming through the other end of the portal, was exactly that. A Freylin with a wingspan that was twice the size of the others with wide webbed feet that were twice as big as well, had come through.

There was a surge of power around the demon, as it had come through the portal, and unlike the others that had passed through naturally, it looked like the portal was almost trying to reject this one, and he had forced his way through.

Under his wings, and swirling around his body, there was dark blue energy all over.

"Let's see, where is this Quinn?" The Freylin said, looking around, that's when a large blood forest fist had hit him right in the stomach. His aura moved in the way creating a shield to block the attack but it still managed to get through, sending him back in the air slightly.

[Demon general blood has been absorbed]

[You have absorbed the blood of a Freylin demon general]

[Blood aura evolution can now progress]

[Blood aura evolution is now in progress]

[1 of 5]

[New quest received]

[Absorb the significant blood power of the five Superior Demon races]

[1 of 5]

Chapter 2356: 10 seconds is all I need

Quinn could somewhat sense the different energies around, but it wasn't as accurate as what Leo could do with his ability, nor was it as routine as sensing someone's celestial power when he was a celestial.

Nonetheless, due to his training in Qi, he could sense strong energies and would somewhat know what level the opponent in front of him was at. In a sense, there were many people that had this same sense.

For vampires it was more of a natural instinct they had when sensing power. With this, Quinn could tell that the Demon General in front of him was stronger than the one he had faced before.

'Based on what the system states, there are more than five races, but out of all the demon races, there must be ones that are more powerful. If I can gather the blood of all of them, then my blood aura can increase even more.' Quinn thought.

'The last blood aura evolution gave me quite a boost, and for the next one, it's quite possible that it can make me even stronger.'

For what he had in mind, he might need all the strength he could get. It truly felt like he was close to squeezing everything he could out of the system. For it to finally give him a quest after all this time, maybe this was his moment.

In the middle of his thoughts, the Freylin flew forward with its body covered in the blue aura. With the enemy coming towards him, Quinn had used his blood aura to send multiple swords towards him.

As the swords got close, the blue aura was moving to protect the body of the Freylin general. It stopped the swords from piercing and slashing by covering the energy rather than directly blocking it.

'It flows differently from blood aura... but it doesn't seem to be as strong, maybe it's more defensive based, like my shadow.'

Regardless, the countless number of swords was too much and Quinn knew this would be the case. As a sword stabbed right through its chest. The Freylin winced in pain, and stared hard at Quinn.

"Although you may be stronger than the last Demon General I faced, I have grown much stronger compared to before as well." Quinn said.

Several blood swords moved, stabbing the demon, one after the other. The demon's life was still strong despite all the swords that had pierced him. Gathering his fist, Quinn moved through the air at a speed that made it look like he was teleporting.

He appeared right in front of the Demon General, and punched his head with a blood fist causing it to explode right in the air.

One of the biggest threats had been dealt with, and looking down below, he could see that it looked like the others were almost done as well. In the meantime. He continued to get rid of the creatures that were pouring through the portal and with his limitless ability, he wasn't tiring in the slightest.

Down below, Logan continued to keep an eye on Agent 4, who was now working away on some runes that were on Jessica, and that's when he noticed something strange.

He hadn't said anything straight away, because he was unsure himself, but it was when he decided he just had to ask the question.

"Agent 4!" Logan spoke through a projected voice on the spider on his shoulder. "I have been paying attention to the runes that you have been drawing around Jessica. It appears that for one, there were no runes placed around her in the first place.

"So instead you are drawing new runes."

"That is correct." Agent 4 responded. "You see, I'm trying to stop the energy from returning to her. It was set up so the energy would come out of her, to open the portal, and if we just reverse the process then that is what will end up killing her. Which is why I need to change it a little."

"I see, I understand that somewhat, but then I wanted to ask, these runes, they are ones that I have never seen before." Logan continued with his suspicions.

"We talked about this before, right? That the symbols of magic are more like an art. Just like a painting I can alter its state to fit what is needed. I can see the flow and that is what I am currently doing. You have no reason to worry."

While in the middle of doing this, the others had seen Quinn take care of the Demon General. As the swords pierced through its body, a strange dark blue liquid, what appeared to be its blood, had fallen onto the ground, all over the place.

The others hadn't paid too much attention to it, just assuming that it was blood, but after a few moments of landing on the ground, it started to move. It began to bubble up, and the blood was moving together.

As all of the blood touched each other, it continued to bubble more and more, growing larger, until it had formed the same Demon General once again.

'That Quinn is indeed a strong opponent. I doubt I even got him to reveal most of his power.' The general thought. 'The good thing is that he wasn't my target in the first place.'

Lifting both of his hands, the strong dark blue aura started to gather in them both. Feeling the energy, they had all turned around to see what was in front of them.

"Isn't that... what Quinn was fighting against, but he killed it, how is it down here?" Andy asked.

It was no time for questions, as it had already launched toward them. The three that had defeated Magnus were the quickest to react, and were ready to deal with his one.

That was until straight from above like a comet, Quinn landed his fist on top of its head, crushing it into nothing but blood once again and landing on the ground.

"I see, I thought it was a little too easy, from the looks of things you can form yourself through your own blood, and even now your blood is moving, trying to come together. If I continue to kill you the same way I have done so far, then you will just keep coming back. I think I know what I can do."

The mask that was on Quinn's face, he turned the dial changing its attribute to that of fire. Adding it to his blood aura, he placed his hand on the ground. Letting out his blood aura, he surrounded the entire area, including the area where the others were at.

The blood aura seemed to go around them, rather than underneath them like they had done with the blood. After that, the fiery blood aura was having its effect. It was bringing out the dark blue blood, turning it into nothing but a gas until it had all completely disappeared.

"That seems to have fixed the problem." Quinn said, and then looked at Agent 4, who was standing next to Jessica, as well as the others.

"You have all done a good job in helping out, and you have managed to protect Jessica as well as get rid of Magnus." Quinn stated. "For now, I can say earth is safe, this universe is safe, but as long as Immortui continues to live, that won't continue to be the case."

"Agent 4, is everything ready?" Quinn asked.

Agent 4 looked at the ground at all the changed runes, as well as everything else, and nodded.

"Good, close the portal."

With those words said, Agent 4 rushed from where he was standing over to Jessica's position, and drew one last symbol on his hand, when that was done he placed it on the ground, and all of the symbols started to light up.

Once again a large circle appeared above the area where they were standing and then the energy was shooting out from the portal, and it was heading right back to where they were. The portal was getting smaller by the second.

'It looks like Agent 4 wasn't hiding anything after all.' Logan thought.

The rest looked at Quinn, wanting to thank him for all the help but instead he just looked at Agent 4.

"How much time do I have?" Quinn asked.

"About ten seconds, I thought you would only need that much time." Agent 4 replied.

"Good." Quinn replied. "No one can follow me that way."

Before anyone could ask what they were talking about, what Quinn was saying, he had jumped from the position he was in, and was running right through the sky. The portal was closing and before it did, Quinn had gone right through it, on to the other side.

Chapter 2357: Agent 4's betrays

When Quinn had disappeared from the group's sight, they looked up and they could see him rushing towards the portal. They wanted to reach out to stop him, and Edvard and Hikel even somewhat attempted to do so by jumping up.

However, they were unable to fly, or walk in the air like Quinn was able to, and even if they could he was already too far gone for them.

He had reached the portal, and the strange red mist energy that was coming out of it, was attaching itself onto him. There was a bit of resistance at first, almost as if the mist was trying to push him away.

It felt strange, as if a part of his body was being rejected by this other world. When he felt this, he let out a bit of his aura, and in doing so, something strange had happened. Suddenly, rather than his body being rejected, it was being more accepted and it felt like he was being pulled by whatever was on the other side.

'This is the moment of truth, I made my decision long ago!' Quinn thought to himself, heading right in, and the portal had closed up right behind him.

The group were left stunned as they looked up at the sky, they couldn't believe what had just happened. There was nothing there, it was as if the portal was never open in the first place.

There were no deadly creatures, no red mist, and worst of all, there was no Quinn around them. When they were starting to come to the realisation of what was happening, Logan was the first to turn toward Agent 4.

From underneath his feet, condensed beast energy blasted from the ground, and he had grabbed Agent 4 right by the neck. Multiple arms came out from his back, and started to hold Agent 4 in the air while restraining him as well.

"What did you do!" Logan asked, his voice cracking as he shouted those words. Usually Logan was calm and collected, even in tense situations he would try to figure out what was happening, many had never seen him like this, this side of him.

"I thought there was a chance that you could be working for the other side, working for Immortui, but I decided to give you the benefit of doubt. You have helped me for so long showing no signs... and now you go ahead and do this, and now you trap him!"

"I should have known when you were drawing those strange symbols around Jessica!"

Speaking of Jessica, it looked like she was no longer restrained herself. Andy, using his great strength, had pulled them off, although she did appear exhausted as he leant her his shoulder.

Still, she was just as worried about Quinn as the rest.

'Quinn, after all you did to save me, now you have gone yourself... this is not right.'

"Wait!" Agent 4 replied back startled. He had expected somewhat of a reaction but thought he would at least have time to explain himself, and the last person he expected to act like this was Logan.

"You need to give me a chance to explain. I am not working for Immortui, everything I did, all of what I did, was at the request of Quinn himself!"

"Okay, now we really need to beat the truth out of him." Edvard said, pounding his fist into the palm of his hand.

"Wait." Hikel replied. "There was no change in his heart beat, or temperature. Although I can't be certain, I do have some skills in telling if one is lying or not, and he seems to be telling the truth."

Hearing Hikel say these words, Logan was thinking back, there were some strange interactions that had occurred between Agent 4 and Quinn. It was quite possible that he was telling the truth, but it was hard to believe, why would Quinn do all of this?

"As I said... those symbols I drew on Jessica, they were fake, they were useless. You said you didn't recognise them, that's because they weren't real." Agent 4 explained. "I was just buying time for Quinn to be ready to travel through the portal."

"You mean, what you said about the power reversing into Jessica was a lie?" Andy asked.

Agent 4 nodded.

"After altering the symbols, the work was already done, the portal could be closed, but Quinn asked me to do him a favour. That I would inform him when the portal was about to close, and he told me what he was going to do.

"There were two things that he made me promise, one was not to tell anyone else, and the second, was to make the window small, so no one else could follow him. This is the honest truth, and if you think about it, I think you all know the reason why he would do something like this."

Logan's mechanical arms started to lower Agent 4 down. Even being held up it felt like he wasn't trying to break free, and Logan was the quickest to think of the reason for him to do all of this.

He thought back to the information that he had learned from Richard Eno, and the conversations he had with the others. The other vampires did as well, about how to end all of this, was there a way.

"Magnus is not the end." Logan stated. "It was something Quinn had said a few times. He had already decided back then that to end all of this, the one thing he needed to do was to get rid of Immortui, that's why he went through that portal."

"But then why!" Jessica said in a weak voice. She was still leaning against Andy and it looked almost painful for her to speak, but it was something she felt like she needed to say. "Why would he do this, why wouldn't he tell us his plans and go off on his own!"

That was an answer that even the original's could give, even though they hadn't known him for long.

"Because he didn't want anyone else to get hurt." Edvard answered. "People around him are always getting hurt, and Immortui wanted him, so he gave him what he wanted and has now gone to stop him on his own."

The others were left in silence for a while, that was until Jessica finally decided to speak up.

"Can he do it?" She asked. "Will Quinn be able to do it on his own? Isn't this practically a whole other universe with beings stronger than those that we have here. We have seen the scary things Immortui was able to do here, but there, he won't be restricted. If that's the case, then it might be impossible for Quinn to do this on his own."

"We have to help him somehow."

"That's impossible." Agent 4 answered. "The only known way to open a portal is a giant mass amount of energy. The first time we had the red heart, the second we had you, but it only worked because Quinn was here. With both of you, it worked out, but without him, we have no way to open a portal to the other side and help him even if we wanted to."

"Unless, there is another way, but I don't know one." Agent 4 said.

Chapter 2358: 1 day of pain

An entire night had passed since Quinn had gone through the portal, and now it was the next day. Immediately, everyone got to work doing their own thing trying to find a solution to one of two things.

Either how to get Quinn back, or how to open a portal to the other side. The island that the battle against Magnus had taken place on, as well as where Quinn was last seen, had been taken over by the Green Corporation.

The facility was taken apart and being used for research, while a great mechanical tower was built up, towering high in the sky, reaching the point where the portal was last seen.

Using the information he had, Logan was trying his best to open up the portal, like he had done before. Then there was Agent 4.

He had been given part of Ricahrd Eno's research from Logan to look into another way to open the portal through the magic symbols. They knew they needed great masses of energy, but if that was only the case, then couldn't they gather a bunch of nest crystals or demon tier crystals? There was most likely something more to it.

As for Andy, he wasn't able to help much, but he had decided to take Jessica under his wing. To keep her close to him at all times, she was one part in all of this after all, and it was quite possible that she could be used again.

Then there was Edvard and Hikel, rather than just twiddle their thumbs, they had decided to head back to the vampire settlement. It was where they belonged, and they needed to keep an eye on things.

Because there was a large concern that was looming over everyone's head. Even though Quinn had been gone just for a day, what did that mean?

Did it mean Quinn had failed on the other side, was he still locked in battle right now at this moment, or was it something else? All they knew was that for them nothing had changed, nor had there been any reports of those with markings. Nothing was happening and that was what was worrying them even more.

Rather than taking a teleporter back that was offered by Logan Green, they had decided to slowly fly back to the vampire settlement. Although portals had been outlawed, there were ones for emergency use and since there was no one to really govern Logan himself, and he could create them himself, he used them once in a while.

There was however, a reason as to why they had decided to do this, because they wanted to have more time to think about what to do next.

"Have you made up your mind... Do you really think it's best?" Edvard asked.

"Shouldn't we at least inform his family of what has happened to him?" Hikel replied. "Right now, Peter is pretending to be him, how long can that be kept up, and what should our answer be if it is not the truth?"

"It has only been a day though, and it might not be a reason for us to worry yet." Edvard replied. "And she will try to act, even though we are already doing everything we can."

This was what the two originals had been debating about for a while now, and they needed to make up their mind before they landed at the vampire settlement. After a lot of bickering back and forth it seemed like both of them were at a stand still and they had already ran out of time.

When landing at the vampire settlement, there were two figures that had come to greet them, one of them being Muka and the other was Peter. Seeing him still disguised as Quinn made them feel a bit guilty.

"I guess you're wondering why there is a certain person who is not with us?" Edvard said.

Surpringly Muka shook her head, and stepped forward.

"No, I know exactly where he is, which means he did as he wished. In fact, there is a lot that we need to talk about. I think it is best if you declare a meeting and invite everyone, and I have decided that it's best that we inform the family of the matter as well."

"Invite Layla and make sure her kids are well looked after."

It was clear to both of them that Muka knew full well what was going on. How they had no idea, and judging from the blank expression on Peter's face, he was none the wiser as well.

The meeting had been called at the usual place, the round table in the garden located behind the castles. Muka, Peter and the others arrived first, then the next set of leaders arrived.

It was then that Edvard and Hikel noticed something, those that were coming to the table, members of the other families, they weren't originals.

"Quite a lot has changed while you guys were away." Muka explained. "The interrogation of those that had helped Magnus in the past continued, and we had placed a lot of pressure as well as restrictions on them."

"Nearly all of the originals were not happy about these restrictions, therefore they had decided it was best for them to go into Eternal Slumber. At the moment, the

only originals that are currently present are the two of you two, Bianca as well as Grenlet.

"Although not all had sided with Magnus, or worked closely with him, the others had decided it was best for them to go into Eternal Slumber as well."

Looking at the situation, Hikel didn't think it was so much of a bad one. All of the originals now, he trusted them all and they were part of the Punisher's Convent. If anything, it made it easier for them, working with those they trusted.

"I see, like you said, a lot has changed." Edvard commented, and that was when Layla walked in.

The first thing she did was scan the room, looking for someone, but the expression on her face didn't change when she hadn't seen that someone and decided to sit down.

The rest followed, giving Layla a respectful bow, she was after all one of the most important members to the vampire settlement.

"I assume you have asked me to attend this meeting because something has happened to Quinn... please can you just answer me this, is he safe?" She asked.

Hikel and Edvard looked at each other, how were they supposed to answer this question. Could they really say he was safe when they didn't even know he was alive, and if he was in another world, would that be the case?

"Quinn... helped us defeat Magnus." Edvard answered. "He managed to save Jessica as well, and we accomplished the task we were meant to do, but shortly after that. He had decided to head into the portal, to the other world."

Hearing this answer, Layla just looked at the table. She didn't know how to feel, was this something she should have expected in the first place, especially when they were putting themselves in danger time and time again.

"Everyone is currently going through their best efforts to look for him." Hikel stated. "We are looking at ways to connect to the other world, a way to head toward him, there have been no results so far but Logan, and everyone is working hard."

They wanted to reassure Layla, but it didn't look like it was working.

"This is why I had called this meeting." Muka said. "The truth is, Quinn had sent me a message beforehand, telling me of his intentions. He said he would go to the world where Immortui is and finish things off once and for all."

"To stop the pain and suffering of the vampires and humans, this is what needed to be done. He told me this because he knew the settlement might be affected and

wanted me to come up with a plan... and he wanted to pass on a message to you after he had left.

"To say to you, Layla, that he is sorry."

Clenching her fist, a tear had uncontrollably rolled down her cheek and dropped onto the table.

"However, I have also decided to call this meeting for another reason... because there is a way for us to get to Quinn, it's just whether or not we decide to."

Chapter 2359: The ultimate team

Before Muka and Peter explained further, since this seemed to be a big reveal of information, they had decided to get Logan in on the conversation, he was called and holgrammed into one of the empty seats.

All of them had been trying to reach Quinn with no such results, so they wondered just how they were able to figure it out.

"While you were all away there was an attack on the vampire settlement." Muka explained. "That attack was done by the familiars. We have quite a bit to explain, but now Peter has a contract with all 4 of the familiar kings."

This news was something the other originals weren't even aware of. They had only recently learneded that the one that they were following so far was really Peter, which was a relief for them all, because things started to make sense, considering his recent actions in the vampire settlement.

"Let me explain from the beginning..."

Muka went on to explain what exactly had occurred at the vampire settlement, and what had happened with Peter's meeting with the others. She also went on to even explain the finer details such as the 4 king's believing that they were making a deal with Quinn himself.

When the others learned of this situation, there were a few shaken heads and open mouths. It was a risky move, but they knew that it had to have worked out in the end, otherwise they wouldn't be here right now.

Then finally went onto the last details that the Boneclaw, the undead king, had the ability to open up a portal to the same world where Immortui belonged.

"This is quite the achievement." Logan was the first to speak. "At the moment we don't know if Quinn is stuck in the other world. So even if we found a way to open a portal there, we were struggling with how to open one back from the other side.

"However, if the Boneclaw is able to create portals himself, then we should be able to get in and out, as long as the Boneclaw is capable of doing that."

One of the markings on Peter's hand started to light up, and when it did a fat cat appeared out of it. It was one of the four king's Ovinnik.

"The undead king is capable of that, but opening up a portal to another world requires a lot of energy." Ovinnik explained. "You see, he already used a lot of energy that was gathered in the attack. I would say right now, he only has enough energy to open a portal to get you in."

"So you would still have the problem of returning. However, I do believe that the Qi that is in Quinn is incredibly strong. If you find him, then he might be able to give enough energy to open up a portal for you to get back, but there are no guarantees."

The group had a choice to make, now that they had a way to enter, whether they were to do so or not, and they could see from the eager look on Layla's face that she was ready to go through to that hell right now.

"Everyone needs to think clearly with their heads." Logan said, speaking through his holographic self. "I know all of you wish to go help Quinn, but will going to the other side really help him that much?"

"We have to think about the information we have, Magnus, Zero, Laxmus, all three of these were dedicated followers of Immortui. They had his borrowed power and each one of them was incredibly strong, causing us huge amounts of trouble.

"Now think for a moment about those that Quinn dealt with. Their power was stronger or at least equal to them, and there is a chance in that world that there are those stronger than them.

"I will be the first to admit that if I was to head into the other world in order to help Quinn, I wouldn't be able to do much at all, I am too weak."

The others understood what Logan was saying, especially those that had faced the ones he had mentioned. Could they imagine a world with beings like that, with those that are perhaps stronger, but for some it was even more reason for them to go then, because it meant Quinn was facing all of these on his own.

"Ha!" Peter laughed out loud, breaking the silence. "You guys can speak for yourselves, but I am plenty strong, and with these kings giving me a very very small amount of assistance, it will give me even more power. All we need to do is gather those that are strong enough and that can enter the other world.

"And not to be a downer or anything, but Layla I don't think you're strong enough."

A large vein appeared on the side of Layla's forehead as she heard this, and she stood up from her seat.

"What are you saying, do you really want to go toe to toe now, I have survived this long haven't I!" Layla shouted.

"Yeah, and that's only because Quinn has love eyes for you. Think, without him, do you think you would have survived this long, whereas for me, I have saved his life multiple times."

The tension was heating up between the two, and the originals thought that they might see a big battle right in front of them. Stepping in the middle of the two of them, in the end, was Muka.

"We have to face the truth." Muka said. "Honestly from what we know, and from what Edvard and the others had told us, not even they were a match for Magnus on his own, which means it would be the same for me."

"Also, you have to think about your children. If you were to leave, who would look after them? Of course, I know you have no intention of dying, but there is the real chance that you might not be able to return, all of those that are going need to know that."

At that moment and time, Layla hated herself, she hated herself for being so weak, and being unable to catch up to Quinn to help him out. She was his partner and she was meant to be there with him through thick and thin.

She even had been progressing for a 1000 years while Quinn was in a deep slumber all to catch up to him and yet here she was falling behind.

"I understand... I thought with the sword, I might be of some help... but what you say is true."

"I have a solution for you all." Logan said. "While all of you were bickering, I gathered information of those who have the highest chance of survival and might be considered the strongest to go over to the other side."

In front of them all, the first image to appear was none other than Sil.

"We know Sil's strength possibly equals that of Quinn himself and with his high range use of abilities he is able to adapt to any situation."

The screen changed and this time, a muscular scared figure appread on the screen, but it was one they knew well.

"We have Chris, or Agent 1 as some used to refer to him as. He has incredible use of Qi, a strong body and has the DNA of a Werewolf. Combining all these factors as well as his chance to continue to grow and his stable strong body, he will be able to have a fighting chance."

The screen changed again, and this time it had a red scaled figure on the screen.

"I'm sure we all know the frightening power of Ray, at this moment and time, we are unaware of his location, but I would say he is one of the few that has a chance to even go head to head with Immortui."

So far they all thought that those that were going were incredibly strong, Edvard and Hikel, they too wanted to go, and wondered if there was something they could do.

The screen changed once again revealing the last person.

"Finally we have Russ, due to his power and connecting with the sword he was able to defeat Pine, one of the most difficult Dalki we have had to deal with. We are unsure if he would be willing to help us though. However, with these people if we can gather them all, then we have a chance of going against Immortui."

Chapter 2360: An Extra power

After much discussion, a decision had been somewhat made. A team would be created, a strong force capable of journeying to the world where Immortui resided, with the goal of helping Quinn and bringing him back.

The thing was, none of these people had been directly involved with the Immortui case so far. The search was on as the respective members went off in search of them, to inform them of what was going on.

Peter was to go regardless of this journey due to his link with the Boneclaw. It was declared that he had great strength in the first place, and even more with the help of the kings.

Chris, Sil, Ray, and finally Russ—these were the members to be recruited. However, there were more than those selected who wished to join the journey as well, and it wasn't just Layla.

Edvard was taking a stroll through the settlement. He wasn't disguised, nor was he taking a secret path. Instead, he was simply walking through the marketplace.

This garnered a lot of attention as many vampires would bow and offer their greetings to the original leader. In turn, he would smile and wave back as he continued his walk.

"I never thought I would feel like this," Edvard thought. "I wonder, why do I feel a bit empty being left out of this whole thing? I was in a slumber and only woke up a short while ago."

"I don't have many attachments to those currently here. Why do I feel a little saddened by the fact that I can't go?"

The constant greetings from the public continued, and eventually, two young men approached him whom he recognized. They bowed down with their bodies at a 90-degree angle.

"Sir, we didn't expect to see you here. We hope all is well," Ronkin said.

The two that Edvard recognized were Ronkin and Jeouk. The two had become close after a series of events, and since they had both finished their regular day jobs, they were heading through the market to one of the inns to grab something to drink.

"You know what, maybe the three of us should have a drink together," Edvard suggested.

The three headed to an inn, and as they did, there were curious heads that twisted and turned. It would be an understatement if Jeouk and Ronkin said they weren't nervous about the whole thing.

It wasn't as if the leader, an original at that, would normally drink with regular vampires. Sure, they had done the same thing with Quinn, but that was when they thought he was like them.

"Everything will be on me today, so please drink up," Edvard said, taking a big gulp of the drink in front of him.

Not wanting to be rude, the two decided to drink along with their leader. There was general chat, asking about how the two were doing, and in turn, they asked how he was and how Quinn was doing as well.

"Quinn... I'm not too sure how he is doing, and I'm not too sure myself, to be honest," Edvard said, playing with the empty mug of drink as if deep in thought.

"I will have to ask you young ones to forgive me as I go on about my rant, but you see, there is quite a lot that I wish to get off my chest."

The two couldn't decline, but they did wonder what would make an original feel this way, to invite them to a drink together.

"I have managed to live an incredibly long life," Edvard explained. "And the settlement has changed a lot compared to the past. My role itself was extremely significant when it came to taking out the werewolves, a group that caused us great trouble.

"But lately, I have been thinking about the past more and more. Were the werewolves really all that bad, or perhaps the ones who have consistently caused trouble for everyone else are us, the vampires.

"You see, I was unsure if what I did back then was the right thing. In the end, I went into a slumber, living with this regret. I have woken up this time, and I feel like this is a chance that maybe I could redeem myself."

What Edvard didn't say was that he had a thought in the back of his mind. What if the fighting between the vampires and the werewolves was all set up by Immortui as well? If it was, then he was used as a puppet, which angered him even more.

"I thought this was a chance to help out, but it looks like even my own powers aren't helping me with this. I am not fit to help out."

Although the two could feel the strong emotions emanating from Edvard, due to his vagueness about the situation, they were unsure why he felt this way.

"I think you might be worrying too much," Ronkin said. "You have already helped in many ways, even with me and Quinn. You kept his secret and guided him on what to do. The other thing I would say is, I'm not as strong as you."

"But even then, I thought if I just did what I could, helped out a little and did my part, then it would be able to contribute to the bigger picture."

"I think Ronkin is right," Jeouk added. "Besides, maybe it isn't your time to help right now or play a big part. But as long as you keep trying and doing what you're doing, who knows? Maybe all those small parts add up to one big contribution, or the help you wish to bring about will come."

Edvard smiled. He wasn't expecting to get much out of talking to these two, other than getting a lot off his chest. But their words were certainly more helpful than he thought.

A few more drinks were ordered, and Edvard left the two to enjoy the rest of the night themselves. He could tell that they were uneasy and that his presence was putting some pressure on them.

Heading back, he entered his castle, still thinking about what he could possibly do. The castle itself felt empty. Muka wasn't there as she was helping with the search for the others.

"Ronkin is right. Maybe I should just go ahead and see what I can do. Let's see if I have anything that can help the others."

Edvard decided to head to his armory. Things looked different but familiar at the same time compared to before. The castle had undergone improvements, but it was built with slight differences in the rebuilds.

What Edvard was hoping for was that all the weapons and armor he had kept from the past had been moved as well.

Turning the special combination on the grand two giant doors, they started to open, revealing a room filled with weapons and equipment. At the very back, behind a glass cabinet, something caught his eye on a mannequin's body.

"Wait a second, that can't be... how is it here?" Edvard exclaimed as he rushed forward, running past every other piece of equipment to reach the other side.

That's when he noticed the glass cabinet had been broken, but nothing was stolen. Instead, armor was placed on top of the mannequin that wasn't there before. Reaching out, Edvard brushed his fingers against the red armor and could feel its power.

"How is this here? How is Ray's armor in a place like this? Why is it here? Did he decide to bring it back at some point, and why and when would he do this?"

There was no note or explanation, but Edvard, who had used the armor before, was sure of it—this was the same armor. The powerful armour he had used in the past, that allowed him to be considered stronger than the other original members.

Of all the things to see now, he was seeing this, the amour he had used in his fight against the Werewolves it was appearing in front of him again.

'I can't believe it, is it my luck, or is it just fate, whatever it is this is my chance.'

"Maybe with this, with this, I can be strong enough to help the others."

Chapter 2361: The power of the king

There was one person that was working closely on the whole situation, who had been given all the pieces of information even before all of the decisions had been made. That person was Logan, who was desperate to try and figure out a way to open the portal, and had got into contact with none other than Vincent.

No longer a leader of the family, he had gone back to his old ways of being a researcher and tried his best to improve the lives of those in the settlement with his inventions.

In the past, he had felt somewhat guilty for leaving his people, and now this was a way to repay them. Due to his great mind, Logan trusted his advice on a number of things, and that included working on the portal.

At the moment, Vincent was still working away in his lab as he was referring to a lot of information that Logan had sent.

'This other world's power is certainly strange. I wonder, why aren't nest crystals enough to open up a portal like that, but the red heart was?' Vincent thought to himself, while he looked at his own nest crystal that was in his chest.

His body wasn't his own, and the only thing that was keeping him alive was the nest crystal inside him. He had a couple of close calls, but at the end of the day he managed to survive this long.

'I hate to feel that Quinn's involvement, nearly all of it, is directly my fault.' Vincent thought, as he placed a crystal in a special type of holder.

Underneath it, there were the special symbols that Agent 4 would draw, the magic symbols that even the vampires would use for certain things from time to time.

'If he was to lose his life before me, it wouldn't be fair. I have to help get him back some way.'

The runes started to light up and the crystal was reacting. Then, moving to the side, he had a red crystal, a blood crystal, with the same set of symbols underneath. This too had activated and was reacting but the reaction was much stronger. The whole machinery built underneath was moving and the readings were almost twice as much as with the nest crystal.

'This was a different spell from last, it seems that vampire aura is a more useful power source compared to the nest crystals when it comes to these spells. Is it because of the type of magic circles, or is it all magic in general?

'There is still a lot of research to be done in terms of these magic circles. A lot of what we know was left behind by Richard and it helped us for things like moving

the settlement and creating the connection between the family leaders and the castles.

'But we have to face the truth, we are dealing with something that we understand a lot less than our opponents.'

While continuing his work, Vincent had gotten an alert, looking up there was a hologram display showing the hallway just outside his lab.

"It appears I have a visitor, let him in." Vincent said.

The doors to his lab opened up, and walking inside was one of the originals, and not just any original but Hikel Talon.

As he entered, Vincent gave him a polite bow, after all the originals were more senior than him. Even if he was chased out as an outcast, it was not due to the one in front of him.

"Please, there is no need to do that anymore." Hikel said. "I'm starting to feel as time goes on and on, the way we did things was completely wrong. Especially since I am coming here, asking you for the favour."

Seeing how this seemed to be a serious matter for Hikel. Two seats appeared up from the ground. There was a lot more influence from Logan's mechanical instruments compared to what used to be in the lab, but it was handy to have.

"Please speak, I can only assume that what you are concerned about is the matter of how to help Quinn in the first place. So I think we should be open to talk." Vincent said.

Hikel looked around the room at the many different devices. At one point and time, he had heard that the tenth family, including Vincent himself, were somewhat ridiculed by the vampires for relying on such equipment in their battles.

Yet, did it really matter at the end of the day? He could only imagine how the noble vampires and past kings would feel about an original asking him for help.

"I have an idea, and I am not sure if you can comply with my request." Hikel said. "I'll get straight to the point, I want to go to the other side with the others, which means that I wish for you to find a way for you to make me stronger."

Vincent had somewhat expected this, but it was still a brave request. Even though the other originals knew of the situation, they still didn't request to be on the expedition team, yet here Hikel was asking to, but why?

"I had an idea, and I don't know how possible this is, but you have access to a lot of Richard Eno's information, correct? He was the one that had created the absolute blood control book, the book that would be passed down from king to king.

"I know the book no longer exists, but wouldn't it be possible to create something like that again, and if so, for me to have that type of power?"

In Hikel's mind, if he had the absolute blood control combined with his explosive blood it would make him extremely useful in multiple situations. It would also increase his power and versatility.

What Hikel was asking, he didn't feel like it was impossible, if it had been done before, then surely it could be done again.

"I see, well I thought that you perhaps was going to ask me to make some device for you, or to turn you into a half robot vampire or something, but it seems what you have asked is more reasonable than you think."

"You see I have been focusing on a lot of research from Richard Eno. However, I will say this now, because the absolute blood control was made by using all of the originals, they no longer exist."

"We will have to try and substitute their power somehow. At the end of the day, I think what you are requesting is possible... but there is a chance it won't work, and there may be some sort of side effects."

"Of course, I will do my best so that isn't the case, but I do need to make you aware of all of the risks."

There was next to no hesitation as Hikel nodded.

"Let's do it."

The search continued on for the others, for a couple of days, and things still seemed to be unchanging. Worry for Quinn was still growing, but they assumed if Immortui was doing nothing then it had to be good news.

Patiently waiting, or rather impatiently waiting, for everyone was Peter. There was Muka who was there to keep him in check and update him on how the others were doing.

"It looks like the groups have finally made contact with those we are looking for, now it's just to convince them all to come with us."

While saying these words, a large surge of energy could be felt entering the castle. Muka was on high alert immediately, the same as Peter, but that's when they realised they recognised the energy.

As soon as they recognised the energy, two powerful forces were right outside of the door waiting for them.

"What is going on, is this really their energy?" Muka thought.

She started to think back, there were some strange reports of activity on the planet and readings of tremors in certain areas. She had no choice but to ignore them, but could it be possible that it was them? That they were testing this power?

The doors burst wide open, and standing there was both Edvard and Hikel, looking different from the last time they had seen them.

"We have a request." Edvard said.

"We wish to join the team that will be heading to the other side." Hikel said, with a large red pulsating scar going right across his face, standing with Edvard in the dark red armour.

Chapter 2362.1: Search for the ultimate team (Part 1)

Since the vampire settlement was low on numbers compared to before and wished to protect itself from any attacks that may occur at any time. Most of the leaders continued to stay and were unable to head out.

In the first place, the groups were heading out to find their allies and inform them of what was happening, so there wasn't an expectation that there would be a fight, of sorts.

Small groups of vampires led by vampire knights and nobles had gone far and wide, because there was a need to be.

One of the groups had been sent out to search for Ray, and they had no idea of his location. What they had decided to do was head to the planet where Jim and Jack Eno were last seen, the planet where the Marco Cruise ships had been created.

It took a few days for them to reach, but the small fleet of ships had finally landed at the specially made facility and it wasn't like anything they had expected.

Walking in front of the squad was a male vampire named Stockton, one of the vampire knights, and behind him was his small squad of around ten other vampires.

They were looking around to the left and right in disbelief at everything.

"What did you think happened here, sir?" One of the vampires asked.

"Can't you see with your own eyes. We are both looking at the same thing aren't we? It's clear that there was a massacre here."

The whole facility was smashed complete to pieces, it looked almost like an asteroid had hit the planet based on the way pieces had been destroyed. There was nothing for them to really see, but a few traces of blood here and there.

"Based on what we know, it's clear that Ray has been here." Stockton said. "It looks like he is doing as he said, getting rid of all the facilities that Jim had created, making sure that there is no way for him to come back."

They only had one choice, to send a report saying they had yet to locate Ray. The main issue being that they had no more leads to go from here and with everything destroyed, where would they go next to find him, where was he and what was he even doing right now?

One of the squads that had been sent by the vampires, had arrived on Earth. As for the one they were looking for, it was none other than Sil. In the past he had left earth in search of a way of dealing with whatever it was that would come their way.

When doing research though, they had found through the reports that Sil had actually last been seen on earth, having not left the planet. Still Earth was large, there were many cities and places to go to, but there was one that they could get in contact with that had an idea of where he would be, and that was Shiro.

"Are we sure this is the right place, Ma'am?" One of the vampires asked the knight.

"I'm sure of it." Emmerdale replied. "This is the right place, I checked and checked again."

The group hopped over the gate and had reached what looked like a playground. There were drawings on the floor, climbing frames, slides, swings and more, and in front of them there was a single large building.

On top of the building there was a sign that read 'Black Rock Orphanage.'

It made all of the vampires there think, why would one that was as powerful as Sil be here. He had the power to rule worlds, to be at the very top, and would easily be able to acquire some type of following and become an influential figure.

He could even build up the Blades again to what it was before and in doing good deeds or working as mercenaries. It would improve their image. In fact, another option, just like the vampires did, was to decide to put an end to his life, yet he had decided to live and ended up in a place like this.

The group continued to walk forward and before they had even reached the door to the large building, several men and women had surrounded them. It was almost as if they had appeared out for nowhere.

They appeared in a circle, pointing their weapons toward the centre directly at the group. One of the vampires was quick to act but Emmerdale stopped him, by grabbing his wrist before he acted.

"Remember, we're not in enemy territory, and if you really think you can go and take out a person holding a demon tier weapon like that, then be my guest." She said."

"Demon tier weapon?"

The other vampires could soon see the same thing Emmerdale did, as they looked at the weapons in the hands of each of their attackers, all of them were Demon tier weapons.

'Why would there be such guards in a palace like this, with such strong weapons just for an orphanage, is this really just an ordinary orphanage.'

"We are sorry to come unannounced but it was an emergency." Emmerdale stated. "Shiro Blade was the one that gave us the information about this place. We are here searching for Sil Blade. We have been sent by Muka, and on behalf of the vampire settlement."

The others continued to raise their weapons and Emmerdale was wondering if they were about to have a fight on their hands.

"The vampire settlement?" One of the men asked, holding onto a demon tier sword. "If it's to do with the settlement, then Quinn should be enough. There is no need for Sil to get involved."

"This matter in question." Emmerdale glanced away for a second. "It has to do with Quinn Talen."

Hearing that name, it seemed that all of the others reacted. In doing so just as fast as they came, all of them disappeared seemingly teleporting away from the place, apart from the man that was holding the sword directly in front of the door.

"Follow me, it will be best if we speak inside."

They followed the man inside the large building and straight away they could hear noises, it was children. As they walked through the halls and large rooms they could see children doing activities along with other adults.

They were of various ages from 5 to 16, and they all seemed to get along. On top of that, all of the facilities inside the building were state of the art. It was clearly a high end orphanage that had a lot of money put into it.

Heading to the top floor, they had come across an office, and when the doors opened there was no one inside. They were expecting to see Sil, but he was nowhere to be seen.

"Where is Sil?" Emmerdale asked.

Continuing to walk, the man went to the desk and sat in his seat when he did, his face changed and it was the one they were looking for, Sil.

"You were with us all along! Or are you someone else?" Another vampire asked.

"Yes, I was with you all along, in fact I am the only one here." Sil said. "All of the staff, the guards from earlier that attacked you, they are all just me, disguised. I don't want the children to get freaked out."

Sil, having helped out in the great battle, had decided to eventually take over an orphanage. He had listened to the advice given to him well, that maybe he was part of the trouble that was out there.

So he thought it was best for him to wait, if the time came that someone would attack earth then he would help protect it. In the meantime he wanted to do something good.

All of the Blades on Blade island were raised as if they were orphans, so he decided that he wanted to give those children that grew up with next to no parents a good life.

When doing his research that was when he had stumbled across an orphanage called Black Rock Orphanage that had been going on for years, it had a great long legacy, and he decided that he wanted to protect it, protect what legacy had been going on for a long time, and continue to do good for this person who had started all of this.

"I see." Emmerdale said. "I am sorry to disturb your peace, but we have an urgent message to deliver... Quinn needs your help."

"You don't need to say anymore." Sil said, standing up. "I will help."

Peter, Edvard, Hikel and Sil, so far, were on board but there was still the task of getting three more.

Chapter 2363.2: Search for the ultimate team (Part 2)

One of the vampire squads that had been sent out in search of one of those that they wished to take part in this special team, had arrived on one of the Graylash planets. Not just any of the planets though, they were where the leaders of the Graylash family were based.

It was a location that had been built in the mountains., Peaceful, with beautiful architecture that consisted mostly of temple-like shapes, while waterfalls were built in with flowing water in the area.

The group of vampires were being led by vampire knight Timo who was smaller than most vampires, but his power made it clear that he was worthy of being called a knight and one wouldn't dare disrespect him.

The group had arrived at this location and was now standing in a grand room directly in front of the leader of the Graylash family, Zinon. He looked to be in a somewhat weakened state as even now he was lying in his bedroom while important guests were in front of him.

"I see, so you wish to know the location of Chris." Zinon replied. "I can tell you that. I assume you are going to ask him to do a task for you. I just wish to warn you beforehand, it might not be as easy as you thought to convince him."

"You see at the moment Chris is acting as a Traveller mercenary, he is joining groups as they go off on hunts. There is a chance that he isn't on one of the Graylash planets at the moment, but I can tell you where he was last seen."

"Don't worry about that." Timo said with a bow. "We are quite skillful when it comes to tracking one down, and we also have a network of our own to use as well. As long as you can give us a lead, we will be able to find him."

Zinon smiled when he heard this.

"Oh, I had no doubt about that, what I meant was, it might be hard to convince him. You see me and Chris had spoken a few times after the events of what happened before. From everything he has been through, he feels slightly used."

"Used by Pure, used by Zero, and even used by Jack and Jim in the most recent situation. He never thought that his strength would become a burden that would be used on others. Right now to put it simply, I am afraid if you come to him with another request, he might feel like he is being used again."

The vampires had left Zinon to go to the last seen location of Chris, with what Zinon had said to them in mind. All they could do in this situation was ask, and they wouldn't give up until they had at least asked him.

Landing on one of the Graylash planets, the vampires felt more at peace than they did in other areas. After the first Dalki war, somehow the Graylash group had done a reasonably good job keeping the peace between vampires and humans.

There were still troubles here and there, with one group going against the other, but that always seemed to be the case. What they didn't get was more of an instant reaction of disgust.

"He was last seen at this travellers base." Timo said, looking up at the large square building. "Most likely when he has completed his hunt, he will return here."

The group waited and they were right on the money, as they saw Chris return with a big smile and the people around him had large smiles on their faces as well, as they thanked him and patted him on the back. They even heard a conversation where they had asked Chris to join their guild, but he had quickly refused as he walked to return to the quest board.

On his way there, he was stopped by the group dressed in black.

"Vampire knight Timo, here with a report from the vampire settlement!" Timo saluted.

There was a strange reaction that was occurring in all of the vampires, as they got close to Chris. It was a strange smell that was wafting into their nose. Without them realising it, out of their control their eyes were glowing red and their fangs were enlarging a little.

Timo could feel the strange sensation as well, but was holding it in as much as possible.

"It's best if you guys don't get too close to me, it seems more and more vampires are reacting to me lately." Chris said, taking a step back. "We both have good hearing so we don't need to be too close."

The vampires were dressed in complete black and not what Travellers would wear, like beast gear and such, were catching quite a bit of attention, as they realised that they were from the settlement.

"What does the settlement have to do with Chris?" One traveller asked. "Why are they meeting him here of all places."

Chris, due to his work, even though he had only been a Traveller for a short time, had earned a reputation among the others. He had been on multiple quests with

other groups and thanks to him, he had saved many lives, so he was quite the hero to them.

"The settlement needs your help, we have a task that only you can do." Timo explained.

A large single "Ha" came out of Chris' mouth when he heard this.

"There are plenty out there that can do more than I do, besides you don't want me. Everything I touch, or everyone I help, it seems to me that I make things worse, or that I end up helping the bad guys instead."

There seemed to be a great pain in Chris when he said this.

"And what are you doing now?" Timo asked.

"Me? I am a mercenary. I charge a small fee and help others on their quests. So far nothing seems to have gone wrong, and I enjoy seeing the large smiles on everyone's face." Chris answered.

This was somewhat his way of repenting a bit after the mistakes he had made when helping Pure and helping Jim.

"As you have said, this is most likely because it has been your choice." Timo said.
"I will ask you again, it is completely up to you. The vampire settlement is assembling a team, a team that is to go to the other side, to aid Quinn Talen.

"With the help of Logan we have evaluated the very best, and the strongest that will be up for this task. You are one of them. This is your decision to make, maybe you will feel like you are joining the wrong side again, but if you were to sit back and do nothing, and everything in front of you is destroyed, will you not feel even worse?"

The situation was certainly different to what Chris was expecting, and from the moment he had met Quinn he knew he was a good person, his gut was telling him something was different about him compared to all the other people he had met.

Maybe this time, rather than going with his head, he should go with his gut.

"Alright, I'll come with you, and fill me in on the details on the way." Chris answered.

Another one had joined the group, but the final person that they needed to convince was most likely to be the most difficult, an enemy or a friend no one really knew, but they knew he was strong and they needed the strong.

Chapter 2364.3: Search for the Ultimate team (Part 3)

Nearly all the squads that had been sent out were led by the vampire knights, that was all apart from one. One of the leaders of the originals, Grenlet, had been sent out to search for Russ, considering there was a slight fear that he might fight back.

Unlike the others, there were next to no leads for Russ, because he had escaped in the middle of all the mess. While the others had decided to go where they wished, Russ' location was never found, but that didn't mean they had no way to find him.

When Logan was on the search for Magnus, he had upgraded his facial recognition software, to collect all the information and send it back to him. During this time, although it hadn't helped in finding Magnus, using it now allowed them to track where exactly Russ was staying.

It had come somewhat as a surprise, or not, that he had decided to settle down on one of the Graylash family's planets, but not in a built up city as such, but instead in a village once again.

The village only had a few hundred people, and when the vampires came through the small village, it had caused quite a stir among the locals, and they could see them all heading to a single household.

It was a simple house that looked somewhat like a giant mushroom, it had a single door, and was far apart from all the other houses in the village, secluded.

'From what we know about this person, I would say that the place he has chosen to live, doesn't suit his personality at all, but I have to keep on guard.'

Grenlet gave the door a few knocks, and when there was no answer, he decided to give it a forceful push, breaking the lock and entering inside. He looked to his left and right as he entered a small living room.

There was nothing out of the ordinary. Sitting in a single sofa seat, was the person they were looking for with a glass of wine in his hand, raising it toward them.

"It's awfully brave of you to enter my house when I haven't given you permission." Russ said. "I thought you vampires couldn't enter places without getting permission. Or was that just one of those rumours that get spread around? Well, it looks like that myth is ticked off."

Grenlet could tell that this human was incredibly confident. He thought that he might be off guard or afraid that the vampires had come after him, but instead he didn't show a hint of fear at all.

"We are not here to cause trouble." Grenlet said.

"Ah yes, and that's why they sent a weak vampire right to the front of my door." Russ replied.

Grenlet was unsure whether or not that was a dig at Grenlet, suggesting Russ was that much stronger, or if he was being sarcastic, suggesting that they had sent an original after him even though they wanted to talk peacefully.

"We have come to ask you a favour." Grenlet stated. "There is an important matter involving the entire human and vampire races, no, it's safe to say that this matter involves our entire universe. You had helped us with the great threat against Jim and Jack before, which is why we have come directly to ask you for your help again."

While Grenlet was speaking Russ was continuing to drink his drink and when he seemed to be done, he took a big swig trying to gulp it down in a single go.

"You want my help... so tell me, why hasn't Quinn come to ask me for help himself. Or better yet, why doesn't he come here and force my hand once again, just like he did before.

"I'm guessing there is a reason he can't. So let me ask you, do you really think I would help someone that did that to me? If you want me to help, then he can come here and force my hand, and if you think you guys can try to force me, then go ahead and give it your best try.

"But if it's me against you guys, I'll tell you now, you don't stand a chance."

Grenlet was inclined to believe it was true. He had heard about the great strength he was able to summon at the time.

"Don't you understand, this is much more than simple grudge you have against one man." Grenlet said. "As I said before, this could very well affect our whole universe. Everyone you care about, everyone in this entire world would be destroyed and killed!"

Russ couldn't help but laugh.

"Do you not know who I am? Everyone I care about is dead. The only goal I had was killing the Blades and look at them. Every single one of them is dead as well. So if this entire world is to die, to be gone, then what do I care... You have nothing you can use to convince me."

The other vampires felt like this was hopeless, a lost cause. The only good thing was it didn't look like Russ had a grudge against them. It wasn't as if he was going to attempt to take their lives.

"Although many may not be able to relate to you, the original vampires can." Grenlet said. "We have been in your situation more times than you can ever imagine. Yet we know there is more to it than meets the eye. With the power we have, we have the responsibility to help those in need.

"We can't just sit by and do nothing and I believe even you have that to a certain degree. Didn't you take all of the chained under your wing? Was there a reason why you chose to be the leader, why you brought them all together. Do you think it was as simple as just using them for your goal?

"And lastly, if you really felt that way, then why are you alive right now!"

Russ, for the first time, seemed to be somewhat speechless, as he didn't say anything. If one really felt the way he said, then surely they would have gone into an Eternal Slumber or something like that.

Russ stood up out of his chair, causing all the others to flinch back. They pulled out their aura and weapons, but Russ himself quickly did the same imitating the aura of the vampires, and the power he had exhibited was far more powerful than any of them.

"I already told you I am a lot stronger than you, so don't even try to fight me." Russ said, as he walked away and headed into another room.

The vampires stood there, wondering what to do. Did Russ just walk away, were they supposed to chase him, or just let him be? A few moments later he had come back, and there was something in his hand, of all things it was a crystal.

"I have had this thing for a while now, and I know that it's special, but I don't really know how to use it. I tell you what, let's strike some type of deal, you help me find a use for this crystal, and allow me to keep it, and then I'll help you.

"I should at least get something out of all this, right?"

The crystal that was in Russ's possession was the god slayer crystal that had been dropped by the Dalki Pine.

Chapter 2365.4: Search for the ultimate team (Part 4)

In one of the castles in the vampire settlement, things were coming together, and all of those that would be part of the special team were being brought together to one place.

Muka had a large smile on her face as she had received information from each group, but it wasn't all good news, as there was one group in particular that had failed to locate one of those that they needed.

'Ray, we knew there was a chance that we wouldn't be able to get everyone that we were hoping for.' Muka thought. 'But he must have a good reason, it seems he has been helping us in his own way, destroying all the facilities and remnants of Jim.'

'That is a problem that we just don't want to have on our hands. Besides, there was also an unexpected one that had agreed to join us.'

At any moment now, all of the guests were to arrive at the castle, to discuss the final details before trying to head off into the other world.

"Don't look so nervous." Layla said, as she placed her hand on Muka's shoulder. "I know why you're worried, but I should be the one that really is worrying, and even though I won't be going on this trip, for some reason, I still feel like everything is going to be alright."

"Maybe it's because I've been in this situation multiple times now, and I've always over worried."

Muka smiled back, feeling bad that the one that had to comfort her in all of this was Layla, and although what she said was true, the problem wasn't just whether they would succeed or not, but how much loss would come out of this.

They had always lost those close to them during these big battles, when sending the others off, they had to go with the intention that possibly none of them could be coming back.

A large overwhelming sense of power was felt by the two of them, they could feel it, everyone had arrived and they were heading straight into the castle.

The first two that were in the large bottom reception hall were Hikel and Edvard. The two of them had been staying in the castle for a while now. Ever since they had asked Muka to join.

The next to enter was Sil, who had teleported into the reception room rather than walk in which startled both of the original leaders.

"It is nice to see the both of you again." Sil said. "Although you look different from the last time I saw you."

Everyone had already met each other after the great battle, there was a ceremony for those that had died, as well as celebrations, so they all had gotten to know each other at some point before going off to do their own thing.

There was a clear reason for Sil's comments though, the armour that Edvard wore, he never saw anything like it.

"Is that... a type of god slayer armour?" Sil asked.

Edvard smiled with pride as he pushed his chest forward showing the deep scales of the armour.

"Actually, this armour belonged to Ray Talen. Honestly, I don't know how it ended up back at my armoury, it seems like he must have returned it at some point. No one even knew he was here."

"Although I can't draw out the same strength as Ray, I have used the amrour before, and I have no doubt that I won't get left behind compared to the rest of you. Besides, my luck might be what ends up helping us all out in the end, with the place we're going to."

All of them, including Sil had been made aware of the details before coming here. They knew the risks. Sil had also heard about how strong the armour was on Ray. He had heard about the battle straight from Quinn's mouth that he had been through.

Although, it was hard to tell how much power was because of the armour and how much was because of Ray himself. Sil's head then turned to Hikel, because out of the two, it was his appearance that had more of a shocking change.

The clothes Hikel wore on his body itself were now dramatically different compared to before. There was next to nothing covering his arms and legs. It almost looked like he had a tattered robe covering his body.

Through the bare skin that was revealed, strange large curling dark red patterns could be seen across his skin. They were on the outside swirling around his arms, legs, and even a large mark swirled up on half of his face.

It was clear that this wasn't the same Hikel as before.

"I see you have changed quite a bit as well." Sil asked.

Hikel looked at Sil, and soon a smile appread on his face.

"Do not worry, although my appearance has changed a lot, I have not myself. This is merely a side effect of a successful experiment. I am glad to have you by our side on this journey. With your strength, I am sure we will be successful, and as Edvard said, I did this because I wish to help and do not wish to slow you down."

Before any of the others arrived, Layla, Muka, and Peter had rushed down, coming through the double doors from behind. They had entered the large dark reception room before the others were there.

"Thank you for coming Sil, I know you must have been settling in with your own life, and then to call you so soon." Layla said.

"Are you crazy, how many times has Quinn helped us all, and I'm sure right now he is doing everything for the sake of all of us once again." Sil replied. "Besides, if it weren't for you guys, I would still be trapped in the same place as before."

"He's right." A deep voice said from behind, and with no shirt on the top half of his body, they could see a red haired figure with scars all over his body enter the room.

"Layla, there is no need for you to say anything like that." Chris stated. "Besides, we know this is not just for Quinn, but for everyone. We know what Immortui is capable of, and we need to stop him once and for all."

"I just hate the fact that Quinn went in on his own, rather than asking us beforehand."

Chris was also surprised by the appearance of the two originals that were there in front of him.

"I guess we all feel the same way to an extent." Chris said.

"Agreed." Muka said, stepping forward into the centre of the group. "As we have looked into things more and more, Immortui seems to be the centre of nearly all conflicts, Logan has even found traces of his meddling dating back even longer than we can envision."

"I want to make this clear to everyone, this isn't a group that was created to bring Quinn back. Because at the end of the day, if we were to use the Boneclaw to just grab Quinn and bring him back, it wouldn't solve anything."

"There was a reason why Quinn had decided to go to the other world, and that is to stop Immortui once and for all. Your goal is to support him in this task, which is why we have gathered all of you."

Sil was thinking back to all the people that he had lost. There were many allies from the Cursed faction that he had lost on the way. All of those from the Blades as well.

All of that anger was originally pointed at Hilston, and now he wanted to point it at a new target while helping out his dear friend.

'I know Vorden and Raten would have wanted to be here to help us well, but this is not a task for them.' Sil thought.

"So is this it?" Chris asked. "Is this everyone that is coming."

"Not quite." Muka replied. "Ray was meant to be part of the group, but we are unable to contact him, but there is one more that will be joining us."

Footsteps were heard entering the room, and at that moment they all turned around.

"As they say, the hero arrives at the last moment." Russ smiled. "Now, I hope we haven't forgotten about our deal, right?"

Chapter 2366: The return of the greatest

When seeing Russ enter the room, some were surprised by his presence, but when they thought about it more, it actually made a lot of sense. He had great strength and was a large help against the Dalki.

If it wasn't for him, then maybe Layla, Minny and the others would have never survived before Sil arrived. At the same time, they never got to see the full extent of the powers of Russ when using the black sword, because he had already run out of MC cells when it came to facing H.

"I'll be honest, I am surprised to see you here." Chris said.

Although the two of them hardly got directly involved, Pure was around during the time of the Chained, and knew they were one of the large forces before they had been defeated by Quinn and his gang.

"Is it really that surprising?" Peter said with his arms folded. "I heard that he had actually decided to save Sil, and wasn't it because he let Sil touch him that he was able to defeat H?"

Peter was just repeating what he had heard, and from Minny of all people. His words had silenced the room and Russ had even looked down to the ground.

'Wait, that's right?' Layla thought. 'Back then, I tried to force Russ's hand to help Sil, but he had eventually made the decision to save him. Maybe he isn't one we have to worry about so much after all.'

"Please don't remind me." Russ said. "I have relived that moment in my head too many times before, and If I could I would have taken back that decision."

When Sil and Russ made eye contact though, Sil just smiled at him, despite his words. This just angered Russ even more, because it was hard to hate Sil of all people, why did he have to be one of the few Blades that were still left, then maybe he would still have a goal in his head.

If anything, Russ' anger was rising due to the fact that he was unable to hate Sil as much as he wished.

"Damn it!" Russ shouted. "Where was what I asked for?"

"Don't worry." Muka interrupted. "He will be here, after all what you requested will not just help you but it will help us as well, just be patient, he should arrive soon."

The room went into an awkward silence once again while they were waiting for this mysterious person to arrive, and wondered what was even Russ' request in the first place.

Meanwhile, his eyes started to linger on something that was in Layla's possession, hanging there around her waist. Before he knew it, his own feet were walking toward her. That was when Peter had decided to step out in front.

"What do you think you're doing?" Peter asked, with his hand held out. "You know, I'm not afraid to kick your arse if you try to get close to her."

Russ couldn't help but chuckle at the comment. Were all of these people in the room taking him for a fool, did they all suddenly think they could beat him? The only one he felt that he would struggle against was Sil, and that was because he had his power as well, but that was soon to change.

"That sword, the black one." Russ motioned his eyebrows and eyes toward it. "It was thanks to my power and it that we were able to defeat the Dalki that nearly annihilated all of us. Don't you think that it would be better if it was in my possession."

Immediately, Layla placed her hand on the sword, she felt like at any moment that Russ was going to steal it from her. Lifting his hand, it started to transform and turned into what looked like a Dalki's.

He grabbed onto the wrist of Peter, holding it tight.

"I would calm down a little, remember we are on the same side. You guys want me to risk my life in all of this, to give the best chance for this universe's survival, then isn't the answer obvious. If that sword is in my possession, then it will give us a better chance. It would be useless to leave a weapon like that here."

"It's not like she's going to need it."

"We can't be sure that's the case." Muka said. "What if there is an attack here while everyone else is away, and besides, we are already complying with one of your requests."

Although the conversation seemed to have ended there, for Layla actually, she was giving it a lot of thought. The words of Russ had gotten to her. If they really wanted to do everything they could, then they would need the power that Russ summoned.

"Hey, didn't you guys just say that Sil got the same power as Russ?" Chris said. "So doesn't that mean that it could also be used in Sil's hands as well."

"Then that would be a waste!" Russ immediately said. He was waiting for this argument to come up. "You see, Sil is already incredibly strong, and his power allows him to use multiple powers, but you see that sword, it was the power to negate abilities.

"If you were to use it the same way I did, then I am afraid Sil would no longer be able to use the powers the way he used to before. Whereas for me, it would be more of a last resort, and an additional power."

The others actually thought that Russ made a good point, but it wasn't their sword to give in the first place, in the end the decision lay with Layla, and surprisingly she had pulled the sword along with the scabbard out.

The sword was held sideways and she walked past Peter holding it toward Russ.

"You did protect us, you helped us back then, and I hope that you use the sword to do the same again. Russ... this is bigger than all of us, this is bigger than our individual grudges. It's bigger than just me wanting Quinn back, and I hope you can see that."

Once Layla's little speech was done, he wasted no time snatching the sword out of her hand.

"I knew you would come back to me one way or another." Russ said, placing it around his side.

"Remember, that is to go back to her." Peter said, with menacing eyes.

"Look, you are all strong." Muka said letting out a big sigh. "That's why you are all here, so can we just put the strength measuring contest down for a moment, and use all this pent up energy to fight the enemy."

Once again, the group could hear the sound of footsteps coming again. They were light and elegant but had an odd rhythm, as if one was struggling to walk.

"Oh, it looks like the one you requested is here." Muka said.

Finally, coming through those doors they were going to see what deal Russ had made. Bursting through and standing right by the door right in front of them, was a woman they could only imagine, but it was one they had seen before.

The group turned their head to look at Muka, and then back at the person that had just entered the room.

"Mu— another Muka!" Edvard said surprised.

"Hey...I might look like her but I'm not her! I'm the best forger in the world." The other Muka said.

Chapter 2367: Have you ever?

Muka was a beauty that was indescribable, a lot of vampires already had a natural charm and beauty to them compared to regular humans, apart from their pale skin that in some cases would be liked or disliked depending on one's taste, but nonetheless, the facial features and symmetry for vampires was on point, with nearly no imperfections.

For Muka though, somehow she was able to be one above that. If one thought there was a golden ratio of how one's face was meant to look, she had a goddess ratio on her face.

Which was why, when there were suddenly two in the same room, they without a doubt recognised it as another Muka. This wasn't someone who had imitated her, or looked like her, no, this was a carbon copy from head to toe, at least in the looks department.

The way she stood, the way she walked and the way she talked... they were all completely lost, as if someone had possessed her, but there were clearly two of them in the room.

'Wait what did she say?' Layla thought. 'Forger, Muka isn't a forger, and when they say best forger.'

Thinking about these words, she could only think of one forger, the one that Quinn put all of his trust into, and the one that had created all of the Cursed Faction's equipment for them.

"Wait, are you, Alex Way, the blood fairy forger!" Layla asked.

The others thought Layla was joking when she said this, this looked nothing like Alex, but then again, when they thought about it more, what had happened to Alex, where even was he?

"That can't be true, right?" Chris said.

"Unfortunately, it is true, maybe I can explain a little." Sil said, who seemed to be the only person not surprised by this, other than Russ who couldn't care less.

"You see, for a while now Alex has been trapped in one of the weapons he had created for Quinn, at least his consciousness has been trapped." Sil started to explain. "From what I know, Alex helped Quinn create his current armour set once more, and when doing so, his consciousness was transferred once again to the new set of weapons.

"After the war, I was asked by Quinn to move the conciseness from the weapon into a body, so Alex could continue living his life."

Due to Sil having all of the abilities, he was able to do this and had done it for Vorden, Raten, and Shiro as well.

"Wait." Peter said his mind lingering, it almost looked like one could see the cog wheels turning in his head. "I understand... how Alex is here, but what I don't understand is why he is now as a woman."

"Yeah, or why he looks like Muka!" Chris said, his head still turning back and forth. In truth he also found Muka extremely attractive, and now he was trying to turn off one side of his brain, as he looked at Alex, he knew he was a guy, or at least used to be a guy but was now in a woman's body.

"I think I can do the explaining from here!" Alex said, as he walked forward and pushed out his leg, revealing how long and slender they were.

"You see, when they said my consciousness would be transferred I didn't want to live in the life of someone else's mind. Which was when the suggestion came up, that they could clone a body and I could use that.

"Just how Vincent is also in a clone of Quinn's body. Of course, a clone's body can only last so long, but once we find a nest crystal all will be good. Anyway, when I learned of this, I realised, I could be whoever I wanted to be.

"This is life changing, think about it, have none of you ever thought about what it would be like to be a girl for a day, and now it was possible. I lived hundreds of years as a guy, and now I can experience the best of both worlds. And, if I was going to be a girl, then why not be the damn best looking girl there is." Alex flicked his hair, proud of his new body.

In the middle of the conversation Muka couldn't stop shaking her head, she wanted to reject all of this, but Alex had done so much for the settlement, he was a hero behind the scenes, so if he wanted this, then she felt like she had to comply.

She was going to go back into a slumber after this anyway, so what would she care if someone used her appearance.

"Alright, I think I understand most of what has happened." Edvard said, nodding his head up and down. "But what I don't understand is why is Alex here? If he is a forger, why is he going on this journey with us?"

Now, Russ was starting to get interested as he looked in Muka's direction.

"He is the one that you requested, or she..." Muka said.

"It's okay, I can't get used to it, so just call me she." Alex replied.

"Alright." Russ said walking forward. "There was a request I needed to be dealt with, and they told me that you're the one I want, that you might be the only person who knows what to do with this."

Pulling out from the opening of one of the special rings he had on his finger, a crystal now appeared in his hand, it wasn't an ordinary crystal, it didn't look like a beast crystal, nor like that of a nest crystal.

It was larger in size for one, and the inside had a strange substance moving in it.

"That's a god slayer crystal, where did you get that?" Alex asked. He had spent enough time recently around god slayer crystals to know what one felt like.

"Does that matter?" Russ asked. "What matters is whether or not you can make something out of this. If so, it will be useful to me, and useful to us on our journey."

Alex smiled as he grabbed the crystal from Russ's hands.

"I may be in a new body, but this body isn't weak, it's strong like that of the vampire leader. Of course I can make something out of this, and I will make sure it doesn't disappoint."

"Maybe you could make it disappoint a little." Layla commented. With the black sword and a possible god slayer item, Russ was going to become incredibly powerful.

"I will return here once I am done." Alex said, and he was off.

"Alright, while we wait for the crystal to be sorted, we need to discuss everything we know about the other side." Muka said. "And the plan for what to do once you are in there, because things are not as simple as they seem and this will be an incredibly difficult task."

Chapter 2368: Journey to another world

The familiar sound of metal clashing against rocks, as hammers hammered away, was music to Alex's ears. He had a big grin on his face as he had entered the forgery used by the vampires.

It was a large dark cave with furnaces, moulds, and more. It wasn't as impressive as what the Amra had, but it was still good enough for him to work with. When entering, immediately Alex caught the attention of the other vampires, they were unable to stop staring and as some saw who it was, they gave a quick bow.

'Oh right, they must all think I'm Muka, she did say to cover my face while I was working away.' Alex thought to himself, pulling out a black scarf and wrapping it around his face just showing his eyes.

It was pretty pointless since the others had already seen him, but since he was wearing some type of disguise, they thought they weren't meant to comment on it. The fact that Muka was here was strange enough.

After taking his own station, Alex pulled out the crystal and laid it out on the table. He was observing the outside.

'These god slayer crystals are always so interesting, each one of them looking quite different.' Alex thought.

He was running his finger over the strange scales that were attached to the outside. It almost looked like clumps of dirt had attached itself to the crystal, but on inspection they were a part of the crystal itself, like the scales of a Dalki.

'This will be the first god slayer crystal I'm working with from a Dalki, it makes me wonder what will come out of it. With my experience working with god slayer crystals before, it shouldn't take too long.'

Holding the crystal to his chest, there was a giant smile on his face.

'Finally, after all this time, I'll be able to make something again with my own two hands. This will be my own masterpiece rather than one created through Quinn's hands.'

He started to think back to the items he had forged with Quinn, how skillful he was using the hammer, how strong his body was, and how he didn't tire. In a way, it was quite annoying because Quinn had the skills to be an excellent forger, maybe even surpassing Alex.

Shaking his head away though, he was determined to make this the best piece he could now that he could forge himself again.

"What is there to talk about?" Russ asked, sitting down in a sofa seat while the rest remained standing. "Didn't you already give us the low down on everything we need to know. We just have to survive, find Quinn, then help him take down this death god, right?"

On the way to the settlement each one of them had been filled in on the information of why this task was so important. How Immortui was a god from another world, trying to pour in him and his creatures into this one.

The finer details such as him being the creator of the vampires though was somewhat missed out, but all the relevant information that would tell them how important this task was, had been filled in.

"In order to give you the best chance of survival, we have gathered as much information as we can." Muka said. "Logan has gone through all his memory banks, and the information that had been handed to him by Richard Eno, and there was quite extensive research done on this other world.

"At the same time, Peter has been able to gather information from the familiars as well.

"In the other world, there are two types of beings or creatures that we need to look out for." Muka explained. "There are the words natural inhabitants. There are different races like what we have here on Earth, but their appearance does largely differ like that of the familiars.

"These beings naturally have the urge to fight and kill, even more so than the beasts or the Dalki. It is a world full of death and a true survival of the fittest. It is a world that has been given up on due to how much carnage there was, it was deemed out of control by the gods.

"Which is why Immortui was sent there in the first place. Why would they care for a world that had already been abandoned. Perhaps they thought he might even be dealt with in this world, yet that did not happen.

"Instead, Immortui managed to take over the entire world, rising to the very top. The familiars state there now is more order in the world, and there are the new beings called Demons.

"The Demons are creations of Immortui, and there are several different types of demons, different races you could call it, with different traits.

"I'll be honest there is no plan that I can really come up with that will help you, the best I can do is just give you information. There are two scenarios, one, the original inhabitants have a deep hatred for Immortui, or they are working for him.

"I would like you to assume the latter, and imagine everyone is your enemy."

"So all of us in this room are meant to go against an entire universe and a death god, got it!" Russ said. "So our chances of dying are high."

Some would think Russ' words might deter the others but it hadn't, they were already aware of this fact.

"If we could, I would send more in to help." Muka said. "But a small team, when only having one real target, is more beneficial and the Boneclaw only has so much power. What you need to be aware of is that the Boneclaw can only transport you into the other world, and has no idea where Quinn is."

"At the same time. They have no idea where he will transfer you. There's a good chance you will be attacked by the others immediately, as you stand out. So be ready."

The group were making final preparations, they were training with each other, learning what each other's strengths were. At least most of them were, while Russ was being kept under watch.

Wondering if he would try to run away at any point and time, but they felt he wouldn't do so until he got his item anyway. Then, after a single day, his item was finally done. Everyone was to gather at the ninth castle once again.

They were waiting in the reception room, and entering las was Alex.

"Your item is done!" Alex said, as he chucked over a small object.

It flew in the air and Russ caught it, seeing that it was round in shape.

"A bracelet?" Russ said. "I gave you a crystal from one of the strongest in this universe and you gave me back a bracelet."

"You're quite narrow minded aren't you." Alex said. "Trust me, item types, especially god slayer item type weapons, are extremely powerful."

"I would trust him." Edvard said. "He is the one that made all of Quinn's equipment after all. I have seen the strength of his items first hand, but if you don't want it, you can always hand it to me."

Edvard held his hand out, to which Russ quickly pulled away and placed the black bracelet on. It then started to move, shrinking in size and becoming skin tight.

After inspecting what the bracelet did, his distaste for the item went away, but he couldn't be sure until he used it himself.

"There might be a few other things the bracelet can do, but I didn't want to test it fully. It's not my item at the end of the day, and I don't think I'm strong enough to draw out its power." Alex said.

Now that everyone was ready, fully equipped with what they needed, it was time for them to go.

Peter rubbed the back of his neck, a marking started to glow and soon form a mist, the large Boneclaw appeared in front of them all. It pointed its large dangled finger to the side and started to draw a large circle.

A faint red mark was left in the air and when it joined up, the entire area lit up red. A strong mist was sent out of the portal.

"So this is it, this is the other world." Sil said. "Peter, this reminds me a lot of back then, when we went through the red portal."

Peter shook his head.

"It's different, we're a lot different now to what we were back then, but you're right, we don't know what's on the other side... but we do know Quinn is there, which is why we need to go, and this time, no one's pushing anyone, we're walking in together."

Saying those final words, all of them walked into the portal, heading to another world.

Chapter 2369: Immortui's anger

Travelling through the red mist-covered plane at a great speed with two of his strongest allies was none other than Immortui himself. Those watching from their planets, could tell when the great one, as they referred to him as, was on the move.

This was because they were unable to directly see his body, instead they could just see a darker coloured cloud in the sky, the area it covered was extremely large. So much so that even looking up from their planet at the red space they could see it moving.

Whenever the dark red mist would pass, it would cause the creatures on the planets to go into hiding as well as the people. They feared that there was a reason for his movement and chaos would soon follow.

Looking up, the people could see the red mist continuing to move at a fast speed, but that was until it had suddenly stopped. The red mist was growing larger, darker, with sparks of red lighting, large gusts of wind and even fires started to appear within the mist.

"The portal was closed, I can feel it!" Immortui shouted in anger. The voice echoed in the heads of the two allies that were closest to him. Their whole bodies were also covered in the mist, only showing their glowing red eyes.

"What... but how does somebody know the language of the ancients?" One of them said. "I thought humans had stopped using it long ago."

"That has to be the case, this time, the power source was already enough. It just needed time to pierce a hole through." Another said. "If the portal has been closed, then the only way is to create a reversing spell."

While the two were in the middle of talking, Immortui's anger just continued to grow, and the mist was spreading wider and wider. It was starting to cover the outside of the planets.

Soon, the flames, wind, and lighting from his mist, started to attack the land below. It was destroying the ground, picking up the strange plant life, and even hurting the lives that were on the planets.

Some of the creatures felt like the surface of the skin was being burnt as their bodies seemed to magically catch on fire. While others were hit with the strange red lighting that took a solid form and pierced right through their hearts.

The two didn't say anything, they knew why he was upset. It wasn't the time spent or the efforts made. Immortui had been trying for a long time and for one who had lived as long as he had, waiting was fine.

The problem was, being so close, when one expected for the plan to work without fail and felt like their time to leave was now and that they were finally going to leave this place, that was where all the frustration and anger came from.

"They're all useless!" Immortui stated. "I should never have relied on the humans or vampires to do anything, the only good they can do is reproduce and lose their lives in order to feed me!"

The angered mist over the universe was continuing to grow, and now was starting to cover and reach over all the planets as well. Meanwhile, it looked like one of the two with Immortui had received some news, as the expression of his eyes had changed.

"I have some information, from those by the portal." The man stated. "I think this is something you might want to hear, and a decision that you will need to make."

For a moment, the lightning, wind, and fire stopped on the planet, but the mist was still covering it, ready to cause destruction at any moment.

"It appears that the vampire celestial, no sorry, the vampire god slayer, Quinn that you were looking for, had entered through the portal."

The mist started to retract back, heading to one place. This news certainly did surprise Immortui.

"He decided to enter the portal, but why would he do such a thing?" Immortui thought. "Wait, but if he's here, then how will I use his power to open a portal to the other side. Did he come here knowing that?"

Immortui thought about it a bit more though. Originally he was angry at Quinn, he thought all of his chances were ruined now that he had entered this place. Maybe in a few 1000 years there would be another opportunity to come up, but right now it was Immortui's only answer.

"Maybe... there will be a way to use his power from the inside. As long as we have him, there will be a way to open up a portal to the other side."

"Does that mean you wish for us to go capture him, the two of us should be enough." The man stated.

"Capture him, we need to do more than that." Immortui said. "We need to break Quinn down. He is not only the answer to us getting out of here, but he will also be a great ally against the Celestials and Ancient Ones."

"If he is here, then there is no one to protect his family, to protect those he cares about. After capturing him, we will break him down bit by bit, until he becomes our loyal dog, that is his only place in this world."

"He has his power because of me in the first place. He needs to learn that he is not one of a kind, and he is only a small fish in a big pond."

Immortui and the others started to laugh. There was still a plan for them to go by.

"Are you able to get his location?" Immortui asked.

Although Immortui could sense a great distance and should have been able to sense someone like Quinn. They were at a world that was contained in an entire universe. At the moment, he had no clue where Quinn was even though he was on the inside.

However, through their army, information could continue to be relayed until the news eventually reached Immortui himself.

"It appears when he entered the portal, there was some type of rejection." The man explained. "His body was slingshotted all over the place, and now he has entered the Narath section."

When delivering the news, the last few words he didn't say with confidence, and judging by the few moments of silence, Immortui wasn't happy about it either.

"That is where the old champions reside." Immortui made some type of spitting sound after mentioning them. "If we were to go there now, and do battle with Quinn, they might try and stir up some trouble.

"Let's see how things will play out, we will keep a close eye on him, and maybe things will be easier for us this way. That young one is quickly going to learn just how dangerous this world can be, and he is going to wish he never entered."

Chapter 2370: The hunting ground

Charging through the portal Quinn had next to no hesitation. He had already made up his mind, he had gone through all of the possibilities, he had done everything he could to grow stronger, and it was as if the system he had with him from the start of all this agreed.

Giving him one more way to increase his powers, and that was by absorbing the blood of these great demon races. The creations of Immortui.

'If absorbing their blood can evolve my blood aura further, then the creator himself must be quite powerful, or at least have power to that level. I don't know the situation in the other world yet, but if I can get this last power up, attacking all those around him before fighting Immortui then it will be over.'

'And if I can't, I still have another last resort.'

When entering through the portal, he could feel a barrier pushing him back, it was rejecting him at first but as he broke through, it was now almost trying to pull him in. He could see as he turned his head, the remnants of the other world closing, the portal itself disappearing.

'I have to be ready for anything, there's a good chance that Immortui could be waiting or nearby on the other side, I have to be ready to fight.'

Although Quinn felt like his body was being pulled into this other world, when the remnants of the last bit of the portal had closed, a strange occurrence had happened. An energy spiked from the last part, hitting Quinn's body.

At the same time, all of the energy in the air that was surrounding the place was moving towards him. Quinn swung his arm trying to hit it, but it did nothing; it was as if he was just hitting the air itself.

'This feeling is strange, it's as if my body is being pulled, but not my actual body, my insides.'

While having this feeling, suddenly it was as if Quinn was teleported, his whole body slingshotted. All of the pent up energy was exploding and he was suddenly travelling through the strange space.

He was hardly able to comprehend where he was moving as the energy was zapping his body again and slingshotting him to a completely different location, he was being zapped all over.

The feeling, it wasn't painful but more than anything it was annoying for Quinn as he felt like he wasn't in control.

'Do I try to suppress this strange energy with my own, or do I just let things take its course?' Quinn thought.

At the moment he didn't feel in danger, and wondered when this would stop. That's when he could feel the energy dissipating, it looked like there was only enough energy to bring him to one more place.

He was zapped and thrown through the air, he felt his whole body crash into the ground, and he continued to skid on the surface of the ground like a meteorite. His body continues to crash into large rocks breaking them, and trees.

Until it finally stopped, as Quinn' back had hit a large rock like mountain, that was dark red in colour.

'Okay... now that one did hurt a bit, it's a good thing I have a strong body, and this armour.' Quinn thought, still wearing all of the god slayer tier armour.

When the dust started to settle, Quinn was taking in the area around him. It honestly looked quite similar to the places that the vampires would choose to settle in. Quinn himself was in some type of forest, although the trees were ones he had never seen before.

They were large, gigantic in size, and the trunk of the tree wasn't the largest part of it, instead it was the branches that would swirl down. At the end of the trees there were also strange pieces of what he could only guess were fruit.

Then there were the dark red mountain tops that looked more like a giant ruby, including the one that he himself had crashed into. Finally, when he was looking at the destruction he had left in his path when coming here.

'Well, that will definitely get someone's attention, if there is anyone or anything in this place.' He thought.

His guess was spot on, as it didn't take long for him to hear the sound of footsteps coming toward him.

'1..2..there are three of them, and they're moving quite fast.'

With his eyes, Quinn was keeping track as they moved up and down the trees.

'They're really fast, faster than your average vampire.'

One had finally come down from the tree, and stood in front of Quinn allowing him to get a look at the creature in front of him, or more so the person. The thing that was standing in front of Quinn had a body similar to that of a human.

There were two legs, two arms, a torso and a head, however that was where the similarities had ended. The creature in front of him was dark blue skinned. There

was clothing and pieces of armour, but it looked like something out of barbarian times since there was a lot of the flesh showing.

The most notable difference though was the face. The bottom half looked like a regular mouth and jaw, but from the nose up, it was as if the skull had grown out from the skin. It was a hard casing that stuck out.

It continued showing the rest of the head and there was no hair, then the skull continued, showing two sharp like horn structures on top of the head.

'Is this one of the demon races created by Immortui, like the vampires!' Quinn thought staying on guard, his shadow was creeping on the ground expanding out. Without taking part of its blood Quinn wouldn't know, nor what level it was at.

"Did someone get here before us?" The skull man asked, and took a peek behind Quinn. "No wait, that's not right, were you the one that crashed here?"

Jumping down from the trees, two more joined the skull man's side, and they looked similar to him, although their skulls were different shapes and sizes and so were the strange skull horns that would stick out of their head.

'I have to be careful of everything I meet in this world, but at the same time, I'm not being attacked yet, so it should be fine.'

"I haven't seen one like you, are you one of us?" One of the other men asked.

"He looks like some, but he feels different ya know?" The other said, tilting his head.

"Can you speak?" the first one that had landed asked Quinn. "You haven't said a word, why did you crash here, in the middle of all of this."

There was a raised eyebrow at first from Quinn because he didn't understand the situation, but maybe this was a good thing. If he was to fight Immortui it would be best alone. He didn't want to gather the attention of all his followers and beings in a place like this.

So it would be best if he could just talk his way out of situations.

"I don't know." Quinn answered. "I was struck by some random energy source, it flung me all over the place, and eventually I crashed here."

"Wait, he survived a crash like that!" The smaller skull man said. "Hey, hey it's getting more and more likely that he's a demon. It might be best if we just step away from this whole thing."

The words had caught Quinn's attention.

'They are referring to me as a demon? Does it mean these guys aren't with Immortui, or do they use that word to refer to someone else?'

"If he is a demon, he doesn't look like a strong one. Maybe he was just lucky."

"If we just ask you, you won't tell us if you're a demon or not, but regardless, if he is one, then it's clear that he isn't one from here. Otherwise we would be dead by now, at least he's not a demon taking part in the hunting ground."

"The hunting ground?" Quinn repeated, wondering just what was going on in this other world. Regardless, he had one goal, to get to and defeat Immortui.

Chapter 2371.2: The hunting grounds (part 2)

When entering through the portal, what Quinn was having to face was nothing like he had expected. Meeting these strange creatures, the words out of their mouth, and the fact that they weren't hostile on the get go.

What he had heard about this place was that nearly everything in the world was out to kill each other. Yet, as soon as he met those that seemed more human, they hadn't attacked him on sight. Were they not as barbaric as he had learned, or was there another reason?

"What is this hunting ground you are speaking of?" Quinn asked.

He could sense that there was a bit of shakiness in their voice. In fact, Quinn had noticed that their hearts were beating fast before approaching him and each time they mentioned the word demon. Even now, it was clear that they weren't comfortable and their eyes behind their thick skulls would attempt to look back from time to time.

"This person doesn't know what the hunting ground is!" One of the skull men asked. "Is he faking it, is he trying to be cruel to us by pretending he knows nothing and the next second we find out he's a demon and he rips our hearts out from behind."

"Pretending to not know about the hunting grounds makes no sense though." Another said with his finger on his chin. "Everyone knows about the hunting grounds, and how could one not know when they're in it at the moment. The person would of had to have been living under a rock to not know, that's the only explanation."

The skull man that had first approached Quinn, standing in the centre, was silent, while wondering what to do, and eventually he had come to a decision.

"Can you fight?" He asked.

"What are you doing!" The other's asked in a panic.

"You're not thinking of bringing him with us!"

The skull man didn't know why, but if everything this stranger was saying was true, he had no clue where he was, or what was going on around him, then why was he not afraid?

Wouldn't most be afraid in this situation, and he couldn't help but think how one could survive a crash like he had, without having some type of strength.

"I am strong enough to protect myself, so you won't have to worry about me." Quinn answered.

"Good, my name is Anon." The skull man said and pointed to the right, the smaller skull man. "This is Ekeke and the bigger one is Tuni. For us to survive this, we are trying to group up with as many as possible.

"That is the best chance for our survival, which is why I am inviting you. If you can hold your own, or even be used as bait, then that would be good enough. We have to keep moving otherwise we will be found, I'm sure your entrance will have caused some interest in the area.

"Follow me, and I'll explain what the hunting ground is."

In the same vast land in the forest, there were two more with skulls on the outside of their face running around. They were wearing the same type of armour as the others, barely covering any of their skin.

They were travelling through the trees sliding off the large branches, jumping from tree to tree without slowing down.

"Are they still on our tail?" One of them asked.

The next moment, a sharp red shard came flying hitting the trunk in front of the skull man. It was only a centimetre away from his foot. Turning around, several more red shards came out.

Lifting his hands, around his forearm, it looked like the bone was starting to grow out from the skin, it was thick and large but still attached, Swinging them through the air, it hit the red shards away.

The skull men were fast, and had good senses for fighting.

"Brother, we have to keep moving, with just us two we can't take on the demons!" the other shouted.

Out from another direction, red shards were shot his way as well. Rather than blocking them, he dropped down from one branch onto another avoiding several of the red shards.

"They've already caught up to us, there's nothing we can do, but fight!" The skull man continued to block the attack, and started to run forward.

His teammate, watching from behind, saw him run into darkness, and he soon saw red glowing eyes. There were a few clashes of noise, and grunts of pain, until there was no more sound.

"Nooo!" The skull man shouted, knowing full well that his ally had been killed.

Just in case though, through a desperate attempt he started to run forward toward his friend, as he took a few steps through, several red shards were shot out from behind, from the front, and from the side. They came from nearly all directions and it was useless.

They pierced the skull man's body and blood filled his mouth and he fell to his knees. Before his death, he could hear the echoing sound of laughter, that horrible high pitched sound that the demons would make after their kill.

"One day, you'll experience the same thing as us." The skull man said in his last breath.

The skull men were moving incredibly fast, and as Quinn noted while watching their movements, he realised it wasn't as if they were faster than vampires, in fact their speed was quite similar, it was more so their movements.

It was so smooth, as if there were no thoughts needed and travelling this tough and tricky terrain through the forest was normal for them, they would just react to what was coming up in front of them.

Quinn was able to keep up, but it was because of his higher speed more than anything else, from time to time he would try to imitate them but it would slow him down just a little, pushing himself a little faster, though would make up the time.

"The hunting grounds!" Anon explained. "Is where we are right now. It's this entire forest. Us native inhabitants are either captured, volunteer, or are forced to take part in this hunting event. You might be thinking, what are we hunting?

"But you have it all wrong, we are the ones that are being hunted. Hundreds of us have been placed in random locations all over the forest, all to make the hunt that much more interesting, and the ones hunting us are the demons."

Quinn had heard the word native inhabitants. Which made him believe his guess from before was accurate, these demons must be the races that Immortui had created, and they were doing things like this.

"For each creature they kill they earn one point in the forest. Then for each one of us Skully's they kill, they earn five points. As you can see, we are involved in this

cruel game, and now that you are in the hunting grounds as well, you will count as a single point for them if they were to kill you.

"The only way we can survive is by banding with the others in this forest and attempting to fight them back, one at a time."

Now it made sense to Quinn why he had been invited, this was Anon's only plan, but would it be enough, and just how strong were these demons that were hunting them.

While running good, red shards came right toward Anon, he moved his head swiftly avoiding each one of them, and the others jumped down by his side as they all stood still, Quinn coming up from behind.

"I thought we would have had more time before one of them found us... I'm sorry for dragging you into this. Before we die together, please let me know your name." Anon asked.

Quinn looked around, trying to sense the enemies, he could feel them.

"My name... is Quinn Talen, but I don't plan on dying here, not before I kill Immortui."

Chapter 2372: Kill immortui

'Kill Immortui.' The three Skully's had heard the words loud and clear. To them though, it was a saying that they had heard multiple times. After all, a high number of them hated Immortui because he had made their nightmare of a life even more hellish than it was before.

So they often heard a number of people say these words, but when saying them, there was a hint of fear in their voice, yet this stranger of all things had said it without any fear at all.

Quinn looked at the ground, and started to observe the hard red shards that had come flying their way. It almost looked like feathers yet they shined like red crystals. It was something he hadn't seen before, and there was no way for him to tell how hard the substance was.

That was until another wave of the sharp red crystals fired out towards them. Rather than from just straight ahead though, they came from three directions. Ekeke bent down, allowing them to go over his head, but due to the position they were in, it meant the red shards would just hit Tuni from behind.

However, Tuni seemed to have eyes at the back of his head as he turned and used his forearms to cover his head and bending in his body so it would cover his chest as well. The sharp red shards went straight into the hardened parts on his body, slicing through part of the bone and sticking there like darts on a dart board.

Anon was a little more skillful than the others and also produced the strange white bone from his forearms, but hit the red shards in such a way that they were knocked off to the side, hitting the thick branch that all of them were on.

Finally though, there was a third set of shards, and these ones went straight towards Quinn.

'The shards come out fast like bullets, but honestly this is not a speed that I have to worry about.'

With his hands, Quinn was grabbing them out of the air, then when taking all of the velocity out of the shards, he would just drop them onto the floor, he continued to do this until he grabbed onto the very last shard, holding it in place and looking directly at it.

Anon and the others didn't have time to see this, they were far too concerned with their own safety. Seeing how many sets of shards that came out, they could guess how many demons there were around them.

'Three Demons!' Anon thought, carefully looking ahead. He was still unable to see them, but knew they were there due to the attacks that had been made. 'It would

have been hard with just one, maybe we could have done something with 2, but 3 is a lost cause... but I shouldn't give up.'

"The moment we see one of them, all three of us should charge in. Quinn!" Anon called out. "If you can, support us from behind as much as you can with any type of power you have."

The reason why Anon had given these orders to Quinn was because there was a double meaning behind his words. If he saw it was hopeless then he didn't mind if he chose to run away. At the end of the day, the objective of the hunt was to not be caught by the demons.

The whole thick large branch that they were on shook as something heavy landed on it, and soon out of the darkness something could be seen straight ahead. The first thing that came out from the darkness was a large foot.

It was thick and muscular but quite short in size, the calf was relatively small compared to the thigh muscle, and the same type of red shards that had been shot at them could be seen on the leg itself. Then its upper body came into view. It was a large and thick torso, making the creature almost look like it had a turtle shell on its back.

However, on its back, as well as its shoulders, it was nothing but the thick hard red crystals that they had fired out. Finally, its face looked like that of a wolf, as it stuck out and had a large snout, with a single large red crystal coming out from the tip of its nose and curling backwards.

"Attack!" Anon shouted as he charged forward and all the others followed from behind.

'He told me, that I have to just support them from behind right?' Quinn's eyes started to glow red. 'I know who my enemy is... so I will do just that, and support them from behind.'

Raising up behind, Quinn had multiple blood swords that were floating in the air, condensed into a purer form, refined with his stage three Qi, and would be enhanced with his blood control.

They were hurled out, and all of the blood swords went flying past Anon and the others. They were only able to glance at the blood swords going past their head before they went straight for the red crystal creature.

Seeing this, the red crystal creature turned its back, almost trying to use its shell to block and defend. The swords crashed and slashed right into the shell, cutting off large chunks of the crystal, breaking them off from its body.

It screamed in pain and grunted as it felt all of this.

'Oh, so the blood sword's were unable to pierce its body. I guess these demons are a little stronger than I thought.'

However, it didn't matter due to the sheer number of blood swords that went out. They swirled around to the front, and went right through the soft part of its body, piercing through the front, and slicing right through its head.

Anon, Tuni and Ekeke stopped in their tracks as they saw one of the fearsome demons just die like that, straight in front of them, pierced with several blood swords that just evaporated into thin air.

'I have to continue giving support.' Quinn turned his head to where one of the attacks had come from before, the end of his gauntlet lit up slightly, before he threw out a fist of blood aura.

All the others saw was the end result, his fist in the air, and only a blur of energy coming out of the other end.

[Blood forest fist has hit.]

[Blood has been absorbed]

[A new demon race has been discovered]

[Durum Demon]

[The blood absorbed is not of a high enough level to evolve blood aura]

[Lesser demon]

Using the blood forest fist, he could tell he was on the right path, and had discovered another one of the demon types. Fortunately enough, the single punch of his from the distance was enough to finish it off since it had hit it right on its head.

Quinn smiled as he looked at the other two.

"Sorry, I'll be right back, it appears one of them has run off."

After finishing his sentence, they no longer could see Quinn, he was no longer in front of them, and as they looked left and right, they were unable to detect where he was.

'Did he teleport... no, I saw he moved, does that mean he slowed down for us?'

Several thoughts were going through their heads, but it was all happening too fast, and before they knew it, Quinn had returned right in front of them. He slammed the head of the Durum Demon right into the tree bark.

Its body was bloody, one of its arms was missing, and it looked to be in no condition to fight.

"I have one question to ask you, tell me where is Immortui? If you say anything else other than the answer to my question, I'll kill you." Quinn said, pushing up hard, he was using the influence skill as well, although he doubted it would work and it seemed like it hadn't.

"Haha, you fo-"

Before the demon could finish his sentence, with a swipe of Quinn's hand he had slit the Durum Demon's head right off. It rolled to the side of the thick tree branch and fell off onto the floor.

'Against the demons and Immortui I won't hold back, he's been doing the same against me, so I need to do the same against him.'

Chapter 2373: The demon king

The demons were a source of fear for the Skullys, especially those like Anon that could barely fight back against them, not unless they were large in number. However, getting anyone to work together in this world was incredibly difficult.

Even before Immortui had arrived, all of the inhabitants were at each other's throats. Killing was an everyday occurrence amongst each other. There were no laws, and only the strong survived.

The idea of teamwork, or armies, was ridiculous to them. Looking back, Skullys wondered if maybe that's how their whole universe had been taken over so easily, even though they had powerful beings all over.

It was a surprise that Anon managed to convince Ekeke and Tuni, but others had rejected his offer. Still, it was a change that Anon could see, as everyone had a common enemy. People were starting to come together, but it was a little too late.

All they could do was live another day and survive, escaping the powerful strong demons. Those that had the power to fight back had been restrained and could no longer help.

So why... why now, when looking at this individual, did Anon start to have a bit of hope. The being named Quinn had easily dealt with three demons and hadn't even received a scratch on him.

On top of that, he didn't hesitate to kill the demons.

'I was right... Unlike us, he has no fear of them. He was serious about his words before, about killing Immortui.'

Using his senses, Quinn was trying to see if there were any other demons in the area, but he was unable to sense any, so for now he suppressed his aura inside of him. Another thing Quinn had done, was disable one of the passive effects on his armour.

Although they were passive effects, it didn't mean that he couldn't disable them, but more so that there was no cool down or timer when using them. He could still take away the powers.

One of the passive skills on the armour was the burning effect it would have on those nearby. It was great when fighting a large amount of enemies, but it wasn't so much when he was trying to sneak around, since them feeling pain would make them aware.

'I did want to try it out though, to see how effective it would be against the demons as well. It makes me wonder, like vampires, are all demons weak to the power of the sun?' Quinn thought.

"Thank you for saving us." Anon said, coming over. The other two were still too stunned to say anything, they were prepared to lose their lives.

"You didn't treat me with hostility, and I know nothing about this place. Besides you told me to give you support from the back." Quinn smiled.

"Is it true?" Anon asked. "About what you said before, that you plan on taking on Immortui?"

"It is true." Quinn answered. "I wasn't completely honest with you before because I wasn't sure of the situation, but let's just say that I'm not from here, and the sole reason why I am here is to take him down."

Anon suddenly started to get down on his knees. He looked like he was in a begging position but it wasn't quite the same. It was quite natural in nature when one asked someone they believed was higher up compared to them, to try and lower themselves to the one in front.

"Then, please, rescue the old champions, if you do that, with them by your side I believe you will have the best chance of taking out Immortui!" Anon asked.

Quinn did think about it for a moment, but he had quickly made a decision.

"I'm sorry, but I can't do that." Quinn said. "I don't have time to try and save people. The longer I take, and the more I delay in taking out Immortui, the more damage he can do to those I care about."

Saving individual lives wouldn't mean much, even if he defeated Immortui. If he took too long, then maybe everyone he cared about would be gone.

"If you have any information that will help me get to him, then please speak, if not, then this is where we part ways." Quinn explained. Although his first interrogation of a demon didn't work, he felt like eventually one would say or know something.

"I know you're strong, I can see that, and the fact that you have no fear must mean that you somewhat know how strong Immortui is as well, but even if you do have the strength to defeat Immortui on his own, he is not the only one you have to worry about. There are the demons as well, and that's where the champions can help you!" Anon explained.

"The demons? If you are talking about the demon general's then I won't have any trouble with them." Quinn had run into a couple of demon generals now and both times he had defeated them with ease.

At their level, they weren't enough to get in his way of his fight. The biggest benefit was just their blood.

"Anon shook his head, it's not the demon generals that you need to worry about, it's the demon kings. Each of them are incredibly powerful with power close to that of Immortui."

"Even if you had the same power as Immortui, taking on the demon kings would be impossible as well. Not unless you had some help."

When hearing about the demon kings a couple of things came to Quinn's mind. If he himself could rise to such power and was a creation of Immortui, then why couldn't other creations of Immortui rise to power as well.

So it wasn't unbelievable to think that there would be those that were as strong as Immortui by his side. The second thing though, was the quest.

The quest had told him to consume the blood of five of the strongest races at the demon general level. Did this mean if he was to consume the demon king level blood that his blood could evolve another time?

"There are a total of five demon kings." Anon continued to explain. "Two of them stay by Immortui's side at all times. While the other three are spread out to control and contain the rest of the universe in charge of overseeing several planets."

"I know you're strong, and it might be hard to believe the strength of one of the demon kings. So, all I ask is that you take out the demon king that is on this planet, if you did that, you will then understand how hard it will be to fight Immortui on your own."

Quinn stood in silence for a bit, until he eventually spoke.

"If I kill the demon king, will he know where Immortui is?"

"Of course!" Anon answered. "But you might want to ask him before you kill him."

Chapter 2374: The champions

In a way fighting one of the demon kings would be like killing three birds with one stone in Quinn's mind. One it would allow him to gather information about where Immortui was, two it would allow him to obtain a new blood aura upgrade and see if there was a further evolution.

Lastly, just as Anon stated, it would allow him to know the level of the demon kings, and give him an idea of how close he was to Immortui's strength. Having taken out what was believed to be one of the last of Immortui's powerful dedicated followers, it would even take him some time to come up with something that the other's couldn't handle.

'There are a lot of strong people still, Sil, Chris, Peter, Layla. All of them have the capabilities to protect themselves from the dedicated followers. Even Andy was a big help against Magnus.' Quinn thought.

Which was why he had somewhat agreed to Anon's little plan. They had found a large tree to camp in. The base of the tree was large and hollowed out. It reminded Quinn a lot of the area where he had met the demon tier owl in that time.

However, the tree base was smaller than that of the time before.

"I know you seem to be in a rush to do things, but before you rush off, I just wanted to explain the situation to you. I won't ask you why you are after Immortui, it's good enough that both of our goals are the same." Anon explained.

Using the active skill on his boots, Quinn created two clones of himself. All three were surprised by this but not completely shocked. There were many things that natives could do from different planets.

They were more so amazed at how accurate these clones seemed to be, and just what Quinn was planning to do with them.

"Don't worry, we can talk, I won't be wasting my time." Quinn said, as the two clones were sent out of the large tree.

They were set to go through the forest, scouting how large the area was, and to see just how much trouble they would be. Since the clones were only fifty percent of his strength, he felt like they could handle whatever they ran into, and would be fast enough to avoid attacks here and there.

"Alright, I still don't want to take up too much of your time." Anon said. "The people I asked you to help rescue earlier, they are referred to as the champions. I'm sure you don't know, but here, even before Immortui arrived. Our kind would fight over the smallest of things, maybe if one just looked at another the wrong way, we would go out of our way to prove our strength. There aren't many that work

together, and the weaker of our kind, had to somewhat band together to build up small communities."

"But because of our nature, even that wasn't easy and there would be constant fights among each other. However, there were three individuals who came out on top of it all. Three that people wouldn't dare try and go against.

"These were called the champions. They were so powerful that most people would avoid them all together, and at the same time they would be constantly challenged for their position.

"You see, when Immortui came, he had come alone. The demon kings were not yet a thing, his creations weren't strong at the start, and he had faced these champions alone.

"Tales of the fight between Immortui and the champions had spread far and wide, as some were able to see them from a distance, but those too close were unable to survive.

"However, Immortui never fought the champions together, and the champions themselves never fought against Immortui while he was in a fight with one of the others. It was against their code.

"Perhaps it was their pride, or belief, that since another champion lost, if they were to win against Immortui, then they had the claim to be the strongest. In the end though, all three of the champions fell to Immortui one by one."

Listening to the story, it seemed that the champions were quite strong, at least strong enough to directly fight Immortui by themselves. Quinn could imagine, if those with the skull heads were just regular people in this world, then there would be some strong figures, especially with how the world was.

"Wait, If Immortui defeated them, then are they not dead? What do you mean by rescuing them?" Quinn asked.

Anon shook his head.

"None of the three champions are dead. Immortui, he seems to keep the strong alive. Breaking them down, or using something against them to hope they join his army. At the moment, two of the champions are currently on Immortui's side.

"But that's only because they know they are unable to fight back. If they were to fight together maybe they would have a chance against Immortui, but with the demon kings around. They would struggle.

"As for the third champion, he has been captured instead, and locked away, being guarded by one of the demon kings. He refuses to work for Immortui, but at the

same time Immortui wishes to use his power and is attempting to break him down day by day.

"He... is one of us, a Skully, and these hunting games, seeing his own people attacked like this, is one of the ways that he is trying to break down the champion. If he decides to work for Immortui, the hunting games will stop."

Quinn understood now why Anon seemed to be so involved and wished to save this person, and why he thought he would be a big help to the fight with Immortui.

"There is something about your story though, the champions, you stated, have high pride. Even if I was to rescue the one on this planet, do you really think he would team up with me to take on Immortui? You see, for me I don't care what it takes, what I have to do, I will get rid of him, but is it the same for them?"

Anon didn't answer straight away, and it was Tuni who stepped forward with honesty.

"It is unlikely." Tuni answered. "Anon has missed out a big part of what he said. These hunting games have been going on for years now and there has been no result, do you know why? It is because the champions never cared for us in the first place. Only themselves."

"Before Immortui was here, the champions were the ones that would cause real havoc. The champions care for nothing but fighting."

"If that is true, then why didn't he join the others!" Anon shouted back. "The ones that betrayed us."

"Why?" Ekeke interrupted. "Because he is stubborn. The others just care about continuing to fight, while Morbo cares for no one but himself, he would never work with anyone."

In a sense, from what Quinn was hearing, releasing this champion named Morbo would be a double edged sword, he may very well be one that will fight against him.

"Thank you for explaining everything. You have explained a lot to me, for now, I will continue on my own. The champions, they can decide what they wish to do after I take out Immortui."

"When I take him out, or the demon king out, they will be free, and then we will see what happens." Quinn answered.

The clones that were being sent out, were doing more than the others had realised, they had already ran into several demons and during their meeting they had taken out demon after demon that were involved in the hunting games.

Skully's that were on the verge of death were being saved left and right by a figure that would just come and go. They didn't even know what was happening or what something so powerful was going up against the demons, but as Skully's met up with each other sharing the same story, the figure was being spread.

"Is this the start of a new champion... one that has come to save us!" They thought.

At the same time, the reports were finally coming in, to the demons that were in charge of the hunting game, reports that multiple demons were dying, and they were starting to act.

Chapter 2375: The Demons in trouble

On the north side of the forest where the large trees started to end, there was a makeshift campsite that had been built. It was mostly made of the hard dark red rock surface.

It looked like brickwork, only darker in colour, and was a little less organised and symmetrical than humans would build stuff. But it was large in size and there were several different buildings in the camp.

"Open the gate!" One of the demons shouted at the top of his voice. He was walking, dragging a large heavy bag along the ground. The end of it was soaked in a dark colour.

As the doors opened, he entered the base and jumped to where one of the demons at a type of desk was.

"Add them to my tally!" The red crystal demon said, as he swung the sack and slammed it on the table. The top of the sack opened up and round objects started to roll out from the bag.

"Oh, you got quite the catch I see. I'm surprised that there is still this many." The demon behind the counter said, as he lifted up the round object and looked at it directly in its eyes.

What was in the bag were heads, and all of them had the same look of the skull part being at the top. They were all the heads of Skullys.

As the demon behind the counter started to count them, he threw the heads behind him and they landed in a large pile. It was a pit of Skully heads, along with creatures and more. It was practically a tower of the dead in the camp itself.

It reached an incredible height that made it look like a small hill, even though it was made with only the small parts of the creatures and Skullys they had killed.

When the demon finished counting, he waved his hand, and a red system-like display appeared in front of him.

"Zexer, that is a total of 24 points, you are doing well, and have moved up to 8th place."

"Only 8th!" The demon shouted in anger. "I worked so hard, are there still so many Skullys left out there?"

The demon didn't seem to care about Zexer's anger, that was until something strange had occurred. The ranking of Zexer on the system screen... suddenly he had gone from 8th place to 7th.

"That's strange?" Zexer said. "Your ranking list just changed."

"You mean, someone just handed in more than me? Wait, that's impossible, there's no one even behind me." Zexer said.

"No, your ranking has moved up... and the only way for that to happen, is if the demon who had more points than you died."

The demon behind the counter wasn't just any demon, in fact he was a demon general of the Durum type race. His body was more crystallised with the hard red crystals compared to the others.

On his back, they extended out further as well, and it was hard to imagine how one would be able to stand up with so much weight on his back. Due to his sheer strength though, he could move about like it was weightless to him.

The general, who went by the name Lexor, was in charge of this hunting ground and had been in charge of it for a long time now. The occurrence he had seen now, was a rare one.

It was common for the rankings to disappear at the bottom end of the spectrum. That was where the weaker demons, or the stupider ones, would get fooled by the Skullys working together and die.

However, those that had large amounts of points were skilled, and were some of the best of the Durums. So it was rare to see the top of the ranking change. Looking at the scoreboard even closer, that's when he started to notice something.

The rankings hadn't just changed at that moment, they were constantly changing. Not just at the top, but all over the place, Lexor was seeing rankings change and names just disappear.

"What is going on!" Lexor stood up from his seat.

Running to the front, he could see a few Durums that would help around the base running toward him.

"Sir... we are getting reports that our demons are dying left and right in the hunting grounds... We haven't been able to gather much information, only one has survived so far, and wasn't able to see much of anything."

"However, our systems are showing that multiple Durums are dying."

It was a strange occurrence, one that had never happened before. Making Lexor wonder if one of the champions had betrayed them, or perhaps one had escaped. Bringing up his system again, he was checking to see if there was any information, but there was no word from the demon king, the king of the Durums.

"Tell everyone that the hunt is suspended immediately. Send out Kilbog in the meantime, and tell him to take care of anything he sees that is not a Durum. That should be enough to deal with the situation, if it's not, in the meantime, we need to gather everyone."

Zexer, who was standing by the side and seeing the reaction the general had, knew this was a big deal.

"Wait, you're sending out Kilbog, and cancelling the hunt? You've never done this before. Do you really think it's such a big issue if a couple of us are killed." Zexer said.

From behind, he could feel the ground shaking. It was one after the other, the sound of large heavy footsteps. When turning his head, he could see it, a Yak. It was another demon race.

One of the giant types, it was larger than the wall gate with its head towering over it. Black skin covered its body, and its head was large in size, nearly as big as its body. It had two large tusks, like that of an elephant, coming out from the side of its mouth.

"Kilbog, get out and deal with the situation."

Hearing the order, the large Yak demon started to run, and when it reached the gate it bent its knees down, jumping over it in one go. It continued to run, pushing the tree branches and stomping on the giant vines, crushing them as it entered the forest.

"If Kilbog can't handle the situation, then we have real trouble on our hands." Lexor said.

Quinn and the others had exited out of the large tree. He still had next to no direction of where to go. Since the clones had yet to come out of the forest.

'It seems like there are a lot more demons in this hunting game than I thought.' Quinn thought. 'I wonder when their attention will be caught, and if it's enough to bring that demon king over to me.'

Looking up ahead, they all could hear something coming towards them, the heavy footsteps.

"What is that?" Anon said, looking around.

Tuni decided to run forward climbing through the trees ahead of everyone, and a second later he came back swinging with horror on his face.

"Bad news, they sent a Yak demon out! This is the first time they've done something like this in the hunting games, right?" Tuni shouted.

Quinn was wondering what type of demon this was, to cause this type of reaction, but with his eyesight he could soon see why Tuni was so afraid. Hurling through the forest straight at them was the large figure, breaking away everything in its path.

It ran right through a tree trunk, leaving a large hole in its centre as it bulldozed its way toward them, and it was fast on its feet as well.

'Is that... the demon king?' Quinn thought. 'Let's take a look.'

Getting in a low stance, Quinn placed his fist by his hip, he coated it in blood aura, enhanced his body with the first stage of Qi, then added an outer shell of the third stage.

Next, using the god slayer equipment, he was forming the blood forest punch. If it was the demon king, then a good surprise attack like this would allow him to get the upper hand at least.

"Arghh!" Quinn grunted, as he threw his fist out with all his strength, not holding back. The blood forest fist went flying out, and suddenly the Yak demon fell to the floor, no longer with its head.

In front of Anon and the others, they could see a large hole through the tree branches in a straight path, right where the Yak's head was before. Now, there was no head, and only the dead Yak on the ground.

Chapter 2376: The Yak Demon

[Greater Demon blood has been absorbed]

[A new demon race has been discovered]

[Demon Race: Yak]

[The blood absorbed is not at a high enough level to evolve blood aura]

Quinn stood there looking at the system message. He had put all his strength into his punch, just in case the one rushing toward him was one of the Demon Kings but now he knew that wasn't the case at all.

The Durum type demons he had been taking out in the forest were lesser demons, a rank above a regular demon. In this case, the large Yak type, although it was a new type of demon it was at the Greater Demon level.

The same level as the giant hand Quinn had seen. There were still the Demon generals and the Demon kings above those as well.

'Still, not all has been lost, it appears that I am coming across the different types of demon races sooner than I thought. The Durum and the Yak are two new types and if I meet those demon generals and absorb them I will be over half way to completing my quest.'

After jumping from his position, Quinn leapt a great distance in the forest and kicked his foot in the air using the special boots. It looked like he could do a limitless jump or one was walking on air because he essentially was and had landed right where the dead body was.

This was where the three Skullys were currently at as well. They had rushed toward the Yak demon as soon as they saw its body fall. They were still in disbelief thinking that it would move, but when it was clearly missing its head, with blood pouring out of the top, they knew that it certainly was dead.

Moving his head in closer, Anon was trying to look at certain traits of the demon in front of him.

"This is a Yak right? I'm sure of it." Anon said.

"It's hard to tell completely without the head." Ekeke replied. "Usually the tusks on the head would be a sure way to tell, but to be honest, what else could it be?"

All three of the Skullys thought back to the Yaks that they had faced. When fights broke out all over the world, everyone had dealt with all sorts of different types of demons.

Although they hadn't seen a Yak demon in the area for a long time, they could still remember their devastating power. On top of that, their hard skin and durability. They would continue to move forward to charge and fight no matter how injured they were.

They almost seemed like unkillable gods in their eyes, yet, here one had been defeated in front of them, and it was with a hit that the others couldn't even see.

Anon himself was giving a side eye at Quinn, trying to see if there was anything out of the ordinary.

'I knew he was strong, and I had a thought that he might have the strength to back up his words when he said he wanted to take out Immortui, but deep down it was hard to believe. Now though, it's clear.'

'He at least has the same strength as some of the champions... but isn't it really strange why have we never heard of someone like this? And wouldn't the demons have taken him out.'

Anon desperately wanted to ask, or know why he had fallen out of the sky like so into the hunting grounds, but there was a chance knowing the truth could put a damper on the relationship between the two.

At the camp that had been set up outside the base, Lexor, the demon general that was in charge of the whole situation was continuing to have a look at the system that was set up. Every one of the demons had a tracker that was linked to the computer system they were using.

That's when he could see it... that Kilbog had been killed.

'He was only sent in around 15 minutes ago.' Lexor thought. 'And he has already been killed, just what level of enemy are we dealing with here... is it even something that I can take on?'

One might think that Immortui would have warned the other demons of what was going on after having received the report that Quinn had entered, but this was not Immortui's way.

In the first place, although the demon kings did as he asked, those that weren't close to him, those other than the two that were by his side, were free to do what they wanted in the world.

If the demon kings were to die, then it was simple, it meant that they weren't strong enough. Whoever killed them, Immortui would just try to best them, and if he did, then they would become the replacement for the demon king, essentially creating a new demon king.

This is what Immortui always did, use those that used to be his enemy and if they were strong enough, somehow allow them to join his power. Even though the demons were a branch of Immortui's power, they were all individuals, they all had the choice not to listen to him, it had just turned out the way it was over time.

"Has everyone gathered!" Lexor shouted.

In front of him, those at the base, which numbered around fifty demons, as well as those that were part of the hunting ground, which were around a hundred in number had returned, although a hundred had been sent out, a hundred hadn't returned, it was closer to 70.

Checking all of the numbers, the nervousness on Lexor's face was still showing.

'There are less than I thought, how could so many have died before we realised anything... were they really killed so fast? Is this one being's doing or a surge in power of the Skullys'

"I am sure you are annoyed that the hunt has been called off, but this is an emergency measure, so much so, that a report has even been sent to our Demon king." Lexor announced.

At first, all of the demons were annoyed and complaining and muttering under their breath, wondering why the hunt had to be called off. The news had yet to reach everyone, but now they had heard that the Demon king had been informed, they knew that it was far more serious than they imagined.

"I heard that quite a few of those taking part in the hunt died this time."

"Really? But doesn't some of the weak bunch die anyway?"

"Yeah, some, can't you tell by looking around, quite a few of us have been taken out."

"So have the Skullys teamed up? They've tried that before, but I thought that was all part of the game. Then we just team up and take them out."

"It wasn't a Skully... it's something else." Another one mentioned. "Before I came here I saw them. They had flesh all over their body and were wearing armour that was glowing with power. It happened so fast... the other two that were with me had been taken out."

"Wait a moment!" Lexor said, as he overheard the conversation that had occurred.
"You saw who did this? Why haven't you reported this?"

"It's because I just arrived here now, when you told us the hunt was over, it was on the way over here."

Lexor had already heard about the attacker from one survivor, but they had seen nothing, so then how did this Durum see something and still survive?

"Why... are you alive, if you looked at him... why are you alive?" Lexor asked.

"I don't know, I just ran, and when I turned around I could see him looking at me."

Panic started to set in Lexor's heart.

"You idiot, they let you live because they were following you, and you have led them right to us!"

Right then, crashing in the middle of the two, was a small human figure, wearing full armour, and full of flesh.

Back deep in the forest, Quinn smiled.

"It looks like I found what I was looking for."

Chapter 2377: A tough battle

Quinn had done exactly as Lexor had thought, he had allowed for one of the Durum demons to escape. Since all of this was meant to be some type of grand event, then clearly it meant they had to return somewhere, especially if they felt like they were in trouble.

Doing this, one of the clones decided to follow behind and eventually reached the base. The clone was in the centre of all of the Durum demons, close to two hundred of them in total.

'The real Quinn will make his way here, he can follow my location and it shouldn't take him long. In the meantime, it looks like there are quite a few demons that look slightly different from the regular ones I have taken out so far.'

'This will be a good test to see just how strong they are.'

Immediately, as the demons saw the threat in the centre, many of them started to point their hands out. The red shards on their back would vibrate slightly, and then out from the palm of their hand, the red crystals all fired out.

Since it was coming from multiple demons, it looked like shards of red crystal were raining horizontally towards Quinn.

'I have 50 percent the power of the original Quinn... but I can do everything he can, and that includes using the shadow.' Clone Quinn thought. 'Let's test if any of these guys can get through!'

Swiping his foot, a wall of shadow was left on the ground and quickly rose right behind him. The shards of red crystal all hit the shadow bit by bit, staying still and hovering in place.

All of the attacks had been blocked, while some of the shards were fired out far away, hitting the side of the shadow and swinging in slightly.

Some of the shards were coming towards Lexor, who had to quickly turn around. The shards clashed against his red crystal back, and fell to the floor.

"You idiots, be careful when you're fighting in such a large group, you can easily hurt each other!" Lexor shouted.

It was a quick realisation, they had never fought together like this before. Even when battling a large group they had mostly fought individuals and right now, the Durum demons were acting the same way, they were fighting as if they were taking part in a hunt, and all were rushing to defeat the intruder.

When the shadow fell, so did the crystals. There were a few ways Quinn had learned to use the shadow. Either when it hit the shadow it would slow down time,

and when removing the shadow, the momentum would continue forward at the speed it was shot at.

He could also open up shadow elsewhere and allow for the attack to go through the shadow as if it was teleporting. Then there was just moving the shadow in the way and blocking attacks. This would be a more condensed form of the shadow.

When the shadow fell to the ground though, the demons had no clue where the intruder was, it was as if he had disappeared. Coming up through the ground, with his gauntlets fired up with red aura, Quinn slashed through two of the demons.

It struggled a little as his clawed hands were going through the hard crystal backs, but was able to break right through, killing them on the spot, their blood flowing onto the floor.

"He's here!" One of the demons shouted, and charged in, his whole hand had been crystallised and had turned into a sharp object like a sword.

'While I'm a clone, even a small attack, as long as it hits me, can cause my body to disappear, so right now it's best if I don't get hit.'

With clone Quinn's hand glowing red, he fired out a blood cannon, full of his aura, hitting the demon right in the stomach, sending him up in the air, flying off a great distance. Another tried to leap on top of him, but with his boots he was able to kick up the air, and now was looking down at them all.

As a clone, there were certain skills of the armour that wouldn't work, especially any of the active skills, but with the air walk and silent steps, they still worked even on the clones.

'Their bodies are hard, at my current strength this might not be enough, but let's give it a go.'

From above, with his eyes glowing red, hundreds of swords were being formed, but the demons wouldn't allow him to do this, especially Lexor, as he attacked Quinn in the air above.

However, the shadow raised, and went in front to block the attack. When seeing this though, Lexor moved his hand, and in doing so it looked like the crystal swirled and moved around aiming right for Quinn's chest.

Just in time, the shadow had moved quick enough covering his chest and blocking the attack.

'It looks like that one is a little more skillful compared to the others, but the best thing to do right now is get rid of as many of them as possible.'

The swords began swinging down from the sky, and now it was his turn for a large-scale attack. Some of the demons decided to try and attack the blood swords, but as their crystals hit the swords, they did next to nothing.

While others decided to turtle up. They pulled their legs and arms in, with their face towards the ground and allowed for their red hard crystal backs to face the sky.

Those that hadn't done this, the swords pierced through their bodies, several of them, but the backs of the others were strong enough to block the swords, but not without a few of the crystals on the back cracking or breaking off.

Eventually, the swords raining down had come to an end, and now the ground was a completely different sight compared to what it was before.

'That's good, it looks like I managed to get rid of at least half of them.' The clone thought.

Looking at the ground from above, that was when the clone Quinn had seen something, it was a horrid sight. It was the mountain, the mountain of dead corpses, the heads of the Skullys as well as the dead beasts.

'They have a mountain of the dead piled up like it's some sort of achievement. I guess those that are working for Immortui, have next to no compassion just like him. I won't have to feel bad at all about getting rid of them.'

There were a few that had just been injured rather than killed, so lowering himself to the ground, he had planned to finish them off. Going up to the first one, Quinn had his gauntlets encased in the red aura again, and he could see the demon moving toward him.

He leaned back avoiding a strike, and as he did he smashed right through one's head. He continued as he went toward the next one again, this time the demon didn't move quick enough, and Quinn had already killed another.

Then, once again, another demon had only been injured with the sword going through its thigh, it made a desperate attempt as it lept towards Quinn, and shot out several shards towards him.

Moving from side to side he was able to avoid them all. With his hand building up a blood cannon, the clone was going to deal with it from far range, until it felt something go right through its chest.

It was a crystallised red hand.

'Damn it... this body... is so weak...' Turning his head, the clone looked and noticed that it was the demon that was more crystallised then the others and had a bigger back.

'I knew this one was more troublesome than the others, maybe I should have gotten rid of him first.'

Lexor felt like he had the perfect hit, he had been waiting for the perfect time and moment and he had successfully landed a killing strike. The next moment though, and his target had puffed into nothing but clouds.

When the smoke cleared up, Lexor could see that there was no one in front of him.

"Is he dead?" Lexor thought, turning his head left and right, wondering if he had escaped, but he was unable to see any sign of him, other than the fact that their attack had halted, but now they were now less than a hundred of them.

"He has to be dead, I stabbed him right through the heart." Lexor said to himself.
"Still, I can't believe it, how could one person cause all of this damage. This has never happened before."

"At least, we dealt with the problem now... and it wasn't any worse."

Lexor had no idea, because at that moment, just outside of the camp, Anon and a particular person had arrived.

Chapter 2378: The locked champion

Before Quinn had entered the camp site with all of the Durum and others, his clone had reached the area first causing chaos. However, Quinn had released not just one clone but two clones.

One of them was busy attacking the base, the clone seemed to be strong enough to deal with the demons so he felt that there was no need for two, and even if there was, the second clone was dealing with a much more important task.

The clone had gone past the camp and in doing so it was exploring the rest of the planet they were on. From the information Quinn had received he knew of two things, for one that there is one that is called the champion somewhere on the planet as well as the demon king.

Not travelling with others and having extra help, this clone was able to put its full attention into exploring the planet ignoring the demons until it saw something interesting.

'This place has a large lack of life on the planets.' The clone thought. 'It might just be the case for this planet in general. There are plenty of planets near Earth that also have a lack of life.'

'It makes me wonder, if all of this is due to the doing of Immortui, or if it's always been like this. The world feels completely different, even the air itself feels filled with energy compared to earth.'

The clone was feeling a strange sensation, just being here, he could almost feel the energy lingering in the air entering him and powering him up. With this excess energy entering them, it almost wanted the clone to expand it out somehow, making it want to fight.

Perhaps, it was Immortui's doing, or just this universe in general, something in it that caused the creatures to fight against each other. It made the clone wonder what would happen to the real Quinn if he stayed here too long.

After searching the lands for a while, it finally looked like the clone had found something different in this world. There was a large staircase leading up to a platform, looking almost like an altar.

The stairs went incredibly far out, almost a kilometre side to side. They looked old, as there were many cracks in the staircase itself. At the bottom of the staircase though, there was no sign of any demons.

'I don't know what this is, but there can't be any harm in searching this place. I mean if I disappear, it's not too much of a problem.'

The clones were quite strange creations based on Quinn's thought. Quinn could pass information to each other. Also Quinn could direct them and order them on what to do, but they did have their own thoughts, allowing them to act freely as they wished.

Going up the steps, Quinn had quickly noticed how big the gap was between each of the steps. When standing on the first step alone his head only reached the next step. If he was just to try to go up them normally he never would have been able to.

'These stairs are almost made for giants. The Durum demons are only a little bit bigger than regular humans, so I don't think it could have been made for them.'

It was much more likely to have been made for something like the Yak demons and suited more their size. However, there was also a chance it was made by the natural inhabitants, after all not all of them were like the Skullys either.

Although, so far on the planet, Quinn had only seen demons, Skullys, and the dead body of creatures that had low level beast-like intelligence.

Jumping up, Quinn managed to clear a few steps at a time, and the stairs went up higher than he thought. After jumping for a while he looked back and it was almost as if he was climbing a large mountain.

There were even brown and orange coloured clouds that could be seen in certain areas, continuing up, he eventually came to the edge of the platform where it levelled out.

It was made of the same stones as the staircase, but the platform looked to be even larger than the stairs themselves, as he was unable to see where it ended.

'This whole thing, it almost looks like there was some type of city in the sky.' Quinn thought, turning his head glancing at the large pillars, the housing like structures. It was clear at some point, some sort of life did live here.

A lot of the housing had even been destroyed, so much so that it looked like nothing but rubble. There was a clear street to walk on that the clone continued to follow it and eventually reaching the end, he could see something up ahead.

On a pyramid like structure, there were five gigantic pillars, they were thick and went up so high into the sky that the clouds blocked the view of the very top. On these pillars though, there were chains that were solid green in colour.

The chains, they went across the floor, and were attached to a figure in the centre of the pillars that were spread out like a pentagon.

'That... it looks like a giant Skully?'

It was just as large as the Yak, but its features were completely different. It had the same half head skull-like design on its head. Rather than horns on top of the skull, this one had a singular horn.

Then there were its knuckles and hands as well. Part of it was encased in an outer skeleton like design as well, but it was clear that it was the same type of inhabitant as Anon and the others, it was certainly a Skully despite its size.

The chains from the pillars were each wrapped around attached to certain cuffs on parts of its body. Around the wrists and ankles and one around the neck. The Skully in the centre was alive.

'If I was to guess, I would have to say that this is one of the champions, the one that Anon talked about.'

Jumping from his position, Quinn landed around twenty metres away from the Skully. Now that he was close, he noticed a few things. One, there was a large circle that had been drawn underneath the Skully, then underneath each of the pillars, each of them had circles drawn under them with symbols as well.

'Magic circles... I guess it would make sense. If there is someone strong enough to fight against Immortui, then they wouldn't be able to restrict them via normal means.'

The Skully lifted its head, and looked straight at Quinn for a few moments. His eyes were not just staring at his features but almost trying to read him

"It's been a long time since I have had a visitor." The Skully said. "Who would dare to climb the stairs, when they know what awaits them, are you another demon sent by him? To try and convince me to join you?"

Based on the context, Quinn knew what this person was talking about.

"You are one of the champions, correct? I have heard about you from your kind, how you fought against Immortui, and are trapped here because of him."

The Skully shut up for a moment, because these weren't usually the words spoken by the demons that would come and see him.

"Who are you?" The Skully asked.

"Who am I? I don't think who I am would really matter to you, instead I will tell you the reason why I am here." Quinn said. "I am here to take down Immortui, and unlike you, I can not fail, no matter what the cost."

"I was searching for him, and just happened to come across you."

These words had put a large smile on the Skully's face.

"You are right, I don't know who you are, but you seem crazy, a bit messed up in the head to say words like that. You really think you can beat Immortui, well, I guess we will soon find out."

Quinn wondered what he meant by those words, and soon saw the magic circle underneath the Skully light up.

"Whenever someone comes to see me, the demon king, who is here to guard me, is informed. It's been a long time, a very long time, since I have seen the demon king. Let's see how long you will last."

Chapter 2379: Untouchable (Wedding day tomorrow 20th)

Note: There will be no chapter tommrow as it is my wedding day :) Will post some things on Instagram.

The demon general Lexor was looking at the scene of the base and wondering how he would explain this to the demon king. He wondered what the consequences would be for him allowing such a thing to happen.

The worst thing was, that there was no head to gift to the demon king either, to show who was responsible for all of this. The one saving grace was that they had managed to actually defeat the person responsible.

"Make sure to put the dead off to the side, and not in the pile like the rest!" Lexor shouted.

He wanted to see which ones had been killed off in all this mess, and how. From checking out the system, quite a few of the high ranked ones seemed to have been defeated, as in those that would do well in the hunting games.

While the low ranking ones had survived, and he wanted to know why that was. After inspecting some of the bodies for a short while, the answer became quite clear.

The more talented demons thought that they could face the rain of blood swords that had come down. They believed that it wouldn't kill them, while the others were afraid.

This was the difference between the two, if some of the Durum demons hadn't turned their back or shelled up, as they could do, then the blood swords would have wiped out the entire camp.

Walking away from the dead bodies, Lexor was going back to his group to see how they were doing, it had been a stressful day. His hand raised up to his head, and it paused for a second.

He squinted his eyes trying to focus on something in the distance, his feet stopped and as he figured out who the figure was in front of him. His mouth started to open, his eyes turned to the other demons around him, but they all seemed busy with the task.

"He... he's... he's here." Lexor said, his bottom lip quivering. "He's still alive."

Walking into the base, was the same person that had just attacked them, but he had walked in casually. He didn't have a single mark on him either.

"I was sure I stabbed him right in the chest, there was nowhere for him to be seen, why would he appear now of all times?" Lexor thought.

Not only that, but for some reason, there were three Skullys with him as well. Although they looked frightened out of their wits. They were shaking with every step and hunched in together.

They were, after all, in enemy territory.

"Why... why... why... why are we here?" Ekeke asked.

He had never seen so many demons in one area before. They knew where Quinn was going, he stated several times that he was serious about going after Immortui and this certainly was the quickest way, but it was also the quickest way to their death as well.

"I know we're scared." Anon said. "But you have to know that the hunting game, it doesn't end until we are all dead anyway. If we are going to die, then it should be on our terms and while putting up a fight."

Anon wanted to try to help Quinn to kill as many demons as possible, even if he was unable to take on Immortui.

However, of the three, Tuni had noticed the strange tension in the demon base, something overlooked by the other two due to their fear. All the dead bodies that were around them.

"Was there some sort of attack?"

Tuni's guess was right, and he wasn't the only one that had noticed something strange happening. Many of the Skullys inside the forest that had been saved had met up with others.

They started to talk about the mysterious figure that was able to kill the demons while they also realised that the demons hadn't attacked them in a while. The commotion and noise that was being caused, as well as the smell of blood in the air, they had decided to follow it.

In doing so, it had led them to the base. Unlike Anon and the others, they had opted to watch from afar though, staying in the treetops, and looking at what was about to happen.

"Why is everyone just standing around, the enemy is right in front of you, he isn't dead, get him!" Lexor shouted.

He himself placed both hands out in front of him, and the red crystal shards started to fire out. The others that had heard the order started to act, doing the same, firing all of them towards them.

With as many shards as there were coming towards them, the Skullys felt like they were doomed, they had hardly survived against an attack from three, let alone over fifty of them.

Before the shards had even hit them, Quinn reached his hands out and small portals of shadow could be seen from his hand. Soon shadow portals were opening up all over the place.

Before the shards hit them, the shadow raised, like a tube surrounding all of them, and as the shards went into the shadow, they went out, going right through the shadows that were placed elsewhere.

The sound of several sharp rocks crashing against each other were heard, while the others started to scream in pain. The red crystals were hard, harder than the normal skin on the Durum demon's body.

It was an unexpected move, they had seen the shadow before, they had seen what it could do, yet this time it had acted completely differently. In that one move, half of the demons had been killed, making their numbers even smaller than before.

While many were injured. When the shadow went down, Anon and the others were left confused, they had no idea what happened, and wondered why suddenly so many of the demons had been killed.

"You... you're the boss of this place right?" Quinn asked, as he continued to walk forward.

One of the demons that was close, crystallised their hand and started to run towards them. A piece of blood from another one of the demons that were on the ground rose up, and travelled through the air like a bullet, killing it on the spot.

The blood started to rise up from the dead all around, and in doing so, slashed those that were injured and those that were running towards him.

The Skullys that were watching in the forest were mesmerised by every move. The champions used mostly brute strength and fought with their fists, legs and arms.

This was something completely different, it was the sense that this figure was untouchable.

Lexor looked around as he saw Quinn pointing towards him, and before he could answer he felt a sharp pain in his left knee, he fell to the ground only being able to use one leg.

'What is this... how could I, a demon general, be dealt with so easily. How could someone have so much power in this world that I don't even know about, that I've never met before!' Lexor thought.

He hadn't even seen what had hit his leg, but he could tell immediately that he had lost this fight. He didn't know why, but after having supposedly killed this person, he seemed to come back stronger.

There was now not a single one of them left alive other than the demon general.

The Skullys were no longer afraid, their legs had stopped shaking and they had stopped huddling together.

"What do you want... why are you attacking us?" Lexor was starting to think a little more clearly now. There were a number of questions that needed to be asked. The person in front of him didn't look like any of the inhabitants.

At the same time, he didn't have any type of appearance he recognized among the other demons.

"He's looking for the demon king and the champion!" Anon said. "Tell him where it is, if you want to live."

A certain little Skully had gained some confidence based off of another one's strength.

"No." Quinn answered. "I know where the demon king and champion is... I need to go."

Chapter 2380: The Demon king arrives (I'm back!)

Author Note: I had a great wedding 20th, and birthday 23rd. Chapter Schedule will be back to normal. Photos will be on Instagram.

The area around the champion was lighting up as the magic circles shined brightly on the ground. A surge of power was flowing into the circles from the air itself. This was a bit different from the magic circles that Quinn had dealt with before.

'I thought since coming in here, that the air was different compared to everywhere else.' Quinn thought. 'It seems like the air itself has a strong energy source and it's powering the magic circles. There is no need for beast crystals.'

What Quinn needed to worry about more was what was about to come out of the magic circles themselves. There were those around the pillar and around the champion, it was clear that they were meant to restrain the champion.

However, there was now a large one in front of him and something seemed to be coming through.

Jumping back, the clone escaped the area of the circle, and while doing so started to gather aura in both of its hands.

'With the clone, I can't use the Blood forest punch to absorb its blood. It would have been nice to see what it could have given me. Since the demon generals can evolve my blood power, a demon king would most likely prompt another quest of some sort.'

'But, if this thing really is strong, then it would be best for me to kill it before it was summoned, or at least damage it.'

Quinn didn't want to kill it in one attack, because he wanted to absorb its blood, so although he was putting a lot of strength into this attack, he was hoping that it wouldn't finish it off.

[Blood cannon blast]

Just like the blood cannon attack, essentially Quinn was doing the same thing, but with both of his hands, adding the skills that he only had, such as Qi, the strength of his punch and the speed of his hands. He hit the air, and a shockwave of power exploded around, pushing the red aura for a moment.

A strong powerful red pulse went out toward the magic circle. Rather than creating a sword or a spear, this was a pure form of energy meant to just create as much damage as possible.

The champion that was tied up was watching everything very carefully.

"Oh, it looks like this person might have had some sense climbing those stairs, no wonder he had no fear coming up here, he has some skills to back it up... but that won't be enough.'

Out from the top of the magic circle, a large singular red crystal could be seen poking through, rising up. The blood blast had hit the top of the crystal, it continued to clash against it, but the figure continued to emerge from the magic circle.

It was doing nothing to damage what was coming out. One crystal soon had become many, and eventually Quinn's blood blast had come to an end, as it did no damage, there was no need for him to waste his energy continuing his attack.

The figure had already been summoned.

'So this is the demon king, the one that those guys said had power close to Immortui.' The clone thought, and assumed that their guess was somewhat right, since it was the first time an attack from the clone hadn't even left a scratch on the demon's body.

"It's been a long time since I was summoned here, and of all times while I just got a report of a problem happening at the hunting grounds, just what is going on?" The demon king said.

It was hard to tell exactly what he was saying as the words were spoken through sharp jagged rock-like teeth that seemed to be made of the same type of red crystal the other demons had.

From just the look of things, it was quite clear that the demon in front of them was of the Durum race, but the demon king looked quite different compared to all the others. First of all, the amount of red crystal that was hardened over all of its body.

Although there was a human shape, it was hard to even see any human parts, or anything that resembled skin, as the legs, arms, and torso were completely made out of the red crystal, even the teeth. It was only part of the face near that of the eyes that had a little bit of skin.

Then there was its large back, it was even larger than the demon general, and truly looked like there was a shell of some sort on its body. It made the sheer size of the demon look around two times bigger, even though it was only a little bigger than its counterparts, but smaller than the champion behind it.

Regardless, Quinn could sense the flowing energy coming out of its body, it was clear that this demon was incredibly strong. The magic circle underneath the demon king's feet had disappeared, now that his body had been fully summoned and he looked upon Quinn who was in front of him.

"That attack, that is not something that the inhabitants can do. The energy you are using, it feels familiar, yet different at the same time." The demon king said.

His confused look turned into a smile, as he had figured out why the attack felt somewhat similar.

"I thought as much, there are no longer any inhabitants that are strong enough, nor have the will to take us on. You are one of us, you are a demon created from Immortui's power!"

The champion raised his head, he had a feeling that this was the case as well, when he first saw Quinn and now it had been confirmed.

"You must be one of his new creations. This seems to happen every single time. I haven't seen you before, but it's the same pattern we have all been through. We get a rise in strength, we are able to topple the other races and the natural inhabitants, and then we go after the demon kings to try to prove ourselves before taking on Immortui himself."

Quinn knew that there were other demon races, mainly because of the quest he had received, where it stated he only needed to gather the blood of the five great races.

"If you wished to battle, then there was no need for you to come here, I, Kronker, am happy to accept a battle at any point any time. If you had just asked then perhaps I would have gone easy on you, but the fact that you have forcefully summoned me here, has put me in a bad mood." Kronker, the demon king, said as he bashed his two crystal hands together.

The red crystal started to light up, and the swirling power in the air started to swirl around both of his hands. Dark red clouds started to form above the area they were in. Since they were so high up in the sky as well, there were even a few clouds that had darkened in the area they were in.

'The red mist, the air, is moving towards the demon king as well. Are they able to draw from the natural power from this world as well? This is something I can't do... this might be harder than I thought, especially if this is something Immortui is able to do.' Quinn thought.

Stretching out his arms, they both extended, forming two large sharp crystal blades.

"I am Kronker, one of the five great demon kings of this world, a being that was created and raised to defeat the gods. You will now learn why no one has been able to best me for 1000's of years!"

The clone of Quinn, stretched out both of his arms, gathering his own blood aura, they were swirling around his gauntlets, like a dragon, the palm of his hands were starting pulsate like a heartbeat with power, while the shadow covering his back

started to mix in with the blood aura, turning the waves into a darker red, almost purple-like, colour.

Quinn was using the shadow blood from the get go, the skill that allowed him to defeat the god slayer Asura.

'If I can't defeat one of the demon kings with half my strength, then I won't be able to take down Immortui!' the clone thought, as it charged forward.

Chapter 2381.1: Demon kings power (part 1)

Clone Quinn charged forward, with his hands pulsating with the red aura, mixed with his shadow. With a strong blow. One attack would have the power as two as a delayed punch would come out after.

It was a move that no one expected and one that was unique to Quinn. Combined with the aura fists it was one of the best attacks he had, but the clone was unable to use the blood bullet attacks.

Kronker, despite feeling all of the power in the air, confidently swung his bladed arm. The red mist that was swirling around started to spiral out.

'Dead in one hit, I thought this fight would be more challenging than this.' Kronker thought.

Being the demon king, he had more control over the red crystals in his body, allowing him to transform the ends. Due to this, he could make his red crystals sharper than any other, at the same time, he was more powerful, faster and sturdier than any other. This attack would be one that would even damage the other demon kings.

Before the bladed strike reached Quinn, a black shadow appeared in front of him, his body went right through, and the strike slashed through the shadow. It split it in half, breaking it apart, but that's when Kronker couldn't see anything.

'He disappeared?' Kronker thought.

Coming through a shadow portal from behind, Quinn kicked the air, bursting forward, leaving a ripple in the air. He thrust both of his hands forward in a claw-like shape, and struck the back of the demon king's head.

The force was extremely powerful, sending Kronker's head moving in the air, but it wasn't a great distance at all, it moved about an inch.

The champion shook his head seeing this.

'A powerful attack, and a smart use of his unique powers, but that still isn't strong enough to go toe to toe with the strongest in this world.'

Kronker, having suffered no damage, was swinging his other arm aiming at Quinn behind his head once again, but midswing, the effect of the shadow blood activated, another blast had hit the side of his head, disrupting his swing.

Quinn blasted the air with his blood aura, moving out of the way, and with his legs, kicked off the side of the bladed arm, and dived right into the chest. Punching it

right in the centre, Quinn could feel the hard crystal body, it had next to no give, but would he give up here?

There wasn't a chance that he would, swinging both of his arms, he was hammering the chest, with his flowing red aura, rippling out in the air one after the other.

The shockwaves were powerful and even reached the champion that was a distance away and still tied up. The punches were coming out in a flurry, one after the other, and the champion was able to notice something.

'The power, the strikes, I'm hearing twice the amount of shockwaves compared to the attacks I'm seeing, is this his power as well. No demons have had abilities that are this unique?' The champion thought.

Still, there was a large doubt in his head that the newcomer would win the fight, and the reason was simple. Maybe if he was fighting any other demon, the damage from the constant powerful attacks would accumulate, but the attacks on the Durum demon king, Kronker, none of these attacks were getting through.

Out from the chest that Quinn was attacking, the crystal's started to shift, and he could sense something was coming. From the area he was attacking a red crystal grew out like a spike, Quinn dodged the spike attack, and threw out a fist hitting it from underneath.

As his fist hit the red spike, his hand had completely stopped, unable to break the crystal. Several more sharp spikes came out from Kronker's chest all aiming towards Quinn, but he was able to move out of the way quick enough as he jumped back a few times.

In the middle of jumping back, Quinn had formed a huge blood spear and hurled it through the air right toward the demon. Swinging the bladed arm, it broke right through the red spear with no resistance.

The red swirling mist around his bladed arm also started to almost consume the blood spear, breaking down the energy and adding it to its own. The arm glowed a bright red for a moment and the red mist continued to swirl on the outside.

'Can they absorb pure blood aura? My attack might have just made him stronger, and if he can absorb blood aura, it's not exactly something I want to test.'

"Your demon power is weak! Do you know nothing about us? How have you managed to survive this long!" Kronker said.

If there was one thing the demon king had to admit, it was that the attacker was nimble. He was fast and the shadow power had some strange attacks up its sleeve. Maybe if this one was slightly stronger, or had a few more tricks up their sleeve, then he would be a worthwhile opponent, perhaps not against him but the other demons that weren't as sturdy as him, but as he was, this person was not a threat.

"I'm done playing with you, I know you have nothing left to show!" Kronker lifted his bladed hand up, even though he was too far away to reach Quinn.

As the bladed hand was in the air, all of the red mist that was swirling around it had gathered to the tip. It then spread out, just as the blade swung down and hit the floor.

In case it was some type of slashing attack, or something like the blood swipe, Quinn was ready to move out of the way. The moment the bladed part hit the floor though, the hand had just burst into tiny fragments of crystal. It looked like glitter had been thrown in the air, and almost looked like a mist that surrounded the front of the demon king.

"Try and avoid this!"

Quinn had a bad feeling about what was to come next, and started to gather his shadow, it was the best bet he had against whatever was about to come. All of the red small shards of crystal started to sparkle, and before he knew it, they were all heading right out towards Quinn.

Shadow raised in front of him, but small holes could be seen breaking through the shadow, and when it broke through the shadow, with nowhere for the clone to move, the moment one of the crystal shards went through its body, it had exploded into nothing but a cloud of smoke.

The red shards of crystal started to move back, all of the glitter in the air formed back around the arm turning it back into a regular hand and fist rather than a bladed part.

"All of the energy disappeared after that cloud of smoke... did they die just from a simple attack like that. I find that hard to believe." Kronker said.

However, he had to believe it, because there was no sign, nor energy in the air. How could one who produced such powerful attacks die so easily? Perhaps it was just a demon created that way, one that was meant to focus on power.

Turning, he started to look at the champion that was chained up.

"I guess that little hope you had now has disappeared."

"Hope." The champion replied. "I had no hope when I saw him."

The demon king walked up to the giant pillars and brushed his hand against the edge. The chains started to come off from the pillar, and wrapped tighter around the champion's arms covering more of its body.

"It's your lucky day today. It seems that there are still problems going on around the place. It is my job to make sure no one breaks you free, you see." Kronker

explained as he continued to disconnect the large chains from the pillars wrapping around the champion's body.

"Now that the magic circle has been activated, I would have to create a new one to summon me. So the only option I have is to take you with me. So you're going to get to leave this place for a while."

Eventually, after taking off all the chains from the pillars, with one of the hands still crystallised like a blade, he swiped it at the back of the champion's foot, causing a deep, large cut. Then he stabbed it right through the calf muscle before pulling it out again, and doing the same to the other leg.

"The chains should be enough to keep you tied up, but I need to make sure that if you do escape that you're an easy fight for me, or you won't get very far."

The demon king then knelt down, and out from his turtle like back, the crystals extended into small spikes sticking into the skin of the champion. It had been done in such a way, so it was enough for the champion's body to be stuck onto the back of the demon.

"Let's see who's causing all of this mess in the hunting grounds."

Chapter 2382: Dead energy

At the well known hunting grounds, the current scene was one that it had never been before. It looked like a tornado had come through and destroyed everything, including the demons that were on the inside. The energy that had been swirling around in the distance as well as just the general word of mouth had gotten the attention of the Skullys.

The ones that thought that they were fated for death, that had already lost everything, were now witnessing the dreaded camp.

All of them, before the hunting games had started, had been dragged to the camp, having to go past the Skullys that had been killed. Then they would be let into the large forest one at a time, with five minutes to run, hide, or come up with some sort of survival plan.

Yet they all knew that it was useless. Now though, this single person had changed everything. Getting rid of the dreaded demons with their great power. However, their past had taught them not to trust one from the get go.

There was a good chance that this newcomer could just be another enemy for them to face, and would be even worse than the ones before them.

The only Durum demon that was left alive in the camp was the demon general Lexor, he had yet to attack or do anything, nor answer their questions. It looked like he was ready to fall over backwards but before he did, Quinn swung his fist through the air.

No one could see what had come out of the fist, but heard a loud explosion. When Anon looked, he saw the general fall to the ground, and one of his legs had exploded. There was no longer a foot where it used to be.

"If you think I would have any mercy for you guys that create a game out of hunting and killing others, then you are wrong. The fact that you do this willingly and are with Immortui, I already know what you guys are like." Quinn said.

The punch that Quinn had delivered wasn't just any punch, it was a blood forest punch, the blood was absorbed from the hit into his body, and he was immediately able to feel its effects as it went through him. There was a light cooling sensation through his veins, and almost he could feel it bubbling around his body

[2/5 of the great demon race's blood has been absorbed]

[Blood evolution has progressed]

[Blood of Demon general has been absorbed]

'As expected.' Quinn thought. 'I knew the Durum demon was one of the five great races, and after absorbing the last demon general, it looks like I only need to find five demons at the general level to evolve my blood aura even more.'

The main reason why Quinn was happy about this was because the demon generals were no match for him, at least the ones he had met so far, so upgrading his blood aura should be a walk in the park. He also already had an encounter with the Yak type demon as well.

"Now, there is a reason why that attack didn't hit your head." Quinn said. "And you should be thankful that you are still alive. I'm not here to change this world, nor am I here to save it. I only want to do one thing, so I need you to give me some information." Quinn said.

At this point Lexor knew his life was already in Quinn's hands. Sure if the demon king or Immortui found out about this he would be dead, in a way he was a dead man anyway. The look on his face said it all and it was as if Quinn knew that.

With the mask on his face, Quinn started to turn the side of the dial. Small sparks appeared and he soon knelt down with small sparks appearing on his hand.

"There are a lot of things I can do, and I'm pretty skilled when it comes to controlling blood." As Quinn said this, the blood around from the demon started to rise up in the air, and then moved to his finger tips. Small sparks occur on the blood hitting it constantly until it turned into nothing.

"I never tried to use my powers in a way to inflict as much pain as possible. I know you demons might not have any emotional feeling, but I'm sure you can feel pain."

Quinn grabbed the already severed foot, and sparks of red aura left his hand, entering the Lexor's body. From the inside, from his blood vessels and all around his body, each cell, each organ. Blood was everywhere in one's body and Quinn was able to control it all, electrifying every single part.

Causing an immense amount of pain, so much that it looked like Lexor wanted to end his life, the only thing was due to the blood shock that Quinn was using, he was unable to use his hands. Quickly though, stopping the blood shock, he started to use his Qi to control the cells ever so slightly in the demon's body.

It looked like even demons had a life force like energy that Quinn could control somewhat. Using this power, he was able to soothe the pain.

"I can keep on doing this, or you can answer the question I asked before." Quinn said.

"I am just a lowly general." Lexor said. "I know next to nothing about the demon kings as they never get involved in the affairs of the other, and Immortui might as

well just be an imaginary figure, a name that we only all know and see destruction from him once in a while!"

Quinn was getting ready to use his blood shock again, although it seemed like maybe Lexor was telling the truth he needed to make sure, and needed to get everything he could out of him. Seeing this Lexor was quick to speak.

"I do know of one power... a power that both Immortui and the Demon Kings share." Lexor explained. "The natural energy that is all around us, all over in the air, the energy of the dead. Our universe is sometimes called the land of the dead, but that is not exactly correct."

"The world of the dead is a very real place, but this is not it. However, this world has always been closely linked to the dead. When beings die from all over, they more so turn into a different form of energy, and this is what is in the land of the dead."

"This universe, for some reason, has always had energy speed into it, the energy that comes from the land of the dead. That is the red mist that covers the planets and the space all around that you see. This energy, it is not meant for the living, and seems to have some sort of effect on them."

"There is a theory that maybe it was the energy that made the inhabitants the way they were before, before we even came. Regardless, the energy around, it is naturally absorbed into one's body, giving a slight boost in strength but we aren't able to control it."

"However, for the demon kings and Immortui, they can freely control the energy in this world, and that is what makes them so powerful."

Quinn knew the energy around them was different, it wasn't like blood aura, but to find out it was this type of energy. Immortui was a god that was closely linked to death, and wondered if it was something related to him, or was it something that occurred before, as they stated.

As Quinn looked at the energy around him, he could see it was reacting.

'The... demon king that killed the clone... it's coming.'

Chapter 2383: This man is everywhere!

The clones created from the god slayer tier boots were certainly special. As stated before, each of them had their own consciousness. They thought and worked in the same way and exactly as Quinn would. So when he gave them certain tasks or orders, he could trust them, because in turn they were himself, and he knew himself well, at least he thought he did.

However, only limited information could be passed from the clones, and only when the clones had disappeared would all of their memories, their visions, and all of what they had experienced be transferred to the real Quinn.

When fighting with the clones, Quinn didn't pay much attention to this, because he would only be using them for a limited time. It was the first time he had extended out his clones and had really used them in such a way.

Currently the real Quinn was in the camp, still with the demon general Lexor in front of him. The air around them had changed, it was vibrating. The others could feel that something was up, but were unable to sense what was actually going on like Quinn could.

He could see that the energy in the air was moving in a certain direction being drawn, and just moments ago, the clone he had created had been defeated. In doing so, all of the information had directly entered the real Quinn.

'You did a good job holding on.' Quinn thought. 'I guess it's now my turn to finish off what you started.'

Turning around, Quinn had quickly thrown both of his hands out, no aura came out from his hands, nothing could be seen physically coming out, yet all three of the Skullys that had come with him felt as if they were being pushed by an invisible force.

It was incredibly strong, lifting them off their feet and sending them back far and to the edge of where the forest was. The Skullys that had been hiding in the forest and watching so far, leapt up in pairs grabbing hold of the others catching them before they were seriously hurt.

"What the! Why would Quinn just suddenly attack us like that out of the blue." Tuni held onto his chest. He and the others were now standing on a thick branch. They were noticing that many of the other Skullys were there with them, standing on the outside looking in at the camp.

"I don't think it's that." Anon said, as he stood up and bowed his head slightly thanking the other Skullys. "You saw how easily he killed those other demons, do you really think that if he wanted to kill us, he would have done something like this, most likely he just wanted us to get out of his way.'

What Quinn had done was actually extremely skillful. He was using the third stage of Qi, but had to use the energy in such a way where it would stop after touching the outside of their body. That way it felt more like a strong push. Because if he used it how he usually would have, the Qi would have struck them, killing them on the spot.

It was an action that Quinn himself had done on autopilot, perhaps living his whole life trying to protect those around him, he just couldn't help himself, even though he had tried his best to set up a barrier in his head.

If he wanted to get rid of Immortui, then that needed to be the only task in his head, especially if he didn't want those close to him to be hurt. The energy around him was moving violently now, and pushing off the ground, Quinn quickly moved out of the area to the edge of the base camp and at the same time, from above something had come crashing down into the ground like a giant meteorite.

The stone from the floor flew up and cracks were seen coming out all the way to the edge, even reaching where Quinn was standing.

"What is all this?" A deep grinding voice said. "How... how could so many of us have been killed."

As the dust started to settle, Quinn could see who it was, but he already knew who it was, since he had seen him before, but what had come as a surprise was the fact that he wasn't alone and there was something else behind him, stuck onto his back.

Retracting its long sharp red spikes, they had been removed from the champion's body, and in doing so, he fell to the floor, blood oozing from the multiple wounds that were all over his body.

The Skullys that were in the forest immediately recognised him, it was the champion, the one who ruled the plane before the demons had arrived, the great Skully Calva.

"That's the champion, the champion is here!" One of the Skullys said, excited.

"He's tied up, and injured, he doesn't look like he can do much, which means the other one with him, must be the demon king."

"Two terrors are here together, all to deal with the intruder. I wonder what will happen, if the intruder will be okay."

The one the Skullys were referring to as the intruder was Quinn. It was strange to see these strong powers in an area like this and the feelings of the Skullys were mixed. Because in their mind, Calva, although had the name champion, was one that terrorised them before the demons had arrived.

Although in the past there wasn't anything as cruel as the hunting games in the past, Calva did as he wished. At times, if he had a bad temper, he would destroy an entire village, wiping out many of the Skullys. In their heads, the best result might be if everyone was just to get rid of each other.

"But that won't break the cycle." Anon mumbled to himself, thinking the same thing. "If the demon king dies, then another demon king will just replace him. If Calva disappeared, then one of the skullys would take his place. It is our desire to prove that we are strong and fight against each other."

Even Anon felt it himself at times, it was hard for him to control, but they all had short tempers. The thing was, it almost felt unnatural, these feelings, but since it had been this way for them since his own existence, it was played as the nature of all beings in the universe to be like this.

Despite being heavily injured and chained up, Calva was quite awake, his face didn't show great signs of pain, and using his knees and feet, he stood up from the ground, blood dripping from all over his body. The current image of him with the blood all over his own body, made him look more frightening compared to before.

"Don't worry, I won't try and escape." Calva said. "These restraints greatly weaken my power. I'm not a fool to fight a losing battle."

"So you admit that I am stronger than you?" Kronker, the demon king said.

Calva didn't say anything, because he was weaker than him, at least with the chains still on his body. Now that he was standing up, he started to look at the scene around them as well. The pile of dead bodies, how many Skullys had been killed, how long had they been doing this for?

This was something that the demons had done, to try and convince him to fight for them, but he didn't care. At least he thought he didn't. The sight of the pile of dead bodies was something that was hard for even him to stomach.

His eyes soon lingered though, on the dead demons that were spread out on the ground, with several sword-like marks on their bodies.

'This wasn't done by a Skully, who could it have been, was it that man from before? He was capable of doing this, but he is dead now.'

Lifting his head up though, on the other side, the person he was thinking of was right there in front of him. Calva blinked hard a few times wondering if the image would disappear, if his mind had generated an image but it wasn't the case.

"You... Did you escape to here?" Kronker chuckled, thinking he was in luck. He happened to come to where the person had escaped to, which means he could finish him off.

"Escape?" Quinn said, as he started to gather blood aura in his fist.

The red aura surrounded his entire body, it was being pushed out, and all of it was swirling to his hands. Immediately all of those in the forest could feel the power, and the look on Kronker's face had completely changed, his crystal hard eyebrows pointed inward.

'What is this mass amount of power... it's covering the entire planet.'

"Let's see if you can take a punch from the real me." Quinn said, as the aura condensed down.

Chapter 2384: Demon king's quest

Being a demon king didn't mean one was just powerful, or born with natural power. Although there was perhaps some talent involved, they weren't born this way. Just like the vampires, the Durum demons were a simple existence and through many of their kind being produced, stronger ones eventually appeared and this was the same for Kronker as well.

Because of this, he had been through many battles, all of them in the current world they were in. Still, he was sensitive to energy and could tell the person in front of him had a large amount of energy that was affecting the whole planet that they were on.

'This energy, it's not only large, but all of it, it's his own energy!' Kronker thought.
'He isn't using the energy from the air around him, all of this is his own energy.
Right now, he has enough energy to match us, the demon kings!'

It was greatly confusing Kronker because he was sure the person he was looking at now was the same person that he had faced moments ago, so how was there such a large difference in energy between the two.

After finishing condensing the energy in his fist, Quinn rushed forward. Kronker had braced himself, the crystals on his body shifted slightly, tightening up. His body was acting without even realising it.

'What is this... am I afraid? Me, the demon king of the Durum race? I am one of those that is meant to go up against the gods! How could I be afraid of another demon!'

In an instant, moving faster than the clone had before, Quinn had appeared right in front of Kronker. His fist still condens with the energy. He threw it out, slamming right into the centre chest of the demon king. A large dragon erupted from behind coming out from the back of his hand.

The blood dragon was large in size, gigantic, almost as big as the champion Calva. The sheer power had caused Kronker's feet to slide back across the floor, and it wasn't just a few inches, this time he was moved back a few metres.

For a moment, Kronker looked down at his chest, the hard crystals on his body were still intact. They weren't damaged, or broken. Seeing this, a smile appeared on the demon king's face.

'That was a strong hit, I can't remember the last time I was hit so hard. Maybe when I went up against Immortui? But the red crystals, each time they are broken, grow back stronger. My crystals are stronger than they were back then, this person is not stronger than me.'

The champion Calva was still amazed though, the punch, it was far stronger than what he had seen before, and the attacks that had been produced before.

'How did this person suddenly get stronger? Wait, is this even the same person as before?' Calva thought.

"I can see your smile." Quinn said. "Did you not learn anything from our fight before?"

The words had confirmed what they thought before, about this person being the same one, but were confused about what he meant. When looking at his fist, they could see remnants of a red shadow covering his hand.

Images started to enter the demon king's mind, as he remembered about the blood shadow. Suddenly, a great force just as strong as the last hit him right in the chest. The image of a dragon made out of the aura, for a moment, like a ghost flashed and the large power had hit in the same place.

Kronker's legs were pushed back even further on the ground, sliding across the floor it was more powerful than one could imagine, as a few bodies of other Durum were on the ground, and Kronker's foot just went right over them crushing them and breaking the crystals on their back.

This time, the demon king had been pushed back almost to where the champion was, and when he finally stopped, a cracking sound was heard, and the tip of one of the red crystals on his chest, a large chunk had snapped off and fell onto the floor.

The demon king was speechless, and it was as if time had moved in slow motion for him, as all he could do was watch it fall onto the floor.

'My crystallised body... it broke, and it didn't just break, but broke from a single hit?'

The champion Calva now had an idea of just how strong that hit was, because he too had once gone against the demon king, and in his attempt, although it looked like a good fight between the two, he was never able to break the crystals of the demon king.

Out of a rage of blind anger, the demon king lifted his bladed hand once more. The red mist around it started to swirl, surrounding the arm before it was infused with a large amount of energy. Swinging it down, he was ready to slam it on the floor.

It was the same move that had been used last time, that had been used to defeat the strange invader, so he would just use it again to defeat him. The bladed hand then crashed onto the ground and dust and the red energy spilled out to the side.

The Skullys in the trees could feel the power and they had to hold onto the trees, otherwise the shockwave would blow them away.

The attack though, wasn't the same as last time, the crystallised bladed hand was still in one piece, it hadn't broken down into small crystals. Looking at the end, he could see a dark covered purple shadow hand holding onto the blade.

Quinn had condensed his shadow, to a single arm, covering the gauntlet and with his strength he stopped the sword.

'My attacks were going right through the shadow before! He was killed when he was hit a single time. None of this is making sense!' Kronker thought.

The way his attack had just been stopped, it was hurting his pride, hurting all of the years he had been gathering power. How could a nobody do this? It was driving him slightly mad.

Meanwhile, Quinn wasn't just going to be holding onto the bladed hand, with his other hand free, he threw out one fist of blood aura. It was fast, and hit Kronker in the chest again.

The aura splattered on the outside, and started to move slightly, but it didn't hurt, and more felt like a fly had landed on him. Still, there was a slight pull and itching sensation where the attack had landed.

After such a powerful attack, why would one produce something so weak? There was a reason behind Quinn's actions though, and one that only he would understand.

[Blood forest fist has successfully absorbed blood]

[Blood from a demon king has been absorbed]

[The powerful blood is raging through your body.]

[The blood is mixing with the demon within]

If a demon general, increased his blood powers, Quinn always wanted to know what a demon king would do. So one of the first things he wanted to do, before finishing off his enemy, was to absorb their blood.

[A new quest has been received.]

.....

Chapter 2385: Demon king level

A new quest was what Quinn had somewhat expected from absorbing the Demon king's blood but it wasn't quite what he had expected.

[A new quest has been received]

[Absorb the bloodline of the five great demon races at the demon king level]

[A new demon trait skill will be unlocked]

'Demon trait skill. The only demon skill I have at the moment is to transform myself, but while transformed, I don't keep my consciousness, so I don't even know if I can use the system, or what skills I have as a demon.'

What had come as a larger surprise was that it wouldn't evolve his blood aura to the next stage, or a stage further than that of the demon general's blood.

'From what I learned from the general before, all of the Demon king's as well as Immortui have the power to control the strange energy in the air. They can use the energy around them and add it to their own, maybe it could be a skill like that.'

While Quinn was in the middle of reading the system screens, Kronker was quick to act. That energy was gathering all around his body and was absorbing directly into the red crystals.

Parts of his body started to enlarge and soon they cracked off, and headed right towards Quinn. There were hundreds of shards around the same size as a football. Throwing them with his arm up, Quinn leapt back slightly.

As the crystals came towards him, he whacked each one of them away. His speed was fast and his power was strong, hitting them all of them a distance into the ground. After getting rid of the first chunks, he could see several more coming towards him.

'These chunks of crystal are being fired faster, larger and with a lot more power than all the other demons. I can see why this one is a tier above in power compared to the rest, but in my case it only helps me out more.'

With the next set of red crystal shards coming towards him, Quinn drew a shadow circle. The crystals went through, and they soon went out another shadow circle, which was aimed directly back at Kronker.

The large shards had hit him from behind aimed at his head, as the crystal hit his own crystal attached to his body, the shards would simply fall to the floor. While he was getting hit by this though, Quinn wasted no time in continuing to act.

Two large blood spears had formed in his hand, and he hurled them both toward Kronker. They flew through the air, spinning and created two large tornadoes of blood.

Matching this, swirls of energy from the air started to surround the bladed parts of Kronker's hand, he slashed right at the spears, trying to slice them in half. There was a struggle in the air, as the two powers were pushing against each other.

The flashes of power that were being used could be seen from space. Watching things, no one knew who had more raw power in terms of energy. However, the champion was noticing something.

'The Demon king's attack will win out.' The champion Calva thought. 'If anything, I would say I would give a slight edge to the intruder's power being slightly stronger, but it's not overwhelming the other.'

'As the two attacks hit, energy slowly starts to fade out of the attacks as they hit each other, at least for one of the attacks. Due to the Demon king being able to use the energy from this very world, the energy is practically unlimited, and will continue to grow and smother any of the attacks.'

Just as the champion had predicted, the blood spears were losing power, and the bladed crystallised hands were starting to slice through the spears but it was only a distraction in the first place.

Quinn had appeared directly underneath where Kronker was, and rather than his fists, this time it was his entire leg that was covered in the dark red shadow, going up to his knees looking like black flames surrounded him.

Quinn spun his body on the ground he was on, then bent his knees.

"A kick can produce a lot more power than a punch!"

From underneath the side of his foot slammed into the centre of Kronker once more, and an after image of a giant black rhino had been created from his shadow blood aura.

The power dug in deep and at a singular point it was pushing Kronker into the air. He was unable to fight against it as he felt his body being pushed upward, he was already twenty metres off the ground and in the air.

The crystal on his body still hadn't broken, even though Quinn felt like this was a stronger kick compared to the punch he had delivered.

'Perhaps the crystals that are closer to the skin of his body are even harder than those on the outside. This fight reminds me of the troubles I had when I went up against the behemoth. Still, it's not over yet.'

Due to the effects of the blood shadow, a second strike struck again, and in the same spot, an incredible amount of energy was pushing the Demon king up higher into the air.

"I can't waste too much time on you, you are not the one I need to defeat." Quinn said, as he advocated the skill of his shoes. A puff of smoke appeared and now, there were three Quinns standing in the same place.

'That puff of smoke, it was the same as when he was hit last time.' Calva noticed.
'Wait, that was an ability of his? So was the Demon king from before fighting some type of clone? No wonder this one was so much stronger, but the clones weren't weak either.'

Seeing how there were now three of them, Calva couldn't imagine how much power there would be in this next attack, but he was unaware that there was more. Quinn's arms, they suddenly changed, and there were now six of them on the one in the centre.

Turning the dial on the mask on his face as well, small sparks could be seen.

'The lighting attribute causes the most internal damage, and with this next attack. I'll try every type of blood fist I have and see what's the most effective.'

Swinging his arms, all of the Quinn's started to throw out blood fists. All they could see was a rain of blood aura, being shot up from the floor, going up towards the sky. There were so many coming out, it looked more like a single stream attack, and they were all constantly hitting Kronker, not allowing him to even drop to the floor.

All of the Skullys, as well as Calva, were just staring up into the sky in disbelief. Was this really a great Demon king that they all feared, how was this even possible.

Anon watching this was biting down on his teeth.

"I can't just do nothing!" Anon said, as he went to rush off.

"Wait, where are you going, what are you doing?" Ekeke and Tuni started to follow Anon. They could see he was heading toward the direction of the camp, where the fighting was taking place.

The only reason why they were still alive was because they were keeping distance away from what was happening. If they went in closer, there was a good chance of just death from the intense energy.

"I have to rescue the champion!" Anon said. "When is there ever going to be an opportunity like this again. Where there is someone who is strong enough to go against the Demon kings!

"Although Quinn is strong, there are four Demon kings left including Immortui, and an entire army of his. If the Demon king dies, they won't just stand back and do nothing. After this fight, I'm sure Quinn will be tired and that's when they will strike.

"Which is why I have to free Calva."

Chapter 2386: The champions side

The clones Quinn created were unable to use many of the active skills that the god slayer armour possessed, and it was one of the many reasons why the fight that was going on against the demon king was incredibly different compared to before.

Kronker was being slammed with all sorts of different fists, they all looked slightly different from each other, though some were the same. Luckily for him, he could tell next to no difference between these fists because his durable red hard crystal body was taking in everything.

'He's broken my hard outer shell crystal before, which means he will be able to do it again. I'm not sure how much longer my body can last.'

Kronker was hearing strange noises he had never heard before as the fists hit the outside of his armour. At the same time, the strikes were producing this strange electrifying power. Although the crystals were able to nullify most of it, he could feel a tingling sensation inside.

'If my body breaks down from this, then I'll die. I can't lose the fight like this.'

Due to the constant hits, it was hard for him to move, even trying to make an attack of his own, his arm was being hit back before he could do anything, so there was only one way he could break this cycle. While being constantly hit, the energy around the demon king, the energy that was high up in the skies, started to move again.

'This can't be it.' Quinn thought, as he relentlessly continued to swing his arms. Due to the limitless armour set ability, he didn't tire, and if he had to continue to attack this way, for several days, to defeat the demon king he could do it, but there was something nagging him at the back of his mind.

'These demon kings are said to only be a little less in strength compared to Immortui. I was expecting a harder battle, when I went against Ray, it was harder than this, there has to be something else, something else other than just its hard shell!' Quinn thought.

The energy in the sky started to form on the back of Kronker. Then as the crystals expanded on his back, they all broke into small glitter. It was the same as he had done when using his fist from before, but the crystals on his back were more plentiful.

Moving to the side away from the fists that were coming towards him, now this pink glitter was coming towards Quinn like they were two large tornadoes.

The clones that were helping with the attacks towards the body of Kronker, decided to concentrate on the tornado of pink crystals. They continued to swing their fists, hitting the shards with a strong powerful blood aura.

When the fists hit the crystals, it broke them up, and bits could be seen coming off from the large tornado, but the shards that had fallen off, would rejoin the tornado of shards that were coming towards them.

'A troublesome attack that I can't get rid of too easily.' Quinn thought. 'If I'm going up against something named a demon king, then it should at least be this troublesome.'

Four of his hands continued the barrage, and now it wasn't enough to keep Kronker in the air, his body was starting to fall slightly as the power wasn't enough but he was still falling down slowly. With two of his hands, Quinn started to gather the shadow around them.

It was a solid dark purple, close to black, in colour, he then pressed it on the two clones that were by his side. The shadow surrounded their body, and touched the shadow that was covering their bodies.

Letting go of them, shadow was no longer covering his arms and instead both of the clones had complete shadow bodies, from head to toe. No one would even be able to tell that they were clones of Quinn now.

'The biggest issue with the clones was the fact that their bodies are weak. If they are hit in the slightest they puff into a cloud of smoke, but with this, they can overcome that weakness a bit.' Quinn thought, as he looked straight ahead.

The best way to take down this demon king was to attack it directly like he had been doing the first few times. Quinn stopped his barrage of punches as he jumped from the ground running through the air, while the two clones went off to the side, to the tornado of shards.

The fight had gone from the ground to a battle that was mid air, and that's when Anon decided to take the opportunity. He had rushed on the ground, and not far behind him were the recent two allies he had made. They stayed with him because the two of them felt like it was only because of Anon that they were still alive.

They just seemed to have more of a stroke of luck staying with Anon, but even then they were hesitant. All three of them could feel from the energy coming off from the fight, that the area was heavy. Just walking near the fight was quite damaging to them, to the point where all three of the Skullys had to transform themselves so more of their exoskeleton bone was out on display.

With the goal in front of him though, Anon had eventually reached the champion, standing there chained up on his two feet, looking at the fight ahead and ignoring the newcomers that had arrived.

"Champion Calva!" Anon shouted at the top of his lungs, not staring away from Calva's eyes.

Hearing his own name, he turned his head, and was relatively surprised to see three Skullys in front of him. If he was in their shoes and had as much power as they did, he wouldn't have stepped foot on the battlefield, there was a good chance that they wouldn't make it back depending on how the fight went.

"For more years than we can remember, this world has been ruled by Immortui and his Demon kings. In the past, you, along with the other champions, fought and lost. Although the world was not a good place before and was filled with death back then, at least it was of our own accord.

"At least we weren't forced into situations that we didn't agree with. Back then, when Immortui came, we fought against him separately, and there's a lot of regret with all of us inhabitants.

"I'm sure you thought about it a lot back then as well. What would have happened if we were to fight them all together. We thought it was too late, and could only live with this regret, but now after all this time, there is an opportunity, there is someone that can go against the Demon kings, there is a chance that we can get rid of Immortui as well as the regret that we all have from back then!"

The words spoken by Anon were powerful and they truly were how many of the Skullys felt. His way with words was what convinced Tuni and Ekeke to team up with him.

If Anon was unable to convince the champion then who could?

"I see... so are you here to make a deal? To free me, as long as I agree to work together in taking down Immortui?" Calva asked. The old him would have never thought of doing such a thing.

But after seeing the pile of corpses he was curious and wondered how much the world had changed. In Calva's mind, there was killing people because they were annoying, because they challenged one, or as a reason to prove oneself. In his head all of these were a valid reason.

However, killing for fun wasn't something that he could understand. Yet he was also realistic with himself. He wasn't great working with others, they would do things that annoyed him and in turn he would wish to get rid of them.

The reality was though he wasn't strong enough to take on Immortui.

"Do you guys even know who you are helping though?" Calva asked. "Because, the one that is fighting the demon king at the moment, is a demon himself. So let me ask you, do you want me to help a demon, or do you want me to get rid of them both."

Chapter 2387: Demon transformation

There was no reason for the champion Calva to lie, to lie about the fact that Quinn was indeed a demon. Not unless he just wanted to stir trouble, but the Skullys had more reason to believe him than to not.

After all, they all had their doubts when they first saw Quinn. An inhabitant that they had never come across before, of course that was possible the world was incredibly large, but one that was this strong appearing out of nowhere.

The most likely answer was that it was a demon, and one that was going against the demon kings and Immortui.

"He's a demon... then even if he defeats the demon king, won't he just end up replacing him?" Tuni said. "Then, it's just going to be the same again."

Ekeke and Tuni were clearly disheartened by this fact, but for Anon he felt differently.

'Calva can maybe sense the demons better than us, especially since he went against so many of them in the past.'

'But even if Quinn is a demon does that matter? The words he spoke before, when he said he wished to kill the Immortui, I could feel it, his anger, it's just as strong as ours, and his determination, it's probably above ours as well.'

"I... I want you to help him." Anon said. "As part of the deal, if we get you out of here, then I want you to help him. Even if he is weak, even if he is hurt after this fight, you are not to attack him."

"Wait, you want him to help another demon, you're asking too much!" Ekeke argued.

Before, when they were unsure whether or not Quinn was a demon it was fine, but now they knew what he was, it was hard for them to stomach. The demons were what ruined everything, so then why would they want to help one, even if they were temporarily on their side.

"There has to be a reason why he helped us." Anon answered, clenching his fist. "Think about it, he could have killed us at any point and time, yet he saved us. No, not just us, but he saved countless Skullys' lives that are all back there in the forest."

"He even saved us, by hitting us away in the middle of the fight, before it had even started. He had no reason to do any of that. If you ask me, he has done a lot more than even Calva had done back in the past."

Calva had a large smirk on his face, he never thought he would meet a Skully that was so brave to say words like that in front of his face, even if he was tied up. He wasn't angry though, because the words were true. What did he care?

"I'll leave the decision up to you, whether you think it's smart or not to attempt to unbind me." Calva said. "In the first place, is it even something possible that you guys can do, and if you are successful, how do you even know if I will keep my word, there is nothing that will force or bind me to do such a thing, only our word."

This was the part where Anon was struggling, would Calva feel indebted to them for breaking him free. Was he a person of his word, there was too little known about him, and the way he was acting now, it wasn't giving them a large amount of confidence.

The two shadow clones, when coming close to the tornado of crystal shards that were as small as glitter, started to use their shadow powers. They were so stronger than they were before due to the boost that the real Quinn had given them.

Making a fist, it started to grow larger with the shadow around it and when close to the mist tornado of crystals the fist was thrown out and a giant shadow hand was created, spread out larger than that of the crystals.

As it hit the outside of it, a large bulk of the crystals had stopped, and this was true for the other side as well as the other clone was doing the same. However, the crystals almost seemed to have a mind of their own, as if they were a swarm of bees.

Seeing how touching the strong shadow stopped them from advancing, part of the tornado of crystals that had yet to touch the shadow went around the side and went straight for the shadow body.

The crystals moved fast and due to how small they were, it was hard for even the clones to keep track of where every single one was. They used more of their shadow powers to block what they could see but small parts were attacking them.

The shadow bodies were doing well, blocking small parts of the crystal, but it looked like eventually they would get through.

The real Quinn was rushing through the air, toward the falling demon king, but now that it wasn't getting hit, it was able to act. From its body, large chunks of the crystal were being chucked out.

With two of his large fists, Quinn swung out, hitting the crystals away. It didn't take long for Quinn to be within a close range of Kronker and could see the large bladed hands heading his way.

Lifting up two of his hands Quinn grabbed onto the sword, while with a third he punched the side knocking it away. Similarly with the other bladed hand Quinn was

able to kick the air and immediately went in the other direction and three of his fists hit at the other bladed hand, the entirety of Kronker's arm was swung back.

However, Kronker had somewhat expected this and was ready to fire his crystals away from his chest, only there was no target for him to hit. Out from a portal behind his head, all six hands raised above his head the vampire god slayer slammed all six of his fists on the top of the crystallised head.

Several waves of blood aura were sent with it, and Kronker went through the air heading straight to the ground. The attack had a second boost, slamming him into the ground even further.

Not checking on the condition of what the demon king would be in, Quinn wasted no time, as he started to throw his fists one after the other, again and again, throwing out blood fist after blood fist right where Kronker had fallen.

The ground was cracking more and more, it was spreading wider as Kronker was sent deeper and deeper into the ground from all of the hits.

From the side, the glitter like crystals had appeared, forming into a shield. They were blocking off the majority of the punches.

'Seeing how his strange defence has come back, that means the clones have been defeated.' Quinn thought, and he was right.

Still, his attacks, his powers, his abilities were all getting through to the demon king, and he was chipping away bit by bit. As he fell through the sky, Quinn created a shadow portal sending him back down to the ground and away from Kronker.

He was most cautious about the small crystals. They were so fine in size that he believed that there was a chance he could even breathe such a thing in, and then it would affect him greatly.

From the large crater that had been made in the ground, movement could be heard. It was no surprise that Kronker had survived those attacks, because he had survived everything else so far, but as he stood up there were large differences in his appearance .

There were multiple cracks on the crystals all over his body, and a few shards looked to have even fallen off.

"F*ck, F*ck, F*ck!" Kronker screamed. "How could a new demon type do this to me! You, you forced my hand. There's a big difference between me and you, you're a fake, us demon kings, we are true demons. You will never be able to achieve the pinnacle of what we can do. I will show you!!!"

The eyes of the Durum started to glow, and rather than the energy from the outside world heading towards where he was, a dark rippling red and black aura started to ripple out from Kronker's body.

It spread out in the air, pushing it away, spreading out across the floor. It was changing the entire area around them, making them feel like they had moved to a different world all together once again.

[Demon transformation detected]

'He's transforming... that's what this is... does this mean they have a form, just like me?' Quinn wondered, and wondered just how much stronger the demon king would be.

The energy that was spread through the air and the ground had reached him, and as it did, he felt his heart thump almost ten times stronger than it did before. The energy on the floor was being absorbed by his feet, without him willing it to.

[Demon energy detected]

[The demon energy within you is running rampant]

[Demon transformation will now begin.]

Chapter 2388: Vampire demon form

The energy that covered the planet, the energy that seeped in from the land of the dead, would usually continuously move towards those of the living. It was naturally attracted to them to a certain degree and the inhabitants had always been taking in this energy bit by bit.

For the ones known as the demon kings, as well as Immortui, they were able to control this energy and harness it to be used in a certain way. Almost making their body like a magnet that would attract the energy.

However, the moment Kronker, the Durum demon king, unleashed the powerful energy from within, his body started to transform. The energy was leaking out of his body, and it looked almost as if the energy in the air was frightened, attempting to move away.

Yet, the demon energy being unleashed was consuming everything within sight and it was growing.

The air above where the demon king was, it was condensing to a darker red as it was gathering. Those that were living on the other planets could see it from a distance, they could even feel it.

The energy in the air was feeling different compared to what it was before. The demon king's transformation was one that was affecting the whole world. The other demon kings immediately knew what was going on.

"Kronker had to transform, when was the last time something like that happened?" One of the other demon kings thought. "It makes me wonder, who is he going up against."

As the energy seeped out of Kronker, his body was starting to change. All of the hard crystals that covered his body started to light up, they grew slightly bigger and when they reached a certain point, the crystals started to crack.

It started from his chest, then they were cracking all over, until eventually they burst, breaking out into a tiny million glitter shards that just fell to the floor. The scene looked almost like a bird that was breaking out of its shell, because what had come out, looked almost like an entirely different being compared to what Kronker was before.

The odd shape due to his large crystallised back had disappeared. He now was a much more completely muscular being, bigger in size, around 10 metres in height, full of muscle.

Now that the crystals were no longer covering Kronker's body, his flesh could be seen underneath. A deep dark red in colour making it look almost black, while being lit up by a bright red energy throughout.

The red energy soaring through Kronker's body was glowing with power, and there was power coming out, surrounding his body, glowing, as if it was unable to be all contained within the body.

The most significant changes to Kronker were in three distinctive parts, the first was his wide chest. There was no armour or crystals on its body, but the glowing energy seemed to concentrate around his chest.

It had done so in such a shape and pattern that it almost looked as if there were two eyes around his chest. The next section was his face, his large white sharp teeth could be seen, with his small red eyes glowing.

The facial features had sharpened and refined edges that poked out like the crystal form before, while just above the eyes were two horns that swirled slightly towards each other. Down the centre of the face, was a small set of spikes, similar to that of the Dalki only on a much smaller scale. From the top of his eyebrow they grew slightly larger as they went down his head towards his back.

Then there was the back itself that had changed, now having these large flowing tentacle-like structures.

The being as a whole in front of them all, truly fit the name demon.

"It's over now!" Kronker said, and even his words carried great power within them. Energy was spewing out from his mouth, swirling about. His confident laugh though had come to an abrupt end, as he noticed something strange was happening.

When transforming into their demon form, Kronker and the other demon kings unleash an incredible amount of this demon energy. The energy spreads out far and wide, and that energy had entered Quinn.

As it did, he was unable to stop what was happening to him. His body was taking in the energy, and when it did, something inside him was changing, something inside him felt like it wanted to burst out.

A large thump was felt in his chest, it felt so strong as if it had hit his rib cage. He immediately fell to the floor and took in a large breath. The system messages had appeared at that point, and it didn't take long after that for him to completely forget what had happened afterwards.

Kronker was completely unaware of what was happening at the time, due to his own transformation, but the others had witnessed it, the champion along with the other Skullys.

Lifting up his head, Quinn screamed, his mouth open wide. His eyes were glowing red. Not a single part of white could be seen coming from his eyes, instead a dark red substance started to leak from the bottom of his eyes.

It looked like tears of blood, having the same consistency, the colour was completely different, almost the same as his shadow blood. Out straight from his mouth erupted his aura mixed in with his shadow.

It poured out of his mouth and started to cover his entire body, his mask, as well as the rest of the armour from head to toe. The power had covered Quinn completely making it almost look like a fountain of energy.

The energy pouring out from Kronker and the energy that was pouring out from Quinn was bashing against each other, but eventually the fountain of energy had stopped, and a shape was starting to show.

The energy that was on the floor, started to move towards the figure that was standing there, reaching Quinn in his demon form.

"I was right, he is a demon, he is just like them." Calva said.

"Is he... but the two of them, they look so different." Anon stated.

When looking at Kronker, in every sense of the word, he looked like a demon whereas Quinn's form was a stark difference. Although just like Kronker his body had completely changed.

For one, the main difference was the colour of his skin. It was now completely white in colour. It wasn't pale like most vampires. Instead the skin was almost like a chalk colour.

As for the size of the demon Quinn, he was the same size as he was before, and had the same shape as that of a human. However, calling him human, that was a long shot. On his back, there were two large wings, seemingly made of hardened blood.

They spread out relatively wide, and had the shape of feathers, but they were constantly moving, and even now at the very bottom, dropping onto the floor from the wings, was blood.

Strangely though, when the blood dropped to the floor, it would move, joining back up with the wings. On Quinn's body itself, there was no longer any armour, all of it had disappeared, and instead there was a cloak.

There was no hood to the cloak, it was pointed at the top, while being open revealing the centre of Quinn's body and skin, showing his well defined body. However, there was something strange about the cloak on the body.

It was constantly moving, and was a dark purple colour, almost black. The cloak itself almost looked as if it was made out of the shadow, and although it truly did look like a cloak, it almost looked as if it was part of the body. There was nowhere to see a separation from the skin and the body.

This was the same for what was on his legs. His legs were covered by the same dark purple substance, but it was constantly moving and flowing. Although his white pale chest was shadowing, a marking could be seen.

Just like the cloak, there were black markings on his chest looking almost like a tattoo. There was no pattern but it was part of his skin, flowing and moving, running from the sides of his chest and slightly up his neck, until it reached his face.

The black markings continued on his white pale face mainly concentrated under his eyes. They came across his cheeks, covering the sides of his face, and making his glowing red eyes stand out even more.

Finally, there was a sharp smile on his face, a smile that was so sharp in the corners of his mouth and so sinister, that it tilted his eyes. It was a smile that if anyone could see it, it would be seen in their nightmares for their entire lifetime.

This was completely different to the last time Quinn had used the demon form. In the past he had tried his best to stay conscious and he had somewhat remembered his body changing in certain parts. His previous transformation was much more like that of a blood sucker, only more vicious, although there were also parts that were the same, such as the white chalk skin on his body.

[Your demon form has fully materialised]

[Vampire demon form transformation complete]

Chapter 2389: Demon Quinn attacks

Due to the transformation that had taken place, and the energy that was swirling around the place, Calva had felt something. The energy had hit him as well, and the chains that were wrapped on his body were being weakened by the energy.

'This is my chance, I can do this now.' Calva thought. He wasn't going to waste this opportunity. White energy surrounded his body, and his arms started to whiten with the hard bone like substance.

He pushed and pushed, and then breathing out when he felt there was a tiny bit of give, he exploded the force of energy he had from within. The chains broke off, falling to the floor and disappearing as if they were only made of aura.

Anon, along with the other Skullys at the time, were too busy looking at what was happening, and only noticed Calva breaking out at the last moment.

"Hey, looks like the deal is off." Calva said with a smile. "However, as a favour."

Calva, with his large hands, picked up two of the Skullys, and then went to pick up the third with his other hand. He started to run around to the edge of the camp at an incredibly fast speed around the place, and when reaching the walls of the camp, he leapt over them, landing in the forest.

"If you stayed there, the three of you would have died." Calva said, as he placed the three of them in high trees and got himself in a better position to look outward toward the fight at hand.

The other Skullys were cautious of Calva, even moving away, but they wouldn't run away. He wasn't attacking them nor did it feel like he was going to, instead he was watching the great spectacle that was about to begin, just like all of the others.

Two fully transformed demons stood apart from each other, but there was a difference between the two. Not just in appearance. The energy that was radiating off from the two of them was drastically different.

There was a visible aura, thick red and uncontrollable, which was coming off from Kronker's large body. If one got close to him, they would feel as if they would get killed just trying to touch his body alone, that was how powerful his form felt.

Meanwhile, Quinn's current form, it felt as if there was nothing. There was no radiating power around him, yet for some reason, the smile that was constantly on his face was frightening. The fact that even when faced with this situation, he was smiling like so.

'What is this... I can sense his energy, it is like us, it's like that of a demon.' Kronker thought. 'The initial powerful feeling I felt from before, I can't feel it now, it's almost as if it's disappeared.'

Even though Kronker was in his demon form, he realised when looking at Quinn, he was slightly afraid for some reason.

"Ha... Ha!" Kronker laughed. "This is your big play, this... this form of yours? You look just as puny as before. You are nothing like us demon kings!"

The last few words were shouted out, and the energy from Kronker came out of his mouth, straight towards Quinn. The ground on the floor was disappearing from seemingly an invisible force, and when it reached Quinn, though, it did nothing but ruffle the shadow cloak he had on his body.

It wasn't an attack so Kronker expected Quinn to react this way, but the fact that he stood there not saying a word, not even reacting to the situation was getting to him.

"I'll show you the difference between a demon king and you!" Sparks emerged from the top of his two horns as well as his mouth, and a ball of aura was starting to gather.

It was growing larger and the red aura was growing darker in colour. Every time it would expand to a certain size, it would condense down, getting smaller, then growing bigger again, repeating the process again and again, as the ball was getting darker and darker.

"Arghhh!" The red ball of aura left from Kronker, and went straight for Quinn. The small beam grew incredibly large, covering nearly the entire area of the camp.

Would Quinn move, would he use his clones, would he use his shadow? No one quite knew what he would do, and they were unable to see what he did as the energy blast covered his entire body. They could only see a shadow of Quinn for a few moments as the energy continued to be blasted at where he once was.

Kronker continued to press, pouring energy into his attack; it had already destroyed the back wall of the camp that was behind Quinn, and the energy blast was continuing further than the eye could see.

Eventually the energy blast started to dwindle.

"Hah... I thought as much, you couldn't even avoid my strike." Kronker said.

It was true, Quinn hadn't avoided the strike, he had been directly hit by the demon blast.

"Hahahaha!" A deep laughter sounded out. It echoed through the skies somehow, and it was deep and dark, while being high pitched at the same time. It almost

sounded like there were two voices, one that was deep and low, while another high and ear screeching. One slightly delayed after the other, creating a horrifying laugh that made one wish to cover their ears.

"Hahahah!" The laughter continued, and with the beam of energy having disappeared. They could see Quinn standing there, still unharmed by the blast.

Calva, now having a clear look at his face, could tell.

"He's not the same as before... that is not the same person... he's completely lost his mind."

He could tell from the look in his eyes that it wasn't the look of someone who was conscious of what they were doing, which worried Calva, because when one was unconscious and the mind wasn't making decisions then it meant something else had to be doing it for him.

Was it his instincts, the raging power inside, and worse of all, what would the result of all of it be.

The dreaded laughing sound had finally stopped, it was dead silent. Everyone felt the hair on their body standing up, waiting for something to happen.

Quinn swung both of his hands back swinging them to the side. For a simple swing, the dark red aura, mixed with an outline of purple, came shooting out from his hands.

It wasn't an attack directed at anyone; he was just moving his hands back and a burst of energy exploded out to the ground behind him, creating a large formation of rocks as big as a mountain behind him.

Kronker reacted, gathering another blast within his horn, not as condensed as the time before and fired away. Two orbs of energy were swirling in Quinn's hands. He threw them out and the dark energy smashed into the red energy.

There wasn't a battle of power as Quinn's energy exploded in size on impact, it had reached the skies consuming all of the demon energy and encasing even Kronker in it. It exploded and gusts of wind with piles of rocks were sent out in all directions.

The large trees with branches as thick as tree trunks were struggling as some of their roots were being pulled from the ground.

Eventually, out from the giant whirlwind of power, Kronker could be seen coming out from the side. His body had been hurt, his energy was still strong but his skin and more had been badly damaged, as well as a bit of blood trickling from his mouth.

"Where is he?" Kronker said, no longer seeing Quinn in the same spot.

To his side, flying in the air, with his wings leaving a trail of red blood aura in the air behind creating some type of barrier, Quinn was there looking at him with his smile and a single hand pointed out gathering the dark aura once more.

The dark blast came out from Quinn's hand but Kroner was able to avoid it as he pushed off with his tentacles from his back while also blasting towards the ground on the floor giving him a shot of boost.

'He's fast... is he faster than me, even in my current form?' Kroner thought. He had never seen someone so fast before, and as he said those words, Quinn had appeared right in front of him again.

He swung his clawed arm that was covered in the dark shadow-like substance, Kroner in these types of situations would usually bulldoze himself forward and attack back. That was how he won his fights, with his sheer strength, but in this case it wasn't something he would do.

Leaning back, the fingertips of Quinn had ripped right through the chest of Kroner. Blood splattered out from his chest and went flying in the air, while a black mark of shadows was left on Kroner's chest.

That wasn't the end of the attack though, as the blood that had come out from Kroner didn't fall to the ground, instead it floated towards Quinn's mouth who opened wide and gathered his own energy, including the blood, to let out a deadly breath blast.

At close range it smashed into Kroner and slammed him into the ground and the beam of blood energy continued.

Calva, the champion, was the only one that was just able to keep track of the fight, and he still didn't quite understand what was going on, but it was clear. This fight was a huge mismatch and any thought of him coming in and taking out the one left had left his mind.

Chapter 2390: The Vampire demons power

At close range, Quinn had shot out a dark coloured blood aura directly at Kronker, it had smashed him in the chest throwing him to the ground. The blast was so large it had covered his whole body and one was unable to even see a single part of Kronker.

This blast wasn't just any blast, as it had even used Kronker's own blood in the attack. It was clear that this attack was stronger than the blasts that had come from Quinn before.

While the stream of energy continued to burst out from Quinn's mouth, something else was happening. From his blood wings, small orbs looked to be dripping off. They were floating in the air just beneath. Droplets of blood from the wings were forming into something the same size as a football.

When the blood ball had been fully formed, it moved, heading straight for where Kronker was. It crashed into the ground, causing a large explosion of power that reached up to the skies like a nuclear explosion.

A powerful shockwave was sent out in all directions once again, punishing even the power that was mixed into the air.

"If you want to live, then get behind me!" Calva shouted to the other Skullys.

It didn't take them much convincing as they could see the shockwave coming towards them, and rather than just a blast this seemed to have some remnants of energy with it.

Calva's body started to glow white, and just as the shockwave was about to hit them, the energy from his body exploded, allowing for the dark red energy to be pushed to the side of them.

The Skullys had braced themselves, covering their eyes and their faces, and when they realised they were still alive, they could see that much of the thick forest that was claimed to be indestructible was getting destroyed bit by bit.

Roots, large tree trunks and branches were being destroyed by this fight. That wasn't the only large explosion either, as the blood balls were continuing to be created from Quinn's wings, and each time they would be thrown down to Kronker's position creating an equally powerful explosion.

After around six large explosions, the blood balls as well as the blasts from Quinn's mouth had stopped as he went ahead and fell to the ground.

"The demon king, there's no way he survived that right?" Anon said. "He... has to be dead."

"The demon kings are demon kings for a reason, so I wouldn't count on it." Ekeke replied.

Just as Ekeke said, emerging from the deep crater that had been made, where one would unlikely be able to see even the bottom, a hand reached out from the crack, and pulled itself up.

Kronker had crawled out, but he didn't look to be okay at all. Parts of the skin on his body looked as if the flesh had been torn off and the inner parts of his flesh could be seen, but the most damage that had been done to him was his arm.

His right side had completely disappeared from his shoulder, there was nothing there onwards. His aura seemed to still be active surrounding the wound, stopping it from bleeding, and even with his image his aura still seemed to be just as strong.

"Hahah!" Kronker laughed. "Do you think that could kill me? You must have used up a lot of energy in that last attack, and I can see you still have no idea how to use the energy around you."

Kronker opened up his mouth wide and the energy from the air around that had moved out of the way, started to come towards him, and towards his mouth. It soon entered and the aura was shining more vibrant than before, but his arm was still missing.

"A demon king can fight forever!" Kronker shouted, as he charged forward.

Aura attacks and blasts weren't working, so he would have to do something else, and fight directly instead. With his tentacles on his back, he practically had two additional limbs and in this form he was incredibly fast and powerful. Although he now only had three limbs.

Throwing out his left arm that was still intact, he attempted to hit the demon Quinn. His hand was hitting nothing but air, as a smile was still on Quinn's face avoiding each of the hits.

The tentacles were also being used trying to get a decisive and killer blow on Quinn, but he just continued to avoid them all. As a large strike came, with his wing, Quinn had whacked the arm away.

Then with his own clawed arm, he swung down right at the shoulder. Kronker looked to his left and he could see, in that moment, his other arm being detached from his body.

'How... how can he slice through my arm so easily... This makes no sense. Although my body is no longer made of the red crystals, the trait of the Durum's in my demon form, my current skin is actually around ten times harder. It's an evolved form of the crystal.'

'Crystals, hard and flexible like skin all over my body, and he can break through it with ease... what type of demon is this!'

Right after his other arm had been sliced off, a fist was felt grabbing the back of his head, while another hand slammed him right in the stomach. Blood gushed out from Kronker's mouth, but rather than falling to the floor, it had gathered in the palm of Quinn's hand.

With just a single hand on Kronker's head, he moved behind him, and lifted his entire body from the back, slamming it into the ground where they were. Cracks formed and pieces of the land lifted up in the sky from the sheer strength that had been used, and fell back down onto the ground.

With the blood ball in Quinn's hand, he then threw it down right at Kronker's chest, creating another large explosion. It hurt deep, the power spread through Kronker, and although his body was still intact, he wasn't sure how much energy he had left.

When the energy and the dust started to settle, Kronker could feel a foot on his chest. It was Quinn's foot, and the crazed smile with the red eyes was looking at his face.

It had come to this, the demon king felt like he was on his last legs, it had been a long time since he felt this way, but at that time he had admitted defeat and had decided to work for Immortui.

There was a big difference between the two losses though, with Immortui, there was a greater fear in his defeat.

'If I am going to die, then I might as well take you with me.' Kronker thought.

All of the energy from within, all of the aura from around his body and the outside air started to gather where his spikes were, between his eyebrows. Sparks of power were forming a ball of energy near his head.

It was a final attack, after this he would have nothing left to give, so if this didn't defeat Quinn, then the fight was over. When one person had nothing to lose, they would often be more dangerous and this was true for Kronker's situation.

"DIE!" Kronker shouted, as the energy was unleashed.

Seeing this though, the black markings on Quinn's chest and under his eyes, started to glow. The cloak that was seemingly attached to his body all started to move towards his right hand making it slightly bigger in size.

With it, Quinn grabbed the energy blast before it could get larger, he was holding it as it pushed against his arm.

"This is... impossible!" Kronker thought.

With his right hand, Quinn continued to push the energy blast down. He was pushing it and pushing it, until the energy blast had stopped coming from Kronker, and now it was left just in Quinn's hand as a ball of energy.

"Hahah!" Quinn laughed with the deep and high pitched sound, as he used his right hand, and slammed the ball of energy right into Kronker's head.

It pushed in, disintegrating his teeth, while the sheer strength of Quinn's hand and the ball of energy allowed for his hand to completely crush and go right through Kronker's skull.

There was now a large hole in the demon king's head, with nothing but his horns and ears showing, it was clear the demon king had been defeated and there was no coming back from it.

"The demon king of the Durum's is dead..." Anon said in disbelief.

The other Skullys were moving from behind Calva to take a better look and they could see it was true.

Quinn stood up, above Kronker's body, it was unmoving and there was no more of his energy swirling around in the area. For Calva he had a big worry on his mind now. What was going to happen now... because Quinn was still in his demon form.

Chapter 2391: The out of control demon

The hunting grounds and the camp itself was no longer what it used to be. Before there were clear borders to where the base would be, a wall that was built around with bases and more, but all of that had broken down and was just a part of the rubble that was around them.

Even the great forest, that looked like it was made for giants, with roots that were deeply integrated into the ground had been pulled up, half destroyed, or disintegrated and all of it was just from the shockwaves of the battle.

They hadn't been attacked directly, yet all of it was destroyed due to the battle between two greats. If it was a planet with the same structure as Earth, it left no doubt that perhaps all of the landmass, an entire country, or maybe even part of the planet itself would have been destroyed.

The structure of the planet they were on was just different, it was as if the planet itself had adapted due to all of the fighting that occurred on it, allowing it to become more tolerant of such attacks, but not one of this scale.

Out of the great battle, there was only one left standing, the one left the winner, and they stood still looking down at their enemy.

'He's still in the same form as before, and he hasn't moved for a while.' Calva thought. 'This just confirms my guess from before. He's not conscious, unlike he was before, he was just fighting on instinct, but now that there is no enemy, I thought he might have turned back.'

'I was watching the fight carefully, there was a trigger and that was when the demon king had transformed, it must have triggered the demon transformation or that intruder didn't think he could beat him without going into this form.'

'If he hasn't turned back now that the demon king is dead, it means one of two things. One, that he still has a lot of energy to keep up the form he is currently in, and he needs to tire out somehow. Or we need to get through to him for him to turn back.'

The problem with the latter was, that method would often only work if someone was close to him, or knew a lot about the attacker, but it was most likely that Quinn was strangers to all of them.

'For now, the best thing to do is stay in this range. If we move, we could catch his attention, and if we go in closer there is a good chance he could attack us.'

Calva didn't know his relation to the other Skullys, but he did seem to be somewhat considerate of them during the fight, and it was the same for them as well.

"The demon king is dead, does that mean the hunting games are over!"

"That stranger did it, that man did it!"

"Yes, he did, we have to thank him!"

The Skullys were overjoyed, and since their long time enemy had been defeated, they started to climb through their destroyed trees and moved directly to the floor and headed toward their saviour.

"No, wait!" Calva said, reaching with his hand out. Sweat was running down the side of his face, he wanted to stop them but his own legs wouldn't move.

As the Skullys had entered what used to be the camp, Quinn's head had moved from looking at the dead demon king for the first time. His head tilted and now was staring in the direction of the oncoming Skullys. The expression on his face was a dead stare, and suddenly the corner of his cheeks rose up.

The red blood wings flapped once out wide. In doing so, particles of blood had splattered out and were floating about in the air. Seeing this, even the Skullys stopped dead in their tracks.

"Wait... wait, is he going to attack us... but I thought we were on the same side."

"I knew it, it was just demons fighting against other demons."

Not all of the Skullys had come out of the forest, they were too afraid after what they had seen, but a good amount of around ten had done so. Wishing to thank Quinn or to see the dead demon that had tormented them on the ground, and now they were regretting their actions.

"Ple-"

Before the Skully could finish its sentence, all ten of them dropped to the floor, with a bullet hole through their hard outer skull that stuck out from their heads. In an instant all of them had been killed.

"No..." Anon shook his head, he and the others had stayed next to Calva for the time being, they could also somewhat feel something was wrong compared to the person they had met before. "This isn't what was meant to happen, he was meant to help us take out Immortui once and for all, not be another threat to us."

"That's justy what happens in this place." Calva said. "You can't rely on others, and in the end, it's just a world that is survival of the fittest where if you aren't strong, you can't do anything yourself."

However, the worst was about to happen, because after killing the Skullys that had come out towards him, Quinn was now looking deeper into the forest. The smile

was still present on his face. In a blink he was no longer standing next to the dead body of the demon king.

Instead he was in the forest, and his hand had swiped right through another Skully's neck, causing the head to fall straight to the floor. The other Skullys started to retreat back deeper into the forest, one had turned its back but a dark hand had already pierced through the centre of its chest.

Quinn lifted the Skully in the air, and the blood from the Skully was dripping down his arm. It wasn't falling to the floor, it was as if it was attached to the skin of Quinn. When it eventually went onto his pale white skin the body had absorbed the blood and his eyes glowed brighter for a moment.

'Is that the source of his power, the blood.' Calva thought. 'If it is, it means as long as he keeps killing and getting blood, he's going to be in this form for a long time.'

"If we move, we die, if we stay still, we die, what are we meant to do now!" Tuni said. "Quinn is even more dangerous than the demon king, if we couldn't beat the demon king, how are we going to beat him?"

"Fighting is the only option." Calva the champion said. "If you want to live, then fight.:"

The champion had to act whether he liked it or not.

For updates for MVS and future works please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I reply back.

Chapter 2392: A costly mistake

The universe that Immortui was in wasn't currently as large as the one where Earth resided, nonetheless it was still a universe, so the space would seem infinite to most and if one tried to attempt to travel and visit every area possible, it would be a next to an impossible task.

Not unless one had special abilities or use of a certain type of travel that the gods tended to use. Nevertheless, the battle between the great demon king and Quinn had sent shockwaves through the universe. The particles of energy in the air were sharing the vibrations of power on and on, making the one and only Immortui aware of what was going on.

Not only that, but the region where the great fight was taking place, Immortui had quite a few close to the area, since that was where the champions resided. Although two of them were willingly working for Immortui, he never felt they were loyal like that of the demon kings.

It was a trait of his if he faced someone he deemed strong to force them to comply with his side. Because Immortui was always looking at the bigger picture, building up his army and strength to go against the Ancient Ones and the celestials.

There would be next to none on his side when the battle came, so he needed to use everyone he had. At times, Immortui felt like him being sent to this world wasn't a punishment but a gift that allowed him to have a second chance at what he really wanted.

"News has just been received." Immortui said.

Travelling there was a thick red dust cloud not allowing a single person to see what was inside, but the presence of two more individuals on top of Immortui were felt in the thick smoke, the two demon kings he would always have by his side.

"It looks like Kronker was defeated."

The other two demon kings were stunned into silence; they didn't know what to say for a few moments, until one of them eventually shook their head.

"Kronker was a Durum demon, they are ones that get permanently stronger after every battle they participate in, especially ones that push them over the edge." One of the demon kings said. "Kronker wasn't there during the time against the champions, but he felt strong enough to fight against you. You were the last significant battle that Kronker would have had."

Immortui knew what his fellow demon king was saying, that the Kronker who had been defeated, was one that was stronger than the one that Immortui faced.

"I knew he was strong, and one that had great power since he was the key to opening up the portal, but to take a demon king out on his own and that quickly, he is beyond my predictions." The other demon king stated.

Tenbris and Luce were the two demon kings that were always by Immortui's side, and they were the first creations from Immortui's powers, the first demon races that Immortui had created. Due to how long they had been with Immortui, they weren't afraid to speak their mind when they were worried, concerned or excited; it was how they always were with each other.

"I believe I might have made a mistake." Immortui said.

They were rare words that came out of Immortui's mouth which caused Tenbris and Luce to listen carefully.

"Originally, I thought it was best to avoid the area completely. If a fight were to break out, or they saw me having to go toe to toe against a newcomer, I thought there was a good chance of an uprising of some sort. Honestly, it would be a lie if I said I thought Kronker could take on Quinn on his own."

This news had come as quite a surprise to the other two. It seemed that Immortui had great respect for a being that had been raised in another world. It was perhaps the first time they had seen this, or maybe the second time.

"I thought that the fight would go on for long enough that I would be able to order help from either of you two or the other demon kings before Kronker met his demise, but somehow, Quinn was able to defeat Kronker at an incredible speed.

"Now, I feel like if we are to leave Quinn be, we will have the same issue. The other champions, as well as the natural inhabitants, will learn of one of the Demon king's falling, and there's a chance that they could all try to turn on us."

The demon kings hadn't realised it until now, they should have noticed it before but it was clear that Immortui was being cautious. When it came to matters with Mundus or the Ancient Ones, they understood his cautiousness, but here, they thought Immortui was simply trying to have fun with Quinn, but it certainly wasn't the case.

"Would you like one of us to go deal with Quinn?" Tenbris asked.

Thinking about it for a while, Immortui eventually came up with an answer and it was one that neither of them expected.

"No." Immortui replied. "You two go to where the champions and the other demon kings are. Make sure there is no chance of something crazy happening. If there is any sign of them trying to rebel, feed them to Unzoku. Although I would like to use their strength in my battle with the Ancient Ones, we can't lose at the first hurdle."

Unzoku, the name of another one of the demon kings. They didn't like the order, but they had to listen to Immortui in the end.

"Wait, if you are sending us two to the champions, then what about Quinn, who is going to deal with him. The king of the Yaks, Armati?" Luce asked.

The Yak race was a giant demon race that had been created by Immortui, one that Quinn had a run in with already.

"I have decided." Immortui said. "That I will deal with him myself. All I need is no distractions from the outside."

How long had it been since the two demon kings had seen Immortui fight in person? Sure he had fought against Mundus, but it was hard to call that a fight since Mundus was only trying to buy time back then. In their minds, it was a shame that they wouldn't see Immortui fight in person since they had been put on guard duty, but with him dealing with the problem, they knew it would be dealt with.

The two demon kings escaped from the thick red mist and like a blur were off in different directions. As for Immortui, the red mist that would usually expand was coming into his body.

"This has been a long time coming... Quinn." Immortui said.

Chapter 2393: Death a favour

The ultimate team had been formed and they were going after Quinn, but they weren't going in with the intention of saving him, instead this team was going in with the intention of supporting him.

A task that might cause Quinn to risk too much, or for him to not come back, either way, whatever it was that he made need, they would be there to help him. The team consisted of long time friend Peter.

The two had met at the academy, and had been friends from the beginning, but their true bond formed after Peter had risked his life to save Quinn and ended up becoming one of the first turns by Quinn. Ever since, he had been loyal.

Now, with the help of the four Kings of the familiars' world as well as his celestial form and his Wight powers, he was ready to face what was ahead. On top of that, there was Sil who Quinn had met at the academy; his powers needed no introduction as to why he was selected to come aboard.

Chris and Russ, although not the closest to Quinn and had met him through strange ways, both had strong powers. One physical as well as a set of unique traits due to being a werewolf while the other hugely diverse and with the power of the black sword as well as a god slayer item, he was stronger than he was before.

Lastly, there were the two vampire originals, Edvard and Hikel. Although the originals no longer had power comparable to the others, for Edvard he had been gifted the special red dragon armour. One belonging to one of the strangest beings in existence, as for Hikel.

Having gone through an experiment of Vincent's, he had achieved great changes in his body that put him beyond the rest.

All of these people were strong, but they were heading possibly to the most dangerous place in existence. Using the power of the Boneclaw, they had no idea where they would end up, but were ready to battle as soon as they went through to the other side.

A portal had opened up. In a dark space, there was little light around the room, apart from a few glowing touches that were on the side of the walls in the distance.

Right out of the portal, zapping out at the same time, were all six of the group. It had nearly shot them out, as all of them tumbled to the ground. Some falling on top of each other.

The portal flickered for a few moments, before disappearing.

"Get off me!" Peter shouted, as he shoved Chris' large body from him. A few of the others were untangling themselves as well.

"I guess the Boneclaw really did use up the last of his energy to bring us here in the end." Edvard said, brushing off some of the dirt on his red armour. He had come in wearing the red armour in case they needed to fight from the get go.

"Alright, the good news is, it seems that everyone has made it to the other side all okay." Hikel commented.

"You mean bad news." Peter commented looking Russ' way.

Hikel already felt this was going to be a headache, although this might have been the ultimate team in terms of power, it certainly wasn't when it came to teamwork. Thankfully he did have a little bit of experience with this due to the vampire originals being the same way.

"So, the big question would be, where are we right now? I thought we would have at least been able to see the sky, or maybe dreaded monsters would be all over us, or the world ending due to Quinn's and Immortui's fight." Edvard commented.

Each of them looked around the room, and it was clear they were somewhere dark. It felt like they were in an underground cellar as the whole area was covered in brick, but what was even more surprising was that there were other living things in the room, a lot of them.

With their advanced eyesight in the dark, they could see what these beings that were down with them looked like. They had a human shape, a head, arms and legs and the same amount as well.

Although with a squint, they noticed that they had three fingers, and their heads didn't exactly look normal either. Where their eyes were there were things slightly like an elephant trunk on two sides.

For both Chris, and Peter this was a trip down memory lane.

"That... it's the same thing that attacked us on that Graylash planet, that celestial, right?" Chris said.

That thing wasn't the right word to use, since there were perhaps fifty of them in the room that they could see all with the same features, just different shapes and sizes. At the time, the celestials had tried to get rid of the high number of god slayers that were coming from earth, and Mundus had sent a fighter celestial that had come from this world, which is why Peter and Chris felt like they had seen this person before.

"Well, if they are all as strong as the last guy, then we're in big trouble." Chris said.

"Alright, so what do we do, do we try break out of here, use Sil's powers to teleport us to the land and start searching for Quinn, or what?" Russ asked.

"I think we should try and figure out where we are first, maybe we should talk to these guys that are down here." Hikel suggested, although thier was something off about the others.

They had practically arrived through a teleporter, and looked nothing like the local inhabitants. At a guess they had to be beings of intelligence yet they weren't batting an eye at the strange visitors that had entered.

Hearing Hikel's suggestion, surprisingly Peter was the one who acted first, and started to head towards one of the inhabitants. They were up against the wall on thier own, minding thier own business.

Peter bent his knees, trying to get eye level with the perosn.

"Hey, tell us what is this place, where are we, do you know a man named Quinn, or where that bastard Immortui is, and if you don't feel like answering us, I'll punch you in the face, but if you do then you can keep your face." Peter said making a fist.

"Ah yes, let's send out our best communicator." Russ smiled. "Surely with those elegant and kind words, the stranger will be inclined to answer us."

The person looked up at Peter, and just let out a chuckle. The others flinched a little worried for what Peter might do based on this reaction but they soon started speaking.

"This place... is hell, killing me would be doing me a favour." The person answered.

Just what kind of place had they been transported to?

Chapter 2394.1: Setting sun (Part 1)

The group looked at all of the other inhabitants that were down in this cellar with them and felt like even if they were to ask the others the same questions, that they would be met with the same answer.

The fact that they would rather be dead, it meant they were in a troubling place to say the least, and the feeling of the place was the same. It was hard to tell if it was the energy that was coming off from these beings or the air itself.

All were quick to notice that the air itself had some sort of energy to it.

"Hey!" Peter said, grabbing the man by the scruff of his neck. They had very loose clothing that looked like rags on them. It hardly covered their body, nor could it be used as any form of armour or such.

"Answer my other questions about Immortui and Quinn!" Peter asked again, thinking that perhaps the person didn't believe in this little threat of his.

Instead though, the man just laughed as if he expected it. Peter threw out his fist straight to the man's face. He couldn't take the cockney laugh. The more time they spent messing around, the higher chance there was that something would happen to Quinn.

He couldn't deal with people the way they were now and it was clear he was on edge, a lot more than usual. Before the fist could hit the man though, an armoured hand grabbed onto Peter's fist stopping it in its tracks.

"Let's not just go around killing people in a world we don't know much about, especially when they're not trying to attack us." Edvard said.

Peter was relatively surprised as he pulled his fist back and let go of the man, alien, whatever it was. He wasn't surprised that his punch had been stopped by Edvard, but the fact it was possible for Edvard to stop the punch.

"That armour must have improved your strength quite a bit." Peter also sounded as if he was sulking.

"Let me try a different approach." Edvard said, getting to eye level as well, he had a large smile on his face and looked a lot more welcoming than Peter. "As you can probably tell, we are not from around here, and we have happened inside here by accident.

"Can you tell us where is here, and what is this place for? Maybe we can help in some way." Edvard said.

His eyes were glowing red when he said these words, he was attempting to use the influence skill, he wasn't sure if it would work or not, and judging by the look in the other person's eyes it hadn't worked.

Seeing the red glowing eyes, the person seemed to have some sort of reaction, looking deeply at Edvard.

"You're right... I can't figure out what you are." The person said. "You are definitely not a Chrono, or any of the other inhabitants from this world. Could you guys be demons, but if that's the case then why are you here?"

They had learned some information, the beings that were in the cellar with them were known as Chronos, so at least it seemed that Edvard's approach was working a lot better than Peter's, so far at least.

"You guys are quite unlucky to have accidentally come in here." Another Chrono said walking towards them. Their eyes looked dead as well, but a little less compared to the others.

"I saw you come through the portal, so I know the words you say are true." The Chrono said, walking over. It felt unthreatening so the others didn't even react when it got in close to them.

Chris was finding it hard to believe that the one they had faced in the past was the same race as the rest of these.

"It's as the man said, where you guys are right now, could be seen as a type of prison. Although it is hard to call it that, because those that are here haven't committed any crimes, at least most of us." The Chrono started to explain. "This prison is controlled by the demon king, and when the sunlight falls that when hell begins, and don't even think of trying to escape, many have done in the past, and they have all failed, because guarding this place is one of the champions of old."

The group listened to everything the Chrono had said, and he was already turning around, walking the other way as if he had no more to say to them. Even the one that was sitting up against the wall was no longer looking at them and just staring at the ground.

"All your questioning did, was bring us more questions!" Peter complained. "It would have been simpler to beat them, and let the guys come to us, we're going to have to fight them all anyway, with or without Quinn."

"You have to remember this is a whole other universe." Chris stated. "It would be best to just go after our enemy and not make the whole universe our enemy. Besides I'm curious about what he said, do you think this demon king could be Immortui?"

"If that was the case then the fight between him and Quinn would have destroyed this place by now." Sil said. "If anything, I would say that Quinn isn't here due to the lack of fighting. If he came in here with a goal he would be quick to try and complete it. Then again, it could be that Quinn is in a similar situation to us, and is trying to gather information. In the end, if we both try to find Immortui, we should run into each other."

The logic made sense to them all as they nodded away at this, but there was a major worry on all of their minds, they didn't want to waste time.

"I have a suggestion to make." Hikel said. "Someone with the name such as demon king could give us valuable information we need. There is a chance that Quinn might even be here but since we're not sure, we could just be wasting our time.

"I suggest we split up into two groups. With Sil's power, I'm sure he could teleport a group of us out of here. They will continue to search for Quinn on the outside to see how this demon king is doing and if they know anything. There is also this guard that they call the champion as well, but I don't think they're anything we have to worry about."

Splitting up in a dangerous place wasn't always the best idea, which was why Hikel thought only splitting their force by half was the best choice. Three of them should be strong enough to face most of what they would come across in this world. However, there was another problem, how would they even split up the groups?

Chapter 2395.2: Setting sun (Part 2)

Hikel could feel a headache coming on, because once again it felt like it was left to him to try and sort out who would be going with who. There were sensible and insensible ones and then those that just were more laid back.

"Alright... so I think I got it sorted." Hikel said. "In the first place, Russ is unable to travel with Sil due to the Black sword. If he was to use its powers, then it would cancel the teleportation."

"So, for now we're split the group between those going with Sil and those staying with Russ. If that's the case, then it would be best to split up Peter and Russ, since them two seem to get along the worst together."

The two of them glanced at each other for a moment.

"I'm happy with that, I want to find Quinn as soon as possible."

"Make sure to cover yourself when you see him, you don't want to show him that you're too excited to meet him." Russ commented.

Standing in between the two was Chris, just before Peter could try anything.

"In terms of regrouping, me and Edvard can sense our energy relatively easily, and we can smell each other out. Of course, I don't think Sil will have a problem getting back to us, but just as a precaution, I think it's best if the two of us split up." Hikel explained.

With that, it was decided, Russ, Hikel and Chris would be staying put with one group, while Sil, Edvard and Peter would continue the search elsewhere.

After saying good luck to each other, they wasted no time. Sil gathered the two of them around him, and using his powers they were able to teleport out of the area they were in.

Whether it would be a better or worse situation than what they were currently in, only time would tell.

The three remaining hardly knew each other, with the others gone though it did feel a lot quieter but they didn't want to just sit back and do nothing.

"I guess that the champion that is guarding this place is unable to detect that people have left." Hikel commented. "Although, not many would have a teleport ability as strong as Sil's."

"What do you think's the best course of action?" Chris asked. "Should we attempt to break out of this place, or question more of the others to see if someone will talk."

"We could just wait until the sun goes down, that's when this hell event thing is meant to start." Russ said, thinking that the more time went on and passed, the more likely it was that this whole situation would resolve itself without needing him to do anything.

Thinking about the many possibilities the first thing they needed to do was scout the area. The room they were in was incredibly large, it felt like it was an area that could fit 1000's of people rather than the fifty or so that were in there.

On one end, there was a strange barrier of sorts, it was red in colour and they were unable to see what was on the other side, when looking at the floor though, they could see that multiple magic circles were on the ground right where the barrier was.

Letting out a little of Hikel's aura he tried to use it to get past or through the barrier but it wasn't working. It was hard to tell if a high level attack would allow them to break through the barrier in the first place.

After that the group went over to the other side, on this side, strangely there was a staircase that led up. It seemed to reach another floor, yet not a single person was heading up there.

While standing by the stairs, Chris started to sniff the air.

"You can smell it as well." Hikel said. "The smell of blood."

"Oh!" A voice said from behind. "You guys are still here, but I haven't seen your friends around. It can't be, don't tell me they went up the staircase."

The one speaking was the Chrono who had spoken to them before. They could tell because the eyes of this Chrono were a lot closer together compared to the others, a trait they were able to recognise.

"I thought I had already told you guys, that if you try to leave this place then the champion will stop you. I'm afraid your friends are already dead."

Just like before after saying those words, the Chrono walked away from them.

"Is it just me, or is talking to these beings incredibly frustrating?" Russ said. "I'm starting to agree more with Peter, with the suggestion that these guys can do with a good whacking."

Ignoring Russ' words, the others were now thinking what the best option was.

"Should all of us go up there, or maybe just one of us, to see just how strong this champion is?" Chris asked.

"I think I might have a better idea." Hikel said. "Why don't we use Russ' power, can't he conjure something to go up for us. It will allow us to see just how dangerous this place is, while letting us explore at the same time."

Russ didn't like the fact that his name was suggested and that he would perhaps need to do some work.

"Alright and what should I make. A Dalki, perhaps I should just have a copy of Quinn running around the place. That would cause them to have alarm bells ringing in their head."

It was a good point to make, they needed a figure that was strong enough to face the champion to test it at least, but one that wouldn't cause alarm. The reason their presence hadn't caused alarm seemed to be the fact that they were so confident in nothing getting in or leaving.

"You can use me." Chris said, pointing to his head. "A while back, me and Peter fought against these Chronos. They were working for the celestials and were incredibly strong. It took everything we had back then to take it out.

"Of course, we're stronger now, but even if we were to face it, I still think it would be a dangerous enemy."

Sighing, Russ didn't have any clever remarks or anything to try and dissuade them from this idea, because it was actually a good one.

"Alright, but this person better be as strong as you say they are, you better have had a good impression of them. Let's hope it's not because you're weak."

Using his powers, Russ entered into Chris' mind, it didn't take long after that for a figure to appear in front of them. It was like the other Chrono, only this one had a more menacing aura around it, and in its hands there were two katana style swords.

"Alright, let's make some noise."

Chapter 2396.3: Setting sun (Part 3)

The summoned Celestial had brought back memories for Chris. There was a part of him that wished to face it again, so he could see whether or not it was something he could defeat on his own. One thing that was a habit for him that he never stopped, was trying to make his body stronger.

In a way, for his own mental health, it was the only thing that was driving him in this current world.

Last time, they needed the help of many others. Yet, he had to let it be, as it was to go against the one that was named the champion.

Russ, was the one who was to give orders to his creation, and he could tell it was relatively strong, based on the amount of MC cells it had taken him to summon such a thing.

'If this guy loses, then it looks like we might have quite the conundrum on our hands.' Russ thought, but didn't say this out loud and allowed for the two-bladed Chrono to make its way up the stairs.

"I really want to watch, but we are just going to have to stay here from a distance." Chris said, trying to focus on his hearing.

Walking up the stairs, the Chrono Russ had created took a step at a time. Slowly it climbed the staircase that seemed to be at least a hundred steps high, until finally it had reached a level flooring.

It still had yet to leave the building, but now there were far taller ceilings and hallways that seemingly led off to different directions, but before all of that was another Chrono at the other end.

Only this one looked completely different to the others. It had the same facial features with the trunk-like eyes that curled outward and the same dark grey skin. However, it was far more muscular than the others.

It wore a vest piece like armour, that covered its entire chest but allowed its arms to be on display. The shoulders were rounded and muscular which matched the rest of its body.

On the floor itself there were several pillars that were covered in blood, that included the floor as well, with body pieces that were left to rot. Bones that had been there for who knows how long.

Strangely though, although the blood was splattered all over the place, the bones and pieces of flesh were put to one side.

"It's been a long time since someone has decided to climb those stairs. Usually only when a group of newcomers come in, someone tries to climb." The champion said, lifting his head and coming off from the wall he was leaning on. A pair of large axes could be seen on his back.

When he saw who was in front of him, he soon stopped, his hands were still by his side and slightly shaking at who he could see.

"Hinto...is it really you?" The man known as the champion said. "It has to be you, you recognise me right, it's me Shinto... don't you recognise me, brother?"

The person who Russ had pulled from Chris's imagination was Hinto, a celestial that worked for Mundus and the celestials. Originally, Hinto was a Chrono and was from this world, the world that was called the Red space.

The different planes and worlds had names, the Red space was where they currently were at, then there was the Mystic space, where the familiars resided and there was Earth, it was known as the Golden space.

This was mostly due to Celestials wishing to work with planets in this particular space due to the abundance of life that could be seen through the universe, which helped them complete their conditions a lot easier.

Whereas the Red space and Mystic space, got their names due to different reasons. Hinto was originally from the Red space, and had quite the reputation in the Red space.

He was one of the strongest fighters, but eventually ended up on the run from Immortui after killing several demons in a significant skirmish. Because of this, he had been recruited by one of the ancient ones. Those in the Red Space were unaware of this and assumed Hinto was still in hiding or had been killed.

"Why aren't you saying anything, don't you recognize me after all this time, or have they done something to you!" Shinto demanded, his voice turning desperate. He glanced left and right, as if expecting someone might overhear him.

This was an opportunity for Shinto. With his brother, perhaps they could oppose Immortui or the Demon King.

"Hinto... I've grown stronger, much stronger. After you left, I thought they had killed you. So I decided to fight against them. I fought against Immortui and his demons, but in the end, it wasn't enough, I was unable to beat him and was assigned here to guard this place.

"But I haven't neglected training, I've been striving to grow stronger each day. With the two of us, we can do something, please Hinto, remember!"

Both Chris and Hikel stood at the bottom of the staircase, listening to the conversation above. Even Russ had transformed part of his ears to resemble a vampire's so he could hear better.

"This has turned into a very interesting turn of events," Chris observed. "I knew they looked like each other. Is there a way we can use this to our advantage, can we pretend that's the real Hinto and trick him?"

"I'm afraid not," Russ replied. "If I were directly controlling them, I could speak through them, but it would still just be me. I think they would quickly realize something was amiss. Our best chance is to try to kill him while he thinks we're his brother."

"Otherwise, sooner or later, he will find out that something is wrong."

Hikel and Chris weren't so sure. It was a chance to gain a powerful ally, but ultimately, Chris was part of the group that actually killed his brother. If this truth came out, they would face the wrath of this champion, and they still had no idea just how strong they were.

"Screw it, I'm doing it," Russ declared.

The command was given, and now Hinto was walking towards his brother, swords still clenched in his hands.

"Hinto!" Shinto called. "Hinto!"

He shouted his name, but the lack of response was causing him concern, and he reached to draw his axes.

"I knew it, they must have done something to you, damn it, why did it have to come to this. If you are as skilled as you were back then, I'm afraid I won't be able to hold back without killing you, otherwise I would lose my own life."

Just then, before a grand battle could begin, a large bell tolled, resonating through the lower floors. The sound echoed off the walls and was piercing to all of their ears.

"The sun... has set," Shinto stated.

Inside, all the other Chronos began to rise... the hell was about to commence.

Chapter 2397: An old ancient enemy

The sound of the bell made it clear that something was about to happen, and even more so now that they could see the lifeless Chronos in the room sprinting to life. They were standing and more energetic than before.

It looked like some type of switch had been flicked. Before, it felt like they were in an energy-saving mode. It was the perfect time for Russ to act. Since he had created an awkward situation, he decided to quickly make it unawkward by getting rid of the Hinto he had made.

"Hey, what are we going to do now, are we changing the plan?" Chris asked.

"I already got rid of the Hinto guy." Russ replied. "I think we need to focus on what's going on down here at the moment. It seems like we might need to focus. However, I would have liked to have known just how strong our opponents we are going to face are."

The reason why Russ wanted to know about his opponents so much was because of his MC cells weakening with each summon or use of his powers. If he had an idea of the strength of his opponent, he could summon something that was just strong enough to beat them.

This would allow him to summon and use more of his power as he went on. Summon something too strong, and use up all of his MC cells, then he was literally a sitting duck.

Sure, he had two more special weapons on him now, but his skills with a sword weren't the best, and summoning the one from the sword took a lot.

Holding onto the sword, Russ started to walk up to one of the Chronos that had their backs facing away from the others.

"What are you thinking of doing?" Hikel said, standing in his way.

"We weren't able to figure out how strong the champion is, but we should at least get an idea of how strong the general beasts and people of this world are. If you want to survive, then this is the best option and I'm telling you now, I didn't come to this place to die." Russ answered.

Russ went to walk forward again, but Hikel refused to move.

"That is not the vampire way. These people have not attacked us, there is no reason for us to do them any harm. Even if it's to increase our chances of survival, I would not be able to live that way."

"Are you stupid or something?" Russ replied. "Do I need to remind you, I am not a vampire."

After splitting up Peter and Russ, Chris thought that these problems would disappear and if the two were to fight, he wondered what he should do.

'I really wish Quinn was here, he would be able to sort these two out.'

In the middle of their small argument, they could hear the sound of footsteps coming from the staircase to their side. There was only one person on the other side, so it meant the champion Shinto was coming down.

Naturally, all three of them started to move from the staircase and headed to where all the other Chronos were. Since they looked different from all the others that were down here, they felt like getting caught would bring them trouble.

All fifty of those in the underground area with them were lined up, close to the red barrier from before. The group mixed themselves within the people. Suddenly, the red barrier disappeared.

Immediately, all of the Chronos ran from their position and into the other area. They were fast, faster than the average vampire. Based on how heavy their footsteps were, they seemed to be strong as well.

Vampires were fast in a different way through movement of their limbs, while the Chronos seemed to be a mixture of strength. They had exploding movement speed.

On the other side of the red barrier, the area was completely different from where they were. They could feel the wind and the strange energy in the air stronger here. When looking up, they could also see the sky.

Looking around them, there were incredibly tall high walls. No, they weren't walls, because they weren't built out of any structure and it felt like they were incredibly thick.

That's when they realized that they were in a giant hole. The area was incredibly large, twice as large as the underground part they were in before, and due to it being nothing but a hole, it was quite dark where they were.

This wasn't a problem for the three as they had traits that allowed them to see in the dark, but it appeared that the Chronos struggled a little more. They could see this as the Chrono's reached around the floor as if they were looking for something.

What was spread all across the floor were weapons. Weapons just stuck in the ground or lying there, all different types, all different shapes and sizes.

Chris went ahead and picked up one of the weapons, as he infused his Qi into it he activated the weapon.

"These are... amazing," Chris said. "I'm not sure if they're beast weapons or not, as they don't quite feel the same, but the power I'm receiving back from them, is at the Demi-god tier level, it's pretty close to even being at the demon tier level."

Just in case, Chris picked up a few of the other weapons, and they were all the same, all of the weapons spread on the ground were of the same calibre.

"All of these weapons are close to the demon tier level, and the beings using these aren't weak either," Hikel said. "Not allowing them to escape, yet allowing them to use weapons like this. Whoever trapped all of these people, they must be confident despite all of this."

Russ had noticed something and using his powers, he took on the features of the Chrono, changing his body. He started to blend in, and spread himself out away from the other two.

They saw this but decided to ignore Russ, he was doing his own thing, as long as he didn't get in their way, then it would be fine. As for the two of them, they tried to hide their presence as much as possible, because from the entrance they could see Shinto standing there, looking at all of the participants.

He didn't have his weapons drawn and it was hard to read the face he currently had on, yet Chris felt like he once had a familiar feeling in him. It was as if he had the look of someone who didn't agree with what they were doing, but felt like they could do nothing about it.

A feeling that Chris knew very well.

The loud sound of the bell went off again, it rang clearer than before and was coming from above. When they looked up, they could see creatures crawling in from above, attached to the wall on the sides. A distinct smell had hit Chris's nose, all of the hair on his body was standing up.

Hikel's own body was shaking as well as he could see the creatures.

'How could they... be in a place like this... this makes no sense, why are there Werewolves here!'

Chapter 2398: The Broken history of vampires

At the vampire settlement, they had been without their original leaders, Quinn and others, for a while now but it was safe to say that things were running smoothly. With the original leaders having gone into slumber not wanting to deal with the current mess, they had all been replaced with newer leaders.

Thankfully, all the newer leaders at least on the surface seemed to be quite big fans of Quinn and were willing to do whatever would help him best. Even though Muka was running things, they felt like helping her was helping Quinn in a way.

Still, she wasn't on her own, there was also Xander who, once he had regained his memories, was in shock for a little while. He felt guilty for forgetting about Layla and the rest and had actually left the settlement for a while.

He eventually had come back, and in doing so took up a lot of the administrative roles, which he was used to because he did a lot of that work when he was part of the red vampires with Layla in the past.

The days were going by as normal, there were no attacks from familiars or beasts, no takeovers from Immortui trying to cause trouble. The settlement was still relatively on high alert with guards everywhere, but the people felt like they could relax a little, and it also meant that the children could return to school after the little attack they had experienced.

In school, Minny was sitting in her normal seat with the rest of her classmates. Miss Bedford was at the front, the real Miss Bedford this time and was teaching the rest of the class.

There were still guards but they were outside of the classroom rather than inside and these were heavily vetted to make sure there was next to no connection with Immortui. Of course, that might have been somewhat impossible but they tried their best.

The subject of the current lesson was quite an interesting one, as it was a history lesson, it was the subject of Werewolves.

"Werewolves are creatures with a history that dates back even further than ours," Miss Bedford explained. "Unfortunately, Werewolves no longer exist today and that is due to us, the vampires.

"When you are a bit older, we will go into the details of the Great War between us two races, but for now you will learn a few details of why they were considered very dangerous beings that needed to be rid of.

"Firstly, I want you to think back about the duty of a vampire. We were considered as higher beings compared to humans. We lived longer than them, and were

naturally more powerful than them. Which is why, we naturally took on our role of protectors.

"But you see, Werewolves viewed humans as mere hunting tools, and on the night of the full moon, they were unable to control themselves, killing whatever they could get their hands on, human or vampires. Which was why in the end the vampires stepped up their natural duty, and felt like it was their need to get rid of them."

The lesson continued on not explaining much about Werewolves but did show images of what they looked like to the class, as well as some paintings of Werewolves and vampires fighting which excited the students.

When it was break time, the students were so excited that they started to play a game of Werewolves against vampires, where the vampires would have to capture the werewolves. It was similar to a human game called cops and robbers, only the vampires were the police and the Werewolves were the criminals.

Watching all of this, Minny had a strange thought in her head.

'Miss Bedford said that the Werewolves were extinct...but isn't Uncle Chris a Werewolf, and he is a nice person as well,' Minny thought.

Minny didn't ask Miss Bedford in class nor did she ask any of the other teachers because she knew that they wouldn't tell her the truth. She knew that there were things that were hidden from them, that her father and mother told her to never speak about, so they were unlikely to know much.

When she had a question like this on her mind, there was one person that was best for her to go to. When the day ended, Minny had headed home with her mother, and she quickly asked the question if she was free to go to a certain place, her mother of course didn't mind and that was how she had ended up in a lab.

"Hello, Uncle Vincent!" Minny said as she jumped up on the lab table careful not to knock over any of the experimental items or equipment that were there.

Vincent stopped what he was working on, and immediately went to a special fridge he had in his room, opening up there was a cold juice pack. He quickly threw it over to Minny who caught the box and started drinking straight away. It brought a smile to his face, he knew he was spoiling her but he didn't care.

"Minny, how many times do I have to tell you," Vincent said. "Although I look young, I am your many great grandfather, you can just call me Grandad, no need to call me uncle."

"Okay, Grandad!" Minny said already having finished her juice box. "Grandad, I wanted to ask, are all Werewolves bad?"

It was a sudden and strange question Vincent thought, and he had to think about it before he gave an answer.

"Of course not," Vincent said. "Just like vampires, there can be good and bad werewolves. Although during my time, there were a lot of fights between us and them."

"Then, why aren't there a lot of Werewolves today, what happened?" Minny asked.

"I'm not exactly sure. Maybe the vampires were scared of them. You see, there was something special about their attacks. When hurt or bit by them, they stopped our natural healing process, and if we were bit by them, then our blood aura would fade away as well."

"But, I'm sure, I read somewhere that there was a time period where Werewolves and Vampires had even got on for a while. So it makes me wonder..."

As Vincent explained, he was alive during the time Werewolves existed, but wasn't there during the war between the two races. He had escaped from the Settlement at the time, and had bigger things to worry about.

Then when he gave up being a vampire, putting all of his powers in the book, he really gave up on knowing about the supernatural world altogether. However, somewhere between then, and when he woke up again, the war that wiped out the werewolves must have happened.

Now even Vincent was curious about the answer, and he felt like there might be someone who knew. Logan had received all of the information from Richard Eno. Before, Vincent thought that Richard had gone into a deep slumber but later they had found out he had faked it and continued to live, watching everything, so he was bound to have some records of what had really happened between the vampires and Werewolves to turn their relationship so sour.

Chapter 2399: The Werewolves past

A long time ago, Quinn and Logan had travelled across space to come across the base of Richard Eno. Even in his death, it seemed like he had left a significant legacy behind, and during his long life, he had gathered a vast amount of information.

Thankfully, that information was all left in the hands of Logan Green, someone whose family had had a close connection with Eno during their time, and it was someone who he believed could make use of the information.

Although Logan had access to all of this information, it was challenging for his mind to process it all. Using technology, he noted things down, recorded events, and created a database where he could access the information whenever he wished.

However, due to the vast amount of knowledge, it wasn't as if he would just know about certain things if someone asked him about them, and that was also why he didn't just spew out information or facts to the others - it was on an access basis only.

Vincent, knowing all of this, decided to ask Logan for a favor, to see if he could send over all the information he had on the Werewolves. Due to everything happening, it was never something that piqued his interest.

Now that he had more free time to do research, one of his great pleasures, his curiosity was taking over.

"Ah!" Vincent exclaimed as he continued to type away and look at the large holographic screen in front of him.

"It looks like there are quite a few texts to do with Werewolves. Here it states the same as what you were taught in school. How the vampires didn't like the fact that Werewolves were killing aimlessly.

"At the same time, the Werewolves seemed to have a more apex predator mindset. They knew they were stronger than humans, but many times vampires would be compared to them.

"From what I can gather, some vampires would hunt Werewolves as a sign of their strength and it seems the Werewolves would do the same, that would explain why there is so much bad blood between the two." Vincent explained.

"But then what about the war?" Minny asked. "If it was the vampires and the Werewolves were bad, why did there need to be a war where one of them was wiped out?"

Vincent continued to read the articles, his eyes were darting all over the place, and that's when he noticed one of the files had been marked by a star - something that Logan often did when he felt like something might interest him.

Pressing on the star, before the file even opened up, there was a little note.

"From what I can tell, a lot of data that was inputted into here seems to have been corrupted, and it was done so on purpose." Logan's note read. "This was already the case when I received the information, so it has to have been done by Richard, although there is some information that can be extracted which I think you will find extremely interesting."

Opening the file, it was exactly as Logan had said, it was corrupted. Video files were unable to be played, even basic text documents had multiple words and paragraphs scratched out to the point where not even full sentences could be made.

Yet, there were a couple of full sentences that could be read, appearing as bullet-pointed notes.

After reading what he could, Vincent was left scratching his head.

"Now this is a real head scratcher," Vincent commented.

Minny moved over so she could see what Vincent was looking at, but it didn't make any sense to her, at least not anything that would cause the type of reaction he had.

"What's wrong?" She asked.

"At the time of the war, there were a few Alpha wolves," Vincent explained. "Now this is strange in itself, because whenever there was more than one Alpha, the Werewolves would often fight amongst themselves."

"An Alpha wolf is the head of a pack, think of it perhaps like a family leader that the vampires have, but for Werewolves they feel as if there can only be one true leader at a time."

"Now technically, if I was the strategist at the time, it would be the best time for a Vampire attack. While the Werewolves are fighting amongst themselves. Perhaps this was the trigger that started it all and the vampires saw a good opportunity."

"However, the case files state differently, they say the war started when an Alpha Werewolf who went by the name Gary Dem, struck hard. The fact that there is more than one Alpha Werewolf name written on here, makes me think maybe they worked together, and that in itself is a scary thought."

The Werewolves had always been a problem for the vampires and that was only with one Alpha, so he couldn't imagine an army with more than one. The war must have been extremely difficult for them.

"Then, is this Gary Dem the bad guy?" Minny asked.

"I wouldn't say for sure," Vincent replied.

"You have to remember, that history is written by the victor. We only get to hear one side of the story, and no one can say otherwise whether it was true or not. Of course the vampires would claim the Werewolves attacked them first. Although, this information is by Richard Eno, and I would say he was one that was more inclined to record the truth."

"Rather than recording something due to a personal bias he had."

Minny just nodded along pretending as if she understood, but the words being used and the situation was getting a little too complicated for her.

"So what's the problem?" Minny asked.

Vincent then zoomed in on some of the text on the screen, highlighting a name. Minny read the name a few times before it clicked for her as well.

"Talen!" Minny shouted. "That's dad's family name...why does it say Tai Talen?"

"Yes, it is, which is what I'm currently scratching my head at," Vincent said. "Me and Richard are Enos, but we share the same blood with Quinn, he is a part of our family otherwise he would have never been able to open that book."

"I had a son and a daughter before I passed on my consciousness into the book. My daughter must have had a daughter who at some point married into the Talen family line."

Vincent didn't voice another thought he had in his mind, but the ancient dragon Ray, was a Talen as well. Vincent wasn't related to him but it was clear that this Talen bloodline had to be somewhat special.

"The thing is, in our bloodline, I was the last vampire, having given up my powers. The last vampire in our bloodline until Quinn got the book and became a vampire. Between my slumber and Quinn, the war with the Werewolves occurred. Which means there were no vampires with our bloodline during this time. Of course, apart from Richard Eno."

"So then why does Tai Talen's name appear, someone from the Talen family, in a document talking about the war between vampires and Werewolves?"

Chapter 2400: The god's make a move

The celestial space where time moved slower, and where the gods resided to make deals with each other while observing the many planets in the Golden Space, was peaceful once again.

It felt like something was happening in the celestial space, and great events were going on one after the other. Many of them still remember when BB had entered and decided to face off against the celestials one after the other, attempting to destroy as many as he could.

They remembered watching the fighting celestials go up against the god-slayers of Earth and the eventful fights one after the other. It had become a big event among the gods because everyone felt the pressure that there was a good chance that the Ancient Ones would get involved.

Still, there were some things that were kept secret, Quinn's escape, him becoming an agent for the gods to eliminate other god slayers, and the fact that Immortui was behind many of the grand events surrounding Earth and was attempting to escape.

All of that felt behind them now as the celestials concentrated on doing what they did best, fueling their conditions, feeding off the celestial energy that they would gain.

For one celestial there was a big difference in how they would spend their time, a celestial that was relatively infamous among the others.

"Hey, I was wondering which planets would be best for my condition?" a celestial asked.

"Ah, you know who would have known the answer to that, the all-knowing Xox!" another answered.

"Xox, oh yeah, he used to talk to everyone, and he knew a lot about the planet's history and everything, but I haven't seen him around."

"That's impossible, he practically lives in this place."

"No, it's true. He hasn't been around, I think Xox must have left this place, his days of I guess being an informant are over, but it makes me wonder, what is he doing now, after a life of living in the Celestial Space, what can he do?"

As for the infamous Xox, he was currently on a particular planet, looking up at the blue sky on a shady white beach. He had buried half of his body into the sand. The heat of the sun warming up the sand was nice and cozy for Xox.

"This is a nice relaxing feeling... I don't know why I used to worry myself so much going after celestial points." Xox said.

By his side, a large hole had been made in the sand and it was filled with seawater. Laying down in it like a hot tub was another celestial, Yongbu. The celestial of the Memerials.

He too was relaxing as he laid there side by side with his friend. The two of them didn't know each other well before, but as fate had it, the two had run into each other quite a few times, and then the two of them had even been tasked with a high-level job from Mundus, a very stressful job.

Now it was the end of it all, the two had decided to relax a little, to not get involved with celestial business. Not try so hard to meet their conditions because it seemed lately that it would just bring the two of them trouble.

"I'm surprised how relaxing this is, after all we used to just do nothing in the celestial space all the time." Xox said. "I have lived a long time, and I guess just not fearing for our life is best."

"I agree, I have even decided to not get involved with the Memerials and cut loose my ties with other celestials on planets to complete my condition." Yongbu replied.

Although part of his reason was for fear of meeting BB again if he did get involved.

"Speaking of, you know there was something I never found out." Xox replied.
"What was your condition?"

There was silence from the two of them for a while, as if Yongbu was trying to decide whether it was a good decision to tell Xox or not.

"Ah heck, we both have our embarrassing moments, I will go ahead and tell you. My condition is to have as many living beings know how to swim as possible." Yongbu answered.

"What..What!" Xox repeated, shouting their second time. "I thought conditions were meant to be things that the universe deemed necessary, and if that's your condition, then why did you get so involved in those living with the Memerials in the first place?

"I mean, your entire race where you came from can swim. Why don't you just go to other planets teaching them the great ways."

"Do you think, I could live that down?" Yongbu said. "The other Celestials would critique me, and think of me as a not so powerful god, then taking advantage of me. It's much easier going to planets and creating a disaster involving water, that way they are forced to learn to swim, or decide to teach it to those in the future."

Although Xox now knew the details of Yongbu's condition, he still didn't know the exact details. For some celestials, conditions were easier than others. For example, those that could swim, would Yongbu get celestial energy from that, or was it only those that could swim due to the result of his actions.

It was the same for maybe one who had the condition of death. Did they get celestial energy from all those that died naturally or only those through their meddling.

"So let me ask you a question, what is your condition, does it perhaps have something to do with why you spent all your time in the Celestial Space in the first place?" Yongbu asked.

"I just want to stay out of trouble now, the less I'm in the celestial space, the less chance there is of Mundus or others asking us for help, right!" Xox excitedly said.

Yet, there was then a strange feeling around his body. He could almost feel it turning into nothing but energy particles. His physical body was turning into something similar to the celestial body he would have in the celestial space.

This was something that had never happened before, at least not in a forceful way like so. Eventually, his whole body disappeared. Yongbu blinked a few times looking at the hole left in the sand, Xox was nowhere to be seen.

Reappearing in his energy form, Xox was in a dark space. It was completely black with no sign of light at all, apart from that which came off from his own body. It made it impossible to see just how large the space was.

In a panic, the ball-shaped celestial was flying around all over the place. This wasn't the celestial space, so where was he, and how was he dragged here? In the back of his mind, he had a theory of who it could be, but why would they want to contact him.

"Celestial Xox." A booming voice was heard directly in Xox's head. It sounded peaceful and gentle as he heard it, but that didn't make Xox feel at ease.

"I am in need of your skills to go unnoticed as an informant." The voice said. "I need you to keep an eye on the Earthlings and report back anything you find out that is strange, and to also keep an eye on Quinn."

"Of course, I don't think I have to tell you, but no one is allowed to know of this. Not a single celestial is allowed to find out, and that includes Mundus. If they do the consequences will be grave for you."

After everything Xox did to avoid situations like this, he wondered what he had done to deserve this type of treatment or get involved with all these large figures.

The voice didn't explain why; the voice didn't say anything yet, because he knew Xox would follow the order. Just as quickly as he arrived, he was sent back and found himself in the hole in the sand he had created.

"You're back, where did you go?" Youngbu asked.

Xox didn't say anything, but he was sure of it—an Ancient One had made contact with him.

Chapter 2401.1: The Werewolves pit (Part 1)

The team that had entered in search of supporting Quinn, had split up into two groups, one of them being led by Hikel, along with his allies Russ and Chris. Although led was a loosely used term in this situation since they were all strong individuals.

They had decided to stay in the place where they had arrived, in search of information from the one who was named Demon King by the locals, and it was how they had ended up in their current situation.

The Chronos, the inhabitants of the area they were in, stated that when the sun fell, that was when hell would start. They weren't quite sure what was meant by this until now.

Stuck in a large hole with weapons close to the demon tier level in terms of power, they were all waiting to see what was going to happen, and that's when they saw it. Crawling down from the sides, from the very top of the hole, were Werewolves.

Chris was able to smell their familiarity, and it was causing an instinct in him to react. His teeth were already partly transforming, and he had to hold himself back from changing.

'Why is my body acting this way from seeing them...and why are they in a place like this?' Chris thought.

He himself, although being a Werewolf, didn't know much about them. The reason why he was the way he was, was mostly due to Agent 4 running experiments on the members of Pure, including him.

However, there was one more that recognized the creatures, and that was Hikel. Being an Original, he was there through the years when the vampires and Werewolves were at each other's necks, and he knew full well how frightening these creatures could be.

'Why, in another world altogether, are there Werewolves here...and the number of them,' Hikel thought.

So far, he could see about thirty or so crawling towards them. Of course, Werewolves, just like vampires, varied in strength, but looking at these Werewolves, they didn't look weak at all.

On closer inspection, they actually looked slightly different from the Werewolves he had seen. Werewolves tended to have different colored fur, and different traits; there were different types of Werewolves, and Hikel would have said he had encountered all of the types there were, yet he had never seen these before.

The color of their fur was tinted red. It was mainly black, but with the light shining on one of the moons in the background, one could see the fur was actually a very dark red.

On top of that, the shape of the Werewolves was different as well. The upper half of their body was larger than a Werewolf would surely be. All of these werewolves were fully transformed, but still, their upper half with their arms and back was incredibly large, and this was also true for their eyes.

They covered a lot of the area on their face, making them look almost as if they were bulging out. With these differences, Hikel might have even thought that they might not even be Werewolves, but due to the smell, he was certain these were Werewolves.

'It must be because of this world they're slightly different; they have evolved over time. Maybe even if the Werewolves were still alive in our world, they would have evolved to this state, but this is very dangerous, these Werewolves might even be stronger than the ones that I know.'

The Werewolves had descended at an incredibly fast speed, and when they were close to the bottom, some of them had leapt off going towards the nearest living being.

They had bared their large cloak-like hands and had their mouths wide open. One of the Chronos was holding onto a large double-handed axe. He lifted it in the air, and the edge started to light up.

Swinging it down towards the Werewolf, a large line of energy was released, cutting the ground and headed straight for the Werewolf. Now the others were able to see what they meant when Chris was talking about the weapons being strong.

When the attack reached the Werewolf, it swung one of its arms, and ripped right through the attack. It landed on the ground and then pounced from its position, immediately coming directly in front of the Chrono.

'There, really fast,' Russ thought. His legs had already transformed to a fast vampire that the others had the image of in their heads. It felt like if he was to let his guard down in the middle of all of this, he would be taken out.

The Chrono swung the axe down again, but before it could reach the Werewolf, they had grabbed the weapon and yanked it out of the Chrono's hand. Then with its other hand, it swiped a claw ring right through the Chrono's face as if it was made of butter, killing it on the spot.

Seeing this, everyone was starting to sweat a little. The Chrono weren't weak, the weapons they were using weren't weak; it was just that the Werewolves were incredibly strong.

Now, nearly all of the Werewolves had reached the bottom floor, and chaos had started in the giant hole. The Werewolves were moving in really fast; the sound of weapons clashing and being used was constantly heard throughout, as well as screams of pain as they were hit.

Then, out from the right, a Werewolf's claw swung directly to hit the arm of Hikel. He managed to gather his aura out from the strange markings that were on his arm and wrap it around his forearm, blocking the attack.

The Werewolves were physically stronger than the vampires in nearly every way. Their attacks were deadly to them, and even their healing in most cases was better than them.

The vampires' only advantage was the blood aura and the abilities they could use.

"I never thought I would have to go against you guys again!" Hikel shouted as the aura exploded out with force, pushing the Werewolf away. It slid across the ground, with a few burn marks on its skin, but they were healing on the spot at an incredibly fast rate.

'I can't let these Werewolves directly hurt me. Otherwise, my body is going to have a hard time healing. If I use my power fully here as well, there is a good chance it's going to cause a big problem as well,' Hikel thought.

In the end, though, what choice did they have? Because if they didn't act, all of the Chronos would be dead, and then the only ones left as the Werewolves' target would be them.

From the small scuffle, they might have been stronger than the Werewolves on an individual basis, but if they were to go up against thirty all at once at this strength, Hikel felt like it wasn't a fight they could win.

Chapter 2402.2: The werewolves pit (Part 2)

The situation wasn't completely hopeless for the Chrono, as Hikel was noticing a change in their actions and the way that they fought. For one, their eyes were adjusting to the dark.

The Werewolves' eyes glowed slightly, allowing them to see where they were, and they weren't exactly the quietest of creatures either. With this, they knew their position, but more so what the Chrono were able to do now was to get in their own position.

They had formed groups, getting in a circle and covering each other's backs. They also made sure to stay away from the walls. The Werewolves were able to scale the walls with ease, while also bouncing off them to create a bigger attack.

It was smart of the Chrono; they were higher in numbers, and they weren't weak with their weapons. Fighting like this, they were able to fight back.

'When I watch them in this situation, it's clear that they have been through this before,' Hikel thought. 'The Chrono, they knew that when the sun set this hell would descend upon them, which also means some of them survived this.'

Some of the Chrono were incredibly skillful, one with two daggers, and sliced the chest of a Werewolf multiple times while blocking the claws from hitting his allies. Still, there were two big issues.

The strikes weren't enough to kill the Werewolves, allowing them to just heal away. Hikel knew there was another big issue as well, their almost unlimited stamina, which would allow them to fight at full strength from beginning to end. Making Hikel wonder when this would all stop.

A Werewolf had attempted to grab Hikel who managed to duck down, gathering the aura in his hand, he made a mini drill. Now with absolute blood control, he could control blood to a greater degree and he was taking a leaf out of Quinn's book.

Shoving his fist forward towards the chest, the blood spun, breaking through the tough skin of the Werewolf.

'I am not just any vampire, I am a vampire original!' Hikel burst into the chest and when his hand was on the inside, he used his explosive power right next to the Werewolf's heart.

It was a small but powerful explosion on the side that destroyed the heart, causing the body's muscles to go limp. Pulling his hand out, the Werewolf's body fell to the floor.

'That's one down, but that Werewolf was a bit wilder compared to the others I've been watching. It won't be that easy.'

There was another thing that Hikel noticed as well, which allowed him to fight one of the Werewolves on their own, and that was that the others were waiting. After killing the Chrono, rather than going to the next for the kill, they immediately went to feast on those that they had just killed.

Using their large teeth and mouths, they were eating at a fast rate, and when most of the body was eaten, their eyes looked as if they bulged a bit more, along with their muscles growing slightly bigger before resiting back down again.

The other Chrono's didn't dare attack because their aim wasn't trying to kill all of the Werewolves, but just trying to survive.

The group had spread out in the large area, and elsewhere, Chris had also had his run-in with one of the Werewolves. Its two large claws swung at Chris, who was able to avoid them, then throwing out a fist he used the third stage of Qi.

It hit the Wolf in the chest, but hardly moved it back at all. 'They have great physical strength just like me, am I really going to have to face them with everything I have!' Chris thought, as he reached out and grabbed onto the wrist of the Werewolf.

His muscles were bulging, the veins could be seen going through his body, and the Qi was surging from within.

'If I change into my own Werewolf form in front of all of these Chrono, then they're going to start attacking me as well, and besides, I need to prove I'm a lot stronger than these guys!'

Chris pulled in the Werewolf instead of pushing away, and when he did he lifted his leg and kicked it right in the stomach. Letting go of the Werewolf's wrist, it went flying and crashing into the side of the cave wall.

"That's not going to be enough to kill it," one of the Chrono's said, as he handed Chris a big curved weapon. It was gigantic and nearly as big as him, but with his size and strength, it was easy for him to hold it.

Surprisingly, the Chrono seemed to have no problem holding it as well, but was using his own weapon, a spear.

"Thanks," Chris said.

Behind him, there were a group of five Chrono, one of them was badly hurt, having a big cut on his arm, a claw mark that had ripped through the muscle, but he was still standing and fighting.

Another Werewolf had come toward them; seeing this, Chris shielded the weapon with both of his hands, he drew power from the weapon, while also adding his own Qi into the weapon, and with all his strength, he swung the blade.

The Werewolf still managed to react quickly, using its claws to clash with the bladed part of the blade. The strength, though, was also too much for the Werewolf as it too went flying off into the distance, crashing into another part of the wall.

The Chrono were stunned by the strength of the stranger and even gave a thumbs up.

"It's good to know that there is someone strong with us this time," one of the Chrono smiled.

"So what's going on, why are these attacking us, and how do we get rid of them all?" Chris asked. He could see that Hikel hadn't used his full power yet, and until he did, he wouldn't either.

"...it's your first time going through this, right? What is going on, I think you can see for yourself. These creatures are what we have had to deal with every night. Sometimes more of us get added, like you, to increase our numbers but that doesn't help the situation anyway.

"You see, these demons, they eat us after killing us, allowing them to grow stronger. So every day we survive, the next day is even harder for us. So when you say get rid of them, that seems like an impossible task, we just need to survive until they go back up," a Chrono answered.

"And when is that?" Chris asked.

"When the sun rises again."

The answer was somewhat expected; he was just hoping that wasn't the case. In this single night, how many would survive, how many had already died in the first few minutes, and how many more would?

Now he could see why the Chrono called this hell. Looking around, though, Chris was looking for a particular person, but they were nowhere to be found.

'Where the heck is Russ?'

For updates for MVS and future works, please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS, or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to

Chapter 2403.3: The Werewolves pit (Part 3)

When the werewolves started to crawl into the deep pit, Russ could feel the fear coming from his two teammates. He wasn't even close to them but their energy surrounding them was unsettling to say the least. It was as if they were telling him that this wasn't something that could easily be dealt with.

Which was why his cautious side had come out. In the first place, he was already more cautious compared to others. That was just how he was due to the way he had grown up. Not wishing to get picked out, he had turned into a creature that looked more like a Chrono. He was blending in with the others.

He watched carefully as the werewolves attacked using their big claws, their strength, speed and healing capabilities, all while deciding what would be the best way to take them out.

Similar to Sil, it was an advantage of Russ' power, as long as there were those around him with memories of strong beings, he could try and counter the current threat. After observing the Werewolves for a while, he had come to a conclusion.

Shadow began to surround Russ' body and soon after his body started to sink into the ground. He was using the shadow travel skill from Quinn's powers. With how dark it was, people weren't even able to see the shadow on the ground.

Even the werewolves would ignore him now and continue to attack the others. This was the conclusion he had come up with, to not transform into anything, and to not take part in the fight.

Using the shadow travel to move away, Russ was moving to the areas where there was less fighting. It was an extremely large area so there were plenty of pockets where no one would be inside.

Although due to the large fights that were taking place, both werewolves and Chronos were being chucked all over the place. If the area was filled then people would be getting injured left, right, and centre just due to the large attacks and from the shockwaves of power that were going about.

Russ continued to observe, but he wasn't observing his teammates. Even though he had quickly come to the same conclusion as them. There were two options, they either needed to help the Chrono fight or use all of their strength to defeat the werewolves.

The problem with the latter, was if there were more enemies for them to face, and they hadn't even come across the one that was named the demon king. How were they meant to help Quinn if they were exhausted, they would just be getting in Quinn's way rather than helping him.

Through his observations, he noticed that the werewolves weren't heading to one area, nor were any of the Chrono. It was the area they had entered from. Just from a glance, he could tell the reason why as well, it was because the Champion Chrono Shinto, was still standing there.

He was standing around a foot into the pit. The cellar they were in, the entrance was slightly curved along with the shape of the pit, and it was an extremely wide area to cover.

Yet not a single Chrono had attempted to run back into the cellar, nor had any of the werewolves gone to that particular area.

'The werewolves, although they look like wild beasts that are just acting on instinct, maybe that isn't the case.' Russ thought. 'Otherwise some would have gone after him as well. If they haven't, then it can only mean that they know his strength.'

'Even the powerful werewolves are afraid of going near there. It was a good thing that we hadn't tried to face him directly.'

As time was passing Russ needed to mark a decision on how he would help out in all of this, more Chronos were dying and even though they might have been able to survive the rounds before, it seemed that either the werewolves were too strong for them this time, or there just weren't as many of them as there were the last times they had gone through all of this.

The least he could do was lower their numbers before they all needed to take part. That was until a thought had come into his mind.

'This should work out perfectly.'

Russ continued to use the shadow travel and he was moving slowly to the entrance. Rather than go where Shinto was standing, he went to one of the edges. Then going beyond Russ had actually made it back into the cellar area, and he had done so without Shinto realising.

He was either too focused on the fight going on, or Quinn's shadow travel really was that effective.

'Heck, if I've made it this far, should I just go ahead and head to the staircase. There should be no one blocking it anymore, so I can get out of this place.' Russ thought.

The thought went out of his head though, as there was a problem that he wouldn't be able to solve on his own. One, where would he go, he was in another world where perhaps everything wanted to kill him.

He was better off staying with those that wouldn't try and take his head off. The second reason was how would he even get back? Their ticket was either Peter or someone else figuring out some other way.

Deciding against the idea, Russ continued on with his original plan. Once far enough in the cellar he came out from his shadow travel skill, and used his powers once more, to summon a certain someone.

Shinto, for a while, had been looking through the crowd as best he could, he was searching for someone through the fights. However, the Chrono didn't have as good eyesight at night as the vampires or Werewolves did.

So he was only able to see the faces of the Chrono carefully when flashes of light would come from the attacks of the weapons and so on.

'I can't see him, did I just make him up? Have so many years gone by that I've really gone mad?' Shinto thought.

He wanted to go in further to get a closer look, but he was not to leave his post. The sound of footsteps was then heard from behind him. There shouldn't have been anyone behind him, he had checked before.

A part of him thought it might have been a trick, if he looked behind him, maybe someone would run through at that moment, but the temptation was too much, and there was a chance someone might have come in from the outside.

Turning his head, one word left his mouth.

"Hinto!"

Not replying back, not saying anything, Hinto ran forward right past Shinto, and into the mess of the fight that was going on. A werewolf came right at him, and with one of his Katana blades he swung down deflecting the attack to the ground, then with the other blade covered in black flames, he struck right at the neck of the werewolf.

The werewolf was able to pull back in time and jump away, but the black flames stayed on its neck and continued to burn, as it continued to scream in pain.

"That's definitely Hinto, that's his skills and his attacks, how did he end up here... and now he was to fight against them." Shinto said to himself, his hands by his side were shaking, his fingers were twitching.

The use of the black flames were what had confirmed it to him. Not every Chrono could use this power, it was only the strongest and what were the chances of finding someone who looked like him, used the same weapons as him, and also were able to use the black flames.

The werewolf that had been attacked was in a desperate state. The Black flames were spreading from its neck and had already reached half of its face. It had tried to brush them away but the flames instead just spread to their hand and now were a part of it as well.

It was almost as if the Werewolf had realised at that point, that there was no way for it to get rid of the flames. A desperate attempt was made and it charged forward and attack. It ran on all fours and leapt up in the air. As it did, an axe came flying through the air, slashing right through the werewolf's neck. Its head fell to the floor along with its body sliding on the ground.

Shinto was seen huffing and panting, with one less axe in his hand. The champion had joined the fight, and Russ' plan had worked perfectly.

Chapter 2404.1: The Champion's fate (Part 1)

After hearing the story of these two being related, Russ had quickly figured out that the two of them had a connection. The main issue was if anyone talked to the Hinto that he made, one would quickly realise that it wasn't the real Hinto.

When that happened, it would mean that the champion that was suddenly on their side, might go against them. In this case though, where they were in the middle of fighting and there was no time to ask any questions, it was perfect.

'Now we can see just how strong this champion is.' Russ thought. 'Judging from his first attack, we might have someone who can deal with the werewolves pretty well.'

Both Hikel and Chris had decided to go for a different tactic now they knew what was going on. They were doing their best to injure the werewolves in a way that the Chrono could deal with them.

This way, they would also be able to use their energy in saving them. Keeping the high numbers of the strong Chrono would help them out in the long run and it seemed to be working.

The two groups of five that Hikel and Chris had surrounded themselves with had yet to lose a single member. There was almost an uplifting feeling with them by their side, unfortunately it wasn't so much the case for the other groups.

They were slowly losing men one after the other, the amount of Chrono in the pit was already half the number that there were originally, while only around five werewolves had been killed in total, making the numbers even but not the power level.

Two werewolves were in the middle of feasting on the Chrono group they had just killed. Interrupting them, spinning in with his two swords was Hinto. He swung the black flame swords right at both of the werewolves trying to get a kill from the get go.

They were quick to act, lifting up their claws and deflecting the swords. Their strength was greater than that of the last one he had faced, and the single strike wasn't strong enough. At the same time the black flames didn't stick to the claws, only when it made a flesh wound.

Immediately, one of the werewolves pounced from its position. It crushed the ground underneath it as it had used so much force. Hinto had no choice but to use two of his swords to block the attack.

His body was sent skidding across the ground. He wanted to force his way out of the situation, to fling the claws away, but the werewolf's strength was incredible.

The flames around the sword started to grow in size, and he was hoping that somehow it would touch the skin of the werewolf.

From the side, the other werewolf had already leapt in the air and was ready for the attack. It had one of its hands held by its side and swung it out wide. Before it reached Hinto, another axe came down, smashing the werewolf's claw into the ground.

Right after that, another axe slammed in its chest. It was in deep, and at that moment the flames ignited for a second, sending an additional force of power as it sent the werewolf flying right back into the wall. The whole pit shook from the force of the crash.

Many of the werewolves had been sent flying by Chris, but they had always recovered, getting back up, ready to fight again, but with this attack, the werewolf wasn't getting back up, at least not so soon.

"I'm sorry for being a bit late Hinto, but I went to get my other axe back." Shinto said, with a large smile on his face.

The werewolf that Shinto was fighting against was distracted by what it had seen. Imparting the flames on his sword once more, he had made it so it blocked the vision between the two, as a type of distraction.

The werewolf went back a bit, and soon through the black flames, two of the swords could be seen swinging down. The werewolf was fast, hitting away each of the strikes one by one, but the swordsmanship from Hinto was top class.

He was getting closer and closer to touching the skin, and eventually small cuts were made on the forearms and shoulders of the werewolf. The fight still looked even between the two, with one attacking and the other blocking. That was until the black flames started to cover the entirety of the werewolf's body.

It was unable to heal from these strange flames, and it could feel pain all over. It was getting weaker, to the point where a clean swing with both of the swords towards the neck had sliced the werewolf's head off, finally killing it.

"I see that your skill's haven't dulled." Shinto said. "You can still produce those flames better than any Chrono that has ever existed and you're skillful with the sword, but as you can see I haven't been sitting doing nothing. I can produce the black flames as well."

The black flames lit up on Shinto's two axes but it was only for the moment.

"I can't keep them on like you, but with my strength it has continued to grow leaps and bounds, and I only need a moment to strike with the black flames. I think I can proudly say that I have surpassed you."

Being from the red space, where beings constantly fought among each other and proved their strength at every corner, Shinto had wanted to say these words to his brother for a long time.

Seeing him fight just then, he was sure of it, that he could beat his brother in a fight, and he wanted his brother to be proud of him. Besides all of that there were more important things now. With the two of them, they needed to get out of here.

Hinto continued to move forward not saying anything as they went to face the werewolves, Shinto wanted to say more, talk or suggest that they go back through the staircase, but he knew it would be useless, there was no escaping from this place, not unless they were willing to up against the ruler of it all.

As each group fought against the werewolves with all their strength, they were finding it harder to kill any more. Now the werewolves had teamed up, they were higher in numbers, and they were able to make up for each other's weaknesses and openings.

Everyone was left on the defensive, it seemed they also figured out that the black fire was something to be careful of. The only one that was able to still do damage while attacking was Shinto due to his brute strength with each attack.

'That champion has incredible strength, and a good sense of timing and when to attack.' Hikel thought. 'It's a good thing we didn't go up against him, and it looks like Russ has been playing a few tricks.'

Eventually each group had been forced into the centre, and now all three groups along with the remaining Chrono were back to back fighting against the werewolves.

The other Chrono soon recognised the Champion was fighting by their side, but why, out of all times, why had he chosen to fight side by side with them now. They wanted to ask, but were too busy fighting for their lives.

"I don't think I can last much longer, we must still have around five hours till sunrise." One of the Chronos said.

With the situation as it was, Hikel and Chris thought it might be time for them to fight at full strength and get out of here, but that was when another stepped up to the task.

"Everyone get ready to make a run for it, and head to the staircase, if you head up you'll find your way out. I'll deal with this." Shinto lifted both of his axes up in the air, ready to do something he should have done a long time ago.

Chapter 2405.2: The Champion's fate (Part 2)

The second group of Quinn's support team consisted of Sil, Peter and Edvard. The three of them were using Sil's powerful teleportation powers to get through the universe.

Sil was able to move the entirety of the Blade family to another planet, so moving just the three of them around the place was a task he was able to do. Only he would have to be a little careful as he did need to keep his MC cells if there was a fight going on, so they weren't just aimlessly teleporting around the place, they needed to come up with a plan.

The first thing the group did was teleport themselves out of the large area they were in. They had come out on a large mountain, and now the three of them were looking at the place they had just gotten out of.

"What is that, it looks like a giant city of some sort?" Edvard said.

"That is the place where we just were." Sil replied.

Although it was quite clear what they were looking at was a city, where a great civilisation used to live, most of it had been destroyed. There were only remnants of the city left as if there had been some type of war.

Only the centre of the city remained. There was a giant building supported by large pillars made out of a dark coloured material. It looked like something that had been built out of Roman times.

It was incredibly long and wide with the top of it covered, so they had no idea what was inside, but several football pitches could easily be fit in. It made them wonder why this of all places was left standing.

On top of that, on the structure in the centre of it all, there was a tower with an incredibly large bell on top. The tower and the bell itself didn't have a hint of any destruction or natural decay on it at all. Unlike the rest of the city.

"The entire place looks lifeless, yet there were all of those beings with us. It does make me wonder what's going on." Edvard commented.

"We can't worry about them, we need to find Quinn." Peter quickly said, reminding all of them what the true goal was.

"You're right." Edvard said. "I was thinking, aren't you a subclass created by Quinn. If that's the case, shouldn't you two have a connection? I know he might be really far away so you can't feel it, but if we use your and Sil's powers somehow, can't we find him?"

Peter shook his head.

"It's been a long time since we had a connection like that." Peter answered. "When Quinn evolved, the connection went, the two of us separated. It doesn't even feel like we're the same thing anymore."

It was surprising for Edvard to hear that, with how Loyal Peter was, he thought there still would be a connection. If what Peter said was true, then Peter's loyalty actually went a lot deeper than just their blood connection. It was amazing how Quinn was able to gather such good people around him.

"I have a plan." Sil suggested. "I will use a super hearing ability, and sense where the fights are taking place as well as the conversations to see if there is anything going on. All of the places of interest we'll teleport to and see what we can find."

"We'll keep on doing this. It might take a while, but it's better than going blind and we might find information quicker than we think."

Since the other two didn't have a better plan, they decided to go ahead. Sil brought out his book and changed his abilities. As he focused he closed his eyes, and he was listening in to all the conversations on the current planet they were on.

If he didn't hear anything he focused and tried to listen further. It was a hard thing to do even with super hearing, because one had to block out all of the noises that they didn't want to hear.

In some cases it would have been an impossible task but the ability itself allowed him to more so pinpoint on what he wanted to hear. Opening his eyes he seemed to be done.

The book lit up once again, seemingly changing abilities and the others wondered if something had happened. Before they knew it, a clone of Sil had appeared.

"It's a precaution." Sil explained. "The clone will stay here, and he has a telepathy ability as well. If there is trouble he'll report back to me, and with him here it should be easier for us to get back to the others."

With that, Sil changed his abilities once more and teleported away with the others, with a thought left in his mind. There was something he didn't like that he heard, he just hoped the others would be okay without them.

The attacks from the werewolves were relentless and they didn't even have to attack close range. Some were able to swing their arms and large energy attacks emitted from their hands and went out towards them.

Hikel and Chris were doing their best to deal with these using their powers. At the same time, Shinto had lifted up both of his axes, he was powering them up ready for an attack and that's when he noticed the other two.

'They aren't Chronos, how did they even get in here, and what powers are they using?' Shinto thought.

He was already in the middle of his attack though, and it didn't matter now anyway, he was going against the demons and would be treated as a traitor.

Shinto shifted forward ahead of everyone slightly, he was facing toward the cellar where they had entered from. Both of the axes were swung down towards the ground, and just a moment before they hit the bottom, they lit up with the same black flames that were on Hinto's swords.

The axes crashed on the ground and a wave of black energy was sent out. The wave of energy looked more like a wave of black flames as it went and hit all of the werewolves in the direction of the attack.

It picked them up from their feet, and lifted them in the air. The black flames were burning against the skin and all of them had crashed into the walls.

"Run now!" Shinto shouted.

The Chronos didn't have to be told twice. Shinto turned around, as his attack had only hurt half of the werewolves that were facing one side. The Chronos, as well as Chris and Hikel, ran toward the cellar that they were in before.

They allowed for Shinto and Hinto to try and deal with the werewolves at their back.

The group ran and ran, however before they reached the staircase, the whole ground was rumbling.

The floor shook as such weight had slammed into the floor, and bloodlust had filled the entire pit. Shinto hadn't even turned around but he could feel his blood trying to escape trying to run away.

"The exit, it's been blocked!" One of the Chronos shouted.

Shinto didn't even have to turn around, because he knew exactly who had arrived.

"It's... the demon king."

For updates for MVS and future works, please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS, or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I'll reply back.

Chapter 2406.1: The Werewolf king (Part 1)

The Chrono along with Hikel and Chris were running toward the large underground cellar they had entered from, they were sprinting towards it like their life depended on it. They were all fast beings, so it shouldn't have taken them long to reach the other side, yet something strange had happened which ended up affecting them all.

After taking a few steps, the entire air around them started to move rapidly, it felt as if it was increasing and a tremendous amount of pressure was being put on them all, including that of Chris and Hikel.

The Chrono were finding it incredibly hard to move and their movements had come to a snail's pace. For Chris and Hikel they were able to force themselves through the pressure but something in their bodies was telling them it wasn't a good idea for them to do so, and they were right.

Moments later, a large figure came crashing down right in front of the cellar. Parts of the ground were lifted up from the sheer weight and force of the object that had come crashing down.

Many of them had to turn away, and cover their eyes to avoid getting dust inside.

'What was that?' Hikel thought. 'The pit is incredibly sturdy, even with the attacks from the champion and Chris it didn't shake that much.'

'The land and the area all around us including the ground seem to either be made of an incredibly strong material or all of it has been reinforced by something. Either way, to create this big of a mess and that much destruction... what happened?'

The first thing everyone could see through the dust were the glowing red eyes. They were large in size, around the size of a human head, and they were piercing red, breaking through the heavy dust. As it started to settle, they soon could see the large giant figure that was standing there.

"Is that..." Hikel's bottom lip was quivering, because he didn't even have the right words to explain what he was seeing in front of him right now. "Is that a werewolf?"

It almost felt wrong for him to call it that, because in all of his history, all of the time he had lived, he had never come across a werewolf that looked like this, that was even if he could call it that.

Werewolves in the first place were relatively large creatures, with their long limbs if they stood up they would be around 8 feet or so. Although this being couldn't be called gigantic for a werewolf, it was certainly large, at least being 12 feet in height.

It wasn't just tall though as the figure was muscular as well, it had a large upper chest and big thighs. Most of the body looked exactly like that of a werewolf with large clawed hands and feet. It also had large canines that could rip anything to shreds and a snout that stuck outward.

Although there were many similarities to the werewolves there were also quite a few differences. For one the fur on its body, there were two types of fur. Black fur covered the creature from head to toe.

Yet, its muscular forearms, chest, abs and overall structure could still be seen bulging through the fur since it was fine on its body. Around its neck though, the werewolf had more of a mane like that of a lion.

The fur was thick covering its face and neck and went down its back almost like a type of bushy ponytail. On its shoulders, sticking through the fur though, were small hardened spikes, growths from the body of the creature itself. They looked hardened and deadly sharp just like the horns that were both sticking out of the werewolf's head.

It was because of all these features that Hikel found it hard to call it a werewolf but what else could he call it. What he might have been looking at right now, was the very god of werewolves or, maybe some strange mutation of one.

Shinto, had frozen in place as well, the appearance was one that he recognised well because it was the current one he was under, the demon king of the area they were in.

"Unzoku... the demon king which devours all." Shinto mumbled.

Although it was only a mumble, the others had heard what Shinto said. They had found the one they were looking for, and right now, they weren't exactly sure if it was something that they should be happy about or not.

"What do we have here." Unzoku said. His voice was extremely low, to the point where it shook even the insides of those around. For some, if they heard his voice it would make them vomit on the spot due to the vibrations and bass from his voice.

"Today was the day where I planned to have a big feast, to devour the strongest that remained. I thought by now that there would only be a final few, yet here I see there are still plenty of you Chrono left." Unzoku spoke.

Not only that, Unzoku could see those that had fallen, and he could see that there were a few he didn't quite recognise as well. Seeing this, he decided to act rather quickly, to see whether or not it was something worth his time.

He hadn't moved, instead the look on his face had changed, his eyes, the whole manner of his was a little more serious compared to before. From above the pit, all of the air that was on the outside started to enter.

The redness that was naturally in the air was getting thicker and thicker, the energy was condensing.

'He can control the energy that's in the air?' Chris was the first to realise this. He had improved his sensitivity to energy and Qi, since it was one of his forte's. He had found out about the energy in the air as soon as they arrived but found no way that he could use it. To see a being controlling it like so, it was scary because the energy that filled the air, it felt like it was endless and filled the whole universe in the area that they were in.

When the red energy entered, it did a great push in the centre, The Chrono found themselves being lifted off their feet and pushed to the very edge. They had attempted to strike back with their weapons to fight back but they were unable to and eventually found themselves against the wall of the pit.

They were being held and pushed back. However, there were a few that had been unaffected by the energy that were standing in the centre, four individuals to be exact. Chirs, Hikel, Shinto and Hinto were able to fight back against the red energy. They had surrounded themselves with power that dispersed the energy around them, slicing through it.

"What is this... there are intruders that have come down here... how is that even possible?" Unzoku said, but his eyes were focused not on the intruders, it was on someone else, because he couldn't quite believe that he was seeing him in the pit.

"Shinto... the champion, have you finally decided to betray us?"

Chapter 2407.2: The Werewolf king (Part 2)

The control of the energy in the air was shocking to all, and that included the Chrono, they had never seen anything like that, and even now while they were struggling it felt like they could do nothing and it was just against the air that was around them.

Even the other's felt like they would have been swept up if they didn't act.

The amazing thing was, the Chrono weren't even weak, yet they were being held back by this energy that was just naturally in the air. It was frightening to think what more this demon king Unzoku could do with it. The group was going against the unknown here, and they had been doing it the entire time.

'If we were all to use our full strength, would we be able to take on this demon king?' Hikel thought. 'Is this what world Quinn went to, is this the type of beings that he was prepared to face.'

There was a thump in Hikel's chest but the blood was flowing through him as he thought of the situation. The markings that were branded over his face, and his arms were starting to glow a little, causing a deep stinging pain for Hikel.

'I went through a lot to get here, and I did so I wouldn't be a burden. I will hold off on creating a signal for the others to come back just yet.' Hikel decided.

The signal of energy was meant to be a signal for them having found Quinn in the first place, not for needing help. As an original vampire, Hikel had his sense of pride, how could he give up on fighting just from one's appearance.

With everything going on, there was one person who was somewhat sitting back and not in a stressful situation as they watched everything and that was Russ. He had decided to go deep into the cellar towards the staircase.

Not too far, where his powers would still work having summoned Hinto, while staying far enough away to where one might not notice him. He was using the shadow travel skill anyway so it was unlikely they would notice him in the first place.

'So this must have been the one I could sense in that Champion's memory.' Russ thought. 'I can't believe this world really is as menacing as they said. In that person's mind there was more than one that I was unable to summon, and this must have been one of them'

Due to Russ knowing he was unable to summon them, he had an idea of the great power the demon king, and Immortui, most likely had. If all else failed, he still had his two trump cards by his side, but who knew whether they would also be strong enough.

'With the three of them against that demon king, there should be no reason for me to get involved.' Russ thought.

All of the attention of Unzoku had gone onto Shinto. He was staring at him deeply as if he didn't care for the intruders.

"After all this time, why would you choose to go against me now?" Unzoku thought. "You should know my power better than anyone else. If you wished to best me, then you should have tried from the beginning."

As Unzoku was speaking, saliva was dripping out from his mouth between his fangs. When the saliva dropped onto the floor, it looked as if it had melted on the ground but the spit wasn't acidic, it was just because even his saliva had so much condensed energy it affected the floor.

Shinto gripped his two axes carefully, and thought about what Unzoku was saying, there was a reason for his nickname the demon king, the devourer.

Werewolves were creatures that got stronger based on what they ate, however there was a limit to that. Once they had reached a certain point, they would have to eat higher and stronger beings in order to continue to grow.

It was the whole reason for the pit to exist in the first place. The Chrono were a strong race, and they had great potential. In order to bring out that potential, werewolves were pitted against them every night. The Chrono were made to fight for their lives and grow stronger each night they survived.

At the same time, those that didn't survive were consumed by the weaker werewolves making them stronger. Shinto had witnessed it every night, he had witnessed his people get shipped into this place and forced to comply with it all.

He watched again and again, unable to do anything. It was the same result though, towards the end, when the remaining Chrono survived and had survived several nights, that's when Unzoku would arrive. He would feast on the strongest Chrono in hopes that it would increase his strength.

In reality, Shinto thought it was useless. He felt that Unzoku was already a being far above any of the other Chrono, he was either just doing it for fun, or in hopes that one day there would be a feast worthy enough for him.

Unzoku's large tongue came out of his mouth and started to swirl around his large teeth.

"You know, I always wanted to eat you, from day one. I waited and waited for you to grow stronger, you Shinto are my hope, my hope that I will finally have a meal that will satisfy me and bring me to the next level!"

There was a part that had been missed out though, the fact that Immortui had told him not to eat any of the champions, due to them being great allies in the up and coming war against the celestials.

'Tst... Immortui, probably is just worried that if I eat too much that I might even grow stronger than him... I could always claim it was an accident.' Unzoku thought.

While staring at Shinto, he saw him glance at the Chrono to his right. It had allowed for a moment for Unzoku's attention to change. It was strange, perhaps these strangers and Shinto made sense to survive his red energy push but another Chrono.

If there was one, then it meant that they at least needed to be as strong as Shinto. When he took a deep stare at the Chrono, his eyes widened slightly.

"What is this... is this the reason why you choose to betray us!" Unzoku started to laugh. "I see, the two of you were related, but this is impossible, it is impossible for him to be here. Shinto, it looks like you are being tricked, the one that is by your side. It is impossible for you brother to be here."

Shinto didn't know what to do, whether to strike now, or listen to the ramblings, but he was sure whatever the demon king was going to say was all just to confuse him.

"You see, your brother was taken by the celestials, by the gods long ago... and your brother... is dead. That right there is a fake." Unzoku said.

"A fake?" Shinto said, turning his head. He didn't want to believe it, after all this time, and why would his brother be taken by the celestials. At the same time though, he did feel like something was off about Hinto.

"Let me prove it to you." Unzoku flicked his finger, and out came a sharp nail. It was faster than a bullet and went right through Hinto's head, in doing so, the body fell to the floor, it had been defeated by a single flick, by a single finger nail that was now stuck in the ground.

Shinto was ready to fight, to rage at his brother's death until the body right in front of him started to disappear in front of his eyes.

Russ, who was still far back watching this all, started to worry a bit.

'Crap... this situation might have taken a turn for the worse, we might now have to go up against that demon king and the champion!'

Chapter 2408: Going all out

One flick of a finger and the large nail from Unzoku had come flying off. That was all it took to kill Hinto. It was an impressive feat that showed somewhat the strength of the demon king already.

Unlike the clones that Quinn or Sil would make, Russ' creations were different. Both Sil's as well as Quinn's clones needed to only be hit a few times for them to disappear. They weren't like the real thing.

Sil's were closer and better than Quinn's clones, since they would have the same amount of power output and could survive a few hits here and there, but still they weren't a match for the original.

Whereas, Russ's creations were completely different. They were sturdy, they could take several hits and were close to being as good as the real thing. In truth, they were as strong as the imagination that they were pulled from. That was the margin of error.

In some cases, if a person thought of a being as unbeatable, then Russ's version might even be stronger than the original. In this case, it was hard to know if the Hinto that Russ made was stronger or weaker since he had no point of reference.

Either way, Hinto would have been somewhat strong, and Russ doubted any of them there would be able to take out Hinto with a single blow. What was worse though, was not just the demon king, but now it was quite possible that Shinto, the one known as the champion, would be against them.

Shinto still hadn't said anything, he stood there still but unlike before where his gaze was ready to face Unzoku, instead he now was somewhat staring blankly into the middle of nowhere.

'After all this time... after all this time. I finally found Hinto again, and then he's gone just like that?' Shinto thought. 'When I first lost Hinto, honestly It was when I realised how much he meant to me.'

'Even though we seemed to always bicker and fight against each other, in the first place, the reason he was being chased was because of me. It was all my fault, I wanted to say sorry. After this was all over, I wanted to apologise but now, how am I meant to apologise.' Shinto thought.

"I already told you." Unzoku said, the red mist energy moved once again, pushing the Chronos on the side further into the wall. They all had cracks as their bodies went an inch deep into the wall.

A wave was sent out toward the now three, but just like before they were able to cut and slice through the energy that was coming towards them.

"Is there any reason for me to lie?" Unzoku said. "I don't care what happens to your family, and in my case, it's better if you do rebel, then I get to have a nice meal, but I am a truthful person. If you were to fight on your own accord then I would accept you, but for you to have been tricked. I wouldn't feel right taking your life for something that isn't even real."

It was a good point to make, Shinto knew it was true, why would Unzoku lie, unless he felt a fear, a fear for his life, but during the whole time he knew this person he had never seen the demon king show fear, not even to his creator Immortui. That was an even more ridiculous thought.

"How!" Shinto shouted. "How do you know about my brother, why would you even know about him, and it better be a good answer. I don't care if you're stronger than me, right now I saw you kill what I believe was my brother with my own eyes, and if I don't get a good answer, I will do everything in my power to take you down."

Hearing these fighting words from the champion, Unzoku couldn't help but chuckle, and for a second he thought about saying it was all made up. Because the thought of going against, and finally eating, the champion was so sweet in his mind. Yet, it was true what he said before.

He felt it was wrong for him to go against someone who was tricked.

"You know very well that Immortui has been keeping a track of the celestial world." Unzoku stated. "I'm sure, although you haven't been part of the plans, that you know what he has planned.

"On top of that you should know that the one that had put out a hit for Hinto was one of the other demon kings who was upset after his little outburst. Anyway, it turns out that Hinto had been working for the celestials, they nabbed him away and he has somewhat been working as a hitman for them."

Now, Chris was starting to understand a bit about what had happened that time they had faced Hinto.

"You see, that's what these celestials do. They just play with the lives of everyone without thinking about others, connections or consequences. They trick us, and force us to do their bidding.

"Sure you might say that we are doing the same thing, for us who have come to your world, but we are only here because they sent us here in the first place. If it wasn't here then it would have just been another place. Eventually they would have found a problem with you as well.

"This is why we are rising up to get rid of the Ancient Ones who rise up and treat all of our lives like nothing. The fact is, it is impossible for Hinto to be here, because our recent information stated that he was already dead!"

Shinto's heart started to thump louder, it was so strong it was almost painful. Although he couldn't see it, around his heart small black flames were appearing.

"That's why as soon as I saw Hinto here I knew it had to be a trick. Do you think it's a coincidence that there are invaders that we have never seen before here today. In all of the time we have been here, there has never been anyone but the Chrono! Think about it, do these people even look like inhabitants to you?"

"If it was my guess, these guys might have even been sent by the Ancient Ones to get rid of us!"

After finishing his sentence, the werewolves behind Unzoku howled into the air, and that's when Unzoku decided to howl into the air himself. He lifted his face, and even before he started to let out any noise at all, the entire pit started to shake. Even Chris and Hikel had to try and rebalance themselves; the shaking was more intense than they had felt before.

The low bass was affecting them, and it was almost as if they were unable to hear the howl. It was let out from Unzoku's mouth, screaming in an incredibly low pitch. As the sound resounded, the werewolves started to kneel down. Their bodies started to change.

The werewolves were already big for their size but their muscles looked as if they were growing bigger ripping out from part of their skin. Flesh and fur could be seen mixed into each other, their limbs having gotten longer and bigger.

These no longer looked like fantasy creatures from Earth but instead creatures that would have been from hell. Their eyes grew incredibly large covering most of the side of their face, all glowing red.

'The howl, it must have given all the other werewolves a boost.' Hikel thought. 'Just like the boost of an alpha.'

At the same time, Chris thought the demon king was making it clear as well, it was either he could fight with them or against them, and Unzoku was just giving a taste of what they would have to go against.

Shinto had made his decision, bending his legs he leapt up from his position and landed in front of Unzoku, then pivoting his feet he swirled around and now was facing both Chris and Hikel.

"It looks like we have a tough fight on our hands." Chris said.

"I think tough is an understatement." Hikel said, with his hands he ripped off the clothing from his body, and the armour as well, leaving only a pair of trousers on his body. Now it revealed his entire body and the strange dark red patterns could be seen all over, patched in certain areas.

"I think you have the right idea, we have to go all out from the beginning!" Chris also said, as his body started to transform, while doing so, the beast armour he was wearing was expanding on his body as well, rather than breaking a part.

It was specially made beast armour for his type. After all, being who he was, he was able to get certain crystals that would help him out. Chris had finished his transformation and he was in his full werewolf form.

"Now this is interesting, I never thought I would see one ever again." Unzoku said.

Chapter 2409: The Werewolf Glutton

The time had finally come for both Hikel and Chris to not hold back. They were unable to in this situation, and the first thing that Hikel did after he transformed was unleash his blood aura into the air.

It went up like an arrow crushing up high out of the pit. He had covered his whole body in aura as if trying to perform some type of ritual while sending only the top bit out of the pit.

Meanwhile, Chris had fully transformed into his werewolf form. Him being a naturally tall and large person meant that his werewolf form was taller as well. Next to these werewolves in the red space, Chris found himself around the same size as them, only they were of a different shape with a far bigger upper body. Yet for some reason, Chris didn't look any lesser than them, especially with the armour that was covering his body.

It was mainly chest and shoulder guards, allowing his arms to freely come out and be on display.

"This." Unzoku said, looking at Chris in particular. Although he was curious about the energy that had come from Hikel, he was far more fascinated by Chris, because he knew exactly what he was.

With his large nose, Unzoku took a sniff for a few times. Even if his eyes would fail him then he was sure that his sense of smell wouldn't.

"You are... I thought they had all disappeared in the golden space. If I had known, then I would have tried making contact with you earlier. Makes me wonder if you are from the other side, and looking at you, I wonder what bloodline you are from?" Unzoku asked.

Chris was hesitant to go in for the first attack, due to the army of werewolves that were around him. However, he was even more confused by what Unzoku was even saying.

'I guess, our similarities in appearance, he must know a lot more about this werewolf stuff than me, not that I could care less. I was forced into having this type of body, and all I need to do is use it to get out of this situation.' Chris thought.

This was no time for standing around as it looked like the others had made their first move, and by others it was the group of deadly werewolves that had transformed. They began to run across the floor, their limbs being a lot looser than before.

The legs seemed to be the driver in their movement, as their arms dragged across the floor, but as they did they made quite deep scratches along the floor.

"How do you want to divide this up?" Hikel asked.

Chris looked at the werewolves, the big guy and also the Champion. They all looked too much and there was a lot for him to deal with. Due to his powers he felt like he only had two options.

"I... have a feeling that the big wolf might go easy on me, it seems he has a lot of questions for me, so there might be something I can find out!" Chris dashed forward.

He was heading right towards the werewolves that were coming at him, and he was a little bit faster than them. With each step, as Chris got closer, he was starting to feel something. His heart was thumping stronger, not in a painful way either. With each beat, a surge of energy was sent out to his body all the way to his finger tips. His senses, his muscles, everything felt lighter and sharper.

Never before, when fighting, had he felt like this, it was almost similar to an adrenaline rush, or the fourth stage of Qi he would use, but he wasn't currently using that either.

Unzoku was watching things carefully wondering how this could be.

For one, based on the form, and the evolution that Chris currently was at as a werewolf, he didn't look like he would be faster than his Glutton class werewolves he had created for the red space.

Werewolves, just like vampires, could also evolve, but when they did, they evolved into different classes. These classes at times had quite a bit of differences from each other, from the way a werewolf would look, to their abilities, and even certain speaking traits.

The Glutton class werewolf was a class that could be offered to only a few that would meet the requirements. Due to the nature of the red world, and how Unzoku wished to create a powerful army, every werewolf that was in the red world, apart from himself of course, was of the Glutton class.

Although Chris was a werewolf, he had originally thought he was just that, yet it had selected his class. After all, it was quite clear based on the power that was coming from him that he hadn't done werewolf things per se.

'The grey fur and the strength that's rising with him. This is not good, I should have noticed it sooner, this means he's a shapeshifter class, and the special trait of the shapeshifters is a boost in power the more werewolves there are in the area. A werewolf class that is meant to come out on top compared to the others.'

For a moment, Unzoku thought of the worst that could happen, but he quickly disregarded that fact. His werewolves had just received a boost in power from him,

and they had been feasting on the strong Chrono for a number of years. How could they be lesser than a werewolf he hadn't even heard off.

"I... trust you!" Chris said, as he bent down, and leapt up with all his might. The ground beneath crushed under his feet as he suddenly disappeared out of view. Using their noses, they could tell the smell was coming up from above, and looking up Chris was halfway up the pit from a single jump.

The rest of the werewolves were ready to do the same. They couldn't jump as high as Chris had done, but they could still jump up and climb the sides and as he fell back down, they would strike then.

Many had their eyes locked on Chris, when through the air, they could see large balls of blood aura. There were hundreds of them, just there in the air.

On the ground, Hikel's markings had lit up and his hands were raised above his head. Seeing the werewolves, he had a big smile before swinging them down. At the same time the large red balls fell from the sky, and it was almost impossible for the werewolves to avoid them due to how many of the red balls there were.

The red aura hit the werewolves but when hitting the skin, it did next to no damage, even though it was a powerful condensed aura. What Hikel was using right now, was the absolute blood control, it was how he was able to control so much blood, and use so much blood aura at the same time.

What he was using was similar to the 1000 blood swords, yet the condensed energy was made into the shape of swords for a reason, to try and deliver as much damage as possible, yet Hikel had chosen something that suited him more.

With his fingers, he snapped them, and at that moment all of the balls' aura lit up before they exploded at once, all at the same time. A large explosion filled the entire pit and it was shaking just as much as when Unzoku had entered the place.

There was a reason for Hikel's crude appearance. It wasn't due to the fact that Vincent's experiment had failed, it had very much succeeded, but for it to improve Hikel's strength by leaps and bounds, they needed him to have a power that was a lot stronger than just absolute blood control.

The absolute blood control did just that, allowing one to control blood aura freely, but Hikel had in mind using his abilities of explosive blood with the absolute blood control. The main issue being that he needed to use his actual blood. Often he would make small cuts on his hand, or rely on weapons that would have part of his blood in it.

This was quite a big issue if he wanted to use both together, which was why there needed to be a change in his body as well and this was the result. The markings were somewhat like permanent wounds on his body.

When using blood aura, part of his real blood would seep through the markings, mixing in with his blood aura no matter when he used it, allowing him to use his explosive powers at the same time.

"We... are not the same as we were before!" Hikel shouted.

At that moment, breaking through the smoke was the Champion Shinto coming right at him. At the same time, as the smoke cleared up, Chris could be seen with his hand drawn back, right above where Unzoku was.

Chapter 2410: A different type of Werewolf

The power was surging through Chris like never before, but he didn't let it get to his head, he already had a test of the power that Unzoku had, which was why he was still powering his body with the Qi he always had.

Breaking through the smoke, a glow could be seen surrounding his clawed hand ripping through the air and he was heading right for the demon king.

"Things are a lot more interesting than I thought!" Unzoku smiled, revealing a row of his back sharp teeth. He moved his hand till it was directly aimed at where Chris was coming towards him, then with his thumb in the palm of his hand, he flicked out.

Just like the attack before, a large nail came shooting out and went straight towards Chris. Having seen the simple impact that a nail could have, rather than save the strike for Unzoku directly, he had no choice but to swing his arm and clash with the nail mid air.

'All of this power, just from a simple flick of the nail!' Chris thought, as he pushed against the nail, the two were being held up in the air as shockwaves of power swirled around the two of them.

Unzoku, who had somewhat predicted this might happen, had another trick up his sleeve. The power in the air was swirling around, and it was heading for Chris. From the corner of his eyes he could see and feel what was coming toward him.

The fur around Chris' body started to move back and forth as if it was under water, but in reality it was being soaked in his Qi energy. Out from his arms the energy blasted out, and pushed away the red energy.

The extra burst allowed for Chris' nails to break through the single nail and split it into several pieces. The attack continued forward, one part of the nail cutting through his hide and cutting part of his face, while the rest of the nail crashed into the outer wall behind him.

Twisting his body, Chris then kicked the air with all his energy. There was nothing there, it was only the air, yet he had jumped off like there was some type of platform. Bursting him forward towards the wall, then off the wall Chris jumped again and now was coming at Unzoku from his side.

'I didn't just do nothing after what happened to Zero.' Chirs thought. 'The only thing I have left is my training. The thing that got me through everything, the goal to make myself stronger than before. If I can't beat those in front of me, then what the heck do I have left!'

After jumping off the side of the wall, Chris continued to move his legs, and each time they hit the air, he was getting another burst of energy, increasing the power

around him. What he was using now was a mix of the second stage and third stage of Qi.

With the third stage, Qi could be emitted out from one's body, with the second stage one could coat objects and items in Qi, making them take a shape. Using both of these things Chris was able to create small invisible platforms of energy for him to kick off from.

Increasing his speed, his power and his mobility while in the air. He could change directions with ease as well, and create barriers of defence for one to have to break through in order for an attack to hit him.

The biggest drawback was that it used up a lot of Qi to do this. Thankfully, Chris being who he was, he was a person that had plenty.

"Haha, so you dealt with a nail, well, now let's see you deal with the real thing!" Unzoku said, finally making a direct move himself, his hand swung back, and a large wind current could be felt.

Just from the movement of his hand, a small gravitational pull had been created breaking the ground beneath it. The finger nail that had been ripped off from before, had grown back and now all of the nails had even extended into sharp deadly claws.

Chris blasted towards him, giving himself an extra boost and at the same time Unzoku swung his hand at the perfect time to hit Chris' body. The swipe had been made and five large lines of white aura escaped from the nails. They ripped through everything, covering the entire air until it hit the side of the wall, shaking the whole pit.

If they weren't underground and it was just some type of building, the whole place would have collapsed. Instead though, a large chunk of the wall was now missing, with five lines that were in deep, too deep to see where the attack marks had even ended.

The big question though was what happened to Chris.

'I knew he wasn't a match for me, but I expected to feel some resistance... Was his power just for show?'

Once again, when his eyes were playing tricks on him, it was time for him to use his nose, and doing so he could still smell Chris was around somewhere. Like a flash directly in front of him, a red furred wolf was seen.

'Impo-'

Before Unzoku could finish his thought, Chris had burst through the air and right into Unzoku's stomach. All the extra power, all the strength Chris had, he knew that

this attack, this surprise, might be the only clean attack he would get so he needed to make the most of it.

Chris' claws had dug deep into the abdominals of Unzoku, and the blast of power lifted Unzoku off his feet and sent his entire body flying back toward the cellar. His body hit the top of the cellar breaking through and into the wall.

Parts of the wall fell now, closing off the entrance that they had come from, along with Unzoku's body. Meanwhile Chris was standing there just fine, without a single scratch on his body.

The armour that surrounded him was glowing a slightly silver colour, sparkling and that too started to fade down. Blood was dripping off from Chris' fur onto the ground, and he let out a big breath.

Through the whole thing, he was holding his breath trying his hardest to give it his all.

'That might only work once.' Chris thought.

He had used the fourth stage of Qi, turning his body into the red werewolf form. With the added boost of power and his Qi, the current Chris was the strongest he had ever been.

Yet he was fearful, fearful of taking an attack head on from Unzoku. Which was why he had used the demon tier armour he had in his possession. After the struggle of dealing with Erin and her armour, Chris knew how important beast equipment was in a fight.

Seeing how she had used its abilities so well, Chris was set on a task of creating an armour that could do the same thing. Working with his allies, Zenon as well as Logan, they were able to find a demon tier beast that could create armour of the same calibre.

At the right moment, Chris had phased through the attack, avoiding it completely, and then transformed into the red werewolf. Making his speed go up an entire other level. The multiple bursts in speed and strength would be unexpected for Unzoku and it had worked allowing Chris to get a big hit.

The rocks started to move slightly and as soon as Chris saw that, he started to swing his hands rapidly, Claws of aura were sent through the air, a barrage of them right at the rocks. They were being sliced up as it was hitting whatever it was trying to move from underneath them.

Chris continued to swing his arms one after another. Until another nail was shot out, it broke through the aura of strikes. As it headed to Chris he swung both of his arms, hitting it and causing it to crash into the ground.

In his stage 4 form he was more powerful than before allowing him to block it a lot easier.

"It seems that I'm learning new things every day." Unzoku's deep voice said. "A grey furred shapeshifter that can turn their fur red. Now that is something that I've never seen before. I can't wait to tear you limb from limb and find out what you are!"

Standing there, there wasn't a scratch on Unzoku's body. Making Chris wonder how he was going to win this fight.

Chapter 2411: Blood explosion

Before Chris and the demon king started to battle head to head, Hikel had displayed his newly found powers, mixing in his blood with his absolute blood control. He had created fist sized blood balls that came raining down on the enemy werewolves and blew up the entire area.

It was filled with smoke for a few moments. When the smoke started to settle, there was one person in particular who had come out wielding both axes by the side of his head.

"Tell me, what did you guys do to Hinto!" Shinto shouted at the top of his lungs, as he swung the axe towards the vampire. He quickly shifted and moved out of the way. He saw an opening and Hikel struck four times in one at his side.

The hits were heavy, filled with great power as red aura could be seen coming out from the other side, but Shinto's body was completely solid, and it hadn't even moved him. It was a surprise for Hikel.

One of the axes swung from the top, heading towards Hikel's head.

'This Chrono, he's fast, just as fast as me. It's no wonder he was the only person that was guarding that place. It's because he was the only one needed, he would have been able to get rid of all the Chrono by himself if need be.'

Raising both of his hands, his palm open, red aura spread out, and exploded with force. It sent Hikel back and the axe back as well. The two skidded across the floor. Using his explosion powers so close was still bad for him, and burn marks could be seen on his face.

Thankfully, he could heal small wounds like that, and his skin was going back to the way it used to be. From his right though, suddenly a large claw came right at him. It was a werewolf claw.

Immediately Hikel grabbed the wrist, but could feel the great strength behind the werewolf.

'These werewolves, they are a lot stronger than the ones I faced in the past.'

Looking at the werewolf, Hikel noticed something that was even stranger, and that was the limbs that were on its body. They had stretched out from the open flesh that could be seen.

The muscles had extended and now the arm was almost twice as long. Never had he seen a werewolf do something like this before, and Hikel could only imagine it was due to the influence of the power from Unzoku that he had used on them.

Still, he didn't have much time to think about what was happening, as other werewolves were jumping towards him from another side. Lifting up his leg he let out a side kick, and a ball of blood aura left his foot.

It slammed into the werewolf's chest and exploded sending it flying back.

'My attack from before, it managed to damage most of the werewolves, but they're just healing. Thankfully the wounds were quite deep, so not all of them are in the condition to fight just yet, but for only two of them to die after my attack. Fighting against them and the champion is going to be extremely difficult.'

Hikel could already see that Shinto had lifted his axe, and was charging up with a large strike.

"You damn celestials, why would you take him from me!" Shinto screamed and slammed his axe on the floor.

Still holding onto the other werewolf's wrist, Hikel had no choice, he used his aura and let off another explosion at close contact. The werewolf's entire claw was destroyed and fell off from its wrist, while it fell on its back.

Hikel's own hand wasn't in good condition either as it was extremely bloody.

'The whole point of getting the blood control skill was so I didn't have to use my powers at such a close range and suffer from the blow back, but here I am being forced into these situations!'

With two open palms again, Hikel started to move them in a circle motion and created two large circles of red aura, he then pushed it forward, and two vortex's of blood aura went right towards the axe strike.

As it hit, they both collided and the red aura exploded giving it an extra boost of power. However, it wasn't enough and the axe strike continued. The axe strike had hit Hikel right in the chest. Creating a large deep cut diagonally across his chest.

Behind Hikel on the wall, the same large diagonal strike was seen, with a small gap where Hikel's body had hit the strike.

"F*ck!" Hikel grabbed his chest as blood splattered out and onto the ground. The strike hadn't gone right through him, but it was a large and deep cut that would take a while to heal.

"I'm glad you didn't die from that, because I have so many things I want to ask you damned celestials!" Shinto said.

Hikel thought for a second about denying being a celestial, trying to talk his way out of the situation, but he wasn't really in a position to do that, and it didn't look like the champion would be willing to listen to him either.

'The beings on this planet, this Champion, that demon king, this isn't even Immortui that we are going up against.' Hikel thought. 'I can't believe it, for how long did vampires feel they had the right to rule because they were on top of the food chain?'

'If they saw this, those stubborn vampires would quickly realise how over their heads they really are. I think I might even be in over my head for this one. We are meant to help Quinn, how the heck are we meant to do that, when we're dying right now!'

Even after receiving a big blow, there was no time to recover. After Shinto had done such a large attack, now six of the werewolves had leapt up in the air, and were heading right for Hikel.

"You mutts, you were always good at striking when you sensed a moment of weakness." Hikel said

Blood aura had been gathering in his hands, and as it condensed it started to take shape. It wasn't a completely solid form like a sword, instead it was flexible.

'I don't like using creations that have been made by leaders of the past, but I haven't had time to come up with my own yet, so I'm just going to have to borrow this for now!'

In both of Hikel's hands were two blood whips, he swung them out, hitting the werewolves across their chest, and as they hit explosions went off, sending them away, but he wasn't just going to swing it once, Hikel continued to swing the whips.

While doing so, lines of blood aura would come out through the end. So even if the blood whip wasn't hitting them directly, the aura could be sent out, and with Hikel's power, large explosions were going off hitting the werewolves one after the other.

The red strikes also went toward Shinto, who would swing his axes hitting them and breaking them apart. Although he broke the aura, he was unable to stop the blood explosion ability.

Each time he used his axe to break the several red axe strikes, he was being hit by the explosions one after the other. Yet, he still looked absolutely fine, his body was intact, not suffering from these small attacks at all.

"Something like this wouldn't have been able to take out my brother!" Shinto shouted.

Elsewhere on the battlefield, the werewolf that had been hit by Hikel's explosion earlier, was just about to get up. To his side, though there was a large purple circle on the ground. From underneath a hand reached out, and went right through the werewolf.

A hand held onto the heart of the werewolf and soon flames started to melt the heart until there was nothing there.

'It seems like both of them are losing, whether I like it or not, I might have to join this thing and turn the tides. For now though, I'll continue taking these guys out one by one, while no one notices me.' Russ thought.

Chapter 2412: The potential of a Werewolf

The giant pit was the size of a few large arenas that had been put together. At first it didn't quite make sense due to how few people there were in the cellar, but as they found out that the cellar was used for more people it made some sense.

When the fighting started, it made even more sense. Since large scale skills, deadly weapons and werewolves were all battling against each other nearly every day. Yet, never had the large pit taken a beating like it had done today.

The pit looked nothing like it had looked before, it was completely destroyed left, right, and centre. There were large holes in some places, creating another pit. At the same time, the perfect circle hole, now had all sorts of different shapes as part of the wall was destroyed and more importantly, there seemed to no longer be any exit.

The cellar that led to the staircase, heading to the outside, had been destroyed and was covered in rubble. Due to all the fighting going on, it had collapsed completely. Now, the only clear entrance they could see was the hole above them.

For a moment, Chris was looking up at the large hole above, wondering how long it would take for him to escape out of here, or would he be stopped before that even happened. Having these thoughts in his head, even for a split second, he felt ashamed of himself.

He looked in front at the demon king Unzoku, who was completely unharmed, he only had a few pieces of rubble on his skin that fell off. The power of his steps would cause the ground to vibrate slightly, shaking off everything that was on his body.

'Hikel is doing a good job keeping the werewolves off my back and that Champion busy, which means that I need to do my part as well.'

Before Unzoku could say anything, or gather his surrounding energy, Chris ran forward, instead of running in a straight line though, he was using his Qi to create platforms, and it looked like he was pouncing from side to side in the air.

He pounced quickly from one area to another going across Unzoku's side, and let out his claws to rip through the side of his skin. Not checking how much damage had been done, or whether or not Unzoku was in a position to strike, Chris pounced again striking the demon king's back this time.

Like a pinball, Chris was bouncing all over Unzoku's body, and was letting his claws do the work. The direct physical attacks were doing the most damage, as he could feel his claws ripping through the skin.

'I have to keep attacking, I have to keep moving as much as I can.' Chris thought, he was just focusing as he attacked whatever he could see.

Moving as fast as he could, even what he was seeing was a relative blur to Chris, he was unable to process it, yet he was attacking by instinct with all of his power.

'I can feel it, the energy around me is moving, that means he's planning to attack!' Chris thought.

His armour started to light up, and just as Chris had guessed, Unzoku's claw was swung out. It completely missed as it went through the air, destroying more of the arena around them.

"You really are an interesting one, I am no slower than you, yet you are still able to avoid my attack!" Unzoku said.

Despite missing all of his attacks, despite being hit non stop for the last minute or so, there wasn't even a hint of worry in his voice, but Chris had to ignore all of that, he couldn't hesitate.

'Thanks to my Qi training, I can sense the energy in the air. The downside of the demon armour due to how fast the demon king strikes, I have to activate the skill before he attacks. He hasn't noticed it yet, but the energy in the air changes just before he strikes, allowing me to use armour's skill, but if I get hit once, I'll be done for.'

The armour skill didn't have a cool down time, but it did have a slight delay before it could be used. For most, those with normal eyes, they wouldn't be able to tell. It was only apparent in high level fights where every moment counted.

It was an armour that was more so meant to block large scale attacks, ones that needed time to be prepared, but when one was going against an opponent, where every attack was a large scale one, what was he meant to do?

Chris continued on with his momentum, attacking again and again, and just like before he could feel the energy moving and Unzoku going in for another attack. His armour lit up phasing through the attack.

As this happened though, Chris quickly noticed the air was still moving. The arms of Unzoku were swinging rapidly again and again at where Chris was.

"Couldn't you tell, I've been going easy on you this whole time. I like to play with my meals, especially one as interesting as you." Unzoku said, continuing to swing his arms, Chris was disappearing and trying his best to move away but he was being chased by the claws that were moving all over the place.

"For me, I have to bring out the best in you, push you until you are at your strongest and then, and only then, when I eat you, I will grow!"

Having just phased through one attack, another claw came right down after it, and this time Chris was unprepared. He swung both his arms out at the single claw. The strike had hit both of them, but Chris felt his internals being hit by the claw.

His body was sent flying back in the air, and this time it was him who ended up crashing into the side of the wall.

"Crap!" Chris said, as he coughed out blood. He had great internal injuries and his body was trying its best to heal them as quickly as possible. If he was hit by one more attack of the same calibre he would be done for.

"You, I can tell just by your smell." Unzoku said, as he stood there still in the same position. It was only then that Chris realised something. All of the attacks he had dealt so far, all of them had been healed and there wasn't a scratch on his body.

On top of that, he had never moved from his position, even while striking at Chris.

"I think you can tell now, that there is a huge difference between our levels." Unzoku said. "You see, it's not because I am the first, or because I have support from Immortui. You should know that others are capable of surpassing the original. Look at the vampire's history themselves."

"But, there is an important aspect of us werewolves for us to get stronger, and that is, we need to eat the strong. We have unlimited potential, and can continue to grow and grow as long as we eat, yet you... you refuse to, with that you will never grow stronger!"

Chris started to move out from the rubble but as he did, he noticed his armour was cracked, it started to fall to pieces on the ground. The demon tier armour he was using to phase through the demon king's attack, had broken.

Chapter 2413: Can't get a break

The armour that was on Chris, it started to crack in several pieces until it fell to the ground breaking into several smaller pieces and almost disappearing, turning into nothing. Now the only thing that could be seen was the red fur on Chris' bare chest.

'The armour... the armour that I worked so hard for. No, not just me, but everyone worked so hard on getting the armour, to help me, and it's gone just like that.' Chris thought.

Beast armour when broken, could be broken into two different states. One of them just being a damaged state, if that was the case, then crystals could still be used to repair them, but usually one at the same level would have to be used, to the point where most thought it was pointless.

Of course, a demon tier armour with a special active effect like this would be worth it, but the way the armour had been destroyed, it was gone. It had broken down into particles and there was no way for the armour to be repaired now in the state it was.

The armour, it didn't have a repair function like some of the traits of Quinn's armour. It had disappeared completely now, and with it a lot of hope that Chris had in the fight had gone.

'How... How am I meant to beat him now? If I was unable to beat him before with the armour. My current form, it can't last much longer either, I can't help but think that this fight is hopeless.'

It was frustrating, extremely frustrating. All the training Chris had done, all the preparation he had done, to be defeated like this, and what was worse, was the fact that his opponent wasn't finishing him off.

He was still standing in the same position, as if he was waiting for Chris' body to heal.

'How did he get so strong... how can I get stronger, strong enough to beat him.' Chris started to think as he stared ahead.

While staring, his sensitive ears could pick up the sound of groaning to his side. He turned his head, and to his right, he could see a Chrono still stuck up against the wall. The red energy was still pushing them against the wall.

Some had died due to stray hits, explosions, and so on, but there were a few that still survived, and still had a strong will. They were trying even now to escape.

'A way to get stronger.' This thought was still strong in Chris' head and while looking at the Chrono, he remembered the words that Unzoku said.

'As a werewolf, in order to get stronger I need to eat... I need to eat the strong.'
Chris thought.

The Chrono that had survived were indeed strong, and with Chris having never consumed anything of this strength before, he could only imagine what the results would be if he was to feast on the Chrono that were still there, still alive.

Without realising it, as these deep thoughts had entered his head, saliva was dribbling out of the side of his mouth, and this didn't go unnoticed by the demon king. He could see the look on Chris' face, having lived as long as he had, he knew that look well.

'Yes, yes, yes! That's it!' Unzoku thought. 'That's exactly what you need, give in to your instincts. As werewolves, we always wish to grow stronger, to prove ourselves. It's natural, and the best way to do that is to feast!

'You have been holding yourself back for too long. I can't wait to see what you will become. You, who are already stronger than all of the Glutton class werewolves. If you were to feast, would you perhaps evolve even more? If then, will you be somewhat of a match for me, and if that was to happen, and I was finally able to feast on you, then even I will outgrow Immortui!!'

Hikel had created the blood whips, one of the creations of the past vampire king's that had absolute blood control. In the past, the book was passed from king to king and with it, all of the skills that the past kings had created would be passed on as well.

The book had disappeared though, so Hikel never thought that if he did get the same power of absolute blood control, that he would also gain the knowledge of all the old skills that had been created.

However, Richard Eno had recorded them all down himself. The information was passed to Logan which in turn was passed to Vincent. With that, he was also able to pass it all on to Hikel.

Yet despite that, even with the blood whips, it was still proving incredibly difficult for Hikel to fight. Running forward, the whips swung left and right, hitting the werewolves before they could reach him.

Most had hit, but the werewolves were fast and agile creatures. One followed from behind while another slid across the ground underneath the whip.

"Remember these whips aren't the only thing I have!"

Hikel had also surrounded his body and had, following along with him, several fist size balls of blood. They would be the next to target the werewolves instead. Still, the main problem wasn't the werewolves, it was Shinto.

In the air, with the axe above his head, Hikel thought Shinto was an easy target, he swung the whip out to hit Shinto, who just swung the axe right at the whip, When the axe touched the whip part of the red aura broke off, making the whip shorter.

It exploded as it had done all the times before, yet Shinto was seemingly unaffected by the explosion and continued downward.

'What is his body made of to survive a direct hit? Not even condensed blood and my ability can hurt him.'

The wound on his body was taking a long time for him to heal as well, and he couldn't afford to get hit again. Stomping his foot, Hikel created another explosion underneath, chucking up large chunks of rock in the air, while running back as well.

Watching the two fights, and dealing with the werewolves as much as he could was Russ.

'It looks like the two of them can no longer fight these guys, both of them are in trouble. I need to help, but which one do I help first?' Russ thought.

As this thought entered his head, he could feel the air changing once again, but it wasn't changing from Shinto or from the demon king, it was from above. Looking up, Russ only saw a small figure, and suddenly it was right on the ground in the centre of the room.

A small human-shaped man.

"Tenbris, what are you doing here?" Unzoku asked, and the tone of his voice didn't seem to be pleased at all.

"I was sent here by Immortui... it seems like something is going on after all." Tenbris, one of the demon kings and one of the two right hand men of Immortui, said.

Chapter 2414: Making it fair

A new person had entered the pit, and as soon as he started speaking, it almost felt like everything had frozen. None of the werewolves were moving in for the attack, the Champion also was just holding onto his axes.

Hikel and Chris were taking this time to recover, since both of them had received pretty serious wounds. It wasn't smart for them to attack, and they wondered who this person could be that had caught the attention of everyone.

From the outside, it looked like a male, but it didn't look exactly human, just like everything else they had seen in this world so far. Yet, it was the first thing that was around the same size as a regular human in size.

'Wait a second, haven't I seen one of these things before?' Hikel thought. The image soon came back to him.

It wasn't from the red space as they were in now, but it was back in the other world where they had come from. When they were on a rescue mission to get Jessica back from Magnus, that was when they had seen them.

The portal had been open for a short while, and demons started to appear, one of them that had appeared in front of the group, looked exactly like what they were looking at now.

It had a pair of wings that were folded up close to its body, but they weren't feathered wings, instead they were webbed more so like a bat's. On a closer detail though, the see through hollow part made it look more like they had fish scales all over its body, the main thing though, was the deep dark blue skin on its body.

Hikel's memory was right, what he was looking at now was one of the great demon races created by Immortui, a Freylin. They were the demons of the sky that were spread out on nearly every planet, and were also the highest in number compared to any of the other demon races.

The person who had just landed was one of the Demon kings, Tenbris. With his arms folded, he was observing the situation again.

"Sent by Immortui!" Unzoku shouted with anger in his voice. "Do you think I would just believe your word? If he has something to say he can always say it to me. And you know the rules, each Demon king has free reign to do as they wish in their territory! So why are you getting involved in my business!"

At first, when seeing the presence of a new strong figure, they thought that this was truly the end for them, but with the way the two were arguing maybe this was the fracture and chance they needed.

Tenbris let out a big sigh.

"Do you really think I am bothered by what you do in here?" Tenbris said. "You see, recently we have had a troublesome invader, and it looks like Immortui has gone to deal with him, himself."

Both Chris' and Hikel's ears popped up as soon as they heard this. If it was a recent invader, they could only think of one person.

'Shouldn't Quinn have already been here for a while though?' Hikel thought. 'Unless there is a time difference in this world and our world. I guess not every world is created the same. Still, it looks like Quinn hasn't gone head to head with him just yet.'

Tenbris was careful with his words because he could see that the Champion was currently in the pit as well. If news got out that one of the demon kings had been defeated, then they would know that the invader was strong.

"Deal with the invader himself?" Unzoku laughed. "How bored must Immortui be?"

"Regardless." Tenbris cut him off. "I have been given orders. To make sure that the champions don't act up, and if they do, then you have permission to devour them."

This had come as an even bigger surprise to Unzoku. He knew how much Immortui treasured the Champion's strength. Stating that he wanted to use them in the up and coming war against the celestials.

However, he always thought that it might have been some type of an excuse, one that was to stop Unzoku's growth so he wouldn't get stronger than Immortui, so why now of all times would he be allowed to eat the champions.

Unzoku was thinking about what to say, because there was a hint of betrayal for a moment.

'Should I let him know about it... no, with the way Tenbris is, he would just kill him on the spot, rather than allow me to eat him. He's scared too, but then what about the others, I want to eat them too. If I'm able to eat all three of them... I wanted them to get to their peak, but it would be better to eat them now than to not eat them at all'

"Well, from the looks of things, there were some others that must have gotten in through the portal somehow." Tenbris said, lifting up his arms. From the ends of the arms, in the palm, a small swirling blue ball could be seen gathering.

The ball's energy was getting dark, and the parts of the ground were lifting up.

"Let's get rid of them first."

Out from his hands, two large dark blue vortexes of power came out. They headed in two separate directions, one going toward Hikel while another went toward Chris.

'No!' Unzoku shouted in his head. 'If those attacks hit them, there'll be nothing left after the attack... and that attack it's impossible to avoid!'

Chris and Hikel could feel the power, and rather than try to attack straight on, it made more sense for both of them to move out of the way. They lifted their feet and tried to move but the direction they were going was straight towards the attack.

It felt as if they weren't even in control of their own body.

'This attack, does it have some type of gravitational pull?' Chris thought.

It was too late for both of them, they hadn't stored enough energy to try and combat the attack. They could only do their best to cover themselves to defend from the attack.

"You are both useless!" A voice said.

A swift sound was heard cutting through the air, and the next moment one of the blue vortexes, the one in front of Hikel had completely disappeared into nothing. Meanwhile the other blue vortex had crashed into the side of the wall, destroying everything in its path and was continually burrowing its way through the wall like a ground-eating worm.

"Oh, there was one more of you hiding?" Tenbris said.

Standing in front of Hikel, was none other than Russ, with the black sword in his hand, and next to Hikel, Chris was there as well. Moments before the attack had hit, Russ had used the shadow powers to transport Chris from there to here.

He had to do it quickly so he could use the black sword as it would make his own ability void when using it as well.

"And I thought I was the bad one." Russ said. "Don't you think the numbers are a bit unfair? I just want to make things a little more even."

Chapter 2415: Dark Memories

Out of all of the people to appear and save them in their current situation, they had never expected Russ to appear. Quite honestly, both Chris and Hikel had even forgotten somewhat that Russ was even with them, since they hadn't seen him in battle and were too concerned with their own fights.

The thing was, in this world, where Russ had no one to help him and no way out, he needed to help the only few that were on his side, he just wouldn't risk his life doing so, but having watched everything, he calculated it was better to have them alive than dead.

With the attack from Tenbris going in two directions, he needed to act fast, at the same time he didn't exactly know how strong the attack was, so the safest bet was to use the newly acquired sword he had with him.

Swinging it through the attack, it had done what it always did, and that was negate the attack, stopping it completely. After using the sword, he quickly placed it back in the scabbard.

A few words were said, but in truth, Russ was keeping up certain appearances. Hikel standing from behind had noticed something, that his back leg was shaking.

'What's wrong, the attack didn't hit him, did it? So what's happened?' Hikel thought.

On the other hand, the fact that a person was able to block Tenbris' attack like it was nothing, he was cautious about his next move and looked at the person, wondering if he recognised them or not.

"Ah, now I see!" Tenbris said, his expression changing to one of confusion back to his calm self. "That sword, I should have recognised it a lot sooner, but to be honest, I am surprised that you are able to wield it freely. Either way, that sword's a double edged sword in the first place."

'Does he know?' Russ thought.

At the moment, Russ felt like it was quite possible that he would pass out. Either that or he would throw up all over the place. His head was banging with pain after using the sword, and he had only done so once.

'I warned you didn't I?' The sword said. 'There was a reason why I was always in that girl's possession.'

There had been times where others had used the sword before, but most of that was in the past before it became Layla's personal possession. Back then, much of its power was dormant.

When the power of the sword was dormant, only the part where the blade would be hit, would block abilities. As Layla started to draw out more power from the sword it was becoming more active and was able to do more things.

Creating an area where abilities don't work, blocking out attacks within a certain radius, and negating attacks as long as they were connected to the source completely.

However, all of this came with a cost and it was at one's mental capacity. When using the sword's powers, the users would feel emotions throughout their body. Memories that weren't theirs would appear, and they would feel great pain over those that died.

Quinn had broken the seal from the sword, putting his own mark on it when he was a celestial, and although it subdued a lot of these feelings allowing Layla to use it as a normal sword. If anyone else tried to draw out its power, they would suffer the same effects as before.

Layla was a Hannya, a creature that fed off negative emotions for its powers in the first place. So she was used to it, and in turn using the sword in a way powered her. For Russ, it wasn't the same.

Yet, he was handling it better than most that would try to use the sword. Perhaps it was because of his own pain, and his own dark memories that he harboured, he could withstand it a little but not completely.

'If he knows about the sword, then I won't be able to use it as freely.' Russ thought. 'But I'm sure these guys have no idea what I can do with my powers, and they will have no idea about what this God Slayer bracelet can do either.'

Tenbris continued to look at the three intruders. Two of them were extremely worried about the current situation. They were fearful even before he had arrived, he could see that.

So then why, why was the person who suddenly appeared with the black sword, still brimming with confidence, or was he just too insane to care? This was natural for Tenbris' nature; he was too cautious.

It was at a standstill, but one side felt a lot more confident than the other, that was until something happened. Hikel suddenly looked up, he could feel something coming from the top of the pit.

"That... that was the signal." Hikel said.

The message had been delivered, it meant that the others had found Quinn, but at what a time. They were meant to be there to support Quinn, but if they left here,

with these guys on their back, then wouldn't they just be bringing him more trouble?

They would be bringing enemies that they themselves were unable to beat.

'Huddle up!'

A voice was heard in all three of their heads, and it was one they had heard before. Not hesitating for a moment, all three of them bunched up together. Suddenly, another person appeared.

"It looks like the three of you got yourself in quite a pickle." Sil said. "I would love to leave them with something but we need to go."

Tenbris, who saw the man just appear, had a bad feeling about what was about to happen.

"Stop them!" He shouted as his whole body was covered in a dark blue force. It spread to the entire ground, forcing all of the werewolves' heads to slam to the floor. They were unable to move, and the ones that he was trying to stop had already disappeared.

Sil had teleported them out of the pit.

Escaping with the others, Sil continued to teleport until they were a distance far away, and were on a different planet altogether compared to the one they were at before. Now they were in the middle of a desert of some kind.

"Oh... we're alive... we're alive." Hikel said, falling to his knees.

It was the first time the others had even seen him act this way. His composure had completely broken down. It was the most intense situation he had ever been in his life, so he felt like it was okay to act like this for a little bit.

"I'm sorry, but you all need to get ready. I'll heal you up, and then we need to go, get ready." Sil said.

They were wondering, was it possible that Sil and the others were in an even worse situation?

Chapter 2416: An old unfinished job

Tenbris screamed in anger and as he did part of his body was slowly changing. Scales were appearing around his skin on the outside and dark blue energy all around the pit was continuing to increase.

The strong Glutton werewolves from before were being pushed deep into the ground. They were unable to get up even using all of their strength. There were only two standing, Unzoku and the Champion.

"Tenbris!" Unzoku shouted. "They are already gone. If you continue to ruin this place, then you'll have to face me, you know I'm not afraid of you!"

Swirling energy was now emitting off from Unzoku as well, and the two energies as they were colliding in the air were sparking off from each other. They were creating a type of storm that was even consuming the space where the energies collided at.

The first to back down from the two of them was Tenbris, pulling his energy away, Unzoku did the same. Tenbris' body also reverted back to normal. In the end, there was no enemy to fight.

"The two of us need to talk for a bit. I think it's best if you set this place back up the way it was from before, and continue your little experiment." Tenbris ordered.

Agreeing, Unzoku saw the werewolves standing up, as well as the few Chrono that had survived, there were only six of them. The werewolves were looking at them with hungry eyes but the Chrono, even though their lives were on the line, couldn't even lift their hands up.

"Shinto!" Unzoku shouted. "Clear up the cellar, and get the Chrono back in. Bring in a new group as well. As for the rest of you scram back up until the next night!"

The Chrono had managed to survive another day, and with another group coming, their chances of surviving for longer had increased, but it also meant that more of their kind were going to die.

"Wait!" Shinto shouted. "I still have questions about what happened to my brother, what happened to Hinto and the celestials!"

Immediately Unzoku turned to him, glaring at him with his ferocious glowing red eyes.

"I have told you far more than you deserve for what you have done, now do what I said."

Seeing this interaction, Tenbris was wondering if there were problems between the two.

Shinto also understood what Unzoku was saying well. Quite easily he could declare that the Champion was a traitor, and then he would have to try to go up against two demon kings at once.

Against one, maybe he had some small hope of a chance, even if it was less than one percent at winning, but against two, there wasn't even a slither of hope. Because of that, Shinto did as he asked.

He went to the Chrono first gathering them, telling them to stay behind him, while the werewolves started to crawl back up the pit.

The two demon kings had changed location. Out of the pit, they were in a large roman inspired hall. The floors were tiled with special stone and there were giant pillars all over the place.

The ceilings were incredibly tall as if they were made for giants to stay in as well. They had eventually entered a room. It looked like some type of art gallery as there were paintings all over the place, mostly with werewolves.

There was one seat in the back of the room. Made out of chalk coloured stone. Although parts of it were dyed red with blood on it. It was the perfect fit for Unzoku as he sat down on it, while letting Tenbris continue to stand.

"Ha, of course, you would create a place for yourself where you feel like you're king." Tenbris said.

"Just get on with why you are here, and leave." Unzoku replied.

"I already told you, I have orders to stay here by Immortui, so I won't be going anywhere. You see, the situation has changed, I didn't want to say anything in front of the Champion from before but, the demon king Kronker has been killed."

No longer did Unzoku think this was just a small matter, and now he somewhat understood why Immortui might have been dealing with this invader with his own hands.

The Demon kings all had similar strength, they somewhat knew who was perhaps stronger than them, but because their strength were similar when fighting against each other, they would never go to the death. Because they knew if they did, they might lose a lot more than they gained from the fight.

Not just that, but there were those other strong races created by Immortui that were ready to take their position at any time. If they won a large battle, then while weakened another demon race could come and take their place.

The current demon kings that had existed hadn't changed in a very, very long time and that was why Unzoku knew that the invader had to be strong.

"The one who did it is named Quinn. He is a vampire that Immortui has been keeping his eye on for a very long time." Tenbris explained.

"A vampire!" Unzoku said his upper lip had moved up showing all of his sharp teeth.

"Yes, of all things, a vampire." Tenbris smiled. "Based on the situation, there is a chance that if the Champions and the inhabitants find out about this, that they could get the will to fight back again."

"Although Immortui believes we would have no trouble beating them again. After all this time of building up a strong army, for it to suffer before the big finale, is a big no no, so we need to make sure that they all stay in their place."

Unzoku understood well. It wasn't the invaders they had to worry about, because they didn't have a strong effect on the local inhabitants, but the champions did.

"Anyway, while we are waiting to hear that Immortui has completed his deal, I will keep an eye on the champion. You have another task that has been given. You are to train up your werewolf army and prepare them."

"Immortui believes the vampires have long outlived their purpose, and as you can tell they have become a bigger pain in the backside than he first envisioned. You are to go to the other world, and eliminate every vampire."

Memories came flashing into Unzoku's head as he heard this.

"Yes, we are telling you to complete the task that you once failed before, and you are not to fail this time." Tenbris stated.

"Wait, how am I even meant to go back to the Golden Space?" Unzoku asked.

"Well, as you can see, there seems to be more than just one invader. They have somehow found a way in. So that means there must be a way out of this place. I would start with them."

"Just remember, you are not to leave a single one alive." Tenbris said.

Chapter 2417.1: Peter's Madness (Part 1)

Chris, Hikel, and Russ had successfully escaped from their deadly situation. While Russ had next to no marks on his body at all, currently both Chris and Hikel were receiving healing from Sil. The group were still in the desert, in the middle of nowhere. There was next to no signs of life and the sun was just starting to rise.

The two didn't just have surface wounds but also internal wounds as well, that needed quite a bit of focus even for Sil's healing skills.

"You know, I could have done the same thing?" Russ said. He was annoyed at how much both Chris and Hikel had been thanking Sil, almost as if they had forgotten that Russ had just saved them back in the pit.

"Since you guys have memories of Sil, I can practically use any of his powers, I could have teleported us out of that situation if we needed."

"Wait, you could!" Chris said, shocked to hear the news, he nearly jumped up but Sil pushed him down, trying to force him to heal. There was a glowing light coming out of Sil's hand that was slowly going across his chest.

"I thought because of the sword you couldn't use power like that."

"Are you an idiot?" Russ smirked, and kissed the side of his mouth. "How do you think I use my own powers? As long as the sword is in the scabbard then it's fine."

"Then why didn't you get us out of there!" Chris asked. At the moment Chris was finding himself in a weird state, he was acting out of character, he realised it was due to the situation he was in.

For a moment, he thought he was doomed, and the only way out was to feast on the others next to him. He thought those days were behind him. In order to get stronger in the past he had used the life stealing technique taught to him by Zero.

At the time, he didn't quite know what it was doing, but now there was no excuse, he never wanted to feel that way again and for a second he had considered it, which was why he was extremely angry at himself.

"You said we needed information." Russ replied. "The whole reason why we stayed there in the first place was because we were trying to find out things from the demon king. We met the demon king didn't we? Otherwise, what was the point of us staying there?"

With the tensions high, Hikel decided it was best for them to change the subject after all, there were now more important matters for them to think about.

"Sil, we got the signal, you said you found Quinn, where is he, and where are the others?" Hikel asked.

"Actually, they are still there. It might be more correct to say we know where he is." Sil replied. "I am just a clone."

"Just a clone, so how did you know how to get us?" Hikel asked.

"I changed my abilities before creating another version of myself. I gave myself the teleportation powers to get you guys out of there if needed. Telepathy to communicate with you, and healing just in case you guys were seriously injured."

The group was glad to have someone as reliable as Sil on the team.

"I'll explain as much as I can and when we're done, we'll be on the move." Sil said.

Peter and Edvard had to trust Sil with this one, since he was the most likely to locate where Quinn exactly was. They were continually teleporting all over the place, trying their best to see if there were any signs of Quinn.

Going to areas where there was noise or fighting that was occurring, and so far what they had witnessed was an extremely cruel world.

Since Sil was going to areas where there were signs of fighting, they were witnessing people of the same kind battling against each other. In other areas, demons were playing games with others.

On one occasion, they even saw these strange water creatures bouncing around to head to each other in the river. All of them had experienced war, they had seen death, but not like this.

There wasn't even a war going on, and nearly everywhere they went, there were smiles on their faces as they did this. It wasn't fighting out of desperation or killing for the sake of survival, it almost looked as if they were doing this for fun.

There were multiple situations where they saw this, that the group could have helped but they didn't. They needed to stick to the task, and getting involved in small scuffles here and there wouldn't change a thing.

"I'm getting really tired of going around all over the place and getting nowhere!" Peter shouted.

Ignoring him, Sil teleported them all anyway, he didn't need the others touching him to teleport, it just used less MC cells that way. Since if they were touching then it would count as just one person teleporting.

When heading to the next location, they had entered what looked like some type of village. The buildings were crudely made and small, white in colour somewhat like

a mud hut only built with different materials and just like many of the places they had entered before, this one was under attack as well.

There were small creatures that looked human, only they had the half face of a skull on top of their heads, and then there were larger creatures that had red crystals all over their body concentrated on their back.

It was the Skullys and the Durum type demons. It was a village for one of the Skullys. The houses they had resided in were destroyed, and they weren't being killed but instead captured.

The Durum demons fired out crystals from their hands, stabbing the Skullys in the leg. The crystals would go right through and pin them to the ground like nails. Once a Skully was hurt enough, then they would drag them and throw them into a red crystal cage that was on some type of floating platform.

The floating platform and cages were following the Durums around as they chucked Skully after Skully into the cages.

"Ahh, I need to get my frustration out, I can't take it any more!" Peter said, as he ran away from the group, he leapt up in the air, and a Skully had fallen over, it was on its back while a Durum hovered over him.

With his fist, Peter threw it out, hitting the Durum demon right in the chest. The whole Durum demon's body went crashing into the ground, the body bounced, and a hole was made in the demon's chest and the crystals on its back shattered everywhere.

The Skully couldn't believe that he had been saved by this stranger, and at the same time he had caught the attention of the rest of the demons. Getting up off the ground the Skully went over to Peter.

"Thank you for -"

With a single hand, Peter grabbed the Skully by the neck and lifted it in the air.

"Where is Quinn!" Peter asked.

"I think... Peter's gone mad." Edvard said, wondering what to do now.

Chapter 2418.2: Peter's madness (Part 2)

The Skullys' village was a mess, with panic set all over the place. Several of the buildings had been destroyed, the main hall, the local shops, the hunting grounds and more, and the Skullys were in a panic.

The thing was, the sight of the Durum demons entering their village wasn't a strange one. This had been going on for an extremely long time now. The Durum demons would arrive and ask for a number of the Skullys to volunteer to get into the cages.

At times there would be many that decided to volunteer themselves and when they did, they never saw them come back. This time, it was just like any other, only once in a while something would occur.

The Durums were standing by their ten specially made containment cages. There were groups of around five Durum demons per cage, making them around fifty in total.

There was no need to send this many demons for a village of Skullys as often there would only be two hundred or so per village. The Skullys groups were usually small but many spread across the planet.

This was mainly due to the fact that even though they were the same, they were unable to get along with each other, and there would be constant battles against one another. Even when the demons arrived, battles would continue between each other over the smallest of things.

One of the Durum demons stood forward, he looked at all of the Skullys that were staring up at him. "I see!" He said. "It looks like none of you want to volunteer this time, well I guess that just means we will choose."

The demon raised his hand, and the Skullys jumped away. They were fast on their feet but the crystals were already shot out from the demon's hands and pierced the Skully in the leg.

Not even removing the crystals, the demon lifted the Skully causing the crystals that pinned him to the ground to rip through his flesh. Then chucked him into the red crystal cage.

"Careful now, if you try to escape, the crystal cage will blow up and fire off shards in all directions, including towards those on the inside." The demon laughed, all thoughts of escape immediately left the Skully's head at that moment.

That was the start of the chaos in the village. All of those that were brave enough to sacrifice themselves had already done so, and as they saw more and more not coming back, they started to fear the visit from the Durum demons.

At the same time, the demons didn't have a set time that they would arrive, it could be several years, maybe even generations before they visited the village again. Or possibly just a few months.

The demons would travel to different villages but it seemed at random, the only thing they were concerned about were the Skullys going extinct so once a village reached its breaking point they would tend to leave it alone after.

What was currently happening now, was the breaking point for this village, and it was one of the most fun times for the demons. All of them took part as if it was another hunting game, making their own points system for how many they could capture and throw into the cages.

Meanwhile, some of the Skullys were even fighting amongst themselves. If they injured some of their fellow villagers, then they were put in the cage, and there was a good chance that they wouldn't get taken away.

Some of the demons seeing this, even allowed for two of them to fight, waiting for the victor and throwing the loser in. They did this because it encouraged even more infighting between the two.

That's when something had occurred that caused everyone to stop. A loud crash that cracked the ground, energy that spilled out to the side had hit everyone in the village like a wave.

When they turned their heads, they could see a person that didn't look like a Skully nor a Durum standing there, holding up a Skully in his hands by his throat, next to a dead body of a demon.

"Hey Peter, what are you doing, can't you tell the difference between good and bad?" Edvard said, as he walked over towards the others. He walked through both Durum and Skully as if they were nothing while Sil followed behind.

They followed with their heads at the two strangers, they felt out of place in the middle of all the chaos.

"Good or bad?" Peter replied. "Just because one side is losing, doesn't mean the other side is bad."

"He has a point." Sil said. "And a couple of these guys seem to be fighting each other as well."

Sil hadn't liked this place since he had entered, he had overheard many different things, and it wasn't a place he wanted to stay in long.

"What are you doing just staring off into space, get those intruders and lock them up!" One of the demons shouted.

Now that the situation had turned into this, Sil decided to get involved himself. His entire arm was covered in blue lightning, it was swirling around. His eyes lit up, and he slammed his hand onto the floor.

Lightning currents were sent out in all directions, and targeted both the Skullys and the Demons. As it touched their skin, the lightning would electrify their bodies from the ground.

Some of the Skullys attempted to jump away, but the lightning was still able to move from the ground striking them while they were mid air. As it hit the Skullys it would cause them to faint on the spot, foaming at the mouth, and passing out.

Meanwhile for the demons the lightning passed through their bodies and the attack would be shifted to the crystals on their back. It lit them up like a Christmas tree before the energy would disappear completely, the demons were unaffected completely.

"Hey, what are you doing, only hurting the small guys?" Edvard asked. "Between you and Peter, now I feel really bad for them."

"I didn't aim for them, things have just turned out this way." Sil answered. The main goal was to knock everyone out with his lightning powers. There were times where a certain ability wouldn't work and this appeared to be one of those times, or the enemy was a bit stronger than he first thought."

Sil was getting ready to use another ability, when something had happened to all of the Durum demons. Once again their backs started to light up. All of them had done it at the same time, but it wasn't just their backs, it was all the crystals on their body, including those in their eyes.

"Kronker... he must have transformed." One of the demons said. "That was the order. Everyone stop we have to leave and go to Nebton quickly!"

Smiling, Edvard had a good feeling based on the way the demons were acting. There was a reason why he wanted to be part of the search group for Quinn, because he thought his good luck would lead him to them.

Chapter 2419.1: Demon Quinn's rampage (Part 1)

Calva, one of the three champions that were said to have great power, power if combined together could perhaps topple Immortui was right now nervously standing in front of a demon.

It wasn't just any demon though, the demon he was looking at was the great vampire Quinn. This demon was one that had defeated another demon king, making their strength extremely clear, but worst of all, unlike the other demon kings this one seemed to have lost his mind.

'I knew it was too good to be true, I thought, that maybe someone had arrived that could do something.' Calva thought. 'Yet, he's gone mad, killing any Skully that moves. What's the point of getting rid of Immortui if something like this replaces him.'

It was strange, the actions he had seen from this man, and him in his current demon form were far too different from each other. It was clear he no longer had the same consciousness, he was unable to control this form like the other demon kings.

'A problem like this has never occurred though, does this mean he's different, does his power not come from Immortui like the others? Maybe if there's a way to break him out of this madness.'

Calva had jumped from the forest and landed in the destroyed base. He hadn't moved since landing, and neither had the rest of the Skullys along with Anon and the others in the forest.

They had figured out that movement meant their death. Still, Quinn had turned his head, and was looking at Calva with a smile, he was twisting and turning his head side to side, as if inspecting Calva and wondering what to do.

In a tense situation, Calva had to make a choice.

"The demon king is dead!" Calva shouted. "There is no longer a threat to you, I will not attack you."

Of course, if there were any signs of Quinn trying to attack him, Calva would fight with his life on the line, but he was trying his best not to use words that would set off the demon in front of him.

The champion Calva could feel sweat running from underneath his skull-like face, running across the side of his cheek, close to dropping on the floor. He couldn't even remember the last time he felt so nervous.

The first move was made by Quinn and immediately Calva reacted, as he created a large bone-like spear out of his forearm and held it in his hand. The other Skullys

were able to create more of an exoskeleton but they weren't able to remove bone from their body like the champion could.

When held in his hand though, Calva didn't throw the bone spear, that was because when Quinn moved he wasn't looking at him, he was looking directly at the ground.

Moments later, Calva could feel soft vibrations from under his feet.

'No... is this, I've seen it once before.'

Calva immediately jumped up, and retreated back to the very edge of the forest, standing on a large tree branch looking out, and that's when his fears were confirmed. He could see that Quinn had already used his wings to fly up in the air and still was looking down.

Out from the hard ground below, red crystalised hands were seen breaking through the floor, and popping out of them were the Durum demons. Their whole bodies were out on display.

"The Durum demons, in the first place, were demons created underground where there is no light. Their bodies crystalised allowing them to procreate without the need for another sex." Calva said to himself.

Anon was surprised to hear this, he thought Calva didn't care, when Immortui originally came to attack, the Durum demons didn't exist. If he knew this information, then he had to be keeping track somehow, even while he was locked up.

Quinn up in the air, lifted his hands and red orbs of blood started to swirl in them. As the Durum climbed out of their holes, they were turning to look at the situation.

"What is going on, Kronker's energy was sent to this place right!" The demons said.

There were 1000's of small holes that were breaking from the ground everywhere, all over the place. The Durum demons were linked to their demon king after all, and when he had transformed a signal was sent out to all of the Demons.

It wasn't sent out immediately, but only when Kronker felt like he was in trouble, and it wasn't a conscious decision either. It was a trait of Kronker, calling on those like him next to it when it felt like its life on the line, only the Demon kings worked on a far larger scale.

Which was why all of the Durum demons had come to the current location.

"HAHAH!" Quinn continued to laugh like a man possessed and out from the swirling blood balls, a rain of blood bullets rained down towards the holes the demons had crawled out of.

The blood ripped through their hard red crystals and they were falling like ants being soaked in water. Blood was splattering everywhere and it was starting to soak the floor.

"What is going on, it's an enemy attack!" The Durums shouted.

Pointing their hands, moving, they were firing crystals at Quinn. However, with the blood dripping from his wings, it started to act as an unconscious shield. Blood was swirling through the air all around him, and as it touched the red crystals it was turning them into nothing but dust.

"Even a whole army of demons isn't going to be enough to take him down." Calva figured. He held the spear in his hand once again, and decided to jump on the dangerous rain of blood.

He jumped on the field once more and with one arm the bone extended out creating a type of shield above his head. As the blood hit the shield, it wasn't able to go through it. His bone was even harder than the red crystals that belonged to the Durum demons.

Then when in position, Calva threw out the spear right towards Quinn. Energy was surrounding the spear, and it broke right through the blood barrier. It looked like Quinn was ignoring the spear completely as he continued to slaughter the demons that continued to pop out from the ground.

Without looking at the spear, he reached out with his right hand and grabbed it before it touched him.

'He was able to grab the spear at that speed. I thought his powers mainly focused on using the special blood powers of his... but does this mean he's physically improved as well?' Calva thought, and he was starting to think he had made a mistake.

The swirling blood in his palms had stopped, and with the spear in his hand, Quinn looked at the champion.

Chapter 2420.2: Demon Quinn's rampage (part 2)

With Calva being one of the champions and inhabitants of the red space, he was naturally strong. Each champion's strength was different as it played to their strong parts. One factor about all of them was their physical strength.

Their bodies, in terms of endurance, speed, and power, were all at the highest levels. They truly felt that they weren't lesser than anyone out there. This was also true for Calva's case.

He was stronger and faster than any Skully and had power to compete with the demon kings. One of his natural traits was the special bone he could produce from his body. An almost unlimited supply, and at the same time, it was harder, and could be made sharper than any of the Skullys.

Even an amateur, if they were to grab a bone sword made from Calva's body, could cut a diamond, and even the hard red crystals of the Durum race. Yet right now, his opponent had grabbed his spear like it was nothing.

'When I went up against Immortui, I was unable to hit him, but he never grabbed my thrown spear like that, especially when being distracted by others.'

The Durum demon's continued to fire their red crystals toward Quinn, and as if he was completely focused on Calva now, he allowed them to hit his body. They would pierce the white skin, but only ever so slightly, creating just a scratch before falling off onto the ground.

Before the crystal even fell off, the small scratches were healing on Quinn's body. From the outside watching, it looked like a series of bullets were just bouncing off his body.

A flick of the wrist, that was all Calva had seen, and the spear was sent right back directly at him. He had managed to move his arm shield just in time, hoping to deflect the attack. Yet the spear had pierced right through it.

'This is the one time where I wished I didn't make my own weapons so sharp!' Calva thought. He had grabbed the tail end of the back of the spear. His whole body was being pushed back and he was gripping hard with all his might.

The tip of the spear had already broken through the bones on his chest and was going further and further inside. Focusing, Calva started to grow the bones inside his body. Trying to squash the tip of the spear before it would go in any further, and finally he had stopped the spear.

"How can the demon Quinn be so strong!" Ekeke said, one of the Skullys that had first met Quinn. "Weren't the champions, ones who had taken Immortui close to the edge? So then how is this demon playing with them all!"

The story of the champions was just what was spread throughout the land. Even in the stories there were many differences depending on who one went to about what happened. Due to the large scale of the battle, there weren't many that saw it in person, just like this battle right now.

And there was always the chance, the chance of lies being spread about the champions, because they didn't want the inhabitants to lose hope.

Using the hardening bones in his body, Calva pushed the spear out of his body until it dropped to the floor. Thankfully, due to his unique skill, he was unhurt by the spear, even though it pierced through his skin.

Lifting his head, panic started to set in.

'Where is he, where did he go!'

A wave of blood aura hit him right in the face. Quinn had crashed on the ground with a wave of energy emitting from his body as he had done so. All of the nearby demons that were still alive had been knocked back off their feet. It wasn't an attack or anything like that, just the energy that was being emitted from his body.

The demons were quick to get up from the floor, and if their diamond shards were not going to work, then they would just have to get physical. A group of around fifty of them all charged in towards Quinn.

Seemingly he stood there doing nothing. The blood from the dead rose up. It hovered in the air, creating moon shaped blood slices. They all moved at once. The demons felt like nothing had hit them at all, until their bodies had been cleanly sliced into several pieces.

The demons had no clue what had hit them, they had just been killed in an instant, without being able to put up a fight at all. As the pieces lay there on the floor. The pool of blood was spreading out. The blood from the dead was touching each other until it covered the entire floor in the area.

The blood was moving in an unnatural way, and it soon started to spread out. After seeing what had happened to the rest of the demons they didn't want to move in any more, they didn't want to attack what was in front of them.

Little did they know, it was too late, the pool of blood spread out, covering their feet and falling into the holes that were made by all the Durum demons. The blood in the entire area shot up, slicing right through each and every one of them.

The blood from the pool underneath had hardened. The blood was shaped like sharpened trees, and on the end of them were demons. It was a forest of the dead that had been made on the spot and by a single human person.

Calva knew at that point, there wasn't a single thing he could do. That was until the smile on Quinn's face started to fade. Immediately both hands grabbed onto his face and he fell to his knees.

His upper body was swinging wildly as if something was fighting inside of him. The wings started to retract into the body, and the shadow that covered the body as if it was part of the skin, started to disappear as well.

"ARGHHH!" Quinn screamed and more of the surrounding aura had spread out, including a large amount of blood, not blood aura, had come out from his mouth erupting like a volcano. It fell on top of Quinn's body.

With the blood falling off from Quinn's body they were able to see a clear person. He was relatively small compared to what he was before, regular human flesh could be seen through the blood, curly hair, along with a lost expression that was just looking at his hands.

"Is... he back... is Quinn back!" Anon said. He wanted to run out there and check, but after seeing what had just happened to the Skullys and the Demons his own legs were stopping him from doing so.

Calva being the closest had to make a decision, and as he was walking he had a thought in his head.

'While he's like this now... and not in that form from before, is it better to just kill him, or try to use him in some way?'

Chapter 2421: The consequences of the demon form

The demon form of Quinn had come to an end, and he himself knew that due to a few reasons, one of them being the system screen which had popped up in front of him.

[The demon energy in you has settled]

[Error, Error]

Red screens appeared in front of him with an alarm ringing in his head a couple of times. It had been a long time since the system had acted this way. With Quinn having evolved beyond what the system could do for him, or improve, there wasn't much use for it anymore.

The most effective thing was just its sorting of information, such as his inspect skill, and also knowing when his cool downs ended, or health and other stats were to be used. However, things like his skills, he stopped using the system to activate the skills long ago.

Now he could do all of his skills naturally with his body, and there were even things he could do outside of the system with his shadow and blood aura for example.

'The system has strangely been giving me a few quests since I have interacted with others and entered this new world. It is one that is meant to continually adapt. Which makes me wonder what this error is.'

Thankfully, the system had somewhat explained what the error was.

[Additional information has been blocked]

[You are unable to access system messages, while in your current form.]

[Please transform into your demon form to access new messages.]

After reading the message there were a few raised eyebrows from Quinn. What could the messages even be that his system was unable to show him. On top of that, how would it even be possible for him to do so?

Quinn was able to willingly go into the demon form, but when he did he would lose consciousness. He was not in control of his own body, and he wasn't even able to remember what had occurred.

However, this time it was a little different, although Quinn was still in able to control himself, memories were rushing to him, memories of what he had done. He wasn't proud of what had happened by any means.

Quinn took a deep breath as he remembered some of the events.

'You have to stay strong, you have to remember why you are doing this in the first place. Remember how many have already died that you know and care about, that you were unable to save' Quinn said to himself.

He was reassuring himself that he was doing the right thing, and even had to tell himself that those Skullys would have been dead anyway by the strange hunting game that they were playing, even if he hadn't killed them with his own hands.

A part of him was a little worried, and wondered if it was easy for him to disregard these things, due to the time he had spent as a celestial when his feelings were a lot more numb than they were now.

'If the system is saying that there are messages in my demon form, then it also must mean there's a way to control the form, and I have to think, what was different this time, compared to last time.'

'Why can I remember what happened last time? Either way, I'm going to have to put a pin in it for the time being.'

The system still had a few more messages for him that he was able to read.

[You are unable to transform into your demon form]

[A notification will be received once you have sufficient energy to transform again.]

This was also a first for Quinn from the system. In the past when he had tested out the demon form, no such message had come up, and truthfully he could have just gone back into the demon form again.

Although transforming did take up a lot of his energy, he couldn't imagine himself repeatedly transforming again and again.

'Is it because this time I actually had someone to fight. Because I used a lot of my powers, but this isn't good, this isn't good at all.' Quinn thought. 'The system has no way to tell me how long it will be, and since I can't access the system while in demon form, I don't even know how long I have in that form... maybe that's the answer after all. The system is pointing me to try to control my demon form.'

Quinn didn't think this was a bad idea, after all he knew its strength. It was what he was forced to use when going up against the Behemoth, and it had allowed him to defeat the demon king this time as well.

It wasn't that Quinn thought he wouldn't have been able to defeat the demon king without, but truthfully it was hard for him to gauge Kronker's power after he had transformed, since he had done so as well.

'I also need to figure out what happened to me, why did my body forcefully transform, right after the demon king did. It happened when the energy hit me, will this happen every time I face a demon king, and what if I was to go up against Immortui, would it happen then as well.'

There was something fearful about fighting without one's mind. Although Quinn thought the demon form was incredibly strong, when not in control, it felt like he was trusting someone else to do the job and after all this time of completing everything himself, he felt like he could only trust his true self to get this job done.

'Either way, now I know this world can affect me in different ways. It's a good thing that I didn't bring any of the others with me. If they had come, especially during that demon form and I was to do harm to them, I don't know what I would have done.' Quinn thought.

While thinking about all of this, something did click in Quinn's head.

'Wait, the system is giving me more information than it ever did before about any of this, with the memories and the quest, all of this goes hand in hand. Of course, why didn't I see it before.'

The fact that his body had been influenced by the demon energy, forcing him to turn, was the key for him figuring it out.

'Since it had been so long since the system had given me a proper quest I almost forgot.' Quinn thought. 'A quest is just that, a quest! At the end of the quest there is a reward.'

'Just like the quest to absorb the five great demon generals, it improves my blood power and strength. Which means, absorbing the blood of the demon kings will also bring a reward.'

'One of these things is most likely able to control the demon form. That's why the system is now telling me more than before. That's why, I was able to remember what happened this time, because I had already absorbed the blood of one, my body is already experiencing changes.'

Thinking about all of this, for a moment Quinn wondered whether or not he should change his plan slightly. In his original plan, he only wished to go after Immortui and take care of him. Whatever came in his way, he would deal with it.

If he could get the blood upgrade before facing Immortui, it was a bonus. However, after his fight with the demon king, there was a good chance that Immortui could

force him to change his form as well, so wouldn't it be better for him to complete the quest first?

'I would be wasting time though, and who knows what is happening back home.'

Saying was also easier than doing, because how would he even find these other demon kings? The first one he had completely ran into by chance. It was the same for his plan to look for Immortui.

Clearing the system screens from his view as well as the errors wasn't the end of the messages, and perhaps the last ones he read were the most devastating.

[Your armour set has been severely damaged]

[Passive effect is currently in progress]

[A notification will appear when the armour set has been repaired.]

Before when Quinn turned into the demon form, because he knew he was doing it, he would place his armour in the shadow, just so nothing would happen. This time, due to it being a forced transformation, his armour was ruined in the process.

Thankfully, there was a passive skill, no matter how damaged the armour would get, it would eventually repair itself until it was back to its original form. They were items worthy of being called god-slayer tier.

What it did mean was he would have to be without it.

'Again, the system is giving me no timer, just how stingy has this system gotten?' Quinn complained.

It was the end of the system messages there, and at least he had to be thankful for it in the end. Without it, he probably wouldn't know what to do.

'I guess first I have to deal with the situation in front of me.' Quinn lifted his head, looking up at the Champion and the Skully's coming out from behind him.

Chapter 2422: Kill the Demon!

Sitting on the ground, Quinn was soaked in blood from head to toe. A lot of it had dripped off from his body, while some of it had dried on him. All of this just added to the deadly scene that surrounded Quinn.

For one, the blood that had hardened, piercing the Durum demons through their bodies, was still in the same shape and position, looking partially like a forest. There were still dead bodies on the ground.

If one was to take a picture right now, it would certainly be a sight that would give one nightmares.

Slowly, Anon, Ekeke and Tuni were walking through the field of the dead. They were trying to make their way to Calva who had stopped just shy of around twenty metres away from where Quinn was.

A lot of the Skullys had decided to stay in the forest observing what was going on, while some thought this was their chance, maybe they could escape and run back to their village now that the Durum demons had been defeated and now that Quinn wasn't so crazy anymore.

After seeing Anon and the others safely move, they thought it was their chance to do the same as well.

Ekeke looked at one of the moon crescent blood trees, as he had named them in his head, that was next to him to his right.

"Is this thing made of blood?" Ekeke said, reaching out, almost touching it. "How can it be so hard and sharp, and why hasn't it turned back to blood?"

Anon grabbed Ekeke's hand before he touched the outside of the crystal.

"We don't know what that will do if you touch it. Your curiosity will be the death of you. Don't die now, after everything we've been through, over something so stupid."

When Anon put it like that, Ekeke did feel a bit dumb in his actions.

"What I'm more concerned about is why hasn't Quinn moved?" Tuni asked.

He had been in the same position. They had no clue, since the system wasn't visible to them, what was going through his mind at the moment. Continuing forward they had just about reached where Calva was standing.

In the past, none of them could ever imagine being so close to the champion, especially after what they had heard Calva had done. After seeing his actions today,

they couldn't help but feel that the rumours and the stories that were said about him, were untrue.

While thinking this, Anon saw something that made his eyes bulge. Quinn had lifted his head, and as if it was a knee jerk reaction, Calva had acted as well. A spear was made from Calva's forearm, and it was in his hands only for a moment before it was hurled at Quinn.

"Noo! What are you doing!" Anon shouted.

It felt like everything was moving in slow motion for Anon. After meeting Quinn, after a demon king had finally been defeated, and now a champion was in front of them, he felt like it was the making of a change that was going to happen in their world.

The spear that had been hurled through the air, was the same one that had been chucked at Quinn when he was in his demon form. It had the same amount of power as it did before, there was no holding back from Calva.

Quinn moved his hand to the spear that was in front of him.

'One of the other downsides of using the demon form, as tested before, is that when used, my blood aura is completely drained. Which is why, it was only ever meant to be used if it was a desperate situation, as a last resort!'

The shadow started to cover Quinn's hand, not just one of them but two. It was a thick coating of the shadow, and he had raised both of them.

Opening up his hand, a small shadow portal had been created, one that was just big enough for the spear to go into. As it entered one of Quinn's shadows, it was seen coming out from his other hand.

The spear had been redirected, but rather than back at Calva it was shot up in the air, going through the clouds and disappearing into the red sky.

"What are you doing Calva! Quinn is no longer in his demon form, why would you attack him!" Anon shouted.

"Why wouldn't I?" Calva replied. "He is a demon, he is a creation of Immortui and you saw what he had just done to us. He might be sane in his mind right now, but it won't mean he always will be. I know nothing about this person, to me, this is just a fight that happened between demons."

Quinn still had his shadow power he could use, and the natural strength of his body, but without his armour, and his blood powers, would he be able to take on one of these champions?

It was why, in making a split decision and looking at the Skullys that were with him, he had decided not to attack the Champion, doing his best to avoid a fight, while he was at his weakest.

Thankfully it looked like Calva was having second thoughts as well after seeing what had happened.

'I wonder... does he still have the strength to beat me, even in his current situation?' Calva thought.

"Quinn!" Anon shouted. "When we first met, you said that you were here to defeat Immortui. Originally, I thought you were just shouting some crazy stuff, but what you said, is that true!"

Quinn stood up from his position on his own two feet, the shadow was still covering both of his hands, he needed to be ready for whatever was going to happen next.

"I only wish to finish Immortui." Quinn claimed. "I have no problem with anyone else in this world, but if anyone is to get in my way, then I will get rid of them as well."

His eyes, the lack of hesitation in his voice. Calva could tell these words were true.

"I won't get in your way." Calva answered. "However, for me, if you are killing us inhabitants, or all of us die in the process of you achieving your goal, then you are something that needs to be dealt with as well."

Anon actually understood what Calva was saying, after seeing what had happened to them, who wouldn't be scared and worried.

"Quinn, do you remember what I said before!" Anon shouted. "If we work together, with the champions we can do this! What happened just now, with you turning into that thing. Is there no way to stop it?"

If there was, then perhaps it was a way for him to convince Calva to not fight with Quinn. Because if the two of them did fight, then it was quite possibly the worst outcome would come out of it, ending up with them both being killed.

"There might be a way." Quinn eventually answered. "The other demon kings... their blood."

Quinn didn't know how to go into detail, or what to say to make them believe him. If he could avoid a fight it would be best, so he wanted to explain, but would they believe him. While struggling to think, both Calva and Quinn turned their heads to the skies.

A large thick cloud of red smoke, darker than what was in the air, was seen out in space, and was heading for the planet.

"Immortui... he's here." Calva said.

Chapter 2423.1: The Gods loyal dog (Part 1)

The Ancient Ones were the celestials that had been around seemingly since the beginning. Every celestial knew them and a lot of the foundations, the core principles they believed in, and how the celestials' society was set up worked around them.

They had become far too large of a group, for a celestial not to join them. Whether that be one occurring naturally because a world needed one, or a celestial being invited due to them being worshipped.

For beings to create an organisation like so, where they practically controlled the gods, also meant they had to be terrifying themselves. In the past of nearly any organisation, empire, or group, the hardest task was controlling them all as they grew in size. This was the downfall of many great empires that fell.

Yet, the celestials had yet to crumble and that was due to the tight hold the Ancient Ones had on everything. Which was why the celestial known as Xox was panicking. Being given a task by the Ancient Ones and one that seemed incredibly important, it felt like if he messed up he would disappear from the world, and not just enter the reincarnation cycle.

'If an Ancient One has been keeping an eye on me, he could be watching me right now. And then he's going to think why the heck aren't I doing anything!' Xox was running through the jungle on one of the memerial islands.

He was so panicked after learning what he had to do, that he had run away from Yongbu who he was with at the time, and had crashed into several trees.

'How do I even start a search? Do I go to the celestial space and try to gather information that way, but none of the other celestials will listen to me, I'm just a useless god to them. I can't give them anything in return.'

Xox didn't have a following from other planets to do his bidding. He didn't have almighty strength to help the others either. Which was why he targeted new celestials in the first place.

He hoped by giving his advice, he could make way there, and even if he didn't, he didn't care since he just spent time in the celestial space. He enjoyed others coming up to him asking him questions but he knew at the end of the day, if he ever needed their help like he did right now, they would do nothing.

'Crap, have I just realised after living for millions of years I have no friends!' Xox thought in his head, and once again he crashed into a tree.

His ball shaped body was squashed in the middle as two halves continued beyond the tree before snapping back into place.

'Okay, let's think about this more clearly. The Ancient Ones can't be all seeing. If they were, then they wouldn't ask me to do this task in the first place. However, the fact that they can just summon me to them whenever they want, means I can't escape from doing this.'

'Sooner or later, they're going to summon me again, asking if any progress has been made.'

The floating ball god lowered itself until it was no longer levitating off the ground and landed on the floor. Wondering what it had done to get in this situation.

"Xox, what are you doing here?" Yongbu appeared from behind one of the trees, pushing a giant tree out of the way.

Xox twisted his body and looked upon Yongbu with the biggest puppy dog eyes he could, even though he had no eyes.

"Please!" Xox shouted. "I need your help... Friend!"

Not being able to keep it in anymore, Xox decided to turn to the one person that he could trust, the one person that had kind of been by his side during this time, at least the two of them had faced similar troubles, Yongbu.

Xox didn't go into all the details, especially the fact that this mission was given to him by the Ancient Ones, but just told him that his task was to look over Quinn to see what he was doing, and if he didn't do it, his life would be on the line.

At first Yongbu didn't want to help, especially since it involved Quinn, that name, and the whole entire Talen family gave him the shivers, but there were two things that forced his hand.

First, Xox wouldn't stop complaining, and somehow no matter where Yongbu would go and try to run off to, Xox would be there, able to find him. This continued on for a couple of days, with Xox asking for his aid.

That was when the second thing had come into play that forced him.

"If you don't tell me, then I'll tell everyone what your condition is!" Xox declared.

Yongbu, embarrassed by his condition, who had only told one person ever his condition was now using it against him. Never did he think he would be blackmailed into doing such a task.

This was how both Yongbu and Xox ended up on the Mermerial planet. They were in the large palace built on ice, and inside the grand meeting room where around thirty or so Elders would gather to make future decisions.

They were all sitting around a large rectangle table, while Yongbu and Xox stood at the other end. Xox however, didn't look like his usual self. He was no longer a large floating ball, and instead had taken on the appearance of a fellow Mermerial.

He was slender, tall, and quite feminine in his looks. His ears were pointed, and fairly large, while he had light blue skin. This was a special skill that Xox had, he could transform his ball shaped body to look however he liked.

Yongbu did ask why he went around as a ball, to which Xox's answer was that it was his original shape and what he felt most comfortable in. Which confused Yongbu, how could any being find having no hands or limbs to use, comfortable was beyond him, but at least this current form made things easier.

He didn't have to explain why there was a floating ball by his side which was actually a god.

The elders were all dressed the same, in a white robe with a blue line that would go from the hood to the sides, and nearly all of them looked similar as well, old men with beards that were beyond being capable of fighting.

"Yongbu!" Elder Setonia, an old man with a white beard and pale skin that looked like a wrinkled finger having been underwater for too long stood up. "You are lucky that we are even listening to you at this moment. Despite you having forced yourself in here. Don't think we haven't forgotten what you have done.

"Just because we no longer have Ceril and Wince, doesn't mean we will freely allow your way back into our political space again."

It was quite clear that this wasn't going to be an easy task for the two.

Chapter 2424.2: The Gods loyal dog (Part 2)

Yongbu had been keeping a track of the Mermerials and he knew when these old fools would have their weekly meetup, so he thought it was the best time to barge in. Currently there was a large hole through the ceiling due to how the two of them had entered, but he had done so on purpose to remind them all what he was capable of after all.

"It's not like any of you have the power from stopping me anyway." Yongbu said, to which Xox kicked him on his shin, for the plan to work, they needed the Mermerials help, it was the only plan the two of them could come up with to keep up to date with what Quinn was doing.

Based on the information Xox had found, the Mermerials had allied themselves with Quinn. They had done so on more than one occasion and the connection between them and him was quite close.

The closest link, the two princesses, no longer existed though, which was why they were in this situation. The Mermerials could always visit the vampire settlement and Quinn, on the basis that they wanted to keep their relationship on good terms between the two. That was the plan, as Xox entered disguised as one of the Mermerials.

'If we enter this way, then none of the celestials will know about my movements, just like the Ancient One wanted, and no one from the vampire settlement should know that I am a god as well.' Xox was inwardly smiling thinking about how much of a genius his plan was.

Since they needed the Mermerials to do this, and it wasn't something just the two of them could do themselves, it was the reason why Xox was getting a little angry at Yongbu.

Clearing his throat, Yongbu spoke up again.

"With the unfortunate loss of the two princesses and no one left to replace them. I noticed that things have been quite difficult for the Mermerials."

The elders started to look at each other. They had been far busier than they had expected, but it was something that they didn't like to admit.

"These are the usual problems that we have to face and deal with. It comes with our position." Elder Setonia said. "It is not something we can't solve."

"Are you sure?" Yongbu said. "Even before I influenced the Predators, they naturally ran wild. The princesses were powerful enough to rein them in, but there is now a big gap in your forces with them gone."

"As time goes on, I can only imagine more joining them. Then as you fail more and more, the people will believe you less and less, ultimately making the situation the same as it was before, and unlike this time, there is no royal family for the general public to band behind. There is no one that will be there to save them this time.

"As you know, the Predators listen to me well, and even if they don't listen to me, I have the power to deal with them if it really comes to that."

Immediately, as they heard Yongbu say these words, there was an uplift in the mood and the expression on the other Elders' faces started to change. After all, Yongbu was actually a being that was once worshipped by all.

It was only as time went on, that there were rumours that a powerful god had taken the side of the Predators, and when it turned out to be true, there was much distaste left in their mouth especially those in the royal family.

"The fact that you have come here to tell us all of this, rather than do anything about it, means that you must want something from us, something out of this deal?" Setonia asked, able to see right through the god. "Otherwise, such a kind person would have just solved the issue for us for free, so just tell us what you want."

"Fine." Yongbu said. "I will deal with the Predators for you, indefinitely for as long as I am alive, as long as you set up a friendly meeting with the vampire settlement."

Many of the Elders wanted to accept the deal on the spot. Would all of their headaches go away with such a simple request?

"Why would you want to meet with the vampires, and why not head there yourself, why are we the ones that need to head there?" The elder asked.

"You know the relationship between me and Quinn is not the best. However, I wish to rebuild the relationship between the two of us. It would benefit me greatly to do so. I'm afraid if I was even to set foot there that I would be killed before I even got to speak."

Many of the Elders nodded in agreement, they had heard what had happened, and they knew of the incredible strength Quinn possessed.

"What if this is a plan for you to get back at him?" The Elder asked. "Then it would ruin the relationship that we wish to keep with Quinn and the vampires."

"First of all, many of the vampires had killed the Mermerials as well." Yongbu replied. "The relationship between the vampires and the Mermerials aren't at its best either, just with Quinn. A meeting with the two I believe can help build relationships between all of us."

"Even if I did have anything planned, do you really think I would be able to do anything to Quinn, with the power he has? Either way, I don't plan to go myself for

fear something would happen to me. Which is why I don't plan to go myself. I wish to send a proxy on my behalf."

That was the cue for Xox to stand forward.

"Xox is a servant of mine, who has been serving and looking after me. He is just a normal member of the public just like you, there is nothing special or different about him at all as you can see!"

Once again, Xox kicked Yongbu's shin. He was playing the act a little too much, and making it obvious.

"I will use him to convey my words to the vampires, and to Quinn, in hopes to build up our relationship. I believe this deal benefits you greatly in many ways."

After letting Yongbu say everything he needed to say, the Elders decided to have a meeting. They had asked the two to leave the room while they continued to discuss and deliberate over what to do.

They talked for a couple of hours, and had yet to come to a decision, until finally the two were invited back into the meeting room.

"We have made a decision. We will accept your proposal." The Elder said.

With all that done, Xox was over the moon, he could accomplish the task needed to be done although Yongbu wouldn't be with him, which was why he had a few words of wisdom for the god.

"Xox, I just want to inform you, when you go to the vampire settlement, that Quinn isn't the only one you have to worry about." Yongbu said. "That whole family is crazy, so be careful."

Chapter 2425.1: Strongest Trouble Maker (Part 1)

In the vampire settlement itself, time had continued to pass with not much of anything happening. Things did happen on a day to day basis, but nothing extreme compared to what the settlement had been through before.

No one wanted to say it, they were afraid if they did they might end up jinxing themselves, but it was currently a peaceful period in their lives. This was also true for the students as well.

It was currently lunch time for the vampire students, many were outside playing, practising, studying, or hitting the human bodied dolls as they practised their techniques.

For Minny and her two best friends, Abby and Tobi, they too were practising their moves on the human body dolls.

Tobi swung both of his hands, and two blood swipes were seen in the air. The first strike hit the doll perfectly on its chest creating a red x, and then the other successfully hit the head.

After a few moments, the markings on the dolls disappeared.

"Did you see that, Minny! How cool am I?" Tobi puffed out his chest, with his thumb pointed towards himself.

"That might be something impressive compared to most vampires your age, but you have to remember that you're showing off in front of Minny, who can do a lot more than that." Abby commented, as she threw out a strike of her own.

Rather than the normal blood swipe, she had let out a single line of blood aura, that cut at the neck perfectly on the doll. Her strikes weren't as powerful as Tobi's but they certainly were more controlled.

What Abby had said was true as well. For their age, the vampire kids were just learning how to summon their blood aura. Only a few could produce swipes, and now Tobi was able to summon a swipe at will and also control it.

This was true for Abby, but she had more blood control. The two of them were practically geniuses. It was hard for them to think or feel that way, because if they were geniuses, then what did that make Minny.

"The two of you are doing great!" Minny gave them both two thumbs up, with a big smile on her face. It only lasted a few seconds before it faded away.

Both Abby and Tobi looked at each other, it wasn't the first time Minny had felt this way. She was in pain, saddened but was trying to hide it, and hadn't done a

very good job. Even the teachers had recognised that she wasn't doing her best compared to her usual self.

It was why they had even built these three training dummies especially for her. Usually on the playground there was only one area with the training dummies. It was an area that would be dominated by the older students.

With Minny being the star of the school, and with who her parents were, they had made a special location in the playground for her to also train. Not a single student complained about this, at least not openly anyway.

"Hey Minny, what's with the arse face?" Tobi asked. "When you're sad, it makes your face look all wrinkly, like my grandpa's nut sa-"

A deep kick on the shin was felt coming from Abby, she had done so before Tobi could finish his sentence.

"What are you trying to do, and what were you just going to say in front of Minny!" Abby asked, all red faced.

Rubbing his shin, Tobi was complaining to himself.

"What, I'm only doing what Jeff told me." Tobi mumbled.

A few days ago, Tobi had decided to go to the senior vampires for a little bit of advice. He had realised his own feelings, his deep feelings for Minny, but why would a girl of her status ever be with him. Especially with the history they had.

At the same time, with what had happened, some might think he was crazy, or had a bone breaking fetish for liking the vampire that had once assaulted him. Still, he had asked for advice and the one given made sense, at least in his head.

"You have to tease the girl, play it cool." Jeff said. "If she knows that you like her, then how do you think she's going to act?"

"Act... um, she will act nice to me?" Tobi replied.

"No, she'll think you're weird, and get attacked, but if you act cool, act like you don't care, then she will want you. She'll think he is someone that I can't get. Girls want a guy that they can't get, that way it feels like a type of prize for them."

The words of his senior sounded extremely confusing to Tobi, and honestly it didn't make a lot of sense, but he was just a kid, so he trusted the adult to guide him. Which was why he had been teasing Minny for quite a while.

To the point where he had received quite a few bruises and a broken bone or two, which all healed of course, but if this continued on, then people might really think he had some type of fetish.

Minny looked at her two friends, and she was too tired to even get angry at Tobi anymore. Because actually she had just been missing her dad a lot. She wanted to talk about it, explain to the others, but the other vampires weren't meant to know what he was doing.

According to them, he was just away on business relations with other groups. Since Peter was no longer pretending to be him, this was the excuse they had to come up with. Minny opened up her mouth but just ended up with a defeated sigh.

Trying to change the topic, Abby walked over and stood by her side.

"Hey, how's your little brother doing, is he enjoying his new home?" Abby asked.

Due to everything that was going on, and the fame that the Talen family had reached, in the end Minny, Layla, and Galen had to move out of their small house and into one of the castles.

They had lived there for a while after events and people were reluctant to come when Quinn was there, but now that he was gone, it seemed like the Talen family were getting their fair share of stalkers.

"My brother... he keeps sneaking out." Minny answered. "At first he was just hiding all over the castle, but now he's been sneaking even out of the castle, mother gets really worried sometimes because of it."

There was a little more to it than Minny was letting on. Her mother was getting extremely frustrated because her brother was using his shadow powers to escape from the castle.

It was impossible to contain him as he used his powers to escape and explore. It was almost as if he had reached his teenage years before he was even a teenager.

"I mean he's your brother so he should be alright in the vampire settlement right?" Tobi said.

"Don't be stupid!" Abby shouted. "He's a toddler. He can't even speak properly, of course his mum is worried sick, right?"

Thinking about it, did they really need to worry about her brother? Galen had the shadow powers and in some cases, Minny thought he might soon be even stronger than her. She just hoped in the future, he wouldn't cause too much trouble.

Chapter 2426.2: Strongest Trouble Maker (Part 2)

Reno had been waiting months for this moment, he had been especially courting one of the girls of his dreams while batting away all of the other flies that were after her like she was a pile of dung, and finally here he was.

The woman, Yan, was in his room, sitting on his bed. Reno carefully ran his hands on her thigh a few times, as he brought his face close to hers. He could feel the heat of her breath through her nose on his upper lip.

He couldn't take it any more and grabbed her, swinging her body around, and pushing her onto the bed.

"I... I can't believe I'm finally here." Reno said, as he started kissing her neck gently bit by bit.

"Yeah, me t— WHAT THE!" Yan quickly pushed the vampire off from her, with her great strength, she had forced him to crash into the wall on the side leaving a mark.

"What did I do?" Reno groaned.

Yan pointed toward the window in the room.

"It was there... I saw it, there was a little boy!"

Reno looked out of the window but was unable to see anything, just in case he rushed to the window and pulled it up. Sticking his head out he looked left and right but was unable to see anything.

Turning around, Reno smiled.

"It's okay, there's nothing there, it must have just been in your imagination."

Yan's hand was pointing, it was shaking as she could see it again, the little boy staring at them. Lifting up the bed sheet, she ran off towards the door.

"I can't do this with a little boy watching!" She screamed, running out from the door.

Out of frustration, Reno went to the window once again and looked out but was unable to see anything.

"Man... did she go crazy or something?"

On the rooftop of the house next to it, on a three story building, a shadow portal had appeared, and out of it a little black haired boy came out. Galen Talen, laid on the rough tiles as he looked up at the sky.

He giggled to himself, and a cheeky smirk appeared on his face. Once again, he had escaped from his mother's watch, and now was playing pranks all over the place. Now he was planning what to do next.

At home, Layla let out a big sigh, as she entered Galen's room and saw no one there.

'That kid, when his father gets home, he's going to have to have a serious word with him.' Layla shook her fist in the air. She would do it herself, but with the shadow powers, he could just hide in his shadow space.

She wished she had the sword to stop him from using his powers, and then she would at least be able to hold him to give him a good telling off.

'I'm dreading what it's going to be like when he becomes a teenager... Come on Quinn, you have to come back. You're not going to make me become a single parent are you?' Layla thought.

Leaving the room, she soon had been sent a message. It was through another vampire using telepathy.

'Oh... I wonder why she wants to meet me?' Layla thought.

Back at school, lunch had ended for the children, and they were back in their classrooms. Here Miss Bedford seemed to have an announcement to make to the others, as she cleared her throat. A habit of hers when it was something a little more important.

"Alright children, I know we have been through a lot." Miss Bedford said. "And with recent events we haven't had the chance to enjoy ceremonies and such. Today, I am here to talk to you about an upcoming ceremony... a first for Roland Academy! We will be doing a joint venture with our fellow vampires!"

Miss Bedford expected a bunch of cheers, but since it was a first, naturally none of the children had any idea what she was talking about.

Clearing her throat again, she started to explain.

"The Vampire settlement has decided to host something similar to that of a sports day that humans have. Only that it will be based more around your own vampire abilities!

"But as you know, any sports day is fueled by competition, and that's where it becomes important for all of you. You see, we will be competing against two other vampire groups. The Vampire Corps unit and the Graylash unit!"

The vampire academy on the settlement wasn't the only place where vampires went to school. The Vampire Corps that were spread across the planets surrounding earth, had families.

They often put their kids in mixed schools, or schools exclusively for vampires, due to the less trouble that was involved. This was true for vampires that lived on the Graylash planets as well.

The vampires in both of these areas had created communities. The Vampire settlement often felt apart from these groups but at the end of the day they were all vampires. Which was why the event was suggested by Andy, leader of the Vampire Corps, and also a man named Unny, who was the leader of the vampire community on the Graylash planets.

Muka was the one that had received the call in the end, and honestly with everything happening, she wasn't so sure it was a good idea. In the end, she had accepted but on one condition that it was to take part in the Vampire settlement. That way they could protect themselves a lot more.

They could also prepare for any surprises that might come up.

"Alright!" Miss Bedford clapped her hands together. "What we need to do is select special children for the events that will be coming up. We want the very best representing us for this competition. To prove that our school and our teachers are the best!"

There was a fire that was lit up in Miss Bedford's eyes and she seemed far more excited about this than anyone else.

At the main castle, Layla had entered the office of Muka. She was sitting by her desk, and by her side there was Xander working hard away. The two of them had quickly jelled, taking part in work, and for a moment, she thought the two of them looked quite cute next to each other.

'I wonder... if Xander has gotten over me. It would be good if he could find someone else, he was good with Minny, and Muka is a beauty as well.' Layla thought.

"Ah, you're here." Muka said. "I wanted to tell you this in person rather than over telepathy, but something has come up."

A raised eyebrow appeared from Layla.

"It's the Mermerials." Muka replied. "They are coming for a visit. They didn't want to take no for an answer. I tried my best, but nothing worked, you used to live with them so there might be a few that you know.

"Since Quinn isn't here either, you might need to do a bit of peacemaking between the two of us."

Once again, Layla let out a big sigh. It was a pain living this life of politics, but it was something she had to do. Besides, the Mermerials were good people, there shouldn't be any problems with them coming to pay a visit.

Chapter 2427.3: Strongest Trouble Maker (Part 3)

The sporting event that was explained to the children had been given a name and that was the Grand Meet Up! There were many names that had been suggested but with a vote from teachers from all groups, this was the name that was chosen in the end.

The Grand Meet Up was still a week or so away, which was good timing, because the Mermerials were keen to push the meeting forward, and had told Muka that they were already on their way there.

Although the vampires didn't know, there was a reason for the Memerials to be pushy about getting the meeting out of the way. Yongbu had dealt with a small group of Predators that were causing trouble.

Yet, purposely he hadn't dealt with all the Predators, if anything, what he had done didn't result in much at all, but the message that he wanted to convey was clear. He was showing what he could do.

Only after their part of the deal was complete would he get rid of the rest. In order to get rid of the big headache that was coming their way, they pushed for the meeting.

A couple of days had gone past, and it was finally the day for the Mermerials to arrive.

Layla was in the master bedroom. It was incredibly large with a dressing room that was as big as a house, a bathroom that was as big as an entire floor, and several other places for them to play and more.

Galen would often sleep in a single bed that was placed in the corner along with them, and Minny would share a bed with her mother. It was the only way Layla would feel somewhat safe at night.

Walking across the room. Layla was staring at Galen straight in the eye. He was taking a few steps back as Layla did forward. She knew it was pointless trying to grab him, so instead she stood there.

"Galen, today is a very important day. There are going to be guests all over the place, and mommy has to make sure they're looked after, understand?" Layla asked.

Galen nodded his head.

"Then that means, I don't want you going all around the settlement causing trouble."

This time Galen didn't shake his head, to which she looked him right in the eye again, until she broke contact. She needed to start getting ready and get changed.

The moment she turned around, she could feel a presence disappear. Turning her head back she saw half a portal disappearing and Galen was no longer there.

"What happened to the nice little kid that would help do chores around the house and set the table. How can someone change so much in such a short amount of time? I wonder if this is something all vampire mothers have to deal with." Layla looked out the window, and she could see giant blue ships approaching.

"I need to hurry, he will be fine. He's been fine every day so far." Layla thought as she rushed to put on some clothes.

Layla had arrived in time and they were standing outside the settlement where the ships docked. It was right next to the settlement, a large open space, like that of a runway on an airport but it was more so like a car park for spaceships since it was easy for them to land.

The back area had been cleared for them, and waiting patiently was Layla, Xander, Muka, as well as a group of 12 vampire knights standing by the side. This was a friendly race that was coming to them so they weren't expecting any hostility.

The ship had landed and a ramp descended touching the floor. Walking down the ramp, there was a group of four people. Two of them, old men, one woman and another younger looking man. Still looking to be in his mid thirties but quite a stark difference from the other Elders that had appeared.

Around them as well, there were a couple of guards each for each person totalling six guards. They were dressed head to toe in glistening blue armour, as well as a helmet that covered their eyes and nose just showing the mouth. The helmet had a small trident shape on the top.

"Thank you for agreeing to the meeting on such short notice." One of the Elder men said, stepping forward.

"No, thank you for coming." Muka replied.

"My name is Xoxy." The young man bowed down. "I am sorry to ask this, but I have recently been allowed into the council room and I was wondering, will we be able to see Quinn. I would love to thank him for everything he has done."

Xox was straight to the point, and he found it strange that Quinn wasn't here in the first place. Truth be told his task was to look over Quinn. So when the Elders went to leave to head back, he would then change his form to one of the vampires and live among them, keeping an eye on them, but where was his target.

"I am afraid that Quinn has a matter to settle, he is currently far away and won't be able to join us, but if there is anything you wish to say to him, I will be able to pass it on." Layla replied.

"What!" Xox blurted out. "I mean."

He quickly cleared his throat and straightened his back.

"I see, I guess he is a busy man, do you have any idea of when he will be back by any chance? I would really like to meet him if possible?"

A visible vein was starting to appear at the side of Layla's head. She hadn't expected these questions to pop up. It had already taken a lot out of her to come up with that lie, why was this Mermerials so obsessed with Quinn?

'Does this guy want to marry him, why is he asking so many questions!' Layla shouted in her head.

"I'm afraid I do not." Layla replied. "Depending on the task taken, he can take an extremely long time."

"Huh?" Xox facile expression changed. "You don't even know how long he will be, aren't you... his wife. How will I get to see him then?"

"What I can do is inform you when he arrives back, how does that sound?" Layla smiled.

Invisible sparks were flying between the two as smiles appeared on their faces. Sighing, Xox had to admit defeat, this person clearly wasn't going to give him answers, but it did make him wonder, just what was going on.

'Maybe the Ancient One sent me here for a reason after all. It looks like I'll have to do some more investigating. If I can't get anything from his wife, then I will just have to look into his family instead, they might know something.' Xox thought.

Chapter 2428.4: Strongest trouble maker (Part 4)

This type of meeting between two races was somewhat a first for the vampire settlement, at least the ones that were currently in charge. Muka had the most overall experience, but no experience in meeting with other races. So she did her best to try and work with the formalities that had been done in the past and apply them on to this situation.

The four elders along with the three vampire settlement leaders sat at a table in the grand dining room. It was incredibly dark inside, with themes of red splashed throughout. Such as the red rug underneath the table as well as the red candles placed around the place.

They sat as they waited for food to be served to each of them.

"I am sorry if the food is not to your liking." Muka stated. "We were short on time with getting your preferences, but I hear that your tastes are the same as the humans we have. Still, as you may know, we ourselves do not eat the same as humans, but I hope you enjoy the meal."

The meal served to both parties was completely different, but it went down as a treat as they finished their food and waited for the next course to come out. Although they didn't mention it, Muka had specially had someone brought from Earth to prepare the meals for them, which was why they were of a high standard.

"I wanted to ask." Xox said, in between waiting for courses. "Did you at least inform Quinn that we would be here. I'm sure if you did, he would be inclined to come here, after all we did a lot for your family, helping you out."

Layla was about to bang the bottom of her knife on the table but stopped before she did. Once again, the young elder was asking about Quinn. The reason she restrained herself though, was because his words were true.

The princesses as well as the Mermerials helped in the war when they didn't have to, due to Quinn's ask. At the same time, she and the rest of her family had lived on the Mermerial planet for some time being protected by them. So they too owed quite a lot to the Mermerials.

"Of course." Layla replied. "If he knew about this beforehand, and the meeting wasn't so suddenly called for, he would have made time, but he has other arrangements as you know. It isn't my place to speak about those arrangements and it wouldn't be fair for him to just stop what he was doing and make his way here."

"I guess, we just don't mean that much to him then." Xox gulped down a pint of water.

The tense situation had become quite clear with the other Elders, which was why they had decided to butt in.

"Of course we understand, and besides it's not like this is the only time we'll be able to meet him." An elder said. "We respect Quinn's decision and if he is not too busy, you, him, and your family are welcome to see us whenever they wish."

This had settled the mood a little and soon the group went to talk about other things. After the meal was done, they were given a tour around the castles and explained how the vampire settlement worked and how their system was currently set up.

At the same time, they listened to the Mermerials talk about everything they had been going through on their planet as well. It was quite amazing to see how both groups seemed to have similar troubles and by exchanging information and culture they were figuring out different solutions to different problems which they would have never come at from a certain angle before.

Although the visit was made on false pretences, the Mermerial Elders felt like they had gained a lot on the visit so far. However, the young Elder Xoxy hadn't said a word since dinner had ended.

That was until the long and winding tour and talk seemed to be over.

"You have a nice settlement here." Xox said.

Everyone turned to look at him with their eyes wide open. After all of the words he had spoken so far, they thought he would never say something nice, yet here he was praising the settlement.

"I think, rather than just experiencing these things from your word, it would be nice for us to experience them first hand. Do you think it's possible if we can have our own time to explore, to see your world first hand?"

For a while now, Xox was thinking how he could get away from Layla, and how he could get closer to her family. Maybe even search for Quinn. There was a chance he was hiding in the settlement doing something after all, but he needed to be away from the eyes of others.

"Of course." Xander answered. "Where do you want to go, what do you want to see, would be happy to take you there."

"There is no need for you to guide us." Xox quickly said. "I feel more comfortable walking alone, and besides you already told us how safe this settlement is, so I think there would be no problems for your guest to walk around. I certainly know you wouldn't have any problem walking around on your own with the Mermerials."

Xox didn't know if this was a fact or not, but just wanted to say it to light a fire on the other side, and it seemed to work.

"Of course!" Muka said with a smile. "Please be our guest and explore the settlement to your heart's content. If you have any problems at all just report to one of the guards who will help you, or they can contact us as well."

Xox didn't need to be contacted twice, and with that he was off, already exploring the settlement, seeing if he could find any answers to what he needed.

The other elders were happy to continue their journey with Layla and the rest, and said that they would be happy to explore with them around the settlement, seeing whatever they thought was best to show them.

While they were walking out of the castle and making their way to the main area of the settlement, Layla was unable to hold her tongue anymore.

"I'm sorry, but I have to ask, why is that young Elder of yours, why is he so different compared to the rest of you. He is so impolite, and seems to ask a lot of questions." Layla asked.

She wanted to say, ask a lot of questions about Quinn, but didn't want to make it too obvious that was her main concern.

The oldest Elder sighed.

"Xoxy has actually been brought onto the council recently." The Elder answered.
"He was actually introduced by our old god, Yongbu."

Layla knew who this was, she had faced him head to head in the past.

"The truth is, Yongbu wanted to use the young elder as a chance to build up the relationship between him and Quinn again, which is why I believe he is asking so many questions."

Although the Elders didn't think much of this, for Layla, alarm bells were ringing in her head. The Elder was working for Yongbu, a celestial that once had tried to hurt them, and now here he was again.

'I... can't help but not trust that guy, I need to keep an eye on him.' Layla thought.

Chapter 2429.5: Strongest Trouble maker (Part 5)

It had been a long time since Xox had done something like this, walking among so many lives around him. He had spent so much time in the celestial space, after which spending time only with Yongbu, that everything felt somewhat foreign to him.

Not just that, but he also felt a little uneasy due to the looks he would get once in a while, it wasn't just the looks though, it was the fact that all of these beings were superhuman.

He saw them sprinting past him from one area to the next. Some would just jump over houses if they wished to get to the next street over. There weren't a lot of fights though, just as the leaders had explained.

Guards were constantly on patrol and they would appear, seemingly out of nowhere, if there were any signs of trouble, even small disputes.

'No wonder this is a group of people that Mundus was keeping an eye on, and now, the Ancient Ones want to keep an eye on Quinn as well. Either way I need to complete the task.'

Asking around the settlement, the vampires were happy to answer the general questions the guest had. Of course, the questions he had on his mind were about Quinn. He firstly asked if they had seen the leader recently or knew where he was.

Then, he would ask what he was doing the last time they had seen him, as well as if there was anything weird. If the Ancient One called him again, he wasn't going to have completely no information to give him. At least this way it looked like he was doing some work.

After asking about ten or so people, Xox was starting to get an idea of the situation.

'So no one has actually seen Quinn for a while now. It seems like they all believe he is away doing some task as well. Although the information is different from person to person. There's been no official announcement of what he is doing, only that he's away.'

It was quite surprising that no one would know what Quinn was doing at all, but none of them seemed bothered by it. There were a few other strange comments though, particularly about how he had been acting strangely in the last week or so when they had seen him.

Not in a bad way, but just that they felt like it wasn't the usual way Quinn was acting.

'Not acting like himself? Am I on to something here, the fact that he was acting strangely and then disappeared, means he must be up to something.'

'That BB, if he has the attention of the Ancient Ones, it has to be for a reason.'

Although Xox was an information gatherer, he knew nothing about Quinn being an agent for the celestials, or the God-slayers he had defeated. Due to the crystals being used to create the armour, it was a secret to be kept from everyone. If anyone had known of those he had defeated, then there was a good chance, even if the request was from an Ancient One, they would try not get involved with a being of that power.

Although Quinn was strong, Xox still felt the consequences from the Ancient Ones 's were far more frightening.

'I guess that only really leaves me one choice then.' Xox thought. 'I have to stick to the original plan and try to ask his family. If I remember correctly Yongbu talked about him having a daughter.'

Simple information had been gathered by his friend, along with a warning, but not much other than that. Yongbu was too embarrassed to go into details of what had happened back then. If Mundus didn't interfere it was quite possible he would have lost his life.

Walking through the settlement, Xox was in the marketplace, as he had no idea where to go, but thought it would be the best place to gather information. He wasn't shy talking to the others.

It wasn't something celestials really felt, because these were just lives in front of him, those that would come and go, and it was why it was easier for him to speak his mind as well.

Asking around, he asked if there was any school nearby, it would be the most likely place to find Quinn's daughter. His excuse was that he wished to see how the future of the vampire settlement was run so he could pass on the knowledge to the Mermerials as well, and they were all happy to tell him.

Reaching the school was easy, and getting past the guards was easy for him as well. Everyone was well aware that they had visitors coming. An announcement was made to the settlement informing everyone to be extra careful today.

When they had heard who had entered, two teachers who were currently off duty quickly went to greet Xox and showed him around the school. They were walking around explaining how the school worked showing him the hard working students in the classes.

Meanwhile, Xox just had to nod along, until he eventually asked the question he wanted to.

"Thank you for taking your time to explain everything." Xox said. "I was wondering, I was told that the Hero Quinn's child went here. You see, at one point she actually lived among the Memerials and the two of us got along well with each other, so I would like to see her if possible."

The truth was Xox didn't even know what she looked like, so they might have even passed her while going past the classrooms.

"Sure." One of the teachers said, and willingly walked Xox through the hallway. They could stare through the glass looking into the classroom, and the teacher clear as day pointed out to her.

"Excellent." Xox smiled.

With the tour over, Xox had decided to leave the school, and when heading down a dark alley, his whole body started to change and transform. He was going from one of the Mermerrals turning into another vampire.

Even the outside clothing was actually a part of his powers. He waited outside, looking ahead at the school.

"Now, all I need to do is wait for school to end, and approach her somehow. I wonder, what's the best way?" Xox thought

He started to walk out of the dark alleyway, out towards the school. As he took one step forward just and he was about to exit out of the alleyway though, a large circular shadow had appeared right in front of him.

Taking a step forward he had moved too far. The whole area was dark around him, it was black all around, and turning around he could no longer see the alleyway, nor could he see any of the settlement.

"What... is going on?" Xox thought.

"You..." A voice said.

Turning around again, now Xox could see a small boy with black hair, who looked to be about 2 to 3 years old at most.

"You." The boy said again. "Bad person."

Chapter 2430.6: Strongest Trouble Maker (Part 6)

After learning the reason why the Elder named Xoxy had come to visit, Layla was unable to shake off this uneasy feeling. Perhaps it was due to how many things had occurred surrounding them and the real important matter that Quinn was dealing with, but she just couldn't have someone related to a celestial walking around the place.

A signal was made towards Muka and Xander, they were pulled to the side for a moment, while the Elders were inside a weapons shop admiring the craftsmanship and work.

"Do either of you mind keeping these Elders a bit busy. There's this uneasy feeling that I just can't shake off."

"I'll help you out." Muka said. "I'm guessing you're going to search for some information. I can get in touch with the others through the settlement."

Although Layla was part of the settlement, technically she wasn't in charge of anything. She wasn't a leader of the castles nor was she part of the meeting table. Unlike Muka, she wasn't able to freely contact and retrieve information. People would do as she asked due to the respect they had for her, but unless she was there in person, it would be quite difficult for others to just take her word.

Layla nodded at Muka and before Xander could say anything, the two of them were already off, heading back to the castle.

"Ah!" Xander had his finger in the air. What the others were doing seemed a lot more exciting than showing a bunch of old men around. Turning around, he just sighed, as he saw one of the old men drop a dagger that nearly fell right through their foot.

Luckily, Xander used his speed to quickly grab onto the handle.

"Please be careful." Xander said. "These weapons are quite sharp."

The old man just laughed it off as if it was nothing, while Xander was left thinking why was it always him that was left with this type of task, looking after people.

Returning to the castle, Muka had quickly called over her knights who were to use the telepathic communication ability to make contact with the vampires throughout the whole area.

"That Elder named Xoxy, he was the only one that went off on his own. I want people to keep a lookout for him, tell me where he is currently." Layla asked.

A virtual map was brought up in front of them of the large settlement and the many areas. Muka was communicating with the knights back and forth, and soon small indicators were coming up.

These indicators on the map were the locations where Xoxy had been spotted. They were moving all over the place, as guards were giving reports as to where he went.

Layla could somewhat understand just based on what she could hear from the corner of her ear, while also looking at the dots. She was following it with her eyes, and eventually saw it reach the school.

'He went to visit the school... why would he go to visit the school?' Layla placed her finger on her chin. 'He kept asking about Quinn, and he is working for that Mermerial god... wait a moment, last time, weren't they after the kids as well. Could it be, is he there to get Minny!'

There was a panic, mainly because it looked like the dot was no longer moving on the map. The last place that they had seen Xox was at the school.

"Muka, what is going on?" Layla asked.

"It seems as though the last location of Xox was at the school. We have quite a few guards located at the school due to the incidents that happened in the past, ones that we are in direct contact with." Muka explained. "The thing is, they haven't been able to locate the elder anywhere. I have asked the guards to keep watch over him, but they don't even know where he is, it's as if he's vanished."

This news was even more worrying for Layla. At least if they kept an eye on him they could relax, but if he had vanished, did it mean he had already accomplished what he had come to do.

"What about Minny, is she okay!" Layla said, as she was already grabbing a weapon from the table. It wasn't the black sword she had before but it was still a fine beast blade nonetheless.

"She's fine." Muka answered. "It was the first thing I asked. They say she is safe. The elder was seen leaving the school, but no one spotted him after that."

Still with the worry in her mind, Layla left heading for the school, but she wondered where had this elder disappeared to.

Inside the dark space, Xox was still confused as to what was going on. Where was he? It didn't feel like he was on the same world any longer. It almost felt similar to the celestial space, but it was completely different.

"Is this your doing, little boy?" Xox asked with a smile. It was the only person in the space with him, so it was the logical conclusion for him to come to.

"You!" Galen pointed. "Bad person, you stay here!"

The smile didn't drop from Xox's face, but he couldn't believe that he was getting a telling off right now, from a kid of all things.

"Look here you brat, do you even know who I am, I am a god." Xox explained. "A god is a person that is needed by the universe or is worshipped by many people. I'm not a bad person."

"You follow my sister!" Galen replied back straight away. "You sneak, and change what you look like. You ask a lot of questions about my family. You are a bad person."

After saying these words, Galen started to summon blood aura around his hands. It was powerful like a fire over his two fists.

"Your sister?" Xox repeated as he thought about the words from the young one. Yongbu had stated that there was also another child, a very young boy. Could this be the boy that he was talking about?

If it was his sister, then it meant that they were talking about his daughter as well.

'Crap, I'm not the best when it comes to fighting.' Xox thought. 'But I should at least be able to take on a kid right?'

Right in front of his eyes though, Galen had disappeared, and before he knew it, he was right by the side of his head. With a fist full of blood aura, he was hit on the side and sent flying across the room, skidding across the dark floor.

"SH***T, THAT HURT!" Xox screamed at the top of his lungs.

Xox's particular race didn't have any fighting powers apart from transforming into others, changing his appearance. Even if he changed into some type of beast it would be in appearance only. Sure, he could make his body have multiple limbs but it would just have his strength and nothing else, so it was practically useless in this type of situation, but there was always one trump card celestials always had when they were going up against other beings.

"Don't say I didn't warn you. There is a reason why I am a god, and you are nothing!" Xox said, as his hands started to glow with white energy. It shot out of his palms like a bright light.

Celestial energy had a special effect being more powerful than typical auras. The best way to fight celestial energy was with other celestial energy, otherwise one would have to have an aura several times more powerful than the celestial energy to match up with it.

This was why it wasn't impossible to kill celestials, but it was an incredibly hard thing to do, especially if one had a lot of celestial energy.

The red celestial energy started to gather in Galen's hands even more. Placing it out in front of him, he took the blow well. He pushed the energy and the white energy clashed against his hands but it was extremely powerful.

His small body was being pushed back, and so was his blood aura, it was starting to fade more and more, consuming it up.

"Arghhh!" Galen shouted out. His body started to glow, but it wasn't red, instead it started to glow slightly white in colour.

"This is... this is impossible." Xox said.

The next moment, the entirety of Galen's body was glowing with white energy, it came out from the palm of his hands and completely evaporated the energy that Xox had produced.

"You.... how can you have celestial energy, when you're not a celestial?" Xox asked.

Chapter 2431: The Ex Celestial's Son

It didn't take long for Layla to reach the school area, as she jumped large distances clearing the housing of the settlement. Not for a moment did she slow down, and Muka continued to follow from behind.

The vampire knights that were under Muka had been sent out to search the city, to look for Xoxy and update them as soon as they got any information. When reaching the school, Layla's search didn't stop there.

She used her telekinesis ability to raise her own body up so it was as if she was flying in the air, and from the top down she was keeping an eye out for anything that seemed strange and if she could spot the Mermerial.

'You would think a man in white and blue robes would stand out, but I can't see him anywhere.' Layla thought.

Vampires in general liked darker clothing, and very rarely, other than different shades of red, would they stray from this fashion sense. It was why the Mermerial elders with their white robes stood out like a sore thumb.

It was one of the reasons why she was finding it hard to believe such a person could just vanish without a trace.

While looking from above, a message was transferred directly into Layla's mind, coming from Muka.

"I searched the whole school from top to bottom personally, and there's no sign of anyone. I did it in a discreet way so they wouldn't find out, as well as not to panic the students." Muka said. "I can stay in the school if you would like, to make sure that Minny is safe, while you continue your search.'

At this point and time, Layla was happy to have someone reliable and as trusty as Muka, and decided to lower herself onto the rooftop of one of the houses near the school. She needed to think about this whole situation.

'Is he's missing, then I have no doubt that he's up to something, but he hasn't gone after Minny... wait!'

The whole mess on the Mermerial planet, for some reason, Quinn stated that there was a great interest in Galen from the celestials. He never fully explained the details as he said it was nothing for them to worry about, but what if it was?

'Galen... he went out again, exploring... with his shadow powers he might be even harder to find than the elder.' Layla thought.

It would be impossible for Layla to find Galen or the Elder they had come to know as Xoxy, because the two of them were still in the little vampire's shadow space. A

couple of shots had been fired at each other, and currently Xox felt like his eyeballs were going to pop out of his head.

"How... tell me how you can use celestial energy! Did Quinn make you a dedicated follower!" Xox shouted.

Minny was a dedicated follower so it would make sense for him to mark his son with some powers as well, but Xox could tell that this was different. Celestial energy was slightly different from celestial to celestial and the way it rose from within the child, it felt like it was his own.

At the same time, a celestial, at least one at Xox's level, could tell when they were in the presence of another celestial. Right now, it didn't quite feel like that, something felt off.

"Are you going to speak!" Xox shouted, since he was getting no answers, he decided to test it out again, he threw out a palm strike in the air.

A palm of energy went straight out to Galen. The strike was fast, but Galen could easily avoid it, yet he had chosen not to. He didn't quite understand what was going on, but he knew this white energy he could summon fared far better against the white energy that the enemy used.

Covering his own hand in the white energy, he ran forward and punched it, dispersing it in the air and turning the attack into nothing. The reason why he had thrown a strike back rather than just avoid the attack was because of the shadow space.

The more the shadow space was hurt, then eventually when one ran out of MC cells or an attack strong enough was used, it would break. It was just that most took a while to figure this out if they knew nothing about the shadow.

Not wanting this to happen, there was something else he could do, knock out his opponent so they couldn't destroy the space. With both of his hands surrounded by the glowing energy, Galen charged straight ahead.

'This little runt, he's too fast!'

Xox covered his body from head to toe with as much celestial energy that he could. If he couldn't keep up with the vampire then he would just have to protect himself.

A deep punch was delivered right in his gut, and Xox was trying his best to hold it in as his body was bent inwards, but it wasn't just one attack. Galen threw out punch after punch, repeatedly hitting the same area again.

His hands were moving at an incredibly fast speed, and the hits were making it so Xox's feet were unable to reach the floor. With each hit, they were getting stronger, as the energy around his stomach was starting to fade.

A desperate attempt was made and Xox swiped his hand, but he felt nothing but air as he continued to be hit in the same place, while his punches hit nothing.

'Is this it... is this how I'm going to die, to a little brat!' In that moment, Xox had practically given up, he had given up on fighting altogether, as his body hit the floor and all he could see was the black space from above.

Looking at the black sky, a realisation hit him.

"Now... I know what you are, you're an Incomplete Celestial... I'm such an idiot."

After worrying about Galen, Layla decided the first place she should check was the room, to see if he had returned. She rushed back, going in through the window rather than climbing up the many stairs in the castle.

"Galen!" She called out, searching anywhere she could including in the wardrobe.
"Galen where are you!"

Turning around, when she looked at the window she had entered from, she could see Galen was there. He was completely unhurt, and just had a smile on his face.

"Galen! Where did you go!" Layla shouted, and was about to rush over, until he raised his hand.

A shadow portal had appeared and falling out of the shadow portal, was an adult sized body that dropped to the ground. The face was swollen, the body looked rough, and there was blood on their clothing as well.

Layla looked at the person's face, and it looked familiar for some reason. Almost like the young elder she had seen today, only the traits of the Mermerial's ears, and the lightish blue skin had changed to look more like that of a vampires.

"Wait a second... is this the Elder! What is... is going on!"

Chapter 2432.1: Immortui Arrives (Part 1)

Inside the red space, there was a planet that was well known by all of the inhabitants. By sheer size it was the largest but that wasn't the reason why it was most well known among the inhabitants, it was because of its beauty.

It was the most beautiful planet in the red space, and many would travel during their lifetime just to see it. However, it had become a place to avoid, as strong beings would travel to the planet trying to claim it as their own.

It was usual for blood to shed in the red space, but on this planet, it was another story altogether, that was until one of the Champions had decided to stake claim to the planet. The Champion was named Pultra.

She was known as the strongest female in existence, and she had decided to take on the task of protecting the planet. If anyone dared to try and set claim to the planet, she would deal with them.

She proved her strength over and over until everyone knew to avoid the planet all together. However, just like all the other champions, she also fell when Immortui arrived, or at least that's what everyone believed.

No one other than the champion lived on the planet, meaning there was no one to witness their grand battle. They all assumed that Pultra lost just like all the others because the planet was no longer the same as it was before, it now had a new name, the land of the giants.

Just like the planet itself, the land had giant formations, large mountains, cliff edges that stuck out, rivers that felt more like seas. It was a planet of nature that was filled with green meadows.

Now, the planet had a living civilization as there were large buildings, gigantic weapons, paved roads and more. A lot of the natural beauty was still on the planet, but it wasn't the same sight as it was before.

As for the ones that lived on the planet, they were the demon race known as the Yaks. A race of giants with tusk like teeth that stuck upwards. Many of the giant green fields had been turned into large workshops. The Yak's were seen bringing over large pieces of rocks, tools, and were moulding something together, building hundreds of certain objects. The planet was slowly being changed, bit by bit as it was being used for its resources and minerals.

The Yak demon's liked to live in large temple-like structures, and for some reason they had a fondness towards the colour gold.

Wherever they could their buildings would have moulded objects coloured in gold all over them. The Yaks that were in a higher position tended to have more gold decorated over their body, and this was especially true for the demon king.

A golden palace sat on top of a giant waterfall. There looked to be no way to reach the top over then climbing up the cliffside. The place itself was made of pure gold and that included the throne inside.

Sitting down, covered in heavy gold bracelets that went from the wrist all the way up to the forearm, as well as a decorated gold helmet that pointed upward was the demon king known as Bisha. The leader of the Yak demon race, the race of the giants.

His head was leaning up against his fist, as he looked at the person in front of him.

"Lucem, it is incredibly rare for you to come see me, is there something you need building?" Bisha asked.

Due to the Yak's large size, great power and stamina, they were often called upon when it came to building projects for Immortui and his plans.

"The project is going smoothly on our side. We should have everything he needs ready in time."

Lucem, another demon king, the second right hand man of Immortui along with Tenbris stood there. He was covered from top to bottom in a strange white cloth like clothing. His body looked like a regular human, but the only part of his body that one could see were his eyes.

They were small, narrow, and completely black coloured unlike that of most demon's who's eyes tended to glow red.

Lucem raised his hand, to stop Bisha from speaking.

"That is not the case." Lucem said. "You can continue working on the project but Immortui wished for you to keep an eye on the champion Pultra. He states that if there are any signs of her trying to fight back, then you are free to deal with her, but make sure you keep her body, that way we can feed it to Unzoku."

The Champions had been kept captive for a long time now. All the demon kings knew the reason for doing so, which made them wonder what had happened so recently that made him change his mind.

"Is he not planning on attacking the Ancient Ones anymore? It is a shame I was greatly looking forward to facing them. I heard there was one that would be a perfect match for me to take on."

Lucem shook his head once more.

"It is quite the opposite. We are very close to our attack on the celestials, if anything we need to make sure that nothing goes wrong. You see, there has been a recent intruder, one of great strength, one that might even surpass the champions."

"Stronger than the champions?" The air around Bisha started to swirl around aggressively. Just like the natural inhabitants of this world, it was true for the demons and the demon kings, they also had an urge to do battle at any excuse.

"Actually, I would say he is certainly stronger than the champions. Which is why Immortui has decided to deal with him himself. If all goes well, then there is a good chance that he will join our side. If that's the case, then the champions are not needed anymore." Lucem explained, he lifted his head and the cloth around his face lifted as well, as his mouth muscles pushed it up.

It was how one could tell he was smiling despite his face being covered.

"At the moment there are no signs of Pultra acting out." Bisha replied. "Although, it would be next to impossible for her to learn of anything happening on the outside."

Unlike the other planets where the inhabitants still resided on the planets. The reason the current planet was known as the land of the giants was because only the Yaks lived there, and the single champion.

"If Immortui is dealing with the intruder himself, then there shouldn't be anything for us to worry about. It's a shame that I won't be able to face them. It's been a long time since I have been able to do anything. What about you, while your here, would you like to fight?" Bisha asked, the two tusk-like teeth started to grow larger and more upward, while his eyes glowed red.

"I will stay here until Immortui is done with his fight. He should be there about now, let's see how long our intruder lasts." Lucem repleid.

Chapter 2433.2: Immortui Arrives (Part 2)

In the destroyed Durum demon base, many of the Skullys that had been watching the fight between the demons, and were still there when Quinn had turned into a demon king had left the area.

When they saw their chance, they bolted out of there. There were only a handful that stayed in the forest to watch. Those that felt like there was nothing left for them to go back to and felt like what they were about to see was the future of what was going to happen.

In the very destroyed base itself, there was Quinn, the champion Calva, and the three Skullys. It had been a tense moment for them all, that was until they could feel a thick veil of red energy cover the entire area.

It was thick and felt heavy, almost smothering them, making it hard to breathe. The strangest thing for them was that this energy, it wasn't coming from below, it wasn't coming from the sides, but was coming from above like a slow rainfall.

All of them looked up at the sky which had drastically changed in colour. There was always a red mist that was in the air, and staring through the clouds one could see space that was a slightly darker red, but the stars and planets could be seen still.

It looked more like there was a type of red filter that was placed in front of them when looking at space. Making it only a little different from what they would experience from Earth's view.

Right now, it was drastically changing. The space looked like it was swirling around, and thick colours of red were appearing slowly. An almost type of illusion was being created. The space itself looked to be forming something, something incredibly large.

The giant red substance in the space was swirling around, continuously growing larger in size until it covered the whole sky. Not a single part of the space could be seen and now, just the thick red swirling red energy could be seen from above.

"Immortui." Calva said. "He's here!"

Every cell in Calva's body was initiating a fight or flight response. They were shaking with explosive energy, and his skin felt prickly like it was being stabbed by a thousand needles. He and his body knew this was Immortui, he well remembered everything he had seen the last time he had met with Immortui, and his entrance was just the same as it was before.

"Immortui... this is Immortui!" Quinn was grinding his teeth out of concern.

Now of all times to meet the enemy he was looking for. He was unable to transform into the demon form, he could hardly use any blood aura with the demon form taking nearly all of it, and his god-slayer armour was under repair.

That left him with just his physical capabilities and his Shadow abilities. If Immortui was really the great being he was touted to be, then Quinn, the way he was right now, stood no chance against him.

From the sky, the thick red substance was condensing together and spiralling towards the ground and it was heading right for the area they were in. Like a beam of energy, it hit the floor. A large shockwave rippled through the air.

The wind from the shockwave was strong, it made them feel like they were in a tornado. As the power hit the forest to the side, the giant trees were uprooted from the ground and were being destroyed by the energy, turning them into nothing.

Reaching out his hand to the side, Quinn opened up a shadow portal placing the three Skullys inside.

"Stay put, if you want to live!" Quinn shouted.

The three of them had disappeared and the action that Quinn had done didn't go unnoticed by Calva.

The two of them looked ahead, and the energy from the space was condensing down to one point where it had hit the ground. A dust tornado looked to be concentrated on one point, while sparks of red would be seen through it at times.

A shadowy figure could be seen as well, as more and more energy was coming from the space. Eventually, all of the red swirling energy in space disappeared, and it continued to flow down to the single point, then in an instant everything had stopped.

The strong wind, the thick mist in the air, the shockwaves, now there was just a single person standing there.

'This is... is Immortui!' Quinn said in his head.

Based on Quinn's first impressions he felt like this man was a lot more human than he thought. Especially compared to the demons he had seen. His skin was a dull grey all over but there wasn't much skin that could be seen on show.

The appearance Immortui had was that of a young man, perhaps just about to reach his thirties. His face was incredibly clean with no facial hair, but his jaw, his nose, and cheekbones were all incredibly sharp and slightly sunken in.

It was strange, based on the face alone, it was hard to say whether one would consider this person handsome, as there was something unsettling when one would just look at him.

Perhaps it was Immortui's eyes. The white in a human eyeball, it was completely black, while the iris of the eye was red in colour with the pupil of the eye being white. Quinn had seen a large number of creatures and a large number of demons, but he had never seen eyes like this.

They were deep, as if one was staring into space itself. From there, his hair, it was long and straight, swept back with half of it being white while the other half remained black.

The rest of Immortui's body, although it had a human shape, there was a strange armour that was fused with his body. It looked like armour, but it was swirling and moving around and it was moving with each breath he took as if it was alive.

The armour was black on Immortui's body and it covered his legs completely but around the waist, just on top of the thighs, it almost looked like teeth had been engraved in the armour, and by his hips, there were two large red eyes.

This was the main reason why Quinn felt it was hard to call it an armour, because the eyes on the black material by his hips were moving, clearly alive. Whether a part of Immortui's body or a living armour Quinn had no idea.

The armour then continued up the side of Immortui, leaving his stomach and abs on display. It was only because of his body, chest, and face that he knew he had grey skin, because the rest of his body, including his arms, were covered with this strange material.

'This is it... this being in front of me, is the one that caused so much trouble for the Ancient Ones. The person that created the vampires, and the one that has caused so much trouble in my life. This person is Immortui, the person I need to kill!'

Chapter 2434.1: Quinn vs Immortui (Part 1)

At the moment, all Quinn was doing was staring at Immortui. The strange blood area still existed, as Quinn's hardened blood that had pierced the Durum demons was still standing upright from the ground. Although most of their bodies had been blown away or disintegrated when Immortui had landed.

No one in the area was moving, only the sound of faint breathing could be heard. It sounded incredibly silent for a planet. Not even the wind was moving. It all came with the sudden appearance of Immortui, so they could only imagine it was his doing.

Lifting his head up, Immortui opened his mouth wide letting out a loud belly of laughter.

"HAHAHA!" The sound transmitted through the air. It wasn't amplified or sounded ear bursting like some forms of power. Instead it almost sounded like Immortui was laughing right next to both Quinn and Calva, while he was many metres away.

"After all this time, I finally get to meet you." Immortui said. "This really isn't how I would have liked to have met. I tried to communicate to you so many times, in so many different ways, and now you have decided to come to me, and the first thing you do is cause a large disturbance."

With his strange black and white coloured eyes, Immortui was looking at the area. He was reconstructing in his head what had happened at the scene. Just from the fight with his demon king, he was trying to gauge just how strong the fight was.

"Was it a one sided battle even with all the Durum demons? It looks like you have almost made an entire demon race, and not just any, one of my greatest creations, extinct."

Immortui was smiling when he said this, making it hard to tell whether he was happy or upset by this fact.

From Quinn's memories the fight was fairly easy in his demon form, and if one was to look at just his body, Immortui was right he was hardly hurt, but he had lost a lot in that battle, more than one realised.

"Well, why don't we call it even, and start with a fresh slate." Immortui suggested. "You killed an entire demon race that was my own creation, and I killed some vampires that you cared about. So why don't we have a calm talk."

Quinn really didn't want to talk, he was doing everything in his power to stop himself from charging in and attempting to knock his head off. He knew though, that despite the fact that he couldn't feel any energy coming off from this celestial in front of him, he was powerful.

Trying to do something by surprise would do nothing, and right now it was best for Quinn to buy some time. Who knew how long it would take for his armour to heal, and for his demon form to come back.

Although he didn't want to rely on the latter, he was in a situation where he might have to.

"What do you want?" Quinn asked.

A big smile appeared on Immortui's face, because he felt like he had caught Quinn's attention.

"I'm sure with the way you are, the strength you have gathered, you have already experienced some of the misdoings from the ones that call themselves the gods." Immortui stated. "The ones who call themselves Ancient Ones who have been ruling everything the way they wish for so long."

"Those hypocritical b*stards!" Immortui fist pulsed black and white, turning his entire fist monochrome for a moment before fading back away. "I did everything they said. I followed their ways and continued to gather celestial power, all for the sake of keeping the world balanced as they stated."

"I continued to grow stronger and my influence in the celestial space as well as the golden space was growing. When I had finally reached the same level as them, I expected to be given a hand to join them. A seat and to be treated as an equal."

"After all, according to their philosophy, if I obtained power and influence able to match theirs, then wasn't that the will of the Universe. Didn't they want me to get as powerful as them in order to balance things out?"

"No instead they shunned me, they tried to push me out and trample me, so I was unable to match them in power. There were no rules, those Ancient Ones were just making up sh*t as they go, because they were the ones at the top."

"I bet with you they are doing the same thing. As you grow stronger, they are growing more fearful of you, Quinn. They will do everything they can to stunt your growth, and if they aren't able to control you, then they will get rid of you."

"For me, they were unable to get rid of me. The Universe wouldn't allow it, because it is my duty to get rid of them. The Universe has given me a destiny and that is what I will accomplish."

Hearing out Immortui, Quinn could understand how he had come this way. He had watched the celestials caring nothing but about completing their condition, as it fed them. The lives on the planets they overlooked, thousands of years passed so it meant nothing to them.

In the end, what kept all of the celestials going was their belief that the universe had given them this condition in order for it to keep on going. For Immortui he felt like he was just doing that.

He had long ago disconnected from the individual lives on each planet, and instead just did everything for the sake of his goal. In some ways it was the way Quinn had to force himself to think while he was here in the red space.

He had to ignore everything to get what he wanted. In the end, every person, the Ancient Ones, Immortui, and Quinn himself, were all being selfish, but Quinn was being selfish in the fact that he wanted to protect the people he cared about. Whereas Immortui's selfishness had a path of destruction, a war with the Ancient Ones.

Who cared who was right or wrong, for Quinn he just wanted the best path to live a happy life.

"Whether I understand you or not, it doesn't really matter, nor whether I agree with you or not." Quinn said. "But what I want to know, why me, why did you need to drag me into all of this."

"Can't you go and wage your war, fight the Ancient Ones, without having to get the ones I care about involved?" Quinn asked.

"Because you have a piece to play in all of this as well." Immortui answered. "You are a piece of my creation whether you like it or not. And whether I liked it or not, your power had stopped my many attempts at growing my own power, and now I see why. All of that was to allow you to grow stronger, and in turn, your strength will help me break free from this, and together we will be able to defeat the Ancient Ones."

"What I should ask you, Quinn, is what do you want, do you not want to fix the mistakes you made? What if I told you, there was a way for you to do that? For you to rescue all of those loved ones you care about so much?" Immortui asked.

Chapter 2435.2: Quinn vs Immortui (Part 2)

What was Immortui talking about right now? Was he just rambling on, was he trying to convince Quinn by making promises to bring back the dead, just how he had convinced Zero and the others as well? He knew how that went for them, and it didn't end well.

"What are you talking about? Take everything back? Are you saying you can bring back the dead?" Quinn asked.

"As expected, those Ancient Ones told you nothing." Immortui smiled. "The energy in the universe is constantly growing. The energy never lessens and continues to grow just like the universe. More lives are born than in the past and the celestials' powers grow in turn."

"What is important to note about what I said, is that the energy never fades away. The energy in the universe simply gets moved about, this is true even in death. There is a reason why the celestials are obsessed with completing their conditions, including the Ancient Ones, it is because it gives them more energy to use, gives them more energy to warp the universe the way they wish."

"For me it is true as well. When I had gained a mass amount of celestial energy a new power was unlocked in me too. I had obtained the power to control this energy and in particular the energy of the dead."

"As I stated before, energy is never lost, it just passes through in different places, to different areas. Even here, the energy all around us, comes from the world of the dead. It leaks in, mixing with all the inhabitants, making them have an urge to continue on killing."

"I'm sure you've seen it, the demon kings have the power to control this energy of the dead, and it is the same for me. I can make a connection with those on the brink of death and bring them back, giving them the energy that they lost in that moment."

Quinn didn't quite understand where this was going, but he imagined this was how Immortui was able to convince the others. There were of course many that he would have wished to have brought back, Arthur and Leo to name a few, there were too many that had been lost.

"So you are saying you can bring back the dead, if you can then bring them back now, and I might consider helping you!"

Immortui just chuckled.

"I can not bring back the dead." Immortui satted. "My power is closely linked with death, I can just save someone on the brink of death. I can, in some capacity, bring back the dead, but they would only be a fraction, an empty shell of what they were.

"They would possibly have the same power, but memories, feelings, things like that would no longer exist. It would be hard to say that they are the same person."

It came as a surprise that Immortui was actually honest. He could have just lied to Quinn saying he would bring them back, so why would he tell Quinn this.

"However, there is a way to bring back everyone you cared about. Remember what I said, the more powerful a celestial is, the more energy they have, the more they are able to control this energy. One example is the energy I can use with the dead, as for the celestials they have the energy to control time itself." Immortui explained.

"I'm sure you've seen it for yourself. The celestial space has a completely different time compared to others. That messenger of theirs, Mundus, who can freeze time within a time frame. With all the Ancient Ones put together they can change the universe back to the way it once was."

Quinn had heard about this, he thought about the possibility of it as well. There were powers that could even do things on a small scale, so what was being said wasn't out of the realm of possibility.

"But if we were to do that, won't everything change? That includes everything you have done. Wouldn't I have to go through it all again?" Quinn asked.

"No." Immortui answered. "God-slayers and Celestials are different beings. There is a reason why the Ancient Ones have become so vain to call ourselves gods or place god in the name. We are unaffected by the powers of celestial energy.

"Time can be changed for the Universe itself, going back to the way it was, energy being converted back to what it once was, but the celestials and the god slayers, they will remain intact and will remember everything. You can have everything you desire, bringing back those you care about while losing nothing.

"The difference will be, I will be at the top of the gods and I will make sure to not bring injustice to those that naturally race up. You, due to your strength, will have anything you want, live the life you wished to live without any interference from higher beings!"

Bringing back the people he lost, it sounded like an amazing thing initially but what did it actually mean. What about those that weren't celestials and god slayers. Would Minny and Layla be reverted back to the time at the military academy, would she live a life without him being there?

Although he would keep all of his memories, all the memories that they spent together would be lost, and essentially that life that was lived, everything everyone went through would be gone as well.

The lives that had already been made, due to the connections that people had because of what they had been together would be all lost. Because what, the universe, the people were all just forms of energy.

Energy that would be reverted back to a certain point? If Quinn was to make a decision like that, all the current lives, everything would be destroyed in a sense. Who was he to make a decision like that, what right did he have to affect so many lives? He was just a regular being who wanted to look after the lives of those he cared about.

Quinn had pretty much made up his mind, he would stop Immortui. If he didn't join him, if Immortui got his way, there was a good chance that his current life, everyone's current life, would be destroyed as Immortui did a great restart on the world.

"I... I don't even know how to break you out of here." Quinn said. "As I said before, why do you need me?"

Immortui paused for a second, the smile completely dropped from his face.

"I can tell, you don't... believe in me." Immortui said. "Do you know how long I've lived? Do you really think I'm a fool? I know, you right now, you don't have any intention of working with me, I can tell by the tone of your voice, you have made your decision."

"So why are you asking me a useless question like that? I know, you're trying to buy time, I guess I've done enough talking."

Stretching out both of his arms, Immortui placed them by his waist, and a ball of aura started to grow around both of them. Once again, the same thing as Quinn had seen before, he could see now.

The area where his aura was extending, it was just black and white, and a few greys. No colour could be seen, as the power from his fists radiated and had a monochrome effect, as if it was taking the life out of the very air itself.

Meanwhile neither Quinn's demon from, nor his armour had returned.

Chapter 2436.3: Quinn vs Immortui (Part 3)

"So far, while Immortui and Quinn conversed, Calva had done nothing but listen to the conversation.

It had somewhat interested him why the ones they called Demons had taken over their world. He had heard pieces and bits while being tied up and now, hearing directly from Immortui himself, he understood more.

Immortui had been sent to this world and was trapped. He didn't come to conquer all the planets or enslave all of the races; he was simply building up an army to go against those that trapped him down here.

The more he learned, the more cruel he thought these people had to be, allowing all of their kind to suffer. Sure, they had their own problems, but they had amplified and gotten worse with the addition of the demons joining in. Yet, they were abandoned by these beings of great power just because they were too afraid of Immortui.

The conversation was quite an interesting one for Calva to follow, especially the words about reversing time. But it seemed like a matter that was far too complicated for him to worry about.

Instead, he had to make a choice. The reason he hadn't moved, attacking Immortui or Quinn, was because he didn't know how this conversation was going to play out. Would Immortui be able to convince Quinn and bring him to his side? After all, the two of them were demons, so they had to share some type of relationship.

If the two did decide to team up, then there was no fight left in Calva. It was pointless to go against both of them. At the same time, technically he hadn't done anything wrong. There was no rebelling, and he hadn't even killed one demon.

So, he would simply just give himself up. But there was a chance that Quinn would try to fight. The conviction in the words that Quinn had spoken—they sounded real and strong, as if nothing was going to get in his way.

And he had seen a side of Quinn that the demons and the others would never show. He had compassion for another race. He had saved the Skullys in the midst of everything. It led Calva to believe that this was a good person, and maybe he should do what he could to support him.

Now that it looked like Immortui had figured out Quinn's plan, he was on the move.

"I have one last thing to say to you then!" Quinn shouted, as the shadow enclosed both of his hands, riding up to his elbow.

"I'm gonna f*cking kill you!" Quinn stated.

Appearing in both of Calva's hands were two large bone spears, the same that he had made when he went to attack Quinn.

"Quick, we have to stop him now with everything we have. Don't let him use his power!" Calva screamed.

There was a great urgency in his voice, panic in his actions as he threw the spears through the air. There was great power behind them, as if he had put everything he had on the line in throwing both of these spears.

They were filled with even more energy when they were thrown at the demon Quinn. With this much urgency, Quinn felt like something had to be up. This wasn't just a regular person but a champion who had fought against Immortui before.

It wasn't the time to fight Immortui at full strength. Quinn needed to do whatever he could to win. Looking around, thinking about what he could do, he stretched both of his hands outward.

'I may not have any blood aura left inside me, but I can still control the blood all around!'

The blood on the floor from the dead demons, the blood from the hardened blood like trees, Quinn could use that. Blood lifted from the air, the condensed blood around broke down, around where Immortui was at.

It swirled around in the air and went straight toward Immortui at full force. The two powerful attacks were breaking through the air. Unfazed, Immortui stood his ground and lifted both of his hands.

The spear was quickly grabbed by one hand of Immortui's, and it felt like all of the power was being lost until it dropped from the floor. Similarly, the same thing seemed to be happening with Quinn's attack.

The red aura was swirling around, and when it touched Immortui's hand, the color of the attack was fading. Even though only a small portion had touched Immortui's hand, it was spreading across all of the vampire aura and at a quick speed, getting rid of its color and its energy.

'What is this... I have to do something fast!' Quinn thought.

With his blood control, he broke off the blood aura from the large-scale attack. The colorless power continued spreading through the rest of the aura, and when it had consumed it all, it turned into nothing. All of the attack's energy had been completely drained.

There was still plenty of blood on the battlefield that Quinn could use, and for now, he had gathered quite a bit of it around himself, condensing it down in the forms of balls behind his back.

"What is his power? What is happening?" Quinn asked.

It was clear that what he was using right now wasn't celestial energy, nor was it the energy that was naturally in the planet. This was Immortui's own power.

"I don't really know," Calva replied. "But this is only a part of his power; this isn't where the problem begins."

There was a reason for Calva saying this. Immortui raised his hand in the air, a ball of colorless power still in a ball shape around his hand.

"Unbroken world!" Immortui said.

The power spread out from his fist in all directions, and the color was starting to disappear from the space itself. Not just around his arms but in the air as well. Everything was losing its color, showing only whites, blacks, and grays.

It was as if everything had turned into a grayscale picture. It continued to spread out, even when it touched the blood as well as the hardened blood, the color disappeared from that as well, until it eventually reached the area both Quinn and Calva were in.

As soon as it hit them, almost all of the power in their bodies felt like it had gone completely. Quinn was unable to feel the blood aura, and he could almost feel the strength draining from him straight away.

He looked at Calva, who was covered in a sweat, looking as if he could barely move.

'I... have to do something!' Quinn thought.

The shadow that covered both his hands was the only thing that had color, but who knew for how long. Just like the energy that was draining from him, it felt like the power was being drained from his shadow as well, just at a slower pace.

With his hand reached out, Quinn could only do one thing.

[Shadow lock]

Calva disappeared, and then looking at Immortui, Quinn used the skill one more time.

[Shadow lock]

He himself had disappeared into the shadow as well.

Chapter 2437.4: Quinn vs Immortui (Part 4)

Quinn had been in many battles and he had experienced a large number of different abilities. He had even fought against Sil who had the ability to recreate some of the strongest powers in the world.

He had fought against celestials with their strange energy and had experienced the power of Mundus, the messenger of the gods, with his power of time. Yet this power from Immortui, the ability to make the world and the area colourless, was something he had never experienced before.

The power not only affected his attacks, but affected the energy from within, including the energy that was in his own body. He could feel it being eaten away, and it had even affected his shadow powers.

The shadow, the god slayer ability that was able to protect him so many times, worked against even Mundus with his power of time, yet the energy from his own shadow that was meant to block out everything was being drained.

If it wasn't for the shadow's effect of slowing things down, then maybe even the shadow wouldn't have worked, and Quinn wouldn't have been able to escape here, to his shadow space.

"You two... you're okay!" Anon shouted.

The Skully ran over with the other two by his side, but soon stopped. They realised that they weren't quite close enough to embrace or check on one another, it was just when they were thrown into this black world where they were unable to see anything, they had somewhat thought they perhaps had gone into the afterlife.

No one knew what the after life was, and none of them understood what had happened either. Now seeing both Calva and Quinn, it meant they hadn't died, or the two of them had died as well. They were hoping it wasn't the latter.

"The shadow... Thankfully it worked." Quinn said, taking in a big breath of air.

When hit by Immortui's power, even breathing felt quite difficult.

"We escaped, we managed to actually escape from Immortui!" Calva said, staring at his large hands. He even rubbed them together, just in case he was imagining things, because he too felt like he might have been in the afterlife.

"We haven't quite escaped." Quinn said, as he stood up straight with concern on his face. He wondered, how different would things be if he had his demon form and if he had his armour.

Was this a celestial power, would the god slayer armour be able to protect him from something like this, and even if it could what about the rest? So far Quinn had

only experienced a glimpse of Immortui's powers and already he had so many questions whether he could win or not, he hadn't even taken a hit from the other side.

"What do you mean, where are we?" Calva asked.

"This is part of my power, for now we are simply just hiding from Immortui, but we can't hide here forever, and I'm sure someone like him will find a way to break in, even here. In fact, there is a good chance that if his power is still active, that eventually this will break as well and all of us will end up back on the battlefield." Quinn explained.

Simultaneously, nearly all of them gulped.

"Do you know a way... to battle against this power?" Quinn asked.

Calva was thinking, he was thinking of the battle he had against Immortui, in truth, he couldn't think of a way, but he didn't want to say that, so instead he decided to provide information.

"The power, it seems his own body is unaffected by it. While everything around him and the energy around is being drained, he can move just fine. His strength and speed is no less than the other demon kings, but because of this power, he is always above the others.

"When going against him, he had used the power continuously for a long time, so I have no idea how long he can use or keep this up for. However, I believe that his power has to have a range. You saw him use it only on the palm of his hands at first, then it spread out. As long as you are out of the colourless zone you will be unaffected."

It was a tactic, the only tactic that Calva could think of, but not one they could use. Right now, they were already in the colourless zone. If Quinn came out, he would be drained, and Immortui would catch him before he could escape.

Not only that, but when Quinn looked around him, he couldn't see the need of the colourless zone either.

'That could be because I was being affected by the colourless power.' Quinn thought. 'Since it's covering a certain area, then from the inside, everything outside still appears colourless, but it's only a guess. If his range is far, then I will have to try and fight him from a distance.'

"What about your demon form!" Ekeke shouted.

Moments ago, they were frightened of the demon form, but it seemed to be their only hope in a situation like this. Calva didn't want to say anything, but he thought

even the demon form would be affected by the colourless power. Still, it was worth a try at least.

"I can't." Quinn answers. "I don't have the energy to do that again."

"Then can't we just hide in here, until you can?" Tuni asked.

The least they could do was stay in here until the powers of Immortui affected the hiding place. Who knew if it even would. Maybe they could stay in here indefinitely.

Quinn shook his head.

"It's not possible."

It wasn't the time for him to go into details about the matter but the shadow space while inside it had a strange effect. The passage of time didn't really move. While inside, his blood aura, his active skills, and his demon form reset none of it would be changed.

Quinn couldn't just enter his shadow space, wait for his powers to come back and then fight again. A good example of this was Minny, when she had remained in the shadow space for so long, she hadn't aged at all once coming out of it.

So no matter how long they stayed here, it wouldn't make a difference, and just in case Immrotui would break them out of here, he needed to think of something fast.

"There's only one thing I can do." Quinn said, and he looked over at the Skully. Who would have thought that his encounters with these strangers would lead to this, lead to him trusting them with an important task.

"This isn't probably what you want to hear right now, but it's what you have to hear." Quinn said, looking at them each dead straight in the eye. "I have lost this fight... no matter what I do, I will lose this fight."

Chapter 2438.5: Quinn vs Immortui (Part 5)

The Champions were called champions for a reason, because they had won many battles over the course of thousands of years. Calva knew a lot about fighting and one of the most important things when heading into a battle, was to believe that there was a way you could beat your opponent.

When Calva had seen Quinn, he believed that they had a chance, a chance to get rid of Immortui, especially after seeing his strong demon form, and now he was hearing these words, the words of someone who could never win.

'Was I wrong... was I wrong to put hope into this person, who has given up already.' Calva felt like he had made a mistake, and with it, his life was over. He had rebelled and attempted to attack Immortui, who had made it clear that he was not to attempt to do such a thing or face the consequences.

He had already attempted once again in the past, resulting in him being chained up. Doing so again, he could only imagine what the punishment would be this time.

"I can't use my full strength, so inevitably I will lose this fight no matter what." Quinn said. "I have come to accept that, I've had to come to accept that."

"Which is why, I need all of you here to do something important for me."

The last words of a dying man, why should any of them bother doing something like this, and if Quinn died, why would they survive.

"Firstly, I will head back out there on my own and face Immortui. I will do whatever I can to try to find a way to defeat this power but there's a good chance I won't succeed. Which is why I want you to stay in the shadow space for as long as you can."

"But, if you go out there, and lose, won't that mean you'll die, what does that mean for the shadow space." Anon asked.

Quinn had thought about this quite a bit, playing the scenario in his head, while thinking about the conversation he had with Immortui.

"I said that I would lose the fight, not that I would die." Quinn said, looking toward Calva. "What do you think he would do, if I was to lose the fight."

A realisation had hit Calva. He knew Immortui, knew exactly what he would do, because he had done the same thing to the Champions before.

"He won't kill you, he'll keep you alive, so he can convince you, and use you in his battle against the celestials." Calva answered.

Quinn nodded in agreement.

"That's right. Immortui needs me alive to get out of this place, and on top of that, he wants to use me in his grand fight. I'm pretty confident that he won't kill me, I'm pretty sure... most likely."

Never before had Quinn had to think this way, where a fight would result not in his death. It was hard to imagine he would be kept alive, which was why he was hesitating with his words slightly.

"This is why I need you guys to stay in the shadow for as long as possible. I have no idea what he plans to do with me, or how he plans to try and convince me to go over to his side, but he can't be around me all the time."

"I suggest all of you to stay here as long as possible, and when the time is right, to attack the shadow space around you. With your strength, I believe that you guys can break out of the place, and when you do, you will be wherever I am at that moment and time."

The situation felt tense for them all. They understood the type of risk that was involved. For one, how long would they stay in the shadow space, and when to break out. If they chose a wrong time, then they could just be facing Immortui all over again, not making their current situation any better.

"Then what?" Calva said. "We get to escape with our lives to be chased by Immortui and his demon kings. All we are doing is hiding!"

"No." Quinn said. "I'm trusting you the most." His finger was pointed right at Calva.

"These three, they told me stories about how strong you were, about the strength you had to fight against Immortui. So much so that they were sure if the two of us worked together we could take him down, I'm just sorry I'm not at my best right now."

"You saw what happened to me and my demon form. At the moment I'm unable to control it, but I feel that there is a chance that I can."

"My race, my kind, my power is all dependent on blood. When I consumed the demon king's blood, not only did I get a boost in power, but I was also able to control a part of myself."

"There are five great demon kings under Immortui's command, correct?"

Quinn asked this question, knowing there were other demon races that Immortui had created but the system was specific in his request, so he needed to make this part of the quest clear.

"I need the blood of the five demon kings, and five demon generals that are under Immortui command, the strongest in his army. With that, my demon form will be stronger and I'll be able to control myself."

Now Calva understood why Quinn was talking to him and not the others, to get the blood of the demon kings. It practically meant fighting against all of them, going against them and that just wasn't possible for anyone but the champions.

"I made the stupid decision to come here on my own in the end." Quinn said. Memories in his head went through of those that were close to him. Those that were extremely powerful.

Not wanting to get them involved, had perhaps cost him, and in turn if he failed, it meant that they would all suffer.

"Because of that I have to put my trust in all of you." Quinn stood up and started to walk away from the others in the black space. "Save the other champions, rally up the inhabitants and get that blood."

"You make it sound easy." Calva smirked. "Even if we get the blood, then we have to somehow get to you as well."

Seeing Calva smile, and ask these questions, it gave Quinn confidence.

"I'll take your questions as a fact that you're willing to take on the challenge. The Skullys were right about the two of us working together, I guess they just never thought it would quite be this way."

"Get me that blood, If you do, I will do everything in my power to defeat Immortui."

Quinn's body started to sink into the shadow in the ground and his body was gone, he was back on the battlefield ready to face Immortui once more.

Chapter 2439.6: Quinn Vs Immortui (Part 6)

A world covered in black and white. Immortui stood with his power still out, staying in one place. He had seen it for the first time while using his power, an enemy got away from him.

'That power, he certainly is a special one. I wonder how he was still able to use it?' Immortui thought. 'Is he still in this area?'

Immortui started to walk around, scouting the area with his eyes. He looked but could see nothing. There was some movement in the forest, and with a few steps and a leap he eventually landed inside.

The forest had been completely destroyed, the large trunks of the trees now littered the ground, covering the floor space. As Immortui stood on top of it, he looked closer at the sign of movements he could see.

It was a Skully, its arms and legs were twitching. One of the ones that had stayed behind and was being affected by Immortui's power. It was trying to reach for its throat, finding it hard to breathe.

Immortui could tell that the Skully's heart was still beating, but it was slowing down at that moment.

"Why did you fools stay, did you think you could witness a type of spectacle, now you have just made your fate arrive quicker." Immortui said.

All of the movements that were in the forest were from the Skullys that had decided to stay and watch, thinking he was wasting his time, Immortui leapt back to where he last was. He stood on the field, still thinking that if he had teleported, then Quinn would have used that power before, yet he didn't so it had to be something else.

Closing his eyes, Immortui started to focus.

'Let's see, if he was able to use his powers, then the colourless power should still be taking effect. Energy should be taken out from somewhere around here.'

Focusing, still with his eyes closed Immortui started to walk.

'When was the last time I've had to try this hard to track a person down?' Immortui smiled to himself, as he continued to follow where his powers were taking the energy away from, and after circling one area for a while he had found it.

'So you're hiding here, yet I can't see you, but the energy is still being lost here. This skill is really interesting, is it like the celestial spaces one can create?' Immortui thought.

He shifted his leg through the ground, as he dragged it back the dirt made a pile behind his foot. He bent inward from his hips, and placed one of his hands right by his side. Swirling from behind, what looked like a wingless dragon had appeared.

It had the same red demonic eyes as what was on his legs. It swirled around his hand until it attached onto it like a type of tattoo, and on his knuckles the red eyes showed.

"What an appropriate name for this attack." Immortui thought, as he readied himself to throw it. "Break the world!"

Ready to throw his fist, a dark portal had appeared in the air, at the very spot he was aiming for, and out of that portal Quinn was there. This time as he came out, he was in his full shadow body. Not an inch of his skin could be seen.

However, Immortui knew immediately that it was Quinn.

'If this attack hits, there's a good chance he won't make it!'

The fist had already been thrown through, while it was mid-movement, Quinn was doing everything in his power to move away from the strike. He shifted his body and twisted to the side allowing the fist to hit the air right next to him.

When the strike hit, the air itself looked as if it was cracking. Several cracks with distorted space, and out from the fist, black energy was pouring out. It looked like millions of snakes were scurrying in the air.

'What was that attack!' Quinn was only looking at the aftermath, the power that was involved, and based on just its looks he had no idea what it would do if that type of attack was to hit his body.

'It's a good thing I used the shadow body, it's somewhat blocking out the colourless effect, so I could still move the same way as before, otherwise that attack would have hit me.'

At the same time, this was now an opportunity for Quinn to strike. The blood, although colourless, could be somewhat moved on the battlefield. Two swords had been created, and were aimed right at Immortui from behind, while Quinn threw out a punch from underneath, mustering all the Qi he could gather.

"Thos swords won't even reach me!" Immortui stated, and he was right. The blood swords crumbled into nothing but ash, they hadn't even made it within a metre of Immortui and as for the fist, it had hit nothing but the air.

"It seems you're slowing down a little." Immrotui said, his hand right on Quinn's face.

With his hand touching the shadow, it started to disappear, revealing Quinn's face from underneath, and the next moment it was slammed right into ground. Immortui didn't let up as he was twisting Quinn's face left and right continuing to push him further into the ground.

With both of his hands, Quinn grabbed onto Immortui's arms, as he did the shadow started to disappear from his hands as well. He then lifted Quinn up in the air by his face.

"I see, you have those powers, the god slayer powers that those Ancient Ones are so afraid of." Immortui chuckled. "How could they be so scared of something like this? Now I know, the time has passed, they need replacing."

Still holding Quinn by his head, he then smashed him into the ground once again, causing large cracks to form on the floor beneath. He lifted his head and repeated it. Quinn's entire body was being toyed with as if he was a child, no it was more as if he was a baby.

The process repeated, again, and again, until the strength in Quinn's arms were fading, he no longer was able to hold onto Immortui's forearms, and they dropped to his side.

"Oh, do you think you're done, do you think you can just stop here?" Immortui asked.

The colourless power, it started to retract from the surrounding area. Colour was coming back to the planet, the Skullys in the distance could now breathe again. Eventually all of the power had disappeared.

"You have to have a reason to want to join my side, so I'm going to make you experience hell."

Immortui was still holding onto Quinn's face and the red energy that was in the air, started to swirl towards his hand that was on top of Quinn. The energy then started to enter through Quinn's mouth, his eyes, his ears, and through the very pores of his skin.

His whole body started to shake, violently, as if he was having a seizure. His mind it felt like he was being stabbed in the head several times, and alarm bells were ringing in his head.

[Danger!]

[Danger!]

[System overload]

[The user is being overloaded]

[Error]

[Error]

[Error]

Chapter 2440.7: Quinn Vs Immortui (Part 7)

The system error screens, they wouldn't stop pinging, and for some reason everytime a message would come up, a great shock would be sent into his body. It felt like he was being stabbed all over at once, what was worse, the pain, it felt the same as when he was human.

As a vampire, his vampire self, it almost was as if his injuries were relatively dulled. A simple cut wouldn't hurt as much, allowing him to continue on fighting. Even with serious wounds, Quinn would be able to continue battling, but if he felt this type of pain while out on the battlefield, he didn't think he would even be able to move if he wished.

'What is going on? Why is the system going crazy, and why the heck is it affecting my body, is this something to do with Immortui?'

Before he knew it, blood was trickling out of Quinn's mouth. It was foaming up and spilling to the sides. To the point where even Immortui thought that something was strange.

Blood continued to trickle out of Quinn's mouth and even ran down Immortui's arm.

"I thought you were strong, your body can't even handle this, what is wrong with you!" Immortui was almost furious at how fragile Quinn was. He had done something similar with the last champions and yet they had never had a reaction like this.

The red energy that was swirling toward Quinn's head stopped, and Immortui threw Quinn to the ground. His body bounced off the floor, while creating a large dent in the ground, a small crater around his body, before he landed again.

Now lying flat out on his back, Quinn's body was shaking uncontrollably, as if it was being shocked.

[Error]

[Error]

[Error]

The screens continued to pop in front of Quinn, and his sight was starting to blur. Not just his sight, but the system screens in front of him were glitching, and they started to zap all over his view.

His hand reached out, until eventually, the shocks stopped, and Quinn's arm fell to his side.

"What was that all about?" Immortui said. He was cautious to approach Quinn. "At least, he is still alive. Right now in his mind, he should be going through hell. When he wakes up, he will beg me never to go back or experience that type of pain again, and if it doesn't work, I'll just have to repeat the process a few times."

Immortui started to walk forward.

"It's a shame I didn't get to experience the full extent of your powers and skills. To have the power to defeat a demon king, I'm sure you amount to more than what I just saw, but I need you on my side, and I'm getting sick and tired of waiting."

Leaning down, Immortui went down to pick up Quinn, but as he did, his body disappeared. Sensing an energy to his side, he looked to his right.

"The... Boneclaw!" Immortui blinked a few times, wondering what the familiar was doing here, and why he would be brave enough to take Quinn right from underneath him.

"Get away from him!" Two voices shouted.

Turning his head once again, Immortui could see two fists coming towards him. One had a strange head tail wrapped around his arm, powering it with a familiar energy, it was celestial energy. While the other was covered in a red armour that was radiating with power even in a place like this.

As his fist moved through, energy was gathering from the sides like a meteorite going through space. The two fists landed flush, right on Immortui's chin, sending him up in the air and his body spinning several times.

Swinging his arms by his side, Immortui had managed to balance himself, and looked at the two below.

"Who are you... how are there more people that have come over to this side?" Immortui thought. "And who would be foolish enough to come here!"

In the air, lightning struck right at Immortui's body. Several bolts from around a hundred different locations were hitting his body all at once. The armour on his body was reacting as it moved and swirled after being hit.

"Who would be foolish enough to come here!" Sil said in the air, with his hundred clones all around, still firing out the lightning. "His friends who are going to make you pay!"

A portion of the lightning had stopped, to allow two of the Sil's through. At that moment, two of them had giant hands which smashed right into Immortui. It pushed him out of the air, and sent him to the ground, but Immortui didn't crash.

Instead, he was using his strength to push back against the fists.

"I was surprised at first, so I was a little caught off guard. You guys are quite strong, you will make great additions to my army!" Immortui shouted, and the colourless glow started to surround his two fists.

From behind, one of the Sil clone's had teleported and grabbed onto Immortui, right after, the two of them disappeared and were no longer on the battlefield.

Now, Immortui along with one of the Sil clones, were on a completely different planet, the ground itself was a metallic blue colour with large shards all over the place.

"What did you do?" Immortui said, as he went to swing his arm, but it had hit nothing as Sil had teleported again to his side.

"As long as we are here, we will never let you get Quinn." Sil stated. "He is someone who has protected us for a long time, and now it's our time to protect him."

The moment Sil had finished his sentence, Immortui's fist was right through his stomach.

"Then you shall all die."

Sil smiled at that moment.

"Too bad for you, I'm just a clone."

The body completely disappeared from sight, and now Immortui was left on his own on a cold surface.

"Arghhhh!" Immortui roared and the energy swirled around the whole planet breaking off large chunks of rocks, flying off into the space around him.

Back on the desert-like floor, Edvard, Peter, and the real Sil had regrouped.

"That was a close one." Sil said.

"Is he alive?" Peter asked.

"His heart, it's still beating." Edvard said. "But, I'm more worried about that other guy coming back, we need to get out of here and fast. Far away!!!"

"Agreed, everyone grab onto me!" Sil shouted.

They did as asked, and grabbing onto Sil, he started to focus. His power, it was harder to use, or to direct it, when he had no clue where he was going. Before he

was directing it towards noise he could hear so he had some idea. What he didn't want to do was end up teleporting to the same planet he had just come from.

Closing his eyes, they teleported , moving from place to place, but Sil was frightened. He teleported again as soon as they appeared somewhere, and again.

"What's wrong, why aren't we stopping!" Evard asked.

They could only see a place for a few moments before Sil would continue to teleport, one after the other.

"We have to get further away!" Sil said. Continuing to teleport, again, and again. Sweat was running down his face and he was exhausted, and it was clear to the others that something was wrong.

Just where would they end up, and what was wrong with Sil?

Chapter 2441.1: Quinn down (Part 1)

The frantic teleporting continued as Quinn was held onto by the others, and it almost felt like the others didn't even have time to ask what was going on. They kept going to a new area, even if there was no one around Sil would teleport them once again.

In the end, Peter was the one that got fed up the most.

"STOP!" Peter shouted. "Quinn is not responding, we need to see if he's okay."

The Boneclaw had handed Quinn's body over to Peter before going back to a marking. Worried, even with the frantic teleportation, Peter was trying to see if Quinn was okay, but it was a hard task to do.

Sil teleported a couple more times, he soon was in a forest, among trees as large as mountains that sprinkled in light from above. He quickly looked around the area, and in the distance there was a cliff side, he teleported a few times more, and on the cliff's side edge there looked to be a natural cave that went inside.

It didn't go in deep, but it was a place they could stay at for now where one wouldn't be able to find them easily, at least that's what Sil believed.

Once they were inside the cave, Peter laid Quinn's body on the ground, out of the sun. He was a vampire and although he wasn't affected by the sun anymore, Peter wanted to do anything to see if his condition was fine.

Placing his ear on Quin's chest, he waited patiently, and after around ten seconds or so, he could hear his heart beat a single time.

"Ah, thank f*ck!" Peter said, letting out a big sigh of relief.

Edvard could already sense Quinn was alive, and although he didn't look well, he was much more concerned about another member of their group. Sil wasn't physically tired and yet he had sweat running down the side of his face, and his hands were trembling slightly.

"Sil... is everything alright?" Edvard said. "What happened back there, what's got you all shaken up?"

Sil didn't answer immediately, instead he placed his hands over his face for a few seconds before letting go and taking in a big breath, he seemed to be a little better.

"Sorry about that, it's just.." Sil paused again. "The energy, I could still feel it, I could sense it in the air. The anger, it's as if his emotions are linked to this entire plane." Sil waved his hand through the red air and the particles moved up and down like floating dust.

"I don't know how to explain, but I had a feeling that if we didn't move far enough away, he would have chased us down and found us. No matter where we were, I had to try to get as far away as possible... just to be safe."

"And do you think we're safe here right now?" Edvard asked.

The silence gave away his answer, but he knew Sil must have been exhausted. How many different planets had they travelled to due to his power. Sil's power was incredibly strong, but there was a limit and he felt like Sil had already used it.

"I'm not sure, but I have a back up plan just in case." Sil answered. "The clones, at the same time as we were moving, every single one of them is teleporting everywhere around the place that they can."

"Although Immortui might be able to feel us, I don't think he'll be able to know which one is the real one, all of them are distractions for the time being, so it should buy some time. As each one is taken out as well, as long as they are able to, I'll get an update just before."

It wasn't a confident answer, but Sil needed to restore his MC cells and rest anyway. For a few minutes, the group did next to nothing, they were just waiting, it was as if they were checking if Immortui was on their tail, or if anyone else was.

After fifteen minutes had passed, the tension in their bodies eased a little more. The fact that Sil hadn't gotten a report of one of his clones being chased down left him more confident than before.

Now, Sil had time to focus on Quinn as he went over to his body on the ground. Peter had his back up against the cave wall, staying only ten centimetres away from his lying body.

He hadn't moved an inch which was quite impressive.

"What's wrong with him, why isn't he getting up, is he just in a deep sleep?" Peter asked.

Sil having recovered some of his energy, his hands started to glow green and he moved it over Quinn's body, up and down from the bottom of his toes to the top of his head, he then focused on the head for a few moments but there were no signs at all.

"He's not injured in any way. I would like to think that he was just sleeping." Sil said. "But when we were travelling through those tunnels, following those demons, I heard what Immortui said, he said that he was going to make him experience hell."

Finishing his sentence, several footsteps landed on the ground, causing everyone to flinch and turn to the centre of the cave, where a group of people had just appeared.

"Calm down." Sil stated. "We know them."

Getting a better look, they really did know them, it was a clone of Sil, along with Hikel, Chris and Russ. In a normal case, maybe the group would have shared what they had gone through, afterall it was a pretty extreme thing they had gone through, instead they ignored all the people around them, as they rushed to where Quinn was.

"Quinn!" Chris said, running over.

"What... what happened?" Hikel asked.

The finer details were explained to the group, at least what they knew because they didn't know much apart from Quinn was most likely facing Immortui. The truth was they didn't even know he had faced a demon beforehand, or the circumstances leading up to the current event.

Chris and the others hadn't shared what they had been through, the atmosphere, it felt too sombre for that. They didn't need more bad news of powerful enemies they had escaped from by the skin of their teeth.

"So what do we do now?" Russ asked all of them. "Are we just going to wait around till he wakes up? You have to know that he might never wake up, right?"

"And what's with you guys in the first place, you said you came here to support him. To help him take down Immortui, not to stop him, well, then I think you guys should be doing whatever you can to freaking support the guy!" Russ shouted.

The person that cared about Quinn the least, had made the most sense in the current situation they were in. That was the real question though, with Quinn the way he was now, what should they do?

Chapter 2442.2: Quinn down (Part 2)

The group practically moped around Quinn doing nothing for a while. It felt like they were just hoping for him to get up, or wake up. Never did they imagine after going through so much, being so prepared, they would be placed in a situation like this.

Frustrated, Peter even resorted to some measures of his own to try and get Quinn to wake up. For one, he peeled his eyelids back, surprisingly they were glowing red and not just the iris, the whole eyeball was red in colour, glowing with power.

It was somewhat proof that something was happening to Quinn at this moment, they just had no idea what. A slap on the face, a heavy shake, and even some name calling. These were all things that Peter, in the past as a subclass directly under Quinn, couldn't do, but after Quinn had become a celestial they were all fine, but more importantly, none of them worked and they were still stuck in the same situation as they were before.

"We can't just sit around and do nothing." Hikel said. "We need to find a way to try and help Quinn. Maybe someone amongst these planets would know. Perhaps one of the local inhabitants, like those Chrono, knows something."

"They must have faced and come across something like this when facing the demons and Immortui before, someone must know."

The logic Hikel used was quite sound. The major issue was more so who was in control of those inhabitants in the first place. There always seemed to be demons lingering around them wherever they went.

"The Chrono." Chris said. "They were being forced by that demon king to participate in those games. If we go to them, we need to fight the demon king again, and with our strength, I don't think we would win."

"Heading out there, it's a big risk getting caught by the demon kings or even Immortui"

"What!" Russ said. "Is the big bad wolf, legs shaking after a bigger wolf kicked him a few times. If we can't even go against those demon king guys then there's no point of us even being here."

"Hey!" Edvard snapped. "We saved Quinn by coming here, he's with us isn't he."

"Yeah, as a vegetable." Russ said. "Go on, let's see him fight for us. Why don't we just go out there and start swinging his body, maybe vampire blood will shoot out of his eyes and arse, you stupid fools!"

The tension was high between the group. These things tend to happen when they were frustrated. Especially since they all felt like there was nothing they could do.

Although Russ seemed the least affected, the fact that he hadn't left the place showed that even he had some fear of the outside world.

"First, let's explore the area around us." Hikel said, interrupting them all. "We can check if there are any locals around, but before interacting with any of them, we need to see what the situation is.

"We don't want to be getting caught out by any demons. We have to assume that everyone here knows about us now, and if the demons know the demon kings will know, the message will be passed down and it won't be long until we all end up like Quinn."

Hikel looked at everyone in the room until he had made a decision.

"Edvard and Chris you two head out, we don't need everyone to go, but just be careful. I'm trusting you two."

Hikel didn't say it out loud, but if he sent Peter or Russ he could only guess the two of them would cause trouble. They needed Sil to stay next to Quinn in case anyone arrived, and although Hikel would have loved to have gone himself, he needed to stay to stop arguments from happening between Russ and Peter, who seemed alright so far but only time would tell.

Agreeing to the task, both Edvard and Chris walked to the edge of the cave, they were on a cliff side so they were able to stare out. With their hands blocking the sun, they stared off into the distance.

"This planet, it's quite amazing, everything is huge in size and the plants, they're so colourful and mixed with colours." Edvard said. "I've never seen a place like this."

Chris then pointed to a particular direction where smoke could be seen from afar. Several large wood-like structures could be seen as well. It almost looked like a type of factory but if they could see it from this far, then the items that they were seeing had to be huge.

"I think if we head there we are bound to find something." Chris gathered.

Nodding in agreement, the two jumped off, and were light while being quick on their feet.

Running through the large forest, the two kept seeing beautiful plants, mixed in with ponds of water. Nearly everything they passed looked as if it had been painted from someone's dreams. The flowers, the colours that surrounded them, they were all spectacular, fading from one to the other.

Seeing all of this just made all of them more curious about what they were going to find and as they got closer, they could hear conversing as well as several banging

noises going off one after the other, just as if one was inside the middle of a factory.

The two quickly found a large tree, with a trunk, still around a mile or so away from the object they had seen and scaled up high. When they eventually reached a height where they could see out, both Chris and Edvard used their strong fingertips to dig into the tree and hold onto the side.

Now they could see, there were several people working on the large object in front of them, and there were several large objects. They were mining large metal rocks, shaping them, and mixing them with a number of crystals, melting them down and such.

It was clear they were making something, but they had no idea what, since it was nothing they could recognise. What they could clearly see were the 'people' working on it.

"Do you think they're demons?" Edvard asked.

They were all giant in size, and had large tusk like teeth that bent upwards. They were the Yak demon race.

Chris had ignored Edvard's question though, because he was in deep thought about something else.

'If they are demons, then if we were to fight them... and I was to eat them, then would that increase my strength. How many would I need to eat before I could take on him?' Chris thought.

Back in the cave, Hikel was pretty confident with his decision that he had chosen the right people to go, as it was nice and silent. Maybe he could close his eyes and enjoy time to himself.

Closing his eyes, he soon heard scuffling across the floor with a few grunts as well.

"What the!" Hikel stood straight up, as four strangers had suddenly appeared in the cave, with strange skull-like designs on their heads.

Chapter 2443: Who's a demon?

Everyone's eyes widened as they turned around to have a look at the sudden noise in the room. They were in a relatively small confined space and there was only one way for them to enter the cave.

Even then, they would have to either climb in, or fly in which they should have been able to have seen, yet no one there did, and somehow four intruders had entered the room. Not only that, but one of them was nearly large enough that the top of their head was hitting the ceiling of the cave.

"It's the demons!" Hikel shouted. "They've managed to find us!"

The markings on Hikel's body started to light up, but he hesitated in attacking using his ability. If he was to do a full attack now, then the whole place would crumble and fall, possibly trapping Quinn as well.

The first person to make a move was Peter, he would protect Quinn no matter what and if these people knew where they were then it meant they were all doomed. As he set off his body transformed mid strike, his head tail wrapping around his arm for an ultimate punch.

Turning to his right, Calva's arm was already transformed into a giant bone shield. The fist hit dead in the centre of the shield and Calva's arm was sent jerking back a bit, but he managed to push back.

'The demon was able to match Peter's power!' Hikel thought. 'As I thought, there are plenty of strong ones like what we matched earlier, this is going to be hard.'

At the same time, Calva was thinking something similar.

'What type of strength is that, who are these people, are they demons?'

The two of them grunted in a power struggle and at the same time they opened their mouths wide.

"I will not be defeated by a demon!" They shouted in unison.

The bone shield started to transform, closing like a flower and trapping Peter's arm. Calva, had been ready, he was ready to face whatever he needed to after escaping from Quinn's shadow.

After all, there was a high chance that Immortui had already defeated Quinn and he was just watching over him, or at least the ones watching over him will be strong enough to do so.

With his other hand, he had a large bone sword, it was extremely sharp and jagged toward the end like a tooth. The sword was swung against Peter, seeing an opening, even if he blocked it with his hand the sword would slice right through it.

From behind, a strange flexible object came out fast and hit it away. The strange object attached to his opponent's head was deflecting Calva's sword. The two were hitting against each other again and again

Peter was using his second head tail to defend against the sharp attacks and they were both going at it at full speed.

'What is going on, my hand feels completely stuck, and if I pull I can feel it starting to rip part of my arm.' Peter thought, not that he was so worried since he could just heal and arm back, but he was more amazed at the strength.

"Everyone stop!" Sil said, as he teleported next to the three Skully's that had yet to do anything. For a moment, everything froze, that was until Peter forcefully pulled on his arm, it ripped out of the trapped bones, and with his arm free he was ready to throw out another punch, until Sil with his own powers chucked a ball of wind that hit his fist at the same time.

It wasn't enough to stop Peter if he went through with the punch, but was enough to show him that Sil was serious when he told everyone to stop.

"Can't you see, these guys aren't demons?" Sil said.

"Aren't demons?" Russ quizzed, looking at the Skullys' faces. "They have f*cking skulls on top of their heads, that's the most demon thing I've seen."

Calva glancing, and looking at the situation was starting to get an idea of what was going on. He could see Quinn on the floor, all of them in a cave, and there was one whose energy felt similar to Quinn's.

Although he felt like he might be able to fight his way out of the current situation, he didn't think it was the best thing to do.

"We're not demons." Calva said. "I jumped the gun, I thought you were with Immortui, and you... you are a demon."

When saying those words, Calva was looking toward Hikel. Even if they had the same energy as Quinn, they were still creations of Immortui and in the first place Calva didn't know much about the demon race of vampires, who they followed, or the role of importance that Quinn held.

Mentioning the word Immortui, he thought he was making his position clear, so he needed to be ready to fight or run.

"With those scary freaking faces I don't think you should be pointing fingers and be calling anyone a demon." Russ commented.

"These guys." Sil said. "We saw them being killed by the demons before we saved Quinn. We're pretty sure they're natural inhabitants, and if my guess is right, they didn't just come out of nowhere, but they popped out of Quinn's shadow space."

"Yeah!" Anon said, his voice shaky. He was worried for more reasons than one. The champions were known as the strongest the inhabitants had to offer, and Calva was the strongest Skully to ever exist.

What he had just witnessed was a crazy person rip his arm off, and go one on one with the Champion. Not only that, but the person that had appeared behind them for some reason Anon didn't feel like he was any weaker than the other attacker.

Where did all these powerful people come from all of a sudden?

"We were in this space, Quinn put us in it, it was completely black, he did it to protect us... who are you guys?"

That had been enough confirmation for Sil, and with him giving the go ahead the rest thought it had to be true as well. Mainly because they were unsure how they would have gotten in the cave otherwise.

Sil had decided to do all of the talking, since they were more calm around him compared to the others that were hostile with them moments ago. He explained that they were friends of Quinn's but he could see that they wanted a lot more answers than that.

It was clear that they weren't inhabitants so they explained a little more, how they weren't from this world, and had travelled with Quinn here in order to take down Immortui.

It felt quite unbelievable, but for the Skullys, to them it was the most reasonable explanation.

How could people they never knew that were so strong appear at once, unless they were from another world. After they had done all the explaining it was time for the Skullys.

They first explained what happened, how they were on the battlefield with Quinn, and what happened before Immortui arrived. How he had managed to take out a demon king.

"So Quinn met with someone on the same level as Unzoku before he fought against Immortui?" Hikel was stunned, he knew Quinn was impressive, but just how strong was he?

"You met Unzoku!" Calva was equally surprised, if they had met a demon king, they would have fought and they would have all met their fate. If they managed to survive and were here, it meant they all had a high level of strength.

"I see, I guess Quinn had some reliable and strong friends after all. I guess he didn't know you guys followed him, otherwise he would have never made us make that promise."

"What promise?" Peter asked.

Calva spelled it out for them, the request that Quinn had made before he had gone to face Immortui. What he said he needed in order to win the battle.

"He... needs the blood of five demon kings." Hikel said. "Five that are just as strong as Unzoku."

"But, I said I will help, so I will do so."

Calva went into detail about who he was, and who the champions were as well, including the history of their universe. There was a reason for him saying all of this, just like Anon, Calva thought that getting the help of the other Champions would help them.

Hearing this news, Hikel and Russ thought back to the other Champion they had met up with, his power was strong but the demons had a tight leash on them.

"Some might consider them stronger." Calva replied. "The good news is we only need four now, but it will be no easy task."

Calva didn't need to mention that fact, they all knew it would be difficult and even now with all of them together, they were trying to figure out just how it would be possible, especially while trying to avoid the attention of Immortui. The question was, was it even possible?

Chapter 2444: Caught in the act

The vampire settlement had received a surprise visit from none other than the Mermerials. With the way things were going, it wasn't so much of a problem for them, apart from a single young elder. One that went by the name Xoxy.

He had been aggravating Layla for a while now, constantly asking questions about Quinn, while trying to undermine the rest of the work and courtesy that they had been putting out. Eventually though, it seemed that the Elder had been acting strangely for a reason.

Learning from the other Elders, they now knew that Xoxy was actually here on behalf of a mission from the old celestial of the Mermerials, Yongbu. A desperate attempt was made as Layla went searching everywhere for him, fearing that the celestials could be targeting her and her family again.

She already had a lot to worry about with Immortui and what was happening with Quinn, but without Quinn here, it was her job to protect the family.

After using all the resources that she had at her fingertips, and with Muka's help, they were unable to come up with anything. It was as if the Mermerial elder had suddenly vanished, been taken out of thin air.

Returning to the castle, and her room, she went on the search for Galen, fearing that he could be in trouble as well. Galen had appeared, and out of his shadow, a vampire popped out, one that looked awfully familiar, almost like that of the Mermerial elder.

"It's you!" Layla shouted out. "You're the Mermerial Elder... but why do you look like that?"

It was clear now, with the disguise this person had, they were up to no good. With her hand stretched out, she used her telekinesis powers to pull Xox up into the air, and wrapped her fingers around his throat.

"If I open my mouth, I can create flames that are strong enough to melt metal. So if you are wearing some type of mask, I'm sure it will melt it off, but I doubt your head would survive that in the first place." Layla said.

Dark balls started to appear in the room, and they were surrounding Xox. If he made any sudden movements or tried to break free, then his body would hit one of the dark balls, creating the shadow chains that would hold him in place. She didn't want to let this little rat escape from his hands.

"So, I want you to speak, and I need to hear the truth right from your mouth, why are you here, why were you searching for Minny, and why did Galen stop you."

Galen quickly jumped, and now was on the side of his mother standing beside her. That's when Xox could see that Galen had a large smile on his face, he was smirking at the tough situation he was in at the moment.

'You little brat... what the heck did I do to you!' Xox thought. 'This was meant to be a simple job... now I know what Yongbu meant when he said that his family is crazy, and this woman, she doesn't seem weak either.'

Xox was trying to think of a way out of the situation. As a celestial, he could just go back and enter the celestial space as an escape. He wouldn't have to stay there for an incredibly long time before he would be out of the current situation, but stay there long enough and it would be fine.

The major issue though was returning. If he returned, then no doubt the Ancient One would ask him what information he had found. Right now, he still had no clue where Quinn was, or to say anything, apart from information about the brat, but would that be enough?

The wrath of the Ancient Ones was too great in his mind, so he decided to try and use his sweet talking mouth to get out of the current situation.

'I have talked to many of the celestials, even swindling them and getting great deals out of all of them. If I can't talk myself out of this situation, then what have I been doing with all my time.'

Xox recomposed himself and looked Layla right in the eye. He lifted both of his hands up by his side as if he was surrendering.

"First, I want to tell you, I really didn't mean any harm." Xox said. "I am not a strong individual. Even your son was strong enough to overpower me. I wouldn't even think about doing anything to the vampire settlement."

"As you said, I can disguise myself and I thought it was easier to walk around as a vampire because I wanted to get more information."

Layla started to grip a little tighter with her hand around his throat, and was channelling her Qi. The energy could be felt and Xox was a little worried that even if he used celestial energy, then this person would still be able to overpower him.

"I just wanted to know about Quinn!" Xox exclaimed. "It was Yongbu, he wanted me to find Quinn and apologise to him, but it seemed like you were hiding something. Every time I asked you a question about him you would avoid it."

"So I decided to try and get answers from your family, I thought if I asked them, they might tell me where Quinn is, that's the truth!"

As Layla had her hands grasped around Xoxy's neck, she was feeling his pulse, and she was also reading his emotions. Trying to tell if he was lying or not. It was quite

hard for her. He was either an excellent liar, or what he was saying was mostly the truth.

There were a few times where she could tell his emotions would change slightly.

'If I could have my own way, then the best thing to do would be to kill him. Then I know that my family will be safe no matter what, but if he really is working for the celestial, then it will cause us problems.

'Quinn said he made a deal with them, to not get involved, but I guess they can't control every individual celestial's actions. So if I was to get us into trouble, then it could cause the celestials to keep a closer eye on us, and they might find out where Quinn is.'

All of this were the thoughts going through Layla's mind, but that was if everything Xox said was true.

"Please, if you release me, then I promise that I'll just leave this place, leave with the Mermerials, that's what you want, right?" Xox said, as he could tell her grip was weakening, he just needed to persuade her a little more, and then he could be free.

"Alright, call him." Layla said.

"Huh?" Xox raised an eyebrow.

"If you really want to make up with us, then Yongbu can come down here himself, I know celestials can teleport themselves. Tell him I give him permission to come here. He can't meet Quinn, but meeting his wife should be enough. Tell him to come here, and talk to me to my face... I'm waiting." Layla said.

Nervous, now Xox had to rely on Yongbu. Would he even help him out in the situation he was in... it was hard to say, but he had no choice, and if they were caught in the act, or Yongbu revealed something, it might mean they had a big fight on their hands, it would be good to have him by his side if that happened.

Chapter 2445: Sending you back!

Xox continued to blink a couple of times, he wasn't sure how the situation was going to play out, he just never expected it to head into this situation.

'Damn it, damn it!' Xox screamed in his head. 'Yongbu already did me a huge favour by getting me in this meeting, and he was the one who told me not to get involved. Will he even come if I ask him to? I could send him a message, and see what he says, but judging by his reaction from before.'

A nervous smile appeared on Xox's face, his lips opened slowly. He felt like multiple words were trying to come out of his mouth at the same time, but noise did eventually come out.

"Yongbu is a very difficult person to get hold of, as you can see he is busy from time to time. If you sent me back, then I can always return with him next time?" Xox said, trying to put on the most gentle face possible.

He was attempting a puppy-like look with his face, and tilted his head slightly, but it wasn't quite working, with the grasp of Layla's hands getting stronger, making it harder for him to breathe.

"Ah I see, look who is making the excuses now about who can arrive. I assure you Quinn is actually a very busy person. Remember, if what you are saying is true, Yongbu is the one that wishes to apologise, so the least he could do was make time for us, that is unless your lying."

Opening her mouth slightly, Xox could already feel the heat building up and see a faint glow at the back of her throat. He wasn't too sure if he would survive an attack or not, most likely he would but then what would he do after.

The Ancient One had told him this was an undercover mission! Biting the bullet, there was only one thing he could do, and it was sending a message to Yongbu.

[I need your help, my long lost loyal brother. You were right, the Talen family is indeed crazy. I am in a bit of a pickle of a situation, as I have been caught. Please help me out this one last time.]

[I promise I will never threaten to reveal your condition, and I will do everything in my power to help you out with yours and if you have a problem in the future. You know I am well connected, and the person I am helping out now, will be able to give you anything you want.]

[I just need you to come here, and state that you sent me to apologise on your behalf, for what you did back then.]

Yongbu and Xox hadn't been close for long, but it was the only thing he could rely on in his current situation. He had to hope that the message he had sent was enough to convince him.

"Well?" Layla asked again.

"I have contacted him!" Xox yelped. "He will be here, I just don't know when."

The nervous smile was still on Xox's face until he could feel energy coming from his side. There was a faint glow like that of a ball, the ball started to expand, and out from it came a large muscular sea creature that had a human body with tentacles covering his mouth and large wings on his back.

[You came for me, and so quickly!]

Xox had sent a message.

[It wasn't quick.] Xox sent a message back through the celestial system. [I was in the celestial space. I was debating over it for a long time, but I kept feeling guilty about your situation.]

Yongbu stayed away from the two, he could see that Layla was tensing up at the sight of him. It was a reasonable reaction considering what he had done last time, so to play it safe Yongbu even got down on his knees.

"I apologise for turning up out of the blue, now of all times." Yongbu lowered his head.

This action came as a surprise to Xox. They were gods, and even though they were in a tough situation, it would be rare for anyone to see them bow, even for their life because many of them didn't fear death.

It just went to show, perhaps, how fearful Yongbu was of the Talen family.

"I apologise for appearing now." Yongbu said. "What my messenger has stated is true. He is a fool, an idiot, and the biggest piece of crap I know."

It was a chance for Yongbu to curse Xox without him being able to say anything back. It was the minimum amount of enjoyment he should receive for being put in this situation.

"I apologise again for sending someone else other than myself. It was just after what I did, I thought you would be filled with anger if I was to arrive myself. We know Quinn is a special being, he is a great person, and I deeply regret what I put your family through back then. I want you to understand it was just orders, and as the god that overlooks the Mermerials, I wish the Mermerials as well as my

relationship with you two will continue to grow closer together rather than further apart."

Xox was impressed, he thought he was the one with the sweet mouth, able to sooth over any situation but Yongbu had put it better than he ever could have.

Layal let go of Xox after hearing these words but then walked over to Yongbu she stood next to him to show that there was no fear.

"I heard from the elders that you were going to help them with problems back on the Mermerial planet." Layla stated. "You better keep your promise, otherwise I will never believe a word you say again.

"From now on, if you wish to meet, we do so in person, but you inform me beforehand. Whether it's through the elders or some other way, you always are to contact me first before appearing in person, and if you go near any of my family and not to me or Quinn, I don't care if you're gods or not, I will do everything in my power to protect my family."

"I understand." Yongbu replied.

Layla moved away, and Yongbu knew it was a signal for them to both go. He went over to Xoxy, and held his arm, moments later they turned into nothing but balls of light and returned back to the Mermerial planet, the beach the two were on from before.

"I told you they were crazy." Yongbu said. "And she's more crazy than I thought, who in their right mind would say that to gods, especially if they knew what we were. It's not like she overpowered me back then either."

Xox was lying in the sand, he was glad the tense situation was over, as he turned around and looked at the sky, he realised his problem wasn't over though.

'And I have to go back... I need to complete the job the celestial asked me to do, but how do I go back now?'

A memory came to Xox, when he had infiltrated the school, he remembered the teachers talking about something.

'It was the Grand Meet Up!' Xox thought. 'Where vampires from all over are going to the settlement. I could disguise myself as a vampire, and find out where Quinn is. I have to, otherwise the Ancient Ones are going to get rid of me.'

The Grand Meet Up, the first celebration the vampires would have that brought the Graylash vampires , the Vampire Corps, and the Settlement vampires together. It was meant to be a joyous event, but no one had any idea, the grand misfortune it would bring, and the ripple effects it would have, on the whole Golden space.

Chapter 2446.1: Grand Meet up (Part 1)

Only a few days had passed since the Mermerial meeting and it was time for the Grand Meet Up! It was an event that had been planned before the Mermerials had done their visit, so the show had to go on, and the problems seemed minimal.

After Xoxy and Yongbu left, the Mermerial elders left with no trouble at all. No one had returned and from what Layla had heard from Muka, they had received an update that Yongbu had gone through with his promise. He had gotten rid of the troublesome Predators or at least got them under control.

There were no surprise visitors during that time, and Minny and Galen both were in safe hands with no trouble happening to them at all. In fact, Layla wanted to actually thank Galen for capturing Xoxy, but it was hard for her to do so, since she didn't want to praise her son for doing something that she hadn't asked.

He was, after all, only a little child. It was an important time for them, what happened now could greatly influence their character in the future, so he needed some ground rules, just Layla wasn't able to catch him most of the time to punish him.

Today was a special day for Layla though, as she would try her best to forget about the troubles, because she would be going to the Grand Meet Up, not as a political figure but as a parent, who was going to watch her child.

Muka, as the settlement leader in replace of Quinn, would be dealing with all of that, along with Xander.

She was currently walking outside of the settlement through a wide open pathway that had been created, holding onto Galen's hand. The pathway was extremely wide, and had trees set up every five metres from each other on the side. Beyond those trees the natural forest that was next to the settlement could be seen with fields of flowers.

It was a beautiful sight that the guests enjoyed appreciating. They would often stop once in a while just to take in the sights around them. It was filled with vampires from the settlement, and those from the Vampire Corps and Graylash planets.

'It looks like getting the help of Logan was a good idea.' Layla thought. 'He really went all out in making this place stand out. It's breathtaking even for the vampires in the settlement.'

It wasn't just the pathway though, because the pathway itself was just the start. It was leading all of the vampires to the main attraction which was the large stadium that had been built. It was large in size, and could hold a little over a 100,000 people. It had that many seats.

It was designed to allow every vampire, if they wanted, to view this grand event. Of course not every vampire had turned up, but from the looks of things it was pretty close to it.

Events like these, if continued, would allow the vampires to thrive and their population to hopefully grow into larger numbers. After losing their forces to war after war, it truly was something they needed.

Entering the stadium, vampires were there working as guards and were there to welcome them all. Due to Layla's position, she was treated as a VIP member and there was no need for her to queue.

She went right through after receiving a couple of juice boxes for Galen and went straight into the seating area. Her seats were close to the ground floor, and were with the other family leaders and viscounts.

The stadium area that they were to watch was incredibly large and had a number of different devices set up for the games that they would be seeing. An obstacle like course created for vampires. A target hitting area where vampires were to see how good their blood control was, and there was an arena for one on one battles that would be taking place as well.

Out on the field, lined up getting ready for the opening ceremony, were the three vampire groups and their children. Muka, Xander and the principal of Roland Academy stood in front of their group of kids.

Layla could see Minny and she and little Galen were waving over, but she had no reaction so it was hard to know if she spotted them or not.

"Hey, I think your mum's waving at you." Tobi said. "Why don't you wave back." He nudged her on the arm.

"It's so embarrassing." Minny said. "Why is she waving? I see her everyday, and will be seeing her after this event anyway."

"We need to focus anyway." Abby said. "We all need to show that the vampire settlement is the best. Remember the teacher said we would get a lot of honour points that could be traded in for grand prizes!"

Abby's eyes were burning with fire.

"Yeah, it's a shame really that Minny wasn't able to take part in all of the events otherwise we would have won this thing for sure." Tobi said. "Still, I guess at least she can take part in two events and we know they're in the bag. What was it again? The agility course and the arena battles."

Just as Tobi said, the teachers wanted to put Minny in for every event, but to make things fair, they limited the event to two activities per student. After all, this was to showcase the whole school, not just a single talented student.

"Hey, we can't get too cocky." Abby said. "We don't know the strength of the other schools, who knows maybe they will even have geniuses as well."

To the left side of the vampire settlement group, there was the Vampire Corps group. They had Andy standing in front of the kids, as well as Jessica by his side. After the events they had been through, Jessica was confident to stay by Andy's side.

He was strong after all, and she felt like he could protect her well. She was also loyal to the Vampire Corps and had done a lot for them, so she had been promoted to a chief position and invited as one of the leaders of the events for their group.

Lastly, there were those from the Graylash group. In total, there were three leaders and not just a single leader. They had a community that helped the vampires of those on the Graylash planet but since they didn't operate the same way as the other groups, they needed three people to represent them.

One, a tall vampire woman that was taller than most men called Valnar, then by her side there were two male vampires, one named Fenkelm and lastly a vampire who was named Sin.

The three of them looked at the students and were happy and amazed at the vampire settlement. Seeing how things were, they thought maybe the vampire settlement was a better place to raise the children than the Graylash planets which was part of their aim.

However, Sin was the one with the biggest smile on his face.

'I made it here, I made it back and it looks like no one has noticed a thing. I will find out where Quinn is, and what's happened to him before I leave this place, no matter what!' Xox thought.

This was the start of the event that would cause a huge ripple effect.

Chapter 2447.2: Grand Meet Up (Part 2)

It was hard work, but Xox was able to infiltrate the event as one of the head vampires of the Graylash planet's community, a vampire named Sin. Tears were nearly forming in his eyes, because of how proud he was to have gotten to this moment.

'It took a lot to get here, but I'm finally here, and now I just need my hard work to pay off, otherwise.'

From the bottom of his spine to the top of his neck, his whole body shivered. Xox knew about the Grand Meet Up, and of course he could have come as a visitor by just disguising himself as a vampire, but that would have done nothing to help him. His real goal was finding out what happened to Quinn.

While in the middle of trying to figure out a way to arrive at the meet up, once again Xox was summoned by the Ancient One. He was put in a tough situation as they asked him if he had made any progress with the Quinn situation.

"I have been able to do some research." Xox said. "But as you told me this is a mission where I must not get caught, it has been a little difficult. So far, it seems that Quinn is difficult to find, as if he is up to something like you suspect. I didn't want to report back to you until I knew where he was."

Xox was hoping that would be enough to delay the Ancient One for a little while, or if it would just cause him to be filled with more anger.

"I see, if you are having trouble, tell me if there is anything you need me to provide you with." The Ancient One replied.

Before he was sent off, Xox thought this was actually an opportunity.

"Sorry sir!" Xox quickly called out. "About that, Quinn and the vampires are relatively strong individuals. I promise that I will keep my identity and reason for being there a secret, but you see, if you want to find out the truth sooner, then there will be times where I need to use force, but I am not a strong being."

What Xox was saying wasn't really true to his words. What he actually wanted was the Ancient One to provide him some protection, just in case he got caught like the last time, but how was he meant to say he was scared, or inform the Ancient One of what happened, how he was nearly caught.

Since he was going there a second time, if he got caught again, Xox could only imagine what Layla would do to him, which was why he saw this as an opportunity to ask for something.

Waving his hand, a round item that didn't look special at all was given. It was white in colour, as big as a pebble, but perfectly round.

"Keep that on you at all times. I can't help you out directly, but as you said there is a chance something might happen. That will protect you, so you at least will survive long enough to give me information."

It was almost as if the Ancient One was saying, if he didn't get the information he wanted, he didn't care what happened to Xox. With a gulp, Xox bowed down.

"Thank you for the help."

With that he had disappeared, and had more drive than before to complete the task.

'Ah crap, I forgot to tell him about Quinn's son and the strange celestial energy. Oh well, I guess I can always tell him that later. I doubt he would care so much about an incomplete celestial.' Xox thought.

After that, he had travelled to the Graylash family, he had done extensive research and eventually captured the vampire he needed to question. He managed to subdue the vampire with a massive amount of celestial energy knocking him out.

Then promising him that he would live, he asked him a number of questions so people wouldn't be followed if the two were to swap places. Lastly, the promise was broken as Xox had to get rid of him.

'Usually celestials are known for keeping their promises, but with a matter as important to do with the celestial, I have no choice.' Xox thought.

In the end, it was how he had ended up being Sin and being in the position he was in. The head of their teams had their own special VIP seats that were located on the opposite side of the stadium, away from where Layla was.

When he saw this, Xox was already cursing at himself, why couldn't things just be easy. Instead he was seated next to Muka, Xander, Andy and Jessica, while they continued to watch the contestants.

The event started with each group doing a performance for the opening ceremony. They were all equally impressive, each with a different style to show during the event. Then it was time for the events themselves.

The event would start with the lowest grades participating in the selected events. Some events would go on at the same time, and one could choose which they wished to watch. Then the same events would continue with the grades continuing the idea.

However, there was an exception to this, and that was the final event, where each school was to select a single fighter to represent them. This was regardless of grade, and they would go up against each other in a free for all.

The crowd was enjoying it and cheering their kids and friends on as they saw everyone take part. It was filled with energy, like a true sports event, one as big as the olympics. The number of events continued and due to them going from the bottom to the top, it wasn't long until Minny was taking part.

"Galen, look...it's your sister, wave and cheer for her!" Layla said, holding his hand and waving it for him, even though he was plenty capable of waving it himself.

"Go MINNY!" Galen shouted.

It was so adorable that Laya couldn't help but pinch his chubby cheeks.

The obstacle course had a total of 6 participants, two from each group from the same grade. Several machines would be used that would move about and fire out harmless lasers. It would recognise when it touched a contestant, but if one was hit they weren't out, it just meant they would simply lose some points. The one who lost the least amount of points would be the winner.

The flying drones fired multiple lasers in all directions at the same time and it looked like a laser show. Minny was moving fast as she jumped and twisted her body. She jumped on a few of the items that were around them that they could use to head from one area to the next.

The other contestants had already been hit multiple times, but not Minny.

"How fast is that small vampire girl... I think she's even faster than most of the adults. How is that possible?"

"Isn't she faster than most captains of the Vampire Corps?"

The vampires knew strength when they saw it, and Minny was certainly out there to impress. The event had ended and Minny hadn't been touched once, becoming the clear winner.

All of those from her school and parents cheered at the top of their lungs, making it feel as if the arena was shaking.

"Minny is impressive as always." Jessica said from her seat.

"Yeah, it's a shame that Quinn isn't here to see this." Andy replied.

Xox ears suddenly perked up. Due to where he was seated at the moment, he had no hope in finding anything about Quinn, yet here were two people that were talking about him, and it sounded as if they knew why he was away.

Chapter 2448.3: Grand Meet Up (Part 3)

"Sorry, did you just say Quinn?" Valnar, one of the community leaders asked. "Are you saying that girl is Quinn's daughter?"

With the vampires' hearing, it seemed like Xox wasn't the only one that had overheard the two talking.

"Ah, yes, she is amazing isn't she?" Jessica said with a smile.

"Of course, no wonder she is impressive, to have a father like that." Valnar added. "It is a shame though that we won't be seeing Quinn at this event. Is there a reason why he was unable to be here?"

Both Jessica and Andy looked at each other, they didn't really know how to answer, and Muka and Xander had gone off somewhere in order to keep things flowing for the event. They were partly the host, so they had to mingle with others as well as everyone else.

"There was a recent incident at the vampire settlement I heard." Valnar said.
"Could it have something to do with that?"

"Yes." Andy nervously replied. "As you know, there were vampires that had a lot of trouble, but the issue has been resolved. Still, Quinn is busy trying to resolve that issue even more!"

What Andy said didn't make sense at all, to put it simply he was an incredibly bad liar.

"He resolved the issue... but he is away because of the issue?" Valnar said.

"Actually, I heard a few things myself." Fenkelm said. "I talked to a few of the vampires here about what had happened. It looked as if some of the vampires were possessed. I wasn't able to get much, but they said a name was being used quite a lot... I think it was Immortui."

Xox's heart started to thump louder. Of all the things he had heard, he never thought he would hear that name. With Xox being the busy body he was, he knew a lot about Immortui as well.

'Wait a second, he solved the problem but has gone away to solve the problem?' Xox thought in his head. 'It can't be. Was Immortui causing chaos in the vampire settlement, and although the issue was resolved here, Quinn must have gone to deal with the issue first hand... has he gone to where Immortui is?'

It was a guess, but it was the best guess he had at the moment.

"They are just rumours!" Andy said, his voice going a little high pitched. "Quinn is just busy on other planets helping them with their issues. He is a good person who cares for the vampires and the entire universe, a hero after all!" Andy started to laugh.

Trying to change the subject, Jessica tried her best to interject and save him.

"Minny is certainly impressive, just like her father, but you know it's not because she is Quinn's daughter."

"What do you mean?" Valnar asked.

"Many think that Minny is strong, fast, and powerful because of who her father is, and although she might have had an influence from him, the two are not blood related. I think it's important that we note that Minny's achievements are because of her own amazing self."

The vampires looked at the little vampire with awe as they saw her head back. They had to admit, they were passing it off as a simple blood relation, but now knowing that was the case, her achievements were even more impressive compared to before.

More matches and games had continued on, while Xox was sitting there thinking what was the best thing he could do, the best way he could get more information. The information he had was just a theory, it was a good theory though, because he believed it linked to the reason why the Ancient Ones would be so concerned with Quinn's actions.

He would stay until he learned more for now. As time went on though, it looked like there would be no chance during the event, because it was nearing the time for the final event. The match face off.

In the crowd itself, many were congratulating Minny, and they wanted to ask her a few things, such as how she was feeling about the last event, but there were just too many people who wanted her attention.

Both Tobi and Abby had to do their best to fend the people off, until finally it was her turn to head out. She jumped for the arena down to the ground, and started to walk towards the centre of the field.

The other schools soon noticed who had come out, they recognized her well since her last performance was extremely memorable in their heads.

"No way, are they sending a lower grader out there to fight? I mean, I know she's fast, but what about blood aura, and blood control!" The vampires said.

"Maybe the vampire settlement just has no one that's better than her. I guess they're a little weaker since the war and stuff."

The students had their own opinions, but it was quite different from what the teacher's believed. From the Vampire Corps and from the Graylash planets, they found it strange that the last event, the main event, that a participant was able to participate from any grade.

Naturally, the higher grade vampires were stronger. Now to see this, they thought something was up.

"Tazzy, you have to be careful of her, don't let your guard down just because she's younger than you." A teenage boy vampire, with short sides and spiky hair in the centre, walked toward the arena.

From the Vampire Corps unit, there was another female vampire with hair so long that it was just a few inches from touching the floor.

The battlefield was an open area, on a metal ground. The attacks wouldn't quite reach the stage, or at least that was the idea anyway due to the sheer size of the whole field.

Everyone was cheering as a large countdown appeared above on a screen for them all to see.

3...2....1

Immediately, Tazzy had his eyes set on Minny.

"Huh, where did she go?"

Already in the air, right by the boy's side, she had a fist full of red aura. It was unleashed and hit him right in the side of the head, causing him to skid across the floor, sliding almost until he had hit the side of the stand.

A blood aura swipe was sent out from the other contestant. Minny turned around and ran forward again, her claws filled with blood aura swiping through it, she broke the blood aura, then leapt up kicking the female in the chest making her fall to the ground.

By the time the vampire realised what happened, they could see Minny with a blood aura claw pointed right toward her neck.

Two seconds, maybe three seconds, and the grand event that was to finish it off, had come to an end.

"What... What happened? Did you see that, wait, how... just how... how can a vampire be that strong?"

Seeing this, Layla thought it was a bit unfair, afterall, Minny was stronger than most vampire leader's, but Muka insisted that Minny take part, to show them her strength and that she did.

'I guess I should tell MInny to hold back a little in the future.'

"Your sister did good, didn't she?" Layla asked, as she looked at the seat to her right, but once again, Galen had disappeared, he was no longer in the seat.

"Hey... why is there a toddler out on the field." A student was heard saying.

Turning around, she could see Galen was out on the field. He had escaped her once again before she even noticed. Layla was ready to run out and snatch Galen up but she hesitated for a moment.

There were many times in the bedroom where Layla had attempted to catch Galen but it was impossible, if she went out there now, everyone would see an embarrassing moment of Layla attempting to grab Galen as he disappeared everywhere, and for now they were keeping the fact he had shadow powers a secret.

'Maybe I should just leave it to Minny to bring him back.'

"Sister!" Galen shouted from the other side.

Minny turned around, letting the other girl head back to her school as she turned to look at her brother.

"Galen what are you doing here, go back to mom!" She shouted.

However, Galen shook his head.

"Sister is strong, let's play, fight me!" Galen said.

Chapter 2449.1: Minny vs Galen (Part 1)

Minny looked at her little brother in disbelief, she was wondering what would warrant this type of reaction. The two of them always had a good relationship, they looked after each other and hardly ever got into arguments.

In fact, in a lot of ways, Galen would be more inclined to listen to Minny than Layla sometimes. The only thing she could think of was his age. Currently, Galen was just so competitive about everything.

They would often be competitive playing catch with each other, or when Minny would show Galen something, and it was something Galen couldn't do, he would spend the next few hours perfecting it until he could best her.

'Is this just another case of that?' Minny thought. 'After seeing me fight, has Galen's competitive nature come out again?'

Minny was looking around, there were so many people watching in the crowd, and this wasn't the Talen show, it was a show for all vampires, so she was waiting for either someone to go out there to get Galen, or to at least inform her what to do.

While nothing seemed to be happening, there were a lot of whispers among those in the crowd, wondering how a kid had gotten onto the field, and most importantly why no one was doing anything?

"Wait, I think I've seen him before?" one of the students said. "Isn't that Minny's brother."

"Hey, I think you're right, I've seen him with their mother from time to time. Holy crap, are we going to see a sibling rivalry fight right now!"

The talk was spreading, to the point where the other students and parents who had come from outside of the settlement were learning of not just Galen but who Minny was as well.

"Oh... no wonder she was so powerful, she's the daughter of the Hero Quinn."

"It makes me wonder if the son is also special. I mean, he would have to be right?"

"Minny is older, of course she would win in a fight between the two."

"Yeah, but boys are naturally stronger than women, so you have to take that into account."

"Boys are stronger than women, so can you beat Minny, I think she would kick your arse before you could even say anything."

The tension in the crowd was full of excitement, and already the question was popping up in the people's mind, who would win out of these two.

Even Xox, as he looked at the situation, had his own thoughts in his head.

'That's that damned brat who caught me! He ruined everything and is the reason why I've had to come back here again. I wonder if there is a way I can influence the fight... or hurt him in the process.' Xox thought.

It would be a hard task, especially with so many people watching and he would have liked to have confirmed a little more, with the others.

"What do we do?" Xander asked.

"Well, Layla hasn't protested and come out. Maybe she doesn't mind the two of them fighting." Muka replied. "I think it would be an entertaining battle, and I'm pretty sure the two of them know their boundaries."

"And what if the fight gets out of hand, then who will stop the two? Are you sure we are strong enough to stop them?" Xander asked.

This was a question that Muka didn't answer immediately because she wasn't sure, and if it came to that, how embarrassing would that be? That the strongest people in the settlement at the moment, were the two in front of them.

"Well, if you put it like that, then don't you think there is nothing we can do to stop them?" Muka replied. "Kids will be kids, and if they don't resolve this now, they will try to resolve it in the future when the situation would be more likely to get out of hand."

It looked like a decision had been made, which was why Muka went to speak through the speaker interface.

"An unexpected situation has occurred as currently in the ring, we have the talented Minny Talen and Galen Talen!"

The crowd cheered at the top of their lungs as soon as they heard this. It was clear that they were excited.

"This was not a planned event." Muka stated, making it clear. "So I will pass it onto the two contestants. If they wish to take part in this battle and give us a show, please, the two of you raise your hand."

It didn't take long for Galen to raise his hand. He understood words well even though he was unable to speak them so well. Then it was up to Minny to start.

"You really want to fight me little brother?" Minny smiled, as she punched her hand into her fist. "Alright, then let me go ahead and show you why I'm the bigger sister. You need to learn a thing or two from your elders."

Minny knew one thing, that Galen wouldn't use his shadow powers. It was a promise he had made with their mum, and he wasn't the type to break that promise even though he used it once in a while when no one was looking.

In order to make it fair, Minny wouldn't use her shadow either. She soon raised her hand and the crowd erupted going wild.

"Very well, the decision has been made, let's thank both Minny and Galen for putting on this show!" Muka shouted.

Layla on the side was just shaking her head constantly. She hadn't expected this, but with everyone watching, how could she just stop it. If the situation looked like it was getting rough though, she would certainly step in to stop it.

The crowd began to count down as the timer, went down.

"3...2...1...fight!"

Immediately, Minny had coated both of her hands in red blood aura. It looked like bloody claws, and she charged forward like she did with the other contestants. She didn't just rely on her speed though.

Swinging her arms, multiple blood swipes came out, and they had done so fast.

"Holy crap, she's not holding back, and against her little brother!"

The reason for this comment was because she hadn't even done this against the other two contestants in the last battle, but Minny knew she at least needed to do this, if she wanted to hit him.

Galen moved perfectly from side to side, as he avoided the swipes, his small body was flexible as he leaned back and even jumped over a few of them, letting his feet only touch the ground for a moment or two.

What was amazing as well, was as soon as Galen touched the ground, he would throw a blood swipe of his own. Minny defended herself slamming through the blood swipes.

Although Minny had thrown nearly triple the amount of blood swipes as Galen, something was clearly noticeable, Galen had avoided all of Minny's blood swipes, whereas every time, Galen's had hit Minny.

Sure, she had blocked them, but the timing was perfect, he had thrown it just as she would charge toward him, stopping her momentum as she needed to break them.

"Who would have thought that two kids would be giving us a fight at such a high level." Muka smiled.

Chapter 2450.2: Minny vs Galen (Part 2)

Neither person had hit each other yet in the battle, as it seemed like a contest of blood swipes and just avoiding each other, but everyone in the crowd was still amazed. The control of blood, the power of the blood aura being used, it was all amazing.

Some were wondering when the other would tire, or more importantly make mistakes. It was almost as if the other was waiting for them to make the first move as they put on this display.

While everyone was focused on the fight, Xox had positioned himself so he had switched positions with one of the other community leaders, and now he was next to Andy and Jessica.

"These two truly are amazing, I wonder if Quinn trained them personally himself." Xox said. "With these two, even with him gone, I guess there is no need to worry about the settlement's safety. I wonder if they had a hand in dealing with the Immortui problem you talked about earlier."

Andy was biting his tongue a bit, wishing he had said nothing, so he just nodded as he listened to Xox.

"You know, what you said before about him. I've been hearing his name pop up within the vampires of the Graylash planets quite a bit." Xox lied.

"Really?" Jessica reacted, and so did Andy at this point.

"Have you noticed anything strange with them, or markings on their bodies? If so, it might be best if you talk to Muka after this event." Jessica claimed.

Being a celestial himself, Xox knew what markings were, and things were falling into place. Trouble in the settlement, the speak of Immortui and the markings, he could imagine the problems they had been faced with.

"I am happy to, in fact I was hoping I would see Quinn himself to tell him in person. As you said though, he is busy dealing with the situation. It makes me wonder where he's gone. Perhaps to find more people with the markings, or to try to track down this Immortui figure himself."

The silence from the two, pretty much confirmed it to Xox. Quinn either was attempting to go to the red space to track down immortui, or was involved with him in some other way.

Although he didn't know where he was, giving this information alone was enough to give the Ancient Ones the reason they needed to act.

The fight in the centre was heating up. Minny had stopped her flurry of swipes and instead now was focusing on the speed of her body. She exploded with power from her position, heading straight at Galen and swung leaving a large red claw in the air.

Galen had avoided it, and threw out two blood swipes, but rather than going straight towards Minny, it had gone around the sides. Seeing this, Minny went in for another strike, and Galen gathered blood aura in the palm of his hands.

It blasted out, hitting Minny as she made an X to defend herself. It wasn't a direct hit and she was strong enough to power through, but that's when the two blood swipes that had been thrown early came from the sides and hit her straight in the shoulders.

They exploded on impact, the attack wasn't a strong one, she just felt a slight sting in both of her arms, but she was the first one to have taken a direct hit in this fight.

"How, how!" Tobi said, grinding his teeth. "How can a kid so young have such good blood control? I struggle to throw the thing straight, and he can make it twirl and even time it while he's fighting.

"Come on Minny, break his legs!" Tobi screamed.

"You do know that's her brother she's fighting, and you're asking her to break his legs?" Abby sighed.

Minny getting hit had a big smile on her face.

"I see... so you want to win that badly huh, then let me show you."

Minny charged forward again, and as the blood swipe came at her, she didn't try to break through or claw at it, she allowed it just to hit her body. She swung her arm again, and when it missed Galen as it had been doing.

Instead though, the claw continued hitting the hard metal floor, cracking it and breaking it to pieces. It flung up, and Minny kicked a large chunk of it, right at Galen.

Galen had knocked the large plank of metal away, but right behind it was Minny who threw out her arm, hitting Galen. The force sent him flying back and bouncing on the ground a few times, but he quickly got up to his feet looking unhurt, and just like Minny, he too now had a smile on his face.

"I don't know how much more of this I can watch." Layla said. Everytime one of them was hit or close to getting hurt, her instincts kicked in. She had even nearly jumped over the barrier a few times.

The good thing was, Minny had yet to use her celestial form, proving that they hadn't taken this battle too far.

Galen and Minny took a moment, the two didn't go back to attacking each other like they had before. It was almost as if both of them were evaluating their mistakes, to make sure that they didn't fall for the same trick next time.

"See, I told you." Minny stated. "I could teach you a few things. That's why I'm the big sister."

Galen didn't say anything, he was having fun and he was enjoying this moment, that was until he felt something strange. The smile disappeared from Galen's face, and he was no longer in a crouched position, instead he stood up straight.

"Huh... is everything okay, little brother?" Minny asked, genuinely concerned.

The crowd had quieted down as well, wondering what had happened. They too didn't want these two young contestants to be harmed because of all of this, It was just for entertainment.

Galen, soon turned around, no longer facing Minny, he couldn't feel it before, but he could feel it now, the energy that was lingering in the air. He then was staring dead straight at a particular individual.

"Oh, why is Galen looking at us?" Jessica said.

"Is he, he's looking this way, but I don't think he's looking at us?" Andy replied, as he moved his body slightly to the left and right, but Galen's eyes didn't move. That's when they soon noticed that Galen was staring straight at the person next to him.

"Sin... I think he might be staring at you." Valnar commented.

A sweat was starting to break out all over the vampire, at least the fake vampire, because Xox was getting a familiar sense of deja vu here.

'Don't tell me... can he recognise me, can he feel the celestial energy now that he's closer to me?'

Galen lifted his finger, and pointed right at Xox.

"You... bad person!"

Chapter 2451.1: The Ancient one's power (Part 1)

Xox had been very careful not to use his celestial energy. Usually it wasn't an energy that one could recognise in the first place, unless there was another celestial. Maybe they could feel something was different but they wouldn't be able to pinpoint where that difference in energy was from, not while there was a large crowd around them.

At the same time, Xox's transformation skills were perfect. It wasn't some type of ability. The cells in his ball shaped body, literally transformed, so it was like that of the being he copied, even down to the smell. When he was a Mermerial no one would be able to tell a difference, even if they were to dissect him apart.

It was also true for his vampire form right now. He had even gone to the length of kidnapping a vampire, so he could copy the kidnapped individual's details. So the vampires wouldn't even bat an eyelid at what he smelled like.

To them he was a vampire inside and out, so then why was the little vampire able to tell that Xox was different?

'That little brat again!' Xox thought. 'I thought he was following me last time. He saw my transformation as I was following his sister and busted me before I did anything, but why can he tell that I'm different now?'

Regardless of how, he had been called out, and that's when it hit him. To the others, he was a regular vampire.

"Hahaha!" Xox laughed out loud. "What a cute child, this is the first time we have met. What have I done that has made you deem me as bad?"

There was a thought in the back of Xox's mind, should he attempt to get out of this situation, but the anger of being put into this situation had already reached a boiling point for Xox.

During the match, he had thoughts just to blast Galen with a burst of energy while he was focused on his battle. If he was to do such a thing he would have to scram to get out of the place, which was why he hadn't but now, if he was going to get caught either way, he might as well go out with a blast.

"You bad, you tried hurting my sister!" Galen shouted.

Minny felt like this was an unusual reaction for Galen. He had never gone around pointing out that people were bad. He had done so a few times, when he saw a few crimes being committed in the market stalls.

He had seen a few people trying to steal from the markets while others weren't looking, but Galen had caught them. Not once had Galen accused someone for no reason.

"Galen, what did he try to do?" Minny asked, appearing by his side.

For Layla, she was wondering as well, why Galen was acting in such a way, then she remembered, remembered the words that Galen had said last time.

"You!" Layla shouted, already jumping off, using the barrier as leverage. She kicked off, bending the barrier completely and entering the battlefield, while pulling out a beast weapon sword.

"I told you, if you ever came back here again, without asking, you wouldn't see another day!" Layla screamed.

After her warning from last time, she thought the matter was dealt with, but fear that her family was being targeted again got all of her emotions riled up.

If the celestials still returned, after being caught, it meant they were after something, and Layla didn't like it at all.

Seeing the situation turn for the worse, Xox decided to go for it.

"Screw it!"

He lifted both hands, and rays of white energy were condensing on the spot. Before anyone could act, a large beam of celestial energy was shot, and it all headed in the direction of one person.

'I'm not a fighter, but I've been a celestial for longer than I can remember, and I have plenty of energy to smother you!' Xox thought.

Seeing this, around Galen's body was an immediate reaction, white energy started to glow. It covered his hands and he was hit, he was being pushed back. Until a hand by his right, a red blooded claw that looked like it came from hell itself, pushed back the energy with him.

"Sister!" Galen said.

Minny had transformed into her full celestial form, the red horns had twirled around her head, and hard encasing covered her entire body.

"What is going on!" Those from the crowd were panicked.

"Why is the Graylash vampire attacking the little boy!"

"Look at Minny though, she can transform!"

"What is that, it's like an armour made of blood aura, does this mean she was holding back during the fight?"

"Do you really think that's important right now, what is going on!"

With both Galen and Minny together, the two of them were able to withstand Xox's energy well.

"Nothing is going my way, it's time to get out of here." Xox said, but he soon felt a tight grip on the right of his shoulder.

"Hey, you're not going anywhere, do you think you could just attack those kids and get away with it!" Andy was gripping hard onto Xox's shoulder. He then lifted his whole body into the air with one hand, and was ready to slam him into the ground.

In the middle of his swing down, the body of Xox started to change, it turned into a slippery type of worm and escaped straight out of Andy's hands, forcing him to do nothing but hit the air.

'Did you really think I would have survived so long without having any skills of my own!'

While looking back in his snake like form, he soon ran into multiple black balls. It was too late to avoid them. As he hit them, strange see-through chains were attached to his body and pinned him to the ground.

Immediately, the dark balls started to hit Xox one after the other, and continued to pin him down.

Layla had jumped up in the air, opening her mouth, with flames encasing the entirety of her sword, and she swung it above, cutting the air, and Qi energy unleashed from it.

"Screw all of you!" Xox said, as his form turned back into what he originally was, a ball, but the chains were still on him. A white little marking that looked to be embedded into him, started to glow with great power

It shined bright and pulsated outward. In doing so, it hit Layla, it pushed her back to the ground, before the energy passed through her body. Before it could do the same to Minny and Galen, they both got into their own shadow space, avoiding the strike, while the pulse continued to go outward hitting everything in the settlement.

'So the item activated in the end, I guess he ran into trouble after all.' The Ancient One thought. 'I thought this would happen, let's see how they deal with a part of my power.'

Chapter 2452.2: The Ancient one's power (Part 2)

The Ancient Ones were some of the longest known celestials. Some believed that they might have even been the first, but no one knew for sure, but everyone knew their name and who they were regardless. What they were sure about, was that they had created the celestial space along with the celestial system and the order the celestials followed to this day.

Whether there were those that existed before them, wasn't an important matter, just the fact that, they were the ones who ruled currently.

The Ancient Ones could only do this in the first place if they had great power, a way to continue raising their condition, and the ability to stay on top. In many ways some might have even said they were obsessed with their positions.

Others believed that it was their condition that forced them to do such things. The universe had given them a condition that made them take such a position. However, before, the celestials weren't called celestials.

They were named many things by the races and lives they looked over, some calling them gods. Others called them demons, or just, in general, legendary beings. It wasn't until the celestials had formed the society of the gods that they started to name the others celestials and that was because of a particular Ancient Celestial, one who bore the name Celestalon.

Celestalon, was the one who gave the name celestials, an entire race that was above that of the lives they looked after. Many had forgotten what Celestalon's power was, as they did with many of the Ancient Ones.

They liked to keep it that way, many rumours spread between the celestials claiming that they could do all sorts of things, such as snapping one out of existence. Since they had the power to move between worlds, many believed that to be the case.

However, there was one fact that only a few knew. Mundus, the messenger of the Ancient Ones was thinking about this as he sat in his chair observing the situation.

"When everything started, in order to get the celestials in order, Celestalon used his power a lot." Mundus thought. "If order breaks again, or trouble starts to arise, he will be the first one to act. I was a little worried that things might get out of hand and he would throw the Golden space into chaos."

"When was the last time he used them, the Divine Brigade, the dark and light units. I guess, it would have been when Immortui waged his last attack."

Immortui had not only a strong condition, but also a strong unique power. The ability to create new races. It stemmed from a type of magic that he used with his

own blood. Infecting other lives, changing their body structures completely, until they became an entire new power itself.

What was amazing about Immortui's power were the creations become their own beings. They had the potential to gain power on the level of God-slayers, as well as the power to surpass some of the strongest celestials.

It also meant that not all of Immortui's creations would have to listen to him, but with his own extreme power, and his links to the world of death, he could be very convincing.

In a way, although Immortui himself was incredibly powerful, his most dangerous aspect was his ability to create an army.

The celestials had great control over individuals, but even if one or two got out of line, they could deal with them. Even if a few grouped up together they could be dealt with, but Immortui's power was truly fearful and when he went against the Ancient Ones, they saw that.

Which was why the single Ancient One that could be said to have contributed the most into stopping Immortui's attack, was Celestalon. The Ancient One in charge of a unit called the Divine Brigade.

It was a unit that was capable of taking on Immortui's forces because like Immortui, Celestalon had the power to create Divine Beings, with the power to match God-slayers. Unlike with Immortui, these didn't need a basis of a life, they could be created out of thin air, but they were dangerous because they only were able to do one thing.

Destroy any life that they saw in sight.

The Ancient One in question that had given Xox his task was none other than Celestalon. The item he had handed down, had given him a power, a great power. Celestial energy exploded out of the item.

Everyone felt a pulse go through their bodies and were blinded by a great white light. When the light started to fade where Xox was, in the center of the area having escaped, there were now four figures which surrounded him,

The figures were large in size, standing tall around ten feet in height. They surrounded Xox from all sides, blocking anyone from getting to him. Out of the four Divine Beings that stood there, two of them looked similar, while the other two looked different, almost like a pairing.

There were Divines that were covered in light energy, they had radiant golden skin which seemed to be what was emitting the light. Their hair had a shimmer of silver, while their eyes were a piercing bright blue.

The movements of them were strange as they stood there with the spear in their hands like statues.

Then there were the Dark Divine Beings. Although they looked almost identical, in shape and size, their skin was dark as the night sky. Even their hair seemed to absorb the light around them as the colour faded nearby. While their eyes were deep glowing with a darker blue.

"What are those things?" Layla said, as she looked up. Something was throwing her off, making her body shake slightly. She soon understood what it was, it was the fact that they had only one emotion emitting from their body.

"Everyone, get out of here!" Layla screamed at the top of her lungs.

"Agreed." Xox said, his body lighting up in the celestial energy, and before they knew it, he had left the scene, leaving behind members of the Divine Brigade.

When Xox disappeared, he had entered the celestial space, but he soon felt that his body was being pulled somewhere else, and he found himself in front of the Ancient One again.

"The fact that my item has been used, I am going to assume that you have some news to bring me." Celestalon asked.

Xox was prepared for this, as he gulped down.

"As a matter of fact, I think I do." Xox replied. "I believe that Quinn has travelled to the red space in order to face Immortui... and it seems that Immortui has been trying to... invade the Golden space lately."

The whole room that the two of them were in started to shake violently.

"I see... I guess it's time I make my move."

Chapter 2453.1: Fight the Divine Brigade (Part 1)

The four large figures stood there on their own in the centre of the arena, and the one they were after had completely disappeared. The feeling from these figures, they didn't feel human, almost as if they weren't alive which was giving a shiver all over Layla.

"Everyone, what are you doing!" Layla shouted, as she turned her head. "Get everyone out of here!"

The scream was loud and this time, unlike before, it was amplified by Qi. Seeing this, Muka got to work informing the vampires to evacuate the people as quickly as possible. Xander was on the move as well, as they ordered everyone to get to the main settlement as quickly as possible.

One of the dark Divine warriors was the first to move. It looked at the crowd with its dark blue eyes, and lifted its spear. At the very tip, energy started to gather. A ball of energy was growing larger and larger and it was pointed right at the crowd.

The energy was expanding and it was building up ready to fire. From right above the spear, a small red coloured figure had appeared, and with its two hands slammed the spear. The energy had burst shortly after and was shot right into the ground.

The blast had cracked the hard, specially made, metal flooring for the fighting event. Large chunks were thrown up in the air and cracks were created in the ground that went further and further until it had even reached the bottom of the stadium where the crowds were sitting.

"Holy crap, we better get out of here!" The vampires shouted.

Maybe it was their arrogance, but the vampires until now were slowly exiting from the arena. They were strong and powerful, so even large creatures didn't seem too frightening to them now, but it was clear.

If the attack hadn't been stopped, or redirected, then a large chunk of the crowd would have just disappeared into nothing.

"Come on Tobi, we have to leave!" Abby said, dragging him by the arm.

"But what about Minny, she's still out there!" Tobi shouted.

"And what can you do to help her?" Abby asked. "Minny is stronger than any of us. Strong enough to even match up with the leaders. She just saved us by stopping that thing. So let's get out of here, so she can fight that thing at full strength and kick its arse!"

Tobi wanted to stay and help, but he knew what Abby said was true. The resolve in him was growing, one day he wanted to be strong enough, to be the one that could protect Minny.

"Like that could ever happen!" Abby commented, as they exited the seats and were now heading through the tunnels to the outside.

"How can you tell what I'm thinking?"

Back on the floor, on the other side, Andy and Jessica had jumped over and were running towards the main fighting area, but they weren't alone as two other vampires were following them, the vampires from the Graylash community.

"You guys get out of here!" Andy shouted.

"Hey, we're not as weak as you may think!" Valnar shouted. "Besides, that b*stard, he came from outside. The least we can do is help."

Facing their way, were the light Divine beings. They had no weapons in their hands but instead just had their palms out. Energy started to gather in their palms, golden in colour, and shot out at the group.

It hit the ground as the vampires dodged the blasts, but they didn't stop there. The golden Divine beings were moving their hands at incredibly fast speeds shooting out energy all over the place.

The vampires were quick to avoid them all, but they could see the large circle scorch marks that were left on the floor, if they were hit, then it could very well mean the end for them.

As they ran, the two vampires, including Jessica, all let out a large blast of their energy. Two red lines of blood aura came out, and for Jessica, she wasn't holding back either as her yellow energy was let out.

When the attacks were inches from touching them, the Divine beings suddenly disappeared, and reappeared shooting out another shot of energy. It was unexpected and landed right on Jessica.

She slid back, her feet sliding across the floor, and the outside of her skin was burnt and it was falling to the ground.

"That freaking hurt!" Jessica screamed.

Close enough to the enemy, Andy decided to go strike it with his own fist. He swung it out, increasing it in size, but just like before, the golden being was able to teleport, avoiding the attack completely, and it threw two quick blasts of energy as it moved its hand, both of them had hit him cleanly right on his body.

His skin was burnt, and a large chunk of it fell from his face, but part of his body was already starting to heal.

"This is going to be really annoying, isn't it?" Andy thought.

Back on the other side, where the dark Divine beings were, the second one had two balls of energy having formed at either end of their spear. Once again, it wasn't looking at anyone below it, instead it was looking at the crowd, those that were still trying to run away,

It swung its spear, spinning it, and from the top and bottom, small parts of the energy started to swing off from the weapon. They were going all over the place, right to the crowd.

Jumping up, Layla sliced through one of the energy blasts managing to break it, but she could only stop one at a time. The other attacks continued forward and landed right in the stands.

A large explosion went off, and the screams of vampires were heard. Some had instantly been killed in the attack, while others had part of their limbs torn off.

Placing her sword away, she knew she had to try something else instead. She brought out her bow, and started to fire multiple Qi arrows, right at the source of energy that was coming from the spear.

As the Qi arrows hit the sources of energy, they exploded, stopping the attacks. With the bow she was able to shoot multiple arrows and at a fast enough speed to stop the attacks.

'This is bad though, I'm having to use a lot of Qi to stop those attacks. They aren't weak by any means. Eventually I'll run out, and then what? Do I have to stop worrying about the others behind me... and just try to kill this thing?'

She had to make a decision, and it had to be a big one. In the end, she shot out five Qi arrows, four of them going towards the multiple attacks, while one went toward the head of her enemy.

'I'm sorry, if I don't do this, then everyone will die!'

The attacks had been stopped and the Qi arrow had hit the dark warrior right on the top of its head. The power of the strike caused it to topple as it fell to the floor.

Quickly, Layla glanced behind her, but there was no attack. It hadn't hit the arena, instead she could see Galen, with the shadow covering his body.

"You kill, I will protect!" Galen said. "Dad said, I can use the shadow... in emergency, I think this is an emergency."

"Well, you're right about that."

Chapter 2454.2: Fight the Divine Brigade (Part 2)

Galen was already out on the field due to his fight with Minny, but he was able to quickly grasp the situation, and when he looked around, he decided to help his mother. He could see where she was struggling and why she was struggling.

With that, he had jumped up and used his shadow powers to stop the attack from hitting the crowd. Now that he was able to help his mother, she could focus on killing the Divine creatures.

"What about Minny?" Layla wondered.

"Minny is strong, you don't have to worry about her, kill this monster then save her!" Galen shouted.

Never did Layla think that she would be taking advice from her own son, yet here she was. The creature that was on the floor was hurt. Although they had strong attacks, it looked like their bodies weren't particularly hard.

As long as they got a good hit on them, they could finish them off. Jumping up in the air, she levitated her body and pulled on her bow once more. She fired three more arrows hitting the dark Divine a few more times, one in the head, the stomach and the legs.

Surprisingly, blood seemed to pour out of these creatures, although it wasn't red in colour. Instead it was golden. It looked a little strange especially on the Dark ones. Switching to her sword, she was ready to swing down on its neck to finish it off.

As she gathered her power, she flew towards its neck, and that was when several shots of golden energy came from the side. However, the attacks weren't aimed at her, instead it hit the dark Divine on the floor.

As it hit the body, its wounds healed almost instantly, and with the spear in its hand it swung it right at Layla. She braced herself with the sword blocking the attack, but was hit strongly in the air.

She managed to stop herself with her telekinesis powers before she was sent far from the scene, and she could already see the dark Divine standing up.

'What happened, did the golden creatures just attack the dark one?' Layla thought.
'But it didn't hurt it... instead, I think it might have healed it.'

Layla's guess was spot on, it certainly seemed the case. Minny, fast with her movements, swung at one of the dark Divines. She clashed against the spear, and with her great strength she was able to push it back.

Then, when she saw an opening, she used her speed to run off the ground and slice, attacking the legs of the dark Divine. She cut it several times, to the point it had fallen over backwards.

She then sensed attacks coming from the side, coming from the other golden Divine. As the attacks hit the dark Divine, all the damage she had done so far had healed up.

With the dark Divines back in full swing and power, they were already on the assault once again.

Layla fell forward and swung her sword in the air with the spear of the dark Divine. She opened her mouth, and sprayed fire on its hands, trying to melt it. It let go of the spear with one hand, and a golden shot came over, healing it.

It then let go of the spear with the other, and did the same. With a burst of strength, it pushed and Layla was pushed back once again.

"We need to deal with the golden ones first!" Layla shouted, projecting her voice again. "They can heal the others."

She wasn't sure if it was vice versa or not, since the golden Divines had yet to be hurt, but judging by the fact that they were avoiding being hit, and weren't as aggressive as the dark ones, she judged this to most likely be their role.

"We're trying!" Andy shouted back. "But they're too fast, we can't do anything."

Looking at the situation, Layla was trying to think of a strategy, how could they win this fight? If this continued on in a loop, they would just tire out, and if that was to happen they would quickly lose this fight.

It was strange their powers weren't overwhelmingly strong, but they were powerful enough to give them trouble. Yet when together, it felt like an unstoppable opponent they had to face.

"Think Layla, think!"

She continued to fire her arrows, trying her best to distract the dark Divine before it could do a full scale attack like before. Thankfully, most of the vampires looked like they had already evacuated as well.

Which meant that she didn't have to worry about Galen as much either.

'Wait that's it, Galen.'

"Everyone, on my mark, get ready to focus all of your energy on the Dark ones!" Layla shouted.

Andy heard loud and clear, as they continued to dodge the attacks. They were finding no opportunity to harm the golden ones anyway. So they thought if all of them put their attention into the dark ones, this could work.

However, Layla had a lot more planned than that.

"Galen, Minny!" Layla shouted. "When you hear me shout, hide, I want you to hide those golden ones!"

Both Minny and Galen nodded, as they understood the meaning behind the words. At the right time, Layla flew backwards and fired several more arrows, using as much Qi as she could.

They spread out and hit both of the spears hard on the dark Divines. She then went straight to the ground, and slammed her hands on the floor.

Out in the arena, several black balls started to sprout up all over.

"Now!" Layla shouted.

With her telekinesis powers, all of the black balls went straight towards the dark Divines. With how large their bodies were, it was almost impossible for them to escape. As the balls touched their body, the spirit chains were appearing all over, locking them in place.

Immediately, The Graylash vampires, Jessica, and Andy went straight at the dark Divines. Andy had grown out both of his hands, making them gigantic, lifting them in the air.

"Hide!" Layla shouted. Switching from her sword she went to the bow again, and aimed toward the dark beings. She was exhausted but she needed to push herself, they needed to get through this.

At the same time, both Galen and Minny held out their hands, and pointed them toward the golden warriors, a shadow portal appeared and the golden beings had disappeared into the shadow space.

With how much power these creatures held, who knew how long they would stay in there. This wasn't the power of Quinn's shadow after all, but just his children. Still, it only needed to work for a few moments.

A bombardment of attacks from all sides, with all their strength, was unleashed on the two dark Divines. Soon their bodies fell to the ground, and as they hit the floor, they burst into nothing but gold dust, disappearing in front of their eyes.

"We... did it." Jessica said with a smile.

At that moment, breaking out from the shadow spaces, appearing on the field, were the two gold Divines.

"No... we just did half the job." Andy said. "Let's finish the rest."

Chapter 2455: Preparing for the worst

As expected, the golden warriors had ended up coming out of the Shadow space. They weren't released by Minny or Galen, instead they had forced their way out. After seeing how much power their attacks contained, it honestly didn't come as much of a huge surprise.

When they came out, not seeing their partners, Layla was expecting some type of reaction from them, but they seemed to not care. Focusing on those below, almost immediately they started to fire golden shots out of the palm of their hands at the others.

"Just keep them busy... I'll do the same again when I can!" Layla shouted.

She jumped back and Galen continued to stay by his mother's side. He had a serious look on his face, determined to stop anything that was going to come her way.

"Don't worry, I block attacks!" Galen proudly declared, thumping his chest.

"You are a brave boy, huh, I wonder who you take after." Layla replied, as she did her best to recover and continued to watch the others.

The golden beings were still incredibly fast, it was impossible for the others to get a hit on them. Even with Minny and her speed, she struggled, and a couple of times she and Andy tried to corner one. Predicting where it would move, but the area was just too large for them.

After some time though, Layla placed her hand on the ground, and started to summon the black balls from the ground. There were multiple all over the place, and using her telekinesis power she could aim them carefully, spreading them out on the field.

'It's a good thing these guys are quite big, which means...' Just as she had this thought, one of the golden beings had hit one of the balls and a spiritual chain had restricted it.

In that moment, Layla moved all of the other balls to the being. With the spiritual chains, it was unable to move, allowing all of the others to bombard it with attacks. As it was hit, it just burst into golden dust just like the dark beings did.

Now, there was only one left. It was a rinse and repeat, but everyone was confident they could now deal with the situation, and they were right as the last one had eventually been taken care of.

There were no more Divine beings on the field. Layla, Andy, Jessica, and the rest, each one of them were completely exhausted from the fight.

They all slowly moved to the center as they started to gather their energy.

"What just happened, what were those things, and who was that guy pretending to be Sin?" Valnar asked.

"I... I really aren't too sure." Layla replied.

Muka, and Xander were seen coming over. They had been busy trying to control the crowd. Most had gotten away, but unfortunately there were a few vampires that had been caught in the crossfire.

"What I don't understand was their aim." Andy said. "Why did they aim to attack the crowd? Surely they would have targeted us? Why would they just try to kill regular vampires."

No one answered, because no one knew the answer, but Layla was thinking about the situation. The beings that had appeared themselves weren't hard to defeat. They had strong attack power, but with their strength, they could finish them off relatively quickly.

Still, perhaps the ordinary vampires wouldn't be able to deal with them. At least vampires at the leader or a group of vampire knights would have to be used. The main issue though, was when the beings were together.

With the golden ones able to heal the black ones, it made them almost impossible to kill.

'Thankfully, Minny and Galen were able to use their shadow powers to trap them.' Layla thought. 'If they weren't present then would we even have been able to take the four of them out?'

That wasn't the only fear, what if there were more than four of them. Only Minny and Galen had the shadow power. It wasn't as if they had Quinn to help them out either.

With everything that had occurred, it was hard for the vampires that had visited to take away the positive from the event. In order to calm their nerves a bit, the Graylash vampires as well as the Vampire Corps stayed at the vampire settlement for a while longer.

Andy, and Valnar stated that they should help each other, help them rebuild the arena for future events and continue to enjoy the culture of where they had all originally come from.

In the meantime, around the whole settlement, they would continue to show clips of the event, before the large attack. People were reminded of the fun they had, and

many of the clips showed Minny and her skills as well, practically making her a little star.

Of course, it wasn't only her but many also saw the feats of Galen as well, but his face didn't appear too much. As time went on, they did realize that it was an odd occurrence that had happened.

The vampire settlement was extremely safe. There were next to no problems even within, which they couldn't say the same for their groups.

Vampires would often bicker and argue about what the right thing to do was, as situations to do with the humans they lived nearby would appear. A lot of vampires didn't want to admit it, especially those from the Graylash planets, but a life with no humans, away from the others, caused a lot less problems.

It was a tough pill to swallow as they wanted to feel like they were the same, and could live side by side, and now they were seeing another solution to the problem.

After a couple of days had passed, a meeting had been called. They were using the leader's table placed at the back of the main castle in the large grand garden.

Muka and Layla were present representing the vampire settlement, Andy and Jessica for the Vampire Corps, and Valnar and an older vampire named Stripson, apparently another member of the Graylash community that hadn't been there originally for the event.

"Stripson has some news." Valanr declared.

"The original Sin is dead." Stripson announced. "We managed to find the remains of his blood. We have a rough idea of when the person had decided to disguise themselves. Due to the timing, we can only assume that their goal was always the event."

"But why?" Jessica asked. "It wasn't as if anything big was going on at the event, and what did they get out of summoning those things?"

"I believe it was the same individual that tried to infiltrate the event before." Layla announced. "I caught them last time, and they said that they were here to talk to Quinn, but I guess that's a lie."

"Wait, talk to Quinn?" Andy interjected. "The guy, he did seem to ask a lot of questions about Quinn. He was asking what he was doing and where he was."

Layla thought about it. She thought that the case might have something to do with Immortui, but it didn't feel like his style. This was completely different from how he had acted.

Not only that, but why Quinn? It couldn't have actually been the god Yongbu wanting to talk to him. That now seemed like a complete lie, so what were they aiming for, and why was Quinn a big deal?

"I'm worried," Layla said out loud. "Whatever they wanted, they might have gotten it this time, and they left us a taste of what's in store."

"Do you think they wanted to know whether Quinn was away or not so they could launch an attack?" Muka guessed. "If they now know he's not here for certain and unleashed a number of those things, it would spell trouble for us all."

"I'm not too sure about that." Layla was thinking back to the deal Quinn had stated he had made. Would they go back on it? A thought had entered her mind that maybe she should try and contact these gods.

There was a chance that they didn't know what others were doing, and in Quinn's absence, they would come to their aid if it was the case. But if it wasn't, then it would be a risky move that would bring their doom even closer.

"For now, I think that we should all just prepare. I don't know who, I don't know what, but I have a bad feeling about all of this. I think everyone, vampires in every location, should prepare for the worst. That way, we can save as many lives as possible."

'Quinn... how much longer are you going to be... I hope you're safe.'

Chapter 2456: Where is Quinn?

Looking around, all that could be seen was a thick mist. It was grey in colour and as Quinn wiped his hand through it, none of it moved. He was unable to see further than just his body ahead; it was so thick.

'Where is this place?' Quinn thought. 'Did Immortui put me here after defeating me? But that doesn't make any sense, wouldn't he want to keep a close eye on me, to make sure I can't escape.'

Quinn's mind was relatively sound, he could remember everything that had occurred beforehand. He remembered how he had lost the battle against Immortui, and the red energy pouring into him.

For him, it was an expected result. Which was why he had come up with a plan with the others, and that's why he was even more confused about where he currently was.

Looking at his hands, he could see that his self wasn't completely solid, his own body was slightly transparent.

'If I didn't know any better I would have thought that I was a ghost, but why can I still access my system?'

The system screen popped up just fine, but there were certain things that didn't work. For one, he was unable to use his shadow ability. At the same time, he couldn't use his blood aura either.

He tried, even using the system to activate his skills, but nothing was working. When using the inspect skill on the fog, only question marks would appear as well.

"Alright, I need to try something, Hello!" Quinn shouted out loud, wondering if he would get a response back, but there was nothing.

Part of him thought it might have been a special celestial space, something that was created by Immortui, but even then, he should have been able to use his powers.

In the end, Quinn did what he only could do, and that was run, he ran through the mist, left, right, straight ahead, seeing if he would come across anything. It felt unusual as if his body wasn't moving at all.

After running for a while, Quinn eventually gave up, noticing that clearly it was doing nothing.

'How do I get out of here!'

Was this the torture that Immortui spoke of, an endless loop in a closed space? No, there had to be more to it. Quinn continued to run around, he jumped and struck the air, but there was nothing.

"Is anyone there!" Quinn shouted. "Immortui! What have you done to me!"

In a way, Quinn did feel like this was torture. He was already imagining that the passage of time in here was far faster than that on the outside. Maybe he had been in here five minutes, but it had been years on the outside.

He was starting to think the worst was happening to his family, that was until he heard someone.

"Quinn... is that you?" A voice whispered in the mist.

Outside, the others were looking at Quinn's body. Still held up in the cave on the mountain. There was no reaction from his body. No movement since they had brought him here, just the sound of his breath and heartbeat, letting them know that he was still alive.

"I really wonder, what is happening to him?" Peter said, sitting back down by the body's side, staying on guard.

Everyone now knew each other's backgrounds well. Edvard and Chris were still outside scouting the planet and had yet to come back.

"So, are we just going to stay here?" Russ asked. "Or are we going to do something?"

Calva had gone out, to the edge of the cave, he looked out far and wide, at the surroundings, the trees, and more, eventually coming back to the others.

"I have some good news, and some bad news for you all." Calva said. "As I said before, I believe the best thing we can do right now is free the Champions, they will be able to help us. With all of our strength, I believe that we can take out the demon kings and obtain their blood as needed one by one, before they can inform Immortui of where we are... it's the only way really. With me, I can convince them to help us."

"We have met one of the champions and know their strength." Hikel replied. "So, I don't think it's a bad idea, and if you say you can convince them that's good, but what was the bad news you speak of?"

Calva pointed outside the cave.

"The planet we are on now is known as the planet of the Giants. It's where the strong Yak demon race belongs. On this planet, there is a Champion, but there is also the demon king of the powerful Yaks.

"The champion's name is Pultra. She is locked up, in a garden, with the Yak's overlooking her. Out of the two Champions, she might be the most difficult to get to, since she is being watched."

The group were thinking for a while, since they were on the planet anyway, they might as well attempt to rescue the champion, but one word from any of the demon kings and Immortui would be right where they were, and Quinn didn't look like he was going to get out of his condition any time soon.

"Do you know where she is locked up?" Sil asked. "If you do, then I can use my powers to teleport us there. You can talk to her, and we can bring her back out. I could even create a clone to transform to look like her, that way the demons won't get suspicious of her."

Calva's eyes widened. This one person could do so many things, create clones, transform, and even teleport. It was a blessing to have him, and perhaps the person that they needed to help them.

"I know what planet you and Hikel were on as well, we can do the same. I can take Calva and use him to convince this Shinto to come to our side first, but I think we should try this Pultra person first."

The others felt a bit guilty, Sil had already done so much, and now what were they supposed to do. Just sit there and wait, just wait until they could actually be of use?

"We will need all of us in this." Sil replied. "If there are those that are strong enough to do that to Quinn, then it means just me won't be enough."

"Honestly, even if we are to rescue these champions, when it comes to taking on the demon kings, I think it will be impossible to fight them without Immortui noticing something." Sil stated.

No one wanted to say anything, but the big part of this plan required Immortui not knowing and it just felt impossible.

"You guys will need to take out the demon kings. After rescuing the champions, when the fighting starts, if Immortui finds out what we're doing, or comes after us, then I will do everything in my power to fight him, and stall for time."

"I will hold back Immortui while trusting you guys."

Chapter 2457.1: Chris' power (Part 1)

There were two people that were still not quite aware of the situation that was going on, and that was both Chris and Edvard. They had no clue they were on a planet that had been given the name, Planet of the Giants, but if they did know, they would have already guessed why that was.

The two of them had been exploring the planet, and in their search they had found a couple of things. First was that the demon race that resided on the planet, they were the Yaks. They were giant in size, as big as a large tree that would tower over them.

Even between the Yaks they all seemed to differ in size greatly, but they had the same similar features. Wearing next to no armour, apart from some cloth around their private parts. Strangely, it wasn't rags though, they were well made materials and some even had jewels and shiny objects embedded in them.

Many of them would often wear jewelery around their neck as well. It was only the rest of their body that would remain open. The other part was the tusks that pointed upward that they all had.

It was important to note these features because that was the second thing they had found out. They had yet to see another race that had some form of intelligence. There were a few different creatures here and there, along with large bugs that roamed the place.

Yet there wasn't a single inhabitant other than the Yaks that they could see. Unlike the planets they had been on before.

The two had decided to investigate further. They were looking at the large objects that they were building. They almost looked like ships that one would use to sail the sea rather than in the air.

Although old fashioned in their design, the materials were something they had never seen before. The Yaks would go off a certain path, heading towards a valley in the distance.

From what they could see, the area had a formation of giant rocks as tall as mountains, but they curled and twisted as if they were once a large sea that had been frozen over. On a closer look, these formations sparkled when in the light.

The Yaks had been mining two types of material for the ships. One of them being small crystals that had been passed onto another team elsewhere. It was too dangerous to follow where they were going.

Meanwhile, from the rest of the rock, was what would be used to make the ship itself. There was mass amounts of heat from just being in the area, as they had to use it to mold the rock to the shape needed.

The two had taken the long way around from the base of operations, and were still in the forest rather than the transformed area, looking from afar.

"Do you think we should follow the Yaks? Maybe we can see where they're getting all these materials from?" Chris suggested.

"It would not help us to know how they are making these things, but more so why they are making these things." Edvard said.

"Then, do you think we should try and interrogate one of them?" Chris said rather quickly.

"No, we were just to scout the area, and see what they were doing." Edvard replied. "The most important thing is that the two of us don't get caught. I think we should head back and inform the others."

There were two paths the Yaks were moving in, one was toward the wavy rocks, and the other was through another part of the forest. In the distance, many miles away, they could see a large golden temple built at the top.

There seemed to be more of a civilization off in the distance. They wanted to explore, but before doing so, they should inform the others, Chris knew that as well.

The two started to make their way back through the forest, going the long way around again, and then would head to the cave. While moving slowly, Edvard couldn't help but speak his mind.

"The more I look at it, the more I can't help but think that they are preparing for war." Edvard stated. "But against who? Haven't they already taken over this place?"

"If they are planning on a war, we should stop them, or if we just take one of them out, then we should get our answers. Look how many of them there are, there must be tens of thousands of these guys, they won't notice one of them missing."

"Something the size of the large tree they won't notice missing, and how do you suppose we hide something so large from them?" Edvard replied back.

Chris was acting strange, Edvard wasn't so sure, but he almost seemed twitchy for some reason. Still, they were allies, so he hoped it was just his imagination.

When walking around, they had eventually come across a group of Yaks that were sitting on large rocks and some on large tree trunks huddled together. They were talking and laughing, seemingly taking a break from the hard labour they had been doing not so long ago.

Both Edvard and Chris were staring from above, as they needed to be extremely careful with their movements, judging by how close they were.

'I thought the forest was safe, since when we went through this way the first time, we didn't meet them.' Edvard thought. 'This red mist is screwing up with my senses as well. It's concentrated in this area. I can't even smell them even though we're this close now.' Edvard thought.

"Have you heard the rumours? Bisha has asked us to increase our work load, he wants everything to be done by the end of the week!"

"The end of the week! Is he trying to kill us? No wonder I have been seeing more Yaks from the city."

"You know what that means though, right?" One of the Yaks said. "If he wants us to finish early, it can only mean that it's almost time. They must be planning to battle with the celestials soon!"

All of the Yaks had large grins on their faces as they heard this.

"Then it means that it will be worth it in the end!"

They all started to laugh and cheer.

'Our guess was right, but a fight with the celestials.... Quinn was right to come here and try to stop Immortui... who knows what danger this will put the whole universe in. It makes me wonder, where are you in a time like this?' Edvard looked at his red scaled dragon armour.

While they were laughing loudly, it was time for them to make their moves. A few sounds here and there in the forest wouldn't be much, there were plenty of birds.

At that moment, Chris leapt from one branch to the other. When he did though, his legs had broken right through the branch, he continued going downward until he had crashed onto the ground, and now he was only a few meters away from the Yaks.

'Damn it, now that they've seen him, we have to get rid of them, before they inform the others!'

Chapter 2458.2: Chris' power (Part 2)

The eyes of the Yaks immediately turned to the noise and they stood up from their positions. They had been informed to be on high alert from their demon king, just in case a certain Champion had decided to escape.

However, what they saw was no champion, and instead it was a lone single person standing there.

"Huh, how did they manage to get on this planet, that would have been impossible without alerting us." The Yak said.

At that moment, dropping down from the tree, with a fist full of energy, Edvard delivered a single punch. It landed right at the back of the Yak's head, creating a large hole killing it on the spot.

"We need to get rid of them all, as quickly as possible, without making a lot of noise!" Edvard stated.

The one thing they needed to do was not get caught, and now that they had been found out, the only other thing they could do was get rid of the evidence before it told on them.

Chris understood the assignment, as he was running toward one of them, he was already transforming into his full werewolf form, his skin was turning red and he leapt up off the ground.

The Yak tried to hit the werewolf, but its acceleration in speed caused it to hit nothing but the air, as Chris used his claws to rip right at the demon's throat. Using the body of another, Chris jumped, pouncing onto the other nearby Yak and slashing at its throat as well, and then quickly went to the next.

Worried that their falling bodies would create a large amount of sound when they fell to the floor. Edvard quickly moved, holding the bodies up and then gently letting them down.

Chris was dealing with the Yak quickly, causing Edvard to go from one to the next, until they had eventually dealt with all five of them.

Chris ended his transformation, landing on the ground, and Edvard wiped the sweat from his head. It was a tense situation.

"We work well together." Chris said.

Edvard didn't comment at that, and instead looked at the situation in front of them.

"You said they wouldn't notice one, but what about a whole team of five, I think they would notice that. Come on, let's try to move these guys deeper into the forest, so no one finds them."

Although the Yak's bodies were large, the two had great strength allowing them to lift them with ease. What was more of a problem was their large limbs and having to navigate them through the forest.

In the end, they had to slice off their arms, and pile it on the body for easier movement. Once Edvard felt they were safe enough in the forest and deep enough, Edvard placed them in a pile on the ground.

It was one of the wide open areas that didn't have large trees too close to it. He then could see Chris coming over with the last body, and putting it with the others.

"Do you care to explain what all of that was about back there, then?" Edvard asked.

"What do you mean? Did I do something wrong?" Chris said. For a split second his pupils looked in a different direction as he broke eye contact.

"Are you trying to play stupid?" Edvard almost yelled. "I saw what you did, you put your Qi into that branch when you landed on it. You broke that branch on purpose as if you wanted to get caught!"

"Ever since we saw the Yak, you have been trying to convince me that we need to take them on. Is this some type of ego trip, did you need to prove that you were stronger than them?"

"Well, you did it, you're stronger than them, but now there is a good chance that once they find those Yak are missing, that they will start to be on the lookout for us."

All of it came out at once. Usually Chris was relatively mature, especially compared to the others. Which was part of the reason why he was angry. How did it come to this?

A sulking look came about on Chris' face at that moment.

"I'm sorry... you're right, you're a hundred percent right." Chris said. "The truth is, I was just thinking about myself, but it's not what you think."

Chris then leapt from his position and landed on top of the Yak's body.

"If we want to get rid of the evidence, it's best if we get rid of the bodies, right?" Chris said. "You heard them say how overworked they were, if they're missing some might think they've just ran away. So I'll make sure, they can't find the bodies."

"How are you going to do that? If you burn them, then it will attract attention as well." Edvard replied.

"It's about what I said earlier. I was being selfish, after I met that demon Unzoku, he said the way we werewolves get stronger is by eating. I never wanted to hurt someone again, and the thought of doing that sickened me."

"But when I saw the demons, saw their large bodies and great strength, it made me think. It would be alright to eat them right? These are the ones ruining the lives of others. They are our enemy and need to be killed if we're spotted."

"If they are dead anyways, then we might as well not waste their body."

Lifting up a large piece of one of the Yak's arms, Chris transformed his head and took a large chunk of it, biting it, and swallowing it whole.

Edvard couldn't quite believe it, but he remembered seeing sights like this in the past. Werewolves with a bottomless pit of a stomach, eating down anything.

Edvard stood there, somewhat keeping watch, somewhat staring at Chris, reminded of the old days. He wanted Chris to continue to eat all the bodies of the Yak. All of it going somewhere in his small body. He even consumed the bones of the thing.

After consuming the first one, Chris could already feel it. The food was almost being converted into raw power, adding to his body instantly. He continued to consume one after another.

'This is it... this is it... I've finally found it, the way to increase my strength.' Chris thought. 'If I continue like this, I'll be able to get stronger, I can help Quinn and the next time I meet Unzoku, it will be a different match altogether.'

All five of the Yak were consumed, and although Chris felt far stronger than he was before, there was a certain look in his eyes, a look Edvard had seen multiple times in the past.

'I know that look.' Edvard thought. 'That wasn't enough, you need to feast on more to grow your power... please Chris, don't become like the werewolves of the past, or I might have to have my hand in getting rid of you as well.'

Chapter 2459: Choosing death

It was clear from the look in Chris' eyes, that if he could have his way he would have continued to hunt the Yak getting stronger. Although he wouldn't do so in a way that would get him caught, eventually his actions would lead him to getting him caught.

"Hey." Edvard called out. "I know we need to get stronger, these guys, even these demons, would give trouble to our vampire knights. So I understand what you're going through right now, but it's just too dangerous to get caught."

"Now is not the right time, we need to be careful."

Chris having cleared up what parts of the body he couldn't eat, and burying them deep in the ground like a dog does its favourite toys, the two of them headed off, and were returning to the cave.

They scaled the outside of the mountain, off to the side of the cave. If one had good eyesight from a distance, the two didn't want to be spotted, and although they could jump down and not get hurt, jumping up in one go would be difficult.

After scaling the mountain for a while, the two were a little curious to know if anything had happened. They had been gone for a decent amount of time after all.

"What the... who are they?" Chris asked. "Why are there... monsters, demons in here, I don't know what to call them."

The ones Chris were referring to were the Skullys... Anon, and the others. They were chatting away playing some sort of game in the dirt with each other.

"It's a bit of a long story." Hikel said. "But as you can see, they aren't our enemy, and there is quite a bit going on."

"I guess that will explain to us where Sil went as well?" Edvard asked.

The cave wasn't large in the first place, so they would have seen SII, yet he was nowhere to be found.

"He's gone to get us some allies." Hikel replied. "As I said, there's quite a bit to unwrap. It looks like all of us might need to get ready to move, and be ready for battle again."

While Hikel was catching the two up on what had happened while the others were away, Sil and Calva were journeying together. He had changed his abilities to include that of telepathy and teleportation.

He knew where the cave was, after exploring the outside area a bit, he was confident even if they had travelled a great distance he would be able to take the

two back to where they were, and in case the two of them would run into any trouble they would be able to inform the others.

The two had gone quite far away from the cave but were still stuck inside the large mystic forest, Calva was looking at a few of the surroundings while also getting up a high point to see where they were.

'None of the clones that I sent out earlier have been defeated by Immortui yet.' Sil thought, as he was quickly checking in on them. 'This makes me feel more uneasy though. If he isn't trying to chase after Quinn, what is he doing?'

Calva after a while jumped down, landing in front of Sil.

"I think we should head in that direction." Calva pointed.

"You think?" Sil replied.

"I apologise, although I have been on this planet before, a lot has changed, and I don't know every single detail or location. I was confident that if we found Pultra, that I could convince her."

"If you don't know where she is, how are you confident in finding her?" Sil asked.

"When the champions lost to Immortui, we were given a choice, to follow him, helping him with his goal, or to accept death. Out of all of us, there were two that chose death and I was one of them.."

Sil teleported the two of them to the next location. The forest was changing slightly, as the trees were getting smaller. Giving them less cover, they would have to be more careful from now on.

Still, while Calva moved, Sil made sure to follow behind as he continued to listen to his story.

"As you can see, Immortui didn't kill me. Instead he had chained me up while he forced my kind into a hunting game." Calva explained. "It was his way of trying to convince me to go to his side.

"You see, the other person who had chosen death was Pultra."

Calva pointed again, and this time it was to a type of civilization. There were countless temples on the ground with wide roads, and the Yaks could be seen coming back and forth carrying large materials.

It was a village of giants that were working hard. Going through the town was a river of water. It would have been large for humans, but the Yaks were able to just jump over the river.

What was interesting, was if you were to follow the river, it would come to a large cliff, where the water fell from above. It was a waterfall, and on top of the waterfall was a golden temple.

"I'll explain the rest before we go in further as we will need to keep quiet." Calva said. "Pultra was the first of the champions to fall to Immortui. At the time, information was being spread by the inhabitants, so we had a good idea of what was going on.

"Now that I think about it, word was perhaps being spread by Immortui on purpose so we knew what was to come. When she had lost, she had rejected his offer, and the word was, he had forced something upon her. All we know is that the red energy in the air swirled from all over after the fight.

"Then a few days later, Pultra had changed her mind, accepting to work with Immortui.

"I'm not sure if what happened to her is what Quinn is going through now. I don't know why Immortui never used such a thing on me, but if the two of them are going through the same thing, it will help us a great deal."

It made sense, and Sil was happy to know that Calva was actually thinking about the reason behind his decision other than just because they were currently on the planet. With his powers, it didn't matter too much where they started.

"You've explained a lot, but you still haven't explained how you would know where she is?" Sil asked.

Calva smiled.

"Pultra, like Shinto, is working for them, so they won't technically be locked up like he was. However, the Champions won't be allowed freedom. I heard from the others he had been given a post as a guard."

"For Pultra, I imagine they couldn't let her power go to waste, while keeping a close eye on her."

Using his teleportation powers they entered the city, and Sil made sure they stayed behind large buildings as they observed the area around them. Calva still seemed to be looking for something.

Unable to find it, he asked Sil to continue teleporting around, again, again and again. Through the city, they were unable to find what they were looking for.

"We haven't tried up there." Sil suggested, looking at the golden palace.

"I wanted to avoid that place as much as possible. Can you see how the red mist is slightly thicker up by the castle. It's not because it's high up. What that means, is that it's most likely where the demon king is."

If Sil was to take a guess, he would have picked the giant golden temple as well for the demon king to reside in, but it also made sense that they would want to keep the champion close.

Sil teleported the two up there, as long as they were at the foot of the giant temple and not inside it, he thought they would be alright. Then he started to move them around the giant temple, until Calva shouted "Stop!" As he looked at what was behind it.

"This is it, this is where she will be." Calva exclaimed.

From the temple's side, one could stare down the waterfall, and look at the village of the Yaks. When looking at the other side, it wasn't another stream of water, water was being brought upward from down below.

They were looking at a giant hole, similar to a canyon of greenery, but Sil couldn't stop staring at the water that was moving up. Being pushed up against the side of the whole wall.

"This makes no sense." Sil said.

"Trust me, things might start to make a lot less sense." Calva said. "But the good news is... she's definitely down there somewhere."

Chapter 2460.1: Sil's Loyalty (Part 1)

Looking at the giant hole below, Sil didn't teleport down there straight away. The view in front of him, it was such a sight to behold that he had to look at it for a few moments more. He had travelled to many planets before in his search but he had never seen anything like this.

It was magical, the plants leaves from below were shining with colour, reflecting as if they were partly metal, even though one could tell they were plants from the way they flowed in the air.

"Alright, let's go find her." Sil said, after taking a mental picture. If he could, he hoped something like this wouldn't get destroyed, that way he could return. If he ever knew he had only a few moments left to live, then this was the place he would have wanted to be.

The feeling was similar to how one felt when they walked across the beach, with the sea and the sunset. It was warm.

Teleporting down, the amazement didn't stop there, as now Sil was able to see the objects up close. There were all types of plants of different shapes and sizes. Some had thick trunks that swirled around others like a snake.

Others just looked like a giant pineapple down below.

"Don't we need to be careful?" Sil asked. "Although you know the Champion is here, doesn't that mean that there is also the chance that there are demons here as well."

Calva thought Sil was right, but he was unable to sense or see any demons in the area. Were they so sure that Pultra had nowhere to escape to, so she would just stay down here, or was it something else?

"I don't think anyone is here, maybe because it's so close to the palace, they just have someone check up on her frequently. I mean as time goes on and nothing happens, they could become more lax about her perhaps escaping.' Calva guessed, but with the addition of them and the others arriving, maybe everything was different now.

In order to speed up the process, Sil used his soul weapon, opening up the book and changing one of his abilities. He then touched the ground, and a pulsating power was sent out.

It would allow him to have a look at all of the objects around them. A scouting ability that would typically only work within a few metres, but in this case, Sil could use it in an extremely large range.

"I've found her, we should head in this direction. Maybe let's not teleport so we startle her." Sil suggested. After all, they didn't know if she was on their side yet.

If the meeting didn't go how Calva expected, with her joining them, then in order to make sure she wouldn't tell anyone, she would have to be killed on the spot.

Walking through, they had come to an area with fewer giant plants compared to the others. Instead they could see large roots that had been torn up from the ground, and were heading in one direction.

When they got out of the thick leaves, they followed the roots with their eyes, and were laying eyes on a giant tree placed in the middle. Its trunk was incredibly thick, as thick as an entire apartment building.

However, the tree wasn't very tall, maybe around thirty metres in height, but then its greenery above spread out far and wide allowing only rays of light to hit the ground. It had done so in such a way, that left an odd feeling.

An enclosed place, an open one, it was hard to tell as they were covered in the shade of the leaves, while lights sparkled through.

"Out of all the people I expected to see here, I never thought I would see your ugly face." A soft voice said, carried by the wind, going directly into their ears.

Lying against the tree itself, with its legs out, there was a figure. The shape was quite feminine with a lot of curves in the legs and body. It also looked mostly human-like from what Sil could recognize.

However, it clearly wasn't a human, the skin was a light blue all over its body with patches of white that looked as if it was glittering even now. There were no clothes on the person, nor was there any hair on the body, including the top of its head which was an egg shape.

What drew Sil in a bit was the eyes, a solid thick colour of light green. They were solid with no pupil or any other colour. Yet somehow they had great beauty that would draw him in.

This was Pultra, the first Champion who had gone up against Immortui. Seeing that she had guests, she stood up. Now Sil could see that her legs were extremely long as they were longer than her head and torso of her body, making it look like she was on some form of stilts.

Yet, she was only a little taller than Sil himself. As she walked, her legs crossed each other, like someone on a catwalk in high heels.

"Are you Pultra?" Sil asked.

"I see the stranger knows my name. I'm assuming you are the one that managed to break out Calva then, and managed to get in here without alerting the Yaks." Pultra said, as she continued to look at Sil, ignoring Calva.

"The current situation outside is stranger than you think." Just as Calva was ready to say some more, Sil interrupted him.

"Why are you kept here?" Sil asked.

Before asking her to join, Sil wanted to know what her power was. What made her so special that she had to be kept here. She did indeed have to be worth their time for coming here.

"This here is a garden for Immortui and the demons. They plant special materials inside. Plants, metals, rocks, all sorts of things that they need. You see, this world is a strange place.

"There are plenty of mystical items that contain great powers, but do you know what the main problem is? It's time, the time it takes for these items to grow in power. My body has an effect on things, on plants, on general life around me.

"Within a certain range, as long as I stay somewhere, things will grow at a much quicker pace than they are meant to. Something that should take ten years to sprout will take ten days, as long as I stay in one place.

"So the demons come here, while keeping me here as they gather their precious items once in a while. What they are using it for, I don't know... I don't get out much you see, unlike your friend here." Pultra smiled at Calva.

It was a strange power to hear of, even in Sil's powers he had nothing like it, and he wondered what that had to do with the waterfall going backwards, or if it was unrelated.

Either way, this person was special, Sil could tell that much.

"We... we are here to ask you for your help." Sil said.

Chapter 2461.2: Sil's Loyalty (Part 2)

Although Sil hadn't got a direct answer to the question he had, wondering what type of power this Pultra had. The fact that one had such an effect, that just being alive could affect the things around them, showed to a degree the amount of power that was inside this being's body.

Having battled against celestials and god slayers, he had a good idea what great strength was, and he knew it was in front of him.

Pultra smiled as she heard the question.

"I had a good guess in mind from seeing him here that you would be asking." Pultra replied. "But, even if all the champions gathered, we do not stand a chance against Immortui and his demon kings. I know there are many that believed we only lost because we fought by ourselves... but that is not the case, and if you faced Immortui as well, you should know that."

Calva did know that, the dream of them three teaming up, it was a pipe dream that was created by the inhabitants, one to give them some type of hope that the way the things currently were wouldn't be like that forever.

"I know." Calva said. "Did you really think I would ask for your help if I didn't? It's not the same as before, you see these guys, these people from another world, are here with us. Their goal is to take down Immortui as well."

Pultra was about to laugh the whole thing off, as she began to walk back to the large tree.

"I am surprised, because I heard that you also rejected Immortui's offer, and you had done so till the very end." Pultra said. "What made you so delusional?"

"A demon king was defeated." Calva said, and Pultra stopped in her tracks.

"Not only that, but the person who had defeated the demon king, had done so with ease, and I'm not just saying that either. I saw it with my own two eyes, I saw someone who could take down Immortui... but they need our help."

This had piqued Pultra's interest as she turned back around. The reason Pultra was trapped down here was because of the eye of a demon king. She had gauged their strength well, and not once had the demon kings struggled with the up and coming strength of the inhabitants.

It was why she hadn't acted, nor had Shinto or Calva against them, it was a lost cause

"How can I even trust your words, how sure can I be that you aren't just saying something out of desperation?" Pultra asked.

"You might not believe him, but you can believe me." Sil lifted his hand and snapped his finger.

Suddenly the scenery all around them had completely changed. The surface was barren, with nothing but land, not a single thing was left alive on it. When Pultra looked around, she was unable to see the walls, and failed to see the familiar scenery around her.

"What happened, where are we!" Pultra asked, and she appeared to be startled.

"I teleported us out of where you were." Sil answered. "Don't worry I can put us back, and I will do before anyone notices that you are gone."

"Why have you brought us here?" She asked.

Even Calva was confused. What was the use of bringing her to this planet? At least he should have brought them back to where Quinn and the others were. Then she could comment on whether or not the condition Quinn was in was something she had experienced before. That was one of the main reasons for going after Pultra.

'Shouldn't we have at least done that before doing this! Even if she won't help us in the fight, and doesn't believe us, she can help us with Quinn!' Calva wanted to shout out.

However, Sil seemed confident, and although Calva didn't know him well. For some reason his calmness in the entire situation, even when in a world surrounded by enemies he didn't know about, was frightening in itself.

"This right here, is a moon of one of the many planets in the universe. It is one that is far away from any life that I can sense or know of." Sil said, as he brought out his ability book with his powers, and changed them once again.

"You don't trust Calva fine, but then trust me, my strength and my will to defeat Immortui. Let's fight, and then you can see for yourself." Sil stated.

It was an interesting proposal. One that Pultra would have outright refused, but the fact that they were now on the moon, she could only imagine what power the person had in front of her.

Maybe it all wasn't just lies by Calva, a person like Immortui was sure to make enemies along the way that would hate him to their very bones.

"Fine, it's a deal!" Pultra agreed and without giving any time at all, she lifted her leg and a sharp line of power came shooting straight out. It was incredibly fast, one of the fastest attacks Sil had ever seen.

If Calva was in Sil's situation he would have been hit straight away and would have had to continue the fight with a large injury. Yet for Sil, the attack had just gone past him creating a large deep cut on the surface of the moon.

"You avoided that, well then let's see you avoid all of this!" Pultra started to swing her legs rapidly. In all sorts of different directions. Several lines shaped like large crescent moon strikes were going through the air.

It was slicing the surface of the moon as if it was butter, and yet somehow, Sil, seemingly using nothing at all, was avoiding them all. He then started to walk towards her as he continued to avoid the strikes.

"Are you surprised?" Sil said.

He then teleported right behind her, but Pultra could sense this, she threw a direct kick right behind her, but Sil had already ducked avoiding it, and had a fist full of lighting. It struck her in the stomach, sparks going off in all directions, then twisting his hand, a lighting strike went straight out, sending her flying in the distance and crashing against the floor.

Pultra did her best as she got up off the ground, and when doing so the ground was shaking underneath, she jumped to the side to avoid a large piece of the moon rising from the ground but when she jumped the piece of the ground had hit her right in the stomach, and at almost the same time another lighting strike had hit her.

Sil was using his ability of foresight to be able to see her next set of moves and avoid them all. It worked well against someone like her who relied on just their physical power and had next to no wide range attacks.

"You're... so strong." Pultra said, as she noticed Sil had stopped attacking. Calva, seeing Sil fight for the first time, thought the same thing. They didn't just have one golden goose, a shot at taking out Immortui, it was possible they had more.

"Yes, and the person who's going to take down Immortui is much stronger." Sil said.

Chapter 2462.1: Problem with Quinn (Part 1)

Sil didn't think he needed to demonstrate more than this, and he was sure that Pultra herself was probably hiding some of her own powers as well. In the first place, he would hate for her or himself to get badly hurt, and Sil needed to be ready at any moment to fight Immortui if need be.

Pultra was no longer fighting back, it looked like she had admitted her defeat. So Sil snapped his fingers again and all of them teleported right back to the tree where they were before.

Pultra had to look around her, and even rubbed the grass underneath with her feet a few times. As she lifted her foot, it started to grow slightly longer.

"This is real." She said. "The last place we were at was all real as well. It's not an illusion, and all of those other powers you had as well, they were all real? You are quite diverse aren't you?"

"I can do many things." Sil answered. "I'm confident in my own strength, but I've never gone against Immortui, but you have, we can talk about it later. Since I won that fight, will you come with us?"

Looking at the waterfall, and the golden temple that was placed at the top of it, she thought about it for a while.

"I would like to come with you." Pultra answered. "I'm still not sure even with your strength if we can beat Immortui and the demon kings. You caught my interest claiming that this person is stronger than even you."

"This person has even managed to bring hope into Calva, but from the way you are acting, I assume you are hiding from Immortui at this moment?"

Her guess was correct, and Sil's face said it all.

"Then I can't leave, if I do leave, then they will know I am gone, and that will ruin your whole plan. They check up on me frequently." Pultra explained. "A team of Yaks come to harvest the area regularly while planting new crops or new items, and at that time they also check up on me."

"I think I might be able to solve that problem." Sil brought out the book changing his abilities again.

He created a clone of himself, and after that, the clone's body started to change. It swirled and grew in height, creating different shapes and sizes until right in front of their eyes there was another version of Pultra right in front of her.

Amazed by it, Pultra walked towards it and even placed her hand on it, stroking the clone's cheek. She could feel it. It was real and wasn't an illusion.

"You have quite the godly powers." Pultra complimented.

"The clone will be in your place, it also is able to transmit messages to me through telepathy. If they come and question you, as long as you are next to me, I can ask you the questions instead and answer the way you would answer. They won't be able to tell the difference."

It was a solid plan that had even gotten Calva excited. They could use this to resolve the next issue as well with the next Champion. However, the look on Pultra's face still said that something was wrong.

"No, this will only fool them for so long." Pultra said. "When the greenery, the things they have placed in here aren't changing due to my absence, they will know I have left, but I think that will give us enough time."

There was a large smile on her face, and so it was decided. The clone of Pultra went ahead, sitting under the tree, and once everything was ready, all three of them would start to teleport.

Using his powers and having travelled quite a bit on the planet, it didn't take long for them to arrive back at the cave. It was a bit small and was getting more cramped as more people were now inside.

"Whoa!" Chris said, nearly jumping back, he was ready to transform until he saw Sil and the others.

"It's alright." Sil said.

"Ah, yeah don't worry we know." Edvard said. "It's a champion right? The others have caught us up with everything that's going on. So, I guess these two are the champions as well."

There was an awkward silence. The group didn't really know each other, and none of them were particularly the type to just get along with each other from the get go.

However, Sil did do something. With more people staying in one place, they needed to change the environment a bit more. Placing his hand on the ground, the area started to shift.

The cave grew wider, while also getting deeper. The entrance still stayed small, that way they wouldn't be found out by others, and now where they had been staying had somewhat become a tunnel that would lead to the large area they could reside in.

Sil had even created a rectangular platform that was raised up above the ground that Quinn could be placed on.

"Why didn't you do this before, we've been cramped up for no reason?" Russ complained.

"I thought, with your power, you could have done this as well?" Sil replied. "So, why didn't you think of this?"

Russ had to admit, Sil had got him there, and with nothing smart to say back, he decided to just stay silent and complain to himself under his breath elsewhere.

Pultra was the first to introduce herself to all the others. She didn't say much other than her name, after that Calva introduced himself as well to the other two that had yet to meet him.

"So, you two both fought against Immortui right, but you haven't gone against any of the demons?" Hikel asked.

"That is correct." Calva responded. "The demons were created after Immortui took over the place, and with them he ruled over the inhabitants, and planets just like this one. Although we know of the demon kings and have an idea of their strength, we can't help much with their powers."

"But you can learn from our mistakes." Pultra said. "I have heard that you are all strong, and for even thinking about doing something like this, I assume you are all a little crazy, but the two of us will share our knowledge with you, in order to help you against Immortui."

"Hey wait!" Peter said, standing up and walking forward. "That's not what's important. The one that needs to know about all of this stuff is Quinn. Quinn is the one that's going to kick Immortui's arse. We need the demon kings' blood!"

"Demon kings' blood?" Pultra was confused.

Calva went ahead and explained what Quinn's last request was, and also went into detail about how the demon power activating had affected Quinn as well. She had a feeling since seeing Hikel and Edvard, that they had some presence of demons in them as well.

"And where is Quinn then?" Pultra asked.

Moving to the side, Peter and the others allowed a clear view for her to look at Quinn, lying there in place.

"Do you know what is happening to him right now?" Peter asked. "Can we wake him up?"

"This is... I have experienced this before myself." Pultra answered.

Chapter 2463.2: Problem with Quinn (Part 2)

Pultra walked over to where Quinn was, just from a glance she wasn't so sure about what he was going through, the only details she knew was that he had also fought against Immortui and had ended up like this.

When walking over though, Peter wouldn't allow her to walk on her own and stayed pretty close to her side.

She smiled at this act, as she felt it was quite cute. It was at least good to know that this person had a group of loyal people around him.

When in front of Quinn, she slowly reached out, and looked to Peter for confirmation that she was able to, then she lifted his eyelids and could see beaming red energy. Letting out a sigh, she let go of his eyelids allowing them to close.

"I'm pretty sure my guess is right, but I can't be for certain." Pultra said, looking back at the others. "When I fought against Immortui and refused to join him, he had smothered me with the red mist energy that is around our world."

"It did something to me, I passed out, and in that moment it felt like I was in a different world. Everything that was happening there felt so real, and to this day I'm still not sure if it was or not."

"Just tell us what is going on with Quinn!" Peter complained.

"For me, I had experienced my past grudges. The thoughts at the back of my mind had come to life. Those that I couldn't save, those that I cared about, those that could never be removed from my mind including my enemies appearing in front of me.

"It felt like each one of them was cursing me, telling me to stay with them. Forcing me to be there. It was a painful experience, a horrible one. I wanted to get rid of them, get rid of all of those that were in front of me, but with each one I touched, even if it was to just hit them away. I experienced what they had felt.

"I experienced the overwhelming emotions, the mental and physical pain that they had all gone through in their final moments. It was torture, but the only way out was to go through everything that they had been through, until there was no longer anyone there."

All of them could see that Pultra was shaken up just from explaining it. A distant memory for her, thousands of years had already passed, yet she could still remember what it felt like.

"I never wanted to experience that again, I never wanted to be put through that again. Which is why I decided to join Immortui."

The others could only imagine what she had been through and it was hard to do so. How could one replicate the feelings of another in their final moments? All the desperate thoughts they had in their head.

"Wait, is that why Immortui was unable to do such a thing against me?" Calva said, as if he had just come to a realisation through her story.

"What do you mean?" Anon asked.

"Well, you said it right? Everyone you cared about, the enemies that you killed, you had to experience all of it. At that point and time, when Immortui attacked, I had never killed anyone, and even my family, I have no memory of them either, or of losing them. They were dead for as long as I can remember. And honestly, I don't think I've ever cared about anyone."

"That can't be true," Tuni interjected. "You're the cruel champion who would beat up any Skully that looked at you the wrong way."

Tuni quickly covered his mouth as he thought he was now going to be on the receiving end of that punishment.

"Those were all just rumours." Calva explained. "I actually consider myself a nice guy. It was just that people kept coming to challenge me all the time, trying to prove they were the best."

"I would beat them and leave them be. At times I would beat them until they were unable to move. Maybe another creature took their life but it wasn't me, and as I said before, I've lost no one I care about because I care about no one."

The last part, the Skullys had heard about. It made sense that the hunting games involving the Skullys had no effect convincing him to join Immortui, because he truly didn't care about their lives.

"If what you say is true, then what about Quinn?" Pultra asked. "Has he killed, or lost a lot of people who he cared about."

The room was dead silent to the point even the breathing of everyone could be heard. All of them were now imagining the horror Quinn had to be going through. How many people had he killed directly from the beginning, how many enemies did he have, and just how many people had he lost on his long journey coming here?

Quinn had to be going through torture now, that was all they could think of.

Peter tensed his fist and was ready to punch it against the cave wall until Edvard grabbed him and stopped him.

"Put that much power into a punch and you'll take down the whole mountain, they will spot us in a second." Edvard said.

"Right now, Quinn is going through torture! You haven't known him for as long as I have. You're telling me right now, that he is going through everything since he had turned into a vampire, and experiencing the pain of those he killed and lost! And I can't do anything about it to help him?"

"If I stay next to him." Pultra said. "My passive powers may help him get through what he is doing quicker, but it also means he will have to experience more pain quicker. It's up to you guys. What do you think is best?"

Making Quinn go through more pain, so they could see him awake quicker? What type of torture question was this that they had to answer?

Everyone was silent, because they knew that only two people in the room could make the decision. The two that knew him best. Sil went over to Peter.

"Peter... remember, Quinn came here to defeat Immortui, you said it yourself, he's going to kick his arse right?" Sil said. "Then we need him. He was prepared to give up everything, to leave us behind, as well as the rest of his family to help all of us."

"If he had the choice, I know what he would pick in a heartbeat, and you know what he would choose as well."

Both of Peter's hands were shaking with anger, until he had finally made a choice.

"I just can't believe... we came here to help him and he's the one that needs to suffer more, because we still need him... please... we need Quinn." Peter answered.

With that, Pultra stepped by Quinn's side, and placed her hands above his head.

Chapter 2464.1: Preparing for the end (Part 1)

Author Message: There is a character competition going on at the moment and Quinn is in the quarter finals. Please Vote using your fandom points, on Quinn and help him through to the finals! If we win the whole thing, let's do a mass release, let's go support Quinn and the Cursed faction!

Finally, the sun had set and the night sky was now shining out. It had been a long day, but a tense one at that for the group. There was the lingering thought in the back of their heads that they could be found out at any moment and Immortui would be out to get them.

Edvard was even more worried than usual after the incident that had occurred with Chris, but he had kept silent about it to the others. There was no need to worry them further over the matter when it was done with, they would deal with it when the time came.

No one could get any sleep anyway as they stayed held up in the cave, it's something they were used to with most of them being beings of the night in the first place.

They were waiting as Pultra stayed standing over Quinn. From the outside it looked as if she did nothing, she just had her hands placed on top of his head. They weren't glowing with a mystic type of power but just gently laid there.

It was one of those situations where they felt like they had to just trust the process with this one.

"So... is there a reason why you guys aren't going to get the next champion?" Ekeke asked, looking at Edvard. Out of all of the people that were present, he looked the most approachable. Everyone else was secluded deep in their own thoughts.

"Ah, I guess because you're, what did they call you again, a Skully, you don't know." Edvard replied. "The situation is difficult in other places. You know, just like how your type were put into those hunting games, well, where the last Champion is based, they have their own problems, right?"

Edvard looked over to Hikel, since he was there first hand, he felt like he might be better at explaining. To which, Hikel came over and sat down on one of the rock chairs that had been created by Sil.

If there was one thing they were thankful for, it was that the cave seemed more like a place they could stay in for a while now.

"He's right, the last Champion, is protected by a demon king called Unzoku." Hikel said. "The local inhabitants, they were sent into this large giant pit, a hole in the ground, and every night when the moon shone, they would send werewolves down to eat them. They would have to fight for their lives each night."

"And the werewolves would eat their bodies making them stronger." Chris added, looking outside the small gap in the cave, with his body facing away from them.

"I thought we had it bad." Tuni said.

"We do have it bad." Anon interrupted. "But we should have expected the situation to be bad everywhere else. If the night sky and moon is out now, it means that they are probably going through that right now... as for our own Skullys, we have no clue what is happening."

Quinn had killed most of the demons on their planet, so perhaps they were safe for now, unless Immortui tried to do something.

"We're not here to help you guys or the people that live in this universe." Hikel said. He thought he had to make this clear distinction to them all. "The safest thing to do is to wait until the sun rises so we don't get involved in that, and meet up with Shinto, the champion, in secret. In the end, we are saving Quinn and getting rid of Immortui, when that's done, it's up to you guys to sort out the rest of your problems."

"Speaking of, are we going to be sending out Russ with Sil?" Edvard asked.

"Me?" Russ pointed to himself. "You actually want me to do something, that's a surprise."

"Well, you were the one that made that fake brother of his, maybe you can explain yourself to him?" Hikel said, raising an eyebrow wondering if it was the best thing for them to do.

"Hey, Sil has the same power as me, I think we already established that." Russ complained.

"Yes, but he might have to go off and fight Immortui at any point and time. He can't be wasting strength." Hikel replied back.

Calva and Pultra who were overhearing the conversation going on so far could hear everything, and it made them wonder, did Sil hold back in the fight against Pultra as well because of this fact.

If that was the case, then this person was certainly capable of holding off Immortui.

"I suppose it would be best if we told you our experience we had when fighting with Immortui." Pultra added. "We can inform you best about all the powers he had

used and that you can prepare for, but keep in mind that I don't believe we were able to push him to his very limit. There will be powers that we don't know about."

Sil walked over and created a seat for himself in front of Quinn as he looked at Pultra.

"It would be best to learn what we can from you."

Pultra and Calva went on to describe what they could about their fight with Immortui, they even discussed ideas about how his powers worked since they weren't sure, but felt like it might be a way to counter him.

Most were hanging on to every word that was spoken by Pultra, since mainly she had lasted a lot longer in her fight compared to Calva it turned out, but there were those that weren't interested at all, and Chris was one of them.

He started to break off from the listeners and walked back toward the exit. Edvard, who had been keeping an eye on everything so far noticed, and started to walk towards the entrance.

"What are you thinking about?" Edvard asked.

"That we don't have a lot of time." Chris answered. "Tomorrow morning, Sil will get the last champion. After that, it's our job to defeat the demon kings and give their blood to Quinn."

"Correction." Edvard said. "We only need to get their blood, not defeat them, there's a large difference especially with all of us."

"Still, if we don't defeat them, then they'll all come at us at once right?" Chris replied. "Besides, how can we get their blood without defeating them? If that's something we really need to do, then it means that tonight is the only night where I can get stronger before the big fight."

There it was, he knew that Chris had to have been thinking about it this entire time. He couldn't stop looking at the outside. This was what Edvard was worried about, but the thing was... Chris was right.

Edvard let out a big sigh at that moment.

"I can't stop you." Edvard said.

Chris turned and looked at Edvard, surprised by his words.

"What, do you think I always know what's best just because I lived longer than you? Only fools think like that. What if we fight one of the demon kings and none of us are strong enough."

"We lose out, just by an inch of our strength, and if you, having gained power, would have been able to beat them. There are multiple situations and multiple different outcomes. It makes us think all the time, should we do that, if I had done this."

"And trust me, I have thought a lot of times, if I should have done something or not. Maybe right now, it will be one of those times again. I'll think, what would've happened if I stopped him, but then again, I might think, what would've happened if I let him go."

"So that's why it's easier for me to just say, you make the decision, you decide. If you think it's the right thing to do, then go for it, but let me tell you this."

"If you're going to do it, then go all out, and you better come back f*cking strong." Edvard smiled.

Chris smiled back, and there was no answer, as he leapt off the cave, down below heading straight for the Yak demons.

Chapter 2465.2: Preparing for the end (Part 2)

While running through the forest, towards the area that Chris was in earlier in the day, he stared at the bright moon that glimmered slightly red due to the mist.

'The moon is a lot brighter here than next to earth, or any of the other planets I have been on. The moon in the first place just reflects the light from the sun... is it actually the power of the sun that's causing this effect, because I feel slightly energised.'

It wasn't the first time that Chris had felt this way, even before when he had entered the pit, when the night sky fell and the moon was seen, he felt great energy surrounding him but he was also noticing something else as well.

He was getting this urge, an urge to consume, and it had only grown since he had eaten the Yaks.

'I've been through a lot tougher things... I'm confident, if it comes to it, I can control myself. I won't let this thing control my body.'

Slowing down his pace, Chris leapt up and with a single jump he had reached the branch of a large tree. He grabbed onto the branch and swung himself until he was in a crouching position overlooking the working area from before.

There was still the sound of banging, clashing and work going on, but it was quieter than before. Sniffing the air, Chris had made an evaluation.

'It smells like there's less people here than there were during the day... but I need to try to find ones that are on their own, I doubt I will get lucky like before.'

At quick speed, when the opportunity struck, Chris leapt to the ground and ran on all fours, transforming his body, not to his werewolf form, but to his wolf form instead. He was now behind one of the giant ship structures that were being worked on.

In his wolf form, he was a lot faster than in his werewolf one. It mainly focused on speed, and he felt if he was seen, people would just think of him as another creature.

While right next to the large object, Chris lifted up his paws and tried to scratch the outside. When he let go, there wasn't a single mark on the outside.

'I even coated my claw's in Qi... just what are these things made of?' Chris thought.
'If they're building something all day and night, it must be quite important.'

Hearing the sound of footsteps, it appeared as if someone was coming from the side. Hearing this, he quickly sprinted along the side of the ship and then hid around the other end taking a peek.

There he could see it, a Yak carrying over a rough edged rock on his shoulder. It got toward the middle of the ship, and bent its legs as if it was getting ready to jump.

'Now!' Chris ran in his full wolf form, and the Yak turned to look at him, the rock was still in his hands and the surprise attack was too fast for him, by the time the demon realised what was going on, Chris had already bit at his throat with his powerful jaws.

Blood soaked around and into his mouth as he gripped down further and the Yak body fell to the floor. Along with it, the large rock fell on top of him crushing part of his body.

The demon was killed but now Chris had a bit of a problem to deal with.

'Damn it.' Chris said, as he started to transform into his werewolf form, he then lifted the large rock off and placed it on the ground.

"Hey, what's going on!" A voice shouted from behind.

Around the corner there was another Yak, with a rock over his shoulder as well.

'Crap this was just meant to be an in and out operation, was I not thinking clearly or something, I should have waited to see if there was anyone else!'

It was too late now, as Chris continued to run across. The Yak preparing to fight back had dropped the large boulder.

Thinking fast, before the large boulder had fallen onto the floor, Chris threw a punch in the air. The third stage of Qi was unleashed from his fist and hit the rock, pushing it right into the Yak's body.

The sharp edges pierced into the Yak's body. It hurt as the Yak was kneeling over, and by that time Chris was already there with a forceful punch on the rock from his side, he pushed it right through the demon's body.

'Alright, that's two down... I was going to feast on quite a few of them anyway. As Edvard said, If I'm going to do this, then I need to get as strong as possible.'

A thud was heard from Chris's right side this time. It was the pathway that led to the multiple ships that were being built on the side, and he could see it, a frightened demon who had dropped the large rock he was transporting.

'This just isn't my lucky day!' Chris thought as he was running after the Yak who was running as fast as he could.

The demon didn't scream, he didn't want to waste his breath as there was something right behind him, but of course Chris would catch up, and when he leapt up, he grabbed right onto his neck ripping right through it with his claws killing it on the spot.

"Alright, now it's time for clean up."

Not wasting time, Chris dragged the bodies away from the building site and placed them into the forest. He didn't feast on their bodies yet because he needed to get them out of the way before anyone else would find them.

When all three bodies had been cleared up, he started to eat away at them. Having done the same thing earlier in the day, it was less of a problem this time. As he feasted on them, quite a few thoughts were running through his head.

"Their blood, it's all over that place... in the morning, when they notice that they're gone... will it cause a large problem, or will they think something like a beast has done it?"

After consuming the demons, the energy boost was felt in Chris once again. His muscles felt more alive, his body more responsive than before. Which was a crazy feeling for him, who already thought he was in tune with his body.

It was an amazing feeling, because it almost felt like there was no limit. Just like his stomach, as long as he kept eating, he would continue to grow stronger, but there was one large issue he realised he had.

'Everytime I finished eating one demon, the strength I gained from the next was less than before. Does this mean that I have to eat even more to continue to grow?' Although Chris thought this, he remembered back to the pit.

The whole purpose of the pit was to create stronger beings, and in turn the werewolves would feast on them and grow in strength. Eventually eating demons would no longer allow him to grow, not unless they were stronger than they were before.

Jumping back up to the tree that was located between the edge of the building site, Chris realised that a commotion had already arisen. The blood that had split across the path had been discovered, and a few of the other demons had been called up. There was a group of six of them talking and discussing about the blood.

'Six... can I take on six of them, without them alerting everyone?' Chris thought.

At this rate, he might end up taking out all of the workers. If it would delay the demon king and Immortui finding out about it though, he would.

The sound of loud footsteps and vibration entered his ears though. The Yak demons being large in size and literal giants made a lot of noise when they moved anyway, but this was different and this was heavier than the others.

Out from the side, appearing in front of the others, was a giant that was around one third larger compared to the others. It had a large belly in front of it, and a golden necklace around its neck that shined brightly.

'That is that one of the demon generals that they talked about. Didn't they say Quinn asked for their blood as well?' Chris thought, but another thought had entered his mind as drool was slipping from his mouth and onto the floor.

'I... I... have to eat that. I wonder how much that will make me grow.'

Chapter 2466: No Witnesses

There was a part of Chris that thought perhaps he should turn back. He had eaten a few demons and with them now on high alert it could already cause the group serious problems.

Right now, there was a chance because it was only a few of them, that they wouldn't think much of it. However, the moment he had seen the larger Yak demon, Chris couldn't get it out of his mind just how much stronger he could get if he was to feast on that.

'They said that Quinn needed the general demon's blood to get stronger as well, not just the demon king's blood right?' Chris thought. 'Then this is something that I have to do.'

The group of around 7 Yak demons along with the larger demon general were still standing around the place looking at the blood, but after he said some words it looked like they had been asked to split up and look around.

The demons were now walking around in pairs, but they weren't straying from the outside the facility, they weren't heading into the forest, not yet anyway.

It didn't take them long to soon find the other areas that had blood spilt on the floor. They had called over the large Yak to have a look.

"Follow the blood traces, but don't venture too far out!" The general shouted.

Drops of blood could be found spread out in certain places, because it had been spilt when Chris was moving the bodies. Two of the Yaks had spotted it first and were inching closer and closer to the edge of the forest on their own.

'I've already committed to this much, so I just need to push it further.'

Dropping down from the branch above, and then creating a platform of Qi in the air, Chris pushed himself off with a bang. He used the platform of Qi instead of the branch so he wouldn't break anything or make any noise.

With his claws stretched out and laced in Qi, his hands hammered right through both of their heads, killing them on the spot. When he landed on the ground he had created a Qi platform just inches from the floor and used all the strength in his muscles to stop the two Yak bodies from slamming into the ground.

They were still stuck onto both of his arms which had gone through their heads.

"Alright... that went better this time."

Chris hid the bodies behind the trees for now, there wasn't enough time to eat them, and he wanted to move to the next lot. Now that he had taken out the first pair, he had to take out the rest before another meeting would be called.

Transforming into his wolf form, Chris ran across to the area where the large ships were, he had seen a couple head straight to the top and were on the deck of the ship. Running up the side of the ship, Chris managed to etch his claws just slightly into the hard material.

It was hard to do as the surface was slippery like a marble, and even though he was climbing up the side, no marks were still left on the thing. When he eventually reached the top, he wasted no time as he continued to run, and leapt up biting one of the two in the neck again, killing the first one he could see.

'Wait a moment, where's the other one, weren't they in pairs?' Chris thought. He had attacked one on sight, trying to deal with things quickly. Thinking that the other one would be nearby, when he turned to the scent his nose followed, he could see the other demon looking straight at him, standing on the other side, right by the edge.

"Damn it!" Chris ran across the flooring as fast as he could, and he hadn't even realised what he was going past. On the very top of the ship, it was filled with devices that looked like cannons, manned stations for fighting, and boxes of crystals were on the top of crystals that they hadn't seen before.

For Chris though, it was all a blur, as he saw the Yak opening its mouth ready to yell. In a desperate attempt to stop him, his body started to transform from wolf back to werewolf, with a claw-like hand he swiped the air and his attack had left his claws.

It flew through the air hitting the Yak right in the neck. The life in his eyes started to disappear, and as his legs gave in, his whole body had tipped over the edge.

Chris finally having transformed back into his werewolf form had reached the edge and peeking down, he could see the Yak's body splattered on the ground.

On top of that, down the side there was the general Yak along with the others, having just seen the dead body, they looked up and had made eye contact with Chris.

"Well, now I have no choice." Chris grinned, baring his sharp teeth.

He ran across the edge in his werewolf form, and when he was close enough, he leapt in the air. Heading straight for the general demon. Chris' claw was reaching for the same spot on the neck, the one hit kill placement, although this neck was fairly large. However, for the first time, the demon had thrown out a fist hitting Chris mid-air. The two collided and Chris stayed in the air for a bit.

"Haha, I don't know who you are, but you look like one of Unzoku's people?" the general said. "Has he finally gone mad, sending one of you to come take me on. He should know that it wouldn't be so easy!"

With a push of the fist, Chris was sent back in the air, and he flipped backwards before landing on the ground.

"This is what I needed." Chris said. "I needed someone strong to face... you are going to be what allows me to get strong enough."

The fourth stage of Qi started to activate, the power flowing within him. His fur started to turn a shade of dark red, while it moved as if it was being blown in the wind.

Chris ran forward at a fast speed, yet the general Yak, even with its large size, could still keep up with him. He went to punch him at the right spot, that was until Chris had pounced off the air having created a Qi platform.

He had moved from one side to the other across the general while swinging his claw across the Yak's body leaving a big red bloody mark across its chest. Not slowing down, Chris had made another platform in the air and pounced off that, creating a slash in another direction.

Moving his eyes, the Yak was trying to keep up with Chris, but he was moving too fast and somehow he was able to move midway in the air.

Large cuts were being made, parts of the general's flesh were being cut off again and again. None of the other demon's could even approach because they had no clue what to do, and eventually the general Yak was unrecognisable. There was almost no skin left on its body and it was standing there in a pool of its own blood.

It fell to its knees, slamming on the ground, before continuing to fall flat on its face, the general Yak had been defeated, and Chris was standing there on top of its body.

The red fur was dying down, it was time to preserve his energy, but now around him nearly all of the Yak's looked to have awaked, and were in the area.

"I guess, I still have more work to do."

Chris had been gone for a few hours now, and the sun was set to rise in only a couple more. Edvard was starting to get a little worried, that was until Chris had appeared in the entrance.

He slowly walked in, his bare chest was covered in blood. It was dripping around his mouth and jaw.

"What... what happend?" Hikel asked.

Chris didn't say anything as he continued to walk over to Quinn. He then with his hands opened Quinn's mouth, and proceeded to open his, blood dropped down, and fell right into Quinn's.

The sight was a gruesome one, even for the Skullys, who needed to look away for a brief moment.

"Sorry, I had nowhere to carry it." Chris answered. "I had a bit of a run in, and met with one of the demon generals, but don't worry... we are safe for a little while longer, I left no witnesses."

Chapter 2467: Convincing the last one

After entering the cave and performing those strange actions, Chris had simply walked to one side of the cave wall and sat there, while everyone else stared at him.

"Hey, what the heck did you do? Why did you give Quinn blood?" Peter was the first to speak up. "And why are you acting so... so... I don't know, freakier than usual?"

Chris didn't reply right away. He was staring at the ground as if deep in thought, but he eventually processed what Peter had asked. Before he could answer, Hikel wanted answers too.

"You're going to have to explain in a lot more detail than you just did," Hikel said. "I know you and Edvard are working together, but right now your actions affect us all, so we need to know what's going on."

"Calm down, everyone," Edvard said. "You're not even giving him a chance to speak. Besides, if they had found out already, don't you think the demon king, or Immortui, would be on our tail? If that happened, Sil would be the first to notice, right?"

Sil nodded, and so far there had been no signs of anything. Not even a single one of his clones that had escaped had been dealt with yet, and he couldn't imagine Immortui just letting things be, especially facing a significant unknown threat.

"I'll explain myself," Chris said. "First, Peter, you don't have to worry. That blood is from one of the demon generals. Quinn was the one who requested it. Remember, he's a vampire; drinking blood is like drinking water for him, and that blood is probably supercharged."

"I didn't expect to run into the demon general. That wasn't my original plan, but when I did, I had no choice but to take him out so he couldn't inform anyone, and I still thought of Quinn."

This was an important point to note, and Edvard was happy to hear it. Although Chris seemed somewhat obsessed with gaining strength at the moment, he had a reason to be. Everyone would be lying if they said they weren't a bit frightened by the situation they were in.

Still thinking about Quinn in this tense situation meant he wasn't completely obsessed.

"I already told you all, I get stronger the more I eat... I don't want to consume anyone from our world. The demons will help us grow and give us a chance to fight back. I was just caught, but like I said, I got rid of all witnesses."

"What do you mean by 'all'?" Russ asked.

"All of those that were at the building area," Chris answered.

That wasn't really an answer the others could comprehend because they had no clue, other than Edvard who was with him at the time. But there was one who knew, and that was Pultra.

Her eyes widened hearing the news, her heart beating a little faster.

'He managed to kill a general and all of the Yak at the building site, all on his own? He doesn't even look injured,' Pultra thought.

'The person below me is strong, the blonde one from before is incredibly strong as well, but it seems like the others in this group aren't lacking either. It might be the same for the rest of them.'

'At first, I thought it might be better just to try. A life staying in one place or a chance to take it all back. An incredibly low chance, but at least I could have said I tried.'

'The memories of what happened to me that day still linger. Even with Calva's words, I found it hard to be convinced. Yet I came on a small hope, and now I think this might be possible, that we might have a chance.'

Pultra looked down at Quinn below. He was the biggest variable because she only had the others' words to go on. But if all these strong people were supporting him and believed he was their hope, there might be some truth to it after all.

"So everyone thought I was going to be the one that sabotaged this trip, yet it was the freaking mutt!" Russ laughed. "And look now, not a single one of you is saying anything to him."

"Yes, because for now, we are okay," Hikel replied.

"Yeah, but you know that if it was me who went out there and did the same thing, you would have said I was selfish, and you would have given me crap for days on end until my ears bled."

The group resumed their usual bickering, and the Skullys, along with Clava, just watched. It was amazing how these people worked together without clashing. Sure, they clashed with words, but they never got physical.

"It's fine," Pultra said. "The building group works separately from the main establishment. Though, they are meant to deliver a report once in a while. So eventually, we will get found out, but we just have to do what we need to do before then."

A calming voice came from Pultra that, for some reason, somewhat stopped the arguing. Now, the group was just resting, Chirs had left the cave once more which nearly stirred up another argument, but he said that it was to wash the blood off from him. He would find a lake or stream of water near by.

In the end, Edvard went with him and they came back fairly quickly .After a couple of hours, the sun began to rise.

"Quinn's still not up," Sil said as he walked over to Calva and Russ. "Everyone, you know what we have to do. There's a good chance we'll have to do this without him; we need to get the blood."

Sil was standing next to Russ and Calva, who agreed to come and attempt to convince Shinto, the last of the champions.

"A word for you before you go," Pultra said. "Shinto will be the most difficult to convince. Even though Calva and I have teamed up... I don't know the full story of what happened to him because I was the first."

"Calva was the second, but remember, Shinto was the third champion to fall, and he accepted Immortui's deal rather than refusing it. There has to be a reason for that. I believe he is genuinely fearful, and from my experience, that is hard to break."

"Hey, if he doesn't want to join us, then it's simple, right?" Russ shrugged. "Those who don't join us but know about us are too high risk, so we have no choice but to kill him."

Those were the final words the three said before disappearing. They were no longer in the cave.

The three Skully's looked at eachother nervously, they had somewhat been thrown into this situation, and a lot was going on for them.

"Is that guy always like that?" Anon asked.

"Yeah, pretty much," Edvard answered. "But there's a reason we keep him with us. Because he's strong. I'm sure they'll bring back the last champion."

Chapter 2468: Leaving all to die

The group had teleported out, and it didn't take long for Sil to reach the location they were aiming for. To their surprise they had ended right back where they were the last time, in the dark cellar.

The familiar smell had hit them straight away. It was a pungent damp smell, mixed in with a slight hint of iron, that was the blood from the wounds of the Chrono, the local inhabitants last time.

"Where are we?" Calva asked, he turned his head but he could see no one, no sign of anyone.

"Ah, now I know what happened." Russ snapped his fingers. "Don't you remember, we caved in this place last time, over there was where that pit was."

As they focused with their eyes, allowing them to adjust to the light, or using their abilities to help them see in the dark, they could see what Russ was talking about. He was the only one that had visited this place and had the full story of what happened last time.

"So, where would this champion be?" Sil asked.

"I don't really know." Calva said. "I only knew Shinto before I was tied up, and it has been a very long time since then. I didn't even know fully about the pit that had been made."

Which meant, they would have to trust Russ.

"It's a bit strange, there was the Chrono that were here with us last time. Some of them should have survived, and even if they died, I'm guessing they would have replaced them all with new participants. Can't you check and see if they're around here somewhere?"

'Aren't you able to go into my mind and see how that ability works and use it yourself?' Sil wanted to say but he wasn't the type to talk back like that, like Peter, and besides if Russ didn't want to do something he wouldn't.

Searching for signs of life, it didn't take long for Sil to find multiple that he was looking for. The image he could see was similar to a 3D scan. He was able to see the layout of the entire area and he could see the pit they were in before.

Another cellar had been built identical to this one, but was now located on the other side and in there he could count that there were at least a hundred lives on the other side. Wasting next to no time, Sil teleported the group there.

Immediately they were in a large cellar space and just like before there were Chrono spread out all around, only there were a lot more than before. Some had jumped back and were startled by the sudden appearance of the group.

They continued to take steps back avoiding them as if they contained a deadly plague.

"How did they get in here?"

"Are they here to take us away, is it starting now!"

"I've never seen demons like them before?"

"Wait, isn't one of them a Skully? They look a bit bigger than usual, but they have the same features."

"Still how did they get in here!"

There was nervous chatter among them all and news was spreading but none of them took a step forward. Ignoring the words of the Chrono since the layout was the same, Sil looked at the very back and he could see it.

"There it is." He pointed. "That's where the champion will be."

As soon as he finished his sentence though, just as the other two turned to look, they could see someone walking down the staircase. Similar to how all the Chrono had stepped away from them when they arrived, they started to move away from the staircase, huddling up close to each other as their backs rubbed against the wall.

It was a Chrono just like the rest of them, only this one had a larger upper body frame like that of a V, and single handed axes on their back.

"Shinto." Calva said, recognising him instantly.

When reaching the bottom floor, Shinto stopped and looked ahead, he couldn't believe his eyes as he blinked several times.

"Is this all a trick again?" he said, grabbing the side of his head. "Or have I just gone mad... damn it!"

Shinto immediately pulled one of the axes from his back and started to walk forward.

"Everyone, get away!" Shinto shouted.

They had already moved up against the wall but were trying to do their best to huddle in closer.

"Wait!" Calva said, standing in front of the others. "It's really me, I managed to escape from Immortui and the demons... we have come here to ask you, ask you about joining us."

Standing around 15 metres away from them, Shinto stopped again.

"Calva... you escaped, was it these strangers, were they the ones that broke you free? You know what will happen. They will kill you if they find you, no worse, they will torture the rest of the Skullys right in front of your eyes!"

"How could you trust strangers like these!"

"Don't you think I know that!" Calva said back. "It's because I believe we can do it. These strangers, each one of them is strong, strong enough to go up against the demon kings, and there is one that has the power to take on Immortui... but there are few of them, they can't win this battle alone, we need to help them." Calva clenched his fist showing his determination.

"Help them?" Shinto laughed. "You are going to be the death of us all by doing this. You're lucky that I don't kill you and report you now for appearing in front of me."

Calva didn't know what to say, as Pultra had expected it would be harder to just simply convince Shinto.

"How are you helping the Chrono?" Russ spoke up.

Shinto raised an eyebrow and looked at the stranger. Who were they, who were they to speak to them, and about their own race, they were a stranger in all of this and had no right to say anything.

"Help the Chrono, all I have been doing is helping the Chrono! Because I joined Immortui, the Chrono get to live, all of these guys get to live!" Shinto shouted.

"You call this living?" Russ said. "Look at their faces. They are all afraid, wondering if they will even be able to survive the next sunrise. How can you take the high ground and say that you are the one saving them?"

"When the truth is you're the one that is just watching them all die, day after day, you watch them all die. Do you think this is living? If they are going to fight in the pit for their life anyway, then you might as well actually fight for them instead, take their place and fight against Immortui!" Russ said.

The words from Russ seemed to be more effective than Calva, as Shinto had stopped talking, but he soon went back to his ways.

"No, a fight would just kill us all, at least the Chrono, the others get to live on, the ones that aren't here!" Shinto shouted.

Frustrated by the whole situation, Russ had decided to try another method, as used his powers, he had summoned Hinto right in front of him.

"Will you continue to let people like him die, people like your brother?"

Chapter 2469: All three Champions

Calva was speechless as he had no clue what was going on. A Chrono had appeared out of nowhere and it wasn't just any Chrono, it was one that was relatively infamous, it was Hinto. A Chrono who had managed to achieve the power of the black flames.

"You!" Shinto lifted up his axe and power was drawing from it. "It was you, you were the one that tricked me!"

To Calva it seemed like the worst outcome had come out of this meeting, and now he had no clue how to handle the situation. His head had turned to Sil for him to do something.

"Russ, are you dealing with this one?" Sil asked.

"Yeah, don't worry, no need to get your hands dirty!" Russ said with a smile.

The axe was swung and the large formation of energy was unleashed. It sliced through the bottom flooring and the ceiling coming right at them. Seeing this, Russ soon activated another power of his, and shadow had risen from the ground stopping the attack right in its tracks.

From the side, Hinto with his sword went straight for an attack using the black flames that Shinto had blocked by drawing his axe just in time. Calva was getting shock after shock, weren't these two brothers, or was this some type of illusion that had been summoned by the annoying man.

There was one thing that was clear, his actions certainly backed up the way he acted, if this was just a glimpse of his strength.

The sword clashes continued as Hinto and Shinto were in battle. From the way things were going it looked like Hinto had the upper hand, not for a moment had the champion taken a swing back and was just blocking the entire time.

"I... I know you're not my brother, my brother is dead, because of people like you!" Swinging his axe, when it hit Hinto's sword it exploded with the black flames in one go spreading out to either side like two giant wings.

It had nearly reached the other Chrono that had been watching by the side. The axe had broken through the sword and sliced right through Hinto, the body fell to the floor, split in half, and lingered there for a moment before it eventually disappeared.

It was hard, even though Shinto knew it wasn't his real brother, it was hard for him to strike it down like that. His eyes were closed for a moment, but soon realised that there was still a bigger threat.

Looking up ahead though, he was frozen in place at what he could see.

"What are you doing... they are not involved in this... this is your doing isn't it?"

Looking at the sight, even Calva was angered.

"What are you doing?" Calva asked.

In the room, Russ had summoned a number of werewolves and not just any werewolves but the Glutton type werewolf that they had seen in the pit. They were lined up by the side, drooling and within arm's reach of the Chrono.

"What am I doing?" Russ asked. "I am trying to show you exactly what it is that you are doing. You say you are saving these people, but you are forcing them into that pit to fight against these creatures, you know it."

"So what's the difference if they die now, or they die in a couple of days? You saying you are not willing to fight, is putting all of these lives, and the next, and the next lot at risk. Your brother died and it's our fault."

"Are you going to blame the death of all of these on me as well? Because that's what you're saying, if that's the case then I might as well be the reason they die."

"You're such an idiot that you don't even realise that your own reasoning makes no sense. We didn't kill your brother, the enemy is as clear as day. The werewolves, the demon king, and Immortui that invaded this world."

"Your brother died in his own way because he was fighting back, he was at least doing something, but you, right now you are also an enemy. Right now, the only people that are stopping these people from leaving, from escaping, is you."

"I'm protecting them!" Shinto shouted.

"Even now you still can't see it. Then why don't you step aside, why don't you let them choose, to head into the pit, or have a chance at escaping. I think you know the truth, there's a reason you have to guard those stairs, even with you there people try to escape, yet you slaughter them down."

"Those people that had decided to fight against you, are far braver than you."

Sil was looking at Russ, and was wondering why he was trying so hard to convince Shinto. Sure it would be good for them to have him on their side, but Russ, who hardly cared about anything and made no effort at all, was making quite a bit of effort right now.

The truth was, the whole situation was frustrating and angering Russ, because a lot of the feelings that Shinto was going through now was how he had felt. How those in the Chained had felt toward their suppressor.

There had always been this big overwhelming fear with Hilston, and for them, it was the same with Immortui.

Shinto gripped onto the handle of his axe, the energy started to gather again, he then swung it, but it was half hearted. The energy was nowhere near the size that it was before nor was it at the same speed.

Pulling out the black sword from its sheath, Russ made a slash against it causing the entire strike to disappear in an instant and with it, the werewolves that were around started to fade until they became nothing.

'He stopped the attack completely and not in the same way as before. These beings that have come to us, they all too certainly have special powers.' Calva thought, and he then looked to Shinto who had fallen to his knees. 'And it seems like the one that I thought would cause us the most trouble, has managed to get through.'

It was time for Calva to make his move, as he walked over and stood there next to Shinto.

"I would be lying if I said I wasn't afraid." Calva said. "But, the outsider is right. It appears they can see things far clearer than us. The people, they don't want a life like this... at the moment, everyone is just running away, living in fear for the next day."

"Me, I've been trapped for years, away from it all, but you have been directly in it, seeing it this whole time, it must have been hard for you." Calva reached out his hand.

Shinto then looked up, his eyes watering.

"If I fight back now... then what about all the people I killed with my own hands?" Shinto said. "The people that were just trying to escape, that were just trying to get away."

"Then fight for them now." Russ said. "And when you do, fight with the intention of winning. The dead are dead, and that wasn't the right time. You were right, if you had acted back then you would have been dead, but with us, and especially me, we can get rid of them."

"So you do plan to actually fight?" Sil said with a smile.

Wiping away his few tears, Shinto took Calva's hand and stood up. He then looked at the rest of the Chrono that were in the room.

"Everyone... I..."

"You don't have to say anything." One of the Chronos shouted out. "Fight... Please fight for us. Please get rid of Immortui and all of the demons!"

"Yes, just go already and fight back! Do it before the next sunset!"

Not saying anything else, Sil went and huddled up next to the rest of the group.

"Our plan must stay a secret for it to work. Your and our lives depend on it." Sil said, teleporting all of them away.

Now, all three of the champions had been gathered, and it was time for them to make their move.

Chapter 2470: First Target

All three had teleported right into the center of the cave again. Appearing in the air just a few centimeters above before landing on the ground, and almost immediately Sil went to sit down by the wall to rest.

He was trying his best to rest as much as possible in between these sessions of gathering people, and he had an idea of what was to come, having been through it all once before.

Shinto stood up looking around the cave, and the first one to catch his attention out of them all was Pultra who was standing above a person with her hands laid on top of his head.

"Pultra is here as well!" Shinto said. "Calva, why didn't you say anything about getting her to agree."

"You didn't exactly give me the time to say anything. You were pretty obsessed with getting rid of us from the get go." Calva answered.

A little embarrassed by that, Shinto cleared his throat. The situation was already far better than he had imagined since she was here as well.

"I'm happy that they managed to convince you, with you by our side, our chances continue to increase." Pultra said.

Shinto didn't reply straight away to that, because he felt there was still a little convincing to go. He needed to observe just who the rest of these helpers were. Looking around the room, they all gave a little friendly nod, but no one said anything to Shinto.

"I recognize some of you, some of you were in the pit." Shinto said, looking toward Hikel and Chris. Although he was focused on his own fight mainly with Hikel that fact that the one called Chris was still alive after going against Unzoku was proof of his strength,

"Yes." Hikel said. "We know your strength well, and I imagine you should know ours by now. Everyone here has equal or greater power than each other. The important thing is, that none of us will slow each other down, and we can all help each other in achieving our goal."

The three Skullys hearing those words looked at each other, and decided to take a step back away from the group, because they knew that didn't include them.

"I see... but all of you, you aren't from here are you?" Shinto asked. "Are you from a different space? How did you get in here, was it the celestials that sent you?"

Shinto remembered the conversation that he had with Unzoku, about how the celestials had taken his brother and eventually met his end. He had claimed these people were the same.

"The celestials didn't send us." Hikel answered. "We came following after him." Hikel pointed to Quinn on the table. "He went through a portal from our world to reach yours, all with the goal of taking out Immortui, and we couldn't leave him alone."

There were a lot of questions on Shinto's mind, a lot of them about his brother. Since one of them could summon him, had they met him before? Did they know about his brother, was he really dead? Instead though, he decided that at this point and time, it wasn't the time to be selfish, people were relying on him and he needed to focus on what was ahead.

"Then let me ask you another question, is there a way for you to get back?" Shinto asked.

The one question that never got brought up between the group, because right now they had no way back. The only thing they had was the Boneclaw, but he had used up energy from all the familiars in his world, all the energy he had been saving up for a long time. It was almost impossible to rely on him.

"There's a reason I'm asking." Shiinto said. "At the moment, you guys have a hit list out for you. It appears that Unzoku and the other demon kings know of your presence, but Unzoku was told something in particular.

"He told me because he thought... there was no way I would betray him."

Shinto might have been a bigger goldmine than they thought, he was a person that was on the inside information for them, since he had been working with the group.

"They're looking for you guys, for a way to get out. If you managed to get in somehow, they thought you would know the answer to getting out. As for the others I don't know if they know about them yet... and there's more."

Shinto went on to describe what the current situation with the pit was. Although he had been put on guard and they had created a new holding area for the participants. When night had come, none of the werewolves were sent down.

Shinto didn't know much apart from that it seemed like Unzoku was preparing for something, putting the two and two together along with everything they had heard, as well as what the Yaks were doing, they were ready for a full out war.

"If we had never closed that portal, and they had managed to get through, what would the state of our world have been like?" Edvard said, thinking back.

"We stopped them already, so we can stop them again." Hikel added. "What I'm more concerned about, is the fact that they know about us, and not only is Immortui out there searching for us, but so are the other demon kings. How are we meant to get their blood, is our only option really to just fight them, try to kill them as quickly as possible."

The situation had become more serious and suddenly now that everyone had gathered, they had to think about taking on the demon kings. The idea of defeating someone like Unzoku instantly, felt like a dream.

"Quinn is still not awake, I was hoping if we had him he would be able to help but it looks like we have no choice." Sil said. "I have a plan. I didn't want to use up my MC cells just in case I needed to fight but as long as you guys can create a big enough distraction for me, then I can touch them."

Everyone fell silent for a moment, so what if he could touch them, what did Sil even mean by that?

"Sil, I think you need to explain a little more." Edvard nervously said.

"Oh sorry, if I can touch them, then I can change their memories. I'm not sure how effective it will be, considering most of them are just creatures who like to kill and hunt for fun. I have no doubt if they felt their boss or leader was weaker for them for a moment they would try to kill him, but that's all we need."

"If I can change their memories to forget about Immortui. To forget about the others, it will give us enough of a chance to take their blood and get out of there."

It was a resort that Sil really didn't want to rely on. It was a god slayer level ability, so it used up a bit of his MC points and getting close was dangerous.

"Then I guess that's it then." Chris said, turning around. "We go to face the demon king. Will it be the king of the Yaks first. If he clears his memory then then we won't have to worry about them finding out about the ones I got rid of."

Everyone nodded in agreement that it was the best choice. Sil wanted to wait a little to recover more of his MC cells before going to battle, when his eyes suddenly widened, and a sweat broke down the side of his face.

"What's wrong?" Hikel asked. "Your heartbeat, it started to beat faster."

Sil turned to look at Pultra and Quinn.

"You might have to stay with Quinn, because we need him to be awake as soon as possible." Sil said.

At that moment, everyone's heart sank deep into their stomach, a dreaded feeling came over them all.

"Immortui, he's onto us, he killed the first clone."

Chapter 2471: A meeting from the past, Quinn

After running around in a dense fog for who knew how long, nothing had changed for Quinn. Since he was unable to use his powers as well, he was almost sure he was in some type of dream or the afterlife.

That was until he heard a voice.

"Who said that?" Quinn shouted back. It was a voice that was familiar to him but he couldn't quite pinpoint just who it was.

"I've been waiting for you for a long time. In fact, it's not just me; there are a lot of people waiting for you, but not all of them seem to be so kind."

Trying to track where the voice was coming from was almost impossible, even with Quinn's super hearing. It was echoing all over the place, but what was bugging him more than anything was the fact that the voice felt familiar to him.

The fog started to swirl around, gathering in a certain area, and a human figure was starting to appear. Finally, his full body was in view.

"That was a lot harder than I thought it would be."

"It's you," Quinn said with a twang in his voice, confused. "But aren't you dead? Does that mean I'm really dead?"

"If that's the case, then what about Layla? What about the others? What happened to them? Are they okay?"

There was no answer, infuriating Quinn and causing him to panic even more.

"Answer me, Paul!" Quinn shouted.

The figure that had appeared in front of Quinn was none other than Paul Sneallart. He was a person from Quinn's past but had played a large part in his life. In charge of one of the military bases where the students would go through, and one of those students being Quinn.

He had been then placed in charge of an assault on the Vampire settlement. It ended in failure as he was captured, striking a deal he had been turned into a vampire along with the soldiers he had brought with him.

Looking back at it, the soldiers were what had eventually become the vampire corps, but as for Paul himself, he had met his end, trying to protect Kazz from Laxmus.

"I don't know the current situation, Quinn!" Paul eventually answered. "For me, it has been the same since that day, the day I suffered from Laxmus's blood breath. It

has felt as if only a few moments have passed since then. There is one thing that I can tell you for sure, you are not dead, I can feel it; your body is not present here."

The answer hadn't helped Quinn figure out where he was, but it did allow him to settle down a little.

'Is this something that Immortui has done, making me meet with the dead?' Quinn thought, since he was a celestial that was closely linked with death.

"I wanted to ask you, Quinn, did you figure out what it means to be a leader?" Paul asked. "In the past, you had criticized many of the decisions I had made. I had explained to you why I did what I did. I assume you've been through a lot since my passing."

The world that Quinn grew up in wasn't a great one at all. Those that had naturally weaker abilities were treated like trash, while those that were strong were glorified. The military seemed to care about nothing else at the time.

They would threaten with Jack Truedream's power and even held people captive that they deemed were too dangerous.

"I've lost a lot, in the position I'm in," Quinn answered. "I had to make difficult choices that resulted in the death of others. A lot of deaths, I feel like could have been prevented... but maybe more would have taken place if I didn't do those things."

"I learned that when you're in that position, you do what you think is right at the time, and as long as you are sticking to that, can we really say it was a bad decision? I understand why you did what you did back then. I might not approve of it, but I can see you did it with good intentions."

If Quinn's eyes weren't tricking him, he could have sworn he saw a smile on Paul's face.

"I don't regret what I have done either," Paul said. "Including sacrificing my life for that girl."

If Paul's current memories were of right when he died, then he would have had no clue that Kazz had died shortly after. Quinn decided to keep this to himself.

"You still have a promise to keep, young boy," Paul said.

The promise Quinn had made with not just Paul but the vampire soldiers that no longer existed, he remembered it well. It was something that he never forgot.

"I'm working on it, it might be the reason why I'm here," Quinn laughed.

Paul started to walk over to Quinn, and the two of them stood facing each other.

"I don't know why, Quinn, but I know what it is that I need to do next, and what is going to happen to you. Maybe it's because I'm the first in this world.

"For me to leave this place, I'm going to touch you, and when I do, all of the pain that I experienced from my last moments will be passed onto you. Are you ready?"

It was quite possible that Quinn was being tricked right now, but it felt like the real Paul was in front of him, and there was nothing else in the space. If this was the way to move forward, then he needed to make a decision.

Giving a nod, Paul placed his hands on Quinn's shoulder. Almost immediately, Quinn felt a searing pain all over his skin. It felt like he was being microwaved from the outside and inside.

"ARGHHH!!" Quinn screamed at the top of his lungs as his body was shaking violently. It wasn't just pain on the level where it would enter Quinn. This was exactly Paul's pain. It was the level of pain he felt when he was being incinerated by Immortui's power.

However, for Quinn, that wasn't the worst part. Tears were falling down his face and evaporating, flashes of anger were entering his mind, sorrow, and more. A mix and wave of different emotions were being bombarded into his head.

'This... this is everything that Paul felt at the end of his life... I wish... I wish I could have saved him.'

Eventually, the pain had come to an end, and when it did, he opened his eyes, and Paul's body was disappearing into mist to join the fog again.

"Quinn, it looks like there are a lot of people waiting on you, but I give you a warning. I lived a life without regret. I've seen how much you have grown, but there seem to be many that have grudges against you... it won't be as easy as this."

With Paul gone, the mist started to form into another figure once more, bringing on the question, who was he going to meet next?

Chapter 2472.1: Connecting with the old Quinn (Part 1)

The mist was starting to form into another appearance and Quinn was now a little worried about who he was going to see next. He still didn't understand how it all worked. Why was Paul the first person he saw out of everyone?

Was it because he still bore somewhat of a grudge and was able to get the answers he was looking for. For Quinn it almost felt like he was talking to the ghosts of his past, and satisfying them was allowing them to move on.

If this was the case, he didn't know everyone's true feelings that had passed, if they cursed him in their final moments. Worst of all, would he have to get rid of them the same way, going through what they had been through.

Eventually the smoke formed a small figure. This time with short black hair, female in her body shape, she looked young as well, almost a teenager.

"Quinn..." the voice softly said as the mist was still figuring out some final facial features. "Quinn!" The voice shouted again, the girl was grabbing both sides of her head as she started to sob.

"What did you do to me, what did you do to me!" Opening her mouth, a loud scream escaped, vibrating through the air. It was a powerful wave that had hit Quinn and lifted him off his feet.

His insides were shaking like a metal pole that had just been whacked, and when the scream ended, he could finally get up.

"You... because of you, I'm not like this!"

"Cia..." Quinn said in a soft voice. He had lost the words of what to say to this one, as he remembered who she was.

When at the military academy, she was one of Layla's roommates. The two had somewhat become friends, but it was later found out that she was working for Pure as a spy. With Layla's wish of not getting rid of her, Quinn had done something considered a taboo, even among that of the vampires.

He had erased her memories.

With no memories, Cia felt like she was broken. She didn't remember her name, who her family was or anything. Yet she had been alive for so many years. It was a frightening thought that had eaten at her for so long.

Eventually, Quinn had turned her using the blood ritual, and she had become known as what was a Banshee.

'I'm surprised she still has some of her powers, and that attack on its own really hurt.' Quinn thought.

In the current space, Quinn felt like he was just a husk of himself. Fighting would almost be impossible.

"You were the one who got rid of my memories!" Cia shouted. "Do you know how scared I was! And I thought you were all my friends, yet you were the one who had done that to me. It was you!"

Cia opened her mouth again and screamed, letting out the large sonar attack. Quinn, still being able to at least move, rolled out of the way avoiding it. He was starting to remember a bit more of what happened now as well.

Cindy Cha, one of the vampire leaders, and eventually the vampire Queen, had used her powers to reverse the procedure that had been done on her, giving her back her memories. But Cindy Cha was not a good vampire, and she had been using her as a pawn.

"You took everything from me!" Cia shouted again.

Quinn continued to run around practically in circles as he avoided the attack.

"Cia, we had no choice!" Quinn shouted. "You know what would have happened to Layla, and the rest of us! You should have seen that yourself!"

"Didn't you learn to truly care about Layla!"

Cia's eye brows furrowed more as she started to open her mouth in short bursts instead of a single long one, shooting multiple shots at Quinn. He jumped from side to side avoiding them all.

'I might not have my full powers, but I still have all the experience I've had from each of my fights this whole time!' Quinn thought, as he got closer and closer.

Eventually he had managed to reach Cia, and he knelt down, sweeping his leg kicking her to the ground, her body fell over hitting the ground but in the instant the two had made a physical connection, Quinn felt a searing pain in his head, and a deep cut on his chest.

'ARGhhh shit, so if I touch them and fight back, I'll feel their last moments!'

"Cia!" Quinn shouted, touching his head, his eyes were welling up in the last moments. "You... you did a good job. You protected Layla, she's still alive... She's doing well, and we have a kid together."

Laying there on the ground, her eyes started to well up and Cia started to sniffle away.

"I'm... I'm so happy for the two of you, it's just that, I wish I could have been there, I wish I could have been by your side to experience it all."

With her face covered in tears, Cia lifted her hand up covering her eyes as she continued to cry away. Hearing her say those words was a great stake in Quinn's heart.

Could he have done better, was doing what they had done to Cia the only way at the time, she had lost everything.

'Immortui, what you are making me go through, is heartbreaking.' Quinn said, as he walked over and looked at Cia again.

"I'm sorry Cia, I'm really sorry, but I need your help again, I need to get through this, so I can save not just Layla, but everybody as well. I'm sorry that I wasn't able to save you." Quinn said.

As if she understood what was about to happen, Cia wiped her tears away, and then with her hand she held it out for Quinn to hold onto.

Taking her hand, immediately the sensation, the strong emotions were going right through Quinn. He closed his eyes, then he opened them, all to try to lessen the feeling of death, the things going through his mind, but nothing worked.

'I'm guilty.' Quinn thought as he went through her feelings. 'I'm the one that is guilty of all of this.'

Eventually it subsided and just like with Paul, Cia's body started to disappear into the mist as well.

'That's only been two people, and it's already been that tough. How many more do I have to go through, and how much tougher can this get for me. Bringing up all of these things, it's what made me who I am today.'

'But all the doubts that I had about my decisions, they are surfacing.'

The mist was forming, and no matter who came on the other side, whether it was an old friend or enemy, Quinn wasn't looking forward to it.

The mist had finished forming, and a bald headed upstanding figure stood there.

"How did it come to this, where I am the one standing on this side, and you are the one standing on that side." Bryce said.

Bryce Cain, leader of the 1st vampire family and the 6th Vampire king.

Chapter 2473.2: Connecting with the old Quinn (Part 2)

The past two people that had arrived Quinn felt indifferent about seeing them. They were those that had helped him during his goal, and perhaps in the end they had even become friends of his.

Although he didn't have as strong of a connection with them compared to others, he didn't have a distaste in his mouth when seeing them. However right now there was one person he didn't want to see, Bryce Cain.

Bryce had been a large pain and hindrance for Quinn during his time as a vampire, almost having it out for him every step of the way. In the end, the two had teamed up, but rather than as friends, it was just because the two were moving toward the same goal, but even then he was obsessed, obsessed with hatred.

"It should be me that's still alive!" Bryce said. "I should be the one to protect the vampires and rid them of their troubles!"

"The vampire settlement, no, the vampires, have always been at each other's throats because of thoughts like yours." Quinn replied, not in the mood to go softly on him. "Only now, after countless numbers of years, is the settlement starting to look like a place where they don't have to worry about their role in society."

Hearing these words, it looked like Bryce was almost shaking with anger.

"What have you done Quinn?" Bryce asked. "Are the vampires now living amongst humans, side by side as equals. We are living next to our food. That's the same as humans living side by side with chickens! I knew everything would fall apart without me, and it looks like I was right!"

It was going to be impossible to get rid of so many years of bias that had been ingrained in Bryce's head, so Quinn decided to take another approach, he would just walk over touch his body and get it over with.

"What do you think you're doing?" Bryce said, as a cane formed in his hand. He pulled out the bottom part of the cane revealing a thin red coloured sword. "Quinn I hate you... not just you, but you and your entire 10th family."

"You were all just a puppet, working for that man behind the scenes! I told everyone that my grandfather was framed. I worked to get rid of the Punishers, to change our ways so something like what happened to my grandfather would never happen again.

"And then you came back? You changed the way the vampires were thinking after it had taken them so long to see my way. I left the world without accomplishing

everything I wished to do. The fact that you are here in front of me, is unacceptable."

Bryce dashed forward and swung his sword. Quinn was able to track it with his eye, moving out of the way but the tip of the blade made a small cut across his chest. Jumping back he looked down to see if he was bleeding.

There was no blood, but a large stinging pain that was throbbing.

'His sword, it still hurt me, and not in the same way as before. I didn't experience any memories or a burning sensation or anything like that. Does that mean it's only if I touch his real body?

Not letting up, Bryce charged forward again and started to swing his sword. Seeing the small twitches in his shoulder muscles, the movements he would make, Quinn could predict where he was going to move, and avoided the large bulk of the attacks.

Still, the tip of the sword would cut through his skin from time to time, leaving no wounds but allowing him to feel pain.

"It looks like you must have gotten somewhat better!" Bryce said, continuing to swing his sword at a great speed not stopping for a moment. "I can tell though, you can't use your powers for some reason and you can still feel pain.

"You won't die Quinn, you don't have to worry, but I will make you experience as much pain as possible."

As the attacks continued Quinn eventually saw an opening, he took a slash across his arm, taking the pain, and delivered a punch right to Bryce's stomach. He slid across the room and the same thing had happened again.

Searing pain over his body, and his head filled with the emotions he experienced in the last moments. This time it was different compared to the others.

'Bryce's emotions, they are so dark, they're heavy, even in his last moments, he was obsessed with it till the very end.'

Although Bryce had been hit, he was far from being done. His shoulders started to shake up and down as his head looked to the ground. Lifting it up, Quinn could see he was laughing.

"Hahaha, you have no clue what is happening right now do you?" Bryce asked. "Do you think it will end just with me? Because it won't. Because, here, you will have to meet and go through every single person who died that's still in your mind in some way. Not only that... but there will be more."

Looking to his right, the mist was starting to form another figure. It was the first time it happened. Quinn thought that he could only go through one person at a time, so why was a second one approaching.

When the mist finally ended, Quinn quickly got into a fighting stance.

"This isn't good news, especially with the way I am right now, why is Cindy Cha here!"

Cindy Cha was a vampire that Bryce and Quinn had worked together to best, and now they were standing side by side looking at him, looking to face and hurt him.

Yet, he didn't even have time to worry about Cindy, because the mist was moving all over the place. No matter where Quinn looked in a 360 degree view, the mist was forming other figures around him.

"Every single living creature that died directly by your hand will also be here Quinn!" Bryce stated. "The humans, the Dalki, the vampires!"

Bryce was right, those that he had killed in the military bases were forming. Vampires that he had to get rid of on his journey. The spiked Dalki, everyone was appearing in the room.

How many lives had Quinn taken, it was far more than he could count, and the truth was, he couldn't even recognise a lot of them. Their lives were nothing when he had taken them.

While there were others he did recognise, others that deserved their death, and seeing them again, had reminded him of why he had done those things.

"While your skills are suppressed in this world, you will have to deal with the direct pain inflicted onto you." Cindy said. "While also going through what we went through. Experiencing death over and over."

"Quinn, you will be lucky if you are the same person after getting out of this place. Get ready to experience hell."

Chapter 2474: Immortui chases!

There were more people than Quinn could even see now in the strange space. Even if he was able to use the full extent of his powers, with past enemies, even Graham here, there was a good chance he couldn't beat them.

What he was about to experience was the worst in all of his life. However, he was unaware of why this was happening. In this special space that Immortui placed people in, they were meant to deal with the situation one at a time, it was how it was meant to work.

A process that would take Quinn days to get through. The reason for them all appearing, was due to what was happening on the outside of his body. Pultra's natural effect was speeding up the process.

In turn, it had put Quinn in a tough situation. One that not a single person had experienced before, what the results would be of such a thing, were unknown.

Outside of Quinn's body, Sil had just informed everyone that Immortui had taken out one of the clones he had spread out far and wide.

"Wait, does this mean he's found us?" Calva asked.

"No." Sil answered. "But I know a couple of things. Each of the clones have a teleportation ability. If they were to see him they were to move away. I predicted that this might have been the reason he has been taking so long."

"However, the clone was taken out without having any time to even send me a message. So he had to have been killed instantly."

Sil's clones were extremely powerful for a few reasons. At the time they were created by Sil, they had the same amount of MC cells. So the powers they could use were great and large. They also had the abilities of the Sil when he was created but they were unable to change them due to not having a soul weapon. The other downside was if they were hit with a hard blow they would disappear.

So this was the thing that was worrying Sil, they had strong powers and hadn't been able to even put up a fight?

'Is it because he's using his colourless power. Does it also stop my abilities? The champions told me about it. Then the best way to face him would be from a distance.'

"What does this mean for the plan?" Chris said.

In this situation no one had an answer, and instead it looked like they were waiting for Sil to give an answer. That was until he had made a few more noises.

"No... no... no." He mumbled as he looked up at the others. "He just took out another one."

Sil's words had more weight than they imagined. If the clones were spread far apart and he had taken them out in succession like so, he was clearly now actively searching for them and had a way to get from one to the next fairly quickly.

"There's a chance he might have found a way to track you, or he's just going planet to planet." Shinto said. "If it continues like this, he'll be here soon."

"Quinn still isn't awake though." Hikel satted. "And we have yet to get the blood that he needs. Let's say he does wake up, without that blood, will he be able to beat Immortui?"

It was a question that they didn't know the answer to.

"I have no choice." Sil said, his hand shaking. "I said this before, if Immortui is on our tail then I will go face him, I will have to buy us some time."

"But you were part of our plan?" Chris said. "Weren't you going to alter their memories to make it easier for us?"

"I know." Sil said. "I would have created a clone and given you its power, but it seems for some reason, the clones can't use that power. I don't know why, but maybe Russ can. Either way, right now Immortui is the more dangerous threat. In order for this to work, I need to go to him. I'm sorry guys."

Sil didn't even give a chance for the others to say anything, time was running out. There might be a way for him to use his clones to distract Immortui, so he could fight him on the outside. He teleported out of the cave, ready to face the hardest fight of his life.

"So can you do it?" Hikel asked. "Will you be able to use Sil's power?"

"I have an idea of how it works... but it might be difficult depending on the situation. I don't have as many MC cells as that guy. I can't just teleport around the place, and using powers like that, for me it takes up more MC cells than the original." Russ explained.

"Either way, things have stayed the same, we have to get rid of the demon kings, we can't waste any more time. We'll get the blood, Russ you teleport us to the location of all the demon kings and we'll do this."

The group moved to the edge of the cave ready to move out, but that's when they noticed that not everyone had come with them. Instead, still standing in the cave were the three champions that had just agreed to help them. All three were looking at each other.

"You guys can defeat the demon king without us." Calva said.

"What is this crap, are you flaking on us right now, of all times?" Russ shouted, wanting to blast them all away. They were just a big waste of time.

"It's not that." Shinto interrupted. "It's the best use of our time and all of our skills. You guys are strong and if anything we're trusting that you're enough to take on the demon king, but for us we can help in other ways."

Pultra at the back nodded.

"We know our role in all of this." Pultra said. "For one, I need to stay by Quinn's side for my powers to help him. On top of that, there is always a chance that he will be discovered. Someone needs to protect him and one is not enough."

"I know you wish that to be you, but all of you are needed more than us. And lastly, when Quinn wakes up, we wish to train him."

"We, who had all fought against Immortui, we wish to see his skills, his power, and see what he has to beat Immortui, meanwhile, also teaching him everything we know about the one we need to face."

"I know it sounds selfish of us, but I feel like Quinn is our only chance of actually beating Immortui. So we need to do everything we can to make sure he can win."

Hikel stared dead into Pultra's eyes for a few moments, until he had finally made a decision.

"Very well, Peter, you can put your fist down. Save it for the demon king. Let's go get the Yak demon king's blood!" Hikel jumped down and the rest followed straight after.

Chapter 2475: The 1st Returns!

There was nowhere to run for Quinn. Everywhere he turned his head, there were those that were blocking his way. The entire room had been filled, in this almost infinite space for him. What was worse was the fact that not a single one of them had yet to make a move.

It was putting an immense amount of pressure on him as he looked at all of their faces.

'What do I do, should I just pick a direction and run, to get this over with?' Quinn thought. 'But what will happen if I end up running into two people at once. Can that even happen? Maybe I should try and focus on those that are weaker than me?'

In the middle of his thoughts, someone had struck out, firing a blood aura attack. Quinn was able to avoid it, but when he did, there was a Dalki right in front of him with a fist. His face was pounded, causing his body to be lifted up from the ground.

'Arghhh! That freaking hurt, and now my head as well!'

The pain from the physical attack weighed on Quinn, just like when Bryce had used his blade. He wasn't bleeding in any way but it felt like it was actually going through his body. Then at the same time, the memories of the Dalki's death and its emotions were being portrayed.

'It's a good thing the Dalki are simple minded, they quite enjoy a warrior's death, so that wasn't too bad.'

Opening his eyes, he could see another vampire with its hands bloody. It was one of the first vampire knights that Quinn had killed when he had entered the settlement, someone's name that he couldn't even remember.

"Feel my pain!" The vampire shouted with a bloody claw.

The two were mid-air and Quinn was dropping to the ground, but if he was going to get hit, and go through this, then at least he was going to do it on his terms. Spinning his body, a kick landed right on the face of the vampire.

It felt solid, unexpected since he thought there was a chance his foot would go right through the other person. They were sent flying in the distance and while mid-air, their body started to disappear.

Once again, as Quinn had made contact, the emotions consumed him along with the pain.

'My chest, everything in my body hurts... and all of this anger!'

It was an extreme struggle and it hadn't ended there. A large hit in the back, infused with the power of Qi, from a member who used to be part of Pure, caused Quinn to open his mouth wide.

Another Dalki was in front of Quinn delivering a punch. Each attack was painful but the emotional damage was more draining. It was making it difficult for him to even move. Those in the mist had surrounded him and continued to attack Quinn while he could do nothing.

They had smiles on their faces as they hit him causing him pain. Some had hit him so much that their bodies were already disappearing, having already given all the pain they had felt in their final moments.

"Stop!" Quinn managed to shout out... "Make it stop... my head."

The physical pain Quin could take. He had been through a lot, it was his mind. As multiple people touched and hit him, he was experiencing more than one person's regret at the same time.

This was causing his own mind to be confused as to how it was to feel. In one's death, their emotions were on the extreme end of the spectrum. His brain felt like it was splitting apart, not just in one or two directions, but in multiple ones.

Tears were falling down his face, while he started to bite his lip and dig into his own hands with his nails.

"It's too much... it hurts... it really hurts."

Quinn wasn't so sure, but it almost felt like he could feel his body reacting, his heart beating rapidly, and then it slowing down. As he was going through everything. Eventually, he had no idea how much time had even passed.

How many people had disappeared because when he looked around it looked like he had the same amount that he needed to go through. The queue wasn't getting any shorter.

He didn't realise that he wasn't imagining things at all. On the outside, Pultra could see his body reacting. It hadn't done so during this whole time but now on the makeshift table, it was moving about shaking.

"What's happening to him?" Anon asked.

"I have no idea... maybe my interference is causing problems?" Pultra replied.

"Then, do you think you should stop?" Shinto asked, as he walked closer, but there was a strange energy that was radiating off from Quinn. His skin was glowing slightly red. It was reminding Shinto of the demons, so he wanted to stay away.

Pultra felt the same feeling, but she was fighting against her instincts as she continued to push down.

"We can't!" Pultra shouted back. "This happens just as the others go away. We know Immortui is on our back, we just have to get through this."

The other two champions felt a little hopeless as they were unable to do anything, other than just watch.

Inside the mist, Quinn had gone into a curling position, his head tucked into his knees with his back arched. The others continued to hit him, some flinging him across to a different area with their power. Immediately after being hit, he would curl up into a ball again.

It wasn't because Quinn was afraid, or anything like that, but it was the most comfortable position for him, to just focus on getting through everything that was happening.

Eventually, Graham, the Dalki, had kicked Quinn, hitting him so far away that he had gone over the rest of those in the mist.

Looking up, for the first time, Quinn could see that there was no one crowded around him. Instead, he could see a group of people, a small army coming toward him.

'I have to... I have to get through this. I have to, and get out of here!'

The group drew closer and closer with the creepy smile on their faces, and then, in front of Quinn the mist started to form into a figure again. It wasn't just one but there were a few around him.

"There's more... can I even take this anymore?" Quinn thought as he stared at the ground.

"Look up Quinn, and fight this thing straight ahead." A voice said.

Quinn started to look in front of him, it was the most figures from before. They had formed into people, several people, but why were they standing away from him then?

"You don't have to do this alone... we are sorry we are late, and we will take the pain, on your behalf."

The long black hair that was flowing, the confident voice that was speaking. The man stood in front of Quinn stretched out his hands, and shadow started to form around it.

"Arthur!" Quinn shouted out.

Arthur Pendragon, the first vampire punisher, had appeared and he wasn't alone.

Chapter 2476: We've got your back, Quinn

Looking at Arthur's back, it only took a moment for all the memories to come flooding to Quinn. His confident voice, his long black hair, and the fact that he could use the shadow. It had been a long time, an incredibly long time, since he had seen him.

That of course, was when reality had somewhat hit Quinn. That had to be the case, because these were all of the dead that were related to Quinn. Not just the ones he killed with his own hands, but those that he still had a deep thought in his mind about.

In fact, it was only now that he was realising it, even though the crowds of people that had surrounded him, not all of them were attacking him. They just were unable to do anything to help.

Several attacks came flying their way and lifting his hand up, a shadow wall was created, blocking them all. Moving it back down, the shadow wall had disappeared and now Arthur was just smiling as he looked at the faces of all of those that still had a lot of resentment left in them.

"Look at all of you, the whole lot of you are already dead. You causing harm to him will do nothing for you." Arthur stated. "So rather than just passing on your pain and be done, you want to torture him. All of you should be blaming yourselves for the situation you are in."

Arthur's words weren't going to get through to them. One could tell by the unchanged look on their faces, and if anything, it looked like they were more annoyed by the situation.

"The original Punisher, the cause of many, many misfortunes." Bryce said. "Of course you would be the one to stand on that side, but do you really think just one of you is enough? That boy can't fight himself, and in the end you will have to pass on your pain to him as well."

Arthur couldn't help but laugh at the situation he was in. His shoulders were shaking. In some ways when he passed on, he was happy that he didn't have to deal with this anymore, and now he was put in this situation.

"Quinn." Arthur called out. "Look at all these people, it looks like you have been incredibly busy after me, did you even have time to rest?"

Seeing Arthur in this way, acting like this, it was hard for Quinn, making his chest feel heavy. When he had originally met Arthur, he was a figure to follow, a person to admire who was strong and helped Quinn in many ways.

Teaching him, protecting him, and overall looking out for him. However, the last moments spent with Arthur weren't the best memories that he had of him. That was

until the very end, when he made a switch at the last moment, giving himself up, and passing on all of his powers to Quinn, trying to help him the best way he could, and now even after death Arthur was protecting him once again, and he was acting more like the better days of the Arthur he knew.

"Alright let's make this clear then." Arthur shouted. "I will get rid of everyone who is not on this side. So you should choose if you want to pass on peacefully or not."

It seemed foolish in this type of situation to suggest such a thing. Sure Arthur was strong, perhaps stronger than Bryce, and maybe enough to take on Bryce and Cindy, but what about the rest, including the Dalki that he was scared of at the time

"Oh and I'll let you in on one more thing, did you think out of everyone that passed, that I would be the only one that wanted to protect this kid?"

So focused on Arthur in front of him, he had failed to notice the others that took a step forward and were now in front of him as well. Quinn tossed and turned his head, as he looked at all of the smiles they gave back to him.

For him, how long had it been since he felt this way, he was trying his hardest to swallow the lumps that were coming up in his throat, but eventually he lifted his head up.

"I thought... I would never see you guys again."

One of the most notable ones that had appeared, was the blind bald headed teacher of his that had guided him through ups and downs, Leo Suiyan. During his slumber, Leo had passed away. Never giving the chance for Quinn to thank him, or to say goodbye.

However, there was one by his side, and it was nice to see that the two were now standing side by side, next to each other. That was Erin Heley. She was standing comfortably next to Leo and her smile showed she was happy.

Having to defeat her with his own hands and only later finding out the real person behind everything. It was painful for Quinn and Layla, who would often tell stories of the time the two had been together.

Then, there were the members of the cursed faction, the group Quinn had created that had taken him through everything. Nate Snell, a man who had challenged him in the VR game, a talented student who was strong headed and was loyal to the end.

Dennis was also by his side. One that had originally come from another group, but helped Quinn out to the point he had even learned the shadow power as well.

Lastly there was Wevil who was by Linda's side as well. Wevil was one of the starting members of the cursed faction, sacrificing himself on Blade island in order to help the rest.

It was hard for Linda to recover from Wevil's death, but at some point during his 1000 year slumber she had to have passed away, and now the two were back together happily again

"The deceased members of the cursed faction going up against all the enemies you already beat huh?" Wevil commented. "Man, did you have to give us such a hard job on our first day back."

Linda proceeded to punch Wevil on the side of his shoulder.

"Don't worry about him, Quinn. We came because we saw you were in trouble, we saw you needed us. If anything, it's great that we can see you again."

"Don't worry, we have some more allies that came before us, that are among the others." Leo commented. "I can sense their aura."

"We are your past Quinn." Erin said. "You have a future, the whole world has a future, and knowing you, you're probably in this situation because you're trying to save the world or something. So go and save the world."

Stretching out her hand, a large sword formed in its place.

"Save the world, while we go and save you."

Chapter 2477: The Yak King

Sitting in his large throne Bisha, the Yak demon king, was tapping his finger away at the side. There was a recurring problem that Bisha had staying in the red space, and that was the fact that he was bored.

The other demon kings, they all had their little projects they worked on, the hunting games and the pit. While Bisha himself had a more serious task to handle, something that could only be handled on this planet.

The materials for building the large ships were rare and only found on this planet, but the largest issue was with the planet itself, as there were no inhabitants. There was only the Yak and insects on the planet.

So, Bisha was unable to set something up like the others did. Even if he had requested some to be sent his way, Immortui didn't want him to be distracted from the task, since his role was extremely important.

On top of that, Luce, another demon king, one of Immortui's right hand men, had informed him that there might be trouble happening soon and they should prepare. All of this anticipation, it was making Bisha feel the effects of his boredom more than usual.

"You have been doing this for thousands of years, but you can't wait for a few days?" Luce commented, knowing the impatient look on his face.

"Excitement is just something that I haven't felt in a long time." Bisha replied. "I believe you feel the same way, we are close to entering a new world and finally I can leave this place."

A large banging was heard on the golden doors.

"Come in!" Bisha ordered.

Pushing the door open, a Yak had entered through the doors and immediately got down on his knees, bowing down with his hands together towards Bisha.

"I'm sorry to disturb you sir, but you told us to report any unusual activities, which is why I am currently here." The Yak said. "We asked each team and group to give us a report to see if they have noticed anything, but we are unable to get in contact with the production team. We have tried several people but there has been no reply, do you wish to send one of ours there?"

Immediately Bisha stood up from his seat.

"Oh, a problem, at a time like this, that isn't good news." The words and the smile he had on his face, didn't match each other.

"We don't know the number of intruders that have arrived." Luce said. "I think it might be best if I go check on the champion. That could very well be their target."

The entirety of Luce's body started to turn white, lighting up the whole room until it had almost blinded everyone. When the Yak and Bisha could see again, Luce was nowhere to be seen.

"And he says that he isn't excited? He is even more impatient than me." Bisha smiled. "No need to send anyone, I will head there myself."

The group had descended from the cave a little nervous compared to before, having now strayed from the original plan they had in mind. They were going through the forest, same as before, and Chris and Edvard were taking the lead, having already scouted the area.

They weren't using Russ' ability to enter another's mind and copy the teleportation power, because for the fight that was coming up, they would perhaps need all his MC cells. In a way though, they were thankful that they still had Russ, because he could do the same things as Sil did, just not as well.

"If we're going for the Yak king, then our target is the large golden palace right?" Edvard suggested.

"That would be our best guess, and the champions had mentioned when they got Pultra that's where they would be." Chris replied. "We will go through the building workshop. There's a direct path that leads into the main city. We won't have to worry about anyone spotting us."

From these words, they knew that Chris wasn't joking when he had mentioned that he had gotten rid of all witnesses. Either way they had to take the quickest route, it was a race against time.

They had to get the blood of the four demon kings, for as long as Sil could hold off Immortui.

"Who knows, maybe we'll get lucky, and Sil will defeat Immortui for us." Edvard said. "We've been unlucky in this whole thing so far, it's about time we had some luck come our way."

Reaching the building site they quickly descended from the trees, and entered the large area. It went on for acres of land, as three giant objects were placed all over the area. Stationed behind were the wave-like rocks that looked like giant waves that were as big as mountains.

When in a place like this, it was truly when they realised the place was called the Planet of the Giants. What they did notice though, in the building area many of the tools had been destroyed and there was dry blood in several different places.

"Heck, you didn't even try to make it look less obvious you were here." Russ commented. "If Immortui didn't find us, they certainly would have found out about us eventually."

It was true that Chris had been a little too confident in the fact that he had gotten rid of everyone nearby, and with everything that had happened it was near impossible to clean up the entire place.

Ignoring Russ' words, Chris ascended one of the giant ships that were being built, he climbed up it, and the rest followed using their own methods. The ship was so large they looked like little ants climbing up the side of a car.

Eventually they had reached the top, where the giant canons, weapons, and large crates were on the deck. They ran to the edge as Chris looked out trying to search for the path before.

"So that's the giant temple, yep, I would definitely say the demon king is there alright." Hikel commented.

"Up!" Peter shouted.

All of them tilted their heads up wondering why Peter would shout such a word, and that's when they could see something getting closer and larger by the second. Each of them jumped out of the way, as they realised what it was.

Out from the sky, the giant Yak landed right on the edge of the ship deck. Immediately the whole bottom half had lifted up in the sky. It was so forceful, that every single one of them was chucked up into the sky.

"It didn't take long to find the root of the problem at all!" Bisha shouted. "Now it's time to get rid of the problem."

The demon king of the Yak demon race, a race of giants had come to them.

Chapter 2478: Bad luck after luck

Behind the golden temple, there was a large structure behind it, where the back of a waterfall would flow into a giant hole in the ground. The hole itself though, was almost a whole other world, filled with plants, minerals, rocks, caves and more.

Softly a figure, covered in white clothing from head to toe, had landed in the area. He was softly floating down and before his feet touched the grass, it looked as if the grass was being pushed out of the way to avoid itself being crushed.

"On the surface everything seems to be the norm here." Luce said, looking around. Life was still flowing into the objects just like before, and there was no sign of a battle. Walking around he tried to locate where the Champion would be.

He walked through, pushing large branches out of the way, and observed the strangest of features. Large giant sized gems that looked like tablets.

A field of snow that melted into pieces of rock rather than water. It was certainly a strange place, yet he was still unable to find what he was looking for.

'The energy in the area, it's different, but not because of any certain thing but the items themselves... have they really escaped?' Luce thought.

Eventually, going through a thick dense forest, there was an opening that could be seen. A part where the trees didn't grow so close together. When breaking through, there was a single giant tree, with its leaves spanning the area above.

Vibrant green grass led up to the tree, and sitting right by it, was the person he was looking for Pultra.

The two of them had made eye contact, and Luce appeared with a smile on his face. Or what one would guess was a smile since the bottom half of his face was covered up, only allowing for his eyes to be seen.

Pultra stood up at that point and had a smile on her face, but behind that smile was a heap of emotions running through their mind.

'This is bad... Sil made me a clone just in case this type of situation would unfold but now it looks like someone is checking in on her now of all times.'

The Sil clone did as instructed if this was to happen, with his telepathy ability he got in contact with Pultra, but before he did, a question had been asked.

"It's nice to see you, how are you doing?" Luce asked.

'Pultra, there's someone here right now!' The Sil clone said. 'I'm going to relay the question to you, and then you just need to say what you want me to say back.'

The Sil clone did just that as Pultra understood, but based on the first question, she thought it was a little strange.

'How am I doing?' Pultra replied. 'The guards have never asked me something like that. If they were worried about the escape wouldn't they just ask if I had seen anything. Sil, can you describe what this person looks like? In the meantime, just say this....'

"What do you expect?" Sil replied. "A life down here, is it something you would enjoy?"

After repeating the lines, Sil immediately went to describe the person in front of him, and the worrying look on Pultra's face inside the cave started to sink more.

"Is something wrong?" Shinto asked, noticing a shift in the air. The Champions, although unable to control the red mist energy in the air, their powers were strong enough that it would react to emotion as well.

"The clone that Sil left behind in my place, it appears that Luce has arrived." Pultra said.

Both of the Champions gulped as they heard this. Although many of the demon kings had come into existence after Immortui had bested and beaten them all. There were two demon kings that were by Immortui's side at the time.

They had not taken part in the fight, but the fact that they were treated even above the other regular demon kings, mostly going wherever Immortui went, the power that they imagined they held was frightening.

"Wait, he's in front of the Pultra, doesn't that mean Luce is on this planet as well. There are two demon kings!" Calva stated.

The group that had left, they certainly were strong. One demon king might be difficult, but two, and one of the stronger ones at that. They were starting to wonder if they should have gone along with the others.

"You now need to buy time as well, Pultra." Calva suggested. "Long enough for them to defeat Bisha before Luce gets involved. If we play this right, we might be able to get the blood of two."

Pultra nodded, as she closed her eyes to focus talking to the Sil clone.

"There seems to be a lot of disturbance in our world." Luce went on. "And they have met with a few of the champions all over. Calva has been freed and is nowhere to be seen. Shinto, he was nearly convinced to join them.

"If we are following their patterns, it would also mean that they would have come to you, correct. So I'm here to ask, has anyone appeared in front of you?"

Pultra smiled and went back toward the tree, sitting down as if there was no bother as she gave her answer.

"What do you mean exactly? There have been many Yaks and you have just appeared in front of me. Are you really asking silly questions right now?" Pultra asked.

Although working under Immortui, the champions always had a distaste for working for them. Which is why whenever they could, they would attempt to try and bad mouth the others in such a way, which was Pultra was acting the way she was now.

"You know what I mean." Luce said, as he lifted a single hand, white bright light started to gather. It wasn't glowing like that of celestial energy. Instead it looked blank and was swirling in his palm like paint. "Now is not the time to play dumb, has anyone out of the ordinary come to visit you, recently?"

Giving a slight pause while looking at the attack, Pultra answered.

"No, otherwise why would I still be here?"

"That's exactly what I thought." Luce replied, and moved his hand out. The attack left his hand hitting Pultra's body. When it did, it expanded covering the entirety of Pultra's body before absorbing it in, turning into nothing but a white mark that was now laid out on the floor.

"That... wasn't the real Pultra, as I thought. We've been tricked." Luce thought.

He could tell the flow of energy around the area was different from the last time he had been here. The reason why his search was difficult was because he couldn't feel the additional energy that was given off from Pultra when being used to grow things in the area.

Although the one in front of him looked exactly like Pultra and sounded like her, there was no energy being given off from her body and being absorbed to the things around them.

"This means there really could be trouble at the production facility." Luce said. "It looks like I chose the wrong place."

Chapter 2479: The Yak Demon Bisha

The group were ready, they were ready to head to the golden temple and face one of the demon kings, the goal was to go all out from the beginning and that way it would give the chance for Russ to do what Sil would have done.

What they didn't expect was for the demon king to suddenly appear where they were. For him to land right on the very ship that the group was on. The demon king himself had no idea they were here, but it only took a single look to know that they were intruders.

"Everyone, it's now or never, fight!" Hikel shouted. The marking on his body started to glow and blood aura swirled around his body forming some type of ball.

The blood aura was spinning, but then it came out like a barrage of large blood swipes and right toward Bisha. The attacks had landed clean on his body and when they did they all exploded at once creating a big dust of explosion.

Russ, seeing this as an opportunity, decided to use Sil's teleportation power. He disappeared and reappeared right by Bisha's behind.

'I don't really know how Sil's power works, so I hope it will be okay!' Russ thought as he reached out, but his hand had been stopped. It was inches away from Bisha's skin, but he was unable to touch it.

Russ had then transformed his arm into that of the powerful Dalki, changing its shape and size and tried to push, but it wasn't working at all.

'What is this that's on his body?' Russ thought.

On a closer look, there was a mist of red that had surrounded Russ' palm. It had actually condensed nearly all around Bisha's body. It was the red mist in the air. The cloud of explosion had disappeared, and Bisha was there with a large smile on his face.

"Haha, that kinda hurt a little, I guess there is a reason why Immortui was a little afraid of you!" Bisha shouted.

With his shout, the red energy in the air, and near his body was pouring out. It hit everyone in the area like a wave, and started to push them away. The one that was most affected by this was none other than Russ.

He had been pushed further and further away, until he was several metres away. Using his teleportation powers, he shifted in closer again but the closer he got to this power the more it was hurting him as well.

It was affecting his mind, hurting it. With his other arm free, Russ started to cover himself with the well known shadow power, the power that was known to block nearly anything.

The shadow had managed to shield him from the headache that he had, but he was still being pushed away by the red energy.

"I see, one of you is trying something right? Well, I won't be stupid enough to let you get your way!"

Bisha raised his hand in the air, and the mist had gathered. Red ball of mist had surrounded his hand, an orb of energy, then Bisha swung it out, aiming straight for Russ.

'A physical attack? Even if I use the black sword right here, it won't be able to block this!' Russ thought.

An opponent that was mostly physical in strength, it was one of the harder types for him to go against. He could change his body to be physically stronger, but stronger than a demon king, his opponent, it was impossible, at least with the MC cell's he had. So he had to try to use a mixture of changing his physical body and powers, but even that would use up much of his MC cells.

Another attempt was made to teleport away, but when he did, Russ could feel his body being sucked into where the red energy of Bisha's fist was.

Several white coloured claw marks went through the air, and bashed into Bisha's fist. It had stopped the motion of the fist for a few seconds, and soon after an explosive sound was heard as a red coloured werewolf had kicked off a Qi platform he had created in the air.

Slowing down the fist, Chris had arrived and with the strength in both of his arms, he knocked into the fist head on. An explosive power of Qi surged out of his claws and the fist was knocked away, even breaking the red energy.

'I am stronger... I am stronger than before. We can do this, with everyone here, we can do this! We don't need to rely on Russ' mind changing power!'

Chris wasn't the only one that had thought this. Hikel had already landed on the other arm of the giant Yak, and was running up the side of it. His entire arms were glowing, and he quickly ran right past the Yak's neck.

With his arm he made a giant slashing motion, and the red blood aura lingered in the air, cutting through his neck, and part of the blood having managed to get inside, it was time for the explosions.

A huge explosion went right off in the Yak's neck, on the cut that had been made. It startled Bisha as blood and pain was felt in his body. Something he hadn't experienced in a long time.

His head was thrown to the side, but that wasn't the end of the punishment. An opportunity arose as he stumbled, he had lifted his leg slightly and down below there was one more. A person who had great strength in his fists.

Peter had transformed into his celestial mode, and summoned the two head tails from the top of his head. Both of them had wrapped around his arms drawing all the power from within, and right on the demon king's ankle, he punched with all his might.

The flesh vibrated as the attack hit with explosive energy and it wasn't just one hit. Peter continued to punch again and again.

"ARGHHH! We need to hurry, and save Quinn!" Peter shouted as he continued to hit the Yak.

Now, as he was toppling over, each of them decided to participate. Chris was throwing his claws as much as possible. Hikel with his blood arua, and Russ had even gathered lightning and fire to blast at the Bisha.

"We are not weak!" Chris shouted at the top of his lungs, as he continued to throw energy claw after claw at Bisha. They didn't stop, they could tell they were close, with all of them they could do it, before Immortui found out.

"Oh, you're not weak, you said." A voice was heard from Chris' right side. As he turned his head he could see a figure floating in the sky wearing white clothing. "I shall be the judge of that."

Luce, Immortui's right hand man, had arrived.

Chapter 2480: The Light Demon Luce

The others were extremely focused on just defeating the demon king in front of them as quickly as possible, but they hadn't noticed the floating object that had come from above. Luce had appeared not too long ago, but enough to witness the strength of many of them.

He started to float down at that moment, heading in between the center of all of them.

'If they continue at this rate, they might really do something to Bisha,' Luce thought.

"You're not weak?" Luce said. "I shall be the judge of that."

Chris turned his head to see who was close to him and could see the figure in complete white. Not only that, but the red mist energy was condensed around him.

'I didn't smell him near me, how did he get here?' Chris thought. A dreaded feeling was overcoming him. Who could suddenly appear and not be afraid in the middle of this situation? Not only that, but on this world so far, Chris had only seen Yaks.

The only other thing that was on the planet, that wasn't a Yak, was a champion, and all of the champions were with them, so who was this?

A white-colored liquid started to swirl around both of Luce's arms, and for a moment, Chris had stopped his attack. He needed to focus on the person who was by his side. When he turned his head to have a look, though, he noticed that another person had already acted.

His two large gauntlet fists swung, hitting Luce and sending him straight to the ground beneath, cracking and breaking it.

"Did he just not see me or something?" Edvard said. "That guy landed right by my side, but he was just focused on you. I guess my luck is working a bit after all."

The hit that Edvard produced was extraordinarily powerful, as a pulsating energy was sent from the back of the armor, through his chest piece, and sent right down to his arms. It gave him a burst of unnatural energy that came out of his fists when slammed.

This was one of the traits of the armor when someone other than Ray was wearing it. It gave the user great power.

"What's going on!" Hikel shouted, stopping his attacks as well. He had heard the sudden loud explosion and looked to the ground where he could see a person still standing.

"He's still okay?" Edvard was surprised because he was more than okay; he was standing as if he hadn't been hit at all. In fact, the glowing energy was still swirling out of his arms.

"Connect," Luce said.

Out from his hands, the energy swirled out and was now moving through the air. It wasn't just one but several of them, and as they went through the air, they were leaving a trail of white behind.

Each ball of energy seemed to be going after different individuals. The first two that attempted to do something about the energy were Hikel and Chris.

Hikel used his blood aura, attacking the white energy and exploding it with his blood, but the ball went right through the smoke, and as it did, the energy covered up whatever blood aura was left in the background.

Instead of attacking it, Hikel then tried to move out of the way, but it was following him everywhere he went. Chris had done the same, swinging his swipes through the air, but when it hit the white ball that was going after him, it had done nothing as well.

The two of them decided to avoid the attack by moving out of the way, but it was following them, and as it did, the trail was staying permanently in the air.

"We can't get rid of this thing!" Chris shouted.

As he was jumping from Qi platform to Qi platform, Chris soon found that there was a white line of energy in the air that was permanently in front of him. If he didn't do something, he would crash right through it.

Lifting his hand and gathering all of his power, he swiped through the white energy, but the second his claw touched it, Chris felt like he was frozen. Immediately, the white orb that had been chasing him, as well as the rest of the stream of white that had been made, went at the speed of light and attacked him from all sides, hitting his body constantly, pounding it several times again and again. The pain was great and internal.

"ARGHHH!" Chris screamed at the top of his lungs.

The others were still avoiding the white energy, and now, seeing what had happened to him, they knew it wasn't going to be a good sign for them to touch it. That was all but one.

After seeing what happened, one had made the swift decision. Pulling out the black sword, Russ swiped right through the energy. In the same way as when Chris had touched just a part of it, the whole attack had hit him. When Russ had touched just

a part of it with his sword, the whole attack had disappeared, and it wasn't just the ones that were following him; it made all of the others disappear as well.

Chris had been freed from his attack, and he quickly created Qi platforms to kick off and escape from the area. The whole group had landed back on one of the other large ships that hadn't tilted. When they had regrouped, they could see that the Yak was getting back up.

He was full of cuts on his body and wounds, but none of them looked deep enough. Not only that, but the tusks on his mouth even looked to have grown larger in size compared to before.

"Alright, I think this guy is a bit annoyed about what we did," Edvard said. "And if I have to guess, that other guy in white, I think he might be a demon king as well."

"It's going to be hard for us to fight both of them at the same time," Hikel said.

"Yeah, and that other guy, I don't think I'm a good match up for him," Chris replied.

"Well, what a surprise, because I don't think I'm a good match up with that giant as well," Russ commented. "Let's split and deal with them both."

The group nodded, and jumping off to the side were Russ, Peter, and Hikel. Hikel had decided to go for the man in white because he felt like he was more trouble. He had asked Peter to come along with them because there was a chance they needed one of the two powerhouses.

The moment they jumped off, it was now just Chris and Edvard again, looking at the Yak. With a smoke of anger coming out of its mouth, it had jumped toward the ship it had originally landed on from before.

With its two large arms, it lifted it from the ground, breaking off the dirt from beneath, and now was carrying the giant object that was around fifty times the size of the giant itself, over its head with its arms.

"Don't tell me, he's going to smash that thing on us?" Edvard asked.

At that moment, the Yak demon king swung down the giant ship, aiming right for the two of them.

Chapter 2481: Saying Goodbye, for the last time.

A giant battle had taken place inside the mist, and it was hard to fully see what was going on. When all of the figures were condensed in one area, the mist seemed to move away from them, but now fighting was going on all over the place.

Just as Arthur said, they weren't the only ones that wished to help Quinn. There were plenty of those among them that now saw a chance to fight back against the others. Arthur, Leo, and Erin were doing the most damage.

As Arthur was blocking the majority of the attacks with his shadow, rather than focusing on the big enemies, he was going for mass destruction. Leo was doing a similar thing; with his power, he could sense those who were weaker.

Seeing all of this, it did make Quinn wonder if, since the others were disappearing, it meant Arthur, Leo, Erin, and the rest were taking the pain that he was meant to take. With each kill, each touch, were they going through their pain again?

Watching closely, from the looks of things, it certainly seemed that way. For one, Erin had slammed her large sword down, creating an ice tunnel that trapped a large group. She then swung her sword again, and a large line of yellow Aura had come out, slashing a lot of enemies and killing them in one go. It was a testament to how much stronger Erin had gotten compared to the past enemies they had gone against before, but in that moment, Quinn could see it - there was a twinge on her face.

'These guys, these idiots!' Quinn thought. 'I thought as much, they are suffering, all of them are just holding in the pain. They don't want me to see what they're going through. I have to do my part as well!'

Quinn ran towards the mist and immediately pulled the shoulder of a human figure. The first thing he did was throw a punch, landing square on the man's face. A flash of memories and the pain he went through entered him. When he landed on the floor, Quinn quickly got on top of him and placed both hands by the side of his head.

He took in all of the pain, as much as he could, as quickly as he could. The body was starting to disappear and eventually was gone. Ignoring the aching pain in his head, just like all the others had, Quinn continued to run and dived straight into the others.

The group was continuing to face off again and again, and surprisingly the one that was keeping the Cursed faction together, the other members such as Linda, Wevil, and Dennis, it was Arthur; he was using his shadow to make them survive.

In the middle of it all, Quinn had decided to help the group in a major way. He decided to face Graham once again. It was easy to spot his large Dalki body.

"Come on, hit me all you like!" Quinn shouted.

Surprisingly though, Graham didn't hit him, and just walked over to where Quinn was.

"I was the one who already lost that fight," Graham said. "Your friend, your mentor, he is right. Harming you would change nothing. It is pointless."

With those words, Graham touched Quinn, and allowed his final moments to pass through him. What was quite a surprise was the level of emotional pain. For Graham, it wasn't too grand.

There was a slight regret of not reaching the top, but that was it. The Dalki, even the leader, were more simple than he thought.

With Graham out of the way, it finally came down to the final two, Bryce and Cindy.

"How!" Bryce shouted. "How are the two of you so much stronger than us!"

"Did you forget?" Arthur said. "I was always stronger than you. You just had that annoying blood control when you became king and Queen, and besides, I have some incredibly strong allies by my side right now."

Leo was also equally as impressive, having improved beyond that of the vampire leaders. He could have even taken Bryce on his own.

Not wishing to bring any pain onto Quinn, Arthur was the one that delivered two fists to the two's heads, finishing them off.

Finally, it seemed like there was no one around, only members of the Cursed faction remained.

"Now, it's our turn," Arthur said with a smile on his face.

However, Quinn wasn't in a hurry to touch them. He glanced at the ground, studying their faces.

"Honestly, I wish I could stay in here a bit longer," Quinn said. "I would love to talk to you all because this will be the last time I ever see you again. Nearly all of you, I never got to say proper goodbyes to."

"We understand, Quinn," Arthur said. "I can see that you defeated the Dalki I was worried about, but for you and us to be here, I imagine the enemy you are facing now is beyond our imagination. Don't waste your time on us, who are your past. Focus on the present and the future."

Before Quinn could respond, they all approached him and embraced him. Their memories flashed through their heads, and he felt it all, as well as their pain when they died. But almost all of them had something in common.

"Thank you, Quinn... thank you for being our friend..."

Tears welled up in Quinn's eyes, and he couldn't stop them from falling down his cheeks as they disappeared one by one.

"You idiots, all of you. Why, in your final moments, did you think of me? How can I forget about my past? How can I forget about any of you when you guys are still thinking of me?"

He fell to his knees, overwhelmed by emotions, but this time, it was his own emotions, not theirs. He perhaps felt the strongest regret, for never being able to help the Cursed faction, the people who had supported him through everything.

"It's finally my turn, Quinn," Arthur said. "You have grown into a strong, brave man. I can't even call you a kid now, based on your appearance."

Quinn didn't reply and instead wiped away the tears from his face as he looked at Arthur.

"Quinn, you are the one who needs to do it. You are the one who needs to end the cycle," Arthur said.

"End the cycle? What do you mean?" Quinn asked.

"The cycle of problems, the cycle of war, the battles that continue on and on. End the cycle of death that you carry with you. Otherwise, you will have to experience the same thing over and over. You are the one who is torturing yourself. It's time to rest, just like it was for me."

Arthur touched the top of Quinn's head, not allowing Quinn to reply. With his emotions and pain being transferred, that was the last one. The mist started to swirl, and Quinn's own body started to disappear.

Outside, in the real world, Quinn's eyes opened wide.

"He... he's awake!" Pultra shouted.

Chapter 2482: Keeping a Secret

Opening his eyes, the first thing Quinn was able to see was a long-headed figure staring at him with large eyes. It was clear as day they weren't human, and the last thing he could remember when he was in the outside world was being captured by Immortui.

Taking a quick look around, he seemed to be in a cave of sorts, and Immortui himself didn't appear to be there.

"A chance!" Quinn stated. He lifted up from his seat and grabbed Pultra right by the neck. He then pushed off from the table-like structure that he had been lying on and grabbed straight around Pultra's neck.

He pushed her until her back banged against the wall, and suddenly Quinn's back, there were several blood swords that hovered in a circle, all pointed toward her.

"Quinn, wait!" Anon shouted. "She's on our side, she's here to help."

The voice was recognizable, but just in case, Quinn pushed all of the red blood swords forward, so they were pressing against her skin, and turned around. That's when he could see the familiar Skully, the one that he had helped and saved that was in his shadow.

Pultra stayed absolutely still, worried that if she made any type of movement, it was quite possible that she could lose her life.

'What happened, how did he move so fast? I couldn't even attack back,' Pultra thought. 'And these swords he created, it only took a moment, and each one of them is filled with strong energy. It feels similar to the demon energy, but one thing is clear... he is certainly strong.'

After the Skullys had pleaded with them, Calva had approached him as well. "She is one of us," Calva said, pointing toward himself. "A lot has happened during your slumber, but I decided to get help with the task you gave us."

Seeing how there were only so few in the cave, and all three of the Skullys were fine, Quinn had concluded it was most likely that they were telling the truth. Why would Immortui even keep them in a place like this to begin with?

"I'm sorry," Quinn said, as he retracted his blood aura. "After what happened, I was a bit on edge. So what happened? How did you manage to escape and get me away from Immortui?"

The three looked at each other for a moment and started to recollect something they had talked about before Quinn's waking up. It was whether or not they told him the truth or not.

For one, the Champions were unsure if Quinn was strong enough to defeat Immortui. So one of the things they wanted to do was to train Quinn. With all of their strength and battles having faced him, they would put him through the harshest training they could think of to give him the best chance of beating Immortui.

The conversation had actually occurred while Sil and the others were still there as well, and they understood their sentiments well, especially after explaining what had happened in their battles.

However, they had informed them that if it was the case, that Quinn would never agree to it if he knew what the others were doing. If he found out about the fact that the others were going up against the Demon Kings, or Sil against Immortui, then he would try to be there in a heartbeat.

If they truly thought that training Quinn gave them the best chance of beating Immortui, it was best they keep it from him that they had arrived in this world. At the moment, he had no clue the others were there.

Not only that, but if he was to join the fight, there was no doubt that Immortui would turn up like he had done at the last one.

"It was thanks to Shinto," Calva said. "Immortui had trapped you in his base, and Shinto, another one of the Champions, had been placed as the guard. When I found this out, I managed to convince him to change sides and bring him over to us."

"Honestly, Quinn, the task that you gave me was a hard one, which is why I went on searching for the other Champions, and now that the three of us are here, we can help you."

The story sounded plausible, so Quinn didn't think anything of it. If anything, if they had told him his friends were here, he would find it harder to believe.

"So, do you know where the Demon Kings are, so we can get their blood?" Quinn asked.

He was getting straight to the point, which the others were surprised about. After everything he had been through, he wanted to get up and get back to fighting. According to Pultra, she thought that they might even need to convince Quinn to try and fight against Immortui again.

"Quinn, about that," Calva said. "The truth is, we wish to train you. Each one of us has fought against Immortui in the past. We believe with our help, you could learn a lot from us if you face him again."

"Not only that, but the training will allow you the time you need to still recover and the strength to even go against the Demon Kings to get their blood. We have been

working hard, and there are those on our side that are helping. We even managed to get you the blood of a Demon General."

Looking at his system, Quinn could see that the quest had been updated. [3/5 General Demons blood]

It proved that what they had said was no lie, and while checking out his system, he noticed something else as well. Quinn's armour, it still was broken and had yet to heal. On top of that, his demon form hadn't come back yet either.

'Without my God Slayer armour and the demon form, will I even be strong enough to fight the Demon Kings, never mind Immortui? Maybe training with those that have faced him isn't such a bad idea while I wait for these two things to recover.'

It felt a bit strange putting these strangers he had hardly met in a position like so, to help him out, but meeting the Skullys, Quinn understood their position well because it was quite similar to their own.

And, he didn't want to just sit around and do nothing. That would only make him restless.

"Alright," Quinn said. "I'll do it. I'll take on your training, but it better be worth my time. I won't be holding back, and if I see no point, I won't be wasting my time."

The Champions' plan had seemed to work, and the group was preparing to train Quinn. Meanwhile, he was none the wiser about his teammates who had arrived to help him, each one of them being in a tough battle with their lives on the line.

Chapter 2483: Immortui's power

After witnessing Quinn being snatched right in front of his eyes, Immortui was filled with rage. He screamed into the air, and his colourless ability activated far and wide, spreading out and draining the colour from everything.

It continued to stretch out further and further through the universe, spreading far and wide. Where it was going, what it was aiming for, not even Immortui knew. With the way his power worked, if the colourless ability had managed to touch those that had interfered, it would stop them in their tracks.

However, Immortui wasn't receiving any signs of anything, and as his anger started to subside, so did his power. It reverted back into him, and he was left standing there for a moment, with his two snake-like dragon spirits hovering around the back of his shoulders.

He placed his hand on his face, and his shoulders started to shake up and down, until he swung his head back and broke out into a fit of laughter.

"HAHA! I can't believe it, right when I thought I had it all, something comes and sweeps me off once again! I see universe, you are testing me, right?"

"If I can't get through this, then I don't deserve to have the chance to go out on top!"

Right there and then, Immortui decided to sit on the ground. He did so with his knee lifted and his arm relaxing on top of it. This was his thinking position.

'For them to be able to come in so fast and leave quickly, it has to be a teleportation power of some kind,' Immortui thought. 'If it was them, they would have sent Mundus, and he would have dealt with the situation differently. Does that mean they are friends of Quinn? Ah yes, I saw him, didn't I, that damned Boneclaw. Did the Familiars end up betraying me?'

Immortui couldn't help but laugh to himself again.

'It's no worry; they were only a small part of my plan. But I wonder what they saw that managed to give them so much hope that they would switch sides.'

Not worrying about that for now, Immortui needed to find Quinn. Due to the state he was in, he didn't think he would have the chance to escape anytime soon. This allowed him to have a calmer mind when thinking about what to do.

And in a lot of ways, this was worse for his enemies. If Immortui wasn't calm, he would have gone chasing straight after Quinn, just trying to find him wherever he could, hopping from place to place.

Instead, he chose a different method. As Immortui took in deep breaths, the red mist was entering his nose, and he breathed out a few times again. Eventually, after some passing of time, the red mist in the whole area had stopped.

It no longer looked like mist, but around him, it looked just like glitter that was in the air. Just like the demons, Immortui was able to have control of the power in the air, but his control was on a far higher level.

'That took longer than I thought, but I can now connect with all of the red energy that's in this space' Immortui then closed his eyes as he started to focus.

'The red energy, the energy that seeps into this universe from the land of the dead. With my powers, I am quite closely connected to that place as well, which is why I can sense this energy better than most.'

'For every being that comes or is born into this world, they breathe in this energy into their bodies. It is inside them and has become a part of them, whether they realize it or not. It is what causes them to go mad, fighting each other for petty reasons, because the red energy only wants one thing, to bring people closer to death.'

'The inhabitants of this world have been affected by it. Little do they know that this red mist is actually my power to begin with.'

For all the local inhabitants that were alive, they had always known about the red mist that lingered in the air. They thought it had always been there, and to them, the threat of Immortui and his demons was something that had come along later.

The truth was, in his first war against the celestials, he had been greatly injured before being banished to this space. So he stayed put, doing next to nothing, apart from releasing his power all over the universe.

As his power infected the natural inhabitants, it caused them to get irritated and fight for next to no reasons, believing it was due to them wishing to be the strongest, more deaths were occurring, boosting Immortui's powers.

After thousands of years, with his powers somewhat regained, Immortui had come to strike back and fought against the Champions.

This was why the local inhabitants believed the red mist always existed, and Immortui's incident was something that had happened later.

As time went on, Immortui's power had spread out everywhere, far too thick that even he didn't feel like he had control of it. Which was why he had to close his eyes and focus, trying to feel out every part of his energy.

'Those that have been here will have a large amount of red energy in their body; those that are new will have a small amount. All I will do is find all of those with next to no red energy in their body and take them out one by one.'

Closing his eyes again, he started to focus. The universe was large; his power was large, so it would take some time. He had finally found what he was looking for.

Standing up on his two feet, Immortui started to gather the energy around his body. The red energy condensed around him, turning into a red glow, just like with the other demons.

'If I use my powers around me and around this space, I can move faster in the direction I want to go in.'

Jumping off, it appeared as if Immortui almost vanished. Using his powers as a form of travel was a great way to get from A to B, but it wasn't something he could do in a fight since it took a lot of focus.

Following it through, a few minutes later, on a barren planet that looked like a moon, as the ground was covered in grey, Immortui had found a person that didn't belong.

"I found you!" Immortui said, immediately activating his colourless power. He didn't want the person to escape. As the colourless power hit the person, they slowly started to fade, until they had turned into nothing.

'If it disappeared like that... it means it's not the real one. It has to be one of their powers. No matter, I will eventually find the one I'm looking for,' Immortui thought, condensing the red energy around him again, and jumping, heading to the next destination.

Immortui was coming after them, and if he needed to do it one at a time, then so be it.

Chapter 2484: Immortui Vs Sil

Using his fast travel technique, with his red energy surrounding him, Immortui was able to move from area to area pretty fast. He needed to focus for a few moments to speed up as well as search for those with little energy in their body, but when he found them, he crashed on those planets and always saw the same person in front of him.

"I see," Immortui said, as he lifted his hand and activated his colourless power, which touched the Sil clone, causing their body to disappear after a few moments. "This person is able to make copies of themselves and is distracting me, buying time, but I will soon find the real one, and there is a chance that I will find the real one."

Immortui went from one planet to the next, and eventually crashed on a planet that looked to be made entirely of ice. However, it wasn't ice; the material was far harder, more like diamonds.

Most of the surface was relatively flat, with platforms here and there. There weren't giant caverns or giant ice shards sticking out from the ground, just different levels of areas here and there.

Standing on the ground looking up at Immortui, the clone did nothing, as if it was there just to accept its fate, unlike the last few he had met, who had attempted to teleport or run away.

However, Immortui, before reaching the planet, would have already activated part of his colourless power, stopping that from happening the moment he appeared. This clone, as its body was disappearing, looked Immortui straight in the eye.

"Are you no longer worried by your deaths? We will see how you feel when I meet the real one of you," Immortui said.

The body completely disappeared, and the colourless power was retracted back into Immortui. His colourless power also affected the red energy in the air, so he was unable to use one power while using the other.

Finishing his retraction, he was getting ready to move to the next area. He was trying to sense where the others were, but he soon opened his eyes.

'Wait a moment, why are so many of them suddenly close?'

Right in front of him, after finishing that thought, around ninety different Sils had teleported right in front of him. Immediately, all of them gathered lightning and fire in their hands and fired it right at Immortui.

Meanwhile, the real Sil had arrived as well, staying a little further back than the rest. Condensed lightning bolt was being held in his hands, while the rest of his arm was completely blue.

'With how quickly the Sils were getting destroyed, I knew you must have had some way to travel fast between them all and a way to locate them. Because of that, it was too dangerous to leave you be, in case you find the others.'

Swinging with his arm, Sil hurled the lightning bolt, which made a thunderous noise as it left his hands and smashed right toward the centre where Immortui was. It was a strong, successful hit, and along with all of the other clones, there weren't going to be many that could withstand this. But if this was enough to defeat Immortui, then he wouldn't have been considered a grand threat.

'I have the foresight ability. I can see it. If I just let all the clones continue on like this, then all of them are going to be killed.'

The moment the attacks had started to surround all of his body, the strange clothing he wore that appeared to grow out of his skin and had a pair of eyes around his waist crawled up nearly the entirety of his body, covering him from head to toe. The eyes around his waist then looked to be glowing red around his chest instead.

The fire and lightning all looked to be just bouncing off him. Throwing out his hand, the snake-like dragon had wrapped around it, and the explosive red power attack was launched. It had ignited nearly the entire space where the fist had been thrown, too fast for the Sils to avoid, killing ten percent of them. In its place, there was a large imprint on the planet's flowing surface covered in scales, and around 10 percent of the clones had been defeated.

'None of the clones currently have the foresight ability. I gave them teleportation, two elemental abilities, telepathy, and hardening so they could survive a little longer, but the hardening was unable to do anything with that attack.'

"But I can still change my own powers!" Sil grabbed the book; it glowed for a few moments and he pulled out a golden sword. When he landed on the floor, the rest of the Sils teleported to the side, still with their abilities in their hand. Next, he activated his super speed ability and swung the sword, hitting Immortui right across his chest. The armour seemed to split off from where the cut was made and swirled about in the air slightly. Seeing what Immortui was going to do next, Sil quickly moved out of the way.

A large red portal was created from above where they were, and when Immortui punched down, a large fist came pounding from the top but hit the planet's floor, crushing it to pieces.

'Things are going well so far. It's a good thing the champions told me about Immortui's many powers,' Sil thought, recalling the conversations he had with them.

The strange substance that looked like armour on his legs could extend out to his whole body. This armour seemed able to block out energy-type attacks, including things like lightning, but if they were hit physically, attacks would get through. On top of that, Immortui had the red mist power that he could control. In a lot of ways, this worked like blood aura, which meant this power was the most versatile in the way it could be used. The way Immortui liked to use the power, though, was forming large portals, and when he struck, in the same place the portal opened, a giant fist of power would strike as well. One of his most powerful forms of attack, though, was the two dragons that hovered above his shoulders. They could sometimes act on their own if one got too close to Immortui, but if combined with his fists, they would be able to deliver an earth-shattering blow. Finally, there was the colourless power.

At that moment, Immortui raised his hand, but when he did, all of the clone Sils by the side started to fire away their powers, hitting Immortui. His hand had lowered, and the armour started to raise on his body again. The colourless ability, if he was hit, he was unable to activate it. With all of these powers, Immortui had the strength to beat nearly anyone in a fight, but he had never gone against someone like Sil before.

Sil could very well be Immortui's natural enemy with all of his powers.

Chapter 2485: Preparing for the Finale

The champions wasted no time moving from the cave, and they had brought along with them the three Skullys. Two of them on one side of Calva's shoulder and another on the other side.

Below the mountain they were in, there was the forest that led out and displayed the beautiful scenery that stretched far and wide, but they didn't head that way. Instead they were running in the opposite direction.

The planet itself was also gigantic, much like all the objects and plant life that lived on it, but with such a large planet there would also be pockets of area that had nothing but bare land on it as well. Only these pockets would be equivalent to an entire continent back on earth.

"I can hear the sound of fighting, and energies colliding behind us. Is something going on here?" Quinn asked.

"It's the norm of our world." Pultra replied. "The inhabitants fight every day over the smallest of things, and there are times when they even have had enough of the demons that are in an attempt to control them. We have to ignore what is going on for the bigger goal."

The group were so far away, yet Quinn could feel the vibrations through the ground. He could only imagine the scale of the fight that was happening right now. He knew Pultra was right though, they had more important things to worry about.

The group had reached their destination. It had grey coloured ground, an area that looked like a giant wasteland, only with grey paved rocks that spread all over the place. As far as Quinn could see, there was no sign of life, be that insects or plants.

"This will be our training ground, this land spans like this for miles on end. We can fight to our heart's content without anything getting in the way." Pultra explained. "Out here as well, there is nothing that the demons want so there is nothing close by."

Although Pultra said this, the vibrations could still be felt, they were subtle but even though they had travelled so far, he could still feel something happening on the planet.

Seeing that Quinn was reacting to something, Pultra cleared her throat, and the Skullys were placed on the ground as Shinto, Calva and Pultra lined up next to each other.

"The three of us were named the Champions because we were considered the strongest in this entire universe." Pultra explained. "Immortui knew that, he knew

the titles we had which was why he wanted to break the hope of the people down immediately by taking us out first.

"He had overwhelming strength, but we didn't just give up, each one of us fought against him to the best of our abilities. I have perhaps experienced the same thing you went through, did you go into the misty fog?"

The mention of the fog, Quinn knew exactly what Pultra was referring to, so he knew that her words weren't baseless lies now.

"At the time, each of us fought him one on one, and through speaking to each other we realised something. Each of our experiences when fighting Immortui were completely different, and it might be the same for you as well. Do you remember what happened?"

Quinn went on to explain to the other's his fight with Immortui. Calva had seen some of it, but he had also been stored in the Shadow space for the later half. Calva also made it an important point that he had just defeated one of the Demon kings and had gone straight to facing Immortui.

Stating that Quinn was unable to use everything he had against his opponent.

"I see, he seemed to have used his colourless power close to from the get go. That is not the same as our experience. We have found that Immortui has multiple different strengths and powers that he can use to fight."

"Which is why we think, if you were to face all three of us at the same time, it would be similar to going up against him."

Quinn didn't know if the Champions were really that strong or they were simply overestimating themselves. He had yet to truly see any of them fighting properly, not while he was conscious anyway.

He just had Anon's words about how much power they wielded. Either way, there was something that might push Quinn out to allow him to grow from this, the fact that he didn't have his god slayer armour set. Battling without it would improve him for when he battled with it. So while he was waiting for its repair, this was at least something he could do.

"Alright, let's not waste any more time." Quinn's eyes started glowing red. "From now on, I will treat it like I'm going up against Immortui!"

On the same planet, a large distance away. Bisha, the Yak demon king, had lifted one of the giant ships right above his head. In his sights he had both Edvard and Chris in front of him.

Immediately he started to swing it down through the air. The object was so heavy and large that it was causing the red mist to be pushed upwards.

"I don't think we can run away from this, it's too large!" Edvard said.

The giant object was coming down too fast for them to either run to the left or right and avoid getting hit, but Chris was already one step ahead of him. His body was fully transformed, his legs were bent slightly.

As the giant ship came crashing down on him, he pushed up with both of his arms. Both of his feet sunk into the ground, and Edvard was doing his best to push it up as well.

"Huh, you're fighting back!" Bisha shouted, surprised to feel the amount of force being pushed by them.

"This is useless, we can't push it back, he's too strong!" Edvard said. "We have to do something or we're going to get smothered. Do you think you can hold on by yourself for a while!"

Chris was trying extremely hard to push the thing off, veins were exploding from his forearms running up to his hands.

Edvard decided to take that as a yes, as he bent down even further and left all of the weight and power to Chris. The giant ship descended a few inches for a moment, and then the entirety of Edvard's armour started to pulsate.

The armour glowed, going from the top of his head down to the bottom of his feet, as he sprung up with power, Edvard unleashed a punch right on the bottom of the ship. It exploded with such strength and tore a hole right through the giant thing from one side to the other.

'Crap!' Chris thought. 'I couldn't even put a scratch on this ship when my claws scratched against it, but Edvard was able to punch a hole through it... just how strong is that armour.'

"Come on, let's go!" Edvard said, as the two slipped and went through the hole that was made.

"Let's take down this Yak king, and maybe he'll be a nice meal for you." Edvard smiled.

Chapter 2486.1: Fight against the demon kings (Part 1)

Having rushed down to the ground below to chase after the man in white, what the group assumed was another demon king, they found themselves in a type of production area.

There were several giant tools, large mallets, working areas, melting pots and even giant crystals. It was the area where the Yaks used these tools to build the giant ships that were by their side.

They were at the very edge of one side of the large giant ships, and were looking straight ahead at the strange man in white.

"Remember, the only thing we actually need is his blood." Hikel commented.

"And how do you expect us to get something like that without killing him?" Peter replied back, still in his full celestial form.

"I'm going to have to agree with Peter on that one, it looks like our original plan of changing their memories isn't going to do so well." Russ was thinking back to when he had tried to touch the Yak king.

The red mist had condensed around the body, not allowing him to get close. Although a strong hit or a punch could get through and do damage, physically touching them just for a moment seemed quite impossible, unless they were dead of course.

Luce, the demon king, lifted his hands up and the several streaks of small white power came out from his hands. It looked the same as before, like a type of liquid rather than energy. It moved fast and it left behind a trail that lingered permanently in the air.

It moved around all of the large objects, through the small cracks and was heading for the group again.

Hikel went ahead, summoning his blood aura and fired it out toward Luce this time. He knew that his attacks were useless against this strange white power. However, the white dots moved to where the attacks were.

It had moved in a diagonal line and the attack crashed into it exploding on the spot. It did nothing, but it had blocked the attack and there was now a permanent diagonal white line in the air. It started to move in a zig zag shape and blocked the rest of the attacks in the same way, until what was left in the air was somewhat of a crudely drawn shield.

"This worked out before, so let's try it again!" Russ used his powers to first transform into that of the Penswi, he then rushed forward passing the main circular white light. Pulling out the sword from his side, his legs' transformation ended and he swung the sword down, touching the lingering white path that had been made.

When the sword touched one section of it, the entire attack had disappeared just like before.

'Although using this sword isn't too much of a problem in itself for me, it cancels out all my powers when I do use it.' Russ thought. 'If I summon anything, transform my body, or try to use any other powers, I can't with this sword.'

"I see, you are the most troublesome one, and the one I need to get rid of first." Luce declared.

Using his own power, and the power of the special armour that Edvard currently wore, he was able to make a large hole through the ship, from the bottom all the way to the top.

Chris quickly escaped through the hole along with Edvard, allowing the ship to crash to the ground, and the two of them quickly made their way to the top. It didn't take long for the Yak king, Bisha, to jump up from the ground and land on the ship again.

"I knew you two would still be alive!" Bisha shouted. "But now that some of you annoying little friends are being dealt with I can deal with the two of you."

Bisha slammed his foot onto the ground and a large chunk of it lifted into the air. The top of the ship seemed to be made of slightly different material compared to the hard substance that covered the outside.

The demon king then hurled the chunk, that was the size of a car, right at them. Sparks of fire were seen surrounding the object as it had been thrown so fast.

The first to react out of the two, was Edvard, as the armour pulsated through his body and he threw out a punch, not just a punch but one where his blood aura was mixed in with it. When his fist hit the object it was blasted with enormous power that ripped the object into several different sizes.

The armour gave one great power, but it took time for someone to know how to use it properly, a way where they could combine it with their own powers in order to deal the most damage, and Edvard was extremely capable of that, because he had practised with the armour a long time ago.

The vampire martial arts that the vampires were taught, a lot of it actually stemmed from the original, Edvard. The use of a blood punch, exploding the blood aura on impact, powerfully like a shotgun, all were developed by him.

Using this, combined with the armour effects, Edvard's punches were probably some of the strongest the universe had to offer. However, it couldn't be used in a simple physical way, such as the situation they were in not too long ago.

Chris had more strength, being able to stop the ship from crushing them. Holding it up on his own, was something Edvard wouldn't have been able to do.

Seeing the great power twice now, Chris was stunned.

'I thought, out of everyone here, that he was the weakest of the group. That I would have to look out and cover for him... but that might not be the case at all.'

Bisha continued to hurl objects one after the other at the two of them, and Edvard was hitting them one after the other, turning them into nothing.

"Hey, are you really just going to make me do all the work, what was the point of letting you go out and eat all of these guys if you were going to do nothing!" Edvard shouted behind him, but when he threw out his next punch he felt no impact; it had only hit the air.

He had just been punching along to the rhythm of the tosses, relying on his ability for a while now. When turning his head, he could see that a giant mast had been broken off, and was in the hands of Bisha.

It was already mid swing, and the giant mast slammed into the two's sides. Their bodies went flying off in the distance and even the mast had been let go out of Bisha's hands.

The two were far in the air, until they crashed on the ground a few times, eventually getting up.

"Crap, that kind of hurt a bit." Edvard said, looking at his armour, he was worried about it since it technically wasn't his, but there seemed to be no major damage to the thing. Chris had gotten up as well but now was looking at where they were.

"We were hit quite far away." Chris was trying to see if he could recognise anything but it almost felt like they were hit so far that they were in a different place altogether.

Looking at the ground work around him, he noticed the strange giant wave hardened structures, and where he had seen them before.

"This was the place where the Yaks were going. Where they were harvesting their materials from." Chris said.

It was a strange sight to see, the floor itself looked as if they were in a agent frozen sea, with large waves that would tower from side to side but none of it was moving.

Sure enough, as Edvard looked far off into the distance he could see the giant ships as well, but that wasn't the only thing they could see. Just like before, there was something that was drawing closer to them in the sky.

Before they knew it, it crashed and landed right in front of the two of them. Shaking the whole ground.

"Hey... is it just me, or does he look different from before?" Edvard noticed.

He was right, there was this strange red aura that was thick and covered the whole of Bisha's skin. The tusks that grew from the bottom of his mouth were now growing further upward to the point where it touched the top of his forehead.

On the Yak's skin itself, there were these strange swirling patterns that were on his chest as well.

"I'll kill both of you, for destroying my hard work!" Bisha exclaimed, now in his demon form.

Chapter 2487.2: Fight against the demon kings (Part 2)

The demon form of the demon kings, this was something that the Champions didn't even know too much about, but it was actually one's true form that each demon king had. As for the reason why they didn't just stay in that form all the time, it was due to the red energy in the air.

This was an order, and was forbidden, by Immortui himself. The full demon form would attract the red mist energy from all over, and he needed that to do its work, to do its thing, so the demons staying in their demon form for long periods of time would cause great problems for him.

Immediately after transforming, and now in front of the others, Bisha threw out his fist. He wasn't within range of the others, but the marking on his chest started to light up, and the red energy had gathered on top of his fist.

Exploding out of the air, heading towards them, it looked like a giant meteorite, this was far bigger than the objects that had been thrown from before, and looked a lot more powerful.

Not sure that, even with the armour, he would be able to take on the attack, Edvard moved out of the way, and Chris had done the same, transforming himself into his wolf form.

The large fist in the centre hit the ground and crushed everything in its path. The large giant waves that towered above them started to break and crumble, falling off bit by bit and falling into the area of the attack, turning into nothing.

Eventually the attack started to grow smaller and smaller in size, turning into nothing, but had left a path of destruction.

While avoiding the attack, Chris ran in his wolf form, and decided to head straight to the demon king.

'I'm faster than I was before, and I'm stronger which means that I can hit harder!'

Moments before reaching Bisha, Chris' body started to transform, and he created a Qi platform in the air. Even though his feet could touch the ground he had noticed something, the ground was unable to contain his strength.

When pushing off the ground it would break in the process making him lose some of his force, but when he used his Qi to create a platform to push off from it wouldn't break, giving him that extra boost.

Pushing off, his body had transformed back into that of a full werewolf, covered in red fur and he swiped right through Bisha's skin. His claws cut up the ankle of the

leg. However, Chris' hand was small compared to Bisha's leg so it looked like nothing but a flesh wound.

'I know I'm still not strong enough to take him down with a punch, but if I put all the power into my claws, it can still rip into his skin!'

Chris didn't stop there, as he turned and continued to swipe, moving at an incredibly fast speed. Slashing with his claws, cutting at just the single foot of Bisha. It was almost a repeat of what Chris had done with his fight against Unzoku, only it was targeted to a single area this time rather than one's whole body.

Although they weren't large wounds, a tingling sensation could be felt in Bisha's foot and he knew if he didn't do something that it could cause him problems. Immediately, his fist lit up, and he went to throw a punch downward aiming for Chris.

With the power surging around the fist, the attack itself had turned enormous, nearly as big as when the ship was being used to attack them. The red energy all around was pushing downward along with the hand.

Regardless of this, Chris continued to attack at the leg, clawing it away, chucking off pieces of flesh to the side.

'He trusted me back then, so I will trust him now as well!' Chris thought.

The fist continued to come down, and from the side, Edvard had leapt up, he had both of his hands by his side. As the armour pulsated up from the toes, he threw out both of his hands, pulsating with power, it pushed the large arm to the side heavily.

Bisha's punch was thrown off course and nearly his whole balance as well. The fist had crashed into the ground, but it had done so next to Chris instead. The energy from the fist, had still hit him, crashing on top.

Covering his body with Qi, Chris gritted his teeth.

"ARGH!" he exclaimed, as he forcefully pushed, breaking out of the red mist. Immediately Chris powered through and went straight for the same foot again.

Bisha now was keeping an eye on the one that was able to produce such explosive power, and threw out his other hand releasing another meteorite of power. This was too close for Edvard to avoid, so he had no choice but to attempt to blast it back with his fist as well.

Throwing out an explosive punch, it hit the meteorite of energy but it didn't get pushed back, instead it was Edvard that was feeling the intense pain. Although the energy had entered inside him, on impact he felt a great pain on his whole body, causing blood to spew out of his mouth.

'F*ck this hurts!' Edvard thought.

With his other fist ready, he punched the meteorite power again, his feet were skidding across the ground now, but his arms and whole body was still being affected by the strange power.

Leaving one hand on the attack, he punched with his other fist, and then he would alternate doing this. He continued to punch and punch until it completely disappeared from his sight, breaking it apart.

"How... is someone like you still alive!" Bisha shouted

His attack, which destroyed everything in its path, had not destroyed this small figure. The blood had poured out of Edvard's mouth and was now on his armour. He couldn't imagine taking a direct hit from the demon in this form, but it was something he needed to do.

Running forward, Edvard leapt in the air, with his fist ready, and matching it, Bisha had thrown out his fist as well. The two were ready to collide, that was until a large snap sound was heard, and suddenly Bisha's fist fell to the side and was going off target.

He looked to the ground, and he hadn't even felt what had happened. The flesh on his foot, it had been torn off completely, to the point where only his bone could be seen. Seeing this. Chris still hadn't stopped there, he continued to attack, and eventually broke the bone as well.

"Don't stop there, X marks the spot!" Chris shouted, as he dug his claws into the giant and started to run up its body. Bisha was still in the middle of falling, but he was ready to stick his stump into the ground.

Chris felt extremely alive, his claws pulsating with power and his Qi raging in him. As he ran up Bisha's chest, he swung his arm, his claws ripped through the skin, but then a large claw strike appeared, cutting off the flesh on his chest.

Chris then repeated the same with the other hand, tearing off another claw mark, making a large X shape, and it was right where Bisha's heart was.

With the flesh torn off and the muscle, the heart could clearly be seen beating in Bisha, it was an open target.

"That's a pretty clear target." Edvard smiled, his arms pulsating as he threw a punch directly in the chest. The power exploded and just like with the outer of the ship, a large hole went right through, having burst Bisha's heart completely.

The second demon king had been defeated.

Chapter 2488.3: Fight against the Demon kings (Part 3)

Although it was quite far away in the distance, Luce could feel a massive amount of red mist energy disperse suddenly. It was condensing in one area, which could only mean that Bisha had decided it warranted the use of his demon form.

Once Luce felt this, he thought the fight would be over for the intruders, but that wasn't the case at all.

'Did Bisha die?' Luce thought. 'Had he gotten weak due to the situation he had been in? Unlike all the other demon kings that were constantly fighting for their own entertainment, Bisha had been placed in the production facility on his own.'

'Never using his powers at all, even the other Yaks didn't try to contest him for their position since they were production workers rather than fighters.'

'Naturally, over the course of thousands of years, there would be those of the same race that would rise in strength, challenging the top and trying to topple them, attempting to become the new demon king. This was also the case with the vampires, as strong ones came and went. This kept all of the current demon kings on their toes and always increasing their power. Perhaps it wasn't the same for Bisha due to his position.'

'Still, even with a weak Bisha, I can't discredit the others' strength. One would still have to be at least as strong as the champions if they were able to do that, and it seems some of these have a few tricks up their sleeves,' Luce thought, as he looked straight ahead at the three coming towards them.

Peter jumped in the air and, with a fist, he punched what looked like a giant hammer that was left on the ground. It went flying toward Luce. The palm of his hand lit up with strange white energy, and when the hammer reached him, he swung his arm out.

It hit the hammer and flung it across, hitting the side of one of the ships, making a loud bang before falling to the ground.

"This guy's powers are so strange and annoying!" Peter shouted, as he threw out a couple of fists of energy, leaving from his hands.

Hikel jumped up in the air and hurled blood aura swipes from above.

With both of his hands, Luce started to make circles with them, creating what looked like white-coloured shields that he held onto. Moving them, he blocked the attacks of Peter.

When the attacks hit the white shield, it just dispersed the energy into nothing. The attacks hadn't even pushed Luce back. With his other hand, Luce had quickly moved it to each of the blood swipes. These attacks, when hit, exploded, creating a dust cloud.

"Support me!" Peter shouted.

He rushed forward, kicking off from a giant rock, his head tail wrapped around his fist as he gathered his energy. As the smoke started to settle, Russ could be seen right by Luce's side; he had teleported there and swung his sword.

The white shield was lifted, but when the sword made contact, it disappeared. Throwing out his fist, Luce moved his head to the side, avoiding the blow. At the same time, the head tail swung from above, but with just his hand, Luce knocked it to the side, hitting it into the ground.

"Your sword has a strange power, but it's clear you are not a swordsman."

A strike was made with the sword, rather than placing it back in its sheath, but the demon king avoided it swiftly and with a glowing palm, he smashed it right into Russ's stomach, sending him flying in the same direction as the hammer.

Before he had crashed into it, Hikel had managed to rush over and catch him just in time. However, damage had been done; blood was coming out from Russ' mouth.

'We can't get through that strange white power without Russ using the sword, but at the same time, if Russ uses the sword, he's practically just a human. Any transformation he had or powers, just disappear.'

That wasn't all Hikel had to worry about because Luce had grabbed onto Peter's hand, and now the strange white liquid power was expanding, growing in size and had created an entire shell over Peter.

Peter swung his other hand, but it hit the white substance, unable to move like it was stuck in some kind of glue. He then used his two head tails to try to cut at it, but it was doing nothing and eventually it covered his entire body.

What looked like a giant white eggshell was now on the field, and there was no sign of Peter because he was in the egg itself.

"Now that's one of you dealt with, I will have to deal with you two and go see what's happened on the other side." Luce said.

The frightening power of one of the right-hand men of Immortui was being shown.

At the area where the land looked like giant frozen waves, Chris and Edvard were looking at the fallen giant on the ground. Edvard was still recovering; his insides

felt like they had been ripped apart, but he was just thankful that the armour was still in one piece.

When inspecting the giant, Edvard started to look at its foot; it had been ripped apart, torn bit by bit in every way possible. It was a gruesome sight.

For Chris, he was no longer in his red werewolf form, and he felt a little pain throughout his body. He had been in the form from the get-go, transforming to his strongest self from the start of the fight.

He had already been pushing it by staying in the same form for an incredibly long time.

"We just barely made it through this," Edvard said. "If we had to deal with two of the demon kings at the same time, we would have been done for."

With the strength he had, Chris leapt up on to the large Yak's body, and he was looking at its large size with his eyes.

"I know what you're thinking, do what you need to do!" Edvard said. "I'm out for the count for a while; I won't be able to help the others, but you, if you eat a demon king, your growth, you might be able to match up to them on your own."

The amount of energy gained from the general on its own, it was what allowed Chris to keep attacking without even taking a breath. It was something he wouldn't have been able to do before, but with this, would he become something else? Would his power be able to match Unzoku?

An item was flung from his side, and Chris managed to catch it with his hand on reflex; he noticed it well—it was one of the flasks that vampires would use.

"Don't go eating every part of him; remember, we need to get that blood for Quinn as well," Edvard commented. "That's two down and three more to go."

Taking the flask, Chris went to the hole in the chest. Due to the large body, it was quite easy to find a part that was leaking with fresh blood. After leaving it there for a while, the flask filled back up, and it was thrown back to Edvard, who was now sitting on the floor.

"All right, it's time," Chris said, as he transformed just the top of his head. His snout grew larger, and his hands started to transform as well. These two things made it a bit easier for him to eat.

Slashing a part of the flesh with his claw, he looked at it before proceeding to place it right into his stomach. As the first bite went down his throat and his body immediately started to digest it, he could feel it, the new power, the new energy surging through his body.

Edvard was watching everything carefully.

'Based on what I saw, I don't think the other demon king is going to be as easy as this one, and if more start to get involved... I can tell, my body, it's out for the count; I can't use the power of the armour anymore; I'll be pretty much useless for this whole thing.'

'So, Chris, you need to get stronger, so much stronger that you can take these guys without my help.'

Memories started to flash back in Edvard's head once again, and he couldn't help but chuckle at himself.

"I can't believe it, now of all times, I'm relying on the help of a werewolf. I guess we were the ones that were in the wrong in the end, huh, Gary."

Chapter 2489: Quinn Vs Sil?

Quinn was running at full speed through the wasteland. It was an open area, and there was nowhere for him to hide. Several large bone-shaped spikes started to come from the sky and were aimed directly at him.

Zigzagging his way through, Quinn avoided them all one by one, allowing them to pierce the ground. He avoided all of them as they came one after the other, but he wasn't planning on just running forever.

Another large bone-like spike came toward him. Timing it right, he turned around and managed to grab one of them. His eyes scanned the area quickly, eventually finding his target off in the distance.

'There you are,' Quinn saw Calva. The bones were being produced out of his back and were shooting up into the air. They then would somehow fall at great speed, all of them aiming perfectly where Quinn was.

He had tried to originally stop it with his red aura, creating a blood shield, or attacking back with his blood swords, but the strange bones were incredibly sharp and infused with energy that would just tear right through the attack.

The second time, he had tried to use his shadow; this had successfully blocked the attack, but just as he used his shadow, Pultra would seemingly appear out of nowhere, delivering a hefty kick to his side.

With the bone spear in his hand, he was ready to hurl it right at Calva, but once again, Pultra had appeared with her leg glowing with power.

'There she is again, does she have some type of invisibility, or is it a teleportation power, maybe she can just move that fast!'

Blood aura gathering in his hand, along with Qi, Quinn blasted the leg away, but at the same time, a large axe came swinging down in front of him, bursting with black flames.

'My shadow, it can't stop the black flames for some reason! This is proving to be a lot more difficult than I thought.'

Using the shadow lock on himself, Quinn disappeared, avoiding all of the hits, and when he came back, he burst with blood aura all around him, flinging it in all different directions, pushing the others out of the way.

The power was strong but not strong enough to injure them, and the spikes falling from above were enough to disrupt him once again.

Quinn decided to retreat, running again as he thought of a way to deal with the situation.

Pultra was watching everything very carefully, trying to evaluate the situation.

'He is faster and stronger than his friend and has a number of different powers. Of course, we are going all out here, unlike I did before. I was only testing the one called Sil's strength; he still would have beaten me, but I would have put up a good fight.'

'Right now, though, I can't see a difference in strength between you and him. You have to show me, show me why you're the one that can beat Immortui!'

Pultra continued to fight with everything she had, including the rest, all in hopes of creating an even bigger monster.

Meanwhile, Quinn himself was trying to figure out what was different.

'It's strange; I know I'm stronger and more skillful than all of them in every single way. If I was to do battle with Calva, I could use shadow portals to redirect his spears and then overpower him with my physical or vampire aura.'

'It's the same for the other two as well. But if I try to use the shadow that way on Calva, the others disrupt me before I can fully utilize my own physical strength, and Calva is strong enough to avoid his own attacks.'

'If I try to use their own attacks against them, both Shinto and Pultra disappear. In my fights when I'm battling them on my own, I'm able to corner them or overwhelm them with my strength, but they're extremely versatile in so many ways.'

With his armour's active effects, he might be able to do something, but if they turned out to be useless against Immortui like they had done, then he needed to figure out another way. The training was proving more useful than he thought.

But as he fought against the three at the same time, he couldn't help but think that this was a bit like if he was to go up against Sil.

At the same time, Sil was in a tough battle of his own. He had been switching, using the clones to fire elemental attacks, and himself using his large grand demon tier golden sword to strike at Immortui directly.

When he did this, though, he used his speed ability and would strike at the armour, repeating the process.

'This is going well; I don't think I'm doing any damage, but I am managing to stall him, but if things continue like this, I'll eventually run out of MC cells.'

The reason why Sil said this was that every once in a while, the large wingless dragons or serpents that were on Immortui's back would wrap around his arm, and he would deliver an incredibly large blow, wiping out about ten percent of the clones.

If it was a battle of who had more energy, then Sil wasn't quite sure he could win.

Once again, as the elemental attacks from the clones hit Immortui, his strange skin-like armour on his body started to cover the entirety of himself. Sil charged in at this point, swinging the sword, only this time it had clashed against something hard.

"Did you really think that if you did the same thing again and again, that it would work?" Immortui said.

The red energy had gathered, creating a layer over his armour and his hand, protecting it from the sword. Immortui had managed to block a strike that was to go right across his chest.

"That sword is interesting, but not strong enough!" Immortui went to strike Sil, who used his super speed to block with the sword. It started to light up, but before it could complete, Immortui grabbed it with his fingers and tensed his hand, breaking it on the spot, crushing it to pieces.

Sil, feeling the danger coming on, leapt back. As he did, Immortui swung his arm, and the red energy that had gathered around his hand dissipated into several small balls of energy.

They went out faster than bullets and hit half of the clones, wiping them out on the spot.

'This guy, he has so many tricks and so many different powers. I feel like I'm fighting against Quinn!' Sil thought to himself.

In the moment he retreated and thought about what to do, Immortui had raised his hand, and the colourless ability had been activated. The area around them was turning into a world of black and white.

Chapter 2490: Never forget the task

Peter was trapped in a giant white hardened shell, while Russ had been hurt relatively badly, but he managed to use his powers to start to change his body slightly. He was also using a form of healing on himself. His hand pressed against his chest with a soft glow, and he soon stood up next to Hikel.

"So do you have any ideas on how to beat this guy?" Russ asked. There was a new determined look on his face, and he was full of focus after being hit.

"I have to admit that my attacks don't seem to hurt him." Hikel replied. "The best I can do is cause a distraction. So it will be up to you in the end."

"Very well." Russ said, as he looked down at his arm, the god slayer bracelet that had been created for him was still present. He wanted to test out its effects in a situation that wasn't so important, but if they were going to die anyway, then he might as well gamble.

Rising up from behind Russ, was the dark purple shadow, meanwhile his legs had transformed into that of a Penswi and his arms into that of a Dalki. A combination of strengths that would allow him to fight head on.

Hikel was the first to strike, throwing out his blood aura in all directions. Rather than going straight for the target, it went for the egg shaped figure as well as the large items around. When the blood aura hit, his explosions set off.

The large giant items were falling to the ground, being blown to pieces causing debris to go everywhere, but the egg was intact even with all the attacks that landed on it. Rushing through all of the smoke was Russ.

His super fast legs propelled him forward and he threw out with the large fist of the Dalki bashing right into Luce. He had been somewhat distracted by the smoke, unable to make a shield in time.

"Impressive, you are quite fast, I knew you would be the most troublesome!" Luce stated, and he used his white liquid power to form a pole of sorts.

He spun it around and deflected the next hit that came from Russ, knocking both of his hands off to the side. Luce was extremely skillful with the weapon in his hands, and dashed forward aiming to thrust it in Russ' stomach but he managed to move away quickly.

"I have the legs of the fastest person in our universe!" Russ stated, as he jumped up.

Luce swung the pole to the side ready to knock him out of the air, but before he could, Hikel was there, his hand right by his side glowing red.

"Let's see how you fair taking a hit from this close up!" Hikel hit Luce right on the side, and exploded him away. His power wasn't directed in the normal way his explosions would work, blowing up in every direction, but was short and straight making it more powerful and compact, but still injured Hikel's own hand in the process using it in this way.

While skidding across the ground, Hikel soon noticed something wrapped around his waist. It was the strange white material that Luce was able to produce, it wrapped around his arms and more, and lifted him in the air before slamming him onto the ground head first into the rocks.

The pole had changed shape and form. With his other hand free, Luce shot out his ball of power, which homed its way towards Russ. When it was just about to reach him though, the shadow moved in place stopping it.

The white ball looked to be pushing against the shadow, unable to push further forward, but eventually moved, and started to zig zag trying to come from another angle, as it did, Russ would move the shadow, blocking it in place.

"Something that can actually block my attack, you are full of surprises aren't you?" Luce claimed.

Using his legs, Russ rushed out of the area while the white energy continued to follow him. Even though the shadow could block the attack, it would only be a matter of time until he was hit.

"You don't know the half of it." Russ said, with a smile on his face. "There's a reason why people hate fighting against me the most."

Lifting up his hand, the bracelet started to glow, a strange multicoloured energy, almost a rainbow, covered the entire of his palm. Quickly, Russ moved it right to where the white energy was coming towards him. The two made contact, and the white attack was starting to disappear.

It was fading away, and almost looked like it was being dragged in, or absorbed into Russ's hand. Seeing what was happening, Luce quickly stopped the attack.

"It's because, I'm one annoying bastard!" Russ exclaimed, as he held out both of his hands and the same white substance was emitted out from them. Two paths that were leaving a lingering mark in the air, were heading right for Luce.

'It can't be, is this some type of fake!' Luce thought, but he still made two shields out of his power, and blocked both of the hits head on. They looked to have bounced off, and came attacking from above. As they were heading down, two large red blood swipes came right for Luce's legs, they exploded, distracting him further and destroying the ground beneath his feet.

"We... we got him!" Hikel said.

With the ground having been destroyed underneath, he had lost his footing slightly, and the attacks from Russ had landed. The strange substance started to hit him, and wrapped around him, tying him up, keeping him in place.

'We just need a bit more.' Hikel thought, and as if his prayers were answered, he could see the Boneclaw appearing right behind Luce, and Peter was there along with him.

Peter grabbed his arm, pulling it out with all his strength, and then the two head tails wrapped around a single arm.

Luce, using his strength, was able to move, and went to deliver a punch to hit Peter off.

"Not so fast, this guy is with us!" A large turtle shell appeared right in front of Luce, and there was a cat on top of his head producing a fury of flames. The flames went out and started to burn away the white cloth on Luce's arm, but the punch was still delivered forward, crashing right into Genbu's shell.

It started to crack and would soon disappear.

"It will be a while until you can use us again, but you still got the other two, so use them well, and get these people!" Genbu shouted, before he disappeared.

There was no need to tell Peter, he already was swinging down with all of his might. The celestial energy that coated his power, split right through the red mist energy barrier, and the head tail sharpness dug right through the arm.

Peter's fist was so powerful that the energy was sent crashing into the ground, shaking the whole place.

Quickly, Hikel decided to throw out more of his blood using it to explode in several directions, creating smoke.

Appearing by Hikel's side was Russ, and after that, Peter had teleported with the Boneclaw before he started to disappear again.

"You made it... did you get him?" Hikel asked.

"No, he's still alive." Peter replied. "But I got what we needed."

In Peter's hand, was Luce's arm, but more importantly, it was his blood. Peter had a job to do, for Quinn, and he wasn't going to forget about what was needed.

Chapter 2491: Deep memories

With Peter's personality, they couldn't believe what he had just done. He had managed to cut off Luce's arm, and what was amazing was his reason for doing it. Now, with the arm in their possession, it meant they had one of the demon king's blood.

They knew that Luce was strong, too strong, to the point that one surprise attack surely wasn't going to kill him. And with Peter's personality, nearly every hit he would do was aimed at killing the target.

'I forgot that he had the power of the familiars to help him.' Hikel grabbed the arm and pulled out a flask from underneath his thick trousers. He then started to squeeze the arm, allowing the blood to drip into the flask.

'Was he waiting in that egg the whole time, waiting for the right time to strike so we could get this?'

That was precisely what Peter had done, although it wasn't his idea. Ovinnik, the black cat familiar, was the one who had suggested it to him, stating that he could escape with the help of the Boneclaw whenever he wanted. However, he should wait for the right opportunity; they would attack when they could. It was, though, Peter's aim to get the blood. In his mind, the blood was the most important thing to help Quinn, then they could focus on taking down the others later.

After the flask had been filled up, Hikel placed it back down in his trousers, which the others weren't sure was the safest place, but he hadn't lost it so far, so they let it be.

"Pass me that arm," Russ said. He closed his eyes and started to use the fire ability. The arm was starting to light up and was turning into nothing but ashes fairly quickly.

Detached from the original body, there was only a lingering energy protecting it, and the red mist had disappeared from it as well.

"What should we do now?" Hikel asked. "We can teleport out of here with Russ' power, we have the blood, but if we do that, then there is a good chance that the demon king can inform Immortui and the others."

"Sil is fighting Immortui at the moment," Peter replied. "I don't think Sil is an easy opponent for him; we don't have to worry, and if we've done this much damage to him already, I say we stay and fight, getting rid of another problem for Quinn."

Russ nodded.

"It seems like the two of us are agreeing more and more lately," Russ smiled, looking at the god-slayer item on his wrist.

It was an amazing ability that had come from Pine, one of the high-spiked Dalki. His ability was one that allowed him to absorb all types of energy and attacks from abilities, and then he could repel that attack back as a pure form of energy.

Now, as a god-slayer item, its ability was quite amazing, especially for Russ. It could do the same but only on the hand the bracelet was worn on. That was how Russ was able to stop the attack from the demon king from before.

However, with the energy absorbed, it could be passed on to the user in the form of MC cells. This was the perfect solution for Russ's MC cell problem when using his ability.

The reason he hadn't used the demon king's ability against him from the start was because he didn't have enough MC cells. It was the same for why he hadn't attempted to summon the memories from the Black Sword like he had done before. If he used everything summoning the Black Swordsman, then what would he use to escape with if he didn't kill his enemy.

"Very good, very good!" Luce was heard saying; he stretched out his detached arm, and from the clean cut, his power started to form. It was molding into shape and had formed an entirely new arm.

It looked like a mannequin's arm was on his body due to how white the colour of it was.

"I was listening in on your conversation just now, and I think you made the wrong decision; you guys should have just run away."

Far off in the distance, Sil was battling against Immortui. He had tried his best to stop him using his colourless ability. From all of the battles that he had with the champions, he had heard that this was the ability that finished them off.

Although Immortui could have dominated them with another power, at the end after weakening them, he would use this ability before even getting close to them, which went to show how much he relied on and trusted this power of his.

Now, he had managed to allow Immortui to use it and it was starting to grow in size, but Sil had a smile on his face.

"I recently came across someone with an incredibly strong power," Sil said to himself. "And since you are here in front of me, and have seen what I can do... I have a way to combine abilities, and I know something that works against this."

A lightning bolt had gathered in Sil's hand, a condensed form of power. If he threw this, though, when it touched the colourless area it would just start to fade, but he had another idea, something that he had a feeling would work against this power.

"I heard you fought against Quinn, so you must have experienced him using this power before."

Shadow started to emit from Sil's hand, and it slowly started to move onto the lightning bolt coating it, making the outside of it glow slightly. Right then and there, he threw out the lightning bolt.

It zapped across the area, and when it had entered the colourless zone, the shadow was protecting it from being affected, it was slowing down the effects of the colourless power at least.

It zapped across and pierced right into Immortui's chest, the tip had entered through his skin and started to electrify his whole body. The colourless power was starting to fade slightly.

'I thought the only one I would have to worry about was Quinn, but there was someone from Earth who was this strong as well?'

Immortui grabbed the lightning bolt, pulled it out of his chest, and threw it to the ground. His power would eventually make it disappear anyway.

"That was just a flesh wound, and will only delay the inevitable," Immortui said.

"Yeah, that's what I wanted," Sil replied. "Just to delay you a little, so I could access your mind and bring out something else, someone else that gave you a lot of trouble."

There were things that Sil managed to see in Immortui's mind that he wouldn't be able to summon with Russ's power, even with his own MC cells, but he did find one, a person that he knew could help him in this situation.

Coming out of the ground, in tattered black clothing, and holding a black sword by his side, was the Black Swordsman.

Chapter 2492: A strong Sil

The training continued, but only because Quinn wanted to find a way to enhance his fighting. It would have been very easy for him to just overpower all three of them with his blood aura, but that would make the whole training pointless.

The idea was to get used to the three variations of attacks coming from all sides. Immortui had the same, if not greater power than him, so overpowering wasn't an option.

Several kicks were being delivered by Pultra through the air, and Quinn had moved in closer, showing no fear. He struck back with kicks of his own, matching them. While doing so, he could see Shinto coming down with his axe full of black flames.

A shadow portal had opened up behind him, and reaching out from the shadow portal was a shadow hand. It wasn't Quinn's own hand. It encased him from behind, wrapping around his body, having grabbed him midair.

It was the few seconds that Quinn needed as he used his shadow travel to go underneath Pultra, and then when he was back on the ground, he had a blood spear in his hand that was hurled directly at Shinto. It crashed into the axe, sparking against the flames. With Pultra on him, Quinn reached out his hand and used the shadow lock, making her disappear.

He then could see a bone spear being hurled toward him from Calva. Letting her back out, the spear had crashed into Pultra, and Quinn's fist had hit her right in the stomach. The spear from Calva was embedded into her back, pulling it out, she threw it onto the floor. Her wound was healing quickly, which was another trait of one of her powers.

"It seems you've managed to find your answer," Pultra said, raising her hand. It was a signal to the others as a way to stop the fight, at least for now.

"I've grown stronger through multiple ways, with all my equipment and blood powers. At times, when I gain one new power that seems overwhelmingly stronger, I forget about the other things I can do because they seem useless.

"But the shadow is the answer. The shadow's power is extremely strong, but it's a power that becomes even stronger when utilized with everything I have. I learned that when I mixed the shadow with my blood powers.

"But doing so, I neglected my old ways of fighting. In a way, fighting like this, stripping everything back to the bare minimum that I had before. It showed me what I can do with everything I have, thank you."

After finishing that sentence, a notification came up from the system. [All god slayer armour has been repaired]

"Let's keep going, I want to try a few things."

The group didn't know a lot about the black sword and where it originally came from, apart from the fact that it was a marked weapon, branded by Immortui. It felt like a powerful soul had been sealed away in the sword.

Quinn was the one who had noticed the marking and eventually removed it. It lessened the burden one had when needing to use the sword, but it seemed that the soul's strong emotions would still go to the user who was using it.

The soul inside the sword had next to no recollection of what happened. Based on the marking and what had occurred, they could imagine that Immortui and the Black Swordsman had gone through a battle, and the end result was what it was.

"Hahaha!" Immortui laughed. "I have no idea what your power is, but it certainly is the most interesting one I have come against. To think you were able to present this to me!"

Rushing forward with his sword in hand, the Black Swordsman thrust it forward. When the tip touched the colourless zone, the power almost instantly disappeared, breaking, and the colour in the area had returned.

"I see, I see, it's not some type of illusion after all," Immortui said. "But did you really think this would pose a problem to me? I was the one who defeated him before, so I will just have to do the same thing again!"

Immortui rushed forward from his position, and the serpent over his shoulder started to swirl around his hand. Sil had been watching him carefully; it was clear this attack was something that he couldn't just repeat over and over again, otherwise he would have repeatedly used it, since during the fight every time he did, he had finished off around ten percent of Sil's forces.

When the distance between the two had closed to around the halfway mark, the clones teleported in closer, each of them having a condensed lightning whip in their hands. They swung them, and they wrapped around Immortui's legs. Several of the lightning whips were fully wrapped around the armoured part of his body. The lightning effect of the whips didn't seem to be working, but they managed to still hold him back, enough time for Sil to draw out another demon-tier sword, pulling the same one that had broke, directly from Immortui's memories. He dashed in using his super speed and slashed the sword against Immortui's chest.

A large golden slash appeared in the air, hitting Immortui back, but the red aura that thickly covered his skin seemed to block the attack.

"I want to tell you something, Immortui!" Sil shouted as he carried on speeding around him, striking him bit by bit. "Do you know how I was able to catch you just now, how my clones were able to know where you were? It's because I could see

your next move. I have the ability of foresight; it allows me to know what you are going to do before you're going to do it.

"My vision changes, and these spirit-like images play out the scene beforehand!"

With how annoying Sil was being to Immortui, he decided to just throw his fist to the ground; the immense amount of power exploded, and rocks flew up in the air as if a volcano had exploded.

The lightning whips that had been attached to Immortui's legs had been destroyed, but the real Sil had retreated, standing next to the Black Swordsman that had blocked the lingering after-effect of the shockwave that had been sent out.

"You might have been able to take him out before, but that was when you were fighting him alone. I have to say, thank you for listening to me." Sil's eyes glinted a light grey for a moment before returning to normal. He now had his foresight ability as well.

Although Sil was able to change his powers as much as he wished, he couldn't use two powers at the same time. There were instances where it could feel that way, such as using his super speed and then switching to super strength at the last moment to give a bigger effect.

Or using one power after the other, such as raising a rock from the ground and then destroying it with his lightning, but he couldn't use both at the same time. So his foresight ability was something that he needed to constantly turn on and off during battle.

Making full use of it was tricky; however, with Russ' power, Sil could use multiple powers, especially his own, because Immortui had seen what had been used against him. Sil could access Immortui's mind and use all of the powers he had in the fight so far.

However, there was one thing he couldn't summon, and that was the foresight ability. This was because it was something Immortui had no knowledge of; he had never physically seen it. Which was why Sil had informed him of exactly what his power was. Holding the golden sword out, lightning started to gather in his hand and was sparkling on the outside.

'The power of lightning, a demon-tier sword, super speed, super strength, and foresight. Along with all of these, and the Black Swordsman, I can do this.'

These were all of the things that Sil was using with Russ' power; he had to because if he switched abilities, everything would disappear, which also meant Sil was burning through a large amount of MC cells at this moment.

Chapter 2493: A fight between heavens

Sil gripped the handle of his weapon tightly before bringing his other hand over, holding the large sword with both of his hands. His feet shuffled on the ground, kicking up a small part of the dust, and then he charged in.

Rushing in, he wasn't alone; the Black Swordsman was by his side, only a step or two behind him. He was fast as well, just Sil was faster, but it didn't matter because he saw what was going to take place.

Immortui lifted his hand and struck down with the red mist aura from above. He wasn't close to them, but almost a giant hand had been made from the aura, planning to slam them down.

Sil had already stepped to the side, avoiding the blow, while the Black Swordsman slashed above, touching the hand and getting rid of it completely. Sil boosted himself with speed, adding lightning in his steps.

It was a technique used by the Graylash family to try and match up to those that were fast, and combining it with super speed, Sil could place himself right under Immortui, and he knew it was going to work.

A large slash from the side hit across his chest. The sword slashed with large sparks of lightning hitting Immortui's body. He quickly swiveled around him before he could react and struck at his back.

As Immortui swung his arm, another giant fist of red aura appeared but had hit nothing. Before he could turn around, the Black Swordsman was now the one that was in front of him. He slashed four times across his chest, and each one broke through the red mist that acted as protection. The sword cut his chest, and blood was being spilt by Immortui. With anger, he lifted up his feet and slammed them on the ground. The aura covering them made it look like the feet of the giants were being used.

"Move!" Sil shouted.

The two of them backed away, and the whole area around Immortui, like a waterfall, crashed down with the red power. The floor was cracking, and power seeping through it, but none of it had managed to touch the two.

Immediately after finishing his attack, lightning bolts came out from the side, and they were hitting Immortui's body constantly; he had no choice but to allow the armour skin to cover his whole body.

As it did, Sil had come in again, jumping this time with a large strike from above. Lifting his own forearm, Immortui had blocked the strike from Sil, but at the same time, the Black Swordsman had swung his sword from below.

The Black Swordsman might not have been as fast as Sil, but due to his great experience in swordsmanship, he was able to know when the right time to strike was. The sword was coming close to Immortui's body when the serpent on his shoulder opened its mouth and bit down on the sword, stopping it in its tracks.

Immortui then swung his arm, overpowering Sil's sword strike and pushing him slightly to the edge; when he landed on the ground, he knew the outcome. The clones had already come in; they had teleported close and had struck at Immortui's side with a lightning fist. It was explosive power with a pulse of lightning shooting out in the air.

The look on Immortui's face showed that the attack had done next to nothing to him, though. From his strange armour that covered his body, it started to move, and more serpents were appearing. They came out with their mouths open and bit on the clones, making them disappear on the spot.

The serpents were smaller in size compared to the two large ones that dangled over his shoulder, but they were fast and had to have packed a relatively strong force if they got rid of the clones.

One of the larger serpents was still holding onto the Black Swordsman's sword. Turning around, Immortui went to throw a fist to its stomach, until Sil had managed to get there just in time, swinging and blocking the strike with his large sword.

The two were at it again, swinging the sword. Sil would swing with his strength and speed, some hits being blocked by Immortui, while a few got through to his body. Hitting his side, his ribs, and legs.

Then the Black Swordsman would come in as well, in between the strikes, but these ones had all been blocked by Immortui's forearm, no longer leaving a scratch on his body.

"It's been a long time since I've had to fight so close with my body like this," Immortui exclaimed. "This is good, this is good practice for when I go against them. I'm starting to warm up a little."

Sil could tell that Immortui wasn't lying, as he saw more ahead, he could see that none of his strikes would get through to Immortui, his or the Black Swordsman.

"Jump!" Sil shouted.

He could see a strong power gathering in his hand, and Immortui had swung it out like a large slap. Both the Black Swordsman and Sil jumped. The two of them thought it was a direct attack aimed at them.

Sil had seen it was a direct attack, but he had failed to see the outcome of the attack. Having swung his hand, a large red hand made from the mist had appeared

as well and had hit a large portion of the clone Sils that would interrupt in the fight now and then. They disappeared as soon as the hand made contact with them.

There were now only a few left, and Sil was trying to think about what to do next.

"You are rushing things," Immortui said. "I can feel it in your strikes. You aren't thinking but just trying to attack. If you were thinking you would have seen the truth behind that attack, and not just the attack itself."

"But why are you rushing? Why are you trying so hard to get rid of me so fast?" Immortui smiled, knowing the answer. "You're running out of power, aren't you? To be able to do all of these things, there has to be a limit to your energy."

"After all, you are not like me, you are no god! Your energy is nowhere near close to mine. To beat you, all I need to do is wait."

Hearing that was good news for Sil because in the first place, all he wanted to do was buy time.

"What the..." Sil's eyes for a moment gazed away from Immortui as he saw something strange happening in the space above them. It wasn't just him though; Immortui could also see strange things happening in the space, in the sky behind him as well.

Both of them had lost all focus on each other in the fight, as they were witnessing white glowing portals appearing all over the place. Not just where they were, but they were appearing all over the universe on each and every single one of the planets.

From one of the portals close, flying right through the portals were large beings, with wings on their back, holding spears in their hands. Some covered in a type of golden glowing armour, while the others covered in a strange dark black substance.

"It's the Divine Brigade," Immortui said, every muscle in his body tensed up.
"Celestalon, the Ancient One, is attacking us."

Chapter 2494: War Between Worlds

Throughout the entire red space, portals were opening up left, right, and centre. Coming through them were the Divine Brigade. An army that was controlled by the Ancient Ones and it was part of the power of Celestalon.

It was clear it was his doing for multiple reasons. One of them, the Divine Brigade, was a creation of his power, but even more definitive than that, was the fact that only the Ancient Ones had the power to freely move between the Universe spaces.

There were ways that one might be able to move from one to the other, gathering a large amount of energy, but to send a whole army to one side or the other, could only be the work of the Ancient Ones.

The size of the portals were gigantic, and groups of the gold and black warriors were seen coming through. Their numbers were in the hundreds, and then quickly had escalated to the thousands, to the tens of thousands.

It was a full scale attack. The portals weren't just placed in one area, but over all of the space, hanging over each of the planets.

In one section of the red space, there was a planet that had structures that were quite similar to that of the Romans from earth. Large pillars held up the bigger structures with detailed carvings on the rooftops and concrete.

Everything was quite grand and large in size, including the regular houses, as for the ones that lived here, they looked the most like a human. They had the body structure of a human, but had patches of fur that would be growing from their body.

This was the planet that now belonged to the werewolves, the ones known as the Glutton type. Each night their forms would drastically change, and when the demon king Unzoku howled. Their forms would change to the point it would be hard for one to even call them werewolves.

A group of werewolves would be selected for the Pit project that Unzoku was running. He would rotate the werewolves, but there were also a select few positions that the werewolves needed to fight for as well.

It was an honour to be part of the pit, because the werewolves knew that whoever entered the pit, and managed to survive, had come out a lot stronger, and Unzoku had ingrained in their mind that power was everything.

Power was their status, and was the only meaning that the werewolves had in their life. The only thing that they could compete with or brag to each other about because there was nothing else for them.

Although Unzoku himself wasn't considered Immortui's right hand man like the other two demon kings, it was because of all of this, without a doubt, the one with the most powerful and strongest demon army, was the army of the werewolves.

They were going about their lives as they walked through the town and the tiled streets. Some came out of large bath houses, while others practiced as they got ready to go into the pit that night as they had done on any other night.

That was until they could see the large portals looming over their heads.

"What is that?" One of the werewolves asked.

The Divine Brigade, entering in black and gold, had flown out and were descending. Immediately, they locked their eyes on what was down below. Those that were black in colour held their spears out pointing it directly at the ground beneath them, and beams of dark energy shot out.

It exploded as they hit the pillars, the ground, and the large buildings. Some of the attacks had hit the werewolves, going right through their body. However, as they had been hit, they immediately started to transform.

All of the city of werewolves were beginning to transform, and howling out loud through the night. The scene had changed in an instant as everyone was quick to act.

The werewolves climbed and jumped on top of building structures, then with the strength in their legs they leapt up with no fear, grabbing directly onto the Divine Brigade clawing at them directly.

The Divine Brigade members swooped down, and were fighting on the ground floor as well. The golden one's healing the members that needed it, while teleporting, moving out of the way of the werewolves.

The fight was intense on both sides, with both having great power.

However, the tide of the battle was soon to be turned. Bursting out of the large colosseum building, a werewolf far bigger than the rest had appeared and landed directly in the centre. It was the demon king.

Immediately, he swiped his hand, hitting a group of five of the Divine Brigade and eliminated them quickly. Then he turned to those that were in the sky, and started to swing his arms rapidly, several claw strikes were seen in the air.

The Divine Brigade used their attacks to try and stop the attack, but Unzoku's power was just far greater. Even with him helping though, the fight was still intensely going on all over the place, and he could see it.

More of the Divine Brigade were coming through the portals.

"HAWHOOOO!" Unzoku howled, and the Glutton type werewolves reacted in response.

Their eyes were glowing with power and their bodies started to change.

"Everyone, this is an attack from the enemy!" Unzoku shouted. "The ones we have been planning to go against for a long time now! It appears the time is upon us. Deal with what's in front of you, and then, make your way to the planet of the giants!"

In the same space, it wasn't just the werewolves that were having trouble. The portals had been open all over. Other demon races were putting up a fight, but without help it was harder for them to fight back.

The Divine Brigade was just too powerful. Still, having expected this they did their best and were ready for battle.

The ones who were not, however, were the local inhabitants. In a village full of Skullys, they had seen the portal up in the air, their fingers pointed, wondering what was going on.

When the beings had come out of the portal, immediately they locked eyes on the Skullys, and it was a slaughter. The spear's energy went through their bodies. Their heads and limbs were ripped apart, and there was nothing they could do.

Some tried to fight back, but they were able to only do a little damage and what little damage they did, would be healed by the golden ones. Seeing this, they had lost all hope, this was the elimination of every life form that belonged in the red space.

Peter, Hikel, and Russ, had decided that they would continue their fight. They would try their best to get rid of another one of the demon kings, if they didn't get rid of him now, then they would just have to fight him later, and in turn it felt like they were just leaving him for Quinn.

Luce was prepared, having grown his arm back, and so were the other three, until all of them noticed the portals that had been opening up all over the place.

"No... now of all times!" Luce mumbled to himself. "Why would they do such a thing? Did they know what we were planning to do, or is it because of these invaders?"

Groups of the Divine Brigade started to come out, and they could be seen flying over the land of giants. Chris and Edvard could see them, Quinn, where he was,

along with the champions could see them coming out as well, but they were all left confused, as to what was happening, apart from Luce.

"Judging from the look on that demon king's face, I don't think they're his allies." Hikel commented.

When the Divine Brigade located those that were below, they pointed their spears, and dark energy started to gather at the tip. Immediately it was fired out, and Luce lifted his hand, creating the white shield, blocking the attack.

Meanwhile, the others all decided to dive out of the way, jumping and moving from the attack.

"Are they on our side or not?" Hikel thought seeing that.

The dark and golden coloured beings had landed on the ground and went to strike their spear through Luce, it was clear that they were trying to fight him, and shoving his own spear right through one of their heads, it was clear that he wasn't on their side as well.

That was when three of the Divine Brigade pointed their spears at Hikel, Russ and Peter as well, charging up an attack.

"These b*stard's aren't on our side either!" Peter shouted.

Chapter 2495: Quinn Acts!

The portals were truly appearing all over the universe, and this included where Quinn and the champions had been currently practicing. As the portals opened up, the forces of the Divine Brigade came pouring in. They were high in number, and just in the sky alone, there looked to be around fifty of these things.

"What are those things? Is it one of the demon races? Have they come and found us? But then why wouldn't Immortui come himself?" Quinn said.

The champions tried to get a closer look. They looked like nothing they had seen before in their travels, and the energy that was radiating off their bodies, it didn't feel like Immortui. It was too different.

Even Quinn's energy was quite similar to Immortui's, which was why those like Calva were able to tell that he was a demon and not a natural inhabitant. Although the three champions might not know what every demon race looked like, they knew about all the intelligent inhabitants of the red space, and this wasn't one of them.

The Divine Brigade flew at them like a flock of birds, those dark in colour at the front with their spears pointed toward them, charging up some type of energy, and the golden ones were at the back.

"I don't think they're our friends!" Calva said.

Immediately, like rainfall, the attacks came falling down, and all of them were heading towards the group. As they hit the ground, large explosions of dark power exploded, creating all sorts of small domes over the field.

Each of the champions and Quinn were able to avoid the attacks as they moved out of the way quickly with their speed, and now following up those attacks were the Brigade themselves with their spears held in their hands.

Shinto had lifted up his axe and jumped up, swinging it down through one of the dark beings. It ripped right through its head, splitting it in half and covering it in black flames. The being had quickly died from Shinto's attack, but he soon found himself blasted with a strange shot of energy from one of the golden beings, sending him skidding across the floor.

More attacks came towards him, and he was using his axe to hit them away but was finding it difficult to find another opening.

For Calva, he had two spears held in his hands; he was batting away the spears of the golden beings, hitting them and redirecting their attacks so the bolts would hit each other. There were a lot more of them than him after all.

His attacks would pierce through their chest, some through their head, but even then, as they fell to the floor, the golden beings who were teleporting all over the

place would fire at their own allies, and when the attacks hit, their bodies started to heal, and they would get up from the floor again.

"We need to target the golden ones!" Pultra shouted. She swung her legs a few times, and large lines of aura slashed right through a dark being, but her attack continued right through and managed to hit one of the golden beings behind, making it fall to its death.

"If we don't kill the golden ones, they will just keep on healing their little friends!"

The champions were strong and they were showing it as they continued to strike and use their powers to damage those around them, but the golden beings were the ones giving them trouble.

With their fast teleportation, they could only get rid of 1 or 2 once in a while, and with the portals still open behind, it looked like even more were flooding in.

"What is going on right now?" Shinto slammed his axe on the ground, and a line of black flames went across the floor, catching a few of the beings.

Out of all of the powers, Shinto's black flames were the most effective. Even if they were hit by the golden being's energy, it was unable to stop the black flames or heal its allies.

"I'll be honest; I have no idea," Calva said. "Come on Pultra, you're the smart one; if we figure this out, maybe we can get out of this situation."

Pultra continued to fight while observing the situation, and eventually, she had come up with a guess.

"We know Immortui was preparing for something, some type of war against a certain group. That's why he wanted our help," Pultra answered. "If I was to take a guess, based on how these guys are entering the space and aren't an inhabitant or demons themselves, this might be the enemy that he was trying to fight against."

"Hey, I have another question; where's Quinn?" Calva asked.

As soon as the others appeared, Quinn had been avoiding all of the attacks. He had great speed and reflexes to do so, and none of them were able to keep up with him. He could avoid the golden shots and the spear blasts as well as the spears themselves with ease, even though there were so many of them.

He was observing the situation just like Pultra, seeing how portals hadn't just opened up where they were, and even the beings that were attacking them had come at them from several different portals as well.

'If these are the celestials and they see me here, then what will happen? Will they consider the deal we had as void? Will they interfere with what is going on with Earth again?' Quinn thought.

He was hesitant to attack. In a way, if the celestials were now attacking the red space, and Immortui and his demons, then maybe he should just let the two of them hash it out together, and he should try his best to find a way back.

As he focused, though, Quinn was starting to hear things. The cries of pain, the blood that was being split from all over each of the planets. It was something he hadn't felt for a while, not since his fight with Graham when he was evolving into the Celestial vampire.

'What is going on? Are these things killing everyone and everything that they can see? Are they not just after us?'

The three Skullys had quickly been put into his shadow, and although Quinn didn't want to get involved, when he could feel everything that was happening, everything that was going on, was he the type to just stand back?

'No, if I can do something about it, then why don't I?'

The shadow started to cover Quinn's body, and when it went away, the Godslayer armour was now covering his body, having fully recovered.

Stretching out his arms and gripping both of his fists, Quinn activated the power of his gauntlets, and more arms had sprouted out from his back, giving him six in total.

'Let's do this!'

Quinn swung all six of his fists as fast as he could in the air, each time releasing a strong powerful blood aura out of them. It hit the Divine beings right in the face, the legs, and parts of their bodies were disappearing right in front of them.

The golden beings tried to heal them, but they were soon hit again. A fierce storm of red fists was going through the air, from one side to the other, and the entire field was being cleared as the Divine beings were being killed.

"ARGH!" Quinn shouted as he didn't stop.

The armour had the limitless ability, allowing him to not tire, and he kept going at full force. The bloodied fists soon surrounded all of the champions that were fighting, and they could see those that they were having a hard time against disappear in front of their eyes as they got hit.

At the same time, not a single one of the champions had been hit by the attacks. When they turned to look at what was happening, they could see that it was Quinn, in some type of armour they hadn't seen before.

"What is this power? Was he holding back when he was fighting against us?" Shinto asked, shocked.

It wasn't just him; so were the others. Calva had witnessed some of Quinn's strength, but what was ingrained in his mind was the demon form, not what he could do out of it.

Eventually, all of those that were attacking them on the ground had been defeated, but a new fleet of them were in the air, flying toward them.

Swinging this, Quinn placed his hand by his side, and bent his knees while sweeping his leg back. Blood aura was gathering around his leg, overflowing as it surrounded his body.

Swinging it out with full force, the entire floor shook beneath them, and out in the air, a giant sword made of blood aura had appeared. It sliced the entire air, looking as if it had cut space itself, and in turn, it had killed all of the Divine Brigade in an instant.

"Yep, he was definitely holding back," Shinto said.

Chapter 2496: All to the planet of the Giants!

With the Divine Brigade appearing everywhere, the entire universe felt like it was at war. The demon races were fighting back, clashing all over the place, and it had even interrupted the fight between the demon king Luce and Hikel and his group.

Stretching out his hands, several waves of blood aura were shot out one after the other, causing an explosion as they hit all of the Divine beings in the area.

"Russ now!" Hikel turned his head and shouted through the smoke.

Russ stretched out his hand, absorbing one of the golden shots of energy with his god slayer bracelet. Soon after, he teleported next to Peter, grabbed him, and teleported next to Hikel.

Before they left the area, they took one last look at Luce, who was fighting against the rest of the Divine beings. That was until he did something unexpected.

The demon king Luce placed both of his hands on the ground, and his white power began to spread out.

"Tree of death, spread!" Luce shouted, and from the ground, several of the same white balls of aura that had followed them when fighting him appeared. They hit nearly all of the Divine beings in the area and started to wrap around their bodies. Some of them had been pierced by the attacks, but all of them were now frozen, unable to move.

"Let's get out of here; I don't think continuing to fight him would have been the right thing to do after all," Hikel suggested.

Russ agreed, and they teleported away, returning to the ship they were at earlier. They tried to see if they could locate the other two, but they couldn't find them. Instead, a large dark spear came toward them.

Peter deflected it, hitting it with his tail and then sent an energy blast of Qi toward it, hitting it in the head.

"These guys are everywhere; I truly think they're all over the planet," Hikel said.

"With things the way they are, it's going to be really hard to find them," Russ added. He attempted to strike one of the Divine beings with a lightning strike, but it teleported and fired a golden shot back at him. Using his other hand, he absorbed the golden attack, replenishing the MC points he had spent.

"I agree, the two of them are strong; they will survive this!" Hikel shouted.
"Besides, we need to make sure Quinn is safe and give him the blood."

Peter nodded, and with that, Russ teleported away, heading back into the cave. However, when they arrived, they were surprised to find that Quinn wasn't there, and neither were the champions. Now they were truly at a loss for what to do.

"He's not here; did the champions fail to protect him?" Peter said, ready to go back out there, but Hikel stood in his way.

"If they moved him, they most likely had a good reason to, especially with all of this going on," Hikel said.

All three of them looked outside the cave exit and saw the entire chaos unfolding, the battle taking place. The Yaks from the city were visibly fighting against the same beings as they had done. Large explosions were going off, and part of the golden palace had already crumbled and was falling.

"It's quite possible that this could be what we needed," Hikel said. "These things, they aren't on Immortui's side, whatever they are. It would have been impossible to take on all the demon kings without Immortui finding out, but now they have to deal with all of this. We just have to wait for the perfect time."

They continued to watch the battle, wanting to rest for a short while before deciding what was the best course of action. Should they search for Chris, for Quinn, or attempt to get the blood of another demon king?

Hikel was going to suggest to Russ to use some type of power to hide their presence when they saw something else approaching from the sky.

It appeared to be a flock of flying demons, intercepting the Divine brigade while also fighting those that had followed them from behind. One of the flying demons stood out among the others, with its skin glowing with more power compared to the rest.

It looked familiar to some in the group, but it was still too far away for them to completely tell.

It held out its hand, and a large blue vortex rushed out, smashing into the Divine beings. When the vortex disappeared, a large chunk of them were gone.

Now it had come to them, they had seen this great power that had been used before, and it could have only been one.

"That's that demon that came to us before!" Hikel said. "The one that was there in the pit with the other werewolves."

The demon they were talking about was Tenbris, Immortui's second right-hand man. Now both of them were on the same planet.

"What are they doing here? Why would they be here? Do they know about Quinn?" Peter asked, getting a little tense. He was ready to fight them all, to take on all the demon kings, but at the same time, if the Divine beings hadn't gotten involved, and all of these demon kings had started to appear, it truly would have been their loss.

"What is that?" Russ asked, as he noticed something else coming from the other side.

It was small at first due to the distance, but as it got closer, they could tell its sheer size. Russ tried to look out as far as possible.

"It's one of those ships, the same ships that the Yaks were building. It looks like they were capable of flight after all."

"Are there people on it?" Hikel asked.

"People might not be the right word; I can see an old friend of ours. They're quite hairy."

When Hikel could finally see them as well, he understood. On board the large ship at the top, he could see countless werewolves battling against the Divine beings that were coming toward them. At the same time, Unzoku was on board, coming to the land of the giants. Another demon king had arrived on the planet.

The final three were on the planet of the giants. With blood gathered from the Yak king and Luce, they only needed two more blood samples for Quinn. Chris and Edvard had decided to run out of the area they were in and head to where the rest of the Yaks were. At the moment, they had hundreds of Divine beings on their back and needed to find another target. That was until a certain smell entered Chris' nose.

Turning around, Chris caught sight of the large ship heading their way, and he could see who was on it.

"Unzoku... you're mine!"

Chapter 2497: Sil in trouble?

On the planet where the battle between Sil and Immortui was taking place, the portals that were opening up were clearly visible because there was nothing on the planet to block their view. The ground was a hard crystal-like material, but there were no large structures or plants to obstruct their vision. So both of them could see the Divine Brigade coming out of the portals and heading straight for them.

With their dark-coloured spears, they started to blast away at the planet. For Sil, the Black Swordsman stayed by his side and swung his sword fast and with smooth motions, deflecting all of the attacks coming their way.

For Immortui, he turned his back away from Sil and stood there with his strange armour covering the rest of his body. All of the attacks hit him, but appeared to have no effect as they smashed into his body.

Lifting his hand up, he used it to cover his eyes to see a little clearer due to all of the attacks. "So instead of waiting for me to come to you, you have decided to come to me then?" Immortui analyzed the situation.

He soon saw a group of them come towards him with spears in their hands. As they went to thrust them forward, the serpent on his shoulder stretched out, becoming longer and larger in size. It avoided one of the spears and took a big bite right into the dark being. It then swung its body, crashing it into another. At the same time, the other serpent over his shoulder did the same. Both of the serpents were moving on their own will at a fast speed as they picked and threw out all of the Divine beings that were coming close to Immortui, and not a single one was able to reach him.

"It looks like I will need to act myself now. The rest, they know what to do," Immortui said, as he lifted his hand up towards the portals where the beings were constantly pouring in.

Gathering in the palm of his hand was all of the red mist, growing large and condensing into a ball. A dark red orb was shaking with power in both of his hands.

Aiming it into space, he shoved both of them out, and large beams of power coloured the entire sky red. The ground shook as the sky was dyed with Immortui's power. The Divine beings couldn't even be seen anymore as they were completely overwhelmed, and as the attack hit the portals, they looked to be disrupted, flashing in and out and eventually disappearing completely.

"That's one area down," Immortui said.

Slightly to his left in the sky and to his right, he could see the beings continuing to pour through other portals. Now that he had breathing space from those next to him, both of the serpents wrapped around his arms.

Twisting his body, he threw his fist out, unleashing a massive amount of power to one side. It was the same blow that he had done before. The attack was just as large and impressive as the last, only this one had far more raw power to it. When the attack hit the space, it looked almost as if the space was moving inward, towards his attack, distorting the sky slightly. Still, he had gotten rid of the portals and the Divine beings in one area.

Then, with his other fist, he did the same, colouring the sky in dark red and mixes of yellow, getting rid of the Divine beings there as well. On his own, somehow Immortui was able to get rid of what looked like an entire army, at least in this place.

"That should do for now," Immortui stated. The serpents around Immortui unwrapped themselves and hovered above his shoulders again. "Now, it looks like it's time for me to head to the planet of the giants. Let's make a move!"

Turning around, Immortui could see, though, that Sil was right next to him, along with the Black Swordsman. The two of them hadn't given up, even though all of the clones had been defeated in the initial attack by the Divine Brigade.

'He just unleashed both of those powerful punches with the serpents!' Sil thought. 'Which means he had to have run out of energy.'

The glow in Sil's eyes was fading in and out; he couldn't use the foresight ability properly as his MC cells were running low.

Distracted by this, the serpents on Immortui's back both opened their mouths wide, and out from them, a powerful red aura exploded in a straight line. It hit the ground and was melting right through it. It went straight across from both of their mouths aiming to hit Sil. He could no longer move straight ahead and had to move back to avoid the attack. The Black Swordsman, though, had been ignored and continued to head forward.

It swung its sword at Immortui, who with his arm knocked it away and, with his other hand, delivered a blow right to its gut, lifting it in the air and piercing right through it. The Black Swordsman had disappeared from the single hit.

"If it's just one of you, things are a bit easier!" Immortui said, shifting his feet. He almost turned into the red mist himself. It looked like Immortui's body had turned into nothing but particles.

Sil was looking around; he could no longer see Immortui, but why did he feel that he was still there? Reappearing right next to him, somewhat like teleporting, the two serpents bit down, one holding onto his sword, while the other managed to bite down hard on his shoulder, holding him in place.

"Did you think I had shown you everything I had?" Immortui asked. "These serpents can produce just as much power as I can with my own hands, that's why,

"when I combine our power together, we can create quite the devastating blow," Immortui explained.

Russ' power was using too many MC cells, and Sil had to cancel the skill, concentrating on his own powers, but how would he get out of this situation? He couldn't teleport away, while Immortui was touching him, the two of them would teleport to the same place together.

In the palm of Immortui's hand, the colourless ability was activating, but he only allowed it to cover just the entire hand, and it didn't expand out more than that.

"You know, someone as strong as you, I would usually keep alive, so you could help me in my fight, but it looks like we have run out of time, and you are far too dangerous to keep alive."

Immortui moved his hand and placed it right into Sil's stomach. The colourless ball of aura that showed a world of just black and white moved from his palm and went right into Sil's body. Instantly, Sil could feel something happening, he didn't know quite what, but almost all feeling in that area had gone away.

"ARGHH!" Sil screamed, and the two of them teleported, moving to another location. This was going to be Sil's last stand against Immortui, and he would do everything in his power to help Quinn out as best as he could.

Chapter 2498: Sil's last stand

The strange colourless power had been placed inside of Sil, and he had been caught by one of the serpents that was latched onto his body. Pain was stinging inside him, and his MC cells were running low. If he continued to use Russ' ability the same way he had been doing, then he would have already run out of MC cells. Still, for Sil, a small amount of MC cells would be larger than most.

'I can't beat him,' Sil thought, his face twisting and turning from the pain. 'When I first came to meet Immortui, I had come only with the intention of delaying him as long as possible, but as the fight went on, I saw a chance. I thought I saw a way I could win. If I took down Immortui in Quinn's place, then we wouldn't have to keep relying on him to do it all for us!'

'But I see, I know now that I can't complete the task, so I have to do what I originally set out to do. I have to buy as much time as possible.'

With the two bodies touching each other, they suddenly teleported. They moved to another location and now were in the air over another planet. All around them, a fight was continuing on.

A race of demons that looked like human bulls were clashing against the Divine Brigade. Some of the Brigade were in the air, while others were on the ground. Explosions were going off left and right, below and above.

Looking around, Immortui was wondering why he would be teleported to a place like this. Before he could even fully see his surroundings, they moved again to another location.

The whole area was covered in a thick smog, but just like the last, there were countless different energies being fired away and exploding past them. The scenery changed again, and it continued to flash one after the other, again and again, and again.

"What are you doing!" Immortui shouted.

Before he knew it, Sil had teleported them right to the front of one of the portals, where a large number of the Divine Brigade were coming out. As soon as they came out of the portal, they started to attack the two of them.

Out of instinct, Immortui and his serpents had let go to defend himself, batting and throwing away all of the Divine beings that were near him, and in turn, he had dropped Sil.

They were high up in the sky, with a purple-coloured planet below, but before even Sil could do anything, he had been stabbed right through the shoulder with one of

the spears. He grabbed onto it, only allowing it to push a few inches deep using his super strength to push it away.

"That hurt!" Sil then continued to fall to the ground and looked at Immortui on the way down. "I did everything I could, I teleported you as far away from Quinn as I could. I know he must have some way to travel in this space, otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to get rid of my clones so fast."

"But with everything going on at the moment, I hope it's a bit harder for him."

Falling down, Sil was going past the intense battle that was going on in the sky. It was giving him confidence in this whole situation, and with a smile, he teleported away from Immortui once again.

Where he had gone, how far he was, he had no idea, but when he looked at where he was, his feet were planted in sand. There was a sea of water in front of him. It looked almost like an island from Earth, but the red mist in the air made it quite obvious that it wasn't.

'I teleported to the location with the least amount of noise, and I ended up on an island of all places,' Sil thought.

He couldn't help but smile because some of his worst memories of his life were on an island, and while he was going through one of the toughest times of his life again, he had ended up in a place like this.

Sil's hand started to glow green, and he placed it on his stomach. He could feel something inside him, it was growing in size, and hopefully he could slow it down using a healing ability.

'I don't know what this is that Immortui put in me, but I have a feeling it's dangerous. I need to... get to Quinn as soon as possible. If I can tell him everything about Immortui, he'll have a better chance at beating him.'

For now, though, Sil just needed to recover a bit before he teleported away again.

With Quinn's extreme display of power, getting rid of the Divine beings that were in front of him, the area was cleared for the moment, but they could all feel that the planet was rumbling.

They knew that fights were going off everywhere.

"Let's head back!" Pultra said. "Right now, we have no clue what is going on; we need to assess the situation, and if we stay out here, I think more and more will just come after us."

Her words were true as more of the Divine Brigade were coming their way from the portals. It was useless to keep fighting these things.

Running off, they headed back the way they came, running through the forests, trying to avoid fights as much as possible. But when they saw Divine beings, Quinn would deal with them relatively quickly as he used his Asura gauntlets along with his blood aura to take them out in a hit or two. Even if Quinn hadn't defeated the gold beings, it still delayed them as they needed time to heal.

It didn't take long for them to find the cave that they had left from. When they scaled up to it and headed inside, Quinn's footsteps slowed down until they had come to a complete halt.

"What are... what are you guys doing here, how are you even here?" Quinn asked.

Immediately, Peter ran up to Quinn, and he gave him a strong punch on the shoulder. "I knew it, I knew you would be alive! These champions didn't kill you after all."

Hikel, Peter, and Russ, all three of them were in the cave, but this was another world, another universe, so how were they here and why were they here?

"Wait, why are you guys here, did you follow me, why would you do that!" Quinn asked, a little angry at their decision.

"Quinn," Hikel interrupted. "Is that really important right now? We came to help you; what is happening is a matter that will involve us as well. We are not to be babysat by you, and we can make our own decisions. We have all lived long lives, so we can do as we wish."

The initial shock had made Quinn react strongly, but he knew Hikel was right. "I'm just happy you're safe after making it here, but I have to ask, is it just you guys that are here, or are there others here as well?"

Chapter 2499: Quinn's Duty

Hikel had informed Quinn of everything that had gone on so far. Including as to who had decided to come to this different world after Quinn, and how it was possible for them. The familiars even came out from Peter's side for a moment to show Quinn their welcome, all apart from the Boneclaw.

For what reason, unsure, maybe it was due to the past connection they had, and what had occurred the last time the two had met. An explanation was given for their actions. Ovinnik gave a quick run down as to what was going on in the Familiar world as well.

After learning from everyone, he was truly at a loss for words.

'These guys, more of them came over than I expected.' Quinn wanted to get angry at them. He wanted to tell them they were idiots, but then what would that make him?

How could he do such a thing to people who were willingly sacrificing their lives just to help him. If anything, he felt guilty, that he couldn't solve this problem before it got to this stage, and that he wasn't strong enough.

There were those that he did want to give an earful to and that was the champions who had kept the whole thing secret from him. They could have at least informed him that his friends were there and allowed him to be the one to make the decision. He could tell though, to them, the training he had gone through was very important, and having learned something from it, he wasn't going to be quick to judge them.

"Then where are they all now?" Quinn asked. "With everything that is going on right now, aren't they all in danger? It feels like there is a war going on outside, and I have a feeling that this is the celestials doing."

"The celestials?" Hikel replied.

"Yeah, for a while now, they have been worried about a war starting between the two, but they were confident in the fact that Immortui could never escape this place. So what if he builds up an army and becomes ruler of this world? It was a world that they had long abandoned."

These words struck the champions more so than they could believe. Many of them had given up on believing in things like gods due to the cruelty they saw the inhabitants had suffered.

"That was why a while ago I was sealed away, because I was a key, a power that they could use to link between the two worlds. I don't know if they knew about Jessica at the time, or what... but I think they were more afraid of me.

"I can only imagine that they have started this attack, because they have learned that I'm in this space. They are worried that Immortui will go to the other side. Using whatever these things are, they can get rid of him before he builds a bigger army, or at least weaken him before his attack."

A loud bang was heard and Shinto's hand could be seen on the side of the cave wall. He was so frustrated by the whole situation he had to let out his anger in some way.

"But those things, they attacked us as well. I could feel it, couldn't you guys feel it as well?" Shinto asked. "They had no mind of their own, they only had one goal, one target and that was to kill whatever is in front of it. Which means that right now, probably all of the inhabitants, on all of the planets, are being killed and slaughtered."

The others didn't say anything because they knew he was right, and it was the same for Quinn. He could actually feel the constant death and the blood being spilt all over going on.

"As I said, this could become a very dangerous situation very quickly, so where are the others? We need to help them, or get them out of whatever situation they are in." Quinn asked.

Again there was a moment of silence and the one to speak up was Russ.

"You guys just tell the guy already!" Russ said. "Chris and Edvard, they were out there fighting along with us, they met up with one of the demon kings while we did as well and we split up.

"But do you really think that werewolf guy, is going to die from that, not a chance. I saw how desperate he was in that pit." Russ claimed. "As for Sil, he's the one that you should be worrying about."

It was then that Peter decided to speak up, as he walked in front.

"Sil... he decided to face Immortui." Peter explained. "While you were asleep, Immortui was tracking us down after rescuing you from him. He had created clones as a diversion, but then Immortui was tracking them down, taking them out quickly, so he decided to buy time for us to get the demon king blood, and for you to wake up."

Grinding his teeth, Quinn nearly immediately left the cave until Hikel stood in his way.

"This is why we were cautious of telling you Quinn. We still don't have all of the demon kings' blood that you need!" Hikel said, as he pulled out the flask from his trousers and handed it over.

"If you head out there, do you think you can find where Sil is? It's impossible, with his powers, they could be anywhere."

"But he's fighting Immortui because of me!" Quinn shouted back. "If I hadn't been in that state, then Sil wouldn't be risking his life."

"Do you think he's that weak?" Peter asked. "You and I both have known SII for a very long time. We have known him since the start. He has gotten through a lot, and even though a 1000 years passed, he was still able to survive."

There were the others to think about as well. Chris and Edvard could be out there going up against a demon king. What if they weren't capable of taking it out, or had done it and were running from the Divine beings that were littered throughout the planet.

"Peter, I know what you're saying." Quinn said. "And you're right, but I can't lose any more of you. I've lost too much on this entire journey. Like you said, we have been there with each other from the beginning. Ever since the academy, even when things were hard, Sil would take over Vorden's body and help us.

"He even helped us escape from Blade island, and has saved us more times than I can count. I can't just do nothing. I have to try help him somehow."

"Then drink the blood." Hikel said. "We managed to get the blood of one of the demon kings in that flask. You do what you need to do, and we will go support Chris and Edvard out there."

"We will go as well." Pultra said. "I think this is a chance. This war that's going on has distracted them. This might be our only chance to get rid of all of the demon kings and Immortui."

Opening up the flask, Quinn gulped it down, and he could immediately feel something changing in his body. A tingling sensation that was going on throughout. The blood that was being split on the other planets, he could feel it as well, his senses were growing.

[Quest update]

[Blood of the Demon King Luce has been consumed]

[2 of 5 Demon King's blood has now been consumed]

[A higher level blood has been detected, an update to a quest has been secured]

[4 / 5 Demon General's blood has been consumed]

This had come to a surprise to Quinn but it had made sense to him as well. If he consumed the demon king's blood, then why would he need to consume a lesser blood such as that of the general.

Now it had confirmed his suspicions, that he could just go for the demon kings, but if he just got one more blood type, then his blood aura should get an upgrade.

The last blood type that Quinn needed to get was that of the werewolf demons, either from Unzoku, or his generals, since he was in need for the blood of the demon king as well anyway.

"I'll be at the place where we were training at." Quinn said, looking at Pultra. "If you manage to get more of the demon kings' blood, especially of the werewolf race you talked about, then come to me. It will help in our situation.

"Everyone, I've said this before, but stay alive, I don't plan on saying goodbye to any of you." Quinn said, as he left the cave.

'If I can't find Immortui and Sil, then I will just have to find a way, to bring him to me.'

Chapter 2500: Feeling blood

After seeing Quinn head off to do whatever it was he was about to do, the group realised that the task for them hadn't changed much. The main goal was to get the demon king's blood.

"At the moment, there are only three more of the demon kings' blood that we need right?" Hikel asked.

"Yes." Pultra answered. "The Yak demon king's blood, Tenbris, the demon king of the skies, and finally Unzoku, the demon king of the Werewolves."

"Not just get their blood, but we also need to get rid of the demon kings." Calva said. "We know Quinn is strong, and he has the strength to get rid of Immortui, but if their fight is a close one, then just one of the demon kings could turn the tide. We need to get rid of them if we can as well."

"Then you're saying there's a good chance that there are four demon kings out there, and Chris and Edvard are fighting against them, themselves?" Russ stated.

They had seen Unzoku arriving on one of the large battleships. They had seen Tenbris flying through the sky with his flock of demons even now battling against the Divine Brigade.

They had, for certain, seen Luce and Bisha. The task was a tall one, and in some ways they thought if Quinn was by their side he would help them take them out, but the situation wasn't as clear as it was meant to be.

"Well, we can't just sit here and talk about it." Peter exclaimed. "We have to go and bring them back. Focus on the blood, and kill them if we have the chance, it's that simple."

Peter stood at the edge of the cave and then leapt out descending down the mountain. In turn the rest had decided to follow. The group were running fast through the forest, and almost instantly, had managed to catch the attention of the Divine beings that were flying above.

Instantly they started to defend, as the Divine beings fired away, destroying the ageing trees from above. Hikel, swung his arm and blood aura swipe exploded in the sky covering them as much as possible.

Several of the golden beings started to fire towards the front, aiming to block their path. For Russ, with transforming his legs into that of the Penswi race, he rushed in front of the shots and held out his hand with his god slayer item.

He absorbed the blow of each of them blocking all of the hits. Which allowed Peter, Calva, and Shinto to do the rest, they had leapt forward and using their

powers, cut, punched and stabbed right through the Divine beings, not slowing down and continuing on ahead.

"I was surprised that you would block those attacks for us, have you started to take a liking to us?" Hikel asked.

"In your dreams." Russ retorted. "If we run into those demon kings again, I don't want to die, and this is the perfect opportunity to get my MC cells up as high as possible. Just leave stopping their attacks to me."

"I have a feeling that Chris will be going after Unzoku!" Hikel claimed. "Based on the way he acted before. At the same time, it's one of the demon king's blood that we haven't obtained. Let's head in that direction first!"

The others were in agreement, but as they continued forward, several white lines shooting through the air was seen. Immediately upon seeing this, Russ pulled out the black sword, and swung, hitting one and stopping the rest of the attack.

He placed the sword away, and switched to gathering the power of the shadow around his arms, but he soon realised that it was a distraction, because right in front of them, there was suddenly a large white wall that had risen blocking their path. It was even taller than the top of the trees and had ascended in a second.

The group stopped, and an image could be seen forming out of the wall. Like a man walking out of water, Luce had appeared breaking through.

"Did you think that I would let you, who took my arm away, get away just like that. Even with everything going on, I can tell that you guys are the danger, and I need to get rid of you." Luce said. "And it looks like I've managed to catch a few extras. Who would have thought, in a situation like this, the Champions would have turned against us."

"Go!" Hikel shouted, his fingers behind his back, moving his hand and gesturing to the champions to go away. "We have business with this one, and we can handle him ourselves, you need to help the others!"

Using the shadow travel, Quinn realised that he could move through the area with relatively little trouble. He wouldn't attract the attention of the Divine beings doing this.

Which allowed him to reach the area he had trained in before. The barren wasteland with darkened, almost black, ground beneath him. The good thing was, the Divine Brigade looked to have stopped coming through the portals and they were starting to close up.

They had moved from the area and were fighting against the demon kings and the demons that had recently arrived on the planet. The area where Quinn was, it was void of people which was perfect for him.

Exiting out of the shadow space he stood there. He then closed his eyes.

'I have to think, think back to the sensation that I felt when I became a celestial. At the time of the evolution I could feel it, all of the blood on the other planets, all of the fighting that was going on.'

'With the demon blood, I can feel the blood a lot more accurately, but If I can ultimately do that again.'

First Quinn was trying to focus on the sounds that he could hear, and then all of the energy of the blood. He was the ruler of blood, this was where his power strived from, and right now he was planning to use it, gathering it in one place to give a beacon for Immortui.

'I know Sil, you did everything you could to protect me. You probably tried to buy as much time as possible, tried to keep him away from me, and now me calling him back, might just feel like a kick in the mouth.'

'But, just like you care about me, I care about you as well. I can't have another person die, I'm going to do whatever it is I can!'

Rather than reaching out for the blood that was being shed on the current planet Quinn was on, he was reaching out beyond, to all the blood being spilt and the energy from it was starting to move, all throughout the universe, it was heading towards Quinn.

Chapter 2501: Explosive power

Having already obtained the demon king Luce's blood, out of all of those that they needed to run into, he wasn't one of them. But they needed to get the demon kings' blood and fast, so they didn't have time to waste here.

"You would think, with the whole universe on fire and all this crap going on, that you wouldn't care about us so much?" Russ stated. "What's wrong, did we hurt your feelings when we cut off your arm?"

Hikel placed both hands on the ground, and red blood traveled in all of the cracks that were formed on the floor. When it had spread far enough, the blood exploded, creating a large formation of dust and dirt that was thrown all over the place.

This was the chance for the Champions to run. Since the large white wall was blocking their direct path toward where the others most likely were, they had to take a longer route around but listened well to the others.

"You guys are the most annoying things I have ever had to deal with before!" Luce shouted. The red mist aura moved, pushing all of the dust out of the way, and a spear, having been created from Luce's power, was in his hands, pointed right at Hikel.

Before it was thrust through him, Peter's head tail knocked it up and threw out a fist that was caught by Luce's hand.

"Didn't you learn your lesson last time?" Luce asked.

"What do you mean?" A black cat said sitting on Peter's shoulder. "Last time, you were the one who lost an arm."

Opening his mouth, the special flames that Ovinnik produced exploded and hit Luce right in the face. At first, Luce didn't react until he could feel the heat getting through to him somehow.

As the demon king averted his eyes, Peter went to throw another fist, that was until from the large white wall behind him, something had extended out that was long in size and sharp at the end.

Peter lifted up his forearm. He was covered in Qi, so the attack didn't pierce him, but it blasted him away with strong force, causing him to skid away. The moment Peter had recovered, from the large white wall, another attack shot out right toward him; he pushed through, trying to punch it back, but when the two collided, it did nothing.

Peter was seemingly having a battle with the large white wall. He was hitting back, punching as much as the attacks would come out to hit him, and the two were at a standstill. This allowed Luce to focus on Hikel.

With his hand, he went to hit Hikel directly, who had deflected the hit back. Punches were sent from both sides, but Luce had stronger hits. In order to help him pack a little more punch in his hits, Hikel was using his explosive power right at the point of impact, yet Luce was coming out of the smoke unharmed.

"You vampires are quite the strong creation of Immortui," Luce claimed. "But like many things that come from Immortui's power, they tend to have a downside."

A punch from Hikel missed, and when it hit the air, a large explosion went off, hitting nothing but the air. Luce pulled on the arm and shoved his white-coloured fist right into Hikel's stomach.

A shockwave of power was sent through his body as he was lifted up in the air for a moment, and right after, several spikes grew from Luce's knuckles, stabbing right through Hikel's body.

"The reason why me and Tenbris are known as Immortui's right-hand men is because we were created without a downside. All-powerful beings that don't need to rely on the moon, or need to rely on any blood, we are just strong."

Hikel had grabbed the hand that was in his stomach, and the markings on the entirety of his arms started to light up.

"I am not just a vampire," Hikel claimed. "I am one of the original vampires, who has lived for thousands and thousands of years. Do you know what that means?"

"It's your time to die?" Luce replied.

"No, we're hard to kill!"

With the markings lit up, a large swirl of red aura had arrived, and a powerful explosion, bigger than any other, had gone off in the area. The power had burned the giant trees by the side, and a shockwave was sent out like an atomic bomb.

If the trees hadn't been burnt, their branches had fallen, and they themselves had been uprooted from the ground. A large cloud of smoke could be seen from a great distance.

With his own Qi and power, Peter had been somewhat hit by the attack; the skin on his face was peeling, but he had firmly planted his feet where he was. His body would heal, especially if he got something to eat, but that wasn't his main concern.

"Hikel!" Peter shouted.

Moments before, he was fighting against the white wall that was sending attacks toward him, but it could no longer be seen, which was just worrying him even more.

"Don't tell me, did that stupid vampire just go and sacrifice himself?" Peter thought.

When the smoke finally started to settle, Peter could see Hikel was down on his knees. Both of his arms had been removed from his body. Removed was the wrong word, but they had exploded in the large explosion.

Part of his skin had been burnt off in areas, allowing for the flesh to be seen underneath, but it was slowly healing up as well. As for Luce, the Demon King he was facing, he stood right in front of him, but looked like a different being altogether.

Just like when Luce had lost his arm, he had replaced it with his power, forming a new one. Now the strange power the demon king had, was coated over his entire body, or his entire body was made up of the substance now; it was hard to tell. There were no clothes on his body, and he just looked like a mannequin at a shopping mall, but one of the most horrifying, fear inspiring, mannequins out there, since the power emitting from him was making them all shake.

"You managed to surprise me with how much power you had there," Luce exclaimed. "I never thought that I would have to use my demon form in a situation like this, yet here I am. I thought only one of you was irritating, but it seems like the whole lot of you are."

Appearing by Hikel's side was the Boneclaw; it quickly grabbed his body with its large claws and then went straight by Peter's side.

Right now Hikel was still alive, but without both of his arms, he had pretty much done everything he could do. Yet his opponent now looked completely fine.

"Hey, you look different. I guess that means we're managing to push you a bit now, huh? Are you getting a little worried?" A voice said from behind.

When turning around, Luce could see Russ; he was standing right where the wall once was. While Luce was dealing with the other two, Russ could have easily stopped the wall.

With his Penswi legs, he could have sprinted past Luce and then taken his black sword and hit the wall, freeing up a chance for Peter to fight and help Hikel.

But how could he pass this opportunity? Using the black sword would get rid of this power, turning it into as if it was nothing, but if he placed his hand that had the god slayer item onto the wall, then he could go ahead and absorb all of the energy.

Doing so, the wall had disappeared, and it wasn't because of Hikel's explosion but because of Russ' power.

"I already told you before, that I'm the most annoying one out of all of these, yet you still chose to ignore me," Russ claimed. "I hope that explosion was nice for you; will you be able to deal with a few more?"

Two figures were starting to rise from the ground. They were muscular, strong, and had several markings all over their body, and they were identical to Hikel, and it wasn't just in looks either.

Their body was in full display, similar to the current hikel with all the markings and aura surrounding him.

"Hikel, it seems like you held back using your power because you were a little afraid of dying," Russ smiled. "Don't worry, these two aren't scared of dying. They'll do a better job."

Chapter 2502: A New Chris

The feast on the demon king had been complicated, and power like never before could be felt coursing through every inch of Chris' body. It was an entirely new sensation he had never felt before.

The touch of the wind on his skin, the feeling of being connected with his body reacting and moving as he wished. It was similar to when he had first learned Qi, and it was unlike when he had consumed the others.

This was something new, almost like a new type of evolution. This sensation, though, was short-lived as the attack had started with the Divine Beings' portals opening up. After having a scuffle or two, they had gotten out of the situation rather quickly.

Edvard pulled the two of them out of the area and had dealt with those following them before Chris was able to use his newfound self, and the two of them had quickly headed into the forest.

Even then, Chris, while there, was continuing to look at his hand. He was swiping it through the air slowly, and the wind currents, thick in size, were visibly moving around his hand.

"What is this? I don't quite know what is going on myself," Chris said.

"Me neither, I mean what is all this mess everywhere?" Edvard said. "The good news is that we managed to get a flask full of blood. I'm not sure about the others, not that I'm in a good state to help them."

The armour acted in a strange way. One almost needed to feed it with its own power, whether that be Qi or blood aura, and in turn, it would allow the person to explode with a bigger hit.

The dragon armour was essentially a natural amplifier for one's power. However, with the single hit from the Demon King, from the Yak, even now, even though he was an original, Edvard was feeling a lot of pain in his chest.

'Crap, what did that damn giant do to me? This isn't just like a normal physical blow. Like this, I don't think I'll be able to help anyone,' Edvard thought.

"We have to go," Chris said, his nose twitching in the air slightly. "They're coming!"

Edvard had no clue what Chris was talking about; he couldn't hear anything, nor see anything. A few moments later, though, he could see what looked like around a hundred of the Divine Beings coming their way like a swarm of wasps.

The two quickly ran back, heading toward the ship site. "It seems like these things are attacking us and the demons. Let's head for the golden palace where the rest of the demons are. Let's not waste our energy fighting these guys."

Chris agreed, and the two continued to head towards the city of the Yaks, avoiding all of the beams of energy sent towards them. Chris jumped from one side to the next as he only touched the ground for a moment.

'I wonder if... I could get rid of all these in one go?' Chris thought, looking at his claw.

That was when a new scent entered his nose. Quickly turning around due to the momentum and power in his legs, Chris had continued to skid across the floor. That's when he could see it.

One of the same giant ships that they had seen the Yaks creating was flying through the air, and based on its course, it was heading for the same location that they were going towards. More importantly, on the ship itself was the one Chris was aiming for.

"Make sure that blood gets to Quinn. I trust you, and I'll get the one we need from him."

Before Edvard could even shout anything, Chris had dug his feet further into the ground and shot through the air, leaving a large trail of what looked like visible smoke behind him, but it was just the wind.

'Was he holding back in his speed for me... a vampire? I knew werewolves were more physically capable than us, and I'm not using the power of the armour at this moment, but I can't even see him off in the distance anymore.'

A large blast of dark energy had exploded by Edvard's side, causing him to jump a little. If he broke his concentration, then he might very well just end up dying to these strange angel-looking creatures.

Chris had already reached the city of the Yaks, where the local houses looked like giant temples themselves with their large red pointed sloping roofs. The houses were large to suit the living of the giant Yaks in them.

While running through the area, he was running through a large battlefield. One of the Yaks had been pierced with a dark spear in his stomach and had been pushed into the air, crashing right into a building.

The Yak was kicking its legs while trying to push off the Divine Beings. But soon, many others had come, piercing their spears right into the Yak's body. The next moment, another Yak had landed, jumping from above, and with a heavy fist, had punched right through three of the Divine Beings, splatting their bodies like bugs.

For Chris, though, he kept his eyes on the prize above; he continued to run forward and could see the large ship near the golden palace. That's when two of the Divine Beings had gotten in his way.

One of them was dark in colour, the other gold. It was a simple jump from Chris, and he stretched out his hands. He didn't swing them; he didn't even feel as if he had put any force through them.

When his claws and fingers had touched both of their faces, though, it had gone right through them. There had been no resistance at all, and yet, the two Divine Beings had been killed like that.

A simple run and the stretch of the arms. Chris was right; he knew something had changed within him.

Getting close, Chris had scaled one of the houses, and then ran across on all fours for a short while, digging his claws. He used the power in his hands to push off and head into the air toward the golden palace.

Using one of the houses as a base to push off from, it had crumbled in the process. Stretching out his hand, he reached the golden palace and climbed right to the very top. Looking out, he was now on the same level as the ship.

"I need to get higher!" Chris leapt off from the very top pillar, and then creating his Qi platforms, he ran across until he had reached the ship. Using his Qi platforms, he ascended higher into the sky, and then he was ready.

Running back down, Chris created the Qi platforms again, and when he was the right distance away:

"What's that smell?" Unzoku thought, looking up, but it was too late.

Chris exploded off with power from the Qi platform he had made, and rather than doing nothing with his claws this time, he gathered power and swung them down, crashing right in the centre of the giant ship. The whole top floor was bent in half as the two sides lifted up. Chris had managed to cut right through the entire ship, and now the werewolves were falling out of the sky.

Chapter 2503: Clash of the Wolves

Supercharging himself, Chris had used the power of his Qi, the power in his werewolf body, and the power in his hands to strike down on the giant ship. The ship which he was unable to make a scratch on the outside before, the ship that was built to go against the powerful celestials that ruled.

With a swing of both of his arms, a large power was unleashed and a thunderous roar exploded with the swing of his arms as he sliced right through the ship. The claw marks had gone right through the top deck, breaking right through until it slashed the centre.

The two halves had broken, and the weight of each side was being lifted in the air, as everyone was now falling to the ground below.

The werewolves were desprealty clawing at the air as they fell to the ground, while some had been struck in the air by the Divine beings before they even fell to the ground.

In the midst of all the chaos, Unzoku was trying to find the culprit that had started this all, and then he could see it.

"It's that red one from before!" Unzoku smiled, revealing the back of his large razor sharp teeth. Although Chris wasn't currently red and using his stage 4 Qi form, the demon king did make note of the werewolf's appearance, this was because he had made quite the impression on him.

The large ship had crashed onto the city below, crushing the buildings and the werewolves, although they had taken quite a big tumble, would be able to survive something like this. The many werewolves started to emerge from the wreckage, and they wasted no time as they leapt up, attacking the Divine beings in front of them.

Some stretched out their hand pulling the spears away from their hands then leaping up and biting down on their necks. When doing this though, no blood would be drawn, it was hard to tell what the Divine beings were because they almost didn't seem alive.

Edvard had finally reached the Yak city, and just as he had predicted, many of the Divine beings that had been following him up till this point, had split off to fight the demons close by.

While Edvard had jumped into one of the giant houses. He quickly went up the stairs and leapt up on top of one of the giant beds and was now lying on the giant mattress.

'This is nice to just take a breather for a moment.'

The fighting was still furiously going off outside, with explosions going off one after another. At any moment, a demon or a Divine being, could come crashing through the building, but Edvard just wanted to rest.

'Hopefully with my ability, nothing will end up coming this way.'

While lying down, there was something else that Edvard wanted to do, and that was to check the state of his body. Why was he still in so much pain, after receiving the hit from before?

Looking down, he was taking a peek under his armour. It was hard to see, so he proceeded to take off part of the gauntlet around his arms and as he did a horrifying sight occurred.

Blood was already seeping out from the armour, falling onto the mattress, and his arm looked like a tangled mess. All of the bones in the arm itself looked to have been shattered in a way, piercing his skin.

'How is this possible?' Edvard thought to himself, and quickly locked the armour in again. There was a searing pain he could feel the moment he took off the armour.

'Wait, could it be because of the armour? Is it holding everything in my body in place right now? If I take this off, would my whole body just fall apart, am I only alive because I still have this armour on?'

It was a crazy theory to have, but looking at the state of just his arm, he was willing to believe it. The attack from the demon king, the Yak Bisha. Although the armour was still intact, his body wasn't and ever since the attack he didn't quite feel the same.

'This might go beyond something my vampire body can heal... Chris, it looks like you might be on your own on this one. I know you can beat that ugly werewolf.'

Edvard smiled.

With the situation the way it was, Edvard eventually lifted his upper body and stared out of the large window. It showed just what was happening outside. Moving closer, he wanted to get a better view, and he could see that far off into the distance several more objects were heading their way, heading toward the land of the giants.

'Those are the same type of ships that were being built on this planet, and there are so many of them.'

On each of the giant ships there were different demon races that were approaching. As they made their way to the planet, they had brought along with them a horde of Divine beings.

A full scale battle was going on as the demons were fighting back. It wasn't just the demons that they had seen so far, but many different types as well, and there were

even a few ships that just had a concentrated amount of werewolves on them as well.

The planet of the giants was becoming the centrepiece for a large-scale war.

After the giant ship had fallen out of the sky, falling to the ground below. Chris allowed himself to drop down, landing in the middle of the chaos. As he did, he was looking straight ahead at the large sized Unzoku.

"It seems you've managed to gain some power. I guess you decided to listen to my advice after all." Unzoku said.

One of the werewolves had caught onto Chris, and immediately dashed towards him. When he got close, a blur appeared from Chris' arm and then went back in place. It was hard to see, but the results were clear.

The werewolf's body had been sliced, split from the top of the head down to every part of its body. Several pieces had been made and they fell to the ground.

The tough Glutton werewolves who were at the pinnacle of a werewolf had been killed with a strike that hadn't been seen.

"You have gotten very strong, how were you able to amass such power in such a short time?" Unzoku wondered.

Chris looked at his hand again, and it started to transform into its werewolf form. The fur on his body was growing.

"I was already strong, having grown my Qi strength as high as possible, using the skill of the Qi drain." Chris said to himself. "My own body had grown incredibly strong before I had even become a werewolf... and now the werewolf part of me has grown in strength as well. Having consumed another one of you demon kings, I have obtained a new strength."

"This is my power!"

Chapter 2504: The second grand meet

Quite a bit of time had passed since Sil had reached the island, and a flood of memories had come back to him while he was there. Thankfully, it looked like none of the Divine beings that had appeared before had arrived where he was.

Still, even with all the time passing, he was worried about something. His MC cells were restoring while he was resting, but there was an odd sensation still felt in his stomach.

It was clear Immortui had done something; the question was just what had he done? Using a healing ability and trying out a few other abilities, Sil tried to rid the feeling that was in his stomach, but none of it was making it go away.

The healing ability was the only thing that had been keeping it slightly at bay. However, it was clear that it was growing in size.

'This thing is spreading inside me. If I remember correctly, he had used the colorless ability,' Sil thought. 'But the Champions, they weren't aware that he can use it out of his body as well, and he might be able to use it in more ways than one.'

'I don't know what's going to happen to me; it might spread across my entire body, but I have to tell Quinn no matter what about what he can do.'

With his MC cells recovered and time running short, it was time for him to teleport out of the situation he was in.

'I hope I never have to return to an island like this again.'

Teleporting away, Sil had no real direction as to where he needed to go. When he had teleported Immortui as far away as he could, he was just doing so frantically, not sure about where to end up.

So he just started as he headed off to the closest part where there was noise, and immediately he had fallen into a war zone taking place on a plane.

There were the Chrono inhabitants having grabbed weapons that they had made, mainly axes and swords. They were strong and powerful, as they fought against the divine beings, but it seemed useless.

A pattern was emerging that was tiring out the inhabitants, the fact that the godly beings were able to heal their allies.

'I can't help them; that isn't something I can do right now,' Sil said to himself.

Just as he was ready to teleport away again, after confirming there being no presence of Quinn or the others, he saw a spear stab a Chrono right through the chest. Blood splattered out and flew through the air.

When looking at the blood itself, Sil noticed something strange. It wasn't falling quickly toward the ground; it was floating slightly and eventually hit the floor. It was perhaps unnoticeable, especially to those that were fighting for their lives, but because it had happened right in front of him, he noticed the bizarre action.

When taking a closer look at the blood, that's when he noticed that it was also moving on the ground as well. It wasn't moving very fast, but it looked as if it was crawling in a specific direction.

For a moment, Sil thought he was going mad, but he could see it happening all around him, with all the other fallen blood as well.

'It couldn't be, could it?'

Teleporting away, Sil had arrived on another planet. It was pretty much in the same state as the last, with blood being spilled all over the place. Only this time, the blood that was on the ground was lifting slightly upward, moving to a certain location.

Teleporting, Sil hoped to another planet. Now the blood wouldn't drop to the floor; instead, it was in the air heading in one direction. It was clear there was a pattern going on here.

Continuing to go from planet to planet, following the blood, Sil had eventually found himself landing on the planet of the giants. He was able to return. Instead of heading to the cave or looking through the fight that was going on, he continued to follow the blood.

The planet was large, so instead of running, Sil had teleported one more time, and he had landed right where he wanted. He could see Quinn standing on his own, his eyes were closed.

Blood was flowing all around him, from out of the space in the sky. As it came close to him, it was turning into small red particles, somewhat similar to the blood aura he would use. It then swirled around his body, entering through the pores of his skin, giving him a thick glowing layer over his body.

Having sensed something coming in front of him, he opened his eyes. "Sil!" Quinn said.

"Stop!" Sil shouted. "I can see you're doing something important, so carry on and focus; don't break your attention, and I will be the one that does the talking."

Little did Sil know that Quinn was doing this all in the first place to help Sil, but now that he was in this strange state, this absorption method, he didn't want to let go of it. The power he was gaining was similar to that when he had evolved into the blood celestial. He had never felt so in tune with his blood powers before.

"Not too long ago, I had a battle with Immortui. As you can see, I am very much alive," Sil explained. "Through my battle, I did everything I could to hold him back while waiting for you to wake up, and it looks like I succeeded."

"But, Quinn, Immortui is extremely strong, which is why I want to inform you of his powers."

"The Champions already told me what Immortui is capable of," Quinn said, still focusing on the power around him and closing his eyes.

"That's good to hear; it means I can keep this short then," Sil replied. "His colorless power, he is able to use it outside of his body, or he is at least able to detach it from himself. Think of it as another energy he can control, and the two snakes over his shoulder, they contain power just as strong as the red mist he can control."

"I wish I could help you more; I wish I could have fought by your side... but it looks like you will have to do this on your own. I will stay safe."

Before Quinn could say anything else, Sil had teleported away. He didn't want him to worry, especially when he himself didn't know what was wrong with him.

'Sil, it's good to see you're alive, but the fact that you were unable to beat him just goes to show how strong he is as well,' Quinn thought.

As if to interrupt him in the middle of his thoughts, falling right from the sky and touching the ground ever so softly, not even harming a single dust mark on the floor, Immortui had floated down, covered in a red mist aura that surrounded the area. It swirled around him, just like the blood was swirling around Quinn.

"I thought all of this might be your doing! I'm surprised to see you like this!" Immortui said.

[Demon form: Still unavailable]

Chapter 2505: Luce vs Russ

The demon king Luce stood there in his full white form. He had been unharmed by Hikel's attempt, and in the process, Hikel had lost his arms. It was a wasted effort in trying to finish the demon off. Without his arms, he would now be far weaker than before.

Still, Russ, having seen the power of what Hikel was capable of, knew that his explosive power or his suicide attack had to be strong. Otherwise, why would Luce transform into his demon form?

Having absorbed the large white wall of power, this gave Russ an idea. Thanks to his god slayer-tier item, he now had more MC cells than he had ever before. With his hands placed on the ground, two Hikels were summoned.

'If just two simple arms managed to cause that big of an explosion, then let's see what two complete Hikels blowing up will do!'

Both of the Hikels that had been made rushed forward and leapt right towards Luce. Their whole bodies started to light up, and seeing this, both Hikel and Peter thought they might be in trouble.

Out from the ground next to Peter, one of the four familiar Kings appeared. Giving off its mystic blue smoke was none other than Dunluck. Pete grabbed Hikel and threw him onboard while getting on himself, and the two scattered away in a hurry.

With each step Dunluck took, he was gliding in the air, getting far away.

'Don't you think we should help Russ?' Hikel said.

'You've been around him long enough, do you think he did this attack with the idea of protecting ourselves in mind?' Peter replied back.

It was true; right now, Russ had also summoned the shadow power and was ready to protect himself from the backfire of the explosion. And sure enough, both of them exploded, this time using their whole bodies with such force. A giant mushroom cloud, two right next to each other, had almost combined into one far larger than before. The whole surface of the planet felt like it was shaking. A giant deep crater had been made that pushed so far down that lava was now spewing out from the ground, and nearly the whole forest had been eliminated.

Peter and Hikel had managed to travel out of the area, almost heading right back to the mountain where they were before, and when they turned around, nearly the entire forest had been destroyed. It looked nothing like it once had.

'This is the power that I'm now able to achieve, with the blood control and my ability,' Hikel thought.

However, it wasn't quite right. There were two of him, for one, and there was something else that Hikel wasn't accounting for. Although the explosion was large in size, it wasn't more powerful. There was a limit to how powerful his explosions would be, which was why, in the centre of all the mess, was what looked like a giant egg. It looked like the same thing that Peter was trapped in not too long ago.

The outside started to descend down, and Luce was seen coming out of the large crater created by the explosion, completely unharmed.

'Your power is really interesting, but you failed to notice the real power that had come from the last attack,' Luce claimed. 'I did not change into this demon form because I thought I would get hurt.'

Due to the large explosion, it had caught the attention of many of the Divine beings in the area. A large flock of them were flying in the air and heading toward the group, just like before.

They were appearing behind Luce, but he did not turn around. When they got close, out from his own body from his back, several lines were extending out. It was similar to the giant wall, only they were coming out of his back. They were going through the air fast, moving in a straight line. When the Divine beings tried to avoid it, it followed them in the quickest route possible until each one of them was pierced in the body, almost at the same time.

The attack spread out after killing one and continued to branch out, going into the others. Almost growing out from his back was what looked like a tree of death, since every single one of the Divine beings in the air had been pierced, and their bodies were starting to disappear.

'I transformed because I wanted to finish the task quickly,' Luce stretched out his hand, and from his power, it stretched out, aiming toward Russ. Seeing this, he did what he usually did and moved his god-slayer hand in the way, hoping to absorb the energy.

When it touched, though, the white substance went straight through his hand, piercing through his skin, and it was continuing forward toward his head.

'What... my god-slayer item, it didn't absorb the power!' Russ was stunned, and just before the attack reached him, shadows appeared, blocking its path.

'Your little thing is quite amazing, the items and tools you have, but they're easy to figure out,' Luce stated. 'You can draw enemies from attacks and projectiles out of the body. With the sword, you can even stop abilities, but this is not the same as the power before. In my demon form, my power is me, and you can't just vanish my body or absorb my body away!'

Pulling out the sword with his other hand, Russ swung, attempting to cut the white line of power. As it hit, it made a cut; it sliced through it, breaking it off and

allowing Russ to back away. But just as Luce said, it didn't make the rest of him or the attack disappear.

'It didn't disappear. It just cut part of him like any other sword would have done.'

'That sword is very interesting!' Luce exclaimed, seeing this. His power wouldn't have been able to be cut by a regular sword, which made him wonder just what that was.

With his hand full of blood, and Russ backed away, he was wondering what to do next. Did he try to use his own power against him? Did he summon an army to try to take him on? It just felt like if he attempted any of that, then he would just kill all of them.

Russ gripped his hand on the sword tighter and lifted it, pointing it at Luce.

'It's a shame... I really didn't want to use him again. I got quite the headache last time, and it just doesn't sit too well with me because it doesn't feel like I'm the one that's going to kill you. Oh well, I guess I'll just have to be happy with your defeat.'

Looking into the mind of the sword, a dark ring appeared around Russ's feet, and glowing power started to rise from below. It was pure, covering him completely until it faded away, and now stood there in Russ' place, holding the black sword in his hand, was a larger man, muscular with long black hair. The top half of his body on display while his bottom just covered and wrapped by a tattered black cloth. It was the Black Swordsman.

Chapter 2506: Russ vs Luce

The power of the Black Swordsman, his own body drawn from his own memories of how powerful he was, now stood on the battlefield. It firmly held its sword by its side as it took steps in the crater, encircling Luce.

Unlike before, Russ had been careful not to use a large amount of MC cells, and thanks to his god slayer item, he was able to absorb a substantial number of MC cells as well, allowing him to use this power a bit longer than before.

"Haha, what is this? You think just because you've changed, things will be different now? That's very unlikely," Luce exclaimed.

He went to move forward, but when he did, a large slash cut through the air, and a dark aura emanated from the sword, cutting up the ground. Seeing this, Luce transformed his arm into a shield and was pushed back by the force until it eventually stopped.

Usually, this attack produced by the Black Swordsman would have the same effect as the sword itself. Anything it touched that had an energy force, and not a life force, would disappear.

But just as Luce claimed, his powers were now a part of him as well, so they wouldn't just disappear.

"You are quick to react, but I am far better than you!" Luce charged forward, and the Black Swordsman swung his sword twice.

The attacks went through the ground and the air, leaving large lines of aura that almost pierced the sky and continued forward. The attacks didn't go straight at Luce but instead passed right by his side.

While the swordsman himself dashed forward and swung a large blow from below. Seeing this, forming out of Luce's hand, was a spear, and he swung it down, both of them clashing against each other and going toe to toe.

With his other hand, Luce had formed another spear and shoved it forward, aiming to stab the swordsman in the head. He was able to avoid the blow and deflect the other spear.

Two spears were thrusting back and forth, constantly, while the swordsman was deflecting them all, taking a step back, one at a time, blocking all the blows.

"Come on!" Russ shouted in his head. "When I gave you the go-ahead to take this fight, I thought you were going to deal with this straight away, just like you did with that Dalki."

"If you have fought this person, then you should know as well that it's not that easy!" The sword replied. "Their speed, strength, and their power. Even with my powers, it seems as if the negative energy attacks aren't getting through. It looks like only the sword itself is going to be able to hurt him."

"If your powers aren't working against them, then aren't you just a useless swordsman?"

The Black Swordsman quickly shifted his feet to the side and held his sword with both hands. A swing from above his head, and black aura was unleashed, hitting the two spears dead on.

They swung his whole body off balance, and with the sword by his side, he struck again, landing a large strike right across the side of Luce's body.

Luce's white-coloured skin had a slight marking left on it, like a chalk mark on the wall. Although it might have been insignificant to most, it was the first mark on his body that they had achieved since he had turned into this form, even if it didn't draw blood.

When close, though, Luce stretched out parts of his body, extending out like the wall, and several spikes emerged. With a sweeping motion, the swordsman blocked half of the strikes, but the other half pierced through his leg.

Quickly, the swordsman jumped back, blood falling from him.

"I have to admit, you are skillful. Perhaps if you were fighting any of the other demon kings, you would be strong enough to have bested them. Unfortunately, you are going up against me," Luce claimed.

There was worry on Russ' mind, and it was about how much longer this fight would last. Russ did have more MC cells, so he could summon the Black Swordsman for longer, but he was hoping to go against an opponent where he could use his god slayer item consistently.

In a way, with the god slayer item, it would allow him to use his power and go on, but in this situation, he was going against the one opponent that made things difficult for him.

However, there was one thing going for Russ. The Black Swordsman summoned here was stronger than the one Sil had summoned, and there was a simple reason for that. Russ had used the imagination of the sword, which believed itself to be incredibly strong.

While the swordsman that Immortui had faced was one that he had bested before. It was long ago, and there was next to no worry in his fight against him.

"If only there was a distraction, an opportunity to strike, this would be a lot easier."

Luce came forward with both spears again, and when he thrust one forward, two spikes grew out from the pole part of the spear.

Even though the Black Swordsman had deflected the spear, now from the side, he was being attacked by the weapon itself. He tilted his head in time to avoid a lethal blow, but the other spear came towards him.

"ARGHH!" Charging the sword, it was covered in the same black aura it would release, and swirling it around, he forced one spear to hit another.

"I just need a moment, a perfect moment to strike!" The swordsman thought.

If he got that perfect moment, he would put his all into a strike to the neck and finish this demon with everything he had.

"NEIGHHH!" A loud sound of a horse rippled through the air. It was piercing to all those who heard it, affecting their insides.

The horse had appeared, and it was going through the air covered in a blue mist. Peter was riding on the back of it, both his head tails covering his hand, and at just the right moment, using the momentum and speed of Dunluck, he jumped in the air.

"EAT SH*T!" Peter screamed, as he swung his mighty fist right into Luce's face. It was a direct hit. The power was explosive with Qi and the added speed. Not only that, but there was something else, Peter's fist had celestial energy in it.

As the hit touched Luce's face, part of the white substance, it looked as if it was splitting apart, and it was splitting his skin as well.

"This is it!" The Black Swordsman had quickly gone to the side; this was the opening he needed. His sword glowing with black aura, he swung it right for the neck.

"Let's end this!"

Chapter 2507: Black Swordsman vs Luce

This was it, this was the opportunity that the swordsman was waiting for. The brute force of the hit provided enough power for the swordsman to charge up his own attack.

Gathering his power, the black sword emitted what looked like a ripple of flames. It moved up and down like a chainsaw around the blade. Perfectly positioned, he swung the blade, aiming it right through Luce's neck. As the sword hit, the aura started to do its work.

It rapidly moved around in a circle like a saw, breaking away the strange skin that covered Luce's body. A squirt of blood sprayed out as the sword landed and fell to the floor.

Luce's body went flying to the side and crashed into the ground. Due to the crater created from the explosion, they were fighting in what looked like a large upside-down dome.

After crashing, it didn't take long for Luce to stand on his feet, holding the side of his neck with the palm of his hand. Blood was dripping down his body.

"All of you are incredibly annoying, aren't you?" Luce lifted his hand off his neck, and there was a smudge of blood dripping down, but the wound that had been made had disappeared.

"For f*ck's sake!" Russ screamed internally. "We did all of that for a small scratch on his neck, and he just goes and heals it in a second."

The swordsman didn't know how to reply either; he had so confidently stated that as long as he got an opportunity, he would have been able to finish this fight in one hit.

"We managed to hurt him, though, which means it's possible to kill him as well."

Russ felt the swordsman's confidence, but he wasn't very hopeful in this situation until, for a brief moment, something happened. Luce went to take a step forward, and as he did, he stumbled for a second, and his hand was pressed on his head.

"Was it that punch?" Luce retraced it; he could feel its power, something had gotten through to him. A type of power had breached his defenses. "You?"

Footsteps were heard, and Peter was already upon Luce. Some people might have waited to see the condition of the terrifying demon king that had shown great power, but for Peter, what was the point anyway?

Because he had already decided that he wasn't going to run away, so he might as well continue to keep hitting the other.

The headtails were now wrapped around each of Peter's hands. He threw out a Qi-infused celestial punch, but it was grabbed by Luce, and in turn, he threw a punch back, hitting Peter on the head while continuing to hold onto his fist.

Peter gritted his teeth; even with his hand being held, he continued to try and throw out a punch. It landed cleanly on Luce's body, but it looked as if there was no reaction at all. Still, Peter continued to punch the same spot over and over.

It hit the same spot, targeting his stomach, and eventually, power began seeping through, and Luce felt some pain.

"All of you, all of you are so annoying!" Luce raised his hand, creating the spear again.

This one wasn't dying, no matter what he did, but he was sure that if he stabbed it through the head, it would be the end, or at least the end of the annoying headtails on top.

When the spear was thrust forward, a strange pulse emitted in the area, a wave of power that went through all of those in the vicinity. When it hit Luce, it delayed him for a moment, and also froze Peter, but there was one person unaffected.

The swordsman clashed his sword against Luce's spear and swung it to the side, landing two hits on his side and thrusting the tip in the center, hitting him in the same spot as Peter had been targeting.

Luce was sent back once again, his feet skidding across the floor. When he looked up, he noticed what the disruption from before was caused by. The horse was standing in the centre of the field.

It was dragging its hooves across the ground, drawing out some type of strange power, and when it lifted its front end and slammed it on the ground, the pulse of power was emitted. When the power coursed through one's body, it caused an instinctive shudder.

It didn't freeze a person, but it made them a bit hesitant as the feeling passed through their bodies, except for the swordsman.

"You are all so annoying!"

Luce charged forward, and he was on the offensive, thrusting the spear and clashing with the sword. He thrust both, and it was hard for the swordsman to keep up. When Peter dived to his side, Luce didn't even turn to look. From his shoulder,

a large spike extended out, stabbing him right in the stomach, keeping him suspended in the air.

"ARGHH!" Luce, beyond annoyed, slammed his spear hard, hitting the fingers of the black swordsman, causing them to bleed. If he made him drop that sword, then what? What would be the result?

He continued forward, taking the spike out of Peter, allowing him to drop to the floor, but he didn't realize how resilient Peter was, or the fact that a wound like this wouldn't slow him down.

Or so they thought. Out from his back, several spikes extended out, like when he had killed those from the Divine Brigade. They went all over, piercing Peter in several different parts of his body.

Using the headtails, Peter was protecting his head at all costs.

"Hey, if you don't do anything, that annoying guy is going to die!" Russ exclaimed.

"I'm trying, but his power, it almost feels like it's rising."

The black swordsman dove out of the way, with the aim of trying to help Peter. He leapt up and with his sword, sliced through the spikes and carried Peter away. When looking at where Luce was, he was right next to Dunluck, with a spear through his head.

"That's one annoying thing finally out of the way," Luce claimed, with a smile.

Peter was able to stand, but he had wounds all over, and Russ was left thinking how much longer he could keep up the Black Swordsman's form.

Luce charged forward again, not wanting to give them any time to rest. Peter looked to be the next easiest target in this situation until, from above, dropping down, a sword clashed with Luce's spear, sending it to the ground. With a kick to the stomach and a blast of white energy, Luce was sent back, crashing into the side of the dome flooring.

"And another annoying one joins the party."

A person had joined and interrupted their fight, but why, and who was the person? Russ found the whole situation strange; there was something off. When he looked at Peter, he noticed he was no longer moving, not even blinking, and it felt like even the air had stopped.

"Who is that?"

Chapter 2508: A special family

The vampire settlement was recovering from the recent attack from the Divine Brigade. There had been next to no issues since the event but it was causing ripple effects throughout the vampires' society, not just at the vampire settlement.

The vampires feared that the attack might be targeted towards them, rather than the general population since it had occurred during the time all of the vampires had gathered.

In a way, the fact that all of the leaders were preparing for the worst, just made tensions for everyone else rise that much higher.

In the vampire settlement, a meeting was taking place, Layla, Xander, and Muka were the main ones that were present. They were sitting at the normal round table in the garden stationed out the back of the main castle.

"This is proving to be a bigger headache than I first thought." Muka declared, as she pressed on a small square device on the table in front of her. A projection of files opened up and everyone was able to see what she was talking about.

"The Graylash vampires, and the Vampire Corps units, have reported nearly every little thing they find suspicious, but it's almost impossible to tell if any of them are related to Immortui, or if it's a completely separate matter."

"Even out of the reports we have investigated, we still haven't been able to find anything that is related to the matter either." Xander stated.

"We can't just disregard what is happening either." Layla said, as she remembered what had occurred at the event. "If a large scale attack was to occur with whatever attacked us today, and we don't have measures to help the people, then the worse will occur."

All of them agreed with the severity of the situation, and it felt like all they could do was to just continue on doing what they had been doing this whole time. It just meant that there were more tiring days ahead of them.

"Galen stop it!" A short voice said.

Turning around they could see that a few more guests were arriving. They could see a man that had the same appearance as Quinn, and by his side, was Galen and Minny.

Galen was walking in with his hands behind his back, looking elsewhere, while Minny seemed to be filled with anger at him for some reason. Directly behind her a portal of shadow appeared, and out of it, a large hand was made from the shadow.

After creating the hand, a long dangling finger would poke Minny on her back. Immediately Minny turned around, she could only see the lingering finger of the shadow.

For a while now Galen had been using the shadow more often. People were becoming aware of what he could do, especially those in higher positions, but not only had he been using the shadow more but his control and power over it were extremely impressive and he was improving at a rapid rate.

'His shadow powers, are they growing even quicker than Quinn's?' Vincent thought, as he was observing everything for a while now. 'He hasn't even used techniques like shadow eater or anything like that. I wonder how his powers are able to grow.'

Vincent had been keeping a closer eye on the two children. Since Layla was now taking up more of a role in the settlement, she didn't have a lot of time to directly look after her children. But considering how they were a main target, they needed someone to look after them.

"Mommy!" Minny said, running over and leaping up, she jumped straight into Layla's arms who had caught her. "When is Daddy going to come back? It's hard staying with grandpa all the time because he looks so much like daddy that I miss him, and Galen, he never speaks to me, everything is so boring."

Things were tough and it only made Layla's heart ache more every time Minny would ask this question. As more time went on, she had to prepare that there was the chance that perhaps he wouldn't come back.

She looked at Vincent, who just reluctantly shook his head.

"I have some good news perhaps." Vincent said. "But it might not be the best news. The passing of time is different in the space where the others had gone to. An hour passed here is a different amount of time in the other space. However, I do not know what that time is. With this news it could explain why Quinn is taking so long."

The idea was for Quinn to enter the space and deal with Immortui; that didn't happen, and then a group of their strongest had entered and had gone to deal with Immortui and still there was no news or anything different. They couldn't help but worry, as they never imagined things would take this long.

"Very well, then all we can do is for all of us to keep on trying our best." Layla declared.

With the meeting over, all of them stood up from their position and started to walk back to the settlement. It was quite often the group would make their rounds, and just make a public appearance to the general vampires to settle their worries.

As they entered the settlement and started to walk into the main living areas, they had quickly discovered that something was amiss. The air felt steady, almost not moving.

There was no sound of the wind, and when they walked forward, they finally could see the vampires of the settlement. All of them were frozen in place, not physically frozen but unmoving, and not even breathing.

"What is going on?" Xander asked.

Layla's heart sank.

"I've experienced this before, I remember, when this happened last time. Galen, Minny, hide and take cover!"

The two listened quickly, using the shadow space and getting rid of themselves, but Layla started to wonder. Why could their group still move? It must mean that whoever was coming to see them had the intention of talking to them.

Almost seeming to appear out of nowhere, the one who Layla had envisioned in her mind was standing in front of her.

"It's been a while since we have seen each other, hasn't it?" Mundus said with a smile. "Now, I have a very very important question to ask you, and it's important that you answer it honestly."

"This isn't just for your sake, but for his as well. Where is Quinn?"

All of the vampires were startled, not saying a word, so Mundus decided to take a further step forward.

"No one attack him." Layla said to the others. Xander was already twitching, reaching for his weapon, and Muka was taken aback as well. Vincent was the only one that remained somewhat calm.

"This one is incredibly strong." Layla said.

"Is all of what is happening, is all of what is happening now, his doing, how is that possible? What type of power is this?" Xander asked.

She knew it was Mundus' doing, and last time none were able to stop him, and without the black sword on her, it would be even more difficult to go against him again.

Minny had managed to put up a good fight, but in the end she had lost, and Layla would rather Minny stay safe in the space than come out.

"Alright, let me rephrase the question since you seem to be struggling with giving me an answer. Is Quinn in the red space? Has he gone to take care of Immortui?" Mundus asked, his voice causing a shiver to run down each and every one of their bodies.

If they told him, Layla had to wonder, would Mundus be a friend in this situation, or a foe.

Things were moving all over the place, and one of the celestials was keeping an eye on everything that was happening, unsure of what the overall outcome would be.

"Did your powers show an unfavourable future?" Sam asked.

"My powers so far have shown me this, what is happening right now. The Ancient Ones have gotten involved, and the others are learning of what is happening. I fear for what is to happen because, right now, this future is what I foresaw."

"And what, are you hoping that it will change?" Sam asked. "Is that possible?"

"I have told you before, the only times my predictions have proven to be wrong, are when there are Talens involved." Bliss answered. "And this time in history, at this point, there are three. Let's hope the three of them can make a drastic change, otherwise there is much worse to come."

Chapter 2509: Quinn vs Immortui the second round

Quinn had managed to connect with his inner self, he was feeling the energy flowing through him and in turn he was feeling the energy of all the blood that was being spilt not just on this planet, but throughout the universe.

With the demon blood, and the battle going on between the Divine Brigade, the demons, and the inhabitants, a lot of blood was being spilt all over. Quinn was gathering all of that power and there was now a large orb of power that had gathered and condensed around him.

'I can feel it, I know I'm close to controlling blood just like when I had evolved into my celestial form. If I'm like this, then maybe I won't have to consume the other demon king's blood!' Opening his eyes. They were all a solid colour of red, blood was dripping down his face, but it wasn't rolling off.

"Hahaha!" Immortui laughed, looking at the situation. Instead of attacking Quinn, he too had gathered the power in the air, the red mist from when he first came here, and the ever increasing power of death that was occurring.

With all the battles going on, the people, the inhabitants, were constantly dying and adding to his power as well.

"Seeing this, I knew I was right." Immortui smiled. "I knew you would have the power to take me back to that space! Finally you have reached the stage where you will be useful to me!"

Lifting his hand up, from the large orb of blood power, a tornado of blood aura shot out heading straight for Immortui. Standing there, he swung his arm and a portal of red mist opened up. A giant hand came out, and with its palm open, took the blood vortex head on.

As the giant red mist hand closed its fist, the vortex disappeared into particles, but that wasn't the only thing that Quinn was preparing.

Several more vortexes of blood from the giant orb of blood went out and were heading straight for Immortui, and in turn he opened up portals of red mist and giant limbs came out to defend against them.

They swung, clashing with the vortexes of blood, and each time the two powers collided, a giant shockwave of aura would be sent out in both directions.

"Which is stronger, your power of blood, or mine of death? You certainly are a strong one that I managed to raise!" Immortui soon noticed the giant blood sword that had been made in the sky.

It pierced through the clouds, as if a giant from above had dropped its large sword, it fell with great force.

Both of Immortui's hands started to wrap around with the serpents on his back. Then a little above his head, two incredibly large red mist portals had opened. Ones far larger than the last ones he had created.

Forming out from the mist portals were two gigantic arms rather than just part of the hands. They had appeared above Immortui. On a closer inspection, it looked like the pattern of a black serpent was on the hands as well.

As the giant sword fell, Immortui grabbed it with his two giant arms of power, stopping it in its place. It continued to head down and the giant arms looked as if they were struggling slightly.

Out from the giant sword, several vortexes, looking somewhat like solar flares from the sun, came off and started to attack the fingers and the giant arms. It was hitting them and getting rid of the aura of power bit by bit.

The black serpents' aura on the giant arms started to move and had somewhat detached themselves from the arms, with part of their upper body having come off. Opening up its mouth, a pure power of aura, a laser, shot out from their mouths. It would hit the vortex breaking apart its power bit by bit.

Seeing this, Quinn then stretched out his arms, and the blood sword had exploded into several parts of just energy and particles. Sweeping his hands down, the aura moved as well, smothering the two arms and soon both of the giant objects had disappeared.

Unbeknownst to the two of them, as they were sending out large shockwaves of power, they had attracted some unwanted attention from the Divine Brigade. There were flocks of the Divine beings coming for Immortui from his end, and coming for Quinn from his as well.

For a split second, two of them turned around. Immortui swung his arm back, and a large red line that looked to tear space had appeared from his power of the mist. It had eliminated all of the Divine beings, cutting their bodies in half.

Meanwhile, Quinn had gathered power in his leg just like before, and as he spun his body, he unleashed a large kick in the air. Blood aura swipes larger and more powerful than before had also caused a large cut in space, eliminating the Divine beings as well.

"Look at you, look at how powerful you have become, thanks to me!" Immortui stated. "Don't you see for yourself, these celestial beings don't care about you, they don't care about anyone."

"They unleashed their army on us, and they are killing everything on sight. You should be able to tell with your blood powers. It's not just the demons these celestials are killing, but every life form."

"Think about it, if we weren't here in the red space, and were in the golden space, think about all the disaster that would befall all of us!"

The condensed orb of power had shrivelled down. Rather than out of his body, it was entering his body. The veins on Quinn were glowing with power. They were lighting up and could be seen through his pale skin.

Spreading out from his back, were pure wings made from blood aura, shining just as brightly.

"I don't agree with the celestial being's doings." Quinn said, as he walked forward taking a single step a ripples of blood aura spread out across the floor. All of the power was unable to be contained within his body.

"However, I don't agree with your doings either. I will get rid of you, I will keep my promise, and if the celestials chose to mess with me as well, I will get rid of them! I will do whatever it takes to protect those important to me!"

Running from his position, with each step, blood ripples appeared, sending waves throughout the area. Gathering around Quinn's arm, with his aura, was the image of the dragon, and the red blood shadow was starting to gather as well.

"You fool. I gave you a chance. You should know I haven't used my other powers so far." Immortui stated. "I thought you would have known that even your blood power is not greater than mine, it seems like you need to be taught another lesson."

Chapter 2510: Battle of the Wolves

An important battle was set to take place, between Chris and Unzoku, more important than either of them realised. The blood was needed of one of the last two demon kings and a large-scale battle was already taking place between two titans.

"This fight, it won't be the same as last time." Chris declared. He swung his two claws creating large cuts across the ground. It ripped apart and destroyed anything in its path.

Some of the werewolves had dived out of the way, while others hadn't gotten away in time with their legs cut, slashed by the visible energy. A clean cut would be made and their wounds were removing the limbs almost completely from their body.

As the attacks came, Unzoku swung both of his hands, hitting and dispersing the energy, turning them into nothing but particles, but his hand had hovered in the air for a few moments as the strength he felt had stopped.

Immediately reacting, Unzoku aimed his hand at Chris, and out from his hand, several large nails shot out like bullets.

Using his speed, Chris had managed to transform into his wolf form, and zig zagged. The nails crashed into the ground, erupting a large part of the ground underneath it. The nail attacks were fast, but not as fast as Chris.

When he was close, he leapt up in his werewolf form, but as if he had predicted his attack, Unzoku hit him directly with his large claw and sent him right back into the ground crashing.

With next to no time, Chris was on the move out from the small crater that had been made and was circling around Unzoku.

'He managed to recover that fast from a direct hit from me?' Unzoku thought. 'Is this the power gained, the power from eating another demon king?'

Dribble was pouring out of Unzoku's mouth onto the ground. He was getting tempted from his deep thoughts, and the thoughts of what it would be like to consume Chris as well.

Leaping toward Unzoku again, Chris pushed off and had transformed from his wolf to his werewolf form, while the colour of his fur was changing to that of a dark red. He had gotten used to the new power and strength of his body, it was time to level it up a notch further.

However, his current red werewolf form looked different compared to before. This was the first case where this would happen, as usually it would only change the colour and not affect the appearance.

The fur towards the back of his head at the top had overgrown and was running thick on his back, right down to the bottom of his body, where a large tail had appeared as well.

Unzoku was already mid swing with both of his arms, he wasn't holding back with his strikes. He wanted to get rid of Chris, he couldn't wait to consume him, but he was underestimating his new found power.

A large Qi platform had been created in the air, and with both of Chris' legs and his new form he pushed off, when he did he spun his body with both of his claws held out. He was spinning like a rocket.

His body had clashed right into Unzoku's claws and had pushed them back. His arms swung backward from the large scale of the power. The demon king's feet had even been pushed and sunken into the ground for a moment and a physical look of concern could be seen on his face.

Yet, Chris didn't stop there. Creating another Qi platform he aimed for one of the arms. Chris had to focus, he had to pay attention to a smaller part of Unzoku's body. Just like he had done with the Yak.

'I can't be in a rush to take out these demon kings, they are extremely powerful, but I can chip away at everything they have, and continue to fight until I completely take them down!'

Chris was creating small Qi platforms and was hopping with his feet from side to side, while he would swipe away with his claws, attacking at whatever part of Unzoku's body he could see.

It was the same pattern as before as Chris flew from side to side, only it was all focused on Unzoku's arm.

When he was done, he pushed away with another Qi platform going right past Unzoku, and turning into his wolf form to get away as quickly as he could.

'My switching between forms to utilise nearly all of my powers has come in handy.'

Chris turned his head to look at the situation behind him. To see what had occurred, he could see a bloody forearm of Unzoku, his blood dripping onto the floor. Several large cuts had been made., and his arm was throbbing.

The demon king's arm, due to being a werewolf, would often heal everything straight away, but just like with the vampires, this was a different attack that was

quite difficult for these beings to handle. It was an attack that had been imbedded with Qi energy.

Although the wounds would eventually heal, this was the start. Chris could see it, it was the start of taking down those that were impossible, a large confidence was brewing in him.

"You're fast, you are really fast, I almost couldn't keep up with you." Unzoku said.
"Your speed gives you great power, but you need to build it up. You might actually be faster than me, but I am still greatly stronger than you."

A battle of speed versus strength and which one was more superior. Werewolves were always beings that had a great amount of physical power as well.

With his sharp ears, Chris was able to sense that something was coming up from behind him. He had no clue what it was, his body was just telling him to move away. As he rushed to the side he could see a large whirlwind of blue power hitting the ground.

It destroyed everything on the floor creating a large black patch in its place. After moving away from the area for quite a bit, swooping down, to join Unzoku's side, was a winged demon, and was none other than Tenbris.

It was one of the other right hand men of Immortui, and another one of the two demon kings.

'Crap, when I just thought I saw a chance of getting through this, another demon king had to join in the fight. I'm not too sure if this one will be as easy to take out as the other demon king either.' Chris thought.

At a time like this, he was actually hoping that just maybe, Edvard would be here to help him, but he was all on his own.

"It looks like you're having a little trouble taking on these invaders." Tenbris claimed. "Anyway, we need to deal with this situation quickly, and deal with the rest of the Divine beings, can't you feel it. Immortui, he's fighting, it's only a matter of time, before we go to the other side."

Chapter 2511: Two demon's kings against Chris

Two Demon Kings were now in front of Chris. He had just been using his newfound strength, testing the waters with his powers against Unzoku, and things seemed to be working. But now, having to deal with two of them and being on his own, even he knew that it was quite an impossible task.

'How do I get out of this situation, and who do I take out first? Who should I focus my attacks on?' Chris thought.

In the middle of his thoughts, he could see that Tenbris had stretched out his arms, and in doing so, two vortexes of blue energy whirled and went toward him.

Jumping and flipping backward in the air, Chris managed to avoid the attack again.

The moment he landed, another vortex hit him from behind. He had turned at the last moment, blocking the attack and pushing against it. The muscles in his legs and arms were straining as he continued to push against the attack.

The blue energy was swirling, and something strange was occurring as he made contact with the attack itself.

'My arms, they feel incredibly heavy? Is my energy going away? Is this attack draining my energy?' Chris thought, until his feet started to sink into the ground itself. He wasn't losing energy, but the attack was making him several times heavier as it touched him, including his arms.

"Arghh!" Chris screamed as he unleashed energy out of his claws, giving a large push against the attack. It dispersed into the air, and the heavy feeling in his arms disappeared, but the fatigue remained.

The energy used and the stamina in taking on the attack were still felt in his body. 'I have to avoid getting touched by his attack. If I keep blocking them like that, then I'll tire out in no time.'

In the middle of these thoughts, several blue vortexes had come straight at Chris. Swirls of energy not just from Tenbris' hands but also from his wings as he flapped them. With how many attacks were coming his way, he had no choice but to change back to his wolf form.

In this form, he could run in a circle around the area they were fighting in. If there was one thing he was confident about, it was the fact that he could outrun the attack that was being used.

What was concerning him, though, was the lack of urgency on Tenbris' face.

"You should have used that opportunity to get rid of him, you mutt!" Tenbris said to his partner. "Why didn't you attack when you had the chance? Now this whole

thing is going to take a lot longer because of you. I thought you were meant to be fast."

"And I thought you were meant to be strong," Unzoku replied. The wound that had been made on his arm was starting to heal up. "Why didn't you finish him off yourself?"

Unzoku pointed his hand, and he had it held out a little ahead of where Chris was. With him avoiding the blue swirls, he could see what Tenbris was doing. Although his attacks might have seemed random, he was attacking in a certain way so Chris would have to avoid them by only moving in certain directions.

It was clever because now Unzoku knew exactly where to attack and at what time to successfully land a hit, and the opponent had no clue whatsoever.

'This is extremely frustrating!' Chris thought to himself. All of his focus and energy after taking the first attack was now going on avoiding Tenbris' attack. If he wasn't exerting energy from blocking the attack, he now was running away from it.

He also had to be careful of what Unzoku was doing, at any point in time, yet Unzoku continued to do nothing.

Unlike the other demons, Unzoku didn't really have a demon form. He would just fully transform into his werewolf self, grow larger and bigger, changing his shape slightly, but it wasn't a drastic change like the others had.

For him, when the fight had started, he hadn't been holding back against Chris. The two were going head to head with everything they had, which just went to show how much the other had improved.

'He got that strong from eating another Demon King?' Unzoku thought.

"You stupid mutt, if you really aren't going to do anything, then I guess I will have to deal with it myself!" Tenbris flapped his wings again, and this time out from them were dark-coloured feathers.

They flew through the air at high speed, covered by the dark blue aura, looking the same as the attacks that had come before. Chris had moved, avoiding the tornado of power, but now he was heading right for the feathers.

"Two on one is a little unfair, don't you think!"

From right in front of Chris, three figures landed. One swung his axe down, blasting the feathers away with dark flames. Another with their foot had slashed the feathers away, and lastly, another had pierced them away with a bone-coloured spear.

Seeing their backs, Chris had figured out who they were fairly quickly.

"I hope you don't mind us giving you a little helping hand," Pultra stated.

It had taken the three of them a while to get here, having to go the long way around, but from the shockwaves of the fighting from before alone, they knew where to come and find where the action was taking place.

"The good news is that we need these two anyway," Calva said. "The bad news is that the two of them are together."

Although Chris did originally want to face Unzoku on his own, now that there were two, he didn't mind the help. There was something about the fight between Chris and Unzoku from before, something raw that he wanted to keep.

It was as if the two of them were competing for who was the best and strongest, who was the strongest werewolf. And now, with all these interruptions getting in the way, the spark was lost.

The champions were thinking about something else as well. They were strong and believed they could take out the Demon Kings, at least the ones that had already been taken out. The most difficult to deal with were Unzoku and the two right-hand men. They were hoping to help Chris out with one, not two.

Still, they were in the situation they were in now, and there was nothing they could do about it.

"Look at these fools," Tenbris said. "The champions betrayed us because they thought they stood a chance with these people behind them. They are truly pathetic!"

Tenbris raised his hands, and when he did, he felt a slight heat before complete darkness. His body had dropped to the ground, falling with no head, blood pouring out.

Picking up the lifeless Tenbris body, Unzoku opened his mouth wide, as he took another bite.

Chapter 2512: The Messenger Arrives

Battles were continuing to take place all over the Red space. Massive amounts of energy were being used, while large amounts of blood were being spilled, but the inhabitants were fighting back.

Even before Immortui and the group had taken over, the Red space, known as it was due to Immortui, had constant battles. The people, the inhabitants in the Red space, had fights amongst each other even more so than those in the Golden space, and because of it, many of them were incredibly strong.

The main issue was just how large was this Divine Brigade army, or was it something that wouldn't stop until the Ancient One, Celestalon, was defeated. If that was the case, how would one defeat something that they were unable to get to?

Among the many battles that were taking place, there were large-scale ones as well. Russ, Hikel, and Peter were battling it out against Luce, one of the right-hand men of Immortui.

Against Luce, after having transformed into his demon form, they were struggling to put a mark on him. They had eventually given him a few cuts here and there, but for them, the damage was far worse.

Peter had been pierced in several places on his body; the Black Swordsman had been hit. In turn, Russ was suffering from internal injuries, and his god-slayer tier item wasn't working well against Luce's powers.

When they all felt like there was nothing more they could do, dropping down from the sky, with a strange green-coloured sword wrapped around by their arm, someone had interrupted the battle, getting in the way of the two of them.

"Who are you!" Luce stated. He didn't understand what was happening; his spear had been struck, and as he tried to move it, his movements felt slower than they did before.

They didn't feel heavy, but when an attempt was made to stab the person in front of him with his spear, it flowed along against the edge of the sword and pushed back. Then, with his other hand free, a white beam of energy left the interrupter's hand and struck Luce right in the chest.

The attack lifted him off his feet and crashed him into the edge of the side wall.

"I am just a simple messenger," Mundus declared, swinging the sword in the air a few times. He thought it felt quite nice.

Mundus wasn't usually a swordsman, although his skills weren't bad with the sword. He wasn't an expert by any means, but the sword that was in his hands

wasn't an ordinary sword; it was one obtained from a special vault, one that Mundus looked after on behalf of the Ancient Ones.

This weapon, in particular, was great for his use because it allowed a person to use its abilities through the weapon. Depending on what ability was used, the weapon would interpret it in a certain way.

Mundus' power didn't work through the red mist very well. If his power was focused, it could still stop time within a certain area, but those like the Demon Kings, who could control the condensed red energy, could form a barrier that protected them.

However, with the sword, when it touched the skin of Luce, it was passing on the effect of Mundus' power, and that was why he felt slow when the sword touched him.

"Now I remember you!" Luce shouted back. "You were here last time; you are one of the Celestials that stopped Immortui from breaking free."

"Oh, it's nice to know that I'm famous around here," Mundus replied.

The last time Mundus had visited the Red space, he had bought time by stopping Immortui; he knew he didn't have the strength to beat him. He also knew that there was a chance that he had been raising a powerful enemy.

If that was the case, if Mundus was to come back, he needed just a little help, which was why he had borrowed one of the many items from the vault.

"So, are you one of the big ones?" Luce asked.

"The big ones, ah, are you referring to the Ancient Ones?" Mundus replied. "I am not, although if you are talking in terms of strength, I am pretty strong. It appears that some crazy events are going on."

Mundus glanced back at those that were behind him. "You guys, are you here with Quinn?"

Hikel and the others had no idea who this person was, but he had mentioned a name that was very familiar to them. It was still hard for them to determine, was this a friend, or was it a foe?

Luce placed his hand on the ground, and immediately his power started to extend across the floor. Right where Mundus was standing, a large white spike launched up from the floor.

Mundus moved out of the way as the spikes continued to follow him, and with one of them, he touched it with his sword. It slowed down significantly, allowing him to break away.

"So, are you guys going to help me, or what? This one is quite difficult to deal with, as I'm sure you guys know," Mundus asked.

Seeing the two of them fight, it was also an opportunity for them to leave. After all, they had already obtained Luce's blood; they didn't need it anymore. But if they left Luce alive, would he get involved in all of this?

There was one person who didn't need an answer; Peter had gotten up off the floor. From his back, a strange mist was appearing, and the Boneclaw was now by his side.

"That b*stard is going to have what's coming to him no matter what!" Peter yelled.

A beam of celestial energy had Luce pinned to the ground. It was a constant stream that was going against him, and in that moment, the Boneclaw had appeared and alongside it was Peter.

The two of them struck, hitting Luce right in his stomach, claw marks slicing against his skin, and Peter giving a devastating punch to his midriff. Peter's fists didn't stop as he continued to punch and hit, and this time he didn't have the head tails wrapped around his arms.

He was using them as well to strike at any visible spot Luce had on his body.

The demon king was standing firm, still holding on and blocking the celestial energy from above. With a stomp of his foot, the white energy went underground and appeared right where Peter stood.

He stepped back, avoiding it, but it moved, heading toward him again. Before it struck, the green sword went flying through the air and hit the white energy, slowing it down just enough for it to stop the attack and allowing Peter to move.

Now with both hands free, Mundus blasted Luce with double the amount of celestial energy, trying to smother Luce completely. But he was a powerful demon king, and it looked like the energy, even from Mundus the messenger, wasn't going to be enough.

Leaning down, a hand picked up the sword from the ground. "This seems like a pretty good sword," Russ said, as he leaned back up with two swords in his hands and still in the Black Swordsman's body.

"Let's finish this thing."

Chapter 2513: The messenger steps in

Usually, in the case of the Black Swordsman's power, whenever he used it would negate their ability. In terms of energy, it stopped things as well, but there were some instances where things could still work.

The Black Swordsman's own body was quite unique, after all. In fact, he could still draw out his own powers even when using the sword. His body was unaffected by his own powers, which was how Russ was able to use his powers, to summon himself as the Black Swordsman and continue to use his powers.

With a special sword that drew out one's power, would it be the same?

Rushing forward, Russ, with the two swords, thrust them. Both of the swords started to cover themselves in the black aura, and it seemed like his power was staying. Now it was almost like he had two of the same weapons in his hands.

As it stabbed into the centre of Luce's stomach, he felt it twist and turn inwards until the swords had pierced the inside of his body.

Luce couldn't believe it; he had one of his arms above, stopping the celestial energy. He had been hit multiple times as well by Peter, and now an attack had finally gotten through and had managed to pierce his skin.

The swords hadn't just pierced his skin like last time, but had gone completely through his body.

"What is this? Was I weakened by all this celestial energy? It was from that strange person's punches, and from above. Not even my own power knows what to do. Fighting all three of them at once is too hard!"

This was a thought Luce had never had before. He was a Demon King, one of the strongest in the Red space, and one that was raised by Immortui to take out all of the Celestials.

Now that he had just come across one of them, he was already losing this fight. And these strangers, who were they? Who were they to push him as far back as this? They weren't even Celestials.

"Hey, I think you're a bit messed up now; it looks like you've lost this fight," Russ said, as he twisted the sword further.

The attack and celestial energy from the top had stopped as Mundus went back on the ground again. Seeing this, Luce went and held onto the swords, and he tried pushing back.

"What do you mean? Just because you injured me once you think this fight is over?" Luce stated.

"That's exactly what I mean!" The aura and black-coloured power from the swordsman started to erupt into the two swords, and slowly Luce's body was starting to change.

His strong white power, which gave him a coating on top of his skin, started to fade away. It was slowly revealing his natural skin from before. All of his power; it was disappearing.

"The power is part of your body, right? So I just needed to insert my power inside you, and it looks like it's done the trick," Russ stated.

Perhaps if he didn't have both swords, it wouldn't have been enough power, nor would the strike have been strong enough to pierce through Luce's body, so he was thankful for this.

With the intervention of Mundus and his weapon, the fight had drastically changed, and if it wasn't for that, then all three of them would have been killed.

"Peter, I'll let you do the honors!" Russ said, as he held onto the swords firmly, not taking them out of the body. If he did, then his powers would come back.

Immediately, teleporting slightly above with the Boneclaw was Peter, who had been dropped. His two head tails had combined into one, forming a type of giant axe behind him.

"All of the power I've gained, all of the strength from the changes in my body, all of my Qi, and all of the celestial energy that Quinn gave me. I'll finish it off right here with you!" Peter screamed inside of his head as his head tail went down.

It sliced down the centre of Luce, going through and in between the two swords in Luce's body. When it hit the ground, the whole area was shaking along with the rubble, and Peter had also fallen to the ground, collapsing.

He had put all of his strength into the attack, so much so that he had even forgotten about standing back up; he was just using the whole momentum of his body with everything he had. He had face-planted the ground.

When he looked up, though, he could see the two swords had been taken out, and Luce's body had split apart and fallen flat on the ground.

"It's over!" Hikel's mouth was left wide open as he rushed over to the others, his arms still no longer there. He had tripped, more exhausted than he had realized but came right over to see the two of them there.

Russ' body was already reverting back to normal. Perhaps he could have only kept up the Black Swordsman's form for a few seconds more, if that.

For the group, rarely did they fight together; they had always fought tough battles on their own and overcame whatever they faced. But it took everything all of them had, radical changes to their body, every ounce of power in their bones, and they had finally done it. They had defeated the Demon King. It was now one less problem for them to deal with.

The sound of footsteps was heard coming from their side, though, and when they looked at the creature in front of them, one that didn't quite look human, they realized that their problems perhaps weren't over.

"I think you have something in your hands that belongs to me," Mundus said while his hand was held out. "While I'm at it, you can hand me the black sword as well. It's a bit too dangerous to be in the hands of others."

Russ looked up at the man; he didn't want to hand over any of the weapons, but his condition and Mundus were in two different states. A fight against him would be impossible and would just bring them all to his death.

A weapon wasn't worth fighting over.

"You don't need to hand me over the black sword now," Mundus said. "It will disrupt my powers, but I am just informing you that I will be back for it."

A large surge of energy was felt shifting through them all; the red mist was vibrating, and it was all moving away from where they were. The Red space, it was clearing up as all of the energy was moving away.

They looked in the direction of where the power was coming from. "It's Quinn and Immortui; the two of them, they must be fighting."

Peter immediately got up and went to run forward, but Mundus pushed him back down with his hand on his chest, sending him back to the floor.

"What are you doing? I thought you were here to help Quinn!" Peter shouted.

"Did I say that?" Mundus asked.

Chapter 2514: Mundus Confidence

A simple effortless push from Mundus' hand had caused Peter to fall back onto the ground. It showed the group one of two things. Either they had truly exerted that much energy in their fight against Luce, or Mundus was just that much stronger than them.

However, either of those things led to the same result, so it didn't matter much anyway.

"You asked about Quinn earlier," Hikel said. "Which means you must know he's here, and someone as strong as you has to be able to feel what's going on right now. You should know exactly where he is. So why are you stopping us from getting to him?"

The red mist, the blood that was flowing through the air. Every single life form would have been able to feel the large amount of power that was gathering on the planet.

"Firstly, you should be thanking me," Mundus explained. "I've saved your life not once but twice now by stopping you guys from doing something stupid in thinking that you can help Quinn.

"Look at your state; if you went there, you would only serve as a distraction for him and a tool Immortui could use to get to him. I don't know how many times you people have dealt with him, but he is one who is happy to use anyone to get his way."

Hikel stopped to look at himself for a moment and noticed that Mundus was right. Hikel didn't even have his arms anymore. The only thing he could do was attempt to run in and cause a large explosion, and they had seen how well that had worked out against Luce; it was likely to produce even less of a result this time.

"On top of that, let me make this clear: I am not on your side. I decided to help you because I saw an opportunity to get rid of a rather large headache. As a thank you, I decided to help you, but I will not let you get in my way of what I have come here to do," Mundus claimed.

"And what is it, because if it's to get rid of Quinn, then me and you are going to have to go at it!" Peter shouted from the ground, his legs still a bit too weak for him to stand up.

"I have come here for one reason only, and that is to stop Immortui from escaping the red space and heading out to the golden space," Mundus explained. "I made a deal with Quinn that the celestials wouldn't get involved in the matter of Earth.

"Unfortunately, it looks like one of the Ancient Ones has taken it into his own hands, but as long as the matter is resolved, everything should turn out okay. Only

the main issue is Quinn himself. He has the power to break through and create a link into the golden space.

"Depending on the amount of time life forms spend in a certain space, there is a part of them that still lingers there and is connected. With the massive amount of power Quinn has, and the link he has, Immortui can use him to open a portal to the other side."

This was the rejection that Quinn had experienced when he came into the red space that shot him all over the place. The others had a strange feeling in their bodies ever since coming here, but thought it might have been due to the red mist that was around them.

"Then shouldn't you help him?" Hikel asked. "If you helped Quinn to defeat Immortui, then that would solve the problem, right?"

A small smile appeared on Mundus' face hearing this. If Quinn did manage to defeat Immortui, it would mean he would have power as great as the Ancient Ones. Truthfully, even Mundus was here secretly away from the other Ancient Ones.

He wanted to keep his word, keep his position with the Ancient Ones, and also stop them from learning about the God Slayer armour, but maybe this was all too much for Mundus to ask for.

"The easiest thing to do, and the best thing to do, are sometimes two completely different answers. If I just wanted to stop Immortui, then I would have attempted to get rid of Quinn. With him gone, there would be less of a chance of him coming over."

Although Mundus said this, he thought it was next to impossible. Quinn had defeated the most troublesome god slayers there were out there. With their armour, he was even stronger. Mundus couldn't defeat Quinn if he wanted to, he knew that, and it was the same as Immortui.

"So then what are you going to do!" Peter slammed the ground. It was painful for him, knowing that with each passing moment Quinn was fighting against Immortui on his own again. He had already lost once, and they still needed the blood of two more demon kings.

"What do you think, isn't it the most obvious answer? I need to just wait to see the outcome of this fight," Mundus replied. "If Quinn is able to best Immortui, then all will be well, but if there is a chance and it looks like he's going to lose, then I will finish him myself. In order to protect the golden space. Quinn would understand."

In a way, it felt like Mundus was supporting Quinn; he was doing it in a way where he would remain neutral and was hoping that he could finish this.

Although he wanted to hide the result and hide Quinn's power from the Ancient Ones in order to keep his promise, it looked like after the events of today, it was

impossible, and out of Quinn or Immortui being kept alive, at least Mundus knew who he preferred.

"Alright, we won't go help Quinn, but there is something we need to do then," Hikel said.

From one side of the planet, large waves of aura were bursting through their bodies. They could feel an intense reaction that was telling them to get away as far as possible. Equally, on another side, large shockwaves of wind were blowing out with several large bangs and explosions.

It was clear that another giant-scale battle was happening, and Hikel feared that it was Edvard, Chris, and the Champions.

"I already protected you from death once; my debt has already been paid," Mundus claimed. "If you wish to go ahead and go elsewhere away from Quinn, then that is down to you."

As quickly as he came, Mundus had left, leaving them the choice of what to do. However, Mundus was heading to another particular location, not where Quinn was, nor where Chris and Unzoku were fighting. Instead, he had entered a cave, where a faint breath could be heard.

A blonde-haired man was holding his stomach with his back up against the wall.

"You... you're dying," Mundus said.

Chapter 2515: Quinn's eternal struggle

Each time Quinn's blood aura struck against Immortui's red mist energy, the entire sky would be painted in a thick veil of red. The ground would shake, and a shockwave of power would end up spreading through all of the land in sight.

Continuous clashes of their powers were hitting each other, and the attacks weren't slowing down; they were just getting faster and faster, destroying more of the energy around them.

That was until Immortui decided to change up his strategy with his attacks. He raised his hand, and a colourless ball started to form around it.

Almost immediately, a shadow portal had opened behind him, and coming straight out of it was Quinn with six arms by his side, having activated the Asura gauntlets' active skill, although it looked slightly different compared to before.

Two of the arms were completely covered in condensed shadow, giving them a dark purple colour. Landing in front of Immortui, two of Quinn's regular hands grabbed his wrists, meanwhile, his normal hands gathered with the vampire aura and covered in the blood shadow, proceeded to punch Immortui in the stomach one after the other.

The blows lifted Immortui off the ground, but the other hands held him down, making sure he wouldn't fly away. Punch after punch was delivered with aura seeping out through his body behind.

'I have to strike him before he can use his colourless ability,' Quinn thought. 'I have to utilise the shadow with the rest of the skills I learned. The training and information from the champions, and what Sil told me.'

The two serpents above Immortui's shoulders started to open their mouths, gathering the red energy; both of them were pointed at Quinn. As the beam attack left their jaws, Quinn immediately used the shadow-covered Asura hands to block the attack.

The beam was shifting the arms, but the power wasn't getting through. "You can thank Sil for letting me know about them. Did you really think after our last fight, I would have learned nothing?"

Lifting up his leg, Immortui struck Quinn right on his side, crashing into him, grunting through the pain and with the armour taking most of the hits, Quinn continued to throw out his punches. Thanks to the blood shadow, they were having double the effect as well.

"You are quite naive!" Immortui said, as he went for another kick, but this time on the edge of his foot, he had a ball of colourless energy.

Immediately, Quinn used the shadow travel, sinking into the ground and letting go. The foot missed, going right over where Quinn was, and the colourless ball of energy had left his foot. It continued to travel through the air until it exploded, making a large area colourless for a few moments before disappearing.

With the shadow travel, Quinn had distanced himself from Immortui. 'Sil was right; he can use the colourless ability out of his body. But it looks like if he wants to spread out its power, he can still only do so from his hands. The balls of energy, although having the same effect, disappear after a while.'

A red mist portal appeared above Quinn's head, and immediately, a giant fist of power came down attempting to crush Quinn. He moved out of the way, running to the side, but several giant fists continued to follow him, crushing the ground beneath where he once was.

While running, Quinn didn't stop his attacks; he continued to throw out the Asura hands, throwing out all types of different blood fists to hit him. They were crashing into Immortui's body, distracting him from using his power but didn't appear to do any significant damage.

'This is okay; I can just injure him a bit at a time. I don't need to rush things. With the limitless effect of the armour, I can keep on going. It doesn't matter if it takes 1 hour or 100 days! I will continue to chip at him until he's completely defeated!'

Tapping his boots, two clones of Quinn were made with a cloud of smoke. They went to two different sides and continued to throw out the blood fists. They didn't have six arms like that of Quinn, but still, with more attacks all heading the same way, Immortui was getting bombarded with attacks left, right, and center.

Seeing this, Immortui was getting fed up. He placed both of his arms close to his chest; they were shaking with power as the mist condensed, then opening it up, he threw his arms out, and a ring of energy went out from his body, filling the entire area, just like the shockwaves from before.

[Shadow lock]

Each of the Quinns had disappeared in that moment, though, and when the aura passed, all three had popped out of the shadow.

'The timing, the strength, I will use everything I have to get rid of him. I can't lose again; I can't this time. I have to focus; I can't make a mistake!'

Quinn ran across at great speed ahead; he could see the serpent was wrapping around Immortui's hand.

Leaping up in the air, all of the clones leaped up in the air. Their legs were condensed with the blood energy that was still swirling around the entire area. Then

spinning their bodies and using the air steps, they pushed forward, and a large kick landed on different sections of Immortui's body.

One landing on the head, the stomach, and the bottom of his legs. The attack was as powerful as the one that Quinn had used to get rid of the Divine Beings, but Immortui just stood there in place, with his strange armour having covered his entire body from his legs.

"You are a real fool; I had more trouble dealing with your friend from before. The only thing you are useful for is your power!" Immortui stated.

Immortui threw out his fist, and Quinn was expecting the serpent strike that Immortui could produce, one of the most powerful attacks he had.

This was the most important thing Quinn had to look out for. Rushing to the side, he believed he had avoided it, but it wasn't the same attack.

Out from Immortui's hand a large red fist, like it was his own, had come out, and it extended, stretching as if it had a physical form. It latched onto Quinn's entire body and lifted him in the air, slamming him on the ground.

Then the red mist portals opened up above Quinn, not just one, but four of them. Out from above him, several large red fists continued to pound the area where Quinn was on the ground one after the other. It hit him again and again, pounding him in one place.

The armour was taking the brunt of the attacks, but it was hurting Quinn as he was being suffocated from the punches, until the shadow condensed above him, and it started to push up against the fists. It wasn't just the shadow, but the blood energy started to form a barrier and was pushing up against the fists.

The fists continued to hit, but they were being blocked by the shadow, as Quinn got to his feet. Pressing the side of his mask, it opened up a little at the front, and he spat out his blood on the ground.

"Come on, is that all you got! Were you going to take out the Celestials with that!" Quinn shouted.

Chapter 2516: The last hope gone

With all of the massive amounts of blood that was being spilt in the red space, Quinn was feeling stronger than he ever had before. The massive amount of blood aura he could control and condense down was at a level he had never experienced before.

His shadow was at the strongest it had been, but he was unable to make his shadow stronger like he could do his blood aura. Quinn's shadow shouldn't have been able to block Immortui's attacks, yet he was able to.

This was all because of the blood shadow. Using more blood and mixing it with the shadow in turn was making a stronger blood shadow. Blood aura with properties of the shadow, allowing him to stop Immortui's strikes, and with that in mind, Quinn had come up with an idea.

Throwing both of his arms up, a force of blood shadow was unleashed, pushing all of the giant red fists of mist away. Four of the Asura arms were being used to constantly throw out blood fists, striking Immortui non stop.

The clones had stepped in, but with a swing of his fists, Immortui struck one on the head, killing it on the spot, and with the other, a serpent over his shoulder snapped out faster than the clone could react, getting rid of it.

"At first, I thought this was a bit of fun." Immortui said. "But now, this is seriously getting annoying."

Placing both of his palms together, Quinn spread them out and had formed something. It grew in size and was the same colour as the shadow blood, with a dark red coating around it.

Now in Quinn's hands was a large scythe. Pressing the side of his god slayer mask, the lightning attribute was activated and the entire thing was sparking with red lightning blood aura coming off the scythe.

It shocked the ground, destroying it as it hit the floor, and was constantly hitting the ground around the area, destroying everything, even striking the air, getting rid of large pockets of the red mist that were swirling around.

Quinn dashed forward, and swinging the scythe by his side, he was still several metres away from Immortui and it didn't look like the scythe would hit him. When it swung out, it started to extend.

Lifting his arm, Immortui blocked the strike and his whole body slid across the ground. As the scythe was touching his skin it continued to shock him bit by bit, and from the look on his face, the attack was actually somewhat hurting him.

The serpents bit down on the scythe from his shoulder, and then with his other hand free Immortui held onto the edge of the scythe. His colourless ability activated in his hand, and started to grow.

The blood fists continued to crash into his body, making the colourless power fade in each time, but he had already done what needed to be done, taking part of the energy out from the strike.

He swung the scythe to the side pushing it away. Immortui then leapt up in the air, and as he did a mist platform landed under his feet.

"You annoying little rat!" Immortui screamed.

Lifting the blood shadow scythe behind his head. It started to grow in size behind Quinn. It was extended, growing large, and power was swirling around it from all over.

Immortui on the other hand was moving his hands at a rapid speed, and several of the mist portals started to open around Quinn. They had surrounded him in a circle.

"You have made a big mistake, I truly wanted you to join my side, but now you leave me no choice, there is no second chance." Immortui stated.

Out from the portals, several large giant red mist fists went out. All of them at the same time had crashed into Quinn, hitting him at once with an attempt to crush him. With what power Quinn had, he attempted to block it with shadow but the power still seeped through and bashed into him.

His insides felt like they were twisting and turning, but he still had gathered power into the giant blood shadow scythe. He swung it with all of his might, forcing the Qi in his body to move his muscles and do the work.

The large scythe was swung down and from above Immortui could see it approaching him. Turning his body into the strange red mist, Immortui soon appeared directly above the scythe, and the two serpents started to wrap around his arms.

"You never stood a chance against me Quinn. I was trying to show you every step of the way. No matter what power you have, no matter what you did, I could best you. I thought you would see the way in the middle of this fight, but you just kept on going!"

Immortui threw both of his hands out, aiming right for Quinn, the several fists had him pinned.

[Shadow lock]

Quinn attempted to use his shadow lock skill, but it wasn't working as quickly as it did before, the shadow crossed his back, and he was wondering why that was. When he looked around him he could see that the colour had faded.

'When did he...'

The large strike from above, unleashed by Immortui covered all of Quinn's body; it had hit him, destroying every part of him. Mundus, who was far off in the distance, had been paying attention and was looking out at the scene.

'No! I have to do something!' Mundus thought. He tried to get up from where he was and push himself forward, but the erupting power from Immortui had pushed him back. Even with his body covered with celestial energy, Mundus, or anyone else or any creature, was unable to approach.

The large scale attack continued to hit Quinn and the power was seeping out sideways, covering the entire area. From a distance no one could even see what was going on, but Quinn knew.

His armour was being ripped to pieces once more and the system screen had come up once again.

[Your armour has been destroyed]

[Armour is currently being repaired]

When the attack faded, Quinn was left on the ground lying on the scorched land. There was nothing but black around him.

His skin looked to have been melted off his body, parts of his armour melted into his skin as well. He tried to move the muscles in his body but it felt impossible to do anything.

The swirling blood power that was constantly heading toward the planet had stopped as well. Landing by his side, Immortui walked over to where Quinn was. He could see that the life, it was already fading from his eyes.

"You are certainly a strong one, even the celestials would have struggled with taking a double serpent strike head on, and be in as good of a state as you are. You have been through a lot." Immortui then lifted Quinn up by his neck. His limbs fell to his side and there was no struggle at all, the life had gone from his eyes already.

"A body that hasn't disappeared into ashes, you certainly are a strange one. You who were born from me, we could have ruled everything together." Immortui shoved his fist right through Quinn's chest reaching the other side. A large hole had appeared, and in Immortui's hand, there was what vampires left behind after their

death. It was proof that Quinn had already died, even though his body was still present, it was his blood crystal.

Chapter 2517: Unzoku a true demon

In the first battle against Immortui, Quinn had been placed in a difficult situation. For one, he had just gone against one of the other demon kings. During his fight, he had been affected by the red mist energy when the other demon king had transformed into its demon form.

Because of this, the armour that Quinn had worn had broken. It left him in an extremely difficult situation as he faced Immortui. As for the second battle, he was a lot more prepared. The armour had recovered itself, giving him more power and versatility in his skills.

He had been learning from the Champions who had faced Immortui before, and even Sil had given him what advice he could from the battle he had with Immortui. Despite all of this, the battle in the end was still lost. He even had the strength of all of the blood that was currently being spilled in the red space. It just went to show how formidable a foe Immortui was.

Unaware of what was happening to Quinn, there were those that were still fighting, with the hope that if they just got him the demon blood he needed, he had a chance at winning; it was all useless now.

For the ones that were fighting, Chris had been in a predicament, where he was faced with a situation where he would have to go up against two demon kings on his own. Thankfully, he had a little support, and that came with the Champions.

With their help, Chris had thought he could do it; he could complete the task and take out Unzoku. But that thought had almost dashed out of his head when he saw what had happened next.

With his large jaw, Unzoku had bitten Tenbris' head off. The Demon King had died in an instant, but Unzoku didn't stop there. He was several times larger than Tenbris, the other demon king, and he continued to eat his body, taking him out in a few bites, crushing his body and swallowing him whole.

"Crap, this is not good!" Shinto shouted. "This is really not good!"

Shinto knew a lot about the werewolves since he had worked with Unzoku in the pits for some time now, so he knew exactly what the result of this would be. Essentially, Unzoku had just eaten a demon king who was at the same level, if not higher, than him; the changes that would be going through his body were immense.

"WHAOOOO!!!!" Unzoku lifted his head, and a deafening scream left his mouth. The whole floor was shaking. The Divine Brigade that were off in the distance, over the rest of the Yak city, were affected by the howl.

They were struggling to fly and disoriented, crashing into buildings and falling onto the ground. It gave a chance for the remaining Yak demons and the werewolves to quickly take out the enemy in front of them.

"What do we do?" Calva asked. "With Tenbris eaten, there's no chance for us to take his blood?"

"Maybe since he consumed Tenbris and his power has been added to his own, wouldn't it be fine if we just got Unzoku's blood?" Shinto replied.

"We don't know how it works, but it's the only thing we can do. But rather than being concerned about whether or not we can get his blood, I think we should be more concerned about whether or not we can survive this!" Pultra shouted.

Chris had the same thought, which was why he was concentrating his power; he was already using the fourth stage of Qi and had backed off further away. He then sprinted forward, using all of the Qi in his body to give himself a run-up.

His claws were low, dragging by his side and cutting the floor up. When in range, Chris lifted both of his claws, unleashing his energy. Through the air, two giant energy claws could be seen crossing each other in an X shape.

Unzoku's eyes were glowing so brightly red it was emitting energy from his eyes even onto the floor. He looked at the claw marks in the air and swung his own large arm.

Instantly, the attack from Unzoku had crushed Chris' attack into nothing. The whole floor was torn to pieces behind them, and all of them were flying through the air, having next to nothing to stand on.

The Yak city had giant markings through it where entire buildings had disappeared. From above, the city looked like it had been scratched with the hand of the giant.

Getting up from one of the building's rubble, quite a distance away from where Unzoku was, the champions were wondering what had happened. They hadn't been hit directly by the attack, so was it just the force alone that had sent them so far.

One by one, they got up from the rubble and looked at each other.

"I'm not sure it's going to be entirely possible to even get his blood," Shinto said. "With the power he just displayed, are we sure that he's any weaker than Immortui right now?"

Even Unzoku was thinking the same thing; he looked at his hand and the destruction he had caused. His face was uncontrollably smiling.

"This is the power I gained from eating the demon kings. It was something I should have done a long time ago. If I had eaten the others, I would have long surpassed

Immortui. Maybe, if I eat that other werewolf, I will grow even further to the next stage!"

Back at the destroyed rubble buildings, the champions were trying to look for Chris, and eventually, they found him, a bit further along compared to the others, but that was because he had suffered a direct hit from one of the claws.

Chris had physically pushed back, and as the attack was ripping his body apart, it was trying its best to heal, but as they looked down at him, they could see a large wound right across his chest in a diagonal shape.

He was in a rough shape as the flesh of his muscle could be seen as well, and it looked almost as if Chris was struggling to breathe as well.

"Can you heal him?" Calva asked, looking toward Pultra with her unique ability.

"I can speed up his own healing process, but I don't think it will be fast enough. I'm afraid we are useless in this situation. Perhaps the best thing we can do is take him out of here and attempt to run away."

If Unzoku was that fast, they hated to think how quick he would be as well. Although Pultra suggested running away, it almost sounded like giving up.

"No!" Shinto said. "There is one more option." Shinto walked over to Chris and knelt down by his side. "Eat me... Eat me and get strong enough to defeat him!"

Chapter 2518: Eat Me!

The two champions that were standing by Shinto's side, they couldn't quite believe his proposal. It wasn't like them to be selfless in the first place. They were champions because even they had fought their own kind rising to the top.

Although they didn't cause any trouble at the same time, they had cared enough about their own lives to work with him in one way or another. At least, that's what they thought of Shinto.

Pultra and Calva had refused to join Immortui, while Shinto had agreed to join, so they always thought that he was the one that cared more about his life than others, and yet here he was sacrificing himself.

"How could you ask me to do that?" Chris asked in a weak voice. "I can't, I promised myself."

Chris thought back to when he had been using the Qi drain skill, when he had been taking the lives of others. After what happened then he didn't want to do anything like that again.

Even as a werewolf, even when he knew the key to getting stronger was by consuming those that were already powerful, Chris was reluctant to do it, but he had managed to convince himself that he was eating demons, he was eating the enemy, and it was for a greater cause, but the Champions weren't his enemy, it would be going against his beliefs.

"Are you really going to be stubborn now?" Shinto asked. "If you don't eat me then we all will die. Chris you have to understand, it has been hard for me to continue on in the first place.

"This whole time, I've been feeling guilty. While I was a guard working at the pit, I had killed so many innocent Chrono, so many of my own kind, that I just wanted to escape. The reason I agreed to help was because I thought I could relieve some of that guilt.

"If we managed to get rid of them now, then it would mean I would have done something, but how could I carry on living while all of those that I killed are dead. The only thing that kept me going was the fact that my brother was out there somewhere alive, but now I know that's not true as well."

Hearing Shinto speak, the other two understood how he must have felt. In a way, him deciding to help Immortui, had made him do the most cruel things. While the two of them knew what was going on in the Red Space, they hadn't taken action with their own hands.

Calva could have perhaps made a deal to save the Skullys by helping out the others, and Pultra knew that her powers were making something that Immortui would use to just kill more.

Being involved though, and directly killing with your own two hands, were two completely different things.

"He's right." Calva said, as he turned his head. For some reason Unzoku seemed to be in some type of trance. He was looking at his own hand just smiling at it in and out. It was unsettling to say the least.

"But if you eat Shinto it won't be enough for you to take on Unzoku. You will need to eat all of us to stand a chance."

"Excuse me!" Pultra said. Hearing that Calva was just offering her up like that.

"Come on Pultra, you must also see that this is the only way." Calva explained. "Even with our strength, if we were to attempt to fight by his side we would be no help. The only way we can help is this way."

Pultra didn't like it, she could see that this was the only way for them to get out of the situation they were in, but that would mean ending her own life. She had already spent a good section of her life trapped away and not experiencing everything she wanted to experience.

The reason she had decided to fight back was for freedom, but if she lost her life then freedom wouldn't even matter. She did care for her life which was why it was hard for her to do as Calva suggested.

"You don't have to give that look." Chris said pushing himself off the floor, the wound was finally closing. It had taken some time but his Werewolf body was recovering.

Some of the blood had yet to dry up and as he stood it was dripping down his chest.

"I don't plan to eat any of you. The goal is the goal, before I was still thinking about beating him. I know after taking that hit it's impossible, so I won't have to eat anyone."

Before Chris could move forward, Shinto stood in front of him, and drew out both of his axes.

"I'm sorry, I just don't see it that way. I will at least make this easier for you." Shinto lifted up his axe. He didn't activate the black flames but he pressed it against his neck deeply and sliced it, making a large cut. His body fell to the floor, and it was now laying there, lifeless on the ground.

The two champions stared at the body, they were waiting for it to move, waiting for the image that they saw in front of them to change. They had seen a lot of unbelievable things in their lifetime, but they had never seen anything like what had just occurred.

"He... he really killed himself, he actually went through with it?" Calva said.

Calva was serious when he had offered up his body as well, but he wasn't so sure if he could do what Shinto did, doing the deed like so, and so easily.

"Chris, you have to eat his body." Pultra said. "I know it might not be right of me, because I didn't want to give up mine, but he took his life, to pass it onto you, so you could defeat Immortui, you can't waste that."

Chris knew Pultra was right. He quickly went down to the body of Shinto.

"I will never forget your sacrifice, and I will carry your body inside of me, so you stay alive inside, and I'll make sure to complete the task."

Knowing that they were in a rush for time, Chris picked up the body, and started to chomp down as he transformed his mouth. His powerful jaws crushed through it. He swelled bit by bit, and had eaten the body in seconds.

It was an amazing sight to see as one wouldn't know where the body went, but it was something the champions never thought they would see, a champion being eaten right in front of their very eyes.

After finishing consuming the champion, just like when Chris had eaten the demon king, he felt a surge of energy go through his whole body. The cells in his body were on fire, they were supercharged with strength and something else seemed to be happening.

When Chris went to look down at the palm of his red furred hand, he could see black flames covering it.

Chapter 2519: Stick to the Goal

Chris looked down at his hands; he was still in his stage four Qi form, giving his fur a red appearance. It wasn't the only thing that was present. Black flames surrounded the outside of his hands; they were flowing as if active, yet he felt no pain in his hands at all.

"These flames, I've seen them before. They look exactly like the ones Shinto and Hinto both used, but why can I use them?"

After consuming Shinto's body, Chris felt re-energized as he normally did. A surge of power coursed through his entire body; on top of that, the large wound that was across his chest had healed up as well.

In order to test out his newfound strength, he would usually clench his fist. It was a good indication of how much power he had gained because he could feel his own grip strength.

Doing so, he had activated the black flames unconsciously. It was the first time such a thing had happened. Chris had gained new strength and new powers related to that of a werewolf, but it was the first time, since consuming someone, he had gained their powers, the special trait of the Chrono, the black flames that only those at the pinnacle could reach.

"Shinto, I guess you really did pass on everything you had over to me," Chris thought.

The other two champions, seeing this, were gaining new hope once again. They saw the new strength, and if they could pile their power onto Chris', it might just work. They readied themselves as they tried to come up with at least half the resolve that Shinto had.

That was until they could hear rumbling. Turning around, they could see the floor being ripped apart and a large tsunami wave of rocks heading their way.

Unzoku was no longer mesmerized by his powers and had decided to strike again. The attack was fast and powerful, and it looked like this time it would hit the champions. Before the attack swept them, they felt both of their bodies being grabbed and lifted.

When they could see again, they were looking at the side view of the attack, and Chris was by their side.

"Did he just pull us out of that attack in time? Just how fast is he?" Calva thought.

The trail of destruction was just as large as before as it tore through the city. It had surely taken out a chunk of allies and enemies that were still fighting behind them.

"You two stay alive," Chris said. "We fight to save people, and originally, although I wanted to kill Unzoku, I know the goal is to only get his blood, with the strength I have now, I can do it."

Before the others could say anything, Chris had already rushed forward. Unzoku could see this coming his way, and swung his once again. The ground was getting torn up, but Chris continued forward.

Since the attack was large and it emanated from the user's claw, it meant that there were large gaps as well. As the energy claw came towards Chris, he jumped up and created a Qi platform by his feet at the side of it. Kicking himself off it, he boosted himself forward and swung a flurry of swipes at Unzoku.

Unfazed by the small energy attacks, Unzoku used his own hands to block them all. They were clashing against his claws one after the other, as they did small black flames appeared around him and not only that, some were stuck to the outside fur on his hands.

Looking at his own hands, it seemed like the flames weren't coming off them.

"What is this strange power?" Unzoku thought.

Through his claws, he could see a small werewolf coming his way. Immediately, Unzoku went to strike with his hand, but with Chris' speed, he was able to avoid it, and as he did, he swung his claws again several times.

The strikes hit his legs; they hadn't done much damage, but part of the black flames appeared on his legs as well.

"I need the blood; I need to get a direct hit; I can't just wear him down!" Chris pushed himself off a Qi platform and spun his body.

He was going in an attempt to rip off Unzoku's flesh, but in annoyance of not being able to hit Chris from before, he lifted his head and let out a large howl, "AWHOOO!" Following the howl, swirling red energy pulsed out of Unzoku's body. As it hit Chris, it caused him to be pushed back, and his whole body skidded across the ground, tearing it up.

"All of this is just from the external energy from his body. Even after consuming Shinto, I'm still no match at all for him, in terms of power!"

The moment the energy blast was no longer affecting Chris, he got up from the ground and tried again.

After Unzoku expended all of his energy out, he looked at the black flames that were spreading. Since his energy wasn't doing anything to get rid of them, there

was only one thing he could do. With the sharp claws of his hand, he cut off parts of his flesh along with the fur and threw it onto the ground.

The black flames stayed on the pieces of flesh, but in the place of the wounds that were on Unzoku's body, they had started to heal.

Immediately after seeing this, Chris started to swing his claws rapidly, trying to hit Unzoku, and changed direction from one side to the other. Unzoku was avoiding the annoying hits and moved to the side, back and away.

That's when the demon king realized something, though. Chris hadn't gone after him; he wasn't rushing toward him. Instead, he was moving into the area where Unzoku had been not too long ago.

As he rushed past the area Unzoku was before, he picked up the flesh and clenched it with his hand, getting rid of the flames. Then he looked for where Calva was along with Pultra.

With his arm, he threw the piece of flesh in the air. It was going at an incredibly fast speed, but Calva, creating a bone out of his hand, stabbed it as it was in the air.

"This is... this is Unzoku's flesh," Pultra said with disbelief.

The flesh was stuck on the bone spear that Calva had made, and blood was dripping down it. Almost immediately, Pultra pulled out one of the flasks she had been given by the others, and the two started to strain the blood.

"Did Chris plan all of this after getting the power of the black flames?" Pultra thought.

In no way or form would anyone say that Chris would be able to defeat Unzoku. Even with the power of Shinto, it could be seen. Unzoku's body had healed so quickly after cutting off his own flesh, and his power was overwhelming.

Even though Chris was able to annoy Unzoku like a little fly, eventually, he would be squatted and overwhelmed, but the demon kings and even Immortui, had no idea that their goal was just the blood, and they had now achieved that.

With Tenbris being a part of Unzoku, the group had managed to get all five of the demon king's blood. The question was, now how would they get out of this situation.

"You are starting to look even more delicious," Unzoku licked his lips.

Chapter 2520: All The Demon King's Blood

The Demon King Unzoku was at his strongest he had ever been. Over the time he had spent in the red space, he was one of the Demon Kings who was obsessed with growing his power.

The creation of the pit, making stronger inhabitants so he could feast on them, never ceased because his hunger never stopped either. Now, after eating one of the other Demon Kings, he had grown in strength by another leap.

He was confident that he wouldn't lose to anyone, and yet, if he consumed the werewolf in front of him, he was sure he would grow even more. The red mist around him was unsettled as he thought about all of these things.

'Crap!' Chris tightened his fist and didn't dare look away from Unzoku. The moment he did, he felt like the Demon King would pounce on him. 'We've managed to achieve the goal, but it's useless if we can't get the blood to Quinn. How are we going to survive this whole thing?'

Chris had only had a few interactions with Unzoku, which made it even more frightening. His strength was still far below Unzoku's. It was only thanks to his superior speed that he was able to survive so far. And it was only thanks to Shinto that they had gotten the blood they needed as well.

Chris had decided the best thing for him to do right now was to react, so he was waiting for Unzoku to make the next move.

The red space was swirling around him, but it was doing so in a strange way. It was creating a type of whirlpool in the air right next to his ear. Then out of the red whirlpool, a mouth appeared.

It was red in colour, made out of the mist's energy. It stretched out, reaching Unzoku, and started to whisper away. The smile that revealed Unzoku's teeth almost instantly went away along with the glow in his eyes.

Instead of being in a leaning forward position like he was ready to strike at any moment, he then stood up with his back straight. The red mist disappeared along with the lips as well as the heavy tension that filled the air.

"It looks like my calling has come, and I have bigger things to deal with. Whether you guys survive what is about to happen is down to you," Unozku said, as if the words were directed toward the champions and Chris.

The Demon King soon bent his legs, and he leapt up in the air, disappearing out of sight. Moments later, the whole area shook forcefully. They couldn't see him land, but they could feel his power even now.

"What... just happened? Did Unzoku just leave like that?" Calva said, somewhat relieved. He had already counted his last moments at least ten times during the fight, and now he felt great relief.

"I don't understand it myself," Chris said to the others. "But... it looks like we managed to survive."

Chris transformed back into his human self. His body was exhausted in more ways than one. Although he gained newfound strength and stamina through eating Shinto, everything that happened was exhausting on his mind, and his Qi didn't get replenished either. He had used next to everything he had. He still had the strength of his body to rely on, though, if they were needed. What they needed to do was take this chance and get out of here.

"It looks like you had quite the fight here!" A voice shouted out.

The champions turned, along with Chris, and they were surprised to see that a reunion was occurring. Russ, Peter, Hikel, and Edvard were making their way over. However, Edvard was coming from a different direction compared to the others; he had come from the Yak city. He had been watching the fight so far, but he fully knew he was unable to do anything with the state his body was in. So Edvard just stayed back, getting close as he could, waiting for the result, the outcome of it all.

"It seems that you ran into quite a bit of trouble," Edvard said, looking at Hikel's arms.

"It also looks like you can barely stand yourself," Hikel replied. "I guess this was a bit too much for us, but we managed to do our best."

"We helped where we could, old friend; that's what we always try to do," Edvard smiled and pulled out the flask. He had the blood of the Yak king in his possession.

"What happened to Luce?" Pultra asked.

"We had some unexpected help," Hikel replied. "But Luce is no longer alive, so we don't have to worry about him anymore. We had already given Quinn the blood, though. What about you? What about the other champions?"

Their heads sunk into their chests for a moment when the question was asked, but Chris decided to speak up.

"Shinto gave his life, and in turn, we managed to get the blood of Unzoku. He's still alive, but he left this area for some reason. There is one thing that I'm not so sure about, though, whether or not this will count as two of the Demon King's blood."

"Two?" Peter replied.

The situation was explained as to what had occurred. They understood Chris' reasoning and his worry, but there was nothing they could do about it now.

"We can't worry about that werewolf," Peter said. "If we have all of the Demon blood, then we need to get it over to Quinn now. The energy I could feel on the planet before, I can't feel it now, and it's worrying me a little."

The entire group knew what Peter was talking about; it would be impossible not to. Because every single living thing on the planet could feel it. There was even a tingling sensation in their bodies, as the blood was trying to pull them to where Quinn was currently, but it had all stopped.

"Agreed, let's get this blood to Quinn and finish off Immortui!" Hikel exclaimed.

There was a confident nod on all of their faces, unaware of what had actually happened. Just before they set off, all of them could feel a rumbling beneath the ground as well. It wasn't short; it was a consistent sense of rumbling.

When looking up in the sky, they could see the large ships covered in a strange black hardened material, crafted by the Demon Yaks, rising in the air. Not only were they rising in the air from the production facility but also from the Yak city, where the other demons had joined and landed.

Fights were still taking place as the ships moved, but as if determined or forced by some sort of will, they were all moving in the air, and they were heading in a certain direction.

"That's the same area where we were training Quinn as well... What is happening right now?" Pultra wondered.

Chapter 2521: Red space to Golden Space

The fist of Immortui had gone right through Quinn's chest, and the blood crystal was now in his hand. Just from touching the outside, Immortui could feel the energy from within. His hands were slightly shaking.

'This power, it's power that has been cultivated for an incredibly long time. You must have been through a lot to have gotten so strong in such a short amount of time. It is a shame that your journey ended here.'

When Immortui's arm was pulled out, the lifeless body of Quinn fell to the floor. Blood was dripping from the hole in his chest, soaking the ground beneath it, and his eyes showed no sign of life.

As a god closely connected between life and death, he knew for sure that Quinn had perished, and he was no longer something to worry about. However, having followed the race of vampires, a creation that he had made, he did know one thing.

Original vampires, the first creations of Immortui, when they were to perish, their bodies usually turned into ash. Yet, even though a few moments had passed, Quinn's body still hadn't done so.

The armour that was on Quinn's body, Immortui could sense that it was powerful, and even though it was mostly destroyed with shards and more practically embedded into Quinn's body, it still had a sense of power.

But what could armour do if the person who was wearing it was dead? It was useless, and Immortui was far more focused on the goal he had been waiting for a long time.

'The connection of the crystal is strong with the golden space, and the power of the crystal is something that is similar to my own. A blood stone is a complicated object; it's not just a simple stone that stores the vampire's powers; it has more than just that,' Immortui thought as he started to gather the red mist around the crystal.

He slowly started to pull his hands, and the red mist connected with the crystal. It was vibrating in place as Immortui pulled his hands further and further. More of the red mist started to gather, and the crystal was beginning to light up.

Just a little ahead of where the crystal was, the red mist was forming a relatively large circle, and inside that circle, patterns, shapes, along with strange writing, were forming.

It looked similar to the magic circles that Agent 4 was able to draw up.

'In your last moments before death, you would have had a strong emotion, a thought in your mind of a particular place! Those strong emotions would have

spread through your body and even kept in the Blood stone. Wherever this blood stone opens will be the place that you thought of in that moment.

'I guess the one saving grace is that you won't see the ones you care about the most die in front of your eyes.'

Immortui moved his hands away, and the crystal was being held up by his strange red power as it started to glow further. A beam came out from the crystal and hit the magic circle mist formation.

The moment it connected, the mist started to glow bright red as well, and all merged into one large image. Finally, the energy from the blood stone was being used, and it was breaking through, creating a portal from one world into the next.

Moments later, from above, a small object was seen getting larger by the second. It then crash-landed by Immortui's side and shook the ground beneath them.

"Oh... so it looks like you finally achieved it, we are finally moving forward," Unzoku said. "I got your message, but I thought it might have been a trap."

The Demon King Unzoku had stopped his fight, as a message had been delivered to him, and not just him, but the rest of the demons as well.

"The portal, it isn't strong enough for us to go through just yet. If we try now, our bodies will just get rejected, but as for the other demons, they will be able to make it," Immortui explained.

"Don't worry; the fleets are already on their way. I will let my army of werewolves head in first," Unzoku replied and started to look around the place. He could see the dead body that was on the ground, but he was wondering about something else.

"Where are the other Demon Kings, where is Luce and Bisha?" Unzoku asked.

"You're not going to ask about Tenbris?" Immortui said, giving Unzoku the side-eye. It was as if he already knew what had happened. "All of them are dead. You and I are the only two left, but it's all we need to take charge and get rid of the celestials. We accomplish this, and you can have and do whatever you wish."

Unzoku seemed unfazed by it all, and in the distance, they could see the large fleet of ships moving their way. The Divine Brigade were still annoyingly fighting with their forces, but Immortui didn't care. In his mind, the war had just started sooner than he thought. When they went to the golden space, it would be a free-for-all, as he knew the Divine Beings targeted anything on sight.

"That body... it still has power left in it," Unzoku said. "Do you mind if I eat it?"

Although the blood stone was no longer with Quinn, there was still a strong energy left in the cells of his body. Unzoku was already imagining just what stage he

would get at. Would eating this body on the ground be the same as if he was to eat that werewolf from before?

"Sure, go ahead," Immortui stated, as he waited patiently for the other demons to arrive and the portal to open. He had been waiting so long for this moment, and now it was just a little longer.

Unzoku came close to Quinn's body, and when he went to snatch it with his hand, a blonde-haired figure appeared right in front of them.

Immediately, it was covered in large blue lightning all over his body.

"Don't touch him!" Sil shouted at the top of his lungs.

Lightning struck from his body constantly, rapidly firing out and hitting Unzoku. It sent a weird tingling sensation through his body. It didn't do much damage but had frozen him in place.

"You again, how are you still alive!" Immortui shouted as he saw who it was.

Sil immediately grabbed Quinn's body, and as quickly as he had arrived, he had disappeared.

"Damn it! Damn it!" Unzoku screamed, and the ground beneath his feet started to crack. He had recently gained a large increase in strength and he was still feeling a high of that power gain. He wanted more, and desperately.

"Don't worry about them; he was already dead, and the others should be close to it anyway," Immortui calmed Unzoku. "We have to focus on bigger enemies."

For updates on MVS and future works, please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS, or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there.

Chapter 2522: An invasion of the past

After the last attack on the vampire settlement and getting no further information on Quinn, Muka, Xander, and Layla had decided to put some defensive measures in place. Although the previous attack had happened from within somehow, there was no harm in increasing their defenses.

The wandering guards that patrolled the settlement had their numbers increased, and each of them was given a communication crystal. It would amplify their voices, and the message would then be relayed to certain towers that had been built in the settlement.

These towers served two purposes. One was as a repeater; if a message was received from the transmitting crystal, it would play it out loud for everyone to hear and spread it until it reached another tower.

At the same time, vampires were stationed on the towers, keeping watch over the settlement and its surroundings.

Then there were the settlement walls. They had been upgraded with new materials, making them stronger and more reinforced compared to before. The materials had been donated by the Graylash planets, and with Logan's help, automated defenses had been placed in the wall.

The walls had several cannons and ballistae that worked using crystals. They were cleverly designed because once a target type had been designated, they would use facial recognition to distinguish between friend and foe.

Additionally, the face of every vampire in the settlement had been scanned. The cannons would never fire at someone who was in the system. They could also be manually operated, but that would defeat the purpose of the automated system.

Both Muka and Layla were walking around the settlement, reviewing all the changes that were being made.

"It still isn't as strong or good as when Quinn was able to control the place with his system," Layla commented.

"Those were some crazy times," Muka replied. "But the vampires are stronger than they were back then. They weren't able to put up a fight before, but we can now, and besides, perhaps we are worrying too much; nothing has even happened."

When Quinn had the system, he was able to upgrade the entire settlement when he became king. He changed the walls, created towers, and even introduced golems. It was quite an impressive feat.

He had lost all those abilities when he turned into a Celestial vampire, and when the settlement itself was moved. Layla had the idea to improve the settlement based on what had been used back then.

"I mean, you are right. We've decided to start up the school again, and still, no incident has occurred. It was just so random? Right after that strange being appeared along with the others, I just thought that something big might be happening, and without that sword, I can't help but feel nervous."

The two were walking toward the front gate, where they could see several vampires stationed there. The wall looked completely different compared to before, made out of metal sheets and curved inwards. Around the back, there were platforms for vampires to stand on.

A vampire ran up to them, bowing down. When he lifted his head, he was suddenly taken aback.

"I welcome—" Before he could finish his sentence, his eyes widened as he looked at something appearing next to the settlement.

It wasn't directly above the settlement, but off to the side. As Muka and Layla turned to look, they could see it as well.

In the sky, there was a giant red portal. It was swirling, and a strange mist was escaping from it, turning the entire dark sky red.

All the vampires in the settlement were drawn to what was happening, pointing their fingers.

"Prepare for combat!" Layla shouted immediately.

The vampires quickly picked up their transmitting crystals and shouted the words into them. Soon, throughout the settlement, the words "prepare for combat" were being spread to every corner.

They hadn't seen anything come out of the portal, and it could well have been Quinn and the others, but Layla wasn't going to be hopeful.

After the portal opened up, a large black vessel could be seen coming through from its tip. It was enormous, casting a shadow over part of the settlement. Onboard the vessel, there were countless Divine Beings that Layla and the others had seen before, but it wasn't just them either.

It was clear that they were fighting against something. Soon, from the vessel, a number of creatures started to drop down into the settlement. The turrets immediately opened fire.

Most of the creatures had fallen outside of the wall, but they had immediately gotten up and started running straight for the settlement walls. They were running on all fours, and when they got close to the wall, they leaped right up in the air.

A blood swipe was swung toward one of them, hitting the creature's chest but doing next to nothing. The creature landed on top of the vampire and began to bite down on its neck.

Several more of the creatures were scaling the walls, and a grand battle began. Soon, Muka could see exactly what creatures were coming toward them.

"It's... it's werewolves! How... I thought they were extinct!" Muka shouted. "What is happening!"

The vampire guards continued to draw their weapons and use their abilities as they battled with the werewolves. For many of the vampires, it was their first time facing enemies as fast and strong as these creatures.

Instead, they had to focus on using their blood aura to attack from a distance. Without their strength, it was difficult to severely injure the werewolves. Especially these ones.

Having been raised by Unzoku they were far stronger than the werewolves of the past. When the blood aura would hit their bodies, it did next to nothing. At least a group of ten vampires or even more would have to be used to deal with one werewolf, and yet, the vampires didn't out number them, there were many.

The only saving grace was the Divine beings that were attacking them still.

Layla pulled out her bow from her back, gathered her Qi, and started firing arrows. They hit some of the werewolves right in their mouths and claws before they could bite down on some of the other vampires.

"Does that really matter right now? What matters is that we need to do everything we can to defend ourselves!" Layla shouted.

She was, of course, worried about Minny, but she knew that Minny was strong. If anything, she would be the one protecting the school because it was quite clear that each one of these werewolves was deadly strong as well.

Muka, having snapped out of her daze, shook her head.

"You're right. This is an old enemy of the past, one that nearly drove us to extinction... We won't be able to win this battle if we don't act appropriately!" Muka stood up and pulled out her transmitter device. "Wake up all of the vampires in eternal slumber; everyone must fight for the survival of the vampires!"

For updates on MVS and future works, please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS, or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2523: Wake them all up

The fight from above the vampire settlement was intense. Buildings were being destroyed as a werewolf grabbed onto the body of a vampire, and hurled him through several buildings.

Almost immediately, several vampires from above attacked with blood swipes hitting the werewolf, while another came with a sword and stabbed it right through its stomach.

However, the werewolf was still standing and strong, opening its large mouth it bit down on the vampire. The general public, those that weren't guards, knew they had to get involved.

There was no running to safety, every single person would need to do their part if they were to get rid of the enemies.

When the werewolf was done eating what was in front of it, it was ready to charge in next to another vampire, until it was blasted by a black energy. It was badly hurt, a hole had appeared through its stomach, but shortly after and a black spear had gone right through the werewolf's head killing it on the spot.

"Did that thing just kill the werewolf, does that mean it's on our side?" The vampires wondered.

The being was large in size around three humans standing on top of each other, it had dark wings on its back and dark spear in its hand.

"No... that thing, it was what appeared at the event!"

The vampires had realised a little too late, when it turned around it pointed its spear towards them and fired out a large beam of black energy. As it hit their bodies, it left nothing behind, killing them on the spot.

A three way battle was taking place, The Divine beings attacking everything they could see, the vampires defending themselves as best as they could, and the werewolves taking out the vampires and the Divine beings that were on their tail.

The order had been received, to wake up those in eternal slumber. The vampire knights of each of the current families were on the move. They were heading down below to the castles, underground.

It was where all of the tombs were placed. In the search for the old vampire tombs, Muka had managed to return most of them but not all. She placed them back under the castles of those they had found.

But still, vampires were growing older in the settlement over time, and even the vampires that lived in the Graylash planets or part of the Vampire Corps would choose eternal slumber in the Vampire Settlement.

Vampires who had grown tired of the world, and even the past leaders who people feared were working with Immortui who had decided to go to sleep were in slumber.

As the nights entered the underground tombs, byt the side, they placed their hands on the strange combination to the side. Soon part of the wall started to slide down and smoke appeared from the bottom.

Now in front of them, were rows of tubes that contained different samples of blood. This was a system and creation that had been set up by Vincent.

It took far too much time for them to find out which vampires belonged to which families, and whether or not their blood was able to be used to wake up those in a slumber.

So a blood sample of every single person who went into slumber was made for this very occasion; when the settlement was in dire trouble, and it certainly looked like that. After getting the samples of blood the vampires stood by the chambers pouring the blood down.

The tombs started to swirl up out of the ground opening up one by one. The vampires' eyes opened wondering what was taking place, but could see many others in the same situation.

"There isn't much time to explain what is going on!" The vampire knights shouted.
"Right now, the settlement is under attack, and it's by werewolves."

There were confused looks on the vampires' faces, some of them even chuckled thinking that it might be some sort of prank, but when they listened closely they could hear the panicked heart beats of all the vampires inside, and the screams that were coming from above.

"We must protect the settlement, at all costs!" A vampire shouted, stepping out of the chamber.

On the surface, Layla was going toe to toe with one of the werewolves, she had pulled out her sword and redirected two of their slashes. She hit them away with her sword, flinging them to the side.

With her other hand free she had made a Qi arrow and threw it forward hitting the werewolf right in the arm. Another werewolf had appeared from the right, leaping in the air.

Quickly, she opened her mouth wide and flames erupted, covering the werewolf. It didn't slow it down, but made it hard for it to see. She quickly rolled out of the way, and switched to her bow, firing out several arrows at the werewolves.

Right above them, she could see a pair of Divine beings having chosen them as their target, instead of continuing her attack she had decided to continue going through the settlement, helping those she could.

Her and Muka had long split up, they couldn't focus their strength in one area, because there wasn't a single enemy that they needed to defeat, they were all absurdly strong.

'Xander has gone to try and communicate with the Graylash family and the Vampire Corps, to see if they are dealing with the same issue. If it's only us though, they will send in support, but I don't know how long we can last.'

'Even if it was just the werewolves, or the gold and dark beings, I don't think we will be able to make it out of this. Just what is going on, Quinn, where are you!'

The school had only just restarted in the vampire settlement, and once again trouble had taken over all of the place. The children were told all to evacuate to the large sports hall.

Although everyone was expected to take up arms, this wasn't true of the children who were, for the most part, significantly weaker than the vampires.

"Why is this happening!" Abby shouted as she was crying.

"It's okay, this stuff always seems to happen! But we don't have to worry!" Tobi declared.

All of the children crying their eyes out would disagree, especially since the teachers were already battling it out. They were fighting and broken walls, along with explosions, were constantly going off one after the other. The children flinched each time they heard this.

"It's okay children, I will protect us!" Miss Bedford declared.

Right in front of her eyes, an explosion had occurred, rubble and dust were chucked in front of her, and on the ground a dead vampire laid there.

Then walking through the rubble there was a beast covered in fur, with razor sharp teeth. It was a werewolf.

All of the children screamed in response to seeing the werewolf.

Miss Bedford acted quickly as she threw out a blood swipe, but when the werewolf swung its arm it broke through the blood swipe like it was nothing.

"It's okay!" Tobi said again. "We don't have to worry, because... we have her!"

Jumping through like a red blur, transforming into a small little red vampire form, Minny came out, and struck the werewolf at full strength right in the head, sending it right back down the hallway.

"We don't have to worry, because we have one of the strongest vampires in the whole settlement protecting us." Tobi said proudly.

For updates on MVS and future works, please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS, or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2524: Final Chance

A small flash inside a cave had appeared, and a blonde-haired figure held a curly dark-haired man in his arms. He softly placed him on the floor, and as he looked upon his face, tears couldn't stop from rolling down.

"Quinn... Quinn, you can't be, it's impossible, you've never done this before, answer me!" Sil shouted as he shook the shoulder of his friend, but his eyes kept lingering down.

As they did, he looked upon the large hole in his chest. Even now touching him, Sil could tell he felt very cold, and he couldn't even sense a flicker of a heartbeat.

"You can't die before us! You can't!" Sil shouted. "You can't die when you were the one that saved all of our lives! We came here to help you, not to bury you, so get the F*ck up, get up! Get up, get up!" Sil continued to shout at the top of his lungs.

After getting Quinn from in the middle of Unzoku and Immortui, he had returned to the cave. At the time, he wasn't able to get a proper look at Quinn, but seeing him on the ground, he feared the worst, and now seeing him like this, it appeared as if the worst had occurred.

"You attacked Unzoku when there was no need to." another voice said, bouncing off the cave walls.

Sil wasn't alone in the cave, for Mundus had discovered him and had remained inside, watching the events. In truth, he had a plan; he just didn't realize how ridiculous his plan was. He was to snatch away the red crystal from Immortui if Quinn was to fail.

He was a little slow in acting; he didn't know why, himself. On reflection, perhaps he had put too much hope in Quinn winning the match. When he tried to intervene, the power that was emitting from the fight was too much for Mundus to handle.

Then when the fight was over, Immortui hardly looked damaged at all, and he felt like Unzoku was even stronger than before. It was impossible to stop them, so he stayed here, but Sil had decided to act.

"He was going after Quinn, I had to stop him!" Sil shouted back.

"But Quinn is dead, and you are alive!" Mundus replied. "I already explained to you. I restored your MC cells back to what they were, but that was a one-time thing. The colourless ability is still inside you; I can't remove it."

"Soon my power will weaken, and the colourless ability will continue to spread. It won't kill you, but whatever powers or energy you use from now on will never be restored again."

"You just attacked Unzoku, and wasted your power for no reason!"

In the condition that Sil was in when Mundus found him, he wouldn't have been surprised if he ended up dead in a couple of hours, but Mundus was able to pause the ability to keep it on hold.

On top of that, he had placed his celestial powers over Sil's heart. This was to shield it from the colourless ability, keeping him alive. Then, using his powers to speed up time while using his powers to stop time, he stopped the effect of the colourless ability while allowing Sil's body to recover.

He had regained his MC cells. However, when Mundus' ability had stopped, the colourless ability continued to spread through Sil. He could use the MC cells that he had restored, but after that, he would never be able to use his powers again.

At that moment, Sil wasn't thinking of the explanation Mundus had given. He just wanted to stop Unzoku at all costs.

The sound of sobbing continued, and they were left there in silence, while he looked out at the scene that was taking place. The portal was opening, and the large fleet ships were breaking through.

'I have failed my task.'

While looking out the opening of the cave, blocking his view, he could see several human-shaped figures start to enter the cave. They had done so quite rapidly, one after the other.

"You?" Russ said, immediately noticing Mundus, but the sound of heavy footsteps soon stopped all of that.

With each step, the ground shook, as it was violently filled with Qi. He walked past everyone, and they all took a step away as they looked at Peter.

"Quinn." Peter said, walking forward. He could see Sil sobbing as he held him and shuffled to the side, allowing Peter to have a better look.

"It's a lie, right?" Peter asked, taking another step, stronger than the last, his power erupting, causing a few pieces of rubble to fall from above.

"QUINN!" Peter shouted with such strength. "Get up, get up!" Peter shouted and went down to the floor, falling to his knees. "Please... please.." Peter repeated these words and moved his hands slowly.

He went and grabbed Quinn's hand, lifting it, and started to rub it back and forth. "Come on, man.. don't do this to me, please.. you're like the only thing I have left, please." Peter said.

It was a heartbreak thing for them all. The wight that was known for showing no emotion was, for some reason, showing an extreme amount of emotion.

Peter's head sunk into his chest, and he closed his eyes tight. "F*ck, F*ck, F*ck!" He squealed out. "How... Am I meant to go back to Layla without you?"

Eventually, Peter's shoulders started to move up and down, and red tears were streaming down his face. His body was in a state of uncontrollable motions that his celestial energy had transformed him, and he was crying out tears of energy.

Everyone, at that moment, even Russ, had stood up. They then walked to the side of the caves and in silence looked at the body of Quinn. A well of emotions was filling them all up.

They were remembering everything that had happened, everything that took place that made it so they were here, why they had decided to come and join and help Quinn out on his journey.

As they thought about all of this, emotions were changing by the second. Could they have done more? Angry at themselves for relying too much on Quinn, for putting too much on his shoulders.

Edvard lifted the flask with the Demon King's blood in it and moved forward. The champions had done the same with their flasks as well.

"We completed the mission, but it looks like we were too late in doing so," Edvard said as he poured it into Quinn's mouth.

Soon after, Pultra had done the same with her flask. There was a bit of hope in all of them that maybe the demon blood might have done something, but there was no reaction at all.

"If we had gotten here in time... and gave him the blood, would he have beaten Immortui?" Calva said out loud what the others were thinking.

They all knew a large-scale battle had to have been taking place; they could feel the energy, so they guessed that this was all his doing.

"Quinn has asked us to do so for a reason," Chris said, as he looked at his hand. "I believe, just like how werewolves get stronger from those they consume, Quinn would have gotten stronger by the blood he absorbed."

"He realized this and asked us to get the blood of all five to help him. Quinn has never failed in protecting us before. He has always won the fights, even when no one thought he could. It was us that failed him. We didn't bring him the blood in time."

The room was somber, with both Sil and Peter still by Quinn's side knelt down. That's when Mundus walked across the room past everyone who was grieving and looked out at the portal.

"Immortui can't go through the portal just yet. Which means that there is still time," Mundus said out loud. He then turned to face the others.

"Do you all truly believe that if you had the blood, if Quinn had gotten it in time, he would have beaten Immortui?" Mundus asked.

The others didn't say much at first; they just looked at each other, with most of them nodding. But Peter had his back facing away from Mundus.

"What are you asking such a stupid question?" Peter said. "Of course he would, he'd kick his f*cking arse!"

Hearing the strong words from Peter, Mundus smiled. "Very well then, I shall give him his final chance."

Chapter 2525: A New Flame

'The Last Chance.' These words had perked everyone's ears up, and even Peter had turned around to look at Mundus. Just what was he playing at? Why would he say such a thing to a room full of desperate people?

These words carried a lot of weight because it meant that the Messenger must have some way to save Quinn.

"What are you saying, you can bring back the dead?" Hikel asked. "Are you going to use some type of power like Immortui has, or is it something different altogether?"

Mundus didn't answer and instead walked back over to where the others were. He then looked at Quinn, whose body was on the ground, and he stared intensely at every part of him.

Peter blocked his way; he didn't trust Mundus and didn't want him to get any closer.

"Do you know how me and Quinn got to know each other so well?" Mundus asked, not expecting an answer. "It's because Quinn works for us, he works as an agent for the Celestials, for the gods."

There was an uneasy look on Calva's and Pultra's faces. They had heard the mention of Celestials many times. It was the enemy that Immortui was going after, but the details of what an agent was weren't entirely clear either.

"One of his jobs and part of a deal we had made was for him to travel around the universe and defeat God-slayers, powerful beings with immense power. Those that were too strong for the gods to handle. Honestly, he surprised me.

"Each powerful enemy he came across, he had managed to defeat them. I think it was at that time that I felt the same as all of you. I too felt like Quinn perhaps could be the person that could defeat anyone he faced, and that included Immortui. I think that's where my faith in him started."

The way Mundus talked about Quinn, he had done so in a manner that didn't make it sound like they were enemies, and it also felt like he knew some things that they didn't. It was causing the group's heart to feel heavier than before. How much was he carrying with him?

"Despite my belief, he lost, though, and I thought it was quite clear that I was wrong," Mundus said, as he walked closer to Peter to the point where his face nearly touched his.

"But it turns out all of you feel the same way as I did, so maybe I'm not wrong. If you want him to come back, then I suggest you move," Mundus ordered.

Now they were sure of it; Mundus had to have a way to make him come back. At that moment, Sil was the one that stood up from the ground and grabbed Peter's hand, pulling him away.

"I think he means it when he says he can help Quinn; he helped me as well. Right now, we have to be honest with ourselves; we can't do anything," Sil said.

Unwillingly, with clenched fists, Peter allowed his body to be dragged to the side. His legs were moving, but the killer stare he gave Mundus remained on him.

Now, with Quinn's body in sight, Mundus lifted both of his hands, and energy left them, directly hitting Quinn. An orb of white energy surrounded his body. It looked untouched, even with the energy surrounding it, and nothing appeared different.

"Back then, when Quinn was facing the powerful god-slayers, there was one that caused us more problems compared to any other. One that no matter how many times we killed it, it would keep coming back again and again, it was a true Phoenix."

"A Phoenix?" Edvard said.

Most knew of the legendary creature apart from the natural inhabitants.

"What is a phoenix?" Calva asked.

"It's a legendary creature," Hikel replied. "It's been talked about in legends for thousands of years through all our civilizations, the vampires, the humans, maybe even before then. A bird that is made of flames, that when it perishes it is reborn."

"Correct," Mundus said as he continued to use his powers.

With a careful eye, they were watching what was happening. Quinn's condition was getting no better; the wound was still in his chest, but the armour that was on his body that was broken, it was slowly coming back. It was restoring itself. Even the pieces that were melted or merged into his body.

It had soon even covered the entire of Quinn's chest, going over the hole.

"One of the legendary beasts in existence with extreme power that goes beyond even the Celestials' understanding, along with a red dragon," Mundus mentioned. "This Quinn in front of you had defeated it, and in doing so, he had obtained a god-slayer crystal.

"Usually, I would keep such crystals for myself, as the power they hold could disrupt the great balance the universe has, but due to a tricky situation with a Dark Mage, I had made a deal. This armour has the power of the Phoenix inside it, and I can feel that the power inside is still very much alive."

Mundus didn't go on to explain, but he could feel another power as well, something else that was lingering inside Quinn's body as if attached to it. When things died, the energy would move to different spaces.

Immortui had a close link to this space with his powers and was able to even pull people out of it. He could, in a way, increase the power of this energy and place it back in the body, saving those that were on the verge of death.

It wasn't just Mundus, but at the time Immortui could tell as well. He wondered if it was due to him still having a link to the Golden space, or if it was something else altogether, but it didn't matter to Immortui because he just wanted the crystal.

The final pieces of the armour were coming together. Mundus was using his ability to speed up time in a certain area, to speed up the repair process, one of the active skills the armour had.

'I've been watching you, Quinn. I know the effects of your armour, I know the power it holds, which is why others will fear you, but from watching you, I know what type of person you are. You aren't one to start trouble to gain more; you are just a person who wishes to protect what you have.'

Eventually, all of the pieces had come together, they had joined up and melded into place, the engraving on the chest started to light up red, looking as if flames were coming off from it.

"As an agent of the gods, I will give you one more assignment, go and take out Immortui," Mundus ordered.

The entire of Quinn's body lit up at that moment, and at the same time, the system had activated.

[All requirements of the Active Skill have been met]

[A New Flame has been activated]

Chapter 2526: Demon Quest Complete

Unlike before, when they were all watching Quinn, it was very clear that something was happening now. The flame that lit up on his chest started to extract small flames, and they began to swirl around his body.

Before they knew it, he was slightly lifted into the air as the flames continued to surround him. The armour was lit up brightly, and along with the flames, the group wasn't so sure if it was colour returning to Quinn's face or just a reflection of everything going on.

Soon, the flames had covered Quinn's body entirely, forming a pod around him, and the others weren't able to see anything, but big changes were occurring on the inside.

Over his chest, his skin was reverting back, the hole was healing up as the small flames were turning into energy particles. The particles then would be changed into muscle and flesh.

This continued until the large hole that had been made was no longer there. The healing didn't just stop there because the damage that was done on the surface level wasn't the main culprit.

Soon, something else started to form in his body; it was condensing, and all the energy of the flames that had entered was turning into a brand new bloodstone.

The old one that was being used to open the portal stayed intact. This wasn't a power of reversing time or putting things back in place. It was a power of creation. It was creating an entirely new Quinn.

The powers of a legendary beast, so strong that even the ones that named themselves gods didn't understand, were at work.

Finally, the bloodstone had been completed. At this point, it looked as if there was nothing else to repair, yet Quinn was still asleep, his heart didn't pump, nor was his mind working.

The flames from the pod surrounding him grew slightly larger and became more intense. Inside the small cave, everyone could feel the intense heat and was breaking out in a sweat.

Some of them wanted to leave, wanted to fall down onto the ground due to the heat, but none of them did because they wanted to see the outcome, to see if he really would come back.

The first out of the group to hear it was Chris.

"His heart... it's beating!" Chris said.

His sensitive werewolf ears were able to hear it. It was a single strong beat that allowed the blood to flow right through Quinn's veins. All of his power was coming back to him as it swirled around his body.

Soon after, a second beat had started, and the blood flowed more to all of his cells. The energy of the flames continued to do its work, and the sensation of touch and feeling was coming back to Quinn. Eventually, he had opened his eyes wide.

The flames went right back into his armour at that moment, all of it disappearing as his body fell to the ground with a thud.

Quinn blinked slowly as he looked at the hard stone ceiling.

"Quinn... you're alive!" Sil shouted.

[A New Flame Active skill has been used]

[The Skill can no longer be used]

"The new flame skill, that was the skill that was locked, and I couldn't see what it did, it was used, what happened?"

Quinn started to wiggle his fingers about. They felt fine, there were no issues at all, and he could move the rest of his body as well. His mind didn't feel foggy either, but he soon went to reach toward his chest, and that's when the final moments hit him.

The final moments of his battle with Immortui.

"I lost that fight, and I was killed," Quinn said, lifting his lower body up off the floor.

When looking up, he could see Peter by his side, his eyes teary, and he also could witness all the others that were in the room as well. He could see and feel the uneasy tension that they had in their bodies. How they had suddenly relaxed when seeing him. Their hearts beating with joy.

"Yes, you did die," Mundus said. "And now you are alive again, but unfortunately, we haven't brought you back to life due to good news. Because remember, you died to Immortui, you didn't finish the job, which is why I helped bring you back to finish it."

In a way, Mundus didn't feel like he had done much. The armour was something that Quinn had earned from defeating the phoenix. It was one of the toughest

battles he had faced due to the length of time it took him. He persisted and managed to receive the crystal.

"I'm sure this means that the phoenix might be reborn as well though, since its power was used. Well, that will be another problem to solve," Mundus thought.

Looking around the room, hearing the news of what happened, Quinn could see that one of the champions was missing. Hikel had his arms missing, and something was just a bit off about Sil.

Not only that, but the blood being spilt was less than before. Standing up, the system screen had popped up in front of Quinn again.

[Quest complete]

[You have obtained advanced Demon blood]

[Your blood powers have evolved]

[The power of your blood aura has increased, and your sense of blood has as well!]

The quest that had just popped up was related to completing the general demon blood. It looked like while he was asleep, the others had managed to achieve the task. But the real shocker was what had appeared next.

"You guys, you managed to get the Demon kings' blood as well. You fought against all of those guys!" Quinn asked in disbelief.

He had already been beyond surprised that they had all come here, but not only that, they had helped him out greatly, beyond what he ever expected of them.

Quinn had fought against one of the Demon kings; it was a tough battle for even him, so he could only imagine what the others had been through. By using all their strength, they were able to complete the impossible.

"Does that mean, the blood we got, did it work?" Hikel asked.

They were worried because, technically, they had only been able to obtain 4 of the Demon kings' blood, but Tenbris was dead, so what else could they do? Due to the unique situation as well, they hadn't actually defeated all of the demon kings.

While looking at the others, through the gap and opening of the cave, Quinn could see it, the large portal that had opened up. He walked forward, stood on the edge, and looked at his system screen.

[Quest complete]

[5 of the Great Demon Races' Demon king blood has been absorbed]

[Transformation unlocked: Demon Form]

[You are now able to control the Demon form at will]

"You guys did the impossible; it's now my turn to do the same!"

Chapter 2527: Transform, it's time!

The chaos in the golden space had caught the attention of the Ancient Celestials. What the Ancient One was trying to stop by sending in the Divine Brigade had spread to the golden space.

'Is it too late, do I now need to get involved myself? For now, all of the trouble is concentrated in one area. Then I shall deal with this matter before it becomes something big.'

The vampire settlement was in chaos, and the fighting was intense from all sides. Everything was coming from one direction though, the large red portal. The vampires had managed to form groups, using their abilities to their advantage, they were dealing with the werewolves and the Divine Brigade.

They had figured out that it was better to just survive and let the two try and take out each other. It was more important to just avoid their attacks, this was the strategy implemented.

That was until they could see it, up above, several more portals were opening. These weren't red in colour like the others. Instead they were white. The portals were smaller in size but they were all above the settlement.

Coming out of them like a flock of birds, were the gold and dark beings, set on finishing the job, and killing everything on sight including the vampires.

They swarmed down, as they did, the Dark beings pointed their spears and fired away at the ground. They didn't care even if they were to hit their own allies.

Several large black explosions went off, one after the other, ruining nearly all of the buildings and the structures.

Layla, looking at it all, drew her bow and was firing in the sky, trying to do as much damage as she could, trying to hurt them, but there were too many and what little damage she would do would be healed by the Gold beings.

"This is impossible... we're doomed."

The group went to the edge of the cave and as they were looking out, they could see that not just one of the large ships had gotten through the red portal, but now another one was trying to get in.

There was practically a line of ships waiting to exit out of the red space. When the portal was open properly using the power of Quinn's crystal, then they would all be able to enter rather quickly.

"So, what's the plan, what do we do now?" Calva asked.

"The portal has already opened to the golden space." Mundus said, pointing at the portal itself in question. "The red crystal is in sight. I have a special container that I can use to gather the bloodstone. If any of you attempted to touch it you might get obliterated by its power."

They could fully understand that, this was Quinn's raw energy after all.

"Getting the bloodstone will close the portal, it won't stop those that have already gone to the other side. At that point though, the portals will remain open for a small time." Mundus explained. "The reason why Immortui hasn't gone to the other side yet is because the portal isn't fully open.

"He will be rejected by the golden space, but all of you are originally from the golden space, you will be able to return with no problems. At that time, you must all leave... except for you Quinn."

"I know." Quinn replied. "I already decided. I will finish it with Immortui no matter what. It's my fault that the portal is now open. We have no clue what's happening on the other side, but they might be in complete chaos."

"If that's the case, you guys will need to help them. As soon as the red blood crystal is collected, leave this area. I will make sure Immortui doesn't go after you and deal with him."

The others didn't like the sound of that, but they knew Quinn had already made his decision in this. He had come here with a goal, and the current situation somewhat solved their situation on how to get back.

"Quinn... don't stay here." Peter said. "If you stay here too long, I promise I'll come back to get you, alright."

Quinn couldn't help but smile at the comment.

"There is another issue. I doubt they will just let me go ahead and take the crystal." Mundus said. "Quinn will deal with Immortui, but we need to deal with Unzoku, who seems to have gained a tremendous amount of power."

"When I arrive at the scene, I will use all of my abilities to stop time for a fraction of a moment, so much that it will even be able to affect him. Doing this, I won't be able to attack myself."

"All of you will need to deliver the strongest attack you can muster, one with all of your might, in an attempt to get rid of Unzoku. I will get the blood crystal at that time. That is the only way this will all work."

"Are you sure?" Russ asked. "Are you sure you're not going to betray us?"

"I need this to work, just as much as you guys." Mundus said. "You could go ahead and use your black sword if you want, but destroying the crystal will ruin our chance to get out of here. I am doing this just to give you guys a chance. So it's up to you."

"Believe him." Quinn said. "He isn't one to go back on his deal, I'm guessing that's the reason why he's even here in the first place."

The group nodded, and they had a plan in place. All the strength they could muster, that included Chris as well. With this, it was time for them to act.

Standing on the edge, with everyone ready, it was time to begin.

[Vampire Demon God Transformation has begun]

Quinn's body started to change in front of all of their eyes. Shadow covered his limbs as he placed the armour away. His limbs were starting to change. Blood aura poured out from his mouth and along with it shadow that covered his entire body.

At this moment everyone stepped back fearing the worst. When it consumed and went back in Quinn's body they could see a drastic change. His wings, red in colour, solidly formed.

A strange blazing like coating appeared on him but it flickered as part of the shadow. His skin was a pearl white, with a strange shadow appearing around both of his arms and around his eyes.

This was Quinn's demon form in the flesh, and for a moment everyone was a little afraid of what was going to happen next.

"Let's go." Quinn spoke, his voice sounding high pitched and low pitched at the same time.

It sent a shiver down all of their spines, and blood energy swirled around them as he said the words.

'He can control it now... he's in complete control.' Calva thought unable to contain his smile. 'And I'm sure of it... he's stronger than before as well!'

Chapter 2528: Just an old book

The group wasted no time as they moved closer to where Immortui and Unzoku were. They intended to use Sil's power but wanted to get closer to minimize Sil's energy consumption. This way, when Sil did use his powers, he could position himself perfectly next to the Red Heart and Unzoku rather than somewhere in the general vicinity.

This gave Quinn a little time to check out what was unlocked in his system now that he was in his demon form. The first thing he noticed while running around was a new flow of energy in the air.

It was an energy he couldn't see with his eyes before, but now he could discern it. It was where all the blood was being split, and he could feel its source. It resembled strands leading him to the right place.

Not only that, but just like before, the strands were flowing into him. The blood energy naturally moved toward him effortlessly, requiring no concentration on his part. It was drawn to him.

[Absolute Shadow Control]

[Absolute Blood Control]

His absolute blood control and shadow control worked in the same way. He could control both powers freely, creating whatever he wanted from them, condensing them into different attacks, and more.

This was a positive development. When Quinn transformed into the bloodsucker, he couldn't use his blood powers. However, in his demon form, he could still use his powers as he was accustomed to.

One more line of text appeared:

[Shadow Blood will be infused in all blood and shadow skills]

'Shadow Blood, that's the ability I created by fusing the two together. Does it mean when using my blood aura and shadow abilities, it will have the same double hit effect? But what use is it on the shadow, which is mainly for blocking?'

He was wondering if they were now the same thing or different, or perhaps it was more to do with the way he used each power, since they did work in slightly different ways.

With blood control, Quinn knew that he could use his powers as usual, but they would be stronger compared to before. He wanted to know if there was something special, and it seemed like there were a few things.

[Shadow Blood Rain]

[An attack that comes from the wings. Small bullets of blood will shoot out from the wings as if it were raining. Each hit on the enemy will gradually slow the enemy bit by bit.]

'This attack is a bit like the Shadow Blood Bullet, but instead of one bullet at a time, it will rain them down like a machine gun. The question is, will this have an effect against Immortui? The blood fists were unable to do anything, and with his Colorless ability, will this type of attack even get through?'

[Shadow Blood Screech]

[From the mouth, a wave will expand out. The attack will start out narrow and grow in size. Depending on how close the move is used, the effectiveness of the attack will increase. The attack will dull all senses of your opponent.]

'This is also similar to the other shadow power I used before. With opponents I have gone against so far, they seem to be able to block the shadow with their power, even the demon aura and red mist power seem to, to some degree. Now that my blood has evolved, this attack might be my main ace in the hole.'

At least, that was what Quinn thought until he saw the final skill, and to be honest, he didn't know what to make of it or what its power would be.

[Shadow Blood Weapons Creation]

[The user will use its own blood mixed with its shadow powers to create weapons of his imagination. The weapons created are a condensed form of both shadow and blood. They are infused with great power and almost indestructible.]

Quinn wasn't much of a user of weapons; he mostly used his gauntlets. But since the power came from his blood, maybe he could create some on his hands. There had been times in fights where he had used other weapons such as spears and shields.

He had used swords but did so in a creative way.

'So from this, I can assume that the creations from my actual blood are far stronger than what I can do with blood control and shadow control. I have to remember that it will have the same effect as well as the Shadow Blood.'

To be honest, Quinn didn't really know what to make of all these abilities, and it was hard for him to think since he hadn't had time to test them. Either way, he was sure just like he had done with his fights so far, he could create his own moves as well.

At the end of the day, the system was there just to help and guide him.

'Vincent, Richard, I thank both of you for creating the system and allowing it to take me this far. Originally, when I first got it, I thought it was a curse. I would have done anything to get rid of such a thing.'

'At times, I always thought that maybe I could have done more if I did this and that differently, but I realize that's not the case. The truth is, sometimes I think, what would have happened if I had never opened that book?'

'What would have happened if I never had cut my thumb on my glasses back then and had gotten these powers? How much different would the world be now? Who would have thought all of this would have come from just an old book?' Quinn smiled.

Chapter 2529: Grab The Blood Stone

The red portal that was being opened to the golden space wasn't growing larger, but it was becoming clearer. Originally, it was just red swirls going around in circles, but the larger ships were still able to get through.

Now, it was becoming clearer; the space could be seen through a red veil, and slowly more of the portal was opening up.

"It won't be much longer now. I wonder how the Celestials will react to all of this," Immortui said.

A second large vessel was going through the portal, just like the last one, it was full of werewolves, but this time not just werewolves, but with Yaks as well. The Divine beings were still fighting strongly, mostly due to the golden ones being able to heal the dark ones.

That and their large numbers, however, the numbers did start to dwindle down in the red space.

"Maybe he's already noticed," Immortui thought.

Unzoku was getting ready; he was inching closer to the portal. He couldn't wait to get out on the other side. Just like Immortui, he had been trapped here for a long time, and now it was finally his time to shine again.

As he kept his eye dead straight on the portal and saw the second ship fully enter onto the other side, he noticed something. The swirls that were rotating again and again were starting to slow down.

It was only ever so slightly, but they had done so, which caused Unzoku to raise his eyebrow. As he turned his head again, to a normal person, they would have thought his movements were fine, but he was extremely sensitive to everything in his body.

He could feel every muscle fiber, and he could feel his head was moving ever so slightly.

'Is it an attack?'

Just as Unzoku opened his mouth, that's when he saw it, appearing right in front of him, was a group of people that seemingly had come out of thin air. Now the portal that was in Unzoku's backdrop had completely stopped.

He tried to move his hand, but it felt like it had frozen. His mind allowed him to process what was in front of him, and that's when he could see the Red Werewolf as well.

'What is going on, what is happening?'

Russ' arms were filled with lightning in one, and fire in the other. Peter had gathered all of the Qi he could in one fist and had both of his held tails surrounding it. Calva had formed a deadly large spiked spear, while Pultra's leg was glowing ever so brightly.

Edvard couldn't do much, but he hoped his ability of luck might just come through at this moment. While Hikel had formed and controlled as much blood as he could out of his body, he had condensed it into an orb above his head ready to fire out.

Then there was Chris, gathering the Qi in his body, breathing, trying to draw every bit of power in him. Out of everyone in the group, he perhaps had the most amount of power. He channeled it through his claws, which emitted the black flames, but this time he had more time to gather his power.

When the group had gotten close, all of them activated their strength; they condensed their power down as much as they could, ready to use it. It didn't matter if they weren't able to fight or get up after this, this was their last stand and their final attack.

Even Mundus had prepared his celestial energy in both hands while using all of his powers to stop Unzoku's reaction; half a second, maybe even less, was the only time Mundus could hold a being with such power.

However, the moment of surprise and teleporting in, that small fraction of a second was all they needed.

"This is our F*ck You!" Peter shouted.

All of them let off their beams of energy, condensing into one, all heading to one place. It hit Unzoku right in the chest. It lifted him off his feet and into the air, and the next moment he was blasted away.

The power was immensely strong, and he had gone off shooting into the distance. It was so far that they didn't even know where he was anymore.

After completing the attack, the others felt like they were going to collapse, and Sil had quickly teleported them onto the ground. Meanwhile, Mundus was still in the air, and he had brought out a strange-looking container device. The outside was hardened and had an appearance almost of a clear rounded crystal. It looked like a Nest crystal, only it was smooth like a pearl and it was split in two halves.

"Do you think Unzoku's dealt with?" Edvard asked.

"I doubt it. We probably only bought us some time; if he's injured, he will heal as well," Chris said. "But, we put our all into that attack, it might take him a while to heal."

The group was looking up above as they could see Mundus encasing the bloodstone. Once it was encased, the portal would stop opening, and it meant they only had a limited amount of time to escape from the place.

"If Unzoku does heal, doesn't that mean that Quinn will have to face them both on his own, doesn't he?" Peter asked.

They knew what Peter was getting at; he wanted to stay and help Quinn out, but it wasn't really an option.

"We already talked this over," Sil said. "We leave, and we leave now!"

Mundus was inches away from placing the casing on the blood crystal. It was hard to do as the forceful energy was pushing his hands away like two magnets, but he was pushing against it.

"I knew, I knew that you Celestials would come!" Immortui shouted as he recognized Mundus immediately.

Gathering his red energy in the air, he had formed a solid ball of pure power and threw it out. Mundus focused on the task ahead, and that's when flying right in front of the ball of energy, Quinn grabbed it with his dark-covered shadow hand.

He held onto the condensed energy, and with his fingers, crushed it down until the energy had completely disappeared.

"Who... are you?" Immortui asked. He didn't quite recognize the thing he was seeing in front of him. Yet the energy felt like it was similar to his own.

"I guess you would be surprised, after all. I've come back from the dead, and to finish you off!" Quinn answered.

A thought flashed through Immortui's mind, and although it shouldn't have been possible, there was always the chance that it just might be.

'I thought it was strange, the power that I could feel that was left behind. The fact that they had decided to risk going after his body, and his body not disappearing in the first place. I thought the task was done, I thought the job was done after I had gotten the blood crystal!'

"Are you really trying to get in my way again, after what happened last time!" Immortui shouted, and the energy around was pushed all in one direction, swirling in their area.

The power was frightening, and the others feeling it felt sick, as if they could hardly stand.

"Just because you look different, you think you can stop me now! I killed you before, and I'll just have to kill you again!" Immortui shouted.

At that moment, Mundus had found success. He had pressed the two halves of his special device or material and had closed the blood crystal. The energy was no longer used on the portal.

Now the swirls of energy had stopped, and the energy from the portal itself was breaking away, becoming nothing but particles and part of the energy around it.

"NOOO!" Immortui screamed.

All over the area, mist portals were opening up. They had blocked where Mundus was, they had appeared right where Quinn was and had surrounded the two of them.

Out from them, large fists were coming out, but at the same time, Quinn moved his hands, and in the exact same spots of all the areas of blood mist portals that had opened up, Shadow portals had appeared.

Straight out of them, large fists had appeared as well, and the shadow fists had collided straight ahead with the red mist fists all over. They clashed, and pulses of power vibrated in the air, but neither had lost out, Quinn's shadow fists or the blood fists, as they stayed in place.

"It won't be the same as last time!" Quinn said, making a scratch across his arm, and out of his own blood, he had formed a dark purple, mixed with swirling inner red, coloured spear in his hands.

Chapter 2530: Sil's last gift

Unzoku had been blasted a large distance away, somewhere into the land of hardened seas. The terrain looked like a giant sea had been frozen over, but rather than ice, it was hardened rock material.

The Demon King had crashed through several objects and landed on his way over, and he was now lying on the floor. A large wound was in the middle of his stomach, an entire hole that one could see through.

It was bleeding, but the muscles were still moving about on the inside, small parts of the black flame burning and making it hard for him to heal.

"Haha!" Unzoku laughed to himself as he looked at the sky. "Did they really think I was that much of a threat that they had decided they all needed to attack me at once? What a bunch of pathetic people."

It was strange again; the wound on his body was taking a lot longer to heal, but Unzoku was nowhere near at the stage of death, nor was he in a rush to get back. As he lifted the top half of his body, he looked in the distance, and he could tell the red bloodstone was no longer being used to open up the other portal.

"This is getting to be rather troublesome, a lot more than Immortui suspected. There is a chance that he might not make it through this."

While having these thoughts, portals started to open up above his head, three in total. They were white in colour, and swarming out from them were large groups of Divine beings.

"Is someone watching this whole thing? Are they trying to get rid of me, thinking that this is their chance? What foolish people!" Unzoku thought as he swung his arm, taking out one entire swarm of Divine beings.

Quinn had appeared right in front of Immortui in his new form. To Immortui, he had already won a fight against the vampire and he had used everything he had. So what difference would it make to him if he was to face him again? Surely he couldn't have gotten stronger again in the short amount of time. It had been less than an hour since their last battle. Yet, Immortui had used the same move that had trapped and worked against him before, but this time it had failed.

"My shadow powers, since they're mixed in with the blood aura, it's a lot stronger than before. An attack like that would have ripped through my shadow unless condensed, but now it's almost as if all of my shadow is condensed. This battle is going to be completely different from the last time!"

Quinn could see that Immortui had raised his hand; he was ready to activate the colourless ability. He wouldn't have used it before, for fear it would disturb the crystal opening the portal, but now he needed to stop the others.

Quinn threw the spear made from his own blood. As it traveled in the air, it seemed to gain more power from the currents of blood that Quinn could see around it. Rather than dealing with the spear directly, from Immortui's shoulder, one of the serpents opened its mouth, ready to fire at the spear. Before it did, though, a shadow portal opened in front of the spear. It completely disappeared and reappeared, hitting Immortui right in his back. It had pierced right through, and he could see a blood-pointed end.

"This weapon has pierced my skin?" Immortui was in disbelief, especially at seeing so much of his own blood. Not only that, but the particles of blood on the spear itself started to rise, and before he knew it, it went straight at him, trying to attack him. The blood splatters being destroyed by his thick veil of red mist aura. Grabbing the weapon, Immortui was ready to pull it out. However, the effect of the Blood Shadow was in effect, and he felt a great force pushing him from behind again.

He was lifted off his feet as the force in the throw from the initial spear and the power of the attack had appeared right again, and he was heading straight toward Quinn. With the blood that Quinn had used before to create the spear, he had shifted it around his arms to create gauntlets that were the same dark purple with an inner glowing red colour around them.

He swung his fist right toward Immortui's face. Before it reached through, Immortui had gathered his colourless ability in his hand and grabbed Quinn's fist. The shockwave of blood power rippled out, destroying the ground beneath his feet for miles, showing just how much power had been placed in the hit.

With his other hand, Immortui had grabbed the spear and pulled it out of himself.

"You seem to have gotten stronger, but you have no idea how much power I have!" Immortui slammed the spear at the side of Quinn, hitting him with strength that erupted one-half of the planet's sky.

Quinn took the hit and broke the spear down with his powers. He could see the serpents on Immortui's back were moving; they were opening their mouths, ready to attack. Condensed red mist energy shot out of them both.

Pulling his arm away with force, Quinn managed to break free in time and quickly moved his wings in to block the attacks. The red condensed energy hit him hard, making him fall to the ground, but the attack eventually stopped.

When Quinn opened up his wings, blood blotches started to form on them.

[Shadow Blood Rain]

Out from his wings, countless drops of blood shadow shot out at once, hitting Immortui's body non-stop. The armour around his legs had reacted after the first bullet touched his skin and covered his whole body.

'What is this, this strange power? I can feel it doing something to me!'

Immortui jumped in the air, but the raining attack from Quinn's wings continued. The serpent opened its mouth again, firing off a condensed beam hitting Quinn and sending him crashing into the ground. The barrage from his wings had stopped for a moment.

Seeing an opportunity, several red portals opened up around Quinn, and the giant red mist fists came out, all towards him. They continued to punch the ground, but there was no Quinn.

A portal in the air, Quinn had appeared out of right behind Immortui. Lifting his arm, an image of a giant blood sword had appeared, and throwing it down, it had crashed on top of Immortui, sending him crashing right down into the ground.

Soon after, a large mist fist appeared at Quinn's side and had knocked him to the side, hitting him away as well.

The fight was intense, with both sides fighting at full power with all they had from the get-go.

"What are you waiting for!" Hikel shouted, as they were all standing by the portal.
"We have to go now!"

Sil and both Peter were hesitant to go through the portal as they watched Quinn's battle raging on. Sil could feel it; although Immortui was using the full extent of his powers, it felt like he still wasn't in a desperate enough situation to summon it all yet. It was worrying him.

The fact that Immortui had already received a few big hits and wasn't slowing down either was a major concern as well.

"We have to go now!" Chris said. "You said it yourself Sil, this is the best thing we can do for him."

Russ had already jumped through the portal, with no concern for the others. He wasn't wasting any time, and Edvard had as well. With his injuries, even the shockwaves from the fight were hurting him.

"I have to leave him, just one more thing, one more thing that might help him out in this fight!" Sil thought, as he placed his hands on the ground. "I don't have enough MC cells to summon someone like Immortui, or the other Demon Kings, they are

just far too powerful, but there is someone who I think can be a great help to you. Someone who you think very highly of and is incredibly strong, do what you can to help him!"

Out from the ground, a portal of shadows appeared, rising up from those shadows with long black hair and a large sword on his back. It was none other than the leader of the punishers.

"Help him, Arthur!" Sil shouted.

Arthur was ready for battle, and he knew the stakes were high as he joined the fray.

Chapter 2531: Interrupting Fight

Sil had made the decision to give one last gift to Quinn. Even if it was to take up all of the MC cell's in his body. Of all the images in his head, he was trying to think of someone that he could summon that might be of some use while still being powerful.

That's when Sil had discovered someone who would take up more MC cell's then it should have done. That was Arthur. Ever since his passing, not for a single moment had the word of Arthur and weak been in Quinn's mind.

In fact, the beating that he had received from Arthur at the time, all of the pain he had suffered, was a mental scarring on him that would stick with him forever. Which was why the Arthur that had been summoned, was far stronger than that of the original Arthur.

Of course it had its limits, otherwise Sil would have never have been able to summon him.

"Arthur!" Sil shouted out, as the others went through the portal. The last one left with Sil yet to go through the portal was Peter. "Do whatever you can to make sure he comes back, alright!"

Turning around Sil knew he needed to leave there and then, if he didn't he would have stayed with Quinn, even though there was nothing left for him to do. Walking off, Peter placed his arm around Sil's back and they both walked off into the portal.

Its power was disappearing, and although some remnants of the portal being there was still present, nothing from the Red space would now be able to enter a Golden space.

"Hahah! You think I care?" Immortui shouted as he saw the portal shut before him. "They would have been far better off never bringing you back alive and taking the Blood stone with them!"

"The fact that you are here, just means I can do the same thing again. I'll take you out and do what needs to be done to make sure the world is how it's meant to be!"

With Immortui's shout, the entire air started to shake violently, all of the Red space was vibrating causing an image of disturbance, but Quinn still stood there looking at Immortui.

He had received a direct hit by his large red mist arm, but was still fine. His current demon form was powerful, and strong, the strongest he's ever been. The wound that Quinn had made early on had healed up.

With his fingertips he made two more cuts, and the blood started to form around his arms turning into gauntlets.

Immortui made a move, creating a small ball of colourless power, and went to hurl it from his hand toward Quinn. If he could get this power of his to go away, then it would allow him to win the fight.

The colourless ability was Immortui's ace. It was what allowed him to win any battle along with his immense strength, but even he had to admit it felt like both of their strengths were at a similar level.

Immortui threw the colourless ball out from his hand, at almost the same time before it was released. Quinn threw out a punch and shot out a dark red coloured ball of blood aura.

It looked the same as the blood fists he would create. From the distance they were at, it wouldn't reach in time, but the moment Quinn had finished his punch in the air, a shadow portal opened up directly in front of him, while one opened up right at the side of Immortui as well.

The large attack had hit his hand, and Immortui's throw was off. The colourless ball of energy went up in the air past Quinn and exploded, making a particular area of colourlessness.

"This is a trick that I learned from you!" Quinn stated, as he continued to punch just the area around him. For every punch, a shadow portal would open up at the end of his fist.

In doing so, portals would open up right by Immortui's side and hit him constantly from side to side. The first few hits had managed to hit Immortui, but he soon started to fight back.

He was punching the fists out of his way, and started to jump in the air. He then threw a colourless ball which exploded on the ground below him, but it did nothing because the portals were following where he was at the moment.

"He's doing everything he can to stop me from using my colourless ability. I guess the only choice then, is a close combat fight! Immortui shouted. He started to charge forward instead of attacking all of the portals.

Then, the serpents wrapped around both of his arms. The armour from his legs covered the rest of his body taking the hits and he only had one target in sight, Quinn.

"Arghh!" Immortui shouted as he threw out his fist, exploding with power.

The power was large and extended out, making it hard for Quinn to escape from it, but there was a way, and an easy one at that. Stepping through the shadow portal, he appeared right at the side of Immortui.

Both of his new gauntlets' fists had been drawing power, and punching full force, Quinn hit Immortui again and again countless times on his side. He hit the same place on the armour again and again and the double blood effect was taking place as well hitting Immortui's side.

One of the serpents unraveled from the arm and opened its mouth trying to fire at Quinn, but with his wing he had knocked the head to the side allowing the blast to hit nothing but the ground.

It tore up the ground deeply and the ground was breaking apart at that point. After a surge of punches, Immortui was recovering from the surprise attack so Quinn finished it off with a large kick right into his stomach, and sent him right back down in the ground beneath him.

'HIs armour, it's tough, I don't think I'll be able to do any real damage unless I can break through somehow.'

As Quinn was chasing after the Immortui that was in the ground, a portal had opened up in front of him. It was white in colour. It wasn't just in front of him but it was all over the area and immediately, whole groups of Divine beings were flying into the area.

A spear went straight towards Quinn, which he had managed to grab onto.

"Don't get in my way!" Quinn shouted as he threw out a fist. It hit the Dark being and an eruption of blood aura followed like a spear.

It hit several of the Divine beings, eliminating them one by one and destroying the portal that had just opened up as well.

But even more portals were opening up. Immortui, who was stuck in the ground, had just gotten up as well, and he was surrounded by the Divine Brigade.

"You little ants are annoying." Immortui exclaimed, as mist portals opened up, and out from it a large hand that held onto a sword appeared. It took a single swipe, eliminating nearly all of those that were around him.

Still, more and more Divine portals were opening up, even though Immortui had gotten rid of around three of them in that one swipe.

More and more were appearing around Quinn, and he was using his blood aura more. With a swipe of his hand forward, a tornado of blood came out, wrapping around the Divine beings, getting rid of them one after the other.

Then on the other side of him, Quinn was ready to do the same. Until he saw a string of explosions going off one after the other. It was a sword that was rapidly flying through the air, as it hit the Divine beings, it would explode on impact one by one.

And at the end of that sword, there was a person with a pair of shadow wings on his back right by Quinn's side.

"I have been told to help you, to the best of my abilities, Quinn." Arthur said.

Chapter 2532: Protect the settlement

The vampires from underneath the settlement had awoken and they wasted no time in fighting against their enemy. Even those that had once fought against each other in the civil war of vampires against vampires didn't hesitate as they went ahead attacking the werewolves in front of them.

Some of those that had awoken were stronger than the current vampires. They were able to go head to head in strength against some of the werewolves. One blocking a strike from above and then swiping their hand across the werewolf's stomach. A large red slash appeared after with a spurt of blood.

What was another issue though, was not just the werewolves, but the Divine beings that were all over the place. While the werewolves numbers were lowering, it seemed like the Divine beings' numbers continued to grow all over.

Everyone was doing the best they could, and everyone was struggling for their lives, that included those that were currently at the school.

Rather than Miss Bedford, Minny was now leading the way. She was ahead of everyone as they tried to make their way to the hall, the same as they had done last time there was a large-scale beast attack.

However, in nearly every hallway they turned to, more objects were crashing down in front of them. Minny quickly rushed through the rubble and dust. The students could just see and feel shockwaves of power sent out for a few moments, and Minny coming out a bit later.

"Miss Bedford, I don't think the hallway is safe anymore." Minny explained. "I can hear there is fighting going on all over the school. It's the same in the settlement."

The children looked scared as they heard Minny speak, and Miss Bedford gulped down as she was waiting for the next set of words that were to come out of her mouth.

"The best chance of surviving right now... is just to fight back. Is to do what we can!" Minny shouted as she turned.

Through the glass window, to her right, showing part of the school, she could see a black spear thrust into the inside. She quickly jumped up and grabbed the spear with her clawed hand.

Powering it with her blood aura and celestial energy, she pushed it back. The Dark Divine being fell back down to the ground, but didn't look hurt. It was ready to get back up, and the students were staring out of the window looking down.

At that moment, something large had fallen out of the sky, giant in size, as it crashed right on top of the Dark being. It lifted both of its giant hands and threw them down pounding the Dark being into the ground.

With each hit it broke the windows cracking and breaking them to pieces.

"What... what is that, it's a giant!" Tobi said, his hand shaking.

What all of the kids were looking at now, was a Yak demon. The second large ship had come out from the portal. Not only were there groups of werewolves on board but Yaks this time as well.

It wasn't just the school, but they were falling across the whole settlement. Just when they were getting some push back with the help of the awakened vampires, the situation was getting worse.

Minny looked at the giant, and she leapt up onto the ledge breaking the broken shards of glass underneath. She was looking for the right time to strike, when right from above she could see something else dropping down.

They had a large sword on their back, and swinging it, their arm started to grow in size. With a full force swing, it hit the Yak demon right in the head. The sword continued to go down the centre of the Yak, splitting it apart until it reached the very bottom and hit the ground, making a loud clang.

It was clear the person was one with great strength. When the Yak's body fell apart crashing into the side of the buildings. Many of the students, not even just those with Minny, but along the hallways went to have a look at who it was.

"Uncle Andy!" Minny called out. She had recognized the man below.

"Minny." Andy shouted above with a smile. "We're going to do our best to help, as much as we can."

The support calls had been reached to the Graylash and the Vampire Corps unit. Unlike the vampire settlement, they were all doing fine, but they were prepared for an attack at a moment's notice thanks to Layla's and Muka's warning.

Andy had made it his duty to try and arrive as quickly as possible and now he could help out the others.

From all over, the vampires were dropping down from large ships supporting the vampire settlement the best they could. However, even with the support, things still looked dire.

White portals were opening up, and more Divine beings seemed to be coming through them, again and again. If they took out a large number of them, more would come out.

It was to the point where the vampires would have to team up with the demons to get rid of them, but there wasn't a chance of that happening.

Layla and Muka were getting exhausted and the two of them were looking up at the large red portal.

"Do you notice something?" Layla asked.

"Yeah, I'm not sure if it's my imagination or not, but the portal, it looks as if it's fading away." Muka replied.

Since the two of them were able to see the same thing. It was clear that it wasn't a fragment of their imagination. As they continued to stare at the portal, that's when they were able to see a few small dots coming out from the portal and falling to the ground.

"AHHH! Why isn't the portal on the ground!" Edvard shouted.

A fall from the middle of the sky wouldn't kill either of them but it would hurt.

"Sil teleport us!" Hikel shouted.

"I can't, I already used up all of my MC cells!" Sil shouted back.

Seeing the panic, Chris used Qi platforms to quickly kick off in the air, and grab each of them one by one. He rushed down, placing them on top of the line of the buildings, where they could see Russ was already safely on the ground since he had come through a bit earlier.

When they all regrouped, they could see Hikel and Edvard, mainly speechless at the sight in front of them.

"It's the vampire settlement." Peter said. "It's in chaos, we have to help, we have to do whatever we can, everyone's dying."

They all agreed, with the portal having disappeared behind them. They only need to get rid of the demons present. However, Chris had his eyes on something larger.

On top of the roof, a werewolf was seen coming their way. It leapt up in the air, but before it reached them, Chris moved from his position right to where the werewolf was. He grabbed it by its throat and twisted it, killing it on the spot.

"I just need a bit of your energy." Chris said as he opened his mouth wide and started to bite down. Eating the werewolf right in front of the others. He hardly chewed as he swallowed pieces of it, bit by bit.

Before, it was about gaining strength, but he would no longer gain strength from a werewolf of this calliper. Instead this time it was just to get his energy back up.

After finishing most of the werewolf off, Chris chucked half of its body off the roof edge where they stood. Then he started to jump on the Qi platforms heading straight for one of the large ships in sight.

When he was close, his skin started to turn red again. Creating a large Qi platform, Chris pushed with his strength and spun his body,

"Get out of this settlement!" Chris screamed. With all his force he punched the side of the large ship.

A large dent was made in its side, nearly bending it in half, and the entire ship was thrown to the side in the air, out of the settlement and crashing into the forest grounds that were close by.

Layla and Muka, had to blink a few times to see what had just happened.

"Who... just did that right now?"

Chapter 2533: The Celestial attack

Chris wasted no time getting into action and he was careful with what he had done. He could have easily just slashed the giant ship in half, but if he did, then all of the debris from the ship would have fallen on the settlement below.

It would have destroyed a lot of the houses and perhaps hurt a lot of the people. Which was why Chris had decided to bash the large ship to the side instead.

Crash landing in the forest by the side, many of those that were on board were still alive. They were climbing over the large ship, and jumping out from the sides. Now it looked almost as if an army was heading toward the settlement.

They were running ahead at full force, but before they even reached the outside of the settlement. Explosions went off one after the other. Red slashes of aura were swinging down in front of their path and exploding, throwing up dirt and the trees in the air, as well as sending many of the attackers back.

Standing on the wall was Hikel with his aura around him.

"Without my arms it was a little more difficult to control the path of my aura. But if I just have to hit a giant object like that in front of me, at least I can do something." Hikel exclaimed.

"I'm glad you can." Edvard said. "I'll just stay by your side, old friend. Who knows with my luck you might even grow your arms back."

The two of them chuckled at the severe situation, but sometimes, light humour in the dire times was what they needed, and besides they had the rest of the group that could help them out.

Peter had witnessed Russ almost running away, and before he did, Peter grabbed the black sword and ripped it off his side holding it in place.

"Teleport me, teleport me to that other ship!" Peter demanded. "Do it now!"

It was quite painful for Peter to watch the settlement that Quinn cared for getting destroyed like so.

Russ didn't think he was any weaker than Peter, he just thought fighting against him, rather than doing as he asked, would be a bigger hassle. So listening to his demand, he teleported the two of them on board.

They were on the deck of the giant ship among all of the werewolves and others as well. Immediately, several dark shaped mists started to appear from the back of Peter's body.

He threw the sword back over to Russ, and now all four of the familiars were back by his side having reformed.

"Kill everything you see!" Peter shouted as he threw the sword back to Russ.

Peter threw a large fist at a werewolf, knocking it with pure power right off the ship falling to the ground. Two came to attack him but with his head tails it knocked the claws away.

Then with another head tail it wrapped around another demon he hadn't seen before. It was smaller in size, and had horns on its head. It pulled it forward and with a fist it slammed into the demon splattering its body into parts, as chunks of it went off everywhere.

The Boneclaw was teleporting using its large claws to do what damage it could. Genbu jumped in the air, and grew in size, crushing some of the demons. Dunluck, the horse familiar, was running around the area with Ovinnik on its head firing fireballs at everything it could see.

They were doing as Peter asked, and were fighting with everything they had.

Russ was ready to escape, when he felt something hit the top of his head, wetting it completely. Looking up, Russ could see it was from the drool of a Yak.

"I guess I can split some heads of a few giants." Russ said, as fire started to burn in the palm of his hand.

Elsewhere, even the Champions were getting involved, a large bone spear came out piercing several of the Divine beings in the air. Calva's strength was great enough, to the point where if he managed to get a perfect hit right in the head of the Dark beings, that it would kill them in one go.

Pultra was also helping out more so on the ground, as she dashed area to area kicking everything she could see in sight, apart from the ones that looked like Quinn and the others.

The vampires quickly came to the realisation, as they saw them attacking only the demons and the Divine beings, that they were on their side.

Running towards them, Layla fired large Qi arrows at a Golden being, hitting them in the head, the belly, and the arm. It had pinned them down for a moment, and Pultra wasted no time, as she leapt up and slashed it off with her foot.

The two of them smiled at each other but they could waste no time as they had to continue to fight.

"Thank you for helping us!" Layla said, as she pulled out her sword clashing against a werewolf. She stopped several swipes, and then thrust the sword forward. When it pierced the werewolf in the centre, using Qi, she powered her weapon and pulled it up going right through the head.

"It is fine. We must help those that have come to help us. Quinn has done a lot for us, so we should at least protect his world as well." Pultra said, attacking one of the large Yak demons.

"Quinn... Did you just say Quinn!" Layla shouted. It had been so long since she had heard his name and she was wondering what he had been doing. She had soon recognised the ones' who had come through the portal as Chris and the others, so she was hoping that he had come back as well.

But there was no answer.

The fighting continued, and with the help of Chris and the others, it didn't take long until the second large ship had been destroyed. Nearly all had already been defeated by Peter and Russ on board.

They had jumped off the ship heading to the settlement leaving Chris to do the same trick as he had done before, as he knocked it out of the air, away from the settlement.

The fighting was continuing everywhere, but there were next to no demons that were left. This was mainly due to Chris, who was taking them out one by one, going from area to area dealing with them all in a single swipe.

As they all dealt with the troubles around them, they were all heading to the open area, the large centre market where stalls would be set up. They were searching for Layla and Muka and it didn't take long for them to find her.

Soon, one by one, everyone had entered the centre. As they did they had Divine beings on their tail, and they were in the middle of battle with them all. They continued to fight, and soon they took out nearly everything around them.

"Chris, Peter, Hikel, Edvard, and Sil, all of you, you made it back." Layla said.
"But, what about Quinn? Where is he?"

The others didn't answer immediately, it was as if no one wanted to deliver the bad news.

"He's still there, he's still fighting for all of us right now." Sil answered. "The portal closed, but he's still trying... to get rid of Immortui."

It was what she had feared.

"That idiot, I knew he would do something like this."

There was no time for celebrations though, because although the red portal had been closed and most of the demons had been eliminated from the settlement. They could see several portals opening up, white in colour, all over the place.

"Why are they still after us, this is from the celestials right?" Chris asked.

"I assume that they moved to this world, because of the demons entering, but even though we've gotten rid of the demons, the celestials are still attacking." Hikel said.

"Wait... if you think about it." Edvard said but stopped himself. They were wondering what he was going to say. "Aren't we all byproducts of Immortui anyway? What if the celestials, these gods that Immortui was trying to wage war against... What if they have decided to get rid of all demons. Because in a way... we're demons as well."

Chapter 2534: The Return of a Legend

The settlement was in a tough place just moments ago, but thanks to the help of the vampires from the Vampire Corps and Chris, along with the others, they had gotten rid of the majority of demons.

The few that were still alive were getting killed off by the Divine beings, since nearly all of the vampires had changed their strategy to survival, allowing the two to take care of each other.

Now with no demons for them to go after, the Divine beings only had the targets that were still alive, and those were the vampires. Unlike the werewolves and Yaks who had raw power, vampires were diverse when it came to their areas of strength, but that didn't work out so well against the Divine beings.

To kill the Dark beings, they needed attacks strong enough to finish them off before the Golden beings could heal them. At the same time, they were too busy trying to avoid attacks from the Divine beings, so they couldn't deal with the gold ones either.

The situation wasn't getting any better, especially with the multiple portals that were opening up above the settlement. Even more Divine beings were coming in, and it was starting to fill up the sky. It looked like there were now more of them than there were vampires.

"RAGH!" Chris grunted. A giant claw mark went through the air and hit a large group of the Divine beings, killing them on the spot. For a moment, the sky above could be seen, but it was quickly filled up with even more of the Divine beings.

"Even if we get rid of the portals, they just keep coming back one after the other? Is there no way to stop them?" Layla asked.

The skin from her fingertips had peeled off, and she was bleeding with each arrow that she fired. Even though she was just using Qi arrows, force was still needed when pulling. She had long gone past her limit but was still pushing herself.

Because if she didn't, then it would mean another death in the settlement.

Chris was trying to think of what he could do. Although immensely and physically strong, and with an unlimited amount of stamina as long as he kept eating people, he couldn't figure a way out of this.

Because his attacks didn't cover enough range, and the moment he would take out a large amount of them, they would quickly come back.

"We're just outnumbered in this situation; the whole settlement is outnumbered," Muka said.

Most of the Divine beings were flying up in the sky, pointing their dark spears and firing down. When continuing to look at the sky, they noticed large beams of energy firing out towards the masses of the Divine beings.

Several lasers of energy hit them one by one. Quickly, the group turned their heads, and through the sky, they could see a fleet of ships coming their way. They were flying fast, firing away energy blasts.

A group of them was diving toward the group, and Peter was getting ready to act, but before he did, a large wave erupted from the ground. It had grown as if it was made from dirt but had a grayish tint to it.

As the spears hit the wave, it started to spark slightly, and lightning emitted out from the large wave. Right after, several spikes started to grow, piercing all of the Divine beings one by one.

"It looks like we managed to make it just in time," a voice said, walking over.

"Jake!" Layla called out, recognizing the young man.

He was the son of Logan Green and Vicky Blade. He was once deemed one of the strongest humans in existence, but that title would have to go to Sil; in reality, it was only due to Sil not being present.

Nonetheless, he was an incredibly strong individual who could mix abilities together and use them at the same time.

"It seemed like you needed some help; my father answered your call, and he brought some help along with him.

There was a large ship behind him, floating toward the planet, and dropping out were small pods. These were similar to the ones the Dalki used for invasions. They shot straight down to the ground in the forest, and opening up, there were humans inside them.

Humans with strong abilities, those from Earth and the Graylash faction, had come out and were willing to fight. They ran through the forest and headed toward the settlement, knowing full well who their enemy was.

"The humans, they're helping us?" Muka said, surprised. Sure, individual humans had helped them on occasion, but not like this.

Fighting side by side in the settlement, it was something that Muka had never dreamed of happening.

"It took a bit of convincing, which is why we were a little late," Jake stated. "But humans haven't forgotten what you did for us. We haven't forgotten what Quinn did for us. So we will be the ones to help you this time."

On an unknown planet, somewhere in the universe, standing on a cliffside was one of the Ancient Ones. Underneath his feet, a stream of water fell to the ground. It was a waterfall that spilled down onto the land below.

For the land Celestalon was standing on was moving. It was floating around the planet, moving like a ship. But it appeared as if there was no form of power moving the island; it just flowed like a cloud.

Continuing to drop water down below, as it continued to go through the clouds.

Celestalon stood there in a large white robe, with his beard touching the floor beneath him. His eyes were glowing white with celestial energy as he had his palms out.

"Are you still intending to get rid of them all?" Mundus asked.

He was standing around twenty meters away from where Celestalon currently was, facing toward his back.

"I understood when you said you wished to get rid of all the vampires, but the humans have now gotten involved; you have to stop."

"This is a small cost," Celestalon replied. "Are all of the humans in the settlement? No. The humans can reproduce again, and they are not the only life form to care about in the golden space."

"You should know by now, after everything we have gone through, that Immortui is someone who we have to get rid of, no matter what the cost. We will weaken every resolve or chance he has to come over."

"After that, we will defeat him! Even if he is reborn, we shall beat him again and again. When he reincarnates, he won't have the same power as before. We will just continue to squash him, so he may never rise again."

"And if he gets reincarnated with his memories lost, all for the better."

The whole situation left a bad taste in Mundus' mouth. Everything that was happening. Celestalon was doing nothing but causing more trouble in a situation the humans and vampires were trying to solve themselves.

"You underestimate the humans' strength, Celestalon," Mundus said.

At that moment, Celestalon turned around. "What did you say?"

Coming down right from above, something had crashed right in the middle of the two. A shockwave of energy was sent rumbling through their feet, and a powerful one at that. The island had even dropped down in the air for a few moments before it regained and balanced itself.

"What's going on?" Celeston asked. The place he was on, it was a place that only the Ancient Ones and the messenger should have known about. His instant thought was Mundus.

"Mundus, did you betray me, but how, why?" Celestalon asked. "Do you really think there is anyone strong enough to take me on, even if you were to betray me."

The only beings Celestalon could think of were the other Ancient Ones, but they should have no problem with what he was doing.

Unfortunately, Mundus had no clue what was happening right now, and when the dust started to settle, they could see a red-scaled human figure.

"Stop this sh*t attack right now; otherwise, you'll have to deal with me," Ray Talen, the legendary one and king of the Dragons, said.

For updates on MVS and future works, please remember to follow me on my social media below:

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS, or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2535: The Final Form

In the red space, the area in which Immortui and Quinn were facing each other, the landscape had vastly changed. From their fight and the destruction of the ground, they had already removed several layers of the ground.

It was hard to see anything but broken land as far as the eyes could see. However, the area, just like in the settlement, was being covered with white coloured energy portals that were opening up.

From these energy portals, the Divine Brigade was coming through. They had nothing in the area to attack, other than Immortui and Quinn, and that's exactly what they did. They were harmless to the two, like a swarm of flies, but even a swarm of flies could be annoying at times.

Fighting against the swarm that had come at them, Quinn had stopped as he looked to his side. He could see dark coloured wings made from the shadow's power. Along with the long hair, it was bringing back memories, memories that had only returned recently.

"Arthur!" Quinn called out.

Turning slightly, there was a smile on his face. Quinn had to blink a few times wondering if it was real or not. As two more Divine beings came toward him, Arthur swung his sword slicing one in half, then with his other hand he blasted out a blood canon, hitting it directly in the face.

If this was his imagination, then it shouldn't have been able to deal with the Divine beings in the area close to him.

"I will deal with these annoying disturbances." Arthur said. "Quinn, you do your job."

Thinking about it more, Quinn started to think how it was possible and soon remembered Russ' ability. It could have been Russ, or quite possibly it was Sil as well. Either way, he was thankful that he wasn't on his own in this.

It gave Quinn a bit more confidence.

Looking at Immortui, he could see he was busy taking down the Divine beings, using large scale Red mist attacks. With each swing, he would take out a few hundred.

Diving in, Quinn wasted no time, and placing his hand out, a shadow portal was created in front of him. Going through the shadow, Quinn appeared right out of another one and it was right by Immortui's side.

He twisted his fist, and the blood shadow energy started to spin rapidly like a drill. It pounded right into Immortui's chest.

Immortui's leg gave out for a moment, as it cracked the ground beneath him from the sheer power. When he tried to get back up, the second wave of the attack had hit as well, and on top of that, several of the Dark Divine beings thrust their spears right at Immortui.

There were those that had done the same to Quinn, aiming for him, but a wall of shadow had appeared blocking the attack, and soon after, a large sword was swung, slicing off their heads, exploding them on impact.

Arthur was doing as he stated he would and was protecting Quinn to the best of his abilities.

Gathering the red mist power in his body, Immortui shoved both his hands out and a ball of aura was sent outward. It blasted and looked as if it was forcing all of the Divine beings away.

It hadn't affected Quinn though, who was still pushing forward. From the serpent on his back a laser fired out, but Quinn had blocked it with his wing.

With his other wing open, he used the skill again.

[Blood rain]

Like bullets, small droplets of blood started to hit Immortui over and over on his body.

'My chest, it hurts from where he hit me from before. His power in this form is no joke. He is far stronger compared to before. How... how could a being that was created from me, be able to reach such power?'

"I know exactly what your thinking!" Quinn stated, as he used the shadow travel to travel into the ground.

The serpents opened up their mouths firing energy blasts trying to hit Quinn but the shadow had spread out like an entire pool, filling the entire ground. When it hit the shadow it seemingly did nothing.

Rising up from the shadow, Quinn was now right behind Immortui, and grabbed onto both of the serpents' necks behind him.

"My power, it might have originally come from you, but the strength I have now, is not just from you!" Quinn screamed and opened up his mouth, this close it was time for him to use another skill.

[Shadow Blood Screech has been activated]

Quinn's mouth stretched wide, and the sides of his mouth ripped open. A large visible sound wave was emitted out, creating ripples in the air. They constantly hit Immortui's head over and over again.

He could feel the armour on his body reacting, it was shaking as the screech hit him again and again, and his vision, it was fading with each hit, his sense of hearing, his sense of touch, slowly he was losing it all.

'What... is this power?' Immortui thought.

Eventually Immortui could see absolutely nothing, he couldn't even feel the touch on his body.

Seeing the state Immortui was in. Quinn quickly lifted his leg, and slammed it on the top of his head, slamming his whole body into the ground.

Right after he raised his hand. The gauntlets started to form into something else. His blood was being used to create a different weapon entirely. It started to curve out making a large edge, and now it was held firmly in both of his hands.

He had made a giant scythe out from his blood. It was fully condensed.

"I know killing you won't be the end. You'll just come back, again and again, but even then, at least there will be a moment of peace for the world. Whether it's 10 years, or a 1000 years until your return, you will remember this moment!"

Quinn swung the scythe down, and it hit Immortui's neck. It was pushing into his skin, and blood was being drawn from it, but he had grabbed onto the blade and was pushing away with his hand.

Immortui, with his other hand, had used the colourless power on his own body. He had placed an orb inside of him, getting rid of the defect of Quinn's screeching power. He had to pull the orb out quickly and he managed to see the scythe just in time to stop it.

"You... are nothing to me. I'll show you, I'll show you exactly why the Ancient Ones feared me!" Immortui said. Gripping tightly, the scythe's end broke, and the whole ground started to shake.

The red mist energy was swirling into Immortui, and his armour was shaking. It covered his body, and the serpents started to turn into a strange dark goo. The goo was combined with his body, as well as the armour on him.

In the first place it always seemed strange, the armour didn't look like armour but was more a part of his body. It continued to blend. Immortui's mouth started to grow large fangs on the side.

Fur started to cover over his arms and his hands were large and clawed. Out from the back, a spiked tail grew out. The spikes were glowing and beaming with red energy.

Red crystals were emerging from his back, constantly glowing with power, and his hair now was made of several serpents, just like those that wrapped around his arm. It now looked like there were hundreds of small ones behind him.

This was Immortui's final form.

Chapter 2536: Immortui's Final Form

The creature that stood in front of Quinn right now no longer looked to have a human body. It looked like a mishmash of all the demons Quinn had seen before. Yet somehow, all of the pieces blended in together, as if it was meant to be. Not like a chimera that had a mismatch of colours and shapes. It all flowed together, and Immortui looked like a devastating creature right in front of him.

'Is this his demon form?' Quinn thought. 'I guess that would be the wrong term. Immortui is the celestial that created all of the demons to begin with. This is just his strength!'

Acting fast, Quinn's wings spread out tall and wide, and the skill Blood Rain had been used. A rain of bullets went right toward Immortui, and in an instant, he vanished. The attacks continued forward, completely missing.

The energy from Quinn's right side changed in the air, and turning his head, he saw the large claws coming right at him. With his armoured gauntlets, he blocked attack after attack. Quinn would hit the force of the claw away, but his arms were swinging, and he could feel them getting numb, even though he was in his demon form. After blocking several hits, the snake ends of Immortui's hair lit up, and so did the red crystals on his back. Several beams of red energy shot out, hitting Quinn right in the chest. The markings on his chest tried to move in certain places, taking up the attack, but it was still hitting parts of his skin, and the sheer power was getting through to his body.

Quinn skidded across the ground, digging up the ground behind him, continuing to pile up, creating somewhat of a mountain behind him. As he continued to skid, a shadow portal had opened up from behind. Quinn had gone through and appeared on the other side.

'I didn't create that shadow portal... it must have been Arthur!' Quinn thought as he looked above and could see Arthur was still rounding up all of the Divine beings to stop them from interfering with the fight.

Now behind Immortui, Quinn raised both of his hands, and two large whirling tornadoes formed next to him. Throwing them out, they went toward Immortui. The tail ends ripped up the ground underneath as it went right for Immortui. They crashed into him, ripping him apart as best as they could.

Quinn then dashed forward, the dark purple-red aura spinning around his gauntlets as he charged in. When he got close, he could see the body of Immortui jumping out, he had pounced, and then threw his fist out, colliding right with Quinn's blood drill.

When it hit, though, the claw of Immortui grew incredibly large in size, just like the giant mist that he would produce. Quinn was knocked back again, and before he could recover, the head serpents fired out several lasers. It wasn't constant this time,

but they were firing at him one at a time like bullets. They were hitting Quinn's body all over, and blood had spurted from his mouth.

The blood didn't drop to the floor, though, because Quinn swung his arm, throwing the blood out. It crashed into Immortui, and the small droplets were more powerful than they looked as they caused him to skid on the ground a couple of inches.

Suddenly, though, Immortui had turned his body into a red mist. He disappeared from right in front of Quinn and appeared right by his side, grabbing his head, slamming him onto the ground, creating a large crater underneath. His hair continued to fire at Quinn one after the other, but he was able to use his wings to block most of the attacks from Immortui.

Seeing this, Immortui leapt up in the air and started to spin his body. He traveled fast in the air, and with his spiked tail, he slammed it right onto Quinn. It was stuck in his blood wings that were now bleeding, having fallen down on them.

"You should know that my blood is dangerous by now!" Quinn shouted.

He controlled the blood from his wings and moved it, hitting Immortui again. He then opened his mouth and used the Shadow Blood Screech for a second time. The attack was emitted from his mouth, but it hit nothing but the air.

Once again, a large claw came slashing across Quinn's chest, the power of the red mist followed, making a giant mark. Blood spattered out of Quinn's body, and he quickly formed this into a sword. Grabbing onto it, he swung and deflected the second hit of the claw. He was ready for a third, but as he looked around, he was unable to see anything. Turning his head again, he saw several red beams of energy coming at him. With the sword in his hand, he swung them in place using his speed, stopping every single one of them.

"You put up a good fight, but you've lost," Immortui spoke.

Quinn didn't quite know what he meant, but when the beams of energy stopped, he could see no one at the end of it, but he could sense something strange behind him, the fact that he could sense nothing at all.

Turning his head, he could see Immortui; even in this form, he was producing his colourless ability. It had spread out, and at that moment and time, it had completely hit Quinn. With it, there was only one thing he could do.

[Shadow Lock!]

Just like before, the skill had given Quinn some time to think. He didn't know how much time he had, but he had actually used the skill on another before himself; he had used it on Arthur. Having placed Arthur in the Shadow Lock, the swarm of Divine beings that had been going after him had rushed in on the two down below.

He knew the Divine beings wouldn't be enough to deal with Immortui, but at this point, he needed anything that would just help him out in some way.

Using the Shadow Lock on himself, Quinn had disappeared. It would keep him busy for a short while, before he found some way to get into the Shadow Lock.

Entering the shadow space, Quinn went on his knees for a moment and touched his chest. His body was healing the wounds that had been made, but it still hurt. Damage was done.

"Every time I get this guy in the corner, and I think he's done, he just ends up getting stronger. Am I going to lose again, a third time... this is my final chance," Quinn said to himself.

Feeling hopeless in the fight once more, he looked up at Arthur, who was standing in front of him.

"Please... how am I meant to win this fight?"

Chapter 2537: Full Potential unlocked

Fighting with all of his shadow powers didn't work, fighting with the help of the blood being split around the Red space didn't work, nor did fighting with his armour. The Demon form, the form that everyone had worked so hard for him to get, now this wasn't working either.

Quinn had been putting up a good fight, and it was proven by the fact that Immortui had been pushed to the edge. To the point where he had transformed into a monstrosity.

"Those eyes of his, I can see, they hold no love for anyone," Quinn said distraught.
"If he gets out, he will kill everyone with no second thought."

It wasn't just Immortui; Quinn also saw it with the other Celestials, but with them being so focused on their conditions, everything worked out, just as they stated the universe had balanced itself.

Yet where was the balance for Immortui? If he got out and did as intended, would the universe really do a great reset like Bliss claimed? Trying to start again?

When using the armour, Quinn had used all the different blood fists. Even absorbing his blood gave Quinn no power-up or options added to his system. The current Quinn he had reached his peak.

"Quinn," a voice said from in front of him.

Looking up, Quinn stared at Arthur, who was standing above him, his sword in his hand, and his large shadow wings still present. Even now, Quinn was in his demon form in the shadow space.

'Ah, right, this is Sil's creation, but could they speak? I saved him on instinct, and as a way to get the Divine beings to attack Immortui.'

"Unfortunately, due to the power that Immortui has, once I leave this shadow space, I will disappear. Remember I am not real. Which means it will be down to you to face him."

Quinn already knew that; he didn't need to be reminded. As he looked at Arthur, he looked towards his sword. He remembered how powerful it was. In the end, the sword had been given to Fex.

From what Quinn had heard, he spent some time with his son Andy helping with the Vampire Corps and had requested to be put into a deep slumber once again. This was before everyone's memories had been changed. Knowing Fex, the sword was most likely buried with him.

He was perhaps too worried it would fall into the hands of others, or didn't feel like it was his right to give it away.

The powerful sword that had been created from bloodstones of the 13 families. All of those that Arthur had to punish during his time. Even with Sil's powers, the sword still had those effects, but it would be gone within the colourless ability.

"Quinn, I can see you are looking at the sword," Arthur stated. "The sword which was created using the blood of the vampire families, and in turn, the sword has the ability of the vampire families.

"But you know, there is something else which has the blood of all the vampire families." Arthur stated. "The absolute blood control powers. The powers that you received and became a part of your body."

Standing up, Quinn looked Arthur in the face. "What are you getting at? Absolute blood control may have the power of all thirteen families, but that just gives one the power to control blood well; it doesn't give the abilities that the family holds."

"I am just stating the facts," Arthur claimed. "You have to remember, you are thinking of vampires and humans as the same thing. Do you not remember; there was a time where I did a lot of research into our origins.

"You see, the humans of today learn abilities from mutant cells in their body. But it wasn't like that in the past. Humans were able to learn all sorts of powers; of course, it was different from how they are used today, and the mutant cells had its advantages.

"Blood is everything to vampires, so much that our powers mix in creating a blood crystal. If the sword can have the abilities of the families placed into it, then why can't the same be done for a vampire?"

Quinn knew what Arthur was trying to get at, but it seemed impossible to him. "Even if the blood of the families runs through my body. No vampire has had more than one ability before."

Arthur smiled and started to shake his head. "The world is not as limited as you think. Immortui was able to create several beings through his power that are strong on their own. Even you yourself are thinking of yourself as a normal vampire.

"You are not a vampire, Quinn, and you are not less than Immortui. You were once the god of vampires, the ruler of blood. You are not below him but are at the same level as him.

"You have overcome everything in your path!" Arthur said as he lifted up the sword. "You have the power of the system. The power of equivalent exchange

which has continued to make you grow! The human side of you controls the God-slayer power of the shadow, using your MC cells.

"However, your vampire side, you are not merely a vampire but a god, and what god is restricted by such things!"

Arthur then suddenly thrust the sword forward, and it had pierced Quinn in the chest. Its energy was turning into red blood particles, fading into the air. However, the sword had truly pierced his chest, and Quinn's blood started to pour out from him.

It was dark in colour. With it, Quinn started to cover his whole body with the red shadowy blood. Just like when he was a celestial, Quinn was doing the same now, creating a set of armour on himself out of his powers. Controlling the blood and controlling himself, his attacks, his movements, everything about him would be stronger, and due to his blood being mixed with the shadow, he would be somewhat protected from the colourless ability.

When Arthur stabbed him, it hit him as he knew what to do, and the words had opened his mind.

Quinn saw a dark red system screen pop up in front of him. It was the system screen; it opened wide, and the words on them were clear as day.

[You have realized the true value of the system]

[You have realized what it means to be a vampire]

[You have realized what it means to be a Celestial]

[You have realized what it means to be a god slayer]

[A new quest has been received]

[Defeat the Celestial of Death, Immortui]

[The blood within you activates]

[You have temporarily unlocked all abilities of the 13 families]

"Quinn, the powers of the shadow, the powers of the vampires, the strength of the humans, the strength of the system. Use it all and defeat Immortui."

At that moment, Arthur's body too started to fade into nothing but particles, and the whole world, the shadow space itself, was starting to fade.

Chapter 2538: Quinn's Overloading power

Quinn found himself in a crumbling shadow space. The entire world around him felt like it was collapsing, and parts of the shadow were disappearing, revealing a colourless sky and world beyond.

At that moment, Arthur was vanishing right before Quinn's eyes. Quinn had no place left to hide as the shadow space crumbled, but it didn't matter because it was his time to fight.

"Shadow space, cancel," Quinn commanded, twisting his hand, and the shadow completely disappeared, returning him to the battlefield.

The entire area had turned black and white with shades of grey. Lifelessness hung in the air, and Quinn could see Immortui still in his dreaded form in front of him.

When Quinn lifted his hand to examine his armour, he could still see the deep dark purple and red colours.

"This is just like the last time. The shadow body allowed me to be protected by the colourless ability. The shadow has the ability to slow down attacks. If the colourless power is treated like an attack, it's slowing that down as well. But this time, the shadow's power is a lot stronger compared to before. It's been mixed in with not only my blood aura but my blood itself. It's condensed and created an armour over my whole body."

Tensing up and making a fist, Quinn knew that with his current state, he could still fight, and much better than before.

Quinn rushed forward from his position, running straight toward Immortui. He threw a fist, not using blood aura, but pouring all his strength and power into the punch.

Immortui moved to the side, avoiding the attack, but Quinn's blow left a small scratch on his face.

"I completely dodged the blow... how is this possible?" Immortui wondered.

Quinn continued to throw punches one after the other, and Immortui was dodging them bit by bit. However, each time, small scratches were appearing on his body.

"I'm clearly avoiding all of his hits, so how am I still getting hurt?" Immortui thought, finding it inexplicable.

Immortui decided to strike back, but as he did, Quinn gathered his blood aura into a condensed ball and threw it, hitting Immortui right in the chest.

"The blood aura is protected by the shadow as well, and there's one more trick!" Quinn thought.

As the blood aura hit Immortui, a giant explosion erupted, shaking the entire area and creating a cloud of dust and smoke.

At that moment, Quinn placed both hands on the ground. The explosion had knocked Immortui back, and he had stepped onto the ground, which started to glow. For just a moment, the trap effect had frozen Immortui.

The colourless effect had dissipated fairly quickly, including the trap, but it was enough time for Quinn to arrive. He thrust both of his fists forward, resembling tiger claws, and hit Immortui. A pulse of power vibrated in the air.

The pulsating blast was about to send Immortui flying, but before he did, he stretched out his hand, and purple-coloured strings, made with Quinn's blood, attached to Immortui's body. These strings were incredibly strong.

Quinn pulled Immortui forward and smashed his fist right into Immortui's head, driving him into the ground. Immortui gritted his teeth as he felt the punch; it was somehow stronger than before.

Quinn created another ball of aura and slammed it into Immortui's face, causing another large explosion. The ground underneath was further destroyed.

Immortui tried to claw back, but Quinn kept moving out of the way and hitting him. With each hit, they were growing more powerful. Each punch sent shockwaves through Immortui's body, breaking the ground and the area behind him.

Not only that, Quinn was getting faster, much faster. He avoided every single hit and continued to pummel Immortui, with each punch becoming more powerful. A punch to the stomach lifted Immortui off his feet, and blood spilled out of his mouth.

Immortui's blood sprayed into the air, but Quinn grabbed him with the strings once more, swinging him back. Quinn braced his feet and slammed his fist right into Immortui's stomach, pushing hard, and although he didn't pierce through, blood spilled all over the floor.

"The colourless ability of yours is your downfall," Quinn said as he threw Immortui to the ground. Immortui was in pain, struggling to get up. It was hard to imagine that just moments ago, he had been overpowering Quinn.

"I bet this has been your trump card in many fights before. But I realized you can't use your powers in this colourless space. Your red mist, your strength, all of it. You relied on this strong, powerful form of yours, thinking that it could best anything in the colourless space."

"But my power shields me from yours, and my strength, the strength of all the vampires, the human's Qi, and everything I have obtained, is much more powerful than yours."

Immortui realized that Quinn was right. Quinn wasn't affected by Immortui's strange power, and his attacks were somehow growing faster and stronger.

Noticing this, Immortui dispelled the colourless power, but the moment he did, he saw a thousand dark purple and red-coloured swords in the sky, all pointed toward him.

Quinn charged in, and Immortui attempted to blast him away with a mist attack using the serpents on his hair. However, the attack completely missed as Quinn disappeared. He reappeared right by Immortui's side, grabbing Immortui's arm and kicking him in the leg. At the same time, Quinn hit him on the top of his shoulder, sending him crashing to the ground.

Immortui tried to strike back, but Quinn moved out of the way, and one of the thousand swords crashed into Immortui's arm, exploding on the spot. Through the cloud of smoke, Quinn moved through the shadow and appeared right behind Immortui, grabbing the back of his head and throwing him back to the ground.

Letting go, several hundred of the swords homed in on Immortui and exploded one after the other. Quinn leapt up into the air and flew down through the sky, breaking several sound barriers. With so many successful hits, the momentum ability had grown incredibly fast. He crashed into Immortui, sending a pulse of power far and wide.

As Quinn's powerful strike resonated, it had a ripple effect across the surrounding planets, causing them to shift ever so slightly in space. The celestial bodies themselves were displaced by the force of Quinn's attack.

When Quinn directed his gaze towards the ground, he saw that Immortui's body had undergone a dramatic transformation. It was no longer in the same state as before. Instead, it appeared completely crushed, with blood splattered all over his battered form.

"You're still alive?" Quinn questioned, his eyes narrowing, as the thousand swords reappeared behind his back, poised to unleash the same devastating onslaught, only faster and stronger this time.

"You..." Immortui responded, blood dripping from his mouth as he lay on the ground. "You have the power to take on the whole universe. You have the power to not listen to anyone, and you're listening to them—the Celestials, the Ancient Ones!"

Quinn shook his head, his determination unwavering. "I was never listening to them. I don't care about their business, and I don't care about yours. The only thing

I've ever decided to do is to protect the ones I care about. But you, Immortui, you decided to touch them, to hurt them. The only thing I've decided to do is to protect the ones I care about, and you are in my way."

Raising his hand, Quinn began to gather the blood from all around him, including the remnants of the shadow. It started to spin, forming into a colossal drill that grew larger and more menacing by the second. The swords that had been hovering in the air disintegrated, their fragments adding to the monstrous blood drill in the sky.

From all that had transpired, it had become clear that the only way to eliminate Immortui was to obliterate his entire body. Regular punches weren't going to be sufficient. Quinn resolved to channel all of his power and his own blood into this devastating final strike.

The blood that had been spilled from Immortui's wounds began to rise up, becoming an integral part of the blood drill. As it did, the drill started to glow and pulsate with an overwhelming and formidable power.

"Hahahaha!" Immortui laughed maniacally, as though possessed by a sinister force. "You have no clue, do you? You have no idea what will happen! What will happen if you kill me? If you do, you will lose everything!"

Chapter 2539: The Final Choice

The vampire settlement was facing problem after problem, but with the backup of Logan, with the humans, his androids, and the help of the Vampire Corps unit, they were pushing back. A full-scale battle was taking place.

Vampires were running across the building tops, striking and releasing their blood aura across the sky. Abilities were being used to fire at the Divine beings, and helping out the most was Chris himself.

He had dived headfirst and took Peter along with him. He used Qi platforms to kick himself in the air, and with a single swipe, he continually was taking down Divine being after Divine being.

Peter couldn't hold back either, not if he wanted to defeat the Divine beings because they were anything but weak. A powerful hit would have to be directed at their heads or at the bulk of their bodies if he didn't want the godlike beings healing each other.

"There are so many of them!" Layla shouted. "Is it ever going to stop!"

Logan had come down from his ship and was on the ground next to Layla. He used his blaster hand to fire away at the Divine beings, knocking some of their spears, but his blaster was doing little to help the situation.

"You are right. By the looks of things, they are able to constantly reproduce. Rather than trying to get rid of them all, what we need to focus on is what is causing this and stopping it because we can't fight on forever, when it seems like they can."

Jumping up, Muka bashed both hands right on top of a Divine being that had come straight to attack them. It crashed into the ground at that point, and immediately the vampires and ability users around them piled their attacks on top of it.

"The issue is, how are we meant to find that out, when we're fighting with everything we have just to survive?" Muka stated.

It felt like the only choice they had was to continue fighting. The spears were going toward their enemy, and a group of the Dark Divine beings had gathered power at the tip of their spears, the power growing larger until it stopped.

They had frozen in place. The attacks from the vampires and the humans continued to hit the Divine beings for a short while, and suddenly they started to move away.

All of them were flying back toward the portals; they were retreating for some reason.

"Wait!" Muka shouted. "Don't chase; conserve your energy and try to help the injured!"

The Divine beings didn't look like beings that were alive anyway. It was useless to go after them, and the way they were retreating, it was almost as if an order had been given.

Layla, Logan, and Muka continued to look up, and when all of the Divine beings had gone back through the white portals, they had closed up, all of them. The entire settlement fell silent.

The people who had just been in a tough battle moments ago, all of it had ended like that, but they were still on edge. It didn't quite feel real, as if they would come back at any moment.

"What happened?" Layla asked.

"I think someone must have solved the root cause of our problem," Logan replied.

Despite all of that, were they safe? And even if they were, Layla was still worried about just what was happening to Quinn; where exactly was he?

Quinn had gathered a massive amount of his blood shadow into a form of a giant drill, using the blood around him, including that of Immortui himself. A blow that would be delivered and rip Immortui's body to shreds so that he couldn't harm another person he cared about again. But either out of desperation or part of his final plan, Immortui had some words to say.

"You have no clue, do you? You have no idea what will happen! What will happen if you kill me, if you do, you will lose everything!" Immortui said.

For a moment, Quinn hesitated as the blood shadow continued to spin rapidly, making a screech and pulsating with power in the sky, pushing apart all of the clouds in the area.

"I've caught your attention," Immortui claimed. "If you kill me, then my power will disappear from this world with it, and I mean all of my power. All of the demons that have been created, they will disappear."

"The power that you have right now, along with the rest of them, they will end up becoming nothing but humans! If that happens, do you think they would stand a fighting chance?"

Quinn grunted slightly. He wanted to believe it was a trick, but he remembered the words of Richard Eno and Vincent. Some of the smartest that he knew. They had come up with a theory that perhaps if they got rid of Immortui, then with him they

would also get rid of their vampire selves, so he had reason to believe Immortui's word.

"But I can still get rid of you?" Quinn said. "You are the root of the problem to begin with."

"Haha, and so what?" Immortui said. "You know that a celestial doesn't die unless his condition is taken over by another. Did you think my condition will be passed on to you? Unlikely, I will be born again, and I don't care how long it takes, I will make sure to come back."

"And you, and all of your friends you care about, have become a prime target for me. Without your powers that you have from me, you won't be able to beat me again."

"But if I get rid of you," Quinn replied. "If I get rid of you, at least we can have some sort of peace!"

"Peace?" Immortui laughed. "Peace, knowing full well that I will come back and get rid of you all someday. If you call that peace, then kill me now."

The words of Immortui, they were getting to Quinn. The speed of the drill started to slow down. What was he to do, how could he solve this situation?

"We won't let that happen," a voice said to his side.

When Quinn looked to see who it was, he could see three figures in front of him, and all of them he knew well.

"Mundus... Bliss and... Sam?" Quinn said.

Although they were in the red space, it looked as if there was an orb of white energy surrounding them that was protecting them.

"I'm sorry, Quinn, I tried my best to keep the celestials out of this whole event and I had somewhat failed, but things are okay now thanks to a certain someone," Mundus explained.

"Immortui was able to gather his strength over the course of thousands of years," Bliss explained. "Even if he reincarnates, his power will be close to back to normal. Even if he tries to raise his power again, we will be able to stop him this time before it grows."

"The only reason why he was so much trouble is because Immortui used to work with the gods. His sudden turn was unexpected, and he had grown too strong for the Ancient Ones to even kill him, but be sure that none of the celestials will ever let someone rise to that power again."

Hearing these words, Immortui's whole expression changed; he was no longer laughing because he knew that their words were true.

"And what about you, Quinn!" Immortui shouted. "When the Ancient Ones get rid of me, they will come after you, worried that you will do the same. Your fate will be the same as mine. Don't you see this is what I was trying to stop happening! If you get rid of me, then you will just have them as your enemy; they are not your allies."

Quinn didn't need to hear what Bliss and Mundus had to say; he knew they would state that this wouldn't happen, but he knew there was a very real chance of this happening.

"Quinn," Sam called out, standing straight and walking a little ahead of the other two by his side. "Forget what everyone said; this is your choice to make... you choose what you want to do, and I will support your decision whatever you make. I always have done so. Since the start of the Cursed Faction you have been my leader and will always be my leader."

"So Quinn... Choose what you want to do."

Chapter 2540: The Decision Is Made

Quinn's emotions were all over the place. Seeing Sam at a time like this, next to Bliss who he really didn't have much of a liking for, and she was by Mundus, someone who had trapped him before, but also someone he had worked with.

There were words being thrown out by everyone, and although it felt like they were all somewhat telling the truth, it also felt like there were lies hidden behind each of their points.

"I've decided already, I'm ending it right here!" Quinn shouted, as he jumped up in the air, and swung the giant drill right down toward Immortui's body.

Those that were close by, Mundus along with Bliss and the others, the orb surrounding them flickered and they quickly disappeared out of the area.

The large dark blood shadow drill hit Immortui's body, and was spinning constantly. The power of the attack, it was ripping his skin away bit by bit, and disintegrating into nothing but energy as it was added into the drill.

"ARGHHH!" Quinn screamed and his demon form was breaking. It was falling off of him as the attack and energy waves hit his body.

He needed to make sure, that this was it, that this would be the end of Immortui once and for all. The large drill pushed down and it continued to push further and further. The ground was breaking off the giant planet, and the cracks were going out further and further out.

They continued to spread and the energy was causing everything to crumble. The drill, it had hit the very core of the planet, and the energy at that point had exploded out. Everything in sight was crumbling to pieces, only a few areas of land had broken off and were floating in space.

The large explosions as well as the shockwave from the attack had moved nearly everything close to it far out and wide.

When the energy had finally come to an end, the planet that was once there was no more, and instead Quinn was just floating in space. He looked at the air around him, and that's when he started to notice something.

The red mist that was covering the entire space, it was fading away, it was disappearing right in front of his eyes.

'Was this energy, was it all of Immortui's power?' Quinn thought.

Clenching his fist, he had done so weakly, his fingers moving slowly. 'I've made my decision now, I have to live with my choice.'

Quinn thought, and in that moment, the system had given him a ping, reading him another message.

Across the red space, a big change was happening. Although many of the demons had gathered onto their large ships and had headed for the planet of the giants. There were those that had stayed behind, and they felt a strange tingling sensation in their body.

Their forms were starting to change, the surging power they felt in their body nearly all of it was disappearing from them. They started to shrink down in size, and began to lose many of their demonic features.

As this was taken away from them, they started to look a lot more human. Their skin was normal, their flesh was the same as any human, but they didn't have the power that they had before, and unlike humans they had no abilities.

"Look at them!" one of the Chrono shouted. "The demons... something's happened!"

Immediately, one of the Chrono had picked up a weapon, an axe, and ran, slicing the former demon's head right off. The body fell to the floor and it was dead in an instant.

Although the red mist had disappeared, no longer influencing this innate anger to fight each other, there was real anger behind their actions. All of the years they had suffered, they could now unleash it back on the demons.

The demons themselves had no clue what was happening or what had happened to them, but they stood no chance as the inhabitants took back the red space.

Due to the blast of Quinn's attack, there was one being that had been knocked so far away, he found himself on another planet, and he too had changed into a human-like form.

"What is this?" Unzoku said, looking at his pale hand. "Does this mean, Immortui actually lost, his plan had failed? Then what does that mean for me... I need to survive for now.

In the vampire settlement, the fighting had been over for a short while. Everyone was quick to act as they had gathered those that were injured and among the rubble. They pulled them out and started to heal them as quickly as possible.

For the vampires, they gave them blood allowing their bodies to do the natural healing. It was a tough time for them all, as they tried their best to cope with the losses around them.

Loud screams were heard throughout from the attack.

Using his machinery, Logan had cleared a lot of the rubble away after confirming there were no more vampires among the rubble. It had been pushed over to the side, and the injured were being treated.

As for the dead, they were placed in another location for now. A short while later, and being escorted by some of the Vampire Corps and Andy, Minny along with the rest of the children had arrived.

"Mum!" Minny shouted as she started to sprint across the ground, but as she did she noticed something. Her steps were becoming slower, the energy inside her, it was disappearing from her body. She started to feel incredibly slow, and her heartbeat was starting to grow stronger as well.

Her breath, she could feel it more vividly, and also the pain in her legs as she went across the area. It wasn't just her though, every single vampire in the area could feel it as well. There was a big change that was happening in them all. A change that they couldn't stop, and had no control of.

Inside the floating space around Quinn, he was looking at the system screen that had popped up in front of him.

[Quest complete] [You have defeated the Celestial of Death] [You have gained the following rewards]

[Your powers have become your own. You will not be affected by the Celestial of Death's clawback ability.]

'Clawback ability, what is this? I don't even know what it means, but the Celestial of Death, it's clear that it's talking about Immortui.'

Right now, Quinn could still feel the blood aura in his body. He could still feel the flow of blood in the air, including the blood that was being split now on the other planets. Because of this, he knew he hadn't lost his powers.

[An item has been placed in your system] [Immortui's soul]

[You can do the following with Immortui's soul Crystal] [Place it into another that is compatible with the soul] [Break the soul crystal sending it into the path of Reincarnation]

'This... It's a crystal and it's in my system. Just like the god slayer crystals? Can this happen, has this ever happened before? Or is it because of the system itself? It has always been able to do strange things due to the Equivalent Exchange ability.'

'So what happens if I just keep the crystal in the system. Will it mean, Immortui will never enter the reincarnation cycle? He will never cause trouble again.'

Judging by the fact that the system didn't require him to do anything, he thought that very well was a possibility. It looked like Immortui's claim of always being a worry in Quinn's mind wouldn't exist.

On top of that, it was a handy thing to keep, because now he also had a bargaining chip that he could use with the other Celestials as well. Or a deep secret to keep with him. Thinking of them, a glowing orb started to appear and once again the three from before had appeared in front of him.

"You did it Quinn." Bliss said with a smile on her face. "It looks like once again, with the help of two Talens you have managed to change the future and for the better."

"Two Talens?" Quinn replied back wondering what she meant by that, but he was so exhausted that he didn't really have the energy to care either.

"As a thank you, Quinn, for doing all this, I will take you back to the Golden Space," Mundus said. "You will finally be able to spend time with your family and friends without having to worry."

"The celestials will not bother you, and Immortui will no longer bother you until he needs to reincarnate again, but that will be our trouble to deal with, not yours."

Those words finally brought Quinn peace. He had felt like he had achieved that so many times before, but there was always problem after problem. Was it true? Could he finally enjoy himself?

Shifting in, Bliss used some of her magic and pulled Quinn into the glowing white orb that the three of them were in. He didn't fight it, but now he was right by the side of the others.

And it was at that moment that he noticed something. The smell that had entered his nose, and the energy coming off from Sam's body.

"You... You don't smell like a vampire. What happened to you?" Quinn asked, his heart pounding.

"Quinn," Sam replied with a straight face. "What Immortui said... wasn't a lie. His power is no longer a part of this universe... apart from what is inside you. You are the last vampire."

Chapter 2541: The Last Vampire

A strange energy had faded from the vampires; their hearts were beating strangely. The air on their skin felt better, and things like their eyesight along with their sense of smell had all worsened.

For many, they were starting to panic; they had no clue what was happening, and for a lot of them, they had never even been human before. It was the first time they were experiencing such things, and it was scary, almost like a disease that was coming over them.

It wasn't just the vampires; the subclasses, the creations of the vampires, were all returning to normal. The undead wights, their hearts started to beat as they experienced life in a new form.

For some, rather than a power leaving them, it felt more like a power was changing them.

Peter was among this group of people. He stretched out his arms, clenched his hands several times, and ran his fingers down his skin. Then, lifting his hands, he touched water that was coming down from his face.

"My sense of feeling, my heartbeat... it's all come back!" Peter wanted to jump for joy.

How long had it been since he had felt like this? He was grateful for having become a wight and being able to help Quinn along the way. Eventually, it had even become a thing that he didn't realize he had missed.

Perhaps it was due to the dulling of his emotions, and now that he had obtained it all back, he felt great joy.

"Is this really happening... I can finally live my life... the way I was meant to," Peter said.

"So I guess I'm just going to be armless forever then," Hikel commented. His body had healed up, but he had no arms on his body.

"Hey, you can always get a bionic arm," Edvard commented, much more worried about his own condition. The moment he took the armour off, it would be the end of him. He could feel his vampire self having disappeared, but the power of the armour was strong, strong enough to keep him still the way he was.

For the older vampires who had lived thousands of years, including the originals, they had turned into a human whose body was at the age their appearance currently took on. For the originals, it was the same appearance they had from the day they had turned.

On that day, their life had taken a drastic turn, and with it, they felt like their old life was on pause until this very moment it had come back.

Even Chris, as he looked at his own body, he could feel his own blood didn't pump in the same way as it did around his body. The alterations that had been made, they were gone.

"I guess that means Quinn did it, he really did it, but doesn't it also mean... he's stuck there?"

One of the biggest changes that the vampires had immediately noticed, with the humans being around them left and right, was their taste for blood.

Layla was trying her best to get those who were less erratic to calm all the others down.

She was trying to make sense of it all, as even her power was now completely gone as well. From her right side, she had seen someone that made her heart skip. When she corrected her mind, her heart settled down for a moment.

"All of it is gone," Vincent said as he walked over. "It's the same for me, all of my powers to control blood. The thirst for blood, and even our pain in the sunlight. It's not just us, but all of the subclasses."

What Layla was happy to see more was the fact that Galen was also with Vincent. She was worried about where he had gone or what he was doing, but was a little less worried due to his powers with the shadow and ability to hide himself.

That was another thing that had changed though. When Layla had attempted to use her telekinesis powers, they had completely disappeared.

Just like when a human turned into a vampire all of their MC cells changed, the same thing had happened again. They could still learn abilities, but it just meant that they would have to start over.

As for the Shadow ability, Minny had lost that turning into a human as well. With everything going on, they didn't know whether to laugh and cry, and of all things, the humans with their abilities were rushing around helping out people the most.

"Wait a moment, all of the vampires have lost their powers?" Russ thought as he looked around. He still had his powers. "Does this mean that Quinn has lost his? With Sil in a bad state as well, and that wolf having lost his powers, does that make me the strongest in this world?"

Russ was already imagining what he might potentially be able to do, and was smirking to himself.

While Layla was checking out Galen, she soon saw him pointing a finger behind her, and he opened up his mouth to say a few words.

"Dad!" Galen shouted out.

Layla turned around, along with the rest of them that were in the area, and they saw a flicker of white energy disappear and in its place, there was one person left standing there, Quinn Talen.

"Damn it, they left immediately as well, before I could talk to them more," Quinn said, scratching his head. He started to sniff the air, and as he did, he looked at everyone that was staring back at him.

More importantly, more than anything, he was with his family. He could see the tears of Layla, his daughter Minny, and the smile on Galen's face.

"Did you think I died or something? I told you I would be back," Quinn said as he went in, knelt down, and hugged all three of his family members.

It was a bittersweet moment that no one wanted to end. As Quinn hugged them all, he realized something, though. He could smell it, he could sense it with the blood rushing through their veins; they were now different from him.

Russ stared at him, and for a second, Quinn opened his eyes glowing red, looking right at him.

Letting go, Quinn stood up.

"Don't worry about those that are underground," Quinn stated, talking about those that were still in the chambers underneath. "They are already dead."

Quinn could sense it from where he was. The vampires that hadn't gotten out of their chambers due to rubble. Those that had gone into an eternal slumber. There was now no way to bring them back. They were human, and their hearts were never to beat again.

The only thing was, the vampires had gone into eternal slumber thinking they would never have to wake up, and this would have to satisfy him now.

"This is going to be... a new start for us all," Quinn smiled.

1 Year later....

For updates on MVS and future works, please remember to follow me on my social media below.

Instagram: Jksmanga

When news of MVS, MWS, or any other series comes out, you will be able to see it there first, and you can reach out to me. If I'm not too busy, I tend to reply back.

Chapter 2542: 1 Year Later

Chapter 2542 1 Year Later

One year had passed since the world changing event. The disappearance of an entire separate race was done in a day, and the human race had to figure out what it was that they needed to do.

Vampires were already living among them on many different planets, and suddenly for them to change just like that was not just a shock for them, but for everyone around them. However, with the help of those in charge, those that were already trying to bridge the gap between the two, things had moved along quickly.

Surprisingly, or unsurprisingly, the humans were much more willing to work with the new humans who were just like them. Those that were afraid, had almost no reason to be. The excuses they made about living side by side with those that feasted on them, couldn't be used anymore.

As for why this had occurred, that had been kept under wraps. Many of the now ex-vampires were actually displeased with what had happened to them, feeling as if something had been taken away from them.

It also meant, many didn't learn about the decision and the sacrifice Quinn had made for them all.

As with all things though, as time went by, people adjusted to the change, they adjusted to their new life, and the ex-vampires were able to integrate into human society, and rather than being apart, they had practically become one.

Most of the political issues had been dealt with, it was an ongoing issue, but not as much as it was at the start. It allowed the humans to focus on more things, one of them being the reconstruction of Earth.

Through their technological advancements, they were able to take land mass from asteroids and other planets and bring it to Earth. Large continents were being created in the seas, replacing the ones that had originally been destroyed by the Dalki in the first war.

For everyone it felt like there was no incoming threat looming over their heads like before. There were still beasts on other planets and travellers. This was because crystals were still a valuable resource for society's use.

Although vampires no longer existed, abilities still did. So humans as well as the vampire turned humans would learn abilities to do as they wished.

At the same time, the human forces kept their relationships with the Amra, Penswi, and Mermerials; keeping up their close relationship as a whole. They would be a force to be reckoned with in the universe if anyone attacked them.

In this new world and new life, on Earth, a new land had been developed, and on that land an evolved society had been built. With large houses, high speed networks allowing one to travel from one area to the next, and the teleporters to travel even further distances had been implemented.

On the outskirts of the city, there were the suburbs where large houses had been developed with green around it. In one of these areas there was a large gated house. Lasers shot out from the bottom, formed by crystals, to make up the gate.

A stone pathway led up to a water fountain feature, and eventually to the large manor-like house.

A dark small coloured spaceship making next to no noise had landed on a stone pathway not too far away, and there were many other spaceships that were already there.

The door opened up from the bottom to the top, and immediately a small black curly-haired boy jumped down, bending his knees.

"Ah, finally we're here!" Galen shouted, standing up strongly. Minny also jumped down, her feet landing on the ground.

She was dressed up in a nice little polka dot red dress and had her hair tied up with a red bow as well. While Galen was in a shirt tucked into his little trousers. Soon following the two of them, was none other than Layla, with her brown hair. She was in a nice light blue dress that sparkled, while wearing several items of jewelery on her.

It was clear that all of them had made the effort to dress up nicely, and that included Quinn who had come out last. Looking the same as he ever had. Only his usual curly hair wasn't in so much of a mess as it was parted to the sides cleanly.

He was wearing a nice black suit with a white shirt. He didn't wear a tie though because he felt like it restricted his breathing a bit, it was uncomfortable to say the least.

"Beast armour is more comfortable than this." Quinn commented.

"Come on, everyone is going to be dressed up nicely. It's only for one day. It's been a while since we've done something like this." Layla said, as she grabbed onto Minny and Galen's hand and walked forward.

Minny had moved in a certain way so she could hold onto Quinn's hand as well and they all walked forward, heading to the large door. As soon as they arrived there was a scan of their face, and a voice sound played.

"I'll be at the door in a second, a female voice said."

It wasn't long after that before the door opened up and a female in an elegant dress was there to greet them all.

"Oh Lucia, it's so nice to see you, and congratulations on the news." Layla said as she moved forward and went in for a big hug, but she was careful as she was careful not to touch her stomach so much.

"Ah yes, you heard, didn't you. It looks like in less than a year, we will have a little child of our own." Lucia commented with a big smile.

"Congratulations." Quinn said. "I bet Peter is really pleased about this. It seems we are all growing up, since all of us are having a family of our own now."

"Well, why don't you head inside, he and the others are all waiting for you."

Heading inside with his family, they entered the large hallway with a grand dangling chandelier. The house was nicely decorated. But it felt a bit empty in places. It was clear that they hadn't lived in it for very long.

The event that they had been invited to was a house warming in the first place, and the house they were in belonged to none other than Lucia and Peter.

The two of them had gotten together not long after he had turned back into a human. It seemed after his turn he had realised his feelings. He rushed over to Lucia and decided to tell her everything that he felt.

Walking down the hallway, they took a right turn and they pushed through a pair of double doors and heading in, Quinn had entered a room full of people.

"It looks like everyone is here." Quinn smiled to himself.

This was the start for Quinn, a memory he remembered clearly. At that time, meeting everyone, he had made a final decision for himself. This was perhaps the start when he realised, he was different from everybody else.

Chapter 2543: Everyone Changing

Chapter 2543 Everyone Changing

Inside the large manor, there was a large entertainment area filled with bars, a pool table, and a huge wide-open window that let the light into the room. It opened up and allowed them to go out onto the patio that led to the garden.

Here, there were plenty of seats as well. As soon as Quinn entered, nearly everyone at the party wanted to talk to him and went up to him. He mingled with them all, as there were people from all over that he had formed relationships with.

After eventually talking to everyone, or at least offering his greetings, he decided to head outside in the sun. He placed his hand over his eyes slightly.

"It's been a long time since that first system message just before I got on that bus, huh?" Quinn thought to himself.

He saw a few empty seats and sat down. There was no one else next to him, that was until quite a few people decided to come over.

"Hey, you don't mind if we join you, right?" a blonde-haired middle-aged man asked, who looked close to being in his thirties. He held a drink in his hand, and he wasn't the only one there.

Sitting in the seats around him were Sil, Shiro, Logan, Chris, and eventually, Peter had managed to get away from a bunch of people as well and joined them.

As for Shiro, he soon switched who was in control of his body, and now it was none other than Vorden.

"It's been an entire year, and there have been no problems," Vorden said, lifting up his drink. "I think we should offer cheers to Quinn!"

The others agreed, and Quinn went along with them, lifting up his glass.

"Has it really been a year already?" Peter asked. "Time is moving too quickly. Back when I was a Whyte, sometimes it felt like time wasn't moving at all."

"Of course, time is moving quickly for us all now," Logan stated. "We have lived for thousands of years more than we originally should have."

"But it's the first time that we can enjoy it like this together," Chris said. "Before, we would have to worry about the incidents with the vampires, Pure trying to take control, and the old military being abusive with their power."

"Ah yes, thanks to Truedream," Quinn said. "Although you also forgot the Dalki were a major problem as well."

What they were all saying was true. Earth had been peaceful, more peaceful than it ever had been. Humans were focusing on rebuilding. The abuse of powers wasn't widely used as before. Of course, there were the odd crimes here and there, but they were small and stopped fairly quickly.

"The Celestials seem to have kept their word as well; they haven't bothered us at all, and from the looks of it, they have no reason to. I can finally start relaxing," Quinn said.

Everyone was happy for him. He had been through a lot, and not just him, but all of them, and during that time, they had lost a lot as well. They had lost many of those close to them that they should never forget about.

Arthur, Helen, Richard, and even more. In some ways, Quinn was happy that Immortui had done what he had done at that time, because it had given him a chance to say goodbye to them and see them.

"Although I didn't really get to see Helen, I was sure she was there as well," Quinn thought.

The group continued to discuss what they had done and plans for what to do next. Nearly all of them lived together and would meet up regularly. When they did meet up, they would mostly talk about the old days.

However, as time went on, they knew it would be harder as they started to focus on their families. Still, they could then get together and have their children play. Eventually, as the party was coming to an end, Logan started to change the topic somewhat.

"I have a special announcement that I would like to make," Logan replied. "I have been creating a special AI tool that will be able to run Green City and also predict the best improvements for the city. It should be able to fully function in the near future as it continues to learn. Essentially, it will be able to do everything that I do as the mayor."

"You should be careful," Vorden commented. "If you make a robot that good, then you'll be out of the job."

"And that is the plan," Logan replied back. "Me and Vicky have lived a long time, and we have enjoyed it, but eventually, we will decide that it is time for us to leave this place. Having experienced everything we have done and doing everything that we need to do."

The mood had turned slightly somber after Logan had made the announcement, and it made sense to them all. Logan had been living a life for a thousand years while Quinn and Peter were trapped.

It wasn't just him, but it was the same for Sil as well. When losing his powers that day after the fight with Immortui, he didn't even attempt to get them back. Instead, Sil wished to age; he wished for his life to have an end.

It was strange, but after realizing that there was an end, Sil wanted to experience it. Rather than living on forever and trying to protect the world from their troubles. There was always going to be others in their place to do such a thing.

It was the same for Peter as well. No longer a Whyte, he was making the most of his time with his family, trying to enjoy it to the fullest. Thinking about all of this, Quinn turned his head to look at his family—Layla, Minny, and Galen.

All three of them, in just a year, he had noticed the changes that they were going through, but looking at himself, nothing had changed about him, not a single thing.

"I'm... completely different compared to the rest."

Chapter 2544: The Pain Is Too Much

Chapter 2544 The Pain Is Too Much

Five more years had passed since the meeting Quinn had with his friends. They regularly met up, and he enjoyed every bit he could with them. During those years, humans had been exploring planets but didn't venture too far from their area.

This was a warning from Quinn. As long as they kept to themselves, the Celestials shouldn't get angry either. There was one incident where a demon beast had occurred, but before Quinn had even arrived, it had already been dealt with.

There were those who were strong enough to deal with the problem, allowing him to continue enjoying all of the time he could with his family and friends. As things continued on, he noticed something, and he had decided to call on a certain individual.

In a high-rise building at the very top, there was a bar that would usually be packed with people enjoying a drink, but instead, there was just a single person, Quinn. He looked out at the city, examining everything from above.

There were no problems and no threats to worry about. Soon, a person walked over, straightened his shirt, and sat down in the seat not too far from him.

"So, what's got you so worried that you decided to call me?" Vincent asked.

"How did you know that it was something worrying?" Quinn replied. "Maybe I just wanted to meet you."

"You did quite a lot to find me. I was waiting for this, Quinn, waiting for you to call me. It's the only reason why I stayed around," Vincent said.

Quinn was a little shaken, his hand vibrating as he turned. "What do you mean?"

"I mean that I would have gone to sleep, decided to put an end to my life if you still weren't around. I was waiting for you to call me, and after this conversation, I too will no longer be here." Vincent stated.

Hearing these words, Quinn gulped. Vincent was in a clone body of him that was running off a special crystal that could supply him with energy forever. He could live forever if he wanted to.

"Quinn, I know what you want to talk about because I'm probably the only person who has been through the same thing you're going through right now," Vincent explained. "You can see it, can't you? All of the friends that you made, your family, all of them are getting older apart from you, and you're worried you're going to lose it all."

It was amazing; Vincent was truly a genius because he had managed to guess exactly right.

"But if I wanted to, I could turn them, and then they could live with me," Quinn said.

"But you won't," Vincent replied. "There's risk in what you are trying to do, and you can see how much the world has changed now that the vampires are gone. You are the most selfless person in the world, Quinn, and even if it was for the sake of your own family, you wouldn't even attempt to put the world in chaos."

"Then can't you teach me?" Quinn asked. "Can't you teach someone the equivalent exchange ability? Can't I do the same as you? Place all of my powers into a book. That way I can live with them and pass on naturally."

"Can you?" Vincent asked. "Although I understand what you are going through, our positions are completely different, Quinn. Right now, the world isn't in danger, but for how long will that be? Not only that, but you are beyond that of a vampire. I'm not even sure there is anything in this world that can store your power. You are stronger than the strongest god in existence. Even if there was something that could store that power, then in the wrong hands, it could be the end of everything."

Vincent was repeating everything that had gone through Quinn's head, and to him, it was just confirming all of the problems he had with everything.

"Vincent... it's too painful... it's too painful watching them, and knowing each day that they might go away. Everything feels like it's moving too fast, but for me, it's staying the same!" Quinn said, his tears bursting out, and the entire building shook for a moment.

Quinn wasn't unstable, but his emotions let out a small amount of his power, shaking the whole place.

"And now you're telling me even you're going to disappear. Then what am I meant to do?" Quinn asked.

"Quinn," Vincent said in a soft voice. "The reason why I stayed was because I am to blame for all of this as well. I placed my power in that book long ago. It's because of me that you're in this situation. Which is why I wanted to stay to help you figure this all out."

Vincent would have gone into slumber; he had already lived his life and gone through this pain. There was no reason for him to stay on this planet anymore, and the only thing that was holding him back was Quinn himself.

"There is one thing that you can do. One suggestion that I can make that will somewhat solve all of the issues and will be the least painful for you, but perhaps the most painful for others."

Quinn wiped away his tears; he was ready to hear it. After everything he had been through. He didn't want to suffer anymore. Hadn't he suffered enough? Just this once, couldn't he be a little selfish?

After hearing the answer Vincent had given him, it was a lot harder than he thought, but it was the only solution he could come up with.

Chapter 2545: The Last Goodbye, Goodbye Quinn Talen

Chapter 2545 The Last Goodbye, Goodbye Quinn Talen

Fifteen years had passed since the day Quinn had said his farewells to his family. The sun was shining brightly on the large university campus, where students bustled from one area to the next. At the very top of the campus, there was a black-haired young boy with curly hair, lying back and staring up at the sky while tapping his feet to the rhythm of his music.

"Galen!" a voice shouted. "Galen, where are you? Come on, hurry up, or we're going to be late!"

The voice continued to shout, and a dark-skinned curly-haired woman eventually found him. When she approached him, she ripped the headphones right out from his ears.

"Hey, what are you doing here, Minny?" Galen asked.

"What am I doing here?" she replied, fists by her side. "I'm here to come get you. What are you even wearing a white shirt for? You need to wear black, you know that, right? Ah, we don't even have time; we have to get out of here now, or we're going to be late."

Galen took the headphones back and placed them in his trouser pocket. His face didn't look as joyous as it did before as he looked down.

"I don't want to wear black. It's not like we're going to a funeral or anything," Galen replied.

Minny didn't know what to say to that; it hurt her heart as well, and before she knew it, a tear was running down her face. She quickly wiped it away.

"It's too late to get changed anyway; let's just get out of here and go," Minny said as she grabbed Galen's hand and started to lead him.

As she did, Galen twirled his finger, and a dark shadow appeared. Right in front of them, a shadow portal opened up, and the two of them were suddenly on the ground.

"You know it annoys me every time you use that power?" Minny said.

"Well, you said we were going to be late."

Galen had never lost his powers that day for some reason, unlike Minny. It was unclear why, although Quinn had a theory, one that he told Galen to keep a secret. The fact that he was special compared to others.

Although all of the power that Immortui had given to others disappeared, this wasn't the case for celestial energy. Peter and Minny both still had celestial energy within them. However, Quinn had made it clear that he was different, and it might have been the reason why he had kept his powers as well. But he should never let others know the difference in him. That, unlike Minny, who just had celestial powers, he was a Celestial.

Using his powers, they got in a small spaceship and were on their way. They flew far from home and eventually picked up their mother, Layla. Just like Minny, she too was wearing a completely black dress and a veil that covered her face. Her hands and face were covered in wrinkles. She had grown a lot older, and she was close to that of a 70-year-old woman; the Qi in her body wasn't doing much to help her. It seemed that her time as Hannya had an effect on her. It wasn't just her, but this was the same for other vampires. Those that had young appearances but had already lived a long time were close to their end as a vampire, and the same thing was happening to Layla.

The three of them got on the spaceship, and they were off. They flew through space, and on the way, they said next to nothing to each other.

Finally, they landed, and when they did, they had entered what was now considered a historic site: the vampire settlement. It had been rebuilt, but no one lived here anymore, and it was a site that was restricted from normal visitors. Only a few could come and go.

Walking, they headed to the main castle, but rather than entering the main hall, they descended down the steps, deep and dark, to the underground vampire tombs.

When they finally reached the bottom, they could see him; they could see Quinn standing there, looking the same as he had done, the same as he always did. Instantly, Layla started to sob and break down in tears.

Minny quickly went to grab her, giving her a hug. "It's okay, Mum, it's okay, we will still be with you."

Immediately going from one side of the room to the other, Quinn was there. He placed his hand, lifting up her veil and looking right into her eyes and face.

"You look just as beautiful as the first day I met you," Quinn said with a large smile.

"Why, Quinn... why do you have to do this?" Layla sobbed.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry for my selfish request, but I wanted to see my family one last time," Quinn replied. "It was the only option I could think of. If I lived on and saw you get sick or hurt, I wouldn't be able to help myself; I would turn you in a heartbeat when I know it's wrong. So the only choice I have now is to go into eternal slumber before that even happens. I'm sorry for being selfish, and I'm sorry for going before all of you. The time I spent with you all, the last moments of my life, were the best that I ever experienced."

Quinn then leaned in, pressing his lips against Layla's. For a moment, he thought about biting her, but he knew it was for the best that he didn't. As he pulled away and walked away, he had already informed his friends; he had already said goodbyes to them. If he had them all here, it would have been too much for him. He would have never wanted to leave; he would have never wanted his story to end. But all good things had to come to an end.

"Minny, look after your idiot brother!" Quinn said. "And Galen, stop being a playboy and settle down with someone nice. It would be good to keep the Talen bloodline going."

Cutting his finger, a drop of blood landed on the contraption below. It started to twist and turn as it rose up from the ground. Then he took a step inside, turning toward his family.

"I love you all," Quinn said, as he closed his eyes.

There was one more thing Vincent had taught him that day: how a vampire was to go into eternal slumber. The technique used to completely stop one's heart. Pulling all of the aura out from the heart, from the bloodstone, eventually, one's life would come to an end.

While doing this, Quinn started to think. There were a few things that always bugged him, somethings he had never been able to figure out. One was the fact that he was never able to find Ray. No one had seen him; no one had known where he had gone or what he had done.

There were also no visits. There was a reason why Quinn wanted to visit him, and that was because of the second reason. In his system, there was still one quest:

[Find out about the Talen Family.]

"No matter what I did, that quest was never completed," Quinn said. "But it doesn't matter. I can finally rest. Good luck to my future family; I hope your life is at least a little less complex than mine."

Outside the tomb, Layla, Galen, and Minny had stayed there for almost an entire day. In the end, the children were too worried about their mother's health that they had to force her to leave.

With that, the tomb was finally clear, empty, and a couple of days later, the sound of footsteps were heard as they walked down toward the tomb. Eventually, the pair of footsteps stopped just short.

"Do you think this will be the end for him?" a male's voice asked.

"You know it's not; you were the one that placed that Quest on him in the first place," Bliss replied. "The quest of the Talen family is still not complete. For now, he can rest, but he will be needed. The Quest of the Talen family needs to be completed, isn't that right, Richard?"

The End of the My Vampire System Series

Content from **Chapter 2101: What you need to Chapter 2545: The Last Goodbye, Goodbye Quinn Talen**

eBook from [9Kafe](#)